GATES
AND ALLIED
FAMILIES

Gc
929.2
D321f
v.2
1512356

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

M.

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01236 0910

GC
929.2
D321F
V.2

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2018

https://archive.org/details/dawesgatesancest00ferr_0

DAWES-GATES
ANCESTRAL LINES

VOLUME II

Mary Beman (Gates) Dawes

DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES

A Memorial Volume
Containing the American Ancestry of
Mary Beman (Gates) Dawes

VOLUME II

GATES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Compiled by MARY WALTON FERRIS

Privately Printed · 1931

COPYRIGHT, 1931, BY
RUFUS C. DAWES

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

1512356

DEDICATED

TO THE MEMORY OF OUR DEAR MOTHER

MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES

AND HER AMERICAN ANCESTORS

It has been said that

> "The history of any private family, however humble, could it be fully related for five or six generations, would illustrate the state and progress of society better than the most elaborate dissertation." (Southey)

This Gates volume illustrates the early state and the continuing progress of our Nation. It offers the record of eighty-three American families and tells of the individual experiences of the members of two hundred eighty-six ancestral generations, who have contributed to its development. The Dawes Volume offers a similar record.

PREFACE

THIS volume portrays the American ancestry of MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES to her respective emigrant ancestors, in almost all of her lines. In several of these lines of descent she was, herself, of the eleventh generation in this country and her great-grandchildren are of the fourteenth. Her mother, BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, experienced throughout her life a deep interest in her forebears and for the latter half of that life made very definite, though intermittent, effort to identify as many of them as possible by study, extensive correspondence and by travel. Her findings have been incorporated in this memorial volume, have been extended in lines which she failed to develop, and have been clothed with historic fact.

In this work the compiler has attempted to portray, as nearly as may be, a picture of the conditions and problems which were faced daily by the early pioneers; a picture of the neighborly interrelation of interest and action. It has been her ambition to cover the bare skeleton of "dry-as-dust names and dates" with the flesh of biographical incident and historical fact. In retrospect the long trail of search for some of the more deeply hidden truths and relationships seems almost impossibly intricate; and the weird story of mental meanderings seems more fascinating, in some cases, than the facts uncovered.

The lives of these ancestors, with their uniform display of courage, endurance of hardship and danger, of suffering and often of tragic death, made possible the advantages of civilization and comparative ease which we enjoy today. To the end that we of the present may realize by contrast just how great is our advantage, these kaleidoscopic views of the long ago have been assembled. No greater honor could be done these men and women than that their mistakes should become warnings, and their fine traits should live on in their descendants as strength of character.

The compiler acknowledges the gracious permission of Mr. W. L. Goodwin and Mr. F. F. Starr to draw upon their "Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral

Lines"; of Mr. J. Gardner Bartlett to reproduce material from his Coe Genealogy; of the Connecticut Society of Colonial Dames and the Yale Press for Parsons material; acknowledges also the invaluable use of their books, and such other courtesies as have been shown by Newberry Library of this city. Gratitude is further voiced toward all who have offered their encouragement or shared their knowledge.

Submission, by readers, of addenda, and of referenced corrections of such errors as have been overlooked, is earnestly invited, for verily

". . . I had rather find out and correct one Mistake in my own, than expose and ridicule twenty Blunders in the Histories of others."

MARY WALTON FERRIS

Chicago, Illinois, 1931

EXPLANATORY NOTE

CAPITALIZATION

THE invariable capitalization, throughout the text, of all ancestral names wherever found, and of them *only*, avoids the necessity, where several ancestors are named in a group, of frequent repetition of such words as "who is also our ancestor."

SUPERIOR FIGURES

Superior figures are used for two purposes:

(1) To designate the generation, within his family, to which an individual belongs, in which case the figure is *italic* in form and is placed immediately after and slightly above the *given name* of some person [i.e., John^{2}], but is never placed otherwise.

(2) As reference numbers, to inform the reader what authorities (listed and numbered at the end of each chapter) were drawn upon for the portion of the text to which the corresponding number is affixed, in which case superior figures of roman type are used, in contradistinction to the italic [see "References," infra].

CHARTS

Two types of chart are employed:

(1) The Ancestral Chart, at the back of this volume, which summarizes all names and lines of descent that have been established. It provides a column for each generation, with MARY (GATES) DAWES, the subject of the volume, placed at the left and assigned the personal and identifying number "1." These personal numbers run in sequence, with 2 and 3 assigned to her parents, 4, 5, 6 and 7 assigned to her grandparents, etc. Thus any person's father bears a number just double his own and invariably an even number. These personal numbers are also affixed to each male name in the various

Family Charts [(2) infra] and thus act as a link between this Ancestral Chart and the text itself.

(2) FAMILY CHARTS, of which one faces the first page of each family chapter and contains a digest of that chapter. They show, in each generation, not only the ancestral names with the pertinent dates but also the place or places of residence, by means of insignia [i.e., * † § || etc.] placed above each male name. Further services which are rendered by these charts are (a) a portrayal of the blood stream of descent through the various generations; and (b) a correlation of the chapter text with the Ancestral Chart (1) by insertion, in boxed form [i.e., $\boxed{252}$] of the identifying number of each male ancestor.

REFERENCES

A list of the volumes consulted is assembled at the end of each family chapter. These are numbered, and corresponding numbers are sprinkled through the text by (roman) superior figures [i.e., $^{14, 29}$] but are never placed immediately following a given name (which placing is reserved for the generation numbers, in italic type, supra). Any one of these references may, and probably does, bear upon various other parts of the text than that definitely referenced, for constant repetition of superior figures would be cumbersome. The list of volumes given, not only references the statements made in the text but also acts as a bibliography on the respective names and, consequently, includes works of varying degrees of dependability.

MAPS

Twenty-five maps have been prepared from remote sources to illustrate the text, for many of the early place-names are now obsolete. Moreover, a concise knowledge of locations referred to, greatly increases interest in any text.

ABBREVIATIONS

b. born	bur. buried	ae. aged	prob. probably
bap. baptized	res. residence	int. intention of marriage	bef. before
m. married	dau. daughter	unm. unmarried	c. (circa) about
d. died	wid. widow	p. or pp. page or pages	

NOTE

No genealogical work of this scope can hope to be entirely free from small errors, especially slight discrepancies in dates. The compiler will appreciate any corrections that may be communicated by readers.

CONTENTS

THE *number of generations shown in each of these chapters is indicated in parentheses. In some instances, as will be seen, two or more lines of descent have been proved to a given emigrant. A total of 286 ancestral generations in America are shown.*

	PAGE
MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES, Sketch of	3
GATES, GEORGE (8)	9
ACKLEY, NICHOLAS (5)	33
ANDREWS, NICHOLAS (2)	57
BANGS, EDWARD (2)	61
BARTLETT, JOHN (6)	71
BATCHELDER, JOHN (4)	97
BEAMAN, SIMON (6 and 3)	105
BEAMON, WILLIAM (2)	117
BLISS, THOMAS (2 and 2)	123
BRAINERD, DANIEL (4 and 3)	129
BREWSTER, WILLIAM (2)	143
BULL, ROBERT (2)	159
BUSHNELL, FRANCIS (5)	163
CHALKER, ALEXANDER (4)	175
CHAPMAN, EDWARD (2)	181
CHAPMAN, ROBERT (6 and 3)	185
CLARKE, JOHN (2)	201
CLARKE, WILLIAM (2)	207
COE, ROBERT (5)	211
CONANT, ROGER (2)	221
CONE, DANIEL (3)	231
COOKE, FRANCIS (4)	239
COREY, JOHN (2)	259
DANFORTH, NICHOLAS (2)	279
DEVEREAUX, JOHN (2)	285
DOANE, JOHN (5)	299
DODGE, RICHARD (2 and 2)	315
DODGE, WILLIAM (3)	319
ELIOTT, ANDREW (2)	331
FOOTE, NATHANIEL (3)	337
FOX, MARGARET (CLARK) (2)	345
FREEMAN, EDMOND (4 and 4)	349
GODFREY, GEORGE (3)	367
GRANT, MATTHEW (2)	371
GRAVES, GEORGE (4)	381
GRISWOLD, EDWARD (2)	399
GUNN, THOMAS (2)	407
HAWLEY, JOSEPH (2 and 2)	411
HAYWARD, ROBERT (2)	417
HERRICK, HENRY (6 and 3)	421
HOPKINS, STEPHEN (2)	443
HULL, GEORGE (6 and 2)	453
HULL, ISAAC (2)	467
HUMPHREY, MICHAEL (2)	471

	PAGE
HUNGERFORD, THOMAS (3)	477
JOHNSON, JAMES (3)	485
Addendum, Cooke, Josiah (4)	503
KILBOURN, THOMAS (2)	509
KIRTLAND, PHILIP (4)	517
LASKIN, HUGH (2)	527
LITTLE, JOHN (4)	531
LOOMIS, JOSEPH (2 and 2)	567
MARVIN, MATTHEW (2)	575
MERRICK, WILLIAM (2)	581
MITCHELL, Matthew or Thomas	589
NICHOLSON, EDMUND (2)	595
OBER, RICHARD (3)	605
OLMSTEAD, JAMES (3)	611
PALGRAVE, JOAN (HARRIS) (2)	621
PARSONS, JOSEPH (3)	625
PETTYJOHN, JAMES (4)	643
PINNEY, HUMPHREY (4)	659
POST, STEPHEN (2)	667
POTTER, HANNAH (—) (3)	671
PRATT, WILLIAM (2)	675
PRENCE, THOMAS (2)	683
RAYMOND, JOHN (3)	697
RAYMOND, WILLIAM (2)	703
ROBERTS, JOHN (3)	711
SAXTON, RICHARD (2)	717
SCRUGGS, THOMAS (2)	721
SEYMOUR, THOMAS (3)	727
SHIPMAN, EDWARD (7)	733
SPARROW, RICHARD (3)	763
SPENCER, GERRARD (3, 2, 2 and 3)	769
STILLWELL, JASPER (2)	781
TAYLOR, JOHN (3)	785
THRALL, WILLIAM (3)	793
TRACY, STEPHEN (2)	799
VENTRES, WILLIAM (2)	805
WHITE, ROBERT (2)	809
WOODBURY, JOHN (3)	823
WOODBURY, WILLIAM (4 and 3)	829
WOODWARD, HENRY (2)	841
APPENDIX	851
BIBLE RECORDS	863
INDEX OF NAMES	875
INDEX OF SUBJECTS	909
INDEX OF PLACES SHOWN ON MAPS	913
PERSONAL RECORDS	917

ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS

PLATE NUMBERS		FACING PAGE
I.	MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES	*Frontispiece*
II.	RUFUS R. DAWES	3
III.	CHARLES GATES DAWES, RUFUS CUTLER DAWES, BEMAN GATES DAWES	4
IV.	HENRY MAY DAWES, MARY (DAWES) BEACH, BETSEY (DAWES) HOYT	6
V.	BEMAN[7] GATES	10
VI.	BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES	14
VII.	REVEREND AARON[6] GATES	22
VIII.	HOME AND CHURCH OF REVEREND AARON[6] GATES	26
IX.	FACSIMILE OF A PART OF THE DISTRIBUTION OF THE ESTATE OF DEACON AARON[5] GATES	30
X.	CAPT. WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT	78
XI.	JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT	80
XII.	HENRY[5] BARTLETT	82
XIII.	BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT	86
XIV.	BARTLETT FAMILY GROUP	90
XV.	ENGLISH BAPTISMAL RECORD OF JOHN[1] BARTLETT	94
XVI.	GRAVESTONE OF BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT	272
XVII.	EARLY GRAVES HOME	384
XVIII.	ENGLISH COURT HAND	414
XIX.	FACSIMILE FROM BAPTISMAL RECORD	486
XX.	FACSIMILE FROM COULT JOURNAL	490
XXI.	JOSHUA[5] SHIPMAN	734

FACING PAGE

XXII. SYBIL (CHAPMAN) SHIPMAN 736
XXIII. BETSEY SIBYL[7] SHIPMAN 740
XXIV. CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN 748
XXV. JOANNA H. (BARTLETT) SHIPMAN 752

PAGES

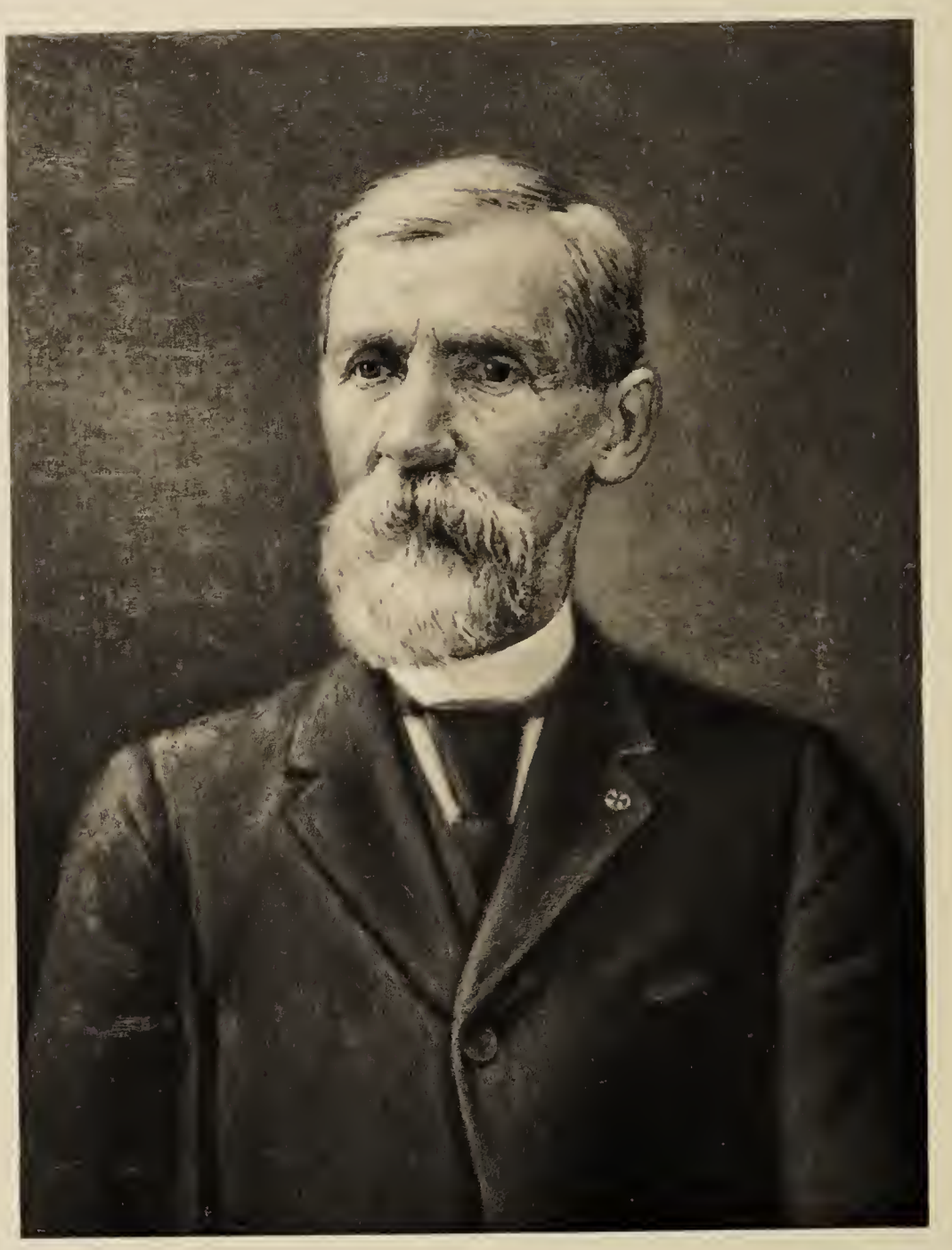
XXVI TO XXIX BARTLETT BIBLE RECORDS 865–8
XXX TO XXXIII SHIPMAN BIBLE RECORDS 869–72

TWENTY-FIVE MAPS COVERING TERRITORY AS FOLLOWS:

MASSACHUSETTS . . . . . pp. 243, 373, 469, 685, 830–1
CONNECTICUT . pp. 35, 195, 469, 487, 511, 569, 613, 627, 645, 677, 773
RHODE ISLAND . . . . . pp. 243, 469
NEW YORK . . . . . pp. 469, 487, 489, 645
NEW JERSEY . . . . . pp. 533, 645
DELAWARE . . . . . pp. 645, 647
VIRGINIA . . . . . pp. 535, 645
PENNSYLVANIA . . . . . pp. 263, 535, 537, 539
EARLY ENGLISH LAND GRANTS . . . . . p. 146
OHIO AND MISSISSIPPI RIVERS . . . . . p. 261

GATES

AND ALLIED FAMILIES



Rufus R. Dawes

PLATE II

MARY BEMAN (GATES) DAWES

A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

BY MARY FRANCES (DAWES) BEACH

MARY BEMAN[8] GATES, to whom this volume is a memorial, was typically an American, for back of her appear in her various lines of ancestry from seven to ten generations resident in this country and, strangely, every line of her ancestry was British. The Pilgrim and Puritan types greatly predominated, though a flavor from Virginia is also found among them. Connecticut, settled by those who resented the restrictions of Massachusetts Bay, is largely represented, thus furnishing a wholesome leaven of independence and of intolerance of undue restraint.

She was born August 27, 1842, in Marietta, Ohio, in a house on the corner of Putnam and Fourth streets (now replaced by the Baptist Church) and died in that town October 28, 1921, at her residence on Fourth Street, just above Wooster Street. She had lived in the meantime in several other houses on that same thoroughfare, so that her home, throughout her whole life of seventy-nine years, centered on one street in this small town. She has left no long list of activities to be recorded but, in a book whose purpose is the tracing of ancestry, it is natural to record deeds that inspire to worthy action and to point out characteristics which are desirable inheritances. A combination of admirable traits gave MARY[8] a colorful and charming personality such as any of her descendants might wish to possess, and the memory and influence of which her children wish to preserve.

MARY[8] GATES attended the public schools in Marietta until her eighteenth year, when she went to the Female Seminary at Ipswich, Massachusetts—a far and difficult journey from Ohio in those days. During the two years she spent there before her graduation she became acquainted with various members of her father's family who still lived in New England. She visited school friends in Maine, saw something of Boston and made a trip up the St. Lawrence and Saguenay rivers. Her father arranged also to have her visit in

New York, Philadelphia and Washington, opportunities which were rarely accorded to Ohio girls in the sixties. Alert and eager, she saw and enjoyed everything. She was an enthusiastic traveler all her life and was unsurpassed as a companion on a journey.

In May, 1863, MARY[8] GATES became engaged to Lieut. Col. RUFUS R.[8] DAWES [see plate II p. 3] of the Sixth Wisconsin, then with the Army of the Potomac before Fredericksburg. The day after the battle of Gettysburg, in which the Sixth Wisconsin lost half its men, Colonel DAWES was twenty-five years old, while the girl to whom he was engaged, trembling at home for his safety, was not yet twenty-one. Six months later Colonel DAWES came on furlough to Marietta where they were married January 18, 1864, and it became the part of the young wife at home to follow with mental anguish the varying fortunes of her husband through the fearful fighting of the succeeding summer. In after years she could seldom bring herself to speak of these months when she waited and watched for news from the front.

Colonel DAWES, brevetted Brigadier General, returned to his wife from the war unscathed, but her only brother, who had enlisted at nineteen with the Hundred Day men, died on his way to the front.

On her twenty-third birthday her first son was born. He was named "Charles Gates"[9] Dawes [see plate III p. 4], in memory of that brother, the young soldier who had been the inseparable companion of her youth, and whose untimely death the year before had been such a severe blow. The second son, Rufus Cutler[9] Dawes [see plate III p. 4], and the third son, Beman Gates[9] Dawes [see plate III p. 4], were born in the cottage on Fourth Street which their father built on returning from the war. Here the family lived until 1871 when they moved into the home above Wooster Street where the three remaining children, Mary Frances (Dawes) Beach [see plate IV p. 6], Henry May[9] Dawes [see plate IV p. 6], and Betsey (Dawes) Hoyt [see plate IV p. 6], joined the family circle. Here for fifty years MARY (GATES) DAWES lived and made a home for her family. In 1882 General DAWES wrote to his daughter:

> "No place on earth will ever be like the home that in these years of toil, of love, of sacrifice and of care your mother, our good angel in life, has made for us. You will always look back to it with longings whatever good comes to you in life, because it has been a happy home to you, and so will every one of the boys."

When General DAWES was fifty years old he suffered a serious nervous breakdown which culminated eventually in a partial paralysis and for the

Charles Gates Dawes

Rufus Cutler Dawes

Beman Gates Dawes

last three years of his life he was confined to a wheel-chair; yet he was unfailingly cheerful. MARY, his wife, seldom left home during this period, and she used this opportunity for the fullest expression of her joyous and buoyant nature. This service of companionship and care was the capsheaf of a life of unselfishness and she found her greatest happiness in making her husband happy. He wrote significantly of her during this time:

> "Your mother is getting her teeth fixed, and 'extracting' a little enjoyment out of it as she does out of everything."

General DAWES died in 1899 and MARY lived twenty-two years longer in their much-loved home. These years were filled with the pleasures of travel in Europe, the Near East and her own country. In August, 1911, while visiting at the home of her son, MARY broke her hip and never walked again without crutches. This put not the least damper on her delight in life or her intellectual interests and did not even stop her traveling. In her Line-A-Day she wrote on August 14, 1920:

> "Anniversary of my accident—9 years—and I must say they could not have been happier ones."

She once said that she knew nobody who could spare a leg better than she. She visited the homes of her children at intervals, but her own and their old home she made so exhilarating, so gay, so sympathetic, that her children and grandchildren came to it constantly, and she was not often alone. Her six children were now increased by marriage to twelve and she loved them all with unfailing ardor and sympathy. Her twenty-four grandchildren she loved as truly and as well.

Both her feelings and her actions were marked by enthusiasm and energy. In a letter written from Portland, Maine, where she and her husband attended a reunion of the Army of the Potomac in 1890, she wrote:

> "Our steamer ran right up by the side of the Baltimore, and such hurrahing! —turn about from each boat, our brass band playing the Star Spangled Banner and both boats' crews joined in singing the chorus. When I sit quietly in my room at home and think of our flag and our American Eagle and so forth, I am impressed and ashamed at my want of patriotism, but when I get in a crowd and especially a crowd of old soldiers and cripples and hear a brass band and hurrahing —why I am just crazy and could fight, bleed and die with the best of them."

MARY had unlimited capacity for family affection. She said in a letter to one of her daughters:

> "All I needed to make me happy was to know that my children were well and happy, in spite of your father's poor legs and my crooked face (facial paralysis)

which I know is getting worse all the time. Why can't I stop laughing and talking? Well it's a very little thing after all and I'm not going to try to stop till the dear Lord himself stops me."

In a letter to one of her children, she wrote:

"Nothing of good came into my life but I felt my feet could not carry me fast enough to tell my mother—and everything unpleasant I religiously kept from her. I do not want you to follow my example in this for I want to live your life with you, the good and the bad alike."

She wrote on one of her birthdays:

"In the beautiful moonlight Henry drove me up to the cemetery and I carried up all my birthday roses and felt I was giving them to your Father. Dear, dear, man, did he know and rejoice over my happy day and how our dear children are spoiling me?"

MARY, like her mother, BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, was possessed of a delightful sense of humor, and it ran enjoyably through the conversation and letters of them both but was more exuberant in the daughter. Her droll phrases and whimsical fancies constantly stirred those about her to mirth. Perhaps no trait of hers was more highly prized by her family than this unfailing and delectable one, and if coming generations could select their forebears they might well choose to descend from MARY (GATES) DAWES in the hope of inheriting her sense of humor.

Her life was crowned by the lives of her children, who call her blessed. Zest for life, in the hearts of those who knew her, is keener because of that knowledge, and high courage and abounding spirits will be the heritage of her descendants, perhaps for many generations. [See Gates, p. 29].

Henry May Dawes

Mary (Dawes) Beach

Betsey (Dawes) Hoyt

GATES

* † ‡ [128] George Gates c.1634–1724	m c.1660–1	Sarah Olmstead 1641–1709
† ‡ [64] Joseph Gates 1662–1712	m c.1694	Elizabeth Hungerford c.1670–1759
‡ [32] Joseph Gates 1695–6–1770	m 1719	Hannah Brainerd 1694–1744
‡ [16] Bezaleel Gates 1726–1802	m 1750	Mary Brainerd 1727–1796
‡ § [8] Aaron Gates 1753–1821	m 1776	Elizabeth Johnson c.1756–1816
§ ‖ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
‖ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Hartford, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

GATES

AND ALLIED FAMILIES

GATES

GEORGE[1] GATES, of English origin, came to New England as a youth and settled at Hartford, Connecticut,[1] where he remained for some years. He was born about 1634 and emigrated [at about the age of seventeen, tradition says] to be in the care of NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD, for whom he doubtless worked and whose eldest daughter, SARAH[3], he subsequently married about 1660.

Of the life of GEORGE[1] GATES one of his descendants writes thus:

> GEORGE GATES was reared from youth to manhood among the old Chelmsford [England] parishioners of Thomas Hooker, now unshackled in Hartford and under the impress of that enlightened and powerful mind; and no one can fail to see in the East Haddam Gates families . . . a life direction given by the character and preaching of Thomas Hooker and by the influence of his Hartford flock.
>
> There Hooker lived and died as pastor. He stamped an impress, civic and religious, upon the city of Hartford, the state of Connecticut and the Constitution of the United States, that time can never efface.
>
> In going over the interesting inventory of the household effects of GEORGE GATES preserved among the Hartford probate records I find among his treasures, besides his Bible, "Eleven Sermon Books." This fact is extremely significant. The Puritans had few books. Many of them could not read. Their few and costly books were imported from London. The boy GEORGE could not have brought them with him. We can not resist the conclusion that GEORGE GATES purchased these books of Puritan sermons wherever he might, out of conscious hunger of mind and soul. If so, he had imagination. He lived in the unseen. Puritan sermons were long, involved, abstract, weighted with fine theological distinctions and sinuosities, dry-as-dust, unreadable to us moderns. What an intellectual hunger that could feed on these husks! What an orgy would have been GEORGE GATES's could he have been turned loose in a modern library!

Seven of the descendants of GEORGE GATES succeed each other almost in line and cover a total of eighty-three years of service as town clerks. When the townspeople wanted a man, approachable and affable, with legible penmanship, with spelling nearly right, and the art of setting down resolutions and recitals of fact in correct and lucid English, they chose one of the Gateses for nearly a hundred years. All this means a hereditary taste for books and the habit of reading handed down from father to son and running in the family. We see it in GEORGE GATES and his "Eleven Sermon Books," and this studious tendency is outstanding in many of his descendants to this day.

On the Founders Monument in Hartford eight of our ancestors* are named[11] but, though GEORGE[1] GATES was there from about 1652 to 1662, his name was not included on that Memorial, probably because of his youth and his removal in 1662 as one of the twenty-eight original proprietors of Haddam.†

The only recorded public service rendered by him in Hartford was[1a] in 1661 as fire-inspector or marshal, then called "chimney viewer," for the early laws of that town required that all chimneys should be cleaned and inspected at stated intervals and that a barrel of water and a ladder should be kept in a convenient place near each home to check a fire readily in its incipiency [see Ackley, p. 34].

A settlement at Haddam was contemplated[2,4] in 1660, and on October 4 of that year a committee was appointed by the General Assembly to "view the place" and, if it were suitable, to buy lands there from the Indians.[3] For some unexplained reason negotiations were not completed for nearly two years but finally an Indian deed[8a] was made on May 20, 1662, conveying lands lying along the Connecticut River for a distance of about six miles and extending about six miles both easterly and westerly from it. The consideration was thirty red coats, worth[4] probably about $100. Settlement was begun on this tract in 1662 and most of the twenty-eight original proprietors were from Hartford.

This locality was first called Thirty Mile Island, from the belief that an island lying within this purchase was that distance from the sea, but the name Haddam[8a] was formally applied in 1668. At first the settlers were all located on the west side of the river [see map on p. 773], where each had a house-lot fronting on that stream and an added amount of ground west therefrom across the highway.[5]

*These were[11] JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, MATTHEW[1] MARVIN, GEORGE[1] GRAVES, JOHN[1] CLARKE, STEPHEN[1] POST, WILLIAM[1] PRATT, THOMAS[1] BLISS and RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR.

†Eight of these Haddam pioneers were our ancestors, viz.: GEORGE[1] GATES, NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY, DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, WILLIAM[1] CLARKE, DANIEL[1] CONE, GERRARD[1] SPENCER, JOHN[2] SPENCER and WILLIAM[1] VENTRES.

Beman Gates

The home plot of GEORGE[1] contained four acres and lay north of and next to that of Joseph Arnold who, in February, 1667, donated a part of his lot as the site for the temporary minister's home. One of the first assignments of land at Haddam had been the setting aside of a portion "for the minister that shal first setle here" and it is described as "Reserved for the minestrie for ever."[8a] This evidently was intended to apply to an ordained and comparatively permanent minister rather than to the supply whom Arnold planned to accommodate. This man left the town soon after, or perhaps even before, the house was completed, so it was temporarily used for a meeting-house, but on December 7, following, a decision relative to a permanent building and location was thus voted: "At the same setting it was a Greed and notted by the in habytantes that the settled plas whear the meting houes shall be bilt is at the frunt of the minestryes Lote in the Litell medowe Lying a gainest the eand of the hom lote of Joseph Arnuld, that now he dwelles in." This plot was also used as a burying-ground. The fact that the church was the center of every community makes it evident that the Gates home was well located. The back lot granted to GEORGE[1] was directly west across the highway from his house and consisted of five acres.[2, 23]

He was identified with this church from its earliest inception. It appears that on November 21, 1670, the building was not yet erected, for on that date a vote was taken "that the toune will bilde a metting-houes" and GEORGE[1] was one of "a comitte for ordering of the same" with "full Power to calle out all the inhabytantes to worke about it, a Cording to their proporsiones." In January, 1683, he and DANIEL[1] BRAINERD were chosen "to goe to new London and speake with Mr. John James in reference to procuring him to be our minester."[8a] This first meeting-house was only twenty-four by twenty-eight feet in size.[8a]

GEORGE[1] was a freeman of Haddam in October, 1669, and served as "Townsman" at that time[5a, 6] and as selectman[6a] in 1681. For some time the inhabitants made no extensive land divisions but held their cultivated fields, pastures and timber lands in common, owning individually only a home-lot and a few other small parcels, one of which was in the "Equal Division" lying on the east side of the river.[2] The location of all the early dwellings upon the west bank, only, of the stream is easily explained by the necessity of mutual protection against the Indian menace, and not until the strength of the community increased was it deemed advisable to divide their strength by occupying the lands across the river. At an early day the division of common

lands was under discussion, in 1670 it was resolved upon and on June 13, 1671, it was decided that twenty acres should be laid out to every £100 of estimated valuation of the inhabitants' estates. GEORGE[1] and another were chosen to appraise all new buildings and to prepare a list as a basis for the apportionments. In this case the individuals drew lots to decide the order of selection of these tracts and GEORGE[1] secured second choice.[2] In connection with the valuation of estates, it is interesting to note that a committee appointed in 1676 to appraise lands in the several towns of the state rated Haddam home-lots at 15s per acre, one quarter of the improved meadow lands at 30s, and the other three-quarters at 20s, and other uplands cleared for tillage at 8s. On this or a similar scale of estimation made June 2, 1688, "GORGE GATS" received meadow land at "Machamoodus" [see map on p. 195] for an estate valued[8] at £109–19–0.

A committee including DANIEL[1] BRAINERD was appointed to "laye out high wayes for townes use they haveing dunne them as heire they stand entred. . . . One high way by the south side of GEORGE GATESES lote and by Mr. Batesis lote neare James Wellesis Lote so south and be west tordes the Lote of the widow blachfordes* to the end of the boundes ten rods wide. . . ."[2]

About 1670 a number of the Haddam people, including GEORGE[1] GATES and his family, removed to the town land on the east side of the river and built homes in what was called "Creek Row," forming the nucleus of what later became East Haddam.[2,4] On October 14, 1697, he and his son JOSEPH[2] and others dwelling in this new location petitioned the General Court that they might become a separate church and call a minister.[6] The Court appointed a committee to investigate the ability of Haddam to support two ministers and to report the following May. At this time Captain GEORGE[1] GATES "appeared in Court to prosecute his petition formerly exhibited . . ." but the committee reported adversely[6] and these two groups of settlers remained one religious society until about 1700, when that on the east side was permitted "to act as a society" by itself. Beginning with 1704, each did its own business separately and kept distinct records.[8a] GEORGE[1] and his son JOSEPH[2] were among the seven constituent members[8a] of the new congregation. Apprehensions arose, however, lest this divided action were not

*The widow Blatchford was Hannah[2] Willey (Isaac[1]), who had married first, about 1658, at New London, as his second wife, THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD; married secondly, Peter[1] Blatchford; and married thirdly, in 1673, Samuel[2] Spencer (GERRARD[1]).[49]

thoroughly legal, so in 1710 the town as a whole signed new articles of agreement covering this matter and secured the sanction of the General Court to its decision. This condition continued until May, 1734, when the town was absolutely divided into Haddam and East Haddam conformably to the religious societies.[4] The Gates family is called a "family of deacons" for at least five of its members held this office in the East Haddam church[1a, 4] by 1806.

For many years after the settlement of East Haddam the people carried their dead across the river to Haddam for burial. About 1700 a funeral party crossed the cove and the narrow peninsula of Haddam Neck and attempted to pass over the river, but it had overflowed its banks and the floating ice made the use of boats an impossibility. Slowly and sadly the friends retraced their steps through the snow and buried their dear one in the forest in a romantic spot a little back from the cove. Thus was started the Cove Burial Ground, which continued in use and is now known as Grave Yard Point. It is situated about one and one-half miles north of the landing and contains the graves of many Gates, Ackleys, Brainerds and Cones, including some persons from whom we descend.[2]

GEORGE[1] was of great service to his community in a public way, for between 1668 and 1702 he attended at least fifty-two sessions of the General Assembly as a representative for Haddam,[7] from 1690 to 1698 was commissioner from that place,[7a] in 1698 was town clerk[2] and 1701–4 was a Justice of the Peace for Hartford County.[7b]

A communication dated October 15, 1688, sent to Edmund Andros, then acting-governor [see Chapman, p. 187], asked that the militia organization under "Ensign GEORG GATES of Hadum" be called the 9th Company.[9] Again in June and August, 1689, he was called "Ensign"; on October 10 of that year he was appointed and confirmed lieutenant of the Haddam train-band; and on May 12, 1692, was commissioned captain of it, holding this position until October 14, 1697, when, upon his own desire and "in consideration of his age and infirmities of body" he was "discharged of his Captainship in the town of Haddum."[9]

The General Court ordered, May 12, 1698, that William Scovie, who had been wounded in the late "expedition to the eastward," be placed under an able surgeon and maintained at the "countrey charge till he is cured." Captain GEORGE[1] GATES and DANIEL[1] BRAINERD were appointed to see that this was done.[9]

Throughout his life GEORGE[1] was frequently requested to assist in probate matters. One case in which he witnessed the will and inventoried the estate holds especial interest for us, since it divided the property of Richard Piper, a near neighbor [see map on p. 773] and presumably an unmarried man, among a number of the young people of the community, including two of our ancestors. This document was dated in March, 1677–8, and contained, among others, bequests to "Sarah Gates Jr., a one year old Heifer," "SUSANNAH VENTRUS my Bible," and "JOHN ACKLY a mare,"[10] of whom the last two were our progenitors. In June, 1681, he witnessed the will[6a] of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE and in August, 1681, took the inventory of that man's estate, assisted by WILLIAM[1] VENTRES and JOHN[2] SPENCER. On May 13, 1703, GEORGE[1] GATES was chairman of a committee acting for Haddam before the General Court. He was called "magistrate" and "the leading public man of the town."[35]

His wife, SARAH (OLMSTEAD) GATES [see Olmstead, p. 618], died in 1709, and tradition says that he lived thereafter with their eldest son, JOSEPH[2], who undoubtedly worked the home place until his death in 1711–2, a dozen years before that of his father. GEORGE[1] lived to welcome the advent of sixty grandchildren,* and four more were born after his death.

He died November 12, 1724, aged 89–90, at East Haddam, being the survivor of the original twenty-eight proprietors of Haddam,[35] and the administration of his estate was granted January 5, following to his son Thomas[2]. The Court appointed appraisers and at first ordered that the portion of his property already distributed by deed of gift to various heirs be estimated at their value when given, but on March 22, 1724–5, reversed that requirement to read that they should be appraised at their "present value." On June 1, 1725, the report rendered to the court showed that the heirs had formerly received £986–17–2, that debts had been paid amounting to £55–6–6, and that there remained for distribution £407–15–11, making a total valuation of £1460–8–1, which was an especially large property for that time. The estate was finally closed[10] on December 7, 1725.

The children of GEORGE[1] and SARAH (OLMSTEAD) GATES, all born at Haddam or East Haddam, were[1, 4, 18, 37, 40]

*Two Gates boys, cousins of each other and grandsons of GEORGE[1], and a third who was nephew of one of these and cousin once removed of the other, married three Fuller sisters whose mother was Sarah[2] Gates, and who were in each case cousins of their husbands,[13] viz.: Sarah[4] Fuller (Timothy[3], Samuel[2], Matthew[1]) married John[3] Gates (JOSEPH[2], GEORGE[1]); Ann[4] Fuller, sister of Sarah[4] above, married Samuel[3] Gates (Samuel[2], GEORGE[1]); Abigail[4] Fuller, sister of Sarah[4] and Ann[4], married Joseph[4] Gates (JOSEPH[3], JOSEPH[2], GEORGE[1]).

Betsey (Shipman) Gates

I. JOSEPH[2], see following.
II. Thomas[2], b. January 21, 1664–5; d. April 20, 1734, in his 70th year,[37] at East Haddam; m. October 3, 1692, Hannah[2] Brainerd (DANIEL[1]).[12].
III. John[2], b. April 5, 1668; d. after October 4, 1742; m. (—).
IV. Sarah[2], b. March 16, 1670; d. about 1712; m., about 1694, Timothy[3] Fuller (Samuel[2], Matthew[1]).[13]
V. Mary[2], b. March 16, 1674; d. May 12, 1742, at East Haddam; m. there, February 14, 1693, Daniel[2] Cone (DANIEL[1]).[14]
VI. George[2], b. August 16, 1677, infirm.
VII. Daniel[2], b. March 4, 1680; d. November 24, 1761; m., 1705, Rebecca[3] Dutton (Joseph[2], Thomas[1]).[1, 17]
VIII. Samuel[2], b. November 8, 1683; d.[10a] July 31, 1737, in his fifty-sixth year; m., about 1710–1, Esther [doubtless Hungerford[38] (THOMAS[2], THOMAS[1]) whose sister ELIZABETH[3] m. his brother]. She was b. 1687, bap. October 12, 1712, with her infant child and d.[37] May 15, 1749.

JOSEPH[2] GATES (*George*[1]) was born November 7, 1662, at Haddam and died March 18, 1711–2, at East Haddam. He married, probably at that place, about 1694, ELIZABETH[3] HUNGERFORD [see Hungerford, p. 481].[1, 18, 19, 40, 50]

He is infrequently recorded as taking part in public life but he was in full communion with the Haddam Church[6, 35] as early as 1697, and with his father became one of the seven constituent members of the East Haddam Society in 1704, where his wife was baptized[16a, 18] on October 7 or 8 of that year. JOSEPH[2] was a farmer[12] and, as eldest son, would doubtless have inherited the home farm of his father if he had survived the latter. One naturally draws the conclusion that death came rather suddenly to him for he left no will, was under fifty years of age and passed on but a few days before the birth of his youngest daughter. This child, whom his wife named Patience[3], was baptized when two days old,[18] on March 23, 1712, and was then called the "child of JOSEPH GATES' relict."[1, 16a]

In addition to the sum of more than £324 received by his heirs in 1725 [from the estate[10] of his father, GEORGE[1]], JOSEPH[2] left an estate valued at £332–14–00, the inventory of which was taken by his brother Thomas[2], DANIEL[1] BRAINERD and Daniel[2] Cone. The administration was granted on June 2, 1712, to his widow, ELIZABETH, and on July 2, 1717, she exhibited an account of her trust, which was allowed, and the property was ordered distributed. She was to receive one-third, JOSEPH[3], the eldest son, a double share, and the other children each equal single shares. At this time Captain Thomas[2] Gates was appointed guardian to John[3], aged 19, and Sarah[3], aged 17, and their mother, called[19] "ELIZABETH GATES of Hartford," became guardian of Jonathan[3], aged 14, Susannah[3], aged 12, Jacob[3], aged 9, Samuel[3]

aged 9, and Patience[3], aged 5. It has not been learned whether or not ELIZABETH spent the remainder of her life at Hartford but she died November 17, 1759, "in her eighty-ninth year."[18]

The children of JOSEPH[2] and ELIZABETH (HUNGERFORD) GATES, all born at East Haddam, were[1, 15, 16a, 18]

I. JOSEPH[3], see following.
II. Elizabeth[3], b. May 23, 1697; m. Joshua Arnold[18] of Haddam.
III. John[3], b. September 20, 1698; m. Westchester Parish, Colchester, Connecticut, April 19, 1722, Sarah[4] Fuller (Timothy[3], Samuel[2], Matthew[1]), his first cousin.[12, 13]
IV. Sarah[3], b. August 20, 1700; living 1717 but "probably died before 1735."[40]
V. Jonathan[3], b. December 17, 1703, bap. May 21, 1704; m. July 16, 1747, Susannah[5] Olmstead (John[4], Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]).[11, 12]
VI. Susannah[3], b. September 21, bap. October 15, 1705; d. April 29, 1793; m. December 24, 1730, Stephen[3] Brainerd (DANIEL[2], DANIEL[1]).[12]
VII. Jacob[3], b. July 10, bap. August 10, 1708; d. June 20, 1789, "aged 80" in Millington parish of East Haddam; m. 1st, Thankful (—); m. 2nd, October 13, 1763, Mary Stewart, who d. January 20, 1793, aged fifty-three.[50]
VIII. Samuel[3], b. March 29, bap. April 2, 1710; d. August 25, 1801; he is said[44] to have m. April 19, 1739, his cousin Esther[3] Gates (Samuel[2], GEORGE[1]). Her death is said[44] to have occurred August 26, 1757, and a Samuel Gates [probably this one] m. at Millington April 5, 1764 or 1765, Rachel (Dutton) Willey, dau.[33] of Samuel and Rachel (Cone) Dutton.
IX. Patience[3], b. March 21 [not 31], bap.[1, 18] March 23, 1712; d. February 22, 1799; m. April 15, 1736, Nathaniel[5] Foote (Nathaniel[4], Nathaniel[3], Nathaniel[2], NATHANIEL[1]).[43]

JOSEPH[3] GATES (*Joseph*[2], *George*[1]) was born December 28, 1695 or 1696, at East Haddam,[15] baptized July 25, 1697, at Middletown,[18] and died[37] November 1, 1770, in his seventy-third year, at the former place.[12, 18] He married there January 8, 1718–9, HANNAH[3] BRAINERD[12] [see Brainerd, p. 137]. He resided in "Creek Row" and was usually called[18] "Sergeant JOSEPH." A Lieutenant Joseph Gates, found serving[24] in the French and Indian War in the campaign of 1756, was probably this man.

His wife joined the East Haddam Church on November 7, 1725, and he did likewise on March 7, 1730–1. We of the present day little realize the inconveniences endured, yet ignored, by young and old of those times in their faithful worship on the Sabbath. Their physical comfort was but slightly considered. The sermon in the morning, approximately two hours long, followed by a second one of similar duration in the afternoon, during which appointed officers kept the elders from sleeping and the youth from play or any inattention, required not only patience but endurance as well. The only means of furnishing heat was by the use of foot-stoves which had been

brought from home in the morning filled with live coals from the hearth and perhaps replenished between services at the fireplace of someone living near the church. As the congregations grew, their comfort required more accommodation than the generosity the few near-by homes could supply, and various towns met this need by action toward the establishment of "Sabba' Day" houses, as shown by this measure on January 13, 1737: "Voted to grant liberty to any of the inhabitants of Haddam to build and set up small houses on the common or town land anywhere within the half mile [of the church] for their conveniency and comfort on the Lord's Day provided they in no ways damnifie any highway."[23] Many of these buildings were undoubtedly put up by several families in common, who stored there barrels of cider, loads of wood and other conveniences toward their Sabbath intermission. The "Sabba' Day" houses thus became an important factor in the social life of various communities throughout New England. There the members of the congregations could thoroughly warm themselves, relax from the close attention required by religious custom, visit discreetly with their neighbors, eat their lunches and fill their foot-stoves.[22] Not only was there much personal restraint within the church during services, but also danger from without, and for forty or fifty years after the formation of Haddam the people carried their firearms when they went to worship.

In 1733–4 Elias Purple, a minor, chose JOSEPH[3] GATES as his guardian, and in July, 1740, the latter and others were appointed to take the inventory of the estate of Nathaniel Lord.[20] JOSEPH[3] was a selectman in 1740–1 and a farmer by occupation.[18] As trial came to his mother, the widow ELIZABETH, in the early loss of her husband just before the birth of her daughter Patience[3], so deep sorrow came to him in the loss[16] of three young children in less than a week, in 1740, of a fourth child in 1742, and of their mother in 1744. He and his wife, and very probably his children, are said to have been buried in the Cove cemetery.[18, 37]

The children of JOSEPH[3] and HANNAH (BRAINERD) GATES, all born in East Haddam, were[12, 16, 16a, 18, 40, 50]

I. Hannah[4], b. November 16, 1719, bap. November 14, 1725; d. after July 3, 1761; m. March 6, 1745–6, Ebenezer[4] Spencer (John[3], Samuel[2], GERRARD[1]).[39]

II. Joseph[4], b. March 28, 1722, bap. November 14, 1725; d. April 17, 1808; m. December 4, 1746, Abigail[4] Fuller (Timothy[3], Samuel[2], Matthew[1]).[13]

III. Elizabeth[4], b. August 12, 1724; bap. November 14, 1725; d.[37] September 16, 1802, being recorded as "Pious and Amiable," m. June 20, 1745, Jonah[4] Cone (Daniel[3], Daniel[2], DANIEL[1]).[12, 14]

iv. BEZALEEL[4], see following.
v. Susannah[4], b. November 24, 1730, bap. January 3, 1730–1; d. May 25, 1742.
vi. Aaron[4], b. October 20, bap. October 28, 1733; d. August 14, 1740.
vii. Ann[4], twin with Aaron, d. August 18, 1740.
viii. David[4], b. April 18, bap. June 3, 1738; d. August 12, 1740.

BEZALEEL[4] GATES (*Joseph*[3], *Joseph*[2], *George*[1]) was born October 14, 1726, at East Haddam,[16] baptized November 20, following,[16a, 18] and died at that place March 28, 1802, in his seventy-fifth year.[12, 18, 37] He married there, February 26, 1749–50, MARY[4] BRAINERD, his first cousin[12] [see Brainerd, p. 139]. She joined the church[18] on February 4, 1753.

He was made ensign[21] of the second company or train-band in the 12th Connecticut regiment on May 9, 1771, and his brother Joseph[4] was made lieutenant of the same unit at the same time[13, 21] by the General Assembly. At an East Haddam town meeting held December 7, 1778, he was chosen one of a "Committee to provide Such Clothing for the Soldiers in Continental Service as they are or shall be enabled to: by Resolve of the Assembly or of this Town."[23] In addition to his service at home, at least three of his sons, Bezaleel[5], AARON[5] and Henry[5], were actively engaged in warfare, during which Henry[5] lost his life from disease.[25, 26]

The trying conditions of the Revolutionary period and the way the minds of the people reacted to them are forcibly shown by the following extracts from the East Haddam town records[34] which give a fair picture of the problems faced and decisions made by BEZALEEL[4] GATES and his sons, together with our contemporaneous ancestors in every other family:

> "At a Town Meeting Legally Warned and held in East Haddam, March 26, 1770. . . . The Inhabitants of the Town of East Haddam in Town meeting Legally Assembled taking into consideration the Weighty Dangerous Controversy Subsisting between Great Britain and these Colonies in Point of Right a Controversy big With Consequences of the Utmost Importance to the Welfare of Both Countries & may Prove the Ruin of Both unless Some happy Means are Devised to prevent it, and amongst the Various Plans proposed & Means Devised None appear More likely to bring the affair to a happy Issue than the Late Vertuous Agreement of the Merchants on the Continent in Regard to the Non Importation of English Goods, almost Universally entered into (except by a growling few Who Justly Deserve the Contempt of Every Honest Man) Which agreement We Heartily approve of and Do greatfully Thank each Vertuous Merchant who has Subscribed the same and Indeed we look upon it as our Sheet Anchor in the present Storm Which seems to hover over us, and therefore are Jealous of every thing that has the least appearance of prostrating said agreement and Lately Some reports have been spread of Some of the Merchants in this Town to their on that score Whether true or false we know not and in order

to Set that affair in its true Light we think it best to appoint a Com'tt Carefully to Inspect into the Conduct of all Sellers and Buyers of English goods and More especially Critically to Examine those Merchants Suspected as aforesaid (if they see cause to Submit to an Examination; and that the Same bee a Standing Com'tt for said purpose and that they Make Report to this Meeting. . . ."

"At a Town Meeting Legally Warned and held in East Haddam July the 9th 1770 . . . it Was Voted that the present Selectmen should erect & Build Some Suitable House in Some Suitable place in order to store the Town Stock of Powder Lead &c in at the expense of the Town." At the meeting held September 6th 1770 ". . . it was Voted to colour the Powder House Lately Built White upon the cost of theTown."

"And Whereas there has been a late Meeting of Many Principle Merchants of this Colony at Middletown in Which a Plan Was begun Which we Most Heartily approve, and apprehend may be of the Happiest Consequence and in Order to promote & further said Plan We are Unanimously agreed and Do heartily recommend it to two or three from amonghst the Merchants and Farmers in this town to attend their Next meeting at Hartford. . . ."

It appears from the record that the above named meeting was adjourned till the "9th day of April at 4 of the Clock afternoon," when "Gibbon Jewet was Chosen a Com'tt with Doctor Thomas Mosely, Dan'l Brainerd, and Jabez Chapman to Examine the Traders and take Care to Inquire if there be any Goods Come into this Town Contrary to the agreement of the Merchants." . . .

"The inhabitants of the Town of East Haddam Legally and in full meeting convened having a Long Time and with the greatest Concern and Attention Observed the Unhappy Dispute Subsisting Between G't Britain and the Colonies relative to the Right of Taxation and with Carefulness and Impartiality harkened to the many Arguments and Reasons offered the Public on the Subject by the most able & Eminent Men in Great Britain and America which Reasons and Arguments of both sides being Duly Weighed the argument against Taxation appearing so greatly to preponderate That we had not the least Doubt in our Mind but that the Oppressive Taxation Would be Countermanded Especially after Several Petitions & Remonstrances from the Different Colonies in America should have been heard. But to our Great Surprise we find the Authority not only Determined to Continue those Taxes but to treat humble Remonstrances and Petitions Coming from the most faithful and Loyall Subjects as Seditious Mutinous and Enemitous to Good Government therefore think it needless to enter on a further Discussion of the Rights and privileges of those Colonies Since they have been so Judicially Canvassed by the Most Wise and Sensible Men in the Nation Shall Content Our Selves by saying No more than that we find our Rights Privileges and Money Wrested from us & we unjustly oppressed by those Whom the Ties of Nature & Trade urge to be one United and happy People.

"Viewing ourselves under these Disfavorable Circumstances our Petitions and Complaint treated with Contempt Insulted by petty officers appointed to Extort what little Cash we have Circulating among us under a pretext of Defraying American Charges (which no Doubt of Late are Greatly Increased) by Which Means we are desenabled to Carry on a foreign Trade to any Advantage. In this Miserable Condition we are led to put in Practice that first

Law of Nature, Self Preservation, which can be affected in a Constitutional way only by a Disuse of British and Encouragement of American Manufactories. It is with Pleasure we hear the Laudable Attempts and Resolutions of Several principal Towns in the Several Colonies on the Continent & some in this Colony for the Encouraging American Manufactories more of which we hoped to have Seen that we might have appeared in a more proper Succession but having Earnestly engaged in this affair could not any longer conceal our intentions & Desires for the accomplishing Projections so Beneficial. The Conduct of the Reputable Merchants lately convened at Middletown is Very agreeable to us . . . also Voted . . . a Com'tt of Inspection to see that no Importation is made contrary to the Spirit and Meaning of the non Importation agreement.

"Voted and Resolved that we will have no Commercial Connections or Friendly Communications With Such as shall act Contrary to the Non Importation Agreement and that the Inspectors do give Due Notice of any that shall be guilty of S'd Breach Directly or Indirectly in the most public Places in the Town and in the New London Gazette Voted in the affirmative Test.

Dan'l Brainard, Town Clerk."

"At a Town Meeting Legally Warned and held in East Haddam January 5th 1775 . . . the Committee of Inspection Chosen November 17, 1774 Made Report Relating to a Complaint that Had been Exhibitted to them by Sundry Inhabitants of Said Town against Doctor Abner Beebee of Said Town for being Inimical to the Liberty of these American Colonies . . . Voted at the Same Meeting that We accept & approve of the Report of the Com'tt Respecting Doctr Abner Beebee and that we shall hold him to be enimical to the Colonies & will Break of all Connections by way of Trade &c. With said Beebee & all those that Shall have any Connection With him as aforesaid untill Said Beebee Shall Comply & Sign the Confession S'd Com'tt Drew for him to sign & then we Will Restore him to his former favor and We Desire S'd Com'tt to Advertise What is Done in the New London Gazette. . . ."

"At a Town Meeting Legally Warned and Held in East Haddam November the 17th A. D. 1774. . . . This Meeting Taking into Consideration the Association of the General Congress* held at Philadelphia on September Past Which is Recommended by the Honorable Representatives of this Colony Do fully Approve of said Association and Voted and Agreed Unanimously that we will Comport therewith and that . . . be a Committee to Inspect Agreeable to the 11th Article in Said Association And also Voted that said Committee Examine & Hear all Complaints Against Any Person or persons that are enemical to the English Constitution and Desire to introduce a more Arbitrary & Tyrannical form of Government Different from What Hath Been Generally Enjoyed since the Revolution Brought about under God by King William and Queen Mary A. D. 1688 Until the Present Reign and have or shall try to Undermine the Privileges of this Colony; And that said Committee publish to said Town What they Shall find.

"At a Town Meeting Held in East Haddam on the 24th day of March 1777 . . . it was Resolved and agreed and we Do Mutually Pledge our Faith

*Constitutional Convention.

Each to the Other Strictly to adhere to the Law of this State Regarding Prices and that we will Use our joint and Several Influences to Support and Maintain the Same; in our General Spheres and Capacities. We are Sensable we Cannot Vote out a Law of this State But all we Mean is to Shew our Actual Hearty Compliance with the Before one mentioned act, and pledge our Faith Each to the other to see the same faithfully executed."

"At a Town Meeting held in East Haddam January the 6th A.D. 1778 . . . The Article Proposed by Congress of Confederation and Perpetual Union between The States of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhod Island and Providence Plantation: Connecticut: New York: New Jersey: Penselvania: Delaware: Maryland; Virginia: North Carolina: South Carolina and Georgia; Being Repeatedly read and Explained to This Meeting and After due and Mature Consideration—Voted Unanimously That this Meeting does highly approve: of: and Consent to Said Articles: and that this Vote be recorded: and a True Copy thereof: Properly Attested: be Delivered by the Town Clerk to the Representatives of this Town."[34]

These vigorous resolutions voiced by the elders, including BEZALEEL[4], were valiantly supported by the younger men of the community, among whom were his sons AARON[5], Bezaleel[5] and Henry[5].

The estate of BEZALEEL[4], amounting to more than $4300, was distributed February 25, 1803, to his children AARON[5], Noadiah B.[5], Oliver[5], Hannah[5], Sybil[5] and Esther[5], and to the heirs of his son Bezaleel[5] and of his daughter Mary (Gates) Spencer, both deceased.[50]

The children of BEZALEEL[4] and MARY (BRAINERD) GATES, all born in East Haddam, were[12, 16a, 18, 26, 40, 50]

I. Hannah[5], b. May 24, 1750, bap. April 22, 1753; d. unm. January 10 or 11, 1827, aged seventy-five.
II. Bezaleel[5], b. October 2, 1751; d. January 23 or 24, 1789; m. July 6, 1775, Helen Wilder.[30, 52]
III. Harriet[5], bap. May 22, 1753; not named in father's will; probably d. young.
IV. AARON[5], see following.
V. Mary[5], b. November 9, bap. December 28, 1755; d. before her father; m. Amasa[5] Spencer (Jonathan[4], Micajah[3], William[2], GERRARD[1]).
VI. Henry[5], b. September 30, bap. November 13, 1757; d. of disease in the Revolutionary Army about 1778.
VII. Sybil[5], b. March 3, bap. April 20, 1760; d. after April 13, 1821, when she was executrix of her husband's estate; m. January 20, 1808, Amos Dean, son of Seth and Ann (Skinner) Dean.[40, 50]
VIII. Noadiah Brainerd[5], b. December 18, 1761, bap. February 21, 1762; d. May 24 or 27, 1823, aged sixty-one;[37] m. June 4, 1787, Mary Balcom of Winchester.[51] He resided at Barkhamsted and Colchester.
IX. Esther[5], b. March 19, bap. May 6, 1764; d. July 28, 1841, aged seventy-seven; m. May 19, 1825, Eli[6] Bigelow (Amasa[5], David[4], John[3], Joshua[2], John[1]).

x. Oliver[5], bap. April 27, 1766; d. after 1797; m. May 4, 1786, Mary[4] Gates (Stephen[3], Samuel[2], GEORGE[1]).
xi. Huldah[5], b. April 24, 1768; d. unm. August 20, 1794, in her twenty-seventh year.[37]

AARON[5] GATES (*Bezaleel*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Joseph*[2], *George*[1]) was born August 31, 1753, at East Haddam,[12] baptized April 14, following,[18] and died of pleurisy January 12, 1821, at East Hartland.[27] He married,[12, 18, 40] probably at East Hampton or East Haddam, May 9, 1776, ELIZABETH[3] JOHNSON, called "of East Hampton" [see Johnson, p. 495].

He saw service,[25] as stated above, in the Revolutionary War in the East Haddam company, commanded[32] by Eliphalet Holmes, which was called a unit of minute men, although raised in May, 1776.

AARON[5] was a farmer and removed[18] with his family to East Hartland after 1780 [when his son AARON[6] was born] and before April 12, 1784, when he purchased land there.[28] He and his wife became members of the church at that place on January 20, 1788, and he was later a deacon of this organization.

There in the western highlands of Connecticut three generations of our Gates ancestors lived. East Hartland, claiming almost the highest elevation in the state, lies on a table-land topping the so-called mountain of that name. It is serenely quiet there, for no railroads are near, but few autos pass, and the town numbers only a few hundred souls. It is said to be the only town in the state which has consistently decreased in population at each succeeding census. The topography is such that the view from there is more extended and far-reaching than perhaps any other in the state. "From the upper deck of the church steeple" of the white meeting-house [see plate VIII p. 26] in which his son AARON[6] preached "may be seen Mount Monadnock, far to the north in the state of New Hampshire; and slightly to the northeast the Tobey Range, and Mounts Tom and Holyoke in Massachusetts . . . To the eastward . . . in the evening the electric lights from the towns of eastern Connecticut vie with the stars . . . To the south-east may be seen some of the . . . church spires of Hartford . . . Far to the south may be see Mount Carmel . . . guarding the city of New Haven . . ." and to the west "through a drop in the western horizon may be seen the Catskill Mountains beyond the Hudson. . . ." The house in which Reverend AARON[6] lived [see plate VIII p. 26] was burned down in 1912.

His family became considerably scattered in the course of time. Although some of his children spent their lives near the old home, his son AARON[6],

Reverend Aaron[6] Gates

through whom we descend, spent most of his adult life in Massachusetts, as will be shown. Jabez Giddings[6] Gates removed to a point in Michigan about twenty miles west of Detroit, and at least three of the others—Elizabeth[6], Mary[6] and Huldah[6]—helped to make new homes for themselves and their families in the vicinity of Colesville, Broome County, New York. Of this group, Elizabeth[6] and her husband made that removal between 1821 and 1827, and on March 22 of the latter year they, then of New York, deeded away her inheritance from her father's estate.[28] John[6] remained at East Hartland where he owned a blacksmith shop and a hotel which his wife, "Aunt Debby," maintained "in a very nice house still [1923] in use though built in 1836." He and his brother Samuel[6] were personally and well known to D. N. Gaines, who has been town clerk for more than twenty-five years and who has furnished various details relating to our ancestral families during the period when they were resident in that town.

The children of AARON[5] and ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES, the first two born in East Haddam and the rest in Hartland, were[18, 28, 50]

I. Henry[6], b. May 10 or 11, 1777; d. May 29, 1860; m.[28, 41] June 2, 1803, Clara[6] Emmons, dau. of Dr. Jeremiah[5] and Lydia (Ackley) Emmons.*

II. AARON[6], see following.

III. Elizabeth[6], b. June 29, 1784; d. February 17, 1873, in Broome County, New York; m. November 1, 1804, Reuben[6] Beman (DANIEL[5], THOMAS[4], SAMUEL[3], SAMUEL[2], SIMON[1]). They removed to the vicinity of Tunnel, Broome County, New York.

IV. Mary[6], b. June 1 or 21, 1786; m. October 5, 1809, George Case, Jr., of Granby, and removed to Broome County, New York.

V. Jabez Giddings[6],† b. June 29, bap. August 9, 1789. He m. at Derby, Connecticut [being recorded as "Gideon Gates"], on October 12, 1812, Lucy Blinn of Wethersfield, and removed between 1813 and 1816 to the vicinity of Detroit, Michigan.

* Dr. Emmons was a son of Jonathan[4] Emmons (Samuel[3], Obadiah[2], Thomas[1]); Lydia Ackley was undoubtedly[46] the daughter of Nathaniel[3] and Mary (Williams) Ackley. [Nathaniel[3] Ackley, called "Nathaniel 1st," since he was the eldest of three cousins of that name[50] was the son of James[2] (NICHOLAS[1])]. Lydia (Ackley) Emmons was born "about 1750" [and, if her identity was as surmised above, she was born August 28, 1749]; died February 12, 1826, aged 76; married first, about 1770, Dr. Jeremiah[5] Emmons; married secondly, after March, 1790, Capt. Abel Brace; married thirdly, as his third wife, on March 3, 1819, Joseph[6] Coe (Josiah[5], Joseph[4], JOHN[3], ROBERT[2], ROBERT[1]).[46] She was buried in Hartland beside her first husband. [See Ackley, p. 50].

† His peculiar name received several variants even in family use and records, and frequently that of "Gideon." The recorded [Hartford] distribution of his father's estate, however, shows "Giddings" to have been correct [see plate IX p. 30]. On this unusual name hung the first evidence discovered toward the establishment of his mother's JOHNSON parentage, for she, called "of East Hampton," married AARON[5] GATES of near-by East Haddam; then, after her removal to East Hartland, two other Johnson girls "of East Hampton" married men resident in East Hartland [rather remote at that time], where ELIZABETH lived. One of these, Mercy[3] Johnson, lost her husband, "Jabez Giddings," on November 1, 1787 [being left with only an infant daughter], and the very next child born to ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES [on June 29, 1789] was given the name "Jabez Giddings" Gates, thus arguing an immediate interest on the part of ELIZABETH in the affairs of Mercy[3] Johnson. Later, Harris[3] Johnson, a brother of Mercy (Johnson) Giddings, though then resident in distant Otsego County, New York, named a son "Jabez Giddings" Johnson [see Johnson, p. 498].

vi. Samuel[6], b. June 7, 1793; d. September 16, 1864, at East Hartland; m. December 31, 1818, Lucy[7] Cowdrey (Moses[6], Moses[5], Nathaniel[4], Samuel[3], Nathaniel[2], William[1]).[28, 31]

vii. John[6], b. December 28, 1795, bap. January 10, 1796; d. June 20, 1883, at Hartland; m. March 18, 1818 or 1819, Deborah, dau. of Jedediah and Deborah (Giddings) Bushnell.[28, 42]

viii. Huldah[6], b. March 10, 14 or 17, 1798 or 1799; m. 1st, October 5, 1815, Tacitus D. Church, son of Abishai and Phebe Church, of Hartland; m. 2nd, probably in New York, November 17, 1851, Gordon L. Beckley.

AARON[6] GATES (*Aaron*[5], *Bezaleel*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Joseph*[2], *George*[1]) was born August 12, 1780, at East Haddam, though his birth is recorded at East Hartland, and died April 4, 1850, at Barkhamsted. He married[18, 28] at East Hartland, July 25, 1803,* RUTH[6] BEMAN [see Beman, p. 114 and plates VII p. 22, VIII p. 26].

He prepared for college under Reverend Aaron Church, the second pastor at Hartland, who served there from 1773 to 1823 and whom, some years later, AARON[6] himself succeeded.[27] He attended Williams College, at Williamstown, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, from which institution he graduated in 1804. He and his wife became members of the Hartland Church on November 4 of that year.[27] After studying theology with Dr. Joseph Lathrop, of West Springfield, Massachusetts, he was settled as assistant pastor of the Congregational Church at Montague, in that state, on October 27, 1807, where he remained until December 12, 1827. About 1818 he was active in the establishment of the college at Amherst and by a step-grandson was called[28, 45] one of its founders. In later life, after his return to East Hartland, it was said by that step-grandson that "he used to give $100 of his $400 salary for the support of that college. Rev. GATES was a preacher of great power . . ."[28, 45] and " . . As a minister he was judicious, evangelical and faithful."[36, 47]

In March, 1830, the South Parish of Amherst, Massachusetts, voted to ask him to supply its pulpit for one year at a salary of $300. He accepted and a committee was appointed to "assist Mr. GATES in finding a house to hire." On November 29, 1831, this organization decided to offer him a call to settle there at a salary of $400, and his resultant pastorate continued[29] until 1836 or[47] 1837. From this time until 1841 he supplied the pulpit in East Hartland[27] and for about three years thereafter the one in West Hartland.[18] In that vicinity he was called "Priest GATES, a true parson of the hill country" and "a man whose example and instruction left a deep impression on the character

*Sometimes given as 1804, but that must be erroneous, since they had a son [who died in infancy] recorded as having been baptized in October, 1804.

of his children." He left a competence for his widow and a home in East Hartland which passed to his children and was disposed of by them in 1865–6. On June 13, 1852, after his death, his widow was dismissed from the West Hartland Church to that at Montague, Massachusetts, where she made her home with her daughter Abigail[7]. A letter, written by her son BEMAN[7] from Montague on July 27, 1853, to his wife in Marietta, Ohio, when he was visiting his mother, says that the latter had given him the long black silk stockings in which his father, the Reverend AARON[6], graduated from Williams College in 1804, "at which time short clothes were in fashion." RUTH (BEMAN) GATES, widow of AARON[6], died in July, 1858, at the home of her son-in-law, Phineas E. Peck, in Colebrook, Connecticut.[18]

The children of AARON[6] and RUTH (BEMAN) GATES, the first two born at Hartland and the rest undoubtedly at Montague, were[18, 28, 50]

I. Daniel[7], bap. October 8, 1804.
II. Daniel Beman[7], b. or bap. May 9 or 11, 1806; d. May 13, 1806.
III. Abigail[7], b. October 11, 1808; m. March 20, 1828, Elisha Wright, Jr., and resided at Montague, Massachusetts.
IV. Aaron[7], b. October 3, 1810; d. September 17, 1850 or 1851; m. September 5 or 15, 1838, Anna A. Garrett.
V. Electa[7], b. December 18, 1812; m. 1st, June 21, 1834, Ansel Moody; m. 2nd, November 4, 1846, Phineas E. Peck, and resided at Colebrook, Connecticut.
VI. Truman[7], b. April 9, 1815; d. May 11, 1821.
VII. BEMAN[7], see following.
VIII. Edwin[7], b. April 15, 1820; d. June 1, 1891, at Hartland; m. 1st, November 1, 1843 or 1845, Susan H. Cornell; m. 2nd, June 16, 1856, Anne H. Cornell.
IX. Mary[7], b. August 31, 1822; d. July 7, 1841.
X. Amelia[7], b. October 16, 1825; d. December 21, 1885; m. April 30, 1850, John C. Beach, and resided at Sandisfield, Massachusetts.
XI. Amanda[7], twin of Amelia, m. June 3, 1846, Milner Case, and resided at Avon, Connecticut.

BEMAN[7] GATES (*Aaron*[6], *Aaron*[5], *Bezaleel*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Joseph*[2], *George*[1]) was born January 5, 1818, at Montague, Massachusetts, and died December 17, 1894, at Marietta, Ohio. He married there, October 20, 1841, BETSEY SIBYL[7] SHIPMAN [see Shipman, p. 744 and plates V p. 10, VI p. 14, XXIII p. 744].[48, 53]

The very limited salary of his father, the Reverend AARON[6], as a Congregational minister created an environment for his large family which was likely to establish habits of prudence, economy and practical good sense. These qualities, appraised at their true value and practiced with discretion, were marked traits of the character of BEMAN[7] GATES. The atmosphere of this humble but cultured home inspired his youthful mind with the ambition

to provide for his future usefulness by proper training and education, but at the same time the limitations of the parental purse interfered with his desire for a collegiate education. He entered Amherst but found it necessary to leave during his sophomore year to seek employment to provide for his own support.

He had acquired, in the old Massachusetts home, a graceful accomplishment and it affected his destiny in an important crisis. The family choir, led by his father, and joined in by all its other members, was a prominent feature of their home life as long as they were together. In time, and after due instruction, the quality of his performance as a singer became so excellent that the great composer and instructor, Lowell Mason, assigned him solos in the oratorio "The Messiah" at Boston when he was but nineteen years old. Having earned a small sum of money by teaching school, BEMAN[7] GATES set out[48] in 1837 with his brother-in-law, Ansel Moody, who was in poor health and hoped that a sojourn in the South would be beneficial. Their objective was New Orleans and their route via the Ohio River. Mr. Moody's health caused them to stop at Marietta for a time, where they were accommodated at the Broughy House on Ohio Street. After a rest they continued their journey but, before they had left Kentucky behind, Mr. Moody's condition became so alarming that they decided to turn back, hoping to reach their Massachusetts home before his death. Another rest at Marietta became imperative and BEMAN[7] whiled away the hours for the sick man by singing and playing the flute. In this way his musical attainments became known and admired. Mr. Moody presently died and was buried in Mound Cemetery, leaving BEMAN[7], a youth of nineteen years, alone and almost penniless among strangers. An offer was made him by some of the men of the Congregational Church, including CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN, to induce him to remain in Marietta to lead the choir and to teach singing-school; and he, in his loneliness, went up on the Mound near his friend's grave one fine November day to think it over and to decide whether to accept this opening and make Marietta his home, or to return to the East. In later life he told of his communing in that quiet spot, with the view of the distant river showing through the trees, and said that the beauty of the place, combined with the kindness of its people, influenced him to make it his home. Thus, in 1837, being about twenty years old, he took up his responsibilities in this town. He taught singing-school, worked in the office of the county recorder, and for many years led the choir at the Congregational Church.

HOME AND CHURCH OF REVEREND AARON[6] GATES
AT EAST HARTLAND, CONNECTICUT [see pages 22, 24]

His correct habits, genial personality, persevering industry and commanding abilities attracted immediate attention, and in 1839, when only twenty-one years old, he was invited to assume the editorship of the *Marietta Intelligencer*, then being established by important interests in that locality. He was naturally fitted for such work and entered into it with the enthusiasm of youth. This newspaper rendered very important service in the campaign of 1840 and, as a result of his work, BEMAN[7] GATES at once assumed a very responsible and influential position in southeastern Ohio. He continued as its editor for a period of seventeen years and for several of them was its proprietor as well. Owing to lack of mailing facilities, there was at this time no competition by city newspapers, and the *Intelligencer* served a very wide field. It was published tri-weekly, maintained its regular correspondents in Washington and New York, and exerted an influence which would now seem difficult for us to associate with the idea of a country newspaper.

As its editor, he naturally became a leader in thought on public matters and, temperamentally favoring public improvements, he labored actively to bring about the building of railroads in southeastern Ohio. Associating himself with a coterie of very able men in Marietta, he became engaged in an enterprise for the building of a railroad from Marietta to Cincinnati. In 1854 he was elected vice-president and superintendent of this company and, dropping the newspaper work, he devoted his entire attention to the building and managing of this line. The panic of 1857 fell suddenly upon the new railroad, delayed its completion and also swept away the accumulations that he had made in the previous twenty years. Associated with him in this railroad work was George B. McClellan, then president of the Ohio and Mississippi Railway Company. Upon McClellan's appointment to the rank of General, and his assumption of the military authority in the West during the Civil War, his greatest difficulty was in securing supplies. General McClellan then telegraphed to BEMAN[7] GATES to buy and provide food and equipment for his troops. BEMAN[7] proceeded with his customary energy to carry out this order and, though provided with no other authority than this telegram from General McClellan, he found it sufficient for his purposes. On one occasion he seized a passing Ohio River steamer, loaded it with supplies and sent it up the Great Kanawha River for the use of the troops. This act by a civilian is rare, if not unparalleled, in war. General McClellan later commissioned him as a lieutenant in order to facilitate his services in this work. After an organized military control had been established, and BEMAN[7] was relieved of this

extraordinary commission, he continued at the request of General McClellan to gather supplies and especially horses, to be sold to the United States government.

A letter written by BEMAN[7] from Baltimore on November 25, 1859, to his wife at home discloses two points of interest, namely: his reaction to a concert heard there, and a first-hand report relative to the hanging of John Brown. It said:

> "Last evening I attended a concert, but as I did not succeed in getting a seat, I got so completely tired out that I left before it closed . . . I suppose the audience numbered 800. About 100 singers were on the stage. The exercises commenced with Easter Anthem, which was pretty well sung. In the course of the evening a half dozen old fugueing church tunes were sung. The piano was well played, and it was the only accompaniment, except in a few of the choruses, when some brass instruments were introduced. The *time* was very perfect, but the enunciation very indistinct. The duetts and quartetts were better performed than the choruses. There was no Alto voice equal to Mrs. Moore's—none that approached it—but there was a Soprano that I wish MARY could have heard. The compass of the voice was not remarkable, but its strength was unusual, and its purity exceeded anything I ever heard.
>
> "You can hardly conceive how thoroughly the public mind, hereabouts, is excited by reports that are every hour put in circulation in relation to the Harper's Ferry affair. To-day we hear that another barn was burned in Charlestown last night. Whether it belonged to a juror in Brown's case (as those previously burned did) or not, the report does not say.
>
> "An acquaintance of mine, who has been at the Ferry most of the time since the first outbreak (no friend of Brown's, either) told me to-day that all these fires were doubtless set by mischievous slaves, who were perhaps countenanced by malicious men who want to see a "general row," or who want to incite the people of the neighborhood to force the prison and lynch the prisoners. He says the excitement there is now so feverish that he shall not be surprised at any hour to hear of violence, and he has no hope that there will be any quiet until after Brown is dead. Nobody seems to care much about the other prisoners, but *Old Brown* is a decided *character*,—some insisting that he is a fiend, and others declaring that he is a saint. For myself, although I don't approve of his acts, I believe that he stands a much better chance of going from the gallows to Abraham's bosom, than any of his persecutors do of resting in as comfortable a place as purgatory when they die. . . . "

BEMAN[7] GATES also became interested in the sale of oil produced so largely in this section and he negotiated in Europe at that very early date (1868) one of the largest sales of lubricating oil ever made from southeastern Ohio. He established the First National Bank of Marietta, Ohio, in 1863, and became its president and continued as such until 1887, when he was succeeded

by his son-in-law, W. W. Mills. He served for many years as a trustee of Marietta College.

Enough of his life has been recalled to indicate the important part taken by him in the community and state in which he lived. Successful and prosperous, during the greater part of his life, he was always liberal in his benefactions and generous in his charity towards those less fortunate than himself. He was endowed with quick perception and formed the habit of prompt decision, and was gifted with facile and effective expression of his views.

BEMAN[7] GATES was a man of tall and impressive figure, with manners very courtly and dignified; was habitually cheerful and even jovial, and was at all times a delightful companion. He built two handsome homes in Marietta and the latter one, erected in 1874, standing in the midst of nine acres of well-kept lawn and field as a fine example of the landscape-gardener's art, was a source of great pride and comfort to him in his declining years.

The children of BEMAN[7] and BETSEY SIBYL (SHIPMAN) GATES, all born at Marietta, Ohio, were[18]

I. MARY BEMAN[8] [see Sketch, p. 3] was b. August 27, 1842, at Marietta, and d. October 28, 1921, at that place. She m. there January 18, 1864, RUFUS R.[8] DAWES [see DAWES–GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

II. Charles Beman[8], b. October 3, 1844; d. May 31, 1864, at Harper's Ferry, West Virginia. He joined the 148th Regiment, Ohio Volunteers, in May, 1864, and although only 19 years old was commissioned a first lieutenant. He was injured[48] in a railroad accident on the way to the front and d. before his father and mother could reach him.

III. Betsey Shipman[8], b. February 26, 1853; d. at Marietta April 22, 1920; m. there, October 12, 1875, William W. Mills.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, II, 235–6; Register of Founders and Patriots of America, 1911, pp. 116, 224.
1a. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 135.
2. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 282, 294–5, 369, 370–372, 379, 380, 387–8.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 354.
4. History of Haddam and East Haddam, Conn., D. D. Field, 1814, pp. 3–7, 13, 21, 33–5, 45, 48–9.
5. Brainerd Family, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 1, pp. 28–9.
5a. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 693.
6. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 295, 526; IV, 229, 257.
6a. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 290–1.
7. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 94, 105, 116, 127, 136, 147, 159, 169, 180, 184, 192, 204, 209, 236, 249, 265, 274, 286, 300; III, 3, 17, 35, 48, 75, 86, 97, 106, 115, 121, 168, 194, 207, 211, 214, 223, 227, 237, 249, 251, 254; IV, 3, 9, 33, 42, 130, 244, 284, 296, 319, 328, 343, 372.
7a. Ibid., IV, 24, 43, 66, 92, 121, 139, 159, 201.
7b. Ibid., IV, 347, 378, 413.
8. New England Register, XIII, 19–20.
8a. Historical Sketch of the First Congregational Church in Haddam, Conn., E. E. Lewis, 1879, pp. 7–9, 12, 14, 16–7, 24.
9. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 251, 254, 451; IV, 3, 11, 74, 228, 429.
10. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 350; II, 511.
10a. Ibid., III, 268–9.

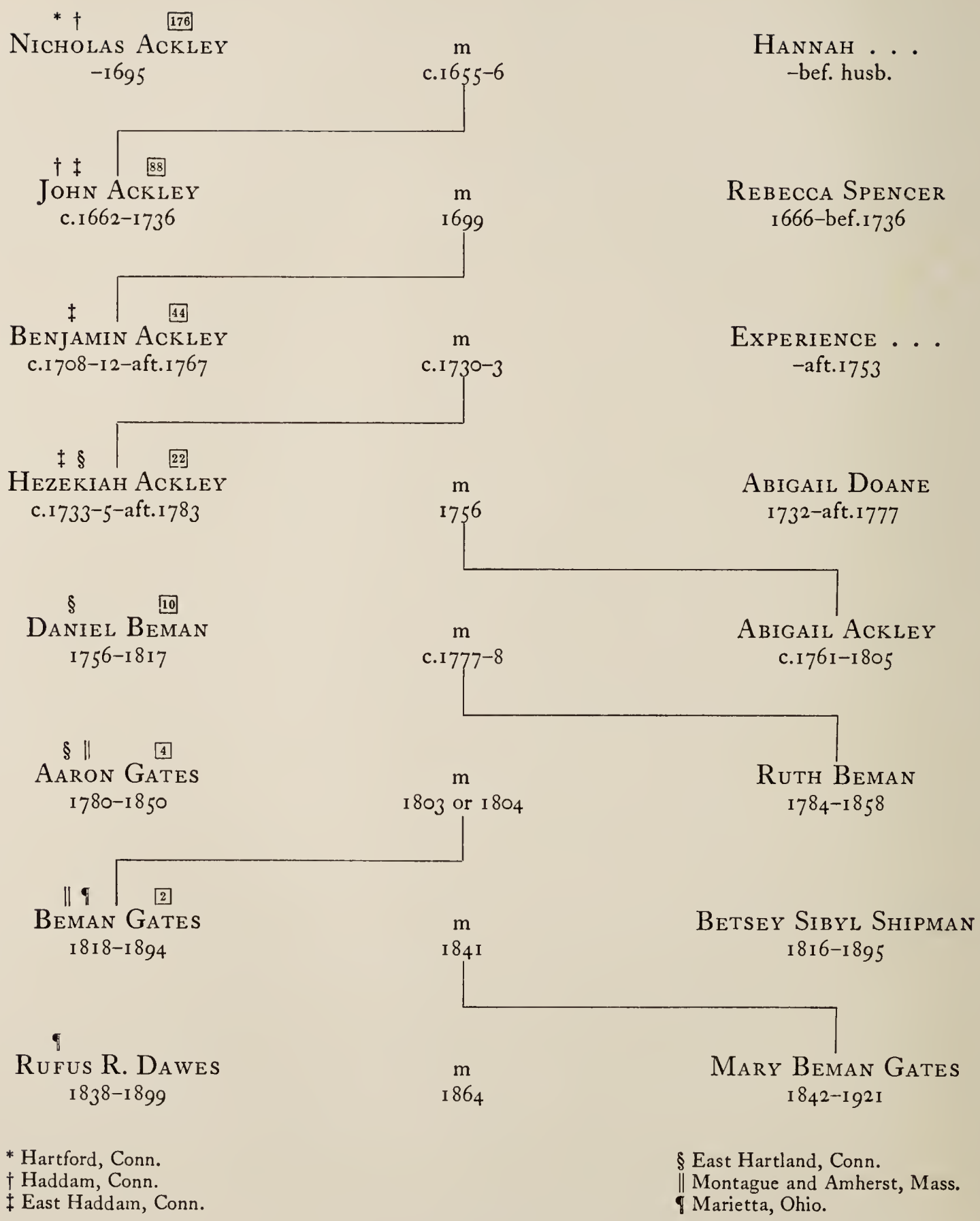
11. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, pp. 10–12, 18.
12. Brainerd Family, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 1, pp. 28–9, 39, 42–4, 49.
13. Fuller Genealogy, W. H. Fuller, 1914, III, 16, 17.
14. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 13, 14, 16.
15. New England Register, XI, 275, 277–8.
16. Ibid., XI, 314; XIII, 129.
16a. Typed copy in Newberry Library, Chicago, Ill., of Baptisms of the 1st Congregational Church in East Haddam, Conn., pp. 2–7, 18–9, 22, 25, 30, 42, 44, 46–7, 49, 50, 52.
17. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1906, III, 44–5.
18. Family Records.
19. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 201–2.
20. Ibid., III, 190, 304.
21. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XIII, 435–6.
22. History of Haddam and East Haddam, Conn., D. D. Field, 1814, pp. 7, 45; Two Centuries of New Milford, Conn., 1907, p. 11.
23. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 287, 374, 377.
24. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, IX, Book I, pp. 123–4.
25. Connecticut Military Record, 1889, p. 611.
26. Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 1, pp. 49, 167–8.
27. New England Register, LX, 392; LXI, 31–2, 35.
28. Manuscript data furnished by D. N. Gaines, town clerk of Hartland, Conn., 1923.
29. History of Amherst, Mass., Carpenter and Morehouse, 1896, pp. 217, 223.
30. Early Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1902, V, 78.
31. Cowdrey Genealogy, M. B. A. Mehling, 1911, p. 95.
32. D. A. R. Lineage Book, XX, 323.
33. Willey Genealogy, H. Willey, 1888, p. 10; Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 101, 103.
34. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 285–9, 381–2.
35. Two Hundredth Anniversary of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, pp. 43–4, 193.
36. Record of the Alumni of Williams College.
37. New England Register, LXXX, 417; LXXXI, 49–50, 264.
38. Genealogical History of Jefferson County, N. Y., R. A. Oakes, 1905, I, 24; Old Northwest Quarterly, V, 49.
39. Genealogical Notes, N. Goodwin, 1856, p. 202.
40. Manuscript of D. W. Patterson relative to East Haddam families, filed at Hartford, Conn.
41. Emmons Genealogy, E. N. Emmons, 1905, p. 26.
42. Giddings Genealogy, M. S. Giddings, 1882, p. 135.
43. Foote Family, A. W. Foote, 1907, p. 44.
44. Genealogical Department of Boston Transcript, February 23, 1927, by W. B. C.
45. Statements of John Fiske Peck. This man, who was born in Colebrook, Conn., March 1, 1831, and died at Winsted August 27, 1925, was the son of Phineas E. Peck and his wife Nancy Beecher. He became the stepson of Electa[7] Gates by her marriage to Phineas E. Peck as a second, or perhaps third, wife. This made the testimony of John F. Peck, relative to AARON[6] GATES, be that of a stepgrandson.
46. Robert Coe, Puritan, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 185.
47. Williams [College] Biographical Annals, Rev. Calvin Durfee, 1871, p. 254.
48. History of Washington County, Ohio, pub. H. Z. Williams and Brother, 1881, pp. 252–3, 414–5; History of Marietta, Ohio, T. J. Summers, 1903, pp. 263, 278.
49. Savage, I, 198; Genealogical Notes, N. Goodwin, 1856, p. 201; Willey Genealogy, H. Willey, 1888, p. 3.
50. Search by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn., of the Barbour Collection of Vital Records, of D. W. Patterson's Manuscript of East Haddam Families, and of Probates filed at Hartford.
51. Annals of Winchester, Conn., J. Boyd, 1873, p. 266.
52. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, V, 78; D. A. R. Lineage Book, LXXXVII, 55; Register of the Founders and Patriots, 1911, p. 116; correspondence with Frank H. Gates, Derby, Conn.
53. New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, II, 883–6.

Set out to Giddings son of sd deceased one fifteen of land
on the N. side of the Road to Aaron and being
7.rds 65 in width N. & S. & running through the lot
E. & W. — — Also one Sixteenth part of the
house, barn & other buildings with privilege of
passing necessarily to & from the same — —
Set also to Giddings one hat .20 blankets .67 $ 0. 87
Blue Pantaloons .12 - Velvet Breeches .50 - Stripped jacket .17 — .79
Cotton Stockings .25 - Seamed do. .25 - 2 flannel shirts 1.30 - 1. 80
for linen shirts 1. Socks .67 Sad Book .50 - Neckcloths .67 - 2. 84
5 dry cocks .62 - 5 3/4 lbs blankets gain 2.50 — — 3. 12
2 diaper towels .67 wood Sheet 1.50 - Bandanna hdkf .75 - 2. 42
Blue Stockings .42 - Black do. 20 Table Spoons .25 - .87
Blue edge bowl .17 - pint Pewter Cup .12 - Saddle .58 - .87
Sad sheets 1.25 - 1 bag sheet 1. - 2 bed Bags 1.16 - 2. 41
$ 17. 03

FACSIMILE OF A PART OF THE DISTRIBUTION OF THE ESTATE OF DEACON AARON[5] GATES (1753–1821) AS RECORDED IN GRANBY PROBATE RECORDS, III, 131, SHOWING THAT ONE SON WAS CALLED "GIDDINGS" [page 23]

PLATE IX

ACKLEY



* Hartford, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

ACKLEY

NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY was of Hartford,* Connecticut, probably as early as 1649, and certainly in 1655,[1, 3] for, in a "Coppy of ye mill Rates recorded Feb. 13, 1659" for the years 1655, 1656 and 1657, he is shown to have resided on the "North Side" and to have paid[2] in these years 00–06–05, 00–07–02 and 00–07–07, respectively, or a total of 01–01–02. Sometimes the expense of running the community mill was met by "rates" or taxation, but at other times the grain was ground on a percentage basis. An early act of the General Court allowed the miller one-twelfth part of the meal for grinding a bushel of corn and one-sixteenth part for other grains, and he was required "to keep a 'Toll-Dish' 'of a just quart' and a 'Pottle-Dish' of two quarts, and a 'Pint-Dish,' all sealed, and an instrument to strike with, 'all fit for the purpose.' "[2a] Doubtless the "instrument to strike with" was intended to jar loose any remnant of flour or meal that stuck to the various receptacles.

NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY had two pieces of land recorded to him in Hartford. One of these he bought, after 1655, from Robert Sanford and sold on March 20, 1667–8, to John Mitchell, when it was described as "Containing by estimation Fower Acres be it more or less abutting on Zachery Fields land north & Edward Stebbings Sowth & m^rs Hookers east & the North Riuer west."[2] The other was his home property, probably acquired[43] shortly after 1649, containing about two acres "wth a Messuag† or Tenement Standing there on together wth an orchard & pasture . . . abutting on the Highway leading from ye little river to ye pownd Hill on ye east & on ye highway leading from ye mill into woods on the South & on Nathaniel Richards his land on ye West & on Wm Wadsworth‡ his land on the North."[2]

*One writer says[41] he was a resident there as early as 1638–9, but verification has not been found.

†Homestead. The land, housing and appurtenances.

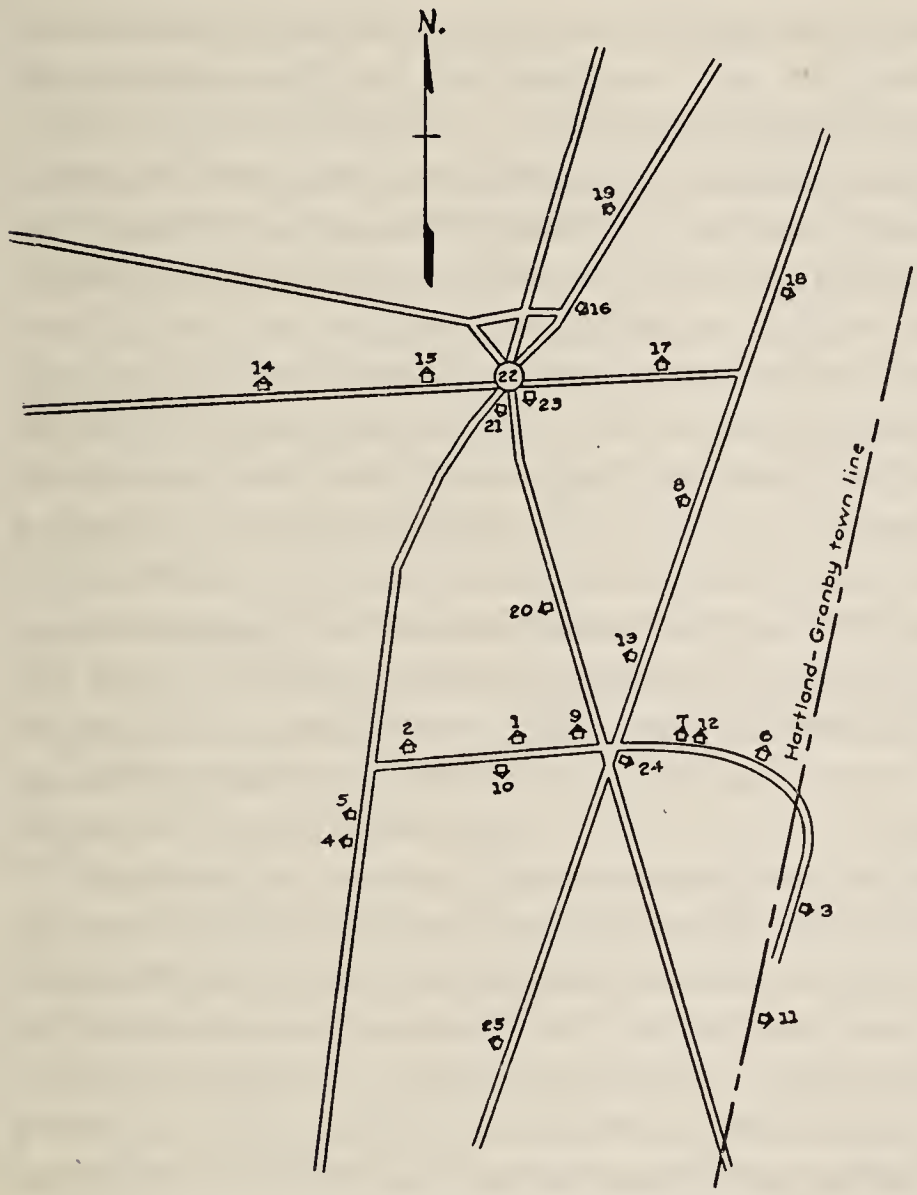
‡NICHOLAS[1] was possibly one of several men and youths brought over by William Wadsworth. The latter is supposed to have reared and employed DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, who later became a fellow-pioneer at Haddam[43] with NICHOLAS[1].

He owned this home until December, 1663 [unless that date be a mistake for 1668], when he sold it[2, 43] to Nathaniel Standley. This lot was described[3] as number 42 [see map on p. 613], was originally owned by Thomas Stanton,[3a, 5] who left Hartford permanently about 1649, was owned secondly in 1649, probably for a brief time, by[3] THOMAS[1] FORD [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I] and was owned surely in 1655, and probably earlier,[43] by NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY. "Centinel Hill" [later Pound Hill] was a point from which radiated several early roads whose names were very clumsy. The highway on which NICHOLAS[1] lived was variously called "Centinel Hill to Seth Grants's," "Little River to Centinel Hill," or "Thomas Stanton's to Centinel Hill," and later became Trumbull Street.[3a, 4] His home is also described as "directly across Little River, now known as Park River, from Bushnell Park on which the Connecticut State Capitol was erected."[15]

It seems probable that "NICHO: ACKLEY" was serving as "chimney viewer," the equivalent of fire marshal, as early as February 15, 1655, for on that date his name is connected with a report to the town meeting[5a] of "Leaders wanting 54," and he certainly held that position on February 9, 1662.[5a, 6, 7] In 1645–6 the town had outlined the duties of these officers as follows: "it is ordered . . . that they shal vew the chimnies ffrom the end of September vnto the end of aprill onse euery three weekes. ffrom thense vntell September onse euery six weekes thaie shall giue notes of the time that thaie will go to ueiw & if the be not Cleand thaye shall forfit twellue pense ffor euery sutch defallt yt be the cheefe in habitense in euerie sutch howse & in case thay doe neglect to vew as above saied thay shall [for]fit ffor euerie [ ] that it be proued [twe]llue pense." Later it was "ordered that the Serchers of the chimnis shall in one of the first three dayes in euery month frō the first of Noum teell the eand of aprell & in one of the first three dayes in euery sixth weck in all the other partt of the yeare: Suruay all the chimnes in the Towne & such as they do Judg to be dangirously foull thay shall apoynt one: to swep & clenc suffitianttly & the oner of thatt chimny or the dweller in the house shall pay for euery such chimney two shill to him shall be sent by the sayd men to clenc it wch shall be within two dayes after they are Judged to be foull: and further it is ordred that if any chimnys be found insufitiantt, that nottes being giune to the owners of the chimny & nott mended, cumplayntt shall be mad to the magestratts for redresse there in."[5a]

Hartford also early voted that, "It is ordered that evry howse shall have a ladder or tre at Most who shall reach [within] Two ffoote of the Topp of his

1512356



EAST HARTLAND, CONN., IN 1756–83

The numbers designate:

1. First purchase of land by HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY [see p. 46], made in 1762.
2. He sold a portion of it in 1771 to John Andrews.
3. HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY, on March 24, 1763, bought of Thomas Giddings twelve acres "with mansion house," "just over the Granby line," and here he lived until, at least, 1783.

4, 5. Homes, respectively, of Benjamin[4] and Joel[4] Ackley, brothers of HEZEKIAH[4].

6. THOMAS[4] BEMAN [see p. 112] bought a house and land here in 1756.

7, 8, 9. Homes, respectively, of three sons of the last named, Thomas[5], Elisha[5], and DANIEL[5] BEMAN, who married ABIGAIL[5] ACKLEY [see p. 48].

10, 11, 12. Residences of grandsons of THOMAS[4] BEMAN, viz., Erastus[6]; Thomas[6], and Reuben[6] (son of our DANIEL[5] BEMAN) who m. Elizabeth[6] Gates (Deacon AARON[5]).

13. Home of Caleb[4] Moses who m. 1726, Hannah[3] Beaman [SAMUEL[2], SIMON[1]) and built here in 1759.
14. Home of Asahel[5] Brainerd who m. 1763, Experience[4] Ackley, sister of HEZEKIAH[4].
15. Home of Dr. Jeremiah Emmons who m. Lydia[4] Ackley (Nathaniel[3], James[2], NICHOLAS[1]) and whose daughter, Clara Emmons m. in 1803, Henry[6] Gates, eldest son of Deacon AARON[5] and ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES.
16. Home of Dea. AARON[5] GATES [see p. 22].
17. Home of Rev. AARON[6] GATES [see p. 24, and plate VIII p. 26].
18. Home of Tacitus Church, who m. Huldah[6] Gates, daughter of Deacon AARON[5].
19. Jonathan Shipman.
20. Home of Abner[6] Moses (b. 1764) grandson of Caleb and Hannah (Beaman) above, and one of the sons of Abel[5] to whom our DANIEL[5] BEMAN was guardian. About 1785 he m. Ruhama Johnson, sister of our ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES [see pp. 494, 497–8] and in 1800 started for Ohio, but his wife d. on the way.
21. Home of D. N. Gaines, town clerk for twenty-five years.
22. Meeting House in which Rev. AARON[6] GATES preached.
23. Post Office.
24. School House.
25. Home of Jabez Giddings who m. 1784, Mercy[3] Johnson, sister of our ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES. After this man's death in 1787, ELIZABETH named her next child "Jabez Giddings Gates" [see pp. 23, 497 and 498].

howse uppon the forfeteur of fave shillings A mounth for [each] mounth he shall want the same." At that time, men were selected for office with the sole view that they should honor it rather than that it should honor them. Frequently it is seen that men would first be representatives to the General Court and afterwards chimney viewers.[7] So, though NICHOLAS[1] is found but little in public life, the fact that he held this latter position in his young manhood is evidence that he was in good standing and repute.

The contemporary records of another town present[9] an interestingly worded recognition of the great menace of fire in those early days: "Whereas dreadfull experience shews the inevitable danger and great loss not only to prtic: prsons, but also to the wholl town, by the careles neglect of keeping chimnye clean from sutt and want of lathers in time of need the select townsmen takeing the same into there serious consideration doe therefore order that eurie person inhabiting within the bounds of this towne, before the 10th of the next mo: prvide one or more Sufficient lathers at all times in a readines to reach up to [ ] top of his or there house, and forth with and at all times hereafter see that there chimnies be kep clean swept at least once eurie mo: uppon the penalty of two shillings six pence for eurie months neglect herein."[9]

Some of the laws of Hartford in force during the period when NICHOLAS[1] lived there are interesting both on account of their peculiarities and because they had a bearing on the lives of others of our Connecticut ancestors. The code of 1650 provided that for a first offense of burglary or robbery, in field or highway, the culprit should be branded with the letter "B," and for a second similar felony the same punishment should be inflicted, with the addition of severe whipping. If this crime was committed on the Lord's Day one of the offender's ears was to be cut off; if he were so brazen as to repeat it on a Sabbath, the other ear was to be severed; and a third escapade of this sort brought the death penalty.[2a] Forgery brought punishment in the pillory for three days, the payment of double damages to the injured party, and disqualification to act as either a witness or a juryman.[2a]

He who favored fair lady was not immune from pertinent laws and restrictions. Those who considered plighting their troth were required to make known, in some public place or at some public meeting at their home town, their "purpose of contract" at least eight days before they entered into such covenant whereby they engaged themselves each to the other, and were required to forbear from joining in the marriage covenant for at least eight days after the said engagement. Another provision forbade third parties from

intermeddling for the purpose of arranging a matrimonial project between those under age.[2a]

On "3 March, 1640. . . . An order concerning Graves," required "that Thomas Woodford shall attend the making of graves for any corpses deceased: and that no corpse shall be laid less than four foot deep; nor that be above four years old, shall be less than five foot deep; nor that be above ten, shall be laid less than six foot deep. He shall receive for giving notice by ringing the bell, making the grave, and keeping of it in seemly repair, so that it may be known in future time,—when such graves have been made, for the lesser sort, 2s.6d., for the middle sort, 3s., for the higher sort, 3s.6d." Regarding the Town Crier, "It is further ordered that if any person hath lost anything that he desireth should be cried in a public meeting, he shall pay for crying of it 2d. to Thomas Woodford, to be paid before it be cried: and the crier shall have a book of the things that he crieth."[3] The town treasurer of that day was called the "Husband for the town" and his duty was to "preserve the Town Stock." These items assist in visualizing certain phases of the life of that day.

NICHOLAS[1] was one of the twenty-eight young men who bought land in 1662 at "30 Mile Island," later called Haddam. Many of them moved upon their land that year, but he, and probably others, delayed for some time and he was finally reproved for his procrastination by those who had preceded him. This admonition brought forth the following pledge from him: "This writing made ye eight off november 1666 binding me NIKLIS AKLY of harford to come with my ffamely to setle att thirte mille Iland by ye twenty ninth of october next insueing date hearof, ealso to have my part of fence up yt belongs to my home lot by ye Last of [ ] nexst insueing as of failing hearof to forfit ten pounds to ye inhabitant of thirte mile Iland as witness my hand and Seall

witnes James Bate NICHOLAS ACKLY"[10]

He evidently kept this agreement, for he soon appeared there and no evidence has been found indicating that the fine was collected from him. Moreover, the Hartford town "rates" that were "lost" [not collected], as shown in the account[5a] of December 29, 1668, for the year 1667, included the amount of "4sh. 6d." which had been assessed in advance against "NICK: ACKLEY" but was presumably nullified because of his removal to Haddam. NICHOLAS[1] owned at Haddam, besides a fourteen acre home lot, "the little Island at the

lower end of the Cove" and a "six acre lot towards Saybrook."[7, 8] This cove is where the Salmon River enters the Connecticut River.[11]

The first families who settled in Haddam had grouped themselves quite close together along the west bank of this stream, most of them being north of "Mill River." This constituted the main settlement. About one and one-half miles south east, down the Connecticut River and on the same side of it, the remaining proprietors, including NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY, established what was called the "Lower Plantation"[10] [see map on p. 773]. It was "Ordered that every inhabitant of this [entire Haddam] plantation shall personally in habitt here upon his land four years from the time of his first coming hither before he shall have liberty to sell his land."[10] As has been stated elsewhere [see Gates, p. 11], for some years Haddam people held most of their lands in common. In February, 1669, a rule was made that no grants should be made to any person without the unanimous approval of the proprietors, but this evidently was found to be too stringent and was repealed in 1673. In the division of 1671 NICHOLAS[1] drew the twenty-first choice of location.[10]

By vote of the townsmen, desirable individuals were accepted as inhabitants here, with rights in common, but the character and industry of those who desired to join this settlement, or even frequent it, were carefully considered and a remarkable degree of candor was shown in their expressions of disapproval when an unwelcome person lingered in their vicinity. On April 10, 1673, it was "Agreed by the voate that John S . . . and his weif should not be entertained in the towne as inhabitants or resedence and also Goodman Corbe was fore warned not to reseave him into his hows becose they weare not persones qualified according to Law" and again in January, 1683, the townsmen were ordered "to warne frederick E . . . and his weif to depart the towne by next march inseuing."[10]

Young and weak as the town was, the period of King Philip's War was a sore menace. The inhabitants asked the Council at Hartford to appoint GERRARD[1] SPENCER as ensign and WILLIAM[1] VENTRES as sergeant of their "Trayn Band." Their records show[10] further that "Upon inteligence and occasion of some parties sculking ennimies that are come downe to lye about and amongst these plantations to annoy and destroy as they can catch, the Councill doe advise and order that the people of Haddum doe forthwith agree and come together into the two uppermost best garrisoned places in their towne to assist and defend each other, or agree to remove to some other plantation upon the River, as they may best for themselves and families."

Later, in 1722–3, circumstances called forth concerted action as follows:

" . . . what person or persons shall within the precincts of this west society Kill any wild Cat or wild Cats and do to the satisfaction of the constable make it evident that he or they have so done shall for each Cat so killed shall be allowed for each Cat four shillings per Cat."

Legend states that some of the fabulous treasure of the famous Captain Kidd was buried on "30 Mile Island," now Haddam Island.[10] It would be interesting to know whether or not the Ackleys and their several neighbors from whom we descend shared in the prevailing excitement and dug for this pirate's hoard.

In October, 1669, "NECALAS ACLY" was reported to the General Court as one of the ten freemen of Haddam.[12] In Massachusetts that would indicate previous affiliation with a church, but Connecticut Colony was more lenient. It is presumed, therefore, that he lacked that relationship, since no evidence is found of the baptism of his children, except that two of them, Samuel[2] and James[2], were baptized when adults, after their marriage.[6] This situation may be explained in part by the fact that, for many years, no ordained minister was installed at Haddam, so that those who desired baptism for their children were obliged to go to the Middletown Church to receive it.

NICHOLAS[1] and his wife, HANNAH, deeded, on March 19, 1671–2, to William Spencer, [not he who later became their son-in-law], all their rights to land, divided and undivided, on the east side of the Connecticut River between the Salmon River and Lyme bounds. On June 2, 1688, pursuant to this transfer, "Will Spenser" received a share in "machamoodus meadows diuision" "for ak[le] (ACKLEY)" on the "estat" of £100 valuation.[13a]

The marriage of NICHOLAS[1] and HANNAH (——), who was the mother of all his children,[1, 14] must have occurred at least as early as 1655–6, since his daughter Hannah[2] is said[41] to have married in 1675. His second wife, Miriam,* survived him.[14] His death occurred April 29, 1695, at Haddam, and the inventory of his estate, taken May 8, following, showed a valuation of £188–11–00. He did not leave a will and, on September 5, 1695, administration of his estate was granted to his son JOHN[2]. On March 20 of the next year the widow and children signed an agreement, which the court approved, giving to the "mother-in-law" [i.e., stepmother] £12 and the estate she

*Sometimes surmised to have been Miriam Moore (Miles), but that can not be true,[13] for she married first, John[2] Willey, and married secondly, 1689, Samuel[2] Spencer (GERRARD[1]) and became his widow in 1705.

brought to the "house"; to the eldest son, JOHN[2], a double share; and to each of the other children a single share.

The children* of NICHOLAS[1] and HANNAH (——) ACKLEY, born at Hartford and Haddam and named in the order in which they signed the agreement to the settlement of their father's estate, were[1, 6, 7, 8, 15, 43]

I. JOHN[2], see following.
II. Hannah[2], b. prob. abt. 1657–8; d. after[41] January 4, 1719–20; m., 1675, Edward[1] Purple of Haddam.
III. Elizabeth[2], d. bef.[17] March 7, 1709–10; m. bef.[14] March 20, 1696, Abel Shalor (Thomas of Haddam).[14, 16, 17]
IV. Thomas[2], d. at East Haddam[17] January 16, 1704; m., prob. abt. 1695, Hannah (—), who m. 2nd, July 9, 1705, Benjamin[1] Trowbridge, of Chatham, Conn.,[17a] and d. March 6, 1772, aged 94.
V. Samuel[2], d. April 17, 1745; m., prob. abt. 1700, Bethia (—).
VI. James[2], b. abt. 1677–8, bap. March 20, 1707; d. September 19, 1746, in his 69th year;[6, 31, 33] m., prob. abt. 1706, Elizabeth (—), who d. September 19, 1755, in her 66th year.[33]
VII. Sarah[2], d. after[14a] November 1, 1715; m. bef.[14a] 1693, William Spencer, Jr.,[13, 14]† perhaps a nephew of GERRARD[1] SPENCER.
VIII. Mary[2], m., prob. abt. 1694–5, Thomas[2] Crippen (Thomas[1]).[14, 18]
IX. Lydia[2], d. after May 6, 1726; m. bef.[14] March 20, 1696, Thomas Robinson.[17, 18, 52]
X. Nathaniel[2], d. unm.[20] February 27, 1710.

JOHN[2] ACKLEY (*Nicholas*[1]) the eldest son, as stated in a deed[6] from his father dated "December the last," 1694, was born, it is believed,[15] about 1662 and, if so, at Hartford. He died a widower on August 25, 1736, at East Haddam,[1, 19] leaving seven children, who divided his estate[67] within the next year or two. The only marriage[1, 10a] recorded[13] to him occurred at Hartford on May 23, 1699, when REBECCA[3] SPENCER [see Spencer, p. 776] became his wife, but it seems possible that he married previously, since on the above date he would have been about thirty-seven and REBECCA would have been

*It is sometimes stated[8, 11] that NICHOLAS[1] also had sons named Nicholas and Benjamin, but it seems certain that these were grandsons. Even if he did have such children, they surely died before the settlement of the estate,[14] and evidently without issue, since no part of the estate was apportioned to any presumptive heirs of theirs.

†This man, distinguished as "junior," is frequently confused[14a, 48] with William[2] Spencer (GERRARD[1]) [see p. 774], but was really about ten years younger than he, and died at East Haddam before February 16, 1712–3, leaving[47] his widow, Sarah, and children Alexander, William, Mary, Sarah and Hannah. Of these, Mary later married Jonathan Dunham, and Hannah married Samuel Chapman, probably son of either JOHN[2] (ROBERT[1]) or Samuel[3] (Robert[2], ROBERT[1]), whereas William[2] Spencer, Sr., was a weaver and, with his family, lived at Haddam and East Haddam. It is said of this William Spencer, Jr., that "He had some education, wrote an excellent hand, was town clerk and school master . . . "; that his family kept apart from the other Spencers of Haddam and East Haddam, and that by 1728 his descendants had removed to Westchester parish of Colchester, and by 1740 to Sharon.[43]

thirty-three; or he may have had a later and younger wife (if the recorded age, at death, of his youngest son, Nathaniel[3], be correct). JOHN[2] appears to have lacked church membership, for, though the baptism, as well as the birth, of all the children of his three brothers is preserved, no such record has been found pertaining to his children. The fact, however, that seven children divided his estate[67] after his death argues that, if REBECCA was the mother of them all, there may have been twins, or the recorded age of Nathaniel[3] at death may have been incorrect.

During his youth he was favored with the bequest of a mare by the will of Richard Piper, a Haddam neighbor, who was apparently unmarried and who died in 1678. Samuel[2] Ackley, his brother, received "a mare & colt, and all my Rights of Land East side of Great River" from the same source[21] and, as a result of this bequest, received in 1688, "for piper" [as an heir of Richard Piper], land in "machamoodus meadows diuision."[13a] JOHN[2] resided in East Haddam; in 1692–3 he had[21] an account due from the estate of James Cockshott;* and in 1700 he and his wife deeded land to his brother James[2] Ackley.

On August 14, 1705, JOHN[2] and his brother Nathaniel[2] were made joint guardians of four nephews and nieces, children of their deceased brother Thomas[2], and this position JOHN[2] retained alone after the death of Nathaniel[2] in 1710. The latter died unmarried and, by his will,[20] made an individual bequest to Esther Hungerford† and left the remainder of his estate, which totaled £130, to be divided into nine equal portions, for the children of each of his nine brothers and sisters.

In December, 1727, JOHN[2] deeded[66] various tracts of land to his sons and to John Mitchell, his son-in-law. It seems fair to infer that JOHN[2] had been left a widower by, and perhaps but shortly before, December 7, 1727, and that he meant to make his home henceforth with his son BENJAMIN[3], for the father's deed of gift of that date was in consideration of "my love and tender respect which I do bare unto my son BENJAMIN ACKLY" and specified that BENJAMIN[3] should have about twenty-four acres of his father's home lot as well as the house, barn and orchards, with the one reservation that JOHN[2] himself might continue to use this property during his life but that even at once BENJAMIN[3] was to have the use of half the house and barn.

* James Cockshott had married[43] Elizabeth Shalor, daughter of Abel and Elizabeth (Ackley) Shalor, and niece of JOHN[2] ACKLEY.

† Possibly his fiancée and quite certainly the daughter of THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD (THOMAS[1]).

In 1718 his estate had been taxed on an estimated valuation of £64–05–00, but at his death in 1736 it was inventoried at £383–04–06 and was administered[19] by his son John[3], whose bond was signed[19] by Bartholomew Foster, of Wallingford, cousin[42] of Timothy[3] Foster, son-in-law to the deceased. His holdings included part ownership of a small island bearing his name, which lay in the Connecticut River near Haddam Neck.[67] On September 26, 1736, his seven children signed, and on November 4 following acknowledged, an agreement[67] of distribution of the estate [see NOTE "A," p. 48]. In his later years JOHN[2] bore the title of "sergeant," earned either in an Indian war or in the train-band.

The children of JOHN[2] ACKLEY [see NOTE "A," p. 48], most if not all of them by his only known wife, REBECCA[3] SPENCER, born doubtless at East Haddam and in approximately this order, were[1, 4a, 11, 15, 43, 67]

I. John[3], "eldest son,"[66] and administrator of his father's estate.[1, 19, 67] On December 29, 1727, he received a gift of land from his father "for paternal love and good will." He was a resident in East Haddam in 1736, but before June 13, 1739, had married Lydia (—) and removed to Hebron. In December, 1742, in deeding away his share of his father's land rights in East Haddam, he called himself "late of Cornwall in Hartford County."[66] It is presumed that he removed over the state line into New York.

II. Thankful[3], b. abt. 1703; d. March 9, 1771, in her 69th year, at Meriden, Connecticut; m. at Wallingford, July 5, 1727, Timothy[3] Foster (Thomas[2], Thomas[1]).[15, 31, 42] They had children (Foster) Timothy, Thankful, Lidia, Hannah and Mary.[66]

III. Rebecca[3], m. bef. December 22, 1727, John Mitchell, who on that date,[66] as son-in-law, received a gift of land from JOHN[2] ACKLEY.

IV. BENJAMIN[3], "ye second son,"[67] see following.

V. Sarah[3], unm. in March, 1737–8, when she deeded to Weeks Williams, land which had been her father's.[66]

VI. Mary[3], unm. in June, 1740, when she acknowledged a transfer to Charles Williams of land which had been her father's.[66]

VII. Nathaniel[3], "ye third son," b. supposedly abt. 1715, since his death record at Millington gives his age as 77 when he d., April 26, 1792. He m. at Colchester, May 6, 1738, Sarah Saxton, daughter of George and Sarah (Knight) Saxton or Sexton, who d. at Millington,[66] March 2, 1792, aged 71. This Nathaniel[3] was called "Nathaniel 2nd" throughout his life [see NOTE "B," p. 50]. On April 27, 1736, he received land in Millington by deed[66] from his father for "ye parental love & tender affection which I do bare unto my beloved son. . . .," and if he were b. in 1715, as suggested, this deed would approximate his arrival at legal age.

BENJAMIN[3] ACKLEY (*John*[2], *Nicholas*[1]) was born probably about 1707–10, and undoubtedly at East Haddam. He married,[4a, 15, 18] probably at or

near that town and about 1730–3, EXPERIENCE (——). The place and date of his death or that of his wife have not yet been found, but he died certainly[18, 23] after June, 1761, when he deeded land; probably after September, 1765, when his son Benjamin[4] was called "Jr."; and perhaps after the spring of 1767, when one of that name, called of East Haddam, was co-defendant[46] with Joshua Chandler [1728–87], a prominent lawyer of New Haven, in a lawsuit instituted by Thomas Tyler, of Boston, Massachusetts, in which the defendants won the verdict and costs.[22a]

The first recorded gift of lands made by JOHN[2] ACKLEY to any of his children was dated December 7, 1727, and was "for my love and tender respect which I do bare onto my son BENJAMIN ACKLY . . . ." This deed[66] gave BENJAMIN[3] the homestead and provided that the father should continue to live there and have his maintenance "during ye time of my natural life." In September, 1736, BENJAMIN[3] joined[67] with his brothers and sisters in a distribution of their father's estate [see NOTE "A," p. 48].

EXPERIENCE (——) joined East Haddam Church on October 7, 1739, and had her three oldest children baptized on the 28th of that month. BENJAMIN[3] himself was baptized as an adult and affiliated with the same body January 27, 1739–40. As far as is known,* his home was in East Haddam vicinity throughout his life, and he served as a private in May, 1755, under Captain Dimock, in the French and Indian War.[22, 24] This company was raised by Connecticut but was in the pay of New York.

He deeded land to his son HEZEKIAH[4] in June, 1761, when both were called "of East Haddam,"[18, 23] but soon thereafter his children HEZEKIAH[4], Benjamin[4], Joel[4] and Mindwell[4] removed to Hartland, Connecticut. No particulars as to the death of BENJAMIN[3] or his wife have yet been found, but she evidently lived at least until 1752–3. "Many of their descendants gradually removed into Ohio and adjoining states."

The children of BENJAMIN[3] and EXPERIENCE (——) ACKLEY, all baptized at East Haddam, except Oliver[4], were[4a, 11, 15]

I. HEZEKIAH[4], see following.
II. Mindwell[4], bap. October 28, 1739, at East Haddam; d. after March, 1785; m.[26, 27] at East Haddam, November 13, 1754, Dudley[4] Brainerd (James[3], James[2], DANIEL[1]).

* There was a Benjamin Ackley, who may have been[60] BENJAMIN[3], who lived in Dutchess County, New York, in 1775, when he with various others on August 15 refused to sign the Association Test or Oath.[24] The name appeared there also as a private in Captain Griffin's company. If he did so remove, it marked the departure from East Haddam of all males in the line of BENJAMIN[3] except his youngest son, Oliver[4].

III. *Benjamin[4], b. abt. 1738–9, bap. October 28, 1739, at East Haddam, with his elder brother and sister; d. March 28, 1796, in his 57th year, at Castleton, Vermont;[25] m. 1st at East Haddam[26] January 15, 1756, Hannah Higgins, doubtless daughter of Ichabod[4] Higgins (Samuel[3], Benjamin[2], Richard[1]); m. 2nd at Warren, Connecticut, in or abt. 1783, Elizabeth (Buel) Carter, who d. August 16, 1832, at the home of her son Orange Carter at Darien, New York.[15, 40]

IV. Thankful[4], bap. April 27, 1740; d. March 20, 1830, aged ninety;[25a] m. at East Haddam, May 13, 1761. Matthew[6] Smith (Thomas[5], Matthew[4], Matthew[3], Matthew[2], Matthew[1]).[26, 28, 29, 30]

*Frequent changes of residence have caused difficulty in establishing the true record of Benjamin[4] Ackley and therefore justify a summary here. His first wife joined the Middle Haddam Church November 14, 1756, but transferred her membership June 18, 1758, to the East Haddam Church, of which Benjamin[4] also became a member November 1, 1765. In July, 1763, he purchased land[31] in East Hartland and he removed to that town after September 1, 1765 [when his child was baptized at their old home], but before May 1, 1768, when he and his wife became constituent members of the first church in East Hartland.[33] From that town on June 5, 1770, they quitclaimed to Israel Higgins, of Chatham, all their right to the land of Israel[2] Cole, deceased, of Eastham, Massachusetts. This Israel[2] Cole (Daniel[1]) had, by his will, given land to his four grandsons, children of Hannah (Cole) Higgins. One of these grandsons, Ichabod[4] Higgins, and Jane Snow, his wife, were undoubtedly the parents of Hannah (Higgins) Ackley [who thus acquired a right through her father in the said Israel[2] Cole land]. In such case she and her offspring would descend from STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS of the Mayflower in two different ways, namely: through Hannah (Cole) Higgins, and through her daughter-in-law Jane (Snow) Higgins.[49] Added evidence of this parentage is seen in the fact that Hannah (Higgins) Ackley gave the name "Ichabod" to her only known son. The next removal of Benjamin[4] Ackley doubtless occurred soon after 1771–2 and took him back to Chatham vicinity where some of his wife's relatives lived; for, while resident in Chatham, he bought land in Kent [see map on p. 487], to which place he removed by January 4, 1778, when he joined the church at Warren [formerly a part of Kent] by letter from Marlboro, which was just over the county line from Chatham and was the residence of his eldest daughter. While in Kent he had connection with a fuel business or forge at New Preston for on February 16, 1786 [probably after his removal to Vermont], his nephew Hezekiah[5] Ackley (HEZEKIAH[4]) of that town sold a share in the iron works and "one half of the cole house built by Benjamin Ackley of Kent together with one eighth part of the land sequestered and belonging to said forge, coal yard dam and privileges of the stream and pondage."[54] In 1780–1 Benjamin[4] was a Representative, and in December, 1780, the governor and council ordered that £3,000 in bills of the state [depreciated currency] be put in his hands for the purchase of pork in Litchfield County for the use of the army.[54] Family records tell[40] of heavy losses endured by Benjamin[4] in connection with his duties as commissary—perhaps because of the rapid depreciation of state bills—and [perhaps on this account] the state sued him on May 1, 1786, and levied on and sold land of his in Kent to satisfy the claim.[51] He was sometimes referred to as "Major," but probably either through courtesy or on account of militia service, for no military record is found other than that of commissary. In October, 1783, he deeded land in Kent[51] to his daughter Rachel (Ackley) Curtis. After his second marriage, to Elizabeth (Buel) Carter, they removed (by 1786) with her six young children, and with some of his own by his first marriage, to Castleton, Vermont, to which place some of this wife's relatives had preceded them. There the Ackleys were active in the church and respected in the community, and there Benjamin[4] died.

The known children by his first wife, of whom at least five were born in East Haddam, were[4a, 15, 44, 49] (1) Hannah[5], b. November 21, 1756, bap. at Middle Haddam November 28, 1756; d. January 29, 1808; m. 1773, David Strong, and lived till 1794 at Marlboro, Conn., and then at East Hampton;[50] (2) Rachel[5], b. December 5, bap. December 10, 1758; m. by October 20, 1783, Silas Curtis of Kent;[51] (3) Ichabod[5], b. February 7, bap. March 1, 1761; d. August 23, 1764; (4) Chloe[5], b. February 2, bap. February 6, 1763; d. December 9, 1764; (5) Chloe[5], b. July 28, bap. September 1, 1765; (6) Roxanna[5] or Rosanna, b. probably abt. 1767; m. in[51] Castleton, Vt., January 30, 1787, Abel Fuller "jr." (Amos) from Warren, Conn., whose sister Rebecca married Rosanna's stepbrother Lorenzo Carter, later a pioneer of Cleveland, Ohio; (7) probably Zilpah[5], who, with Rosanna[5], witnessed[51, 54] a deed to Benjamin[4] which was dated February 27, 1783; perhaps others. Benjamin[4] had by his second wife a son John Anson[5] Ackley, born at Castleton July 27, 1789, died 1866 at Parma, Ohio, who in turn had by his second wife a son John Milton[6] Ackley, born 1835, late of Cleveland, Ohio, who in 1925, at the age of ninety years, was in the unusual position of being a living grandson[40] of one who lived and rendered service during the Revolution.

v. *Joel[4], b. 1742–3, bap. April 17, 1743; m. Lois [perhaps Brown[15]].
vi. Experience[4], b. 1745, bap.[27] December 8, 1745; d. January 17, 1815, in her seventieth year, at Litchfield, New York; m. at East Haddam, March 30, 1763, Asahel[5] Brainerd (Benjamin[4], James[3], James[2], DANIEL[1]). They removed to East Hartland and later to New York. [It is possible that Experience[4] had been m. previously on April 19, 1756, to Benjamin Bragg.]
vii. Rebecca[4], bap. July 10, 1748; prob. d. young.
viii. †Oliver[4], bap. December 2, 1750, at Middle Haddam; d.[29] September 17, 1827, and was buried at Rock Landing, East Haddam; m. 1st,[28] before 1781, Elizabeth[6] Smith, who had an ancestral lineage of five Matthew Smiths;[56] she d. April 4, 1815; m. 2nd, Matilda Cole.
ix. Rebecca[4], bap. February 18, 1753.
x. perhaps John[4].

HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY (*Benjamin[3], John[2], Nicholas[1]*) was born about 1730–5, probably at East Haddam, was baptized with his next younger sister

*Joel[4] Ackley[55] bought land in East Hartland as early as June, 1766, and removed there, whither his brothers HEZEKIAH[4] and Benjamin[4] had preceded him, probably late in 1769 [see baptism of his child] or early in 1770. He and his wife joined the church there on August 2, 1770. In May, 1781, the General Assembly of Connecticut made him an ensign of the 3rd Company in the 26th Regiment of state troops. One of his name, possibly he, [the fact that his father, BENJAMIN[3], while residing in Connecticut, had rendered military service in the pay of New York justifying the suggestion], served as a member of two different New York companies during the Revolution and received a 600-acre grant of bounty lands in return. This tract was in Ulysses township (now in Tompkins County) and he sold his right to it in July, 1783. On April 30, 1783, Joel[4] purchased from his brother HEZEKIAH[4] for £180, silver, that man's home, or property adjoining it, in the western part of Simsbury, now Granby [see map on p. 35]. He is recorded by the 1790 census as resident in Hartland vicinity; is shown by other records to have bought land there as late as February, 1792; and to have sold land in Hartland in 1791, 1794 and 1798. Lois (—) Ackley has sometimes been called his second wife, but evidence of a previous one has not been found. The known children of Joel[4] Ackley, the first four of whom were baptized at East Haddam and the others at East Hartland, [4a, 15, 31, 5] were (1) Lucy[5], b. abt. 1763, bap. October 11, 1767; (2) Joel[5], bap. October 11, 1767; perhaps it was he who m. in Suffield, October 18, 1812, Esther Parsons of Enfield; (3) Abner Brown[5], bap. October 11, 1767; m., by 1789, Huldah (—) and had Joel[6], b. May 27, 1790, and others; (4) Simon[5], bap. September 24, 1769; d. January 29, 1770; (5) Simon[5] or Simeon[5], bap. July 21, 1771; probably it was he who m. November 15 ,1791, at East Hartland, Lydia[6] Emmons [1774, daughter of Dr. Jeremiah[5] and Lydia (Ackley) Emmons (Jonathan[4], Samuel[3], Obediah[2], Thomas[1]);[31, 55] [possibly (6) Harris[5], bap. February 6, 1773]; (7) Aaron[5], bap. October 31, 1773; d. January 16, 1776; (8) Lois[5], bap. May 26, 1776; probably it was she who d. January 7, 1838, having m. April 18, 1794, Levi[6] Chapman (LEVI[5], LEVI[4], JOSEPH[3], JOHN[2], ROBERT[1]), and having gone to Ohio where she had, among others, children named "Joel" and "Nancy," presumably for her father, brother and sister; (9) Sarah[5], bap. June 28, 1778; (10) Aaron[5], bap. April 16, 1780; (11) Jesse[5], bap. September 1, 1782; (12) Nancy[5], bap. October 24, 1784.[55] A Joel Ackling, who may have been[60] a member of this family, died in Columbia County, N. Y., in 1791, whither our HEZEKIAH[4] had probably gone.

†Oliver[4] Ackley kept a hotel and carried on a blacksmithing business at East Haddam.[56] His wife, Elizabeth, was a member of the Middle Haddam church. Their known children, baptized at Middle Haddam and, it is said,[56] on the following dates, were (1) Rebecca[5], bap. December 2, 1781; m. October 28, 1805, James Post; (2) Polly[5], bap. December 2, 1781; (3) Elizabeth[5], bap. December 2, 1781; m. February 15, 1792, Samuel Smith; (4) Oliver[5], b. 1783, bap. September 9, 1787; d. August 17, 1849, and was buried at Champion, N. Y. He removed when a young man to St. Lawrence County, N. Y. He married first, Sally Morris, by whom he had several children; married secondly, February 6, 1808, Susan Strong, b. 1786; d. Leyden, N. Y., without issue; and married thirdly, by 1834, Lydia Read [b. February 23, 1798, at Schuyler, N. Y.; d. June 23, 1874, Watertown, N. Y.], by whom he had two children: (a) Elizabeth[6], who d. unmarried, and (b) Oliver Smith[6], b. May 15, 1835, in Champion, N. Y.; d. 1908, in Brooklyn, N. Y.; m. November 16, 1869, Susan Varick Cahoon. They resided in New York City. Their son Charles Sexton[7] Ackley furnished data on this line;[15, 22, 56] (5) Asa[5], bap. September 9, 1787; m. (—) Young; had children and removed to Ohio; (6) Sally[5], bap. November 8, 1789.

and brother on October 28, 1739, at that place,[4a, 15] and died[37] after April 30, 1783. He married[4a, 26] at East Haddam, September 15, 1756, ABIGAIL[5] DOANE [see Doane, p. 312].

HEZEKIAH[4] served as a private from September 4 to December 11, 1755, in the 7th Company, 3rd Regiment, under Captain Ichabod Phelps, in the French and Indian War.[32] In June, 1761, he received land from his father and the deed called them both "of East Haddam,"[23] but he must have removed to Hartland shortly after that date for he bought[34] one hundred acres of land there in April, 1762, and signed[35] a petition to the General Court as a resident of that place on May 9, 1763.

His wife was baptized and received into full membership in the Hartland Church[31] on May 7 (or[33] 17), 1769, the day before their son Calvin[5] received the same rite,[33] and the inference may be drawn that he was an infant and quite ill, for not until June 18, following, were their seven other children baptized.[33]

Their first home in Hartland was about one mile south of the meeting house [see map on p. 35], but on March 24, 1763, HEZEKIAH[4] bought[31] from Thomas Giddings a "mansion house" and land, east of the earlier location and just over the Hartland-Simsbury [later Hartland-Granby] line. The family, however, continued to attend church at Hartland.[31] This locality is, to this day, called "Ackley Place" or "Ackley Hill."

East Hartland is perched upon a hill top at about twelve hundred forty feet elevation and, in the center, the old white church sends its steeple up seventy-five feet farther. More than fifty spires and portions of five states, as well as Mount Greylock in northern Massachusetts, and even Mount Monadnock in southern New Hampshire can be seen from its top on a clear day. In 1790, when the Ackley, Beman and Gates families lived there, the town had 1,462 inhabitants but "it has the distinction of being the one town in the state that has consistently decreased in population with every succeeding census,[31] so that it is a mere hamlet at the present time."

HEZEKIAH[4] was[31] a selectman of Hartland in 1766, town treasurer there in 1767–8, and was still holding public office in 1780. He made many land transfers in the Hartland and Simsbury districts,[34, 37] both as grantor and as grantee, but the latest is dated April 30, 1783, when he sold about sixty-five acres adjoining his home, and perhaps including it, to his brother Joel[4] for £180 silver.[37] Diligent search has not disclosed his name in any later record nor the date and place of his death nor of that of his wife. In 1790 the household of his son, Hezekiah[5], Jr., in Washington Township, Litchfield County,

Connecticut, consisted of one male and two females, besides the parents and two children of the family. This has seemed to suggest the possibility that HEZEKIAH[4] and his wife or daughters may have been these extra members, especially since the parents-in-law of Hezekiah[5] were maintaining their own home at this time and all of their own children resided with them. Unsuccessful search has been carried on for a period of years over all of New England, but especially in Connecticut and New York, to learn where and when HEZEKIAH[4] and his wife, ABIGAIL (DOANE), died. The strongest probability seems to be that they died after 1790 and probably at Canaan, New York [see map on p. 487], where the census records one of his name then resident with two females. About 1783, the time of his sale of property in East Hartland to his brother Joel[4], his family began to break up and scatter. His son Hezekiah[5] settled in Washington, Connecticut, by or before 1785; his son Elihu[5] was in Canajoharie, New York, by 1800 and may have moved west much earlier [and Canaan, where this unidentified Hezekiah resided in 1790, was directly on his way]; it was doubtless Eliphalet[5], son of HEZEKIAH[4], who was in Freehold, New York, in 1790, equidistant from Canaan and Canajoharie; and Benjamin[5] had moved west to Wyalusing [now included in Pennsylvania] by 1791. Neither church, probate, land, cemetery nor any other local records[60] at Canaan prove the identity or the end of this Hezekiah Ackley, but he probably was ours. If so, since he was comparatively a stranger in a new country with no relatives near, it would not be surprising that his last years were unrecorded. He died probably before 1795, when local church records begin which might show him if living.

The children of HEZEKIAH[4] and ABIGAIL (DOANE) ACKLEY, the three elder born probably at East Haddam and the rest at East Hartland, and all baptized at the latter place, the first seven on June 18, 1769, and the others on dates as given, were[31, 33]

I. Lydia[5], b. prob. abt. 1757 at East Haddam; called "of Simsbury" when she m. at Hartland, August 8, 1773, Noah Chappel.

II. *Elihu[5], b. 1759 at East Haddam; d. July 12, 1834, at Hartwick, New York; called "of Simsbury" when he m. at Hartland, November 23, 1780, Thene Hayes.[31, 36]

* The death of Elihu[5] Ackley is shown[53] by government records and by a Bible owned in 1923 by his great-granddaughter, Miss Anna Lane, then of Mt. Vision, New York. The family burial lot is in an old cemetery "beyond Bowe Hill and about four miles east of Mt. Vision, N. Y." Headstones there mark the graves of "Thena wife of Elihu Ackliy [sic] who died July the 15 1833 in the 73d year of her age" and of their son "Calvin Ackliy who died July the 18th 1814 in the 27th year of his age," while on the other side of Thena's grave is another, undoubtedly her husband's, with a footstone marked "E.A." The whereabouts of Elihu[5] in 1790 is a mystery, for no census shows his name. It is possible that he was then en route to New York, for a Hezekiah Ackley [very likely his father] was then

III. ABIGAIL[5], b. abt. 1761, doubtless at East Haddam, bap. June 18, 1769, at East Hartland,[31] and d. at that place May 11, 1805, "aged 44 years";[31, 33] her gravestone carries this inscription:

"Dear friends be wise, it's time to know
The fading fate of things below.
O seek the Lord with every breath
And always be prepared for death."

She m. there about 1777–8, DANIEL[5] BEMAN [see Beman, p. 113].

IV. Hezekiah[5], b. January 1, 1763, at East Hartland; d. October 16, 1816, at Washington, Connecticut; m. there, January 11, 1787, Jemima[5] Whittlesey[36, 38] (Martin[4], Eliphalet[3], Eliphalet[2], John[1]). [See NOTE "C," p. 50.]

V. Eliphalet[5], b. bef. June 18, 1769. A single man of this name and approximate age was recorded at Freehold [now Durham], New York, in 1790 and recorded with a wife and family at Durham in 1810 and 1830.

VI. Zilpah[5], b. bef. June 18, 1769.

VII. Benjamin[5], one of this name was bap.[33] on June 18, 1769 at East Hartland, but a Bible record which has come down in his line and which covers his birth, marriages and death as well as his children's records claims[39] for him a birth date of December 20, 1769. There may, therefore, have been two sons Benjamin[5] in this family. He d. March 11, 1855, in Wyalusing, Pennsylvania; m. 1st, November 10, 1790, Nancy Maxfield, who d. May 5, 1812; m. 2nd, December 11, 1812, Amy Lewis,[39] daughter of Thomas and Mary (Turrell) Lewis. She d. March 28, 1855. [See NOTE "D," p. 51.]

VIII. Calvin[5], bap. May 8, 1769.

IX. "Israel Dōne[5]," bap. January 6, 1771.

X. Ruth[5], bap. August 7, 1774.

XI. Mary[5], bap. July 6, 1777; probably she who witnessed a deed[45] for Hezekiah[5] and Jemima (Whittlesey) Ackley, at Washington, Connecticut, on June 21, 1806.

NOTE "A"[67]

"To all people to whome these presents shall come Greeting. Know ye that we John Ackly, BENJAMIN ACKLY, Nathaniel Ackly & Timothy foster with Thankful foster wife of sd Timothy foster and John Mitchel with Rebeckah Michel his wife & Sarah Ackly & Mary Ackly all Heirs of Sar^{nt} JOHN ACKLY of East Haddam who Deceased August ye :25th 1736 we whose names are above written do agree together as touching a Division of ye Estate of ye abovesd Deceased as followes. 1st we do agree that John Ackly ye eldest son of ye abovesd deceased sall haue for his portion out of ye abovesd estate one alotment of Land lying in ye meddow commonly known by ye name of ye Cove meddow appraised at nin^{e}ty pounds Money. 2ly. eight acres of Land Lying on ye plain Commonly known by ye name of ye Sawmill plain. these two pieces of land above-mentioned with the best sute of wearing cloathes

---

recorded at Canaan, New York, and an Eliphalet Ackley [probably his brother] was resident at Freehold, New York. Moreover, in 1800 an Elihu [undoubtedly this man] was at Canajoharie, New York, with one male and four females beside his wife, and by 1810 Elihu[5] was definitely recorded at Hartwick [see map on p. 489] with his wife and two males [aged between 16 and 26, and 10 and 16, respectively] who were presumably his sons. In 1818 the state of New York leased land[60] in Hartwick to "Elisha Ackley" [probably miscopied from "Elihu"[5]]. In 1820 and 1830 he and his wife lived there alone. Elihu[5] served for one year in the Revolution and on October 8, 1822, then aged sixty-three, being "almost blind and with a wife to support," he applied for a pension, which was granted to him. Two daughters, Betsey[6] and Ruth[6], survived him and collected the last payment of his pension. The known children of Elihu[5] and his wife, Thene, were (1) Betsey[6], died after October, 1834; married (—) Lane and lived in Hartwick, New York; (2) Ruth[6], died after October, 1834; married Samuel Cooley and lived in Laurens, New York; (3) Calvin[6], born 1788; died July 18, 1814 in his twenty-seventh year.[53]

together with the lands allready conveyed to me by my honnord father. Allso half ye Right in ye Commons belonging to ye aboves^{d} estate [of] JOHN ACKLY before his Deceas I do freely & fully acknowledg to be my full portion of ye abovesd estate and Do by these presents for myself my heirs & assigns for ever to acquit all my right title or Claim to any part of ye Estate of ye abovesd deceased whether Real or personal in Witness whereof I haue hereunto set my hand and Seal.

2ly we ye abovesd heirs of Sar^{nt} JOHN ACKLY Deceased do Joyntly agree that BENJAMIN ACKLY ye second son of ye abovesd deceased shall haue for his portion of ye abovesd estate four acres in addition to his Dwelling Lot lying at ye east end of yt hundred & ten Rods in Length which his father made over to him before his Deceas Lying ye whole width of sd lot allso halfe ye Right in ye Commons belonging to ye abovesd estate together with ye quantities of Land Conveyed to him by his honnord father in his life time I ye sd BENJAMIN ACKLY do acknowledg it to be my full portion of ye abovesd estate & do by these presents for myselfe heirs & assigns for ever acquit & Relinquish all my Right, Title, Claim or Interest to ye aboves^{d} Estate in Witness Whereof I haue hereunto set my hand & seal.

3ly we the above mentioned heirs of Sar^{nt} JOHN ACKLY Deceased do Joyntly agree yt Nathaniel Ackly ye third son of ye abovesd Deceased Shall haue for his portion of ye aboves^{d} estate one hundred acres of Land Lying in ye northward part of ye bounds of East Haddam near Coulchester bounds which tract of Land with a five & twenty pound right in ye Commons which land & Right was Conveyed to me by my honerd father before his deceas which Land & right I ye sd Nathaniel Ackly Do acknowledg to be my full portion of my honerd fathers estate & do hereby acknowledg myselfe fully satisfied herewith & do hereby acquit & discharge my Brethren & sisters from all farther demands upon sd estate

4ly and Lastly we ye afore mentioned heirs of ye forsaid Estate Do Covenant & agree that our sisters namly Thankfull ye wife of Timothy foster & Rebeckah ye wife of John Mitchell with Sarah Ackly and Mary Ackly all Daughters of ye above sd Deceased shall have all ye remainder of the Estate of our honerd father Deceased whither Real or personal to be Divided amongst [them] according to the Rule of Justice farther more we ye sd Timothy foster with Thankfull his wife and John Mitchel with Rebeckah his wife & Sarah Ackly and Mary Ackly Do Declare hereby ourselves to be fully satisfied with ye above Covenantted premisses as our part in our honered fathers estate & Do here by acquit & Discharge our Brethren from all farther Demands upon said estate & for ye farther Confirmation of these presents we the afore mentioned John Ackly BENJAMIN ACKLY, Nathaniel Ackly Timothy foster & Thankfull his wife John Mitchell with Rebeckah his wife with Sarah Ackly and Mary Ackly heirs of ye aboves^{d} have hereunto set our hands & Seales this twenty sixth Day of September in ye year of our Lord 1736 & in ye ninth year of our Sovereign Lord George ye Second of Great brittain King Anno Dom 1736

Signed, Sealed & Delivered
in presence of
Henry Champen
Jeremiah Gates
Thomas Cone

his
John X Ackly
mark
his
BENJAMIN X ACKLY
mark
Nathaniel Ackly
his
Timothy X foster
mark
his
John X Michel
mark
her
Rebeckah X michel
mark
Sarah X Ackly [sic]
her
Mary X Ackly
mark

Lastly we ye above sd heirs do Joyntly agree together that BENJAMIN ACKLY ye second son of ye abovesd Deceased shall haue eight acres at ye East end of the home Lot of ye aboves^{d} Deceased to be sold for ye paying of Debts of ye aboves^{d} estate with the necessary charges arising on ye same farther more we ye aboves^{d} heirs Do agree together yt John Ackly ye oldest son shall haue ten pounds worth of Land out of ye hom lot at six pounds an acre."

The above signers acknowledged the above document at East Haddam on November 4, 1736.[67]

NOTE "B"

There has been much confusion relative to the three first-cousins in the third generation who bore in common the name "Nathaniel." They were called "1st," "2nd," and "3rd," in sequence of their birth, viz.:[4a, 9a, 43]

(a) Nathaniel[3] (James[2], NICHOLAS[1]), called[63] "1st," was born November 7, 1711 [sometimes rendered as 1712 (!)], bap. December 30, 1711, died in Millington September 18, 1794, aged 83 years, 10 months. He married 1st, April 16, 1734, Mary Williams (Henry of East Haddam), who died at Millington in 1789, aged 70. He, "aged 82," married 2nd, there, December 20, 1792, the widow Hannah Smith, "aged 75." By his first wife he had (1) Mary[4], b. May 27, 1735; (2) Ruth[4], b. December 3, 1737; (3) Nathaniel[4], b. April 19, 1740; d. December 2, 1759; (4) Elizabeth[4], b. March 16, 1745; (5) Henry[4], b. September 1, 1747; (6) Lydia[4], b. August 28, 1749; d. February 12, 1826; m. 1st, about 1770, Jeremiah Emmons, d. 1790; m. 2nd, Capt. Abel Brace; m. 3rd, March 3, 1819, as his third wife, Joseph[6] Coe (Josiah[5], Joseph[4], JOHN[3], ROBERT[2], ROBERT[1]); (7) Ephraim[4], b. February 25, 1751; (8) Candace[4], b. July 20, 1756; (9) Warren[4], b. October 26, 1758.[31, 63]

(b) Nathaniel[3] [see p. 42]; must have[4a, 43] been the son of JOHN[2] (NICHOLAS[1])], born about 1715, called[64] "2nd," married Sarah Saxton. His will, filed in Hartford, dated March 6, 1792, and proved May 1 of that year, with James Saxton, a relative, acting as executor, named his sons Abraham[4] and Joseph[4], granddaughter Sarah, wife of Samuel Stewart, and granddaughters Olive and Dorothy Cone. He had also a son Nathaniel[4], baptized September 4, 1743, and a daughter Sarah[4], born or baptized at Colchester September 4, 1743; died at Millington January 20, 1788; married June 26, 1760, Sylvanus[4] Cone, "Jr." (George[3], Daniel[2], DANIEL[1]); perhaps other children. [It may be permissible to digress just here to record an added complication in that the Sylvanus[4] Cone mentioned just above as marrying Sarah[4] Ackley had a contemporary second cousin Sylvanus[4] Cone "Sr." (James[3], Nathaniel[2], DANIEL[1]), one year his senior, who married Hannah[4] Ackley (Gideon[3], James[2], NICHOLAS[1]), second cousin to this Sarah[4].][64]

(c) Nathaniel[3] (Samuel[2], NICHOLAS[1]), called[43, 65] "3rd," born June 14, 1726; died March 14, 1794, aged 67; married February 16, 1756, Lucretia[5] Willey (Joseph[4], John[3], John[2], Isaac[1]). The distinguishing title of "3rd" was applied to him until the last previous (b) Nathaniel[3] died in 1792. He added to the confusion by giving a son, born on August 8, 1765, the name "Nathaniel," so that each Nathaniel[3] had[65] a Nathaniel[4].

NOTE "C"

Hezekiah[5] Ackley [see p. 48] served in the Revolution.[39, 57] He settled in Washington, Connecticut, as early as 1785, for in October of that year he and Matthew Elliot of Kent paid £100 for one-fourth part of the Waramaug iron works [called also Cogswell's iron works] on the east side of Aspetuc River in Washington. The following February Hezekiah[5] sold his share, or one-eighth part of this forge, to William Cogswell for £24 and with it deeded "one-half of the cole house built by Benjamin Ackley of Kent . .," who was his uncle. In 1790 Hezekiah[5] had resident with him three more persons than his family contained and, since they were not his wife's people [who are otherwise accounted for], it has seemed possible that his parents [or members of their family] were living with him, unless the unidentified Hezekiah Ackley of Canaan, New York, in 1790, was his father. On June 21, 1806, Hezekiah[5] sold land in Susquehanna township, Pennsylvania, and a Mary Ackley, probably his sister, witnessed the deed. His wife's uncle, Eliphalet Whittlesey, had earlier assisted in surveying the land in Pennsylvania which Connecticut claimed, and in 1791 Benjamin[5] Ackley [see NOTE "D"], brother of Hezekiah[5], removed there permanently.

The children of Hezekiah[5] were[57]

I. Leman[6], b. November 10, 1787; d. March 5, 1864; m. May, 1827, Marinda (Benedict) Hubbell (Jesse[6], Jesse[5], Matthew[4], John[3], John[2], Thomas[1] Benedict) and had at least four children.
II. Abby[6], b. December 18, 1789; d. after August, 1829; m., by 1812, John[6] Warner (Jabez Ichabod[5], Jabez[4], John[3], Andrew[2], Andrew[1]) and removed to Niagara County, N. Y.
III. Sally[6], b. March 27, 1792; d. May 13, 1860; m. January 1, 1816, Jesse[7] Benedict, brother of Marinda[7] above.
IV. Chester[6], b. September 24, 1794; went to Ohio; d. unmarried at the age of about 65.
V. Mary[6], b. February 20, d. July 14, 1797.
VI. Mary W.[6], b. July 6, 1798; d. s. p.; m. (—) Gibson.
VII. Martin[6], b. November 17, 1800; d. July 24, 1801.
VIII. Eliza[6], b. May 31, 1802; d. February 16, 1859; m. Isaac D. Patterson.
IX. John D.[6], b. December 17, 1804; d. February 13, 1887.
X. Della[6] or Dolly, b. December 7, 1806; m. Rev. Mr. Doty and went to Ceylon in 1840 as a missionary.
XI. Jemima[6], b. June 1, 1809; d. February 4, 1811.
XII. Fanny[6], b. March 19, 1812; d. unmarried at the age of 76.[39, 57]

NOTE "D"

Tradition says that Benjamin[5] [see p. 48] and his first wife lived for a time at Quaker Hill, Dutchess County, New York, but it is certain[58] that by 1791 he had removed to Wyalusing [now in Bradford County] in the Susquehanna Valley, Pennsylvania. This is in the territory long claimed by Connecticut, where the Wyoming massacre had taken place, and where the claimants of land were gradually filtering back. Hezekiah[5] [see p. 50], elder brother of Benjamin[5], owned land here which he sold in 1806. Benjamin[5], the first blacksmith in the neighborhood, built a log house and in 1793 brought his family there. He, with three neighbors living within a square mile, had collectively upwards of sixty children, of whom an even dozen belonged to Benjamin[5]. He was recorded in the censuses of 1800–30, and probably later. The children of Benjamin[5] Ackley and his first wife, most if not all of them born at Wyalusing, were[39, 58]

I. Lloyd[6], b. March 26, 1792; living 1830; m. after 1810 but before 1820.
II. Henry[6], b. April 27, 1794; d. November 28, 1795.
III. Harry[6], b. April 5, 1796; d. there January 11, 1864; m. 1814, at the age of nineteen, Abigail Bennett, born in Connecticut at Greens Farms on June 11, 1792, daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Stratton) Bennett. [Thomas Bennett (Nathan) was called "Junior" in deference to his uncle of the same name.] Harry[6] Ackley was a captain of sharpshooters in 1812, postmaster in 1836, and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas for many years. His children were (1) Angeline[7], d. February 21, 1890, ae. 75; m. Milton Lewis; (2) Ferris[7], d. September 26, 1888 or 1889, ae. 73; he m. but left no sons; (3) Alfred[7], d. December 26, 1884, ae. 64; m. and had the Rev. S. F.[8] Ackley, once of Moscow, Pa.; (4) Lucretia[7], d. April 2, 1888, ae. 64; m. John Lum; (5) Nancy[7], m. Washington Taylor and removed to Keokuk, Ia.; (6) Demmon[7], b. April 26, 1822; d. after 1891; m. September 13, 1848, Abigail B. Lacey and had a son Griffin[8] and three daughters; (7) Lorenzo[7], b. at Spring Hill, Pa., February 28, 1826; d. July 20, 1894 at Buffalo, N. Y.; m. May 14, 1850, Emma Bosworth and had sons Frederick[8] and Harry[8] and a daughter Helen Eva[8], who m. September 10, 1870, William G. Parke; (8) Harris S.[7], who resided at Binghampton, N. Y., and d. s. p.; (9) Helen[7], who m. Stephen Bowen and removed to Mitchell, S. D.; (10) Sophia[7], who m. Stuart Biswork and removed to Marshall, Ia.; (11) Henry[7], who d. February 2, 1883, ae. 47; m. Ann Louise (—). Their residence in 1891 was in Susquehanna County, Pa., and they had sons Harry[8] and Byron[8].
IV. Sally[6], b. April 5, 1798; drowned May 30, 1807.
V. Mary Ann[6], b. June 10, 1800; m. Aholiab Taylor.
VI. "Niram[6]," b. September 21, 1802. [Sometimes a "Perrin" is named as belonging to this family.]
VII. Hannah[6], b. July 20, 1805; d. May 7, 1877; m. John H. Black and had a son N. A. Black, b. 1835.
VIII. Olive[6], b. June 20, 1808; doubtless she who m. Peter Harris[6] Schofield (Silas[5], Elisha[4], Arthur[3], Arthur[2], Arthur[1]), b. 1801.

The children of Benjamin[5] and his second wife were

IX. Sally[6], b. August 29, 1813; d. by 1891.
X. Cordelia[6], b. August 14, 1815; m. March 11, 1840, Moses[6] Tyler, of Bridgewater, Pa., son of Royal[5] (Solomon[4], Joseph[3], John[2], Job[1]).
XI. Sterling[6], b. December 20, 1817; d. February 23, 1894; m. May 25, 1843, Mary[6] Tyler, sister of Moses[6] above.
XII. Justus[6], b. September 10, 1820; d. March 20, 1880.
XIII. Harriet[6], b. March 2, 1823.
XIV. Benjamin[6], b. March 13, 1826; d. May 15, 1903; m. 1st, December 14, 1852, Lydia Ann Wheelock, who d. January 12, 1857; m. 2nd, June 28, 1858, Ruth A. Barns, who d. April 17, 1859; m. 3rd, April 18, 1860, Amanda Brooks.
XV. Caroline[6], b. August 9, 1829; d. May, 1908; m. Alonzo Lloyd.

There were two other distinctly different and unidentified Benjamin Ackleys, both considerably older than Benjamin[5] above [but probably not as much as a generation older]. (1) One of these families resided[61] in Coxsackie, Greene County, New York, in 1790; in Edinburg, Saratoga County, in 1801; and later in Stony Creek, Warren County. Some descendants are now in De Kalb township, St. Lawrence County. The name "Ananias" was peculiar to this group.[61] (2) The other[62] Benjamin Ackley family [spelled also Ackla and Acla] was resident in Florida, Orange County, New York, whence its head served in the Revolution. He removed in 1785 from Florida with his father-in-law, Amos Bennett, and his brother-in-law Richard Benjamin, both with their families, to the Susquehanna Valley. They settled first at Wyalusing and in 1793 at Asylum, where this [(2)] Benjamin himself died April 26, 1835, aged 82, and where Benjamin[5] of our Ackley family also lived. Some of the children of the former resided in Towanda by 1810. He and his wife, Hannah (Bennett) Ackley, had children: (1) Betsey; (2) Amos; (3)

John; (4) Anna; (5) Leah, who m. her cousin Jonathan Benjamin and d. in 1847, aged 77; (6) Phebe; (7) William; (8) Jonathan; (9) Polly; (10) Benjamin; (11) David.

There was also[59] an unidentified Sterling Ackley, probably as old as Elihu[5] [see p. 47] and presumably related to this family. In 1800 Elihu and this Sterling both lived at Canajoharie, New York, when the latter had, besides his wife, four males and three females. Later a Sterling Ackley, said to have been born in Litchfield County, Connecticut, and undoubtedly this same man, was resident about thirty miles farther west, at Winfield, New York. He is said to have married, when quite young, Lydia Bronson, and to have had: (1) Mary Jane; (2) Sterling [a name given also to a child of Benjamin[5], see p. 50]; (3) Leman, b. 1808 [that name appears also among the children of Hezekiah[5], see p. 50]; (4) Benjamin, who became a schoolteacher at Lancaster, Ohio, having as pupils there, it is said, Gen. Sherman and Gen. Thomas Ewing; (5) Calvin [which name was given to a child of HEZEKIAH[4] see p. 48]; (6) Hovey; (7) Sally; (8) Laura; (9) Abigail.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, I, 7, 497.
2. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 375, 436–7, 473, 496, 545.
2a. Hartford [Conn.] in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, pp. 191, 209–10, 239–40, 290–2; Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 47–8, 92, 393.
3. Historical Notices of Hartford Conn., W. S. Porter, I, 19, 22–3.
3a. Ibid., II, 19, 35–7.
4. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, p. 158.
4a. Manuscript Genealogies of East Haddam, Conn., Families, by D. W. Patterson, in Connecticut Historical Society.
5. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 261.
5a. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, VI, 80, 83, 110, 140, 156.
6. Hall Family Ancestry, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 217–23.
7. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, pp, 10, 13, 110, 182, 225, 256.
8. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 19–20.
9. Town Records of Cambridge, Mass., 1901, p. 88.
9a. Typed Copy in Newberry Library, Chicago, Ill., of Baptisms recorded at the First Congregational Church, East Haddam, Conn.
10. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 369–72, including map, 379.
10a. Historical Catalogue of the First Church in Hartford, Conn., 1885, p. 239.
11. History of Haddam and East Haddam, Conn., D. D. Field, 1814, pp. 5, 6, 11, 43.
12. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 526.
13. Genealogical Notes of Some of the First Families of Connecticut and Massachusetts, N. Goodwin, 1856, pp. 197, 201, 203.
13a. New England Register, XI, 274–5, 277, 311, 313; XII, 44, 46; XIII, 19, 20, 130.
14. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 393; Errata, III, x, xiii.
14a. New York Record, III, 64, 66; Savage, I, 139; IV, 618.
15. Manuscript Notes and family records furnished by Newton E. Ackley, Meriden, Conn., and by Charles S. Ackley, New York, N. Y.
16. Macdonough-Hackstaff Ancestry, R. Macdonough, 1901, pp. 238, 273.
17. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 3–4, 144, 423, 565; Errata, III, xiii.
17a. Trowbridge Genealogy, F. B. Trowbridge, 1908, p. 681.
18. Report from Examination of Haddam and East Haddam Conn., Records, performed by F. F. Starr, Middletown, Conn., 1923.
19. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1906, III, 139.
20. Ibid., II, 3–4, 144.
21. Ibid., I, 350, 428.
22. Society of Colonial Wars, National Register of Ancestors and Honor Roll, 1922, p. 2.
22a. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XII, 604.
23. Land Records at East Haddam, Conn., VI, 353.
24. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, I, 71–2; New York State Historian's Annual Report, 1896, I, 665–6; Calendar of Historical Manuscript relating to the Revolution, I, 85, in Albany, N. Y.
25. Published Epitaphs from Castleton, Vt., Churchyard, p. 1.
25a. Mack Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1903, I, 97.
26. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1904, VI, 120–1.
27. Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 2, 50–1, 69.
28. Matthew Smith Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1890, pp. 15, 37.
29. Treman Family, E. M. Treman and M. E. Poole, 1901, I, 516–7.
30. Fuller Genealogy, W. H. Fuller, 1908, I, 87, 153, 200.

31. Abstracts from Church, Land and Other Records of East Hartland, Conn., furnished by D. N. Gaines (1923), Town Clerk.
32. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, IX, 1, 42.
33. New England Register, LX, 392–6; LXI, 31, 35; LXXX, 415.
34. Land Records at East Hartland, Conn., I, 20, 23, 100, 182, 237, 246–7, 271, 345, 360, 388.
35. Document 269, Volume 9, "Towns & Lands," in Connecticut State Library.
36. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1902, V, 74, 79
37. Land Records at Simsbury, Conn., XIII, 187.
38. Whittlesey Genealogy, C. B. Whittlesey, 1898, pp. 69, 108–9.
39. Records furnished by N. Grier Parke, Pottsville, Pa., from a Bible, family sources and East Haddam, Conn., Church files.
40. Family Records furnished, 1923–5, by John M.[6] Ackley, deceased, of Cleveland, Ohio, and his sister, Mrs. Julia Ackley Stearns, Pittsburgh, Pa.; Pioneer Families of Cleveland, G. V. Wickham, 1914, I, 16–7, History of Cuyahoga County, W. R. Coates, 1924, I, 88; II, 73.
41. Ancient Families of New York, E. R. Purple, 1881, p. 62.
42. Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, pp. 1015–7.
43. Search of Original Records in Middlesex and Hartford Counties, Conn., by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn.
44. East Haddam, Conn., Church Records; New England Register, LXXX, 415, LXXXI, 47.
45. Washington, Conn., Land Records, VI, 619.
46. Chandler Genealogy, G. Chandler, 1883, pp. 252–7.
47. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 302–3; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 39–40, 70.
48. 200th Anniversary of First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, pp. 255–8.
49. New England Register, XLVII, 82–3, 188–9; Mayflower Descendant, XV, 55, 189–90; Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, VI, 120; Higgins Genealogy, K. C. Higgins, 1918, pp. 85, 119–22; Supplement, 1924, p. 13.
50. Strong Genealogy, B. W. Dwight, 1871, II, 931.
51. Kent, Conn., Land Records, VII, 147, 243, 245, 507, 523; Castleton, Vt., Town & Church Records.
52. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 393; II, 144, 565; New England Register, XI, 311–2.
53. Revolutionary War Pension S.44544; Revolution Pension Certificate No. 18902, New York Agency; New York Record, XLIX, 286; gravestone and family records furnished by Albert Miller, Pasadena, Calif.; Census Records.
54. Public Records of Connecticut, III, 278–9; East Hartland, Conn. Land Records, I, 245, 316; Chatham, Conn., Land Records, II, 232; Washington, Conn., Land Records, I, 437; Warren, Conn., Church Records; Census Records; New England Register, LXXX, 415.
55. Public Records of Connecticut, III, 402; Documents Relating to the Colonial History of New York, XV, [State Archives I], 1887, pp. 184, 815; Simsbury, Conn., Land Records, XIII, 187; East Hartland, Conn., Land Records, I, 147, 239–40, 413; II, 102; III, 536; IV, 382, 541; V, 487 et seq.; History of Enfield, Conn., F. O. Allen, 1900, II, 1521; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 48–9; Emmons Genealogy, E. N. Emmons, 1905, pp. 26, 38, disputed and corrected by reference No. 31; New York Military Ballotting Book, II, 25, 84; III, 136, 150; Albany County, N. Y., Deeds, XIII, 584; New York Military Letters Patent, IV, 199; Probate Records of Columbia County, N. Y.; New York in the Revolution, 2nd ed., 1898, pp. 18, 40; New England Register, LX, 394–5, 397.
56. Mack Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1903, I, 99–100; Matthew Smith Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1890, p. 37; Treman Family, E. M. Treman and M. E. Poole, 1901, I, 403, 516–7, 539; Middle Haddam, Conn., Church Records.
57. Washington, Conn., Land Records, I, 390, 437; III, 19, 182; IV, 63, 256; VI, 615 or 619; VIII, 93, 407; History of Woodbury, Conn., W. Cothren, 1879, III, 320–1, 323–4, 326, 328–31, 333, 335, 400–1, 403; Descendants of Andrew Warner, L. C. Warner, 1919, p. 256; Benedict Genealogy, H. M. Benedict, 1870, pp. 104, 189; Connecticut Military Record, 1889, p. 536; Honor Roll of Litchfield County, Conn., Revolutionary Soldiers, 1912, p. 189; D. A. R. Lineage Book XLVI, 313; C, 214; Census Records.
58. History of Bradford County, Pa., D. Craft, 1878, pp. 108, 387, 419, 442, 445; History of Bradford County, Pa., H. C. Bradsby, 1891, pp. 210, 539, 565–70, 583, 639–40; Tyler Genealogy, W. I. T. Brigham, 1912, I, 376; History of the Towandas, Pa., C. F. Heverly, 1886, p. 42; Census Records; Scovil Genealogy, H. W. Brainard, 1915, p. 509.
59. New York Record, XLIX, 281; Family Records.
60. Search by E. L. Moffatt, Boston, Mass., in New York, covering Colonial and State Patents; Town Papers and Grants; Calendars of Historical Manuscript; State Historian's Annual Reports; Military Balloting Books as well as intensive local search in Albany, Columbia and Dutchess Counties through Land, Mortgage, Church, Probate, Town and Cemetery Records and Family Bibles.
61. History of Saratoga County, N. Y., N. B. Sylvester, 1878, p. 370; Census Records.

62. Documents Relating to the Colonial History of New York, XV [State Archives, I], p. 311; Pioneer and Patriot Families of Bradford County, Pa., I, 184; History of Bradford County, Pa., D. Craft, 1878, pp. 267, 444; History of Bradford County, H. C. Bradsby, 1891, pp. 391–3, 567; Census Records.
63. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, I, 88; Robert Coe, Puritan, J. W. Bartlett, 1911, p. 185.
64. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 17–8, 165; Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 19; Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, I, 87.
65. Willey Genealogy, H. Willey, 1888, p. 19.
66. Research by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn., of East Haddam, Conn., Land Records II, 116, 126, 252, 564, 595, 646, 782, 1001, 1022.
67. Research by H. W. Brainard, Ibid., II, 566.

ANDREWS

* [226]
NICHOLAS ANDREWS
c.1642–1697–8

m
bef.1672

ELIZABETH NICHOLSON
c.1649–1727

* [112]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
c.1685–1749

m
1709

MARY ANDREWS
c.1695–1748

* † [56]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
1710–c.1759

m
1740

ANNA OBER [widow Hale]
1715–1791

† ‡ [28]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
1741–1794

m
1761

JOANNA HERRICK
1745–1810

† ‡ § ‖ [14]
HENRY BARTLETT
1771–1850

m
1792

BETSEY COREY
1772–1857

♦ ¶ ‖ [6]
CHARLES SHIPMAN
1787–1860

m 2nd
1814

JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT
1793–1870

♣ ¶ [2]
BEMAN GATES
1818–1894

m
1841

BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN
1816–1895

¶
RUFUS R. DAWES
1838–1899

m
1864

MARY BEMAN GATES
1842–1921

* Marblehead, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

ANDREWS

NICHOLAS[1] ANDREWS appears to have been the emigrant ancestor of this family, though the date of his arrival has not yet been found. He was born about 1642 for he deposed in 1680, then aged about thirty-eight, regarding the faulty working of the windmill at Marblehead.[1] In 1668, as "NICKHOLLES ANDREWES" he was one of the signers of the petition against imposts.[2] His home was in Marblehead [see map on p. 830], and by occupation he was a fisherman, as was almost every other inhabitant of that town. The necessarily long trips away from home are hinted at in the following request for a town meeting dated March 14, 1673–4, which document was signed by many inhabitants including NICHOLAS[1].

"We whose names are heere vnderwritten doe desire a gen[ll]. Towne meeting to be called the next second day being the sixteenth day of March, and we desire it the more because we suppose the Inhabytants are now most at home and vrgent ocations requires it at about eight of the clock in morneing."[4, 5]

The trials and hardships of the fishermen, as told in the Bartlett chapter apply as truly to NICHOLAS[1] as to our other sea-faring ancestors.

He married, "before 1672,"[3] ELIZABETH[2] NICHOLSON [see Nicholson, p. 602]; he witnessed[5] on June 24, 1673, a letter of attorney from his mother-in-law, ELIZABETH (SIMSON) NICHOLSON Brown; and in 1676–7 he bought a house and land in Marblehead.[7] Certain slight inconsistencies exist in the obtainable records relative to this man which will be stated, though explanation is not attempted. He held the office of constable[6] in 1675 though May 16, 1683, is the date when freemanship was granted to one of this name[7, 8] and since his son of the same name was still a minor, it must have been to the father. Usually in Massachusetts only freemen were given public office, but Marblehead had no church organization in its early days so its inhabitants were hampered in meeting that requirement for freemanship, and yet the peculiar conditions existing there made necessary the presence of a constable more than in some other towns. Also, according to custom, he must have become a church member

before acquiring freemanship, yet unaccountably his four younger children were baptized at the First Congregational Church in April, 1695, in their mother's right, as children of ELIZABETH ANDREWS "senior"[9] as though she alone possessed church membership although NICHOLAS[1] did not die until between[7] March 15, 1696–7, and September 5, 1698, the dates of his will and its probate.

The children of NICHOLAS[1] and ELIZABETH (NICHOLSON) ANDREWS, born undoubtedly at Marblehead, were[7, 9]

I. Nicholas[2], b. (—), buried December 4, 1730, at Marblehead; m. in Lynn, June 27, 1695, Mary Fairfield.
II. Joseph[2], buried December 5, 1743, at Marblehead; m. there, November 15, 1694, Mary Girdler.
III. Thomas[2], was in England in 1697, if living.
IV. Elizabeth[2], bap. April 14, 1695; probably she who m. June 12, 1699, Joseph Adams.
V. Susanna[2], bap. April 14, 1695; m. bef. 1730, John Sausor.
VI. Hannah[2], bap. April 14, 1695; probably she who m. February 25, 1712–3, John Vickery.
VII. MARY[2], bap. April 14, 1695, at Marblehead; buried at that place September 5, 1748;[10] m.[10] there, May 9, 1709, WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT [see Bartlett, p. 75].

REFERENCES

1. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 386.
2. New England Register, IX, 83.
3. Savage, I, 55.
4. New England Register, VII, 70.
5. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 172, 282.
6. Ibid., VI, 42.
7. Essex Antiquarian, III, 158.
8. New England Register, III, 345.
9. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., I, 14–15; II, 12–13, 476–7.
10. Ibid., II, 22, 482.

BANGS

* † [766] Edward Bangs c.1591–1677–8	m [prob. 3rd] c.1635–7	Rebecca [Hobart?] –bef.1677
* † [382] Jonathan Sparrow by 1632–1707	m 1654	Rebecca Bangs c.1636–7–c.1677
† [190] William Freeman c.1660–1686–7	m c.1675–84	Lydia Sparrow c.1660–1–aft.1708
† ‡ [94] Richard Godfrey 1677–aft.1741	m 1702	Lydia Freeman c.1684–aft.1716
† § [46] Prence Doane 1704–c.1751	m 1726	Elizabeth Godfrey 1704–bef.1791
‖ ¶ [22] Hezekiah Ackley c.1733–5–aft.1783	m 1756	Abigail Doane 1732–aft.1777
¶ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
¶ ♣ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
♣ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Plymouth, Mass.
† Eastham, Mass.
‡ Harwich, Mass.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ East Haddam, Conn.
¶ East Hartland, Conn.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.

BANGS

EDWARD[1] BANGS, accepted as the son* of JOHN and JANE (CHAVIS) BANGS of Panfield,[1] co. Essex, England, came to New England in the "Anne," William Peirce, Master, arriving[3, 4] the latter part of July, 1623.

The overwhelming desire on the part of the Pilgrims for freedom from existing conditions in England, and the endurance they were prepared to show in order to avoid continuance of such, is evidenced in the story of the repeated dangers and endless hardships experienced by the emigrants who came in this boat and the "Little James." The initial embarkation occurred on October 16, 1622, when the "Paragon" set out from London with sixty-seven passengers. By the time they had reached the Downs severe storms had disabled the boat, which was an old and faulty one, and they returned to port, arriving there fourteen days after having left it. The vessel had to be put in dock for repairs, which included the mending of a leakage and of a broken cable, costing £100, beside causing six or seven weeks' delay, during which time the living expenses of all the passengers were an added obligation on the Adventurers' Company which had arranged with John Peirce, owner of the boat, for their transportation.[5a] As these days of deferment dragged on, an apprehension of the menace of winter storms during their postponed

*An investigation[1] of wills, deeds, parish registers and inquisitions post mortem extending over a period of years in the English localities where Bangs families are recorded, has been sufficiently exhaustive to justify the statement above. The family name is earliest found in co. Norfolk and later in co. Essex. Only two baptisms of children named "Edward" have been found, and but one of them in this period. In Panfield, co. Essex, on January 30, 1586–7, JOHN BANGS [son of RICHARD, late of Norwich, co. Norfolk, deceased, as shown by a later deed] married JANE CHAVIS. On October 28, 1591, their third son "EDWARD" was baptized, and he was living in 1631, for the will of the father was made that year and mentioned him. Before that time JOHN, the father, had removed to Hempstead and he died there on February 11, 1631–2.

Though no documentary proof has been found positively identifying EDWARD[1] of New England with the Edward above, the significant fact that EDWARD[1] BANGS, in his will of 1677, called himself eighty-six years old, establishes his birth-date as 1591; he named his eldest son "John" presumably after his father, and he was called "Mr." as was his presumed grandfather, RICHARD, who was a sheriff of Norwich in 1586 to which office he was elected from among their number by the mayor and aldermen. Need of brevity requires omission of all detailed findings, but the facts stated are accepted as presumptive evidence of such identification.

His birthplace has been given[2] heretofore, doubtless erroneously, as Chichester, co. Sussex.

voyage must have been heavy upon them. In order to offset somewhat this unexpected expenditure and the consequent claim for damages which the Adventurers would make against the owner, he increased to one hundred nine the list of emigrants to be carried and a second start was made on December 22, 1622. This time they journeyed approximately half way to New England when, about the middle of February, a terrific storm of fourteen days' duration struck them. During this time for two or three consecutive days and nights the fury of the storm was so violent that they were forced to cut down their mainmast, the tempest "beat of their round house and all their uper works; 3. men had worke enough at ye helme, and he that cund [guided] ye ship before ye sea, was faine to be bound fast for washing away; the seas did so over-rake them, as many times those upon ye decke knew not whether they were within bord or withoute; and once she was so foundered in ye sea as they all thought she would never rise againe. But yet ye Lord preserved them, and brought them at last safe to Portsmouth [England], to ye wonder of all men y^t saw in what a case she was in, and heard what they had endured."[5a] A letter dated April 9, 1623, from England to Governor Bradford, in Plymouth Colony, told these "wofull tidings."

It is a criterion of the temper of these people that instead of giving up their plan of making a home in New England, after all these trials, they at once arranged for other means of conveyance, engaging the "Anne," a boat of one hundred forty tons, which would carry sixty passengers and sixty tons of freight, and the "Little James," a pinnace of forty-four tons, which had just been built for coastwise trade along the New England shores. They planned to, and probably did, start the latter part of April, 1623, and the two boats reached their destination the latter part of July and the first part of August, respectively, making a total for the larger part of the group of over nine months consumed from the first embarkation to the time of ultimate arrival.[5a, 6, 8, 9, 10] While the list of those who made the initial start in October has not been found, it is evident that the personnel of arrivals in the "Anne" and "Little James" was much the same as that of the original group in the "Paragon," and surely included it,[4] being added to rather than subtracted from, and there is good reason to believe that the whole series of mishaps was endured by EDWARD[1] BANGS.

How utterly depressing it must have been to these new arrivals after their late experiences to find that the Plymouth Colony was actually in a state of famine, that for months they had had no form of bread and that their daily

food was fish of one sort or another with only the addition of "a cupp of fair spring water!" We are told that they "were much danted and dismayed, and according to their diverse humores were diversely affected; some wished them selves in England againe; others fell a weeping fancying their own miserie in what y^ey^ saw now in others; other some pitying the distress they saw their freinds had been long in, and still were under; in a word, all were full of sadnes. And truly it was no marvel they should be thus affected, for they [the inhabitants] were in a very low condition, many were ragged in aparell, & some litle beter then halfe naked."[5a]

While there is not general recognition of the fact, nor indeed directly stated proof, yet by a study of the known facts, enough of evidence is seen to justify the firm belief that EDWARD[1] brought with him a wife and two children, who doubtless soon died. In accordance with their contract with the "adventurers" in England [see Prence, p. 688], who had financed the Pilgrim emigration, the Plymouth people from their arrival in 1620 had held all crops and had done all work in common, but since in any group some members would lack diligence under such a plan, those who possessed that quality might weary of exerting it unduly in behalf of a neighbor who preferred leisure. Their very real suffering, resulting from the shortage of food, with no assurance as to when supplies might come from old England, was a matter of great anxiety to them all, and especially to the leaders. In the early spring of 1623, with the belief that self-interest would cause better results to follow a temporary cessation, for that year, of community effort in regard to crops, the Governor "with ye advise of ye cheefest amongest them," decided to assign to each family a plot of ground "according to the proportion of their number"[5, 6] at the rate of an acre per person[6, 9, 10] and EDWARD[1] BANGS consequently received four acres[7, 8] at his arrival, justifying the deduction that his family then numbered four persons. This theory is definitely voiced in at least one publication[4] which names, in italic, "wife Rebecca, and two children" with the explanation that "those in italic died or removed before June, 1627." While no proof of this last statement is found, the fact that EDWARD[1] was without a family in the latter year is shown by the listing[10] of but one person named Bangs, and that one a male, on May 22, and by his assignment, as a single individual, to the "twelfth lot," consisting of thirteen persons at the "Division of Cattle" on June 1, 1627. He, with Stephen Dean and the families of John Jenne and Robert Hicks, had the use of the "great white back cow, which was brought over with the first, in the Ann; to which

cow the keeping of the bull was joined for the presents [persons] to provide for. Here also two she goats,"[3] for those who had the use of the best cows were required to assume the burden of feeding the other cattle. It seems probable that EDWARD[1] lived with one of these families and perhaps with Robert Hicks, whose daughter he presently married.

The success of this new plan of gardening was notable. It "made all hands very industrious, so as [that] much more corne was planted than other waise would have been bene by any means ye Govr or any other could use, and saved him a great deall of trouble, and gave farr better contente. The women now wente willingly into ye feild, and tooke their litle-ons with them to set [plant] corne, which before would aledg weaknes, and inabilitie; whom to have compelled would have bene thought great tiranie and oppression."[5] In spite of the menace of a six or seven weeks' drouth, a fuller crop than ever before was gathered[4, 9] which remained in the hands of those who raised it except for a certain moiety, which each turned in for the maintenance of public officers, fishermen and others whose duties filled their time.[6] In accordance with popular desire the Governor continued this plan regarding crops for the remaining part of the seven years under contract, or until 1627.

EDWARD[1] BANGS served on at least twelve juries[11] between October, 1636, and November, 1643, and on four grand juries between March, 1636–7, and March, 1641–2, as well as again[12] in 1652, which bodies were created to "enquire of all Abuses w^th^in the body of this Goument."[12] He was on a committee with JOHN[1] DOANE to apportion meadows in 1633; on other committees to assess taxes and assign watch in 1634–6; to view the "hey ground betwixt the Eele River and the towne of Plymouth" in March 1636–7, and with Governor Bradford, Edward Winslow and others to lay out the bounds[13] of John Alden's land at Duxbury in January, 1637–8. In 1639 he was one of the arbitrators between two neighbors; in 1640 was appointed with THOMAS[1] PRENCE, Captain Standish, Jonathan[2] Brewster, John Winslow and others to measure the meadow at Green's Harbor and in 1644 was an appraiser of two oxen of William Powell's.[13] He was taxed twelve shillings in 1633, became a freeman [see Appendix, p. 853] that year and was one of a committee[14] from Plymouth in March, 1635–6 [though he failed to serve] to confer with other members from Duxbury as to the advisability of centralizing these two groups at "Jones his river" or at "Mortons Hole," thus strengthening both church and civic interests. At the completion of the prescribed seven years' common ownership of property, appointment was made on January 3, 1627–8,

of certain "layersout" or "surveighers," including EDWARD[1] who should apportion twenty acres per capita and should each receive a peck of corn for every share of land surveyed by them, from the owner thereof.[14, 16] Calling himself "yeoman" he gave bond for £20 in 1638 for the appearance, when called for trial,[14, 16] of a neighbor, John Smith. His home property lay on the west side of the road to Eel River and in 1640 he was granted an additional ten acres in the south meadow, with but three men receiving more at that time than he and they received but twelve acres each.[14] He was a witness that year to the fact that Richard Knowles denied passage of cattle in the "heighway" and he was a contributor in January, 1641–2, to the building of a bark* of 40 or 50 "Tunn" at an estimated cost of £200 of which amount three men subscribed one eighth part each, and ten men, including himself, one sixteenth part each.[14] That year he received a grant of eighty acres near "Warrens Wells,"[14] it is said in consideration of his investment in this vessel,[16] and the following year he was granted permission to exchange a part of this tract for acreage nearer his home.[14] In 1643 he was listed among the males of Plymouth between the ages of sixteen and sixty who were able to bear arms, and on September 7 of that year he bought of widow Joyce Wallen her home property situated at "Hob's Hole" for the sum of £8 sterling, which was to be paid at the rate of forty shillings per year.[18] He is said to have served as Captain of the Guard of Plymouth Colony.[10, 16, 26]

EDWARD[1] BANGS, with THOMAS[1] PRENCE, JOHN[1] DOANE and others was appointed about 1643 to view Nauset, later called Eastham [see map on p. 685], with a thought of the desirability of removal of the entire settlement to that locality. Their report showed that the territory was not extensive enough to accommodate the seat of government, although they advised its purchase from the Indians,[17] which was accomplished. These three men with their families and four other families, totalling forty-nine persons, removed[17] to Nauset about April, 1644, and the Colony Court granted them the privileges of a Township in June, 1646. At the first town meeting thereafter, EDWARD[1] was elected treasurer, which office he held continuously for nineteen years.[17] He is said to have been a Deputy[16] in 1647, in 1650–1 and in other years.[10] On June 22, 1651, calling himself yeoman, then of Eastham, he sold a "pcell of meddow lying at the high pynes on the salthouse beach" to Samuel Hicks for £3–10–00 and sold forty acres of upland at Plymouth to Mannasses Kemton for £13, his wife

*The assertion is made that he was a shipwright and superintended the building of this vessel.[4, 16, 25]

REBECCA concurring in the latter transfer.[18] In 1647 and 1650–1 he was supervisor or surveyor of highways.[15]

He was one of a group appointed in 1652 to "layout the convenientest Way from Sandwich vnto Plymouth" and was listed that year as a Deputy for Eastham though [perhaps because of absence] his name was cancelled.[18] In 1655 he was named among the legal voters or freemen of Eastham and in 1656–7 he was granted liberty "to draw and sell wine and strong waters att Eastham, provided it bee for the refreshment of the English, and not to bee sold to the Indians"[19] he being then "engaged in merchandise."[17]

The economy of the times in both private life and civic expenditure is suggested by the fact that the year's expenses for the town in 1658 were but £15–0–9, of which three shillings was paid to EDWARD[1] for going to Yarmouth on town business.[16] His generosity and public spirit are shown by the fact that he and THOMAS[1] PRENCE each agreed to furnish a man and horse for military service at their own expense for a period of two years toward filling the town's required quota of three troopers.[16, 17] In an account rendered on November 18, 1651, of liquor [probably imported] brought into Eastham, EDWARD[1] received six gallons,[19] presumably to serve his customers. On September 20, 1667, he served on a coroner's jury to inquire into the "death of a child of DANIELL[2] DONES, whoe was drownded in a well" in which case the seemingly redundant decision was rendered that "wee doe all of vs judge that the child was accedentally drownded."[19]

EDWARD[1] married, probably secondly, and as early as 1633–4, a daughter of Robert Hicks, undoubtedly[20, 27] Lydia, and Hicks' will, dated May 28, 1645, as well as his wife's will of July 8, 1665, made bequests to their grandson,[20] John[2] Bangs. It seems probable that this lad was the only child of this wife, since no others were remembered by the Hicks grandparents in their wills and since both John[2] Bangs on the one hand, and Jonathan[2] and Joshua[2] Bangs on the other hand, failed to remember each other in their wills.[21] Presumably, therefore, the second [?] wife of EDWARD[1] died fairly soon after the birth of her son John[2] and EDWARD[1] married, thirdly [?], about 1635–7, REBECCA,* who signed a deed[21] with him on June 22, 1651.

*She may have been the daughter of Edmund Hobart of Hingham and the sister of the Rev. Peter Hobart of that place. The assertion has been made that a diary kept by the Reverend Peter referred to a trip of his to Eastham to attend the funeral of "sister Bangs" and since he had a sister Rebecca, not known to have married otherwise, it is sometimes assumed that this may have been she. The added fact that Jonathan[3] Bangs named a son "Hubbard," which is sometimes used interchangeably with "Hobart,"[24] suggests the possibility that it might have been in memory of this grandmother.

The will of EDWARD[1], dated October 19, 1677, giving his age as eighty-six years, was exhibited in court for probate on March 5 following, and showed that his children were then all living except REBECCA[2], whose children were bequeathed £12 at their grandfather BANGS' decease.[21] It seems probable that all of the children except the first one named, belonged to the last wife of EDWARD[1] and she undoubtedly died before her husband, since she was not mentioned in his will.

The child of EDWARD[1] BANGS and his wife [probably Lydia] Hicks was[21]

1. John[2], b. (—); d. bet. January 27, 1702–3, and May 17, 1708; m., at Plymouth, January 23, 1660, Hannah Smalley.[22]

The children of EDWARD[1] and REBECCA [Hobart?] BANGS, all born at Plymouth, and probably in the order given, were[10, 21, 22, 23, 25]

II. REBECCA[2], b. prob. 1636–7; d. before October 19, 1677; m., at Eastham, October 26, 1654, JONATHAN[2] SPARROW[22] [see Sparrow, p. 765].
III. Sarah[2], b. (—); m., at Eastham, 1656, Thomas Howes, Jr.
IV. Jonathan[2], b. abt. 1641; d. November 9, 1729, at Brewster; m. 1st, at Eastham, July 16, 1664, Mary[3] Mayo (Samuel[2], Rev. John[1]); m. 2nd, Sarah (—); m. 3rd, in 1720, Mrs. Ruth (Cole) Young.
V. Lydia[2], b. (—); d. after 1709; m. 1st, December 24, 1661, Benjamin Higgins; m. 2nd, Nicholas Snow.[27]
VI. Hannah[2], b. (—); living 1677; m., April 30, 1662, John[2] Doane (JOHN[1]).
VII. Joshua[2], b. (—); d. January 14, 1711; m., at Eastham, December 1, 1669, Hannah Scudder.
VIII. Bethia[2], b. May 28, 1650; d. October 15, 1696; m. Rev. Gershom Hall.
IX. Mercy[2], b. October 15, 1651, twin; m., December 28, 1670, Stephen[2] Merrick (WILLIAM[1]).
X. Apphia[2], b. October 15, 1651, twin; living 1677; m. 1st, December 28, 1670, John Knowles; m. 2nd, before 1677, Stephen Atwood.

REFERENCES

1. Data gathered by G. E. Bangs, First National Bank, Chicago, Ill., from records in counties Norfolk and Essex, England, and especially from the Parish Registers of Panfield, Essex; from Deeds enrolled 24, Dec., 33 Elizabeth; Inq. p. m. C. 495, 76, 8 Car. I, 1632–3, taken at Stratford Langthorne, co. Essex, Eng.
2. Savage, I, 111.
3. Records of Plymouth Colony, XII, 5–6, 13.
4. The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 236, 240–7, 292, 412, 438.
5. History of Plymouth Plantation, Wm. Bradford [second Governor of the Colony], Boston, 1856, pp. 45–7, 134–5.

5a. Ibid., 138–42, 145–6; edition of 1912, I, 305–9, 322.

6. Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers, A. Young, 1841, pp. 346–7, 351.
7. The Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 381–8.
8. New England's Memorial, N. Morton, App. J. Davis, 1826, pp. 61–3, 65–6, 373–86.

9. Chronological History of New England, T. Prince, 1826, pp. 215, 217–9, 226.
10. Historical Memoir of the Colony of New Plymouth, F. Baylies & S. G. Drake, 1866, vol. I, pt. I, pp. 119–20, 264, pt. 2, pp. 219–20 and chart.
11. Records of Plymouth Colony, I, 44; II, 7; VII, 4, 13, 14, 16, 22–3, 25, 28, 35–6.
12. Ibid., I, 54, 87, 155; II, 34; III, 9.
13. Ibid., I, 14, 33, 38, 55, 73, 137, 153; II, 73.
14. Ibid., I, 4, 10, 41, 59, 103, 166; II, 5, 25, 31, 48.
15. Ibid., II, 115, 155, 168.
16. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 18–20, 32.
17. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 347–8, 356, 359–60, 414.
18. Records of Plymouth Colony, III, 9, 61–2; VIII, 189; XII, 95, 208–9.
19. Ibid., III, 123; IV, 100, 169.
20. New England Register, IV, 282; VI, 187.
21. Bangs Genealogy, D. Dudley, 1896, pp. 9–11, 15–29; part of 21, Plymouth Colony Records, XII, 209.
22. Records of Plymouth Colony, VIII, 15, 28, 56–8.
23. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 639; II, 371, 379, 389, 589.
24. Bangs Genealogy, D. Dudley, 1896, pp. 33, 35; One Thousand Years of Hubbard History, H. P. Hubbard, 1895, pp. 149, 150, 154.
25. Munsey-Hopkins Genealogy, F. A. Munsey, 1920, pp. 57–8.
26. Genealogical Bulletin, I, 1903, pp. 63, 167.
27. Richard Higgins and his Descendants, K. C. Higgins, 1918, p. 50.

BARTLETT

* [224] John Bartlett 1645–1724–5	m c.1680	Bethia Devereaux c.1649–1718
* [112] William Bartlett c.1685–1749	m 1709	Mary Andrews c.1695–1748
* † [56] William Bartlett 1710–c.1759	m 1740	Anna Ober [widow Hale] 1715–1791
† ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
† ‡ § ‖ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ¶ ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Marblehead, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

BARTLETT

JOHN[1] BARTLETT, the emigrant of this family, was the youngest son of WILLIAM and EDITH BARTLETT, of Frampton,* co. Dorset, England.[1] He was baptized on May 14, 1645, and his parents died during his childhood.[1] In about 1660 he, with his brothers, Robert and Faithful, and sister, Magdalin, came to New England and settled at Marblehead.[2, 3] On January 29, 1710, he testified that he was about sixty-five years old and that he had lived there about fifty years.[2] His brother Robert, aged about forty-six, and sister Magdalin, aged about fifty-eight, deposed in 1684 regarding their parentage.[3] JOHN[1] is said to have had a garden plot[12] laid out to him at Marblehead on January 12, 1671. He and his brother Robert spent their lives there and were men of prominence.

Almost all of the inhabitants of Marblehead were engaged† in fishing for cod at the "banks." These first settlers were few in number and of small means.[28] That a fisherman was not expected to do farming as well is evidenced by a town order in 1636, issued at Salem for this near-by settlement, which read:

"For the better furthering of the fishing trade and to avoid the inconvenience found by granting land for fishermen to plant, that none inhabiting

*See plate xv page 94 for facsimile of record of baptisms in this family as copied in 1882 by the Vicar of Frampton.

Lengthy correspondence was carried on by BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES [see Shipman, p. 745] in an endeavor to determine whether or not WILLIAM BARTLETT, above, was a member of the family of the Rev. William Bartlett of Yetminster, co. Dorset, England, whose remarkable letter describing his experiences in prison in 1646 is to be found in the "Sufferings of the Clergy during the Great Rebellion." Evidence seems, however, to be against that relationship.

†The sailors and fishermen were proverbial for their sympathy and disinterested benevolence in behalf of the distressed. "The people of Marblehead have ever been a shining example of this class of men, and their generosity and good-heartedness is shown on nearly every page of their history. A vote passed by the commoners in 1682 gives an evidence of their kindness which should serve as an example worthy of emulation by their posterity. Richard Reed, a man in advanced years, having forfeited his lease of land for a fish fence, by being several years in arrears for rent, the town voted, in consideration of his age and losses, that he might pay two pounds, and the rest should be abated; and that he should enjoy the privilege of using the land for a fish fence for the rest of his natural life."[5] When the port of Boston was closed and her trade destroyed, Marblehead showed her generosity by contributing[32] money in the sum of $1500.00 and fish-oil for her use.

at Marblehead shall have any other accommodation of land than is usually given by the town to fishermen, viz: a house lot and garden lot or ground for the placing of their flakes* according to the company belonging to their families. To the greatest family, not above 2 acres and the common of the woods nere adjoining for their goats and their cattle."[5] Moreover neither the extent of territory nor the rocky soil encouraged farming [see map on p. 830].

The commons there were sufficient to feed only about fifty head of cattle, counting a horse as equivalent to two cows, two yearlings as one cow, four goats or sheep as one cow, etc., so relative apportionments were made to the inhabitants. In 1647 the pasturage assigned varied from "½ cow commanage" for small families, to four or five times as much for others,[5] but as new families arrived the amounts necessarily were lessened. Evidence tends to show that the Bartlett brothers and sister probably had "one cows common and a halfe"[5] and that JOHN[1], who had become a householder by 1674, had accommodation then for but one cow.[6a]

"Before 1720 there was not a carpenter, tailor, mason or butcher in the town and not over twenty families were independent."[28] The absence of the men from home, and the lack of land, account in some measure for the neglect of agricultural pursuits and the corresponding inability to produce their own necessities.

The early "Marbleheaders" had some peculiar customs. For instance, one John Gatchell had offended his neighbors by wearing his hair long, a habit very distasteful to the Puritans. He gave added displeasure by building on the town land without permission and, in 1637, was fined ten shillings for this offense with the provision that one-half of the sum would be remitted "in case he should cut of ye long har off hys head into a sevil frame." He did not, however, allow their willingness to compromise to influence him in regard to his personal appearance and it is said that he "continued the custom to his dying day in spite of popular opinion and all the formal denunciation of Church and State."[5] As Salem had a delusion concerning witchcraft, so Marblehead had one regarding smallpox. During an epidemic of this disease in the seventeenth century, they enforced a curious law regulating the size of dogs, which provided that large dogs above, and small dogs below, a certain size were to be killed lest they carry contagion.[28] One of their ideas is worthy of adoption in certain localities in our day: when three trustees had charge of

*Platform or frame for drying fish.

an appropriation kept in a chest with two separate locks, one of the group retained the chest and each of the others a key, the opening taking place in the presence of all three—a provision insuring honesty.[28]

During the early years of the fishing industry only one trip a year was possible, for the fish were then cured on the Labrador coast as fast as caught; later, two and sometimes three "fares"* could be made by salting the fish in the hold.[5a] On the return to harbor the surplus salt was washed from the fish and they were cured by drying, while spread in the open air, on "flakes" or frames,[5] which then covered the harbor side of Marblehead Neck.[5a] "Every available headland from Tuck's Point to Paine's Head was covered with fish flakes† where in summer and autumn months thousands of tons of fish were cured for market."[5a] The care of the fish while drying was vested in a "shoresman." The first trip began about March and ended, perhaps, in July, the second "keeping them out" until November or December, although both were continued until a full catch was obtained.[5a] On the other hand, for a time at least, the government gave a bounty of $4.00 per ton for each voyage of four months or longer so that, even if a full cargo were secured earlier, the men stayed out for the entire period to obtain the bonus.[5a] A full crew consisted of eight persons, four of whom were "sharesmen" and the others merely boys, each person having an appointed place on the vessel from which to fish and being expected to occupy it when "at the lines" during the entire trip. Boys of eleven or twelve years of age, and some even younger, were sent on these boats, being practically apprenticed for four years and called "cut tails" from the fact that they received pay only for the fish that they actually caught and from which they cut a small portion of the tails to distinguish them when the load was weighed and sold. After the term of training a boy was considered competent to catch as much as his elders and was entitled to the rights and privileges of a "sharesman."[5, 5a] As he became qualified, he could assume the duties of "splitter" or "salter" if he chose, instead of the regular work of the crew.

The fishermen led a hard life at best for, aside from their rigorous occupation, they were obliged to cook their own meals, each man for himself (or perhaps taking turns at the task), which fact, coupled with the lack of variety, carries a suggestion of rather unpalatable and unwholesome food. For a great many years these fishing-vessels carried no stoves but, instead,

* Trip or voyage, also the "catch" obtained.

† Fewer "flakes" are now to be seen because of the increased value of the land.

both cabin and forecastle contained capacious fireplaces. In descending to their quarters the sailors were obliged to go "down the chimney," as they expressed it, for there was no other outlet for the smoke than the companionway. During the winter the boats were hauled up on the land and the crew dispersed, the older members to find employment at shoe-making, or some similar occupation, and the younger ones probably to go to school[5a] [see Devereaux, pp. 286–8 and Nicholson, p. 595].

In 1744 Marblehead[41] had ninety vessels in active service, two hundred acres covered with fish flakes and an annual catch worth £34,000; and in 1765, with just under five thousand inhabitants, it was the sixth town in the colonies, behind Newport, but ahead of Salem, Baltimore and Albany.[38]

JOHN[1] BARTLETT, in common with his neighbors, went on these trips and is called a "fisherman and shoresman."[3] On one such voyage he was associated with Francis Johnson* for, at the court held at Ipswich, March 26, 1672, JOHN[1], aged about twenty-eight years, testified in a case brought by Johnson against the latter's "shoresman" for drunkenness and failure to care properly for the fish caught by the crew. This neglect resulted in the loss of about forty quintals or hundred weight of sea food which had to be sold as refuse,[6] meaning probably for fertilizer.

JOHN[1] signed a petition for a town-meeting in March, 1672, and was on a trial jury at Ipswich in September, following.[6] JOHN[1], aged about thirty-six years, and BETHIA, his wife, about thirty, testified on March 29, 1680, in a lawsuit.[6] At this same court a man was complained about for stealing a sheep from JOHN[1] and "owned it in court and was ordered to pay treble damages and to be whipped or pay a fine to the constable of Newbury."[6] On June 29, 1680, at the court held at Salem, JOHN[1], then aged about thirty-six years, testified in a controversy about the windmill in Marblehead and its alleged inefficiency in grinding grains.[6]

In 1682 JOHN[1] was a witness in a distressing lawsuit wherein one Dr. Richard Knott persecuted an employe, Job Tookie, an educated man of good family.[6] The documents written by Job Tookie and recorded in this case constitute one of the most notable and able expositions of the objectionable debtors' prison law.[6]

JOHN[1] BARTLETT married, probably at Marblehead, about 1680, BETHIA[2] DEVEREAUX [see Devereaux, p. 295]. She died after 1704 and he died in

*Francis Johnson employed[3, 4] Faithful Bartlett, brother of JOHN[1], on a fishing-trip in 1663.

1724–5, probably at Marblehead. In his will dated January, 1723–4, proved August 13, 1725, he called himself a fisherman, constituted his daughter Bethia Martin, executrix[12] and left his homestead[8, 12] to his son Faithful[2].

The children of JOHN[1] and BETHIA (DEVEREAUX) BARTLETT born probably at Marblehead, were[7, 8]

I. Bethia[2], b. abt. 1681; d. after 1724; m. at Marblehead, October 15, 1700, Robert Martin.
II. Faithful[2], b. abt. 1683; d. January 10, 1748, at Marblehead;[9] m. there, October 31, 1706, Ann[3] Devereaux (John[2], JOHN[1]).
III. WILLIAM[2], see following.

WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT (*John*[1]) was born about 1685, undoubtedly at Marblehead, and was buried May 30, 1749, at that place.[9] He married there,[7, 8, 9] May 9, 1709, MARY[2] ANDREWS [see Andrews, p. 58].

They made their home in Marblehead where he was variously employed in the coasting trade, as a tallow-chandler[8] and as a tanner.[12]

Marblehead had been served[32] by the Reverend William Walton as pastor from 1638 until his death in October, 1668. Owing to the fact that they had no separate church organization and that the pastor was not ordained, the people were obliged to retain nominal church membership at Salem and to cross the harbor to that town for communion service, for baptism and for marriage ceremonies. In 1668 the Reverend Samuel Cheever came to serve Marblehead and, in 1684, there occurred his ordination and the consequent dismissal from Salem of the Marblehead members to form a separate church under him. The name of WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT is not included in such records as are accessible, but his membership or that of his wife in this group is assumed from the fact that his two eldest children were baptized in this First Congregational Church of Marblehead,[9] though evidence of the baptism of the next two is not found.

There appears to have been a desire on the part of a number of the inhabitants of Marblehead, including WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT, for the establishment of an Episcopal Church. By 1714, subscriptions to the amount of £416 had been made by forty-five persons for the erection of a building and, shortly after, £175 had been pledged for the support of a rector. Announcement[32] of these facts accompanied a petition dispatched to England requesting that a clergyman be sent to serve them. Pursuant to this, the Reverend William Shaw came in July, 1715, and the following month baptized in this "St.

Michael's* Church," Bethia[3] Bartlett, fifth child of WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT who himself became a warden of that church.[8] The latter man's will[8] was made on August 9, 1746, and proved on June 26, 1749.

The children of WILLIAM[2] and MARY (ANDREWS) BARTLETT, born, probably all of them, at Marblehead, were[7, 8, 9, 12]

I. WILLIAM[3], see following.
II. Mary[3] [Craft?[12]], bap. December 14, 1712, at Marblehead; m. October 29, 1738, Andrew Woodbury.
III. John[3], d. 1750–2; m. November 27, 1734, Eleanor Majory.[12]
IV. Nicholas[3], d. abt. 1785.
V. Bethia[3], (Pathia, bap. August 21, 1715, at St. Michael's, Marblehead);[9] m. 1st, at Salem, July 27, 1740, George Jackson; m. 2nd, before 1783, (—) Pickett.
VI. Hannah[3], m. at Salem, October 30, 1738, William Heileger.
VII. Elizabeth[3], m. March (—), 1740–1 [St. Michael's Church records], Joseph Carder.
VIII. Richard[3], bap. at St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, December 31, 1727; buried prob. there November 29, 1728.

*This Episcopal Church[32, 43, 44] the third organized and built in Massachusetts, and the fourth in New England, is one of the landmarks of Marblehead and, though kept in good repair and still in use [in 1880], its outward appearance shared in the prevailing mouldiness of the older part of the town. Some who write of it say "it is not remarkable in any way except as an oddity in wood" but others consider it a gem of antiquity. It was built forty-eight feet square, with entrances on the south and west. The oaken frame and all the materials used in it were brought from England, the reredos being completed there and ready for installation. The aisles crossed each other at right angles, thus justifying, in a degree, the term "Cruciform" which is often applied to it. The ceiling, supported by four solid oak columns, had beams bisecting it in the form of a St. Andrew's cross conforming to the aisle arrangement. The roof originally had seven gables, three on the east side, one on each corner of the west side and one each on the north and south sides. These gables were topped by a tower in the center from which rose a shapely spire, but now that entire roof has been replaced by a broad sloping one surmounted by a square tower of modest height.

The interior well repays a visit. Its antiquities are guarded as scrupulously as the old faith has been. The communion service which was presented in 1745 was of solid silver and the flagon alone weighed four pounds. The high pulpit was of a wineglass pattern with a prayer desk in front and a sounding-board behind. Suspended from the ceiling was a chandelier, a wonderful affair in brass, a gift in 1732 from a merchant in Bristol, England. On the reredos was the Decalogue in the ancient lettering, done in England in 1714, and that was surmounted by the monogram and arms of King George. In the organ-loft was a diminutive instrument dating from the time of Snetzler [about 1730–40].

Immediately adjoining the church is a small burial-ground in which lie many of its former worshippers and from which were excluded all except "constant hearers" [attendants?] on penalty of a fine of five pounds.[44]

Their second rector, the Reverend David Mossom, who served there from 1718 to 1727 [that is, while our Bartletts were still there], removed[9a] thence to "St. Peters Church, New Kent County, Virginia, where he became the pastor of the revered Washington whom he afterwards united in marriage to Mrs. Custis."

After the removal of our Bartletts to Beverly and as the Revolution approached there grew an increasing bitterness in the minds of some of the inhabitants toward this organization which savored of old England. The loyalty of its members to the Colonies was proved by their active service during the war, but the rector then over them was avowedly a loyalist to England and presently was forced to refrain from holding service and, eventually, to leave the country. When the news of the Declaration of Independence reached Marblehead the joy of the people knew no bounds and in the height of the excitement a body of men broke into St. Michael's, pulled the royal arms from the place above the chancel and rang the bell until it cracked. After some years the church was again used for the purpose for which it was built.

Some of the Salem people "crossed the harbor to worship at St. Michael's" but the majority in each of these towns was strongly against such variance from Congregational form, and harsh criticism and even persecution occurred in some instances of defection.

WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT (*William*[2], *John*[1]) was born March 26, 1710, and baptized October 26, 1712, at Marblehead.[7, 9] He died in[8] 1759 or in[10] 1760 at Quebec[8, 10, 12] during the expedition and siege against that place. On December 21, 1759, mention is made of his widow.[8a] His body was brought back to his home at Beverly for burial.[12] The intention of his marriage was published July 27, 1740, at Marblehead, and the ceremony took place September 17, 1740, at Salem.[9] His wife[21] was the widow ANNA (OBER) Hale [see Ober, p. 607].

He spent his early life in Marblehead, but moved to Beverly some time about 1740 and, in that year, bought certain property from his future wife for £300. This included probably some of her late husband's property and certainly a house built[12, 20] by her father, BENJAMIN[2] OBER, probably in 1723. WILLIAM[3] presently married this lady at Salem and together they occupied this dwelling located on one of the pleasantest thoroughfares in Beverly, now called "Bartlett Street."[8, 12] He was a mariner and, in his later life, was always called[10] "Captain," perhaps, in part, because he had been the master of a ship, but also because he was in command of a company[8, 12] that joined the English army, under General Wolfe, against the French at Quebec in 1759. It is evident that the captaincy of either a military company or a ship that carried troops would constitute service for the government and in no other way than under such orders could one account for his presence and death[10] at this memorable siege. His will, dated[8] June 27, 1744, or[12] 1754, made his wife and only child joint heirs and was proved[8] December 31, 1760. As his widow, ANNA (OBER) BARTLETT was buried* September 27, 1791, aged seventy-seven years, at Beverly.[8, 10] A memorandum of her will, dated September 20, 1791, mentions the bequests of a silver tankard to her grandson, Benjamin[5] Bartlett, three or four stone sleeve-buttons with some silver shoe-buckles to her grandson, HENRY[5] BARTLETT, three large and three small silver spoons to her grandson, Pyam[5] Bartlett, a silver snuff-box and silver hat-buckle to her grandson, George Washington[5] Bartlett, and a gold necklace, stone earrings and drops, silver and gold thread worked apron, muslin worked apron, blue silk petticoat and dark chintz gown to her granddaughter Theresa[5] Bartlett.[12]

*Although WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT of Marblehead severed association with the Congregational Church and allied himself and family with the Episcopal Church, there has been found no positive evidence of the affiliation of his son WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT of Beverly with either denomination, although the death of his wife, ANNA (OBER), above, is recorded[10] on the books of the First Congregational Church. Her son WILLIAM[4] is referred[12] to, in his turn, as "an earnest churchman," but the deaths of his sons Benjamin[5] and John[5] in Beverly are recorded[10] in the First Congregational Church, so the inference is permissible that the family tendency was not narrow but tolerant.

The only child of WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT and his wife ANNA (OBER), the widow Hale, was

1. WILLIAM[4], see following.

WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT (*William*[3], *William*[2], *John*[1]) was baptized June 27, 1741, at Beverly[8, 10] and died December 30, 1794, in Rostraver Township, Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania,[27] near McKeesport. He married, at Beverly, Massachusetts, August 16, 1761, JOANNA[6] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 440]. She owned the covenant[30] at the First Church of Beverly on May 24, 1767, but, strangely, her children are not found to have been baptized there, though they were born in that town. She married secondly, in Pennsylvania, in December, 1797, John Garden.[12] [See plates x p. 78, xi p. 80, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868.]

WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT* was called[8] "Captain," "mariner, and shoresman and a merchant after 1780" and was interested in the East India Trade.[12] In 1766 he and a number of other shipmasters associated themselves together for mutual advantage and in 1772 they asked that the organization be incorporated as the "Marine Society at Salem in New England,"[14] that it might hold and administer donations of property. Their application read:

"Whereas, a considerable number of persons who are or have been masters of ships, or other vessels, have for several years past associated themselves in the town of Salem; and the principal end of said society being to improve the knowledge of this coast, by the several members, upon their arrival from sea, communicating their observations, inwards and outwards, of the variation of the needle, soundings, courses and distances, and all other remarkable things about it, in writing, to be lodged with the society, for the making of navigation more safe; and also to relieve one another and their families, in poverty or other adverse accidents of life, which they are more particularly liable to; and have for this end raised a considerable stock; and the said persons associated, as aforesaid, finding themselves under difficulties . . . without an incorporation" now petitioned the Provincial Council for such a grant. The request was allowed[14] on April 25, 1772, and for more than one hundred years after its formation this society had distributed annually between three and four thousand dollars for the benefit of the families of

* It may have been he who shared in the six townships east of the Penobscot River, granted[13] to the inhabitants of Massachusetts and divided among them in 1763–4. This might have been as a result of the war service of his father, WILLIAM[3].

Capt. William[4] Bartlett

sailors,[12] and it still (1912) retained its organization in its own building.[22] WILLIAM[4] simultaneously held the offices of both "Deputy Master" and "Clerk" for the first two terms after incorporation.[14]

WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT had various business dealings[51] over a period of years with members of the Cabot family of Beverly, mainly in marine affairs, but in some instances in commodities. There is extant a record of the closing of an account in November, 1770, whereby WILLIAM[4] paid more than $1250.00 to Capt. Joseph Cabot for seventy-six dozen handkerchiefs, and in 1778 he paid £16.10 to George Cabot for a hogshead of porter. These items suggest that Captain WILLIAM[4] was a merchant at least as early as 1770, and perhaps retailed both dry goods and wet goods.

WILLIAM[4] was probably the "Mr. Bartlett" who bought, in 1769, a forty year old "negro boy Portius" for £40 from "Widow Mary Woodbury."[19]* Among the Bartlett family papers is the bill of sale made by WILLIAM[4], dated March 31, 1774, of "Scipio," a negro, who fought in a Beverly company[12] during the Revolution and was married under the name of "Scipio" Bartlett.[25] WILLIAM[4] also owned a slave named "Quash"[12] and one named "Caesar" who was taken prisoner in August, 1777, from the Brig "Fanny" [probably the vessel owned by Captain WILLIAM[4]], was confined in the old mill prison and was later exchanged.

On a Sunday night, November 14, 1774, a robbery was committed in three homes in Beverly, including those of Capt. WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT and George Cabot. They were robbed of "money to the value of one hundred pounds" and a large amount of silver ware. The *Salem Gazette* of the following day carried a description of this and offered a reward of $50.00 for detection of the perpetrator.[51]

In the latter part of 1773 WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT was a member of the committee of correspondence and safety for Beverly[5a, 18] and on April 22, 1775, "Col. HENRY HERRICK, Capt. Benjamin Lovett and Capt. WILLIAM BARTLETT [were] chosen to be a committee in behalf of this town to confer with the committees of the several seaport towns of this county what steps shall be most expedient for them to take at this difficult time, and for to meet at the tavern near Beverly meeting-house on Monday, the 24th instant, at 9 o'clock in the morning."[5a]

*This lady was a wealthy and notable personage and was usually called "Madame Woodbury." She was a granddaughter of RICHARD[1] DODGE and of WILLIAM[1] HASKELL [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I] and a daughter-in-law of PETER[2] WOODBURY, and inherited from her husband, Peter[3] Woodbury, at least a part of the estate of his father, PETER[2], and grandfather, JOHN[1] WOODBURY.[21]

The conditions existing during the Revolutionary period stirred the women of the country no less than later similar occasions have affected them. One incident, both interesting and amusing, which occurred in Beverly in 1777 pertains to the prevailing high price of sugar. One of the merchants possessed a supply of that commodity which he refused to sell because of the depreciation of paper money. The women of the town resented his attitude and needed his goods. Accordingly, one cold November morning, a company of about sixty of them gathered together, marched down Main (Cabot) and Bartlett streets to the wharves and raided his storehouse. With the assistance of some of the men they broke open the warehouse and loaded two ox-carts with sugar. The foreman of the establishment offered resistance but was promptly charged upon by the women, one of whom seized him by the hair, whereupon he fled leaving his wig in her grasp. The confiscated stock was carted to the shop of the leader, who retailed it to customers at what was considered a fair price and then faithfully rendered her account to its owners.[5a]

At the outbreak of the Revolution the needed unification of the Colonies was accomplished (a) by the formation of the Continental Congress; (b) by the centralization and coöperation of the Colonial land forces under Washington; and (c) by the creation of an infant navy. This latter branch of service (with which WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT was most closely concerned) incorporated various successive measures, but was really begun in October, 1775, when some vessels owned by the separate colonies or individuals were fitted out by the government; others were presently bought and equipped; Continental war-ships were ordered to be rapidly built, and private owners were particularly encouraged to send out their barks under letters of marque* and reprisal. Though many privateers had sailed earlier they were not definitely authorized as a recognized branch of the government service until March 23, 1776. Not only did these patriots own their craft but they also equipped and manned them at very great expense for the defense of their country. Although the financial returns in the early stage were often large, the losses were also heavy and, by the end of the Revolution, only one firm which entered into privateering had made a profit, while most of those who had thus invested had lost heavily. The vessels under letters of marque and reprisal were armed merchantmen plying their usual trade, with a license to

*Though such service is often thought of and spoken of slightingly, it is considered by those who have made a special study of the matter that no service rendered during the Revolution or the War of 1812 was more valuable and that the spirit which imbued the privateersmen was as patriotic as that in any other group or branch.[42]

Joanna (Herrick) Bartlett
With her son, George Washington, born 1777

take enemy prizes on the side. The privateers were commissioned especially to attack and bring in British ships.

At first only vessels carrying supplies to the British forces in America were legally liable to capture but, as time went on, this rule was gradually modified until any ship owned by an inhabitant of Great Britain was legitimate prey of these "privateers" and the Continental sea forces. These "prizes" were allowed "trial" before a court established for that purpose and, if found to be truly enemies, would be condemned and advertised for sale. The proceeds would be shared on varying, but always generous, terms with the officers and men who captured them. For a time the privateers were allowed the entire amount realized and this was divided among the owners, officers and crew of the captor. To spur the sailors to alertness the first one of them to sight a vessel which afterwards proved to be a prize was allowed a bonus varying from a double share of "prize money" to the sum of £500. The first man to board such a vessel received a bounty ranging from a treble share, upward. Those who were injured received special, pre-arranged pay, according to disability, which sums were to be paid from the whole amount of the prizes taken by the vessel on which they sailed. Compensation for recaptures varied from one-eighth to the whole value of the ship and cargo, depending upon the time which had elapsed between capture and recapture.[15, 22, 37] In this period 1760–83 shipmasters received a monthly wage varying from £2–8–0 to £3–7–0 and their subordinates in proportion.[36]

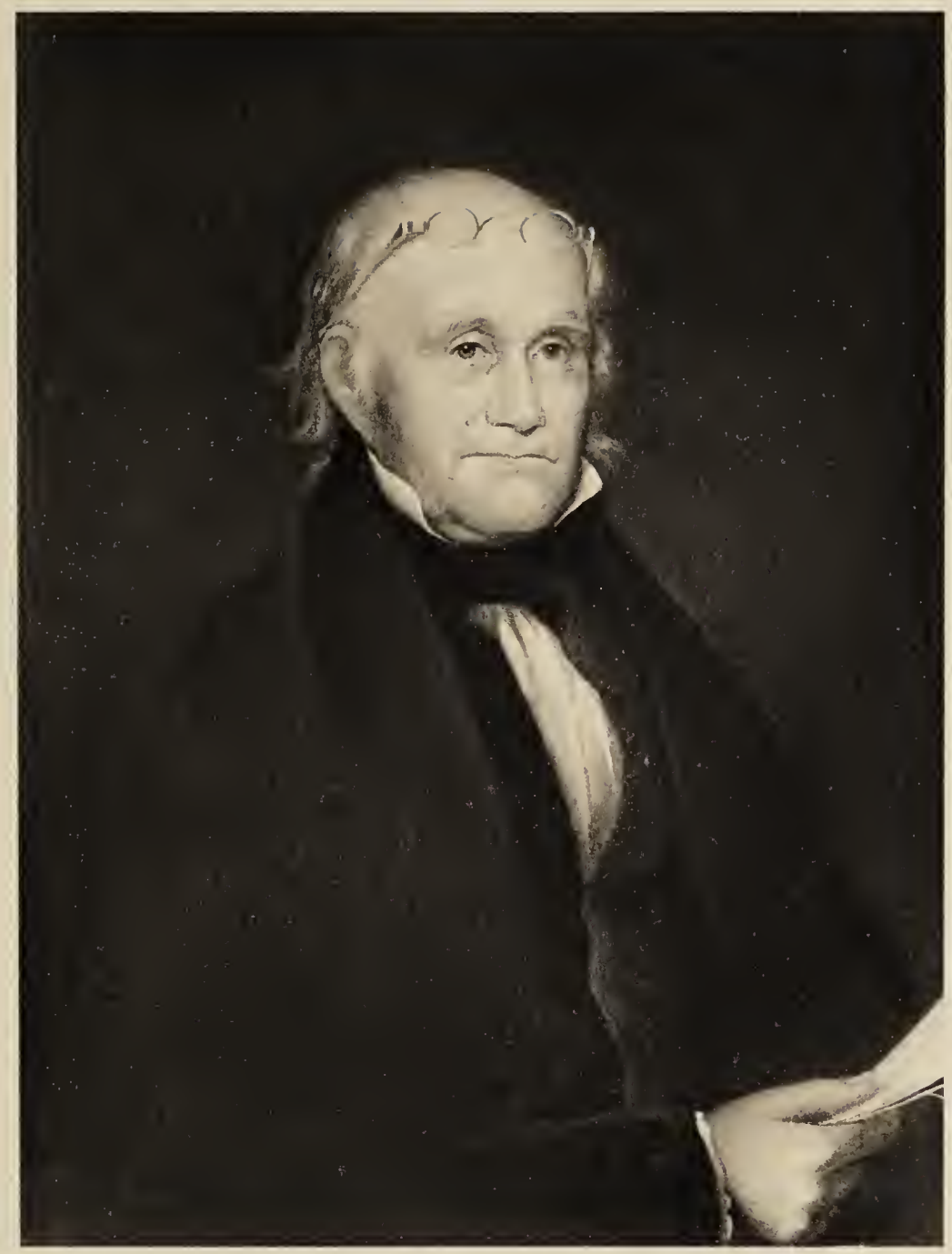
On October 4, 1775, General Washington appointed Capt. John Glover and Stephen Moylan to equip two vessels and also to name suitable men for prize or naval agents in the leading ports of Massachusetts. These appointees were to be men of approved good character and known substance and were to act under instructions from headquarters. WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT was so named and consequently became the first "Naval Agent" at the port of Beverly.[17] On November 4, 1775, he wrote his thanks for this appointment to General Washington together with a report concerning certain vessels taken as prizes with a request for further instructions.[16] In reply to this letter, Stephen Moylan, writing for General Washington, said:

"He desires me, Sir, to assure you he approves much of your conduct in this affair, and doubts not, from your character, that he will have further reason to do so in your agency."[16]

As "Naval Agent" his responsibility was very great in the handling and disposing[23] of the many vessels taken as prizes under the developing necessities

of our war with England. He was still serving[24] on March 21, 1777. It has been said that he probably received the first commission issued for privateering during the Revolution[29] and, if not so distinguished, he certainly was at least part owner of several vessels[31] which sailed under letters of marque, one of which was the first to sail from Beverly under such authorization.[51] This vessel, of which he and the Cabot brothers were joint owners, was a brigantine of one hundred fifty tons, carrying eight guns and seventeen men, and bearing the name of the "Union" when she arrived in New England from Spain in January, 1777, with a cargo of salt, brandies and other supplies. They changed her pacific name to one more significant, the "Hector," and asked and received from the Council of Massachusetts Bay a permit for her to take prizes on her next trip. Another vessel in which Captain WILLIAM[4] had an interest was[24] the "Fanny," a brigantine of six guns and a crew of fifteen, which was commissioned August 19, 1780 and probably earlier. In 1781 the "Oliver Cromwell," which carried sixteen guns and a crew of eighty-five and had been most fortunate in her prizes, was advertised for sale and was purchased by Capt. WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT, the Cabot brothers, and others. They refitted her and sent her out again under commission of April 13, 1781, but the vessel's wonderful luck ceased and in August, 1781, while "dogging" the Quebec fleet, she was taken by an English frigate and carried into Newfoundland.[51] Thus was often wiped out, in an hour's time, an investment of many thousands of dollars. One other vessel of which Captain WILLIAM[4] was part owner was the "Mohawk," carrying twenty guns and a crew of from eighty to one hundred thirty, commissioned November 8, 1781, and again September 6, 1782. These vessels were bonded for $20,000 each.[24]

The records of naval operations during the Revolution are extremely incomplete or other items might be found relative to the activities of WILLIAM[4] in this line of endeavor which, while it was of little use in strictly naval operations, was very effective in harassing the enemy, intercepting his communications and supplying the patriot army with necessaries, and is considered probably the greatest contribution of seaboard Massachusetts to the common cause.[15, 37] Beverly has been called the "headquarters for our infant navy" and it has been said that more captured vessels were brought into this port than into any other in New England.[5a] "The number of captured in the war has been stated as 803, of which there were either retaken, burnt, ransomed, sunk, restored or lost 153, leaving a gain to the nation of 650. If we estimate these as averaging 250 tons, and compute their value at $30.00



Henry[5] Bartlett

per ton, and their cargoes at $10,000 each, the amount of captures would be $11,375,000. Some English authors have estimated the value of the prizes taken in the year 1776 by the American cruisers at one million sterling."[37] A goodly portion of this success may be attributed to the energy of the privateers.

The excitement incident to the life on a privateer, coupled with the fact that the men of Beverly and the other seaport towns were more at home in the marine than in the land service, operated to bring about a condition whereunder calls for infantry from this section could not be met. At a town meeting in Beverly held June 13, 1776, three weeks before the Declaration of Independence, it was voted that, in the event the Continental Congress declared the independence of the Colonies, they would "solemnly pledge their lives and fortunes to support them in it." This pledge was fulfilled in almost every battle-field of the Revolution; yet, in 1779, a fine of £5,400* was assessed upon the town by the General Court for failing to furnish a prescribed number of men for the militia. In a petition for its remission in 1780 the town appealed to the records in evidence [which was strictly true], that they had "furnished more men and been at greater expense to carry on the war than almost any other town in proportion to their abilities."

The service rendered the country by means of these privateers reacted disastrously upon the inhabitants after the close of the Revolution, for they depended almost wholly upon fishing for their livelihood; and not only was their best market lost by the break with England but their fishing-vessels, mostly slow-going and laid up for a number of years during the conflict, were in sad disrepair, while the faster boats, converted for privateering, were most of them captured or lost. In addition to these material discouragements to the seafaring communities, the Colonies experienced the worst economic depression ever known in the double readjustment from a war to a peace basis, and from a colonial to an independent government. After four years of peace only about four-fifths of the Grand Banks fleet was in commission and the men were not earning enough to see their families through the winter.[15]

"The thirteen colonies had organized a confederacy, but with insufficient and ill-defined powers, to resist oppression from abroad, and as soon as the war had been fought to a successful issue and they had been recognized as an independent nation they began to be jealous and distrustful of the power which must necessarily be given to the general government in order to form

* Depreciated currency.

a permanent nation. Oppressive debt, disorganized business and depreciated currency presented grave economic problems for solution, at a time when the greater and graver problem of creating a government, based upon the consent of the governed, evidenced by popular suffrage, must first be solved, to the end that it might in turn bring order, credit and prosperity out of existing chaos.

"The American colonies, prior to the confederation in 1778, had about as many systems of money as there were distinct colonies. Inasmuch as the majority of the inhabitants were of British birth and traded chiefly with the Mother Country and with each other, the monetary units were in some measure similar, although, as frequently occurs in colonies, the money of account imposed by the Mother Country differed from the money in actual use. The colonies generally reckoned in pounds, shillings and pence, but in actual transactions other coins, chiefly the Spanish dollar and its subdivisions, constituted the medium of exchange" although French and Portuguese coins were also in circulation, as well as the "bills of credit" or depreciated currency issued by the colonies themselves. "The people were naturally compelled to find an equivalence between the money of account and that of exchange, and hence the practice of reckoning the dollar at so many shillings obtained. The valuation varied in different colonies. In what is known as New England and Virginia the dollar was six shillings; in New York and North Carolina it was valued at eight shillings; in Georgia at five; in South Carolina at thirty-two and one-half and in the remaining four colonies at seven and one-half.* The shillings here referred to evidently differed in value and were not in fact the English shillings, for it is declared in a law of Massachusetts of 1750 that the value of the English shilling was equal to one and one-third of the Massachusetts shillings" while those of the other colonies must have been worth much less in English coin. The established rate of exchange with London was four shillings and sixpence to the dollar.[38]

In regard to the currency in circulation, as early as May, 1775, the emission of bills of credit was begun to provide funds to prosecute the war. Continental Congress lacked the power to impose taxes and also the ability to make loans, so no other recourse than note-issuance seemed possible; and not only Congress itself but also the individual colonies put out currency at various times, none of which carried adequate provision for redemption until, in 1777, the volume had reached about $16.00 per capita and deprecia-

* Report of Robert Morris, Superintendent of Finance, Vol. I, 289.

tion had already begun. Continued need of resources forced other issues, which in turn increased the depreciation. At the end of 1778 Congress officially fixed the ratio of paper to coin at 100 to 13½ though actually the depreciation was greater. Added issues in 1779 (and the prevalence of counterfeiting both by the English and by the Colonies) accelerated the downward trend so that at the end of that year the official rating was about as 100 to 3½. Some of these new issues redeemed preceding ones, but at such a ratio that it amounted to repudiation of thirty-nine fortieths of the notes, yet the legal tender laws compelled creditors to accept the old notes at face value. The distress resulting was manifestly extreme. The paper currency, by 1781, had reached a volume averaging about $150.00 per capita. The Continental notes were that year quoted at the ratio of 225 to 1 of coin and later 500 to 1 is mentioned. A large loan from France at this time helped the nation possibly even more than its military aid and no doubt saved the embryo government from impending dissolution. At the behest of Congress the states relaxed their legal tender laws so far as Continental currency was concerned and conditions began to improve.[39]

The paper was considered of more value as an advertisement or joke than for any prospect of eventual redemption. "A barber's shop in Philadelphia was papered with it, and a dog, coated with tar, and the bills stuck all over him, was paraded in the streets." "The contemporary literature shows that the suffering it caused was widespread and intense. It fell most heavily on the most patriotic and most helpless." Webster said, "If it saved the State, it has also polluted the equity of our laws . . . destroyed the fortunes of thousands who had most confidence in it, enervated the trade husbandry and manufactures of our country. . . ."[40]

In 1783 Congress considered the question of redemption, but not until 1790 was it provided for, and then at 100 to 1 and only if notes were presented prior to September 30, 1791. This date was later extended to 1797. "In the spring of 1787 there were twenty bills of equity filed in the court for the redemption of mortgaged estates. The suitors came prepared with paper money in handkerchiefs and pillow cases to redeem their lands."[40] It is a humiliating fact that the United States found it necessary to scale down ninety-nine per cent the obligations which were incurred in prosecuting the war which achieved its independence as a nation.[39]

Captain WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT, in common with others, faced financial failure. He is said to have been a man of great business activity and ambition,

but his affairs had become so involved that he made an assignment of his property, for the benefit of his creditors, to Josiah Prince, his wife's first cousin, and, in the hope of repairing his fortunes, made plans for emigrating to the new country, "Ohio." He bought of the Reverend MANASSEH[5] CUTLER one share in the Ohio Company, which gave him the right to about 1200 acres of land, including a house lot in town.[33] On May 21, 1788, he appointed an attorney "being with my wife and family bound out of this common wealth and my business being unsettled and my affairs very much perplexed."[8]

The diary of General Washington kept during his tour of New England in 1789 mentions his trip from Boston through Marblehead which, as he said, "is 4 miles out of the way but I wanted to see it"[45] and on to Salem and Beverly where he "called on his friends, WILLIAM BARTLETT and George Cabot,"[5a] evidently expecting to find BARTLETT there, but that man with his wife and four younger children had left for the West on May 25, 1788, sailing on the sloop "Alice," E. Needham, master, from the Bartlett wharf at Beverly.[12] Of the three older children, John[5] had died unmarried the year before, at the age of twenty,[10] having already earned the degree of Bachelor of Arts at Harvard; Benjamin[5] attained the same scholastic distinction in 1782 and stayed in Beverly until his death in 1795; and William[5] was lost* at sea.[11, 12]

The first part of their journey was by water instead of by the more difficult land route and took them past Cape Cod, then Long Island, along the New Jersey Coast, into Delaware Bay and up the river to Philadelphia which was reached June 5, after a trip of twelve days. They continued by wagons toward the mountains and, while a stop is said to have been made at Emmetsburg, believed by them to have been in Pennsylvania,[8] it could have been but for a short time for the Reverend MANASSEH[5] CUTLER, on his trip from Massachusetts to visit those of the Ohio Company who had already emigrated to the West and settled at Marietta, Ohio, stopped on August 9, 1788, at the home of WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT near Sumrell's† ferry, across the Youghiogheny from what is now West Newton, Pennsylvania. He brought to JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT letters from her relatives in Beverly and he stopped at her home again during his homeward journey on September 17, following.[26] "Drank tea with [Mrs.] BARTLETT" and carried letters (still extant) from her

*The date of his death is given as the winter of either 1779–80 or of 1797–8, but the earlier date is probably correct for his name was not mentioned in his father's will[27] of 1794.

†This name, which sometimes appears as Simeral and often as Zimrall, is said to have originally been Somerville. For the location of this ferry see map on page 537.

Betsey (Corey) Bartlett

to her old home in Massachusetts. The portion of the diary of the Reverend MANASSEH[5] which refers to this incident states that he arrived in this neighborhood on Saturday, stayed over Sunday and went six miles to service, undoubtedly with WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT and his family, over a bad road to the meeting-house built in the deep woods far away from any dwelling. The Reverend Mr. Finley, their pastor, had two congregations eight miles apart. The Reverend MANASSEH[5] CUTLER preached for him in the afternoon. He describes his further journey across Washington County to the mouth of Buffalo Creek where it empties into the Ohio River. There he left his horse and took a boat to Marietta [see map on p. 535]. A singular sight which he mentions was the cleared strip about twenty feet wide marking the western boundary of Pennsylvania.[26] This was probably the route taken a few years later by HENRY[5] BARTLETT and his family.

WILLIAM[4] brought to the west with him a letter dated May 24, 1788, to Gen. Rufus Putnam, from the firm of Brown and Thorndike, of Beverly, bespeaking for him consideration and any possible civilities or services. It reads in part as follows:

"This will be handed to you by our friend, WILLIAM BARTLETT, Esq., a person with whom we have been long and intimately acquainted and for whom we have great esteem. He has been in affluent circumstances, but unfortunately confiding too much in public credit, and suffering greatly in navigation, he is reduced to the alternative of leaving this place with his wife and family to seek a subsistence on the banks of the Ohio, or to remain here in a situation so much below those of his connections and acquaintances as to be truly humiliating to a person of his sensibility. However, he goes under pretty good advantage in point of property. He was ever considered as a gentleman of probity and strictly honest in his dealings. His circumstances in life have always been such, till now, as to preclude the necessity of manual labor, and his character, education and capacity entitle him to any place of trust that his friends can bestow. . . .

"Mrs. BARTLETT is a woman of excellent character and a most amiable disposition. . . ."[12, 50]

Rostraver Township, Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania [see map on p. 537] is a strip of land about eight miles wide and approximately that long between the Youghiogheny and Monongahela rivers, somewhat south of their confluence at McKeesport. The Bartlett home was ten or twelve miles south of the junction of these rivers, near the Youghiogheny and not far from

the ferry which operated between the Sumrell home and Robbstown [now West Newton] on its eastern bank.[26, 27]

This locality has the distinction, with old Fort Redstone, now Brownsville, (somewhat farther south), of being the gateway of the west to which came, or through which passed, all pioneers from New England and many from the southern states.

The Bartlett family evidently intended, as did many others, to make only a temporary stay in Pennsylvania until the Indian troubles on the Ohio had passed; for a letter[50] written by JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT on August 9, 1789, from the Youghiogheny to her sister in Beverly, says: "I don't intend to go to the 'Back woods,' as they call it here, till the spring, when I hope to see the beautiful banks of the Ohio. Then I hope to have a house once more for now I am like a bird of passage. [Though] I can't say I once wished myself back again [in Beverly]." For some reason, however, they stayed on, and after six years WILLIAM[4] died there in Pennsylvania.

Another letter, dated at the Youghiogheny in September, 1789, from JOANNA to her relatives in Beverly, told of a spring of water near her home to which people daily flocked in large numbers, believing that it would miraculously cure all bodily ills; that on one day fully two hundred came and many claimed to be cured. One more letter of hers, dated June 25, 1798, at Sumrell's Ferry, said "HARRE [HENRY[5]] and Pyam both live at Muskingum and are well. They each have three children. HARRE's are all girls and Pyam's are all boys." It is evident, therefore, that, though neither WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT nor his wife ever completed their plans for a home on the Ohio, two of their children did so. Of the other two who lived to old age, George[5] settled in Illinois and Theresa[5] in Kentucky.

WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT left a will dated December 18, 1794, twelve days before his death, and proved January 23, 1795, which mentioned his wife, JOANNA, and children Benjamin[5], HENRY[5], "Pyum"[5], George[5] and Theresa[5]. He made his wife, sons HENRY[5] and "Pyum"[5], and two friends his executors.[27] The Reverend Robert Finley, of this district, but later of Chillicothe, Ohio, stated that WILLIAM[4] was buried on the Finley farm at the mouth of Georges Creek near where New Geneva now stands,[12] though no reason is now apparent for his interment at that distance from his home [see map on p. 263]. The estate of WILLIAM[4] was not closed until March 10, 1800, when his youngest child reached legal age. The inventory of his property showed a valuation

of about £4536, but the amount to be distributed[48] after the settlement of outstanding accounts was only about £104.

The children of WILLIAM[4] and JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT, all born at Beverly, were[8, 10, 11, 12] [see plates XXVI p. 865, XXIX p. 868]

I. William[5], b. September 28, 1762; d. winter of [doubtless] 1779–80, at sea.
II. Anna[5], b. September 16, 1763; d. September 25, following, at Beverly.
III. Benjamin[5], b. August 24, 1765; d. January 20, 1795, at Beverly; Bachelor of Arts at Harvard College, 1782.
IV. John[5], b. January 18, 1767; d. January 23, 1787, at Beverly; Bachelor of Arts at Harvard College, 1786.
V. HENRY[5], see following.
VI. Pyam[5], b. November 8, 1772; d. in August, 1820, in Ohio; m. Margaret Onsettler.
VII. George Washington[5], b. April 11, 1777; d. August 10, 1840, at Paris, Illinois; m. April 3, 1798, in Pennsylvania, Rachel Findley. [See plate XI p. 80.]
VIII. Theresa[5], b. January 14, 1782; d. January 4, 1862, at Greensburg, Kentucky; m. September 5, 1799, in Pennsylvania, Daniel Brown.

HENRY[5] BARTLETT (*William*[4], *William*[3], *William*[2], *John*[1]) was born February 3, 1771, at Beverly,[10] and died[47] September 9, 1850, at Athens, Ohio. He married[11, 12] in Westmoreland or Fayette County, Pennsylvania, January 24, 1792, BETSEY[b] COREY [see Corey, p. 272 and plates XII p. 82, XIII p. 86, XIV p. 90, XXVI–XXVIII p. 865–7]. He was born, as was his father before him, in the house earlier occupied by his grandfather, WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT, which is said to have been built[20] by his great-grandfather, BENJAMIN[2] OBER, in 1723. BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, granddaughter of HENRY[5], resided in Beverly from 1869 to 1872 and celebrated the one-hundredth anniversary of the birth of HENRY[5] by visiting and going through this old house.[12, 50]

HENRY[5] frequently entertained his grandchildren with pleasant recollections of his early life and stories of his early playmates, black "Scipio" and "Quash," slaves belonging to his father. He received the rudiments of his education at Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, a preparatory school notable and excellent enough to have acquired as students two nephews of General Washington, the sons of Richard Henry Lee, the Honorable Josiah Quincy and many others of prominence.[34] He was seventeen years of age when he came to Pennsylvania with his father, undoubtedly helped on the farm for a few years and later took up merchandizing at Merrittstown, probably about the time of his marriage. On August 14, 1793, HENRY[5] BARTLETT acquired[49] for £5 from Abraham Merritt (one of the founders of

Merrittstown) a house and lot which was "subject nevertheless to the payment of one half of a Spanish Milled dollar or the value hereof in coin current in the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, to be paid . . . on the first day of May each and every year forever. Also to maintaining and always keeping in good repair on the premises aforesaid the dwelling house already built thereon or some other of at least twenty feet square, with a good Chimney of Brick or Stone, well laid in with lime and sand. And as well to the observance of all such rules and regulations as tend to decency and good order for the health, ease and convenience of the inhabitants of said town."

In 1796, with his wife and three small daughters, he moved to Marietta, Ohio, spending the first winter in the stockade. To reach this place he would have either taken the route described[26] by the Reverend MANASSEH[5] CUTLER,[26] or embarked at or near Sumrell's Ferry (and his own old home) and would have gone down the Youghiogheny, Monongahela and Ohio rivers, in turn, directly to Marietta as did its first settlers.[29] Sometime in the following spring he moved to Athens County and settled on land that formerly belonged to his father, one of the original shareholders in the Ohio Company[33] thus completing the plan made by the older generation. He taught[29] several terms of school in a log house about three miles south of Athens and in surrounding neighborhoods between the years 1802–6. A former pupil of his, Michael Higgins, when seventy-four years old, related the story of how the scholars, in accordance with a custom then prevalent in frontier schools, on a prearranged day shut themselves in the schoolhouse, barred the schoolmaster out of the building and made the fastenings secure; but HENRY[5] procured a roll of brimstone from a near-by house, climbed to the roof of the stronghold, dropped it down the open chimney into the fire, covered the chimney top and soon smoked the boys into unconditional surrender.[29]

At the first sale of lots[29] in the town of Athens, which took place on November 5, 1804, HENRY[5] BARTLETT, giving his residence as "Middletown" (probably a neighborhood name), bought lot number 46 for $17.00; at the second sale, on November 25, 1806, he bought lot number 45 for $6.00. About this time he moved into the village of Athens and temporarily occupied a little cabin that stood just back of the college; he built later, on High Street, one of the first brick houses erected in the town.[12]

He was[35] Clerk of the Board of Commissioners and Clerk of the County Court [being called also County Clerk], from the organization of the county in 1805 to 1836. The office included the duties of county auditor until 1821.

BARTLETT FAMILY GROUP

A family group, showing HENRY[5] BARTLETT, front row center, with the hand of his wife BETSEY COREY on his shoulder. Their daughter JOANNA H.[6] is at his right and their twins, Theresa[6] and Betsey[6] stand at each side of their mother. The fourth daughter was probably Mary[6] ("Polly") and the other man is said to have been a younger brother of HENRY[5].

His service to the Board of Commissioners brought him the sum of $30.00 annually.[35] His penmanship was as finished as copperplate and examples still extant will rarely find an equal in this day [see plate XXVI p. 865].

It is variously stated that he served as a Justice of the Peace "from 1836 to his death,"[35] and "for over forty years, uninterruptedly";[12] and that his marriage fees were invariably presented to the bride even though they exceeded the legal amount.[12] On March 13, 1837, he was elected a councilman, was also chosen Mayor for that year, and from 1808 to 1841 was secretary and auditor of the Ohio University.[35] Athens County originally contained a township, now included in Meigs County, called "Scipio," so named by "Esquire BARTLETT" in memory of his boyhood friend and playmate, black "Scipio."*

About 1807–8 a hewed log court-house was erected, which was used also for religious meetings and school sessions. Evidence is found that the Commissioners were annoyed at lack of coöperation on the part of the church and school groups in keeping up repairs and maintaining cleanliness in the building; finally on December 8, 1813, it was ordered "That the court house shall be no longer used as a school house, and that HENRY BARTLETT be a committee to take care of the same and have said house repaired by the first of January next."[29] In 1814 a new court-house was planned and started, but lack of means delayed its completion considerably. HENRY[5] was one of a committee of two to receive the bonds of the various contractors and to apportion among them the funds on hand.[29] In December, 1815, he and other members of the First Presbyterian Society of Athens subscribed over $500.00 to assist in finishing this building, with the understanding that they and their associates should have the privilege of holding religious meetings therein on the Sabbath and other days, "for eight years from the first day of January, 1816, when it shall not interfere with the county business, upon condition that $500.00 of the above named subscription be paid to HENRY BARTLETT on or before the first day of March next; and that each subscriber, on his paying the sum subscribed by him, shall receive a receipt for the same, to be refunded in eight years without interest. . . ."[29]

HENRY[5] was a genial, pleasant man, a sincere Christian, and "of great purity of character, thoroughly judicial mind and excellent capacity for business" and was for many years considered "almost indispensable in the management of county affairs."[29] He is remembered by persons now living in

*Scipio Bartlett died March 10, 1828, aged seventy-seven years, of "gastritis peracuta."[46]

Athens and instances are recounted of his pleasure in telling or playing a joke. BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT "was a woman of strong mind and great energy, a great reader and a woman of decided opinions and prejudices. She was very handsome and carried her beauty into old age. She was a member of the church and a faithful attendant upon its services for a great many years."

The children of HENRY[5] and BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT, the first four born at or near Merrittstown, Pennsylvania, and the others in Athens County, Ohio, were[12, 50] [see plates XIV p. 90, XXVI–XXVIII pp. 865–8]

I. JOANNA HERRICK[6], b. September 28, 1793, and d. October 21, 1870, at Marietta, Ohio. She m. at Athens, Ohio, March 31, 1814, CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN [see Shipman, p. 742]. She made the trip down the Ohio River with her parents when she was a child and spent her early girlhood in Athens County, Ohio, enjoying there such educational advantages as those days afforded. At the age of fourteen she rode on horseback with her father to Greensburg, Kentucky, where she spent four years with her paternal grandmother, JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT Garden, and aunt, Mrs. Theresa (Bartlett) Brown. After her return home, and at about the age of twenty-one, she was married and spent an active life in Athens and at Marietta, Ohio. She was called an unusually intelligent woman and was prominent in the church organizations, missionary societies and all charities. She had an appreciation of beautiful things; her gold-framed mirrors, luster ware and fine china, brought over the Allegheny mountains in wagons, are still cherished by her great-grandchildren.[12, 50] [See plate XIV p. 90.]

II. Hannah Batchelder[6], b. July 16, 1795, and d. that year.

III. Theresa M.[6], b. June 8, 1796, twin with Betsey Corey; m. 1st, June 1, 1820, Asa Rice; m. 2nd, May 7, 1845, Cephas Carpenter.

IV. Betsey Corey[6], b. June 8, 1796; twin with Theresa M.; d. March or September 17, 1874 or 1875, at Paris, Illinois; m. 1st, June 8, 1817, Robert Neville; m. 2nd, Isaiah Baker.

V. Mary Malinda[6],* b. January 31, 1799; d. January 9, 1872; m. January 3, 1820, Ziba Lindley.

VI. Harriet B.[6], b. March 17, 1801; d. May 24, 1877; m. 1st, December 21, 1826, Ezra Stuart; m. 2nd, Archibald Green Brown [mentioned in "Grandmother Brown's Hundred Years"].

VII. Hettie B.[6], b. January 14, 1803; m. November 12, 1833, Samuel M. Aston.

VIII. Rebecca Gilman[6], b. May 15, 1805; m. March 14, 1839, Francis Beardsley.

IX. John[6], b. April 5, 1807; d. February 12, 1814.

X. Love Anna[6], b. May 5, 1809; d. December 5, 1855; m. January 24, 1832 or 1834, Henry Hay.

XI. William Henry[6], b. October 18, 1811; d. December 30, 1854; m. Jane Savage Coates.

XII. Henrietta[6], b. February 26, 1815; d. July 17, 1834, killed by lightning during a storm while closing an upper south window in the family home at the northwest corner of Congress and Washington streets in Athens, Ohio.

* In early life she went on horseback, with her father, to Greensburg, Kentucky, where she spent two years with her paternal grandmother. Soon after her marriage in 1820 she and her husband removed to Ten Mile Creek in Washington County, Pennsylvania, the old home of the Lindleys. In 1825 they removed to Alexander, Athens County, Ohio.

REFERENCES

1. Parish Records of Frampton, co. Dorset, England.
2. The Bartletts, T. E. Bartlett, 1892, p. 89.
3. Ess exAntiquarian, VII, 59, 63, 91.
4. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., III, 107–8.
5. History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, 1880, pp. 12, 13, 18, 26, 27, 29, 60–1, 333–4.

5a. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 699, 702–4, 707, 746–7; II, 1075.

6. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 6, 282, 385; VII, 335, 363, 386; VIII, 330–8.

6a. Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in New England, V, 21.

7. New England Register, LXXIV, 119.
8. Essex Antiquarian, VII, 63–4.

8a. Essex Institute Historical Collections, V, 232,282.

9. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., I, 30–3; II, 22, 26, 482–3.

9a. Old Naumkeag and Other Towns, C. H. Webber and W. S. Nevins, 1877, p. 271.

10. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 36; II, 29, 360, 373.
11. Herrick Family, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 155–6.
12. Family Records compiled from original research in Essex County, Mass., in 1869–72 by BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES and also from her personal knowledge of the later generations.
13. Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, XVII, Appendix XII, 475
14. Ibid., V, 179–80, 190.
15. The Romance of the American Navy, F. S. Hill, late U.S.N., 1910, p. 3 et seq.; The Navy, C. R. Clark, et al., 1910, p. 2 et seq.; History of the United States, E. M. Avery, 1908, V, 316–7; History of the United States Navy, E. S. Maclay, 1895, I, 34–7; Naval History of the United States, W. J. Abbott, 1896, pp. 54–5, 57; Journal of Continental Congress, III, 277, 293, 311, 425; A Naval History of the American Revolution, G. W. Allen, 1913, I, 32, 45; The Maritime History of Massachusetts, S. E. Morison, 1921, pp. 29–32; The Navy of the American Revolution, C. O. Paullin, 1906, pp. 31, 33–7, 42, 46, 48–51, 61–3, 126–7.
16. American Archives, Ser. IV, Vol. III, Columns [two to a page] 946, 1353, 1368, 1407, 1420–1, 1537, 1547.
17. History of Essex County, Mass., 1878, p. 73.
18. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 56.
19. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXIV, 40.
20. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 311; Essex Institute Historical Collections, VI, 46.
21. Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 138–40, 145.
22. Ships and Sailors of Old Salem, Mass., R. D. Paine, 1912, p. 11.
23. American Archives, Ser. IV, Vol. VI, Columns (two to a page) 602, 821, etc.
24. Naval Records of the American Revolution. Library of Congress, 1906, pp. 10–1, 23, 40, 290, 394, 408.
25. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 361.
26. Life, Journals and Correspondence of MANASSEH CUTLER, J. P. Cutler, 1888, I, 405–6, 425.
27. Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania Publications, V, 345.
28. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. I, Vol. VIII, p. 55–6; Old Naumkeag and Other Towns, C. H. Webber and W. S. Nevins, 1877, pp. 269, 271.
29. History of Athens County, Ohio, C. M. Walker, 1869, I, 131, 144, 151, 153, 201–2, 218–9, 222–3, 234–42, 264–5.
30. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, p. 81.
31. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. IV, Vol. IV, p. 199.
32. Founders of Massachusetts Bay Colony, S. S. Smith, 1897, 81–4; New England Congregationalism, D. A. White, 1861, p. 90–1, 101, 307; Ibid., 101; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXII, 81–8; Historical Sermon, J. W. Leek, Rector St. Michael's, Marblehead, 1873, pp. 4–23; Contributions to the Ecclesiastical History of Essex County, Mass., 1865, p. 239.
33. New England Register, LXV, 60, 62.
34. History of Andover, Mass., S. L. Bailey, 1880, 533–6.
35. History of Athens County, Ohio, C. M. Walker, 1869, I, 83, 144, 155–6, 159, 163, 212, 264; II, 348, 351.
36. Merchant Venturers of Old Salem, R. E. Peabody, 1912, p. 11.
37. List of Officers of the Navy of the United States and the Marine Corps from 1775 to 1900, Edited by E. W. Callahan, 1901, p. 10.
38. History of Coinage and Currency in the United States, A. B. Hepburn, 1903, pp. 1, 11, 12.
39. Ibid., pp. 53–9.
40. History of American Currency, W. G. Sumner, 1884, pp. 43–8, 53.
41. The Maritime History of Massachusetts, S. E. Morison, 1921, p. 23.
42. A History of American Privateers and Letters-of-Marque, G. Coggeshall, 1856, Introduction, pp. v, xliii–li.
43. Nooks and Corners of the New England Coast, S. A. Drake, 1875, pp. 248–9.
44. History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, 1880, pp. 362–73.

45. Two Centuries of Travel in Essex County, Mass., G. F. Dow, 1921, p. 167.
46. Vital Records of Salem, Mass., V, 73.
47. Gravestones standing 1927 in cemetery at Athens, Ohio.
48. Westmoreland County, Pa., Wills I, 120; Orphans Court Docket, A, 35.
49. Fayette County, Pa., Mortgages and Deeds, B, 273–4.
50. Family Bibles, Letters, Photographs and other Documents in the possession of Mrs. W. V. Sprague, Chauncey, Ohio, and of other descendants.
51. The Cabot History and Genealogy, L. V. Briggs, 1927, I, 71, 88–90, 130, 186.

Entries in the Parish Register of Frampton in the county of Dorset, England, relating to the family of William Bartlett —

Magdalen Bartlet the daughter of William Bartlet was baptized — — (The remainder of the entry is illegible, but it is the first entry in the year 1629)

Bathshua the daughter of William and Edith Bartlet was baptized the — day of February, 1634

Robert the sonne of William and — Bartlet was baptized Feby 4th 1638

Joane the daughter of William and Edith Bartlet was baptized Feb. 19th 1636 & was buried Feby 1642

William sonne of William and Edith Bartlet was baptized the 10th of December 1640 (T.C.

Jeffery Mifant the sonne of William Bartlet was baptized the 18th of September 1642.

John Bartlet the sonne of William and Edith Bartlet was baptized the 14th of May. 1645

Edith Bartlet the wife of William Bartlet was buried the 10th of July 1652.

William Bartlett at inn died the 26th day of August 1657.

The above are true copies of the Registers of the Parish of Frampton, Dorset.

Thos. E. Langford Swainbury
Vicar of Frampton

June 21st 1882

COPY FROM PARISH REGISTER AT FRAMPTON, CO. DORSET, ENGLAND, SHOWING PARENTAGE AND BAPTISM OF JOHN[1] BARTLETT [page 71]

PLATE XV

BATCHELDER

* [472] John Batchelder c.1611–1675	m c.1637–8	Mary . . . –aft.1653
* † [236] John Batchelder 1650–1684	m 1673	Mary Herrick 1654–1684
* † [118] Josiah Batchelder 1679–80–1749	m 1700	Mary Raymond 1682–1763
† [58] Henry Herrick 1716–1780	m 1738	Anne Batchelder 1717–1815
† ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
† ‡ § ‖ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ‖ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

BATCHELDER

JOHN[1] BATCHELDER "of Canterbury, Taylor,"[1] probably unmarried, with his brothers,* Henry of Dover and Joseph of Canterbury, sailed from Sandwich, co. Kent, in the spring of 1637, for New England. Henry brought his wife and four servants and Joseph, who was also a tailor, brought his wife, son and three servants.

Of these brothers, Henry settled in Ipswich, Massachusetts, and the other two in Salem, where JOHN[1] deposed in 1658 that he was then about forty-seven years old.[1] The relationship of these three men is proved beyond dispute, other opinions to the contrary notwithstanding,[9] by the settlement of the estate[2] of Henry, who died childless in 1679, and whose property was divided between the living children of his two brothers, Joseph and JOHN[1] who were themselves both already deceased before the final distribution was made[2a] in 1696.

JOHN[1] had land grants at Salem[4a] in 1639, 1646, 1651–2, 1654, 1658, 1661 and in March of 1672. He became a member of the church there on June 23, 1639.[3] His first marriage to MARY (——), who was the mother of his children, probably occurred soon after his arrival in this country. He married secondly Elizabeth [called Herrick[3, 14] though her identity is not shown].

An instance of intricate interweaving of relationships is seen in this family, for Joseph[2], the youngest son of JOHN[1], was the first husband of MIRIAM[3] MOULTON, who became our ancestress by her subsequent marriage to FREEBORN[3] BALCH [see DAWES–GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I]. Abigail[2] Batchelder, daughter of JOHN[1], was the first wife of PETER[2] WOODBURY (JOHN[1]) who, by his second wife, SARAH[2] DODGE, became our progenitor, as did also the brother of this man and woman, JOHN[2] BATCHELDER.

In his earlier years JOHN[1] must have been in rather straitened circumstances, for it was decided by the Elders of Salem in 1645 that ". . . Robert Cotta should have the first ffiue pownd giuen by Mr. Androes of London to be

*They are said to have probably been the sons of Mark Bacheler and his wife, the widow Mary (—) Fantinge of the Isle of Thanet, co. Kent, England.[14]

layd out in a Cow or heifer . . ." and "They considered that the poorest man or at least that most was in want was JOHN BATCHELOR & therefore they haue disposed of the second Cow vuto him wch was giuen by Mr. Andrewes of London."[4]

JOHN[1] had difficulty with some of his neighbors in 1657–8 over such matters as a "driftway from the head of bass riuer into Royalls neck . . .", about the use of a lane through which to drive cattle and about certain land boundaries. These matters were referred to arbitrators who were to "meete together on the 16th of this p'sent month wch will be on the third day Come seavenight at 8 a clock in the morning."[5] JOHN[1] served in 1657 either as assessor or as collector of taxes; he and others in 1670 were deputized to designate those trees in the town commons which the inhabitants might cut and to see that those who felled them cleared away the logs and brush. In connection with this order is seen an instance of the possibilities of the imagination as applied to spelling, since the members of this committee "for the fafull dischardge of this ord^r^ shalbe paid for their paynes," shall report to the selectmen "from tyme to tyme" when the latter officials "begine to meat the first munday of december about 5 of the cloak in the euening. . . ."[6] At this time JOHN[1] himself was granted permission "to cutt 6 trees to make fencinge stuffe vpon the Comons."[6]

His will dated in November, 1675, stated that he was then "aged 63," gave to his wife Elizabeth his dwelling house during her life, all his movable estate and £6 per annum during her widowhood, as well as "the keeping of two Cowes and firewood for her necessary use" which last items were to be furnished by his two sons. His other lands were divided between his heirs and after the widow's death the home was to go to JOHN[2]. This document made his wife executrix but she is said to have died three days before he did and it is certain that his sons became his administrators.[3b, 7] The father died on November 13, 1675, leaving property valued at £230 and the inventory of his estate taken on December 4 following, by JOHN[1] RAYMOND and ANDREW[1] ELIOTT showed among his household goods the unusual possession of three Bibles.

The children of JOHN[1] and MARY (——) BATCHELDER, all born at Salem, were[3, 9, 10]

I. John[2], b. January 20, 1638–9; d. 1645–6.
II. Mary[2], b. September 19, 1640; d. August, 1659; m. 1658, Mighill Cressey.
III. Abigail[2], bap. February 12, 1642–3; d. before 1667; m. September, 1665, PETER[2] WOODBURY [who was our ancestor through his second wife; see Woodbury, p. 826].
IV. Hannah[2], b. June 23, 1644; d. young.
V. Hannah[2], b. May 25, 1645; m., before 1670, Samuel Corning.

vi. JOHN[2], see following.
vii. Joseph[2], b. May 8, 1653; d. after 1681; m. at Salem on October 8, 1677, as her first husband, MIRIAM[3] MOULTON, who later m. FREEBORN[3] BALCH (BENJAMIN[2], JOHN[1]). [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]

JOHN[2] BATCHELDER (*John*[1]) was born June 23, 1650, at Salem, died on August 6, 1684, at that place[9] and married there[3a, 10] on August 14, 1673, MARY[3] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 427]. He was a cooper by trade and lived in the part of Salem called "Ryal Side" which later became Beverly.

An interesting transaction was entered into on February 1, 1677–8, by JOHN[2] and two other men when they leased from the selectmen of Salem all of the town Common on "Ryall Side" except forty-four acres which were reserved for commonage use by the families adjoining this tract, at the rate of four acres per family, of whom JOHN[2] himself represented one. This document states that these town officers "Haue Letten & sett to Lease . . . [this land] . . . for ye full space and tearme of one thousand years from ye date hereof . . . rate free . . ." in consideration of which JOHN[2] BATCHELDER and his two partners "Ingage themselves . . . or assignes to pay for Each year successively dureing ye whole tearme . . .," £22. They further agreed that what wood should be cut therefrom should be sold to the inhabitants of Salem, that the lessees should pay for half the fence to set off this tract, and in case of their failure to meet the financial terms, they promised an extra year's rental as penalty. The following year the forty-four acres which were earlier reserved were also leased to JOHN[2] and some of his neighbors for nine hundred and ninety-nine years. Record is found of the payment in January 1679–80 by him and his partners of the rental for the second year on the earlier lease.[8] It was still in force[3] in November, 1696.

A very trying situation is seen in the fact that thirteen days after the death of JOHN[2], his widow, MARY, also died leaving five small children, the eldest of whom was less than ten years of age. These children, John[3], Jonathan[3], JOSIAH[3], Elizabeth[3], and Mary[3], were baptized at the First Church in Beverly on November 29, 1685, after their parents' death.[11]

JOHN[2] left an estate appraised at £793 and an accounting of its administration by his executors, of whom PETER[2] WOODBURY (JOHN[1]) was one, shows various interesting expenditures for these orphan children, such as payments for making and mending "shose," "Pd. Saml. Hardy for writing 3s," "paid for bleding . . . 1s," for "phisick for Elizabeth 2s," "for clothing for JOSIAH and Making 2.10.6," "2 Caster hatts for Jonathan and JOSIAH 1.0.0" and

"bringing up 4 children 11 yrs. 166.12.9."[3] Evidently one of the group soon died and the four surviving children had guardians appointed[3] in 1697, but of course must have also had similar supervision from the time of their parents' death.

The children of JOHN[2] and MARY (HERRICK) BATCHELDER, all born in the part of Salem which became Beverly, were[3, 9, 10]

I. Ebenezer[3], bap. October 19, 1673; d. young.
II. John[3], b. April 26, 1675; d. 1748 at Beverly; m. 1st there, April 22, 1696, Bethiah[4] Woodbury (Humphrey[3], Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]); m. 2nd (pub. July 9, 1709), Sarah Rea.
III. Jonathan[3], b. March 29, 1678; d. April, 1740, at Beverly; m. there, February 25, 1702–3, Ruth[2] Raymond (WILLIAM[1]).
IV. JOSIAH[3], see following.
V. Elizabeth[3], bap. November 29, 1685; m. May 15, 1701, John Mascoll, 3rd.
VI. Mary[3], bap. November 29, 1685; prob. d. young.

JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER (*John*[2], *John*[1]) was born March 6, 1679–80, at Salem,[10] baptized November 29, 1685, at Beverly,[11] died on October 17, 1749, at the latter place and was married[9, 10] there [int. November 24], December 18, 1700, to MARY[2] RAYMOND [see Raymond, p. 708]. He is called both tailor and yeoman and resided in Salem and Beverly.[9] By deed from his uncle, Henry[3] Herrick, dated January 21, 1716, he and his brother Jonathan[3] became owners of a piece of land which was earlier owned by their grandfather, ZACHARY[2] HERRICK, and was promised by him to their mother during her life.[3, 3a] In addition to this JOSIAH[3] and his brothers received their deceased father's lands, and their recorded wills indicate that they all became men of independent means.[3]

JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER undoubtedly served in the Colonial forces at the time of the attempt to capture Port Royal in 1707 though that credit is erroneously given[3, 13] to his son Josiah[4] who was not born until two years after the service occurred.

The will of JOSIAH[3] dated September 29, 1749, and proved October 30, following, showed such thoughtful care for his family, and especially for his wife, that it is a pleasure to quote:[3]

"Item. I give to MARY my Beloved Wife, the westerly or new end of my dwelling house & leanto Clear through & so from ye top to the bottom, with convenient room in ye cellar under the other end and Liberty to Bake in the Oven as she shall have occasion from time to time with free ingress and egress to pass and repass both ye stairs and leanto, from ye garrett to ye Cellar, and

one halfe of the Garden and the fruit of one of the quince trees, and halfe the fruit of the pear tree before ye door, and likewise liberty to gather green Beans in the Field for her use and as many apples in the Orchard as shee shall want for her use, all which being to her use and improvement During ye whole term of time shee shall remain or continue to be my widow & no longer.

"Item. It is my will that upon Condition the sd MARY my wife shall be married to another man shee shall resign and acquit to my three sons (namely) Josiah, George, Benjamin, all her right of Dower and interest in all ye particulars before mentioned and also in all my real Estate and that upon sd acquittance, they shall pay unto her the full Sum of twenty pound in Bills of the old Tenor, or in other Specie Equivalent thereto, in equal proportion between them.

"Item. I give to MARY my Wife all my indoor moveable or household goods. Excepting such of them as I shall herein afterward otherwise dispose of to bee at her own disposal and likewise two sheep and one Cow. She to have her choice of ye cow to be at her own disposal I likewise give to her my pannel and pillion to be at her disposal also.

"Item. I likewise give to my wife for her subsistance to be paid yearly to her, Ten bushells of Corn, Two bushells of Barley, halfe a bushele of Beans, One bushell of turnips, Four barrils of Cyder, putt into the cellar. One hundred and twenty weight of good pork, One quarter of Beef not less than Seventy or eighty weight. Sixteen pound of good Flax well swingled, four cord of good wood brought to the door, Cutt and Splitt fit for her use, and that halfe of the Garden before mentioned to be dugged and dunged Seasonably and the use of an horse to carry her to the Publick Worship of God as often as shee shall want all which particulars to be provided, paid & performed to her Annually and every year by my aforesaid three sons (viz.) Josiah, George, Benjamin in equal proportion during the whole time that shee shall remain to be my Widow and No Longer."

Among other legacies to his children JOSIAH[3] left £80 to his daughter Mary[4], £90 to daughter Elizabeth[4], £60 to daughter ANNE[4] and left his "Surveying Instruments and chain" to his son Josiah[4].

The children of JOSIAH[3] and MARY (RAYMOND) BATCHELDER, the first three of whom were recorded at Salem,[12] and the others born at Beverly,[3, 9] were[10]

1. Mary[4], b. November 5, 1701;[12] living 1749; m. 1st, June 25, 1719, as his second wife, John[3] Kettle (James[2], John[1]); m. 2nd, December 8, 1725, William[3] Porter[10] (Israel[2], John[1]); m. 3rd, October 14, 1756, as his third wife, John[4] Bridge (Matthew[3], Matthew[2], John[1]).

II. William[4], b. October 21, 1703;[12] d. April 30, 1704.
III. Elizabeth[4], b. April 26, 1705;[12] prob. d. young[9] and if so she was followed by
IV. Elizabeth[4], b. [it is said],[3, 9] April 26, 1707; m. in Salem, May 30, 1728, Israel Lovett.
V. Josiah[4], b. December 16, 1709; d. March 4, 1798; m. October 26, 1732, Mary Leach.
VI. William[4], b. June 1, 1713; prob. d. young.
VII. George[4], b. September 25, 1715; d. 1770; m. Alice (—).
VIII. ANNE[4], b. August 9, 1717, at Beverly;[3, 9] d. May 28, 1815, at that place;[10] m. there, May 11, 1738, HENRY[5] HERRICK,[3a, 10] [see Herrick, p. 432].
IX. Benjamin[4], b. August 12, 1720; buried September 9, 1787, at Beverly;[10] m. there, April 11, 1750, Sarah Whipple.

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, LXXV, 222–3.
2. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 294–7.
2a. Ibid., pp. 296–7.
3. Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, pp. 347–9, 353–86.
3a. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, p. 20.
3b. Savage I, 88.
4. Salem, Mass., Town Records, I, 136, 138.
4a. Ibid., I, 93, 143, 167–8, 177, 220–1; II, 12, 20, 142.
5. Ibid., I, 201, 216–7.
6. Ibid., I, 228; II, 116–7.
7. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 41–2.
8. Salem, Mass., Town Records, II, 252–4, 282–3, 318.
9. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, pp. 445–6. Essex Antiquarian, VII, 106–111.
10. Beverly, Mass., Vital Records, I, 29; II, 24, 30–1, 33, 157, 179, 373–5, 468.
11. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 101.
12. Salem, Mass., Vital Records, I, 59.
13. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 97.
14. Descendants of John Scott of Roxbury, Mass., M. L. Holman, 1919, pp. 207–8.

BEAMAN (Simon)

* [160] [172]
SIMON BEAMAN
–1675–6

m
1654

ALICE YOUNG
–1708

* † ‡ [80] [86]
SAMUEL BEAMAN
prob.bef.1662–1741

m
1693

MARGARET CHAPMAN
1672–1752

† ‡ [40]
SAMUEL BEAMAN
1704–aft.1753

m
1731

SARAH PINNEY
1707–aft.1783

‡ [42]
LEMUEL ROBERTS
1701–1772

m
1731

ABIGAIL BEAMAN
–aft.1744 and prob. in 1786

‡ § [20]
THOMAS BEMAN
1734–1804

m
1753

LYDIA ROBERTS
1735–1809

§ [10]
DANIEL BEMAN
1756–1817

m
c.1777–8

ABIGAIL ACKLEY
c.1761–1805

§ ‖ [4]
AARON GATES
1780–1850

m
1803 or 1804

RUTH BEMAN
1784–1858

‖ ¶ [2]
BEMAN GATES
1818–1894

m
1841

BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN
1816–1895

¶
RUFUS R. DAWES
1838–1899

m
1864

MARY BEMAN GATES
1842–1921

* Springfield, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

BEAMAN (Simon)

THE earliest known record* of SIMON[1] BEAMAN shows him to have been a resident of Springfield, Massachusetts, at least as early as 1648. The account books, still extant, of William Pynchon of that town[1] show debits and credits to SIMON[1] from 1648 to 1675 and to his widow and sons after that date. These items supply clues which help to form a working knowledge of their lives.

On May 26, 1648, the bill[2] of goods charged to SIMON[1] carries evidence that he was then a bachelor:

"1 yd blew stocking cotten	0–2.8
1 pr whit cotten stockings	0–2.4
1 wast coote	0–7.0
2 Doz ½ pewter buttons	0–0.8½
1 shurt	0–4.6
1 pr. high eeld Shoes 10	0–4.6"

A charge in 1653 suggests that he was about to take up, or to continue in the shoemaker's trade:

"12 awle blades	00–01.00
6 awles	00–02.09
2 hides of sole leather at 30.s p. hide	03–00.00
1 hide of vpper leather	01–07.00"

Immediately following the above charge is this credit:

"Redd by what is due SYMON for seruice fro May till ye 29th of Septbr for wch tyme I was to allow him	04–16.00"

*Grateful acknowledgment is made to Mr. Walter L. Goodwin and to Mr. F. F. Starr for the use of their valuable compilation on this family in the Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines from which the entire data on the first three generations, herewith, is quoted. Their publications have also been drawn upon in the cases of the Chapman, Fox, Saxton, Roberts and other families.

There has long been a belief on the part of many of our line of descent that our THOMAS[4] BEAMAN was a descendant of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON of Saybrook, Connecticut, through Samuel[2] and Samuel[3], instead of from SIMON[1] of Springfield, Massachusetts, through SAMUEL[2] and SAMUEL[3] as Mr. Starr has so ably proved. Incidently, we are descended from both of these emigrants, but there is no known relationship between SIMON[1] BEAMAN and WILLIAM[1] BEAMON [see p. 117].

Following December, 1653, there are a number of entries in these books which show that Mr. Pynchon gave him credit for mending and making shoes, for going on "voyages to Pequot," "down the falls" etc.

In the latter part of 1654 his account showed a charge for

"a sword	15s
3 1 Sope	00–03–06
for yor dyet. 30 weekes at. 4s p weeke	06–00–00"

This account was balanced on December 13, 1654, when there was due Mr. Pynchon the sum of £17–11–05.

SIMON[1] married in Springfield, December 15, 1654, two days after the above settlement, ALICE YOUNG. Immediately afterwards he bought from Pynchon

"1 peck of Salt	20^{d}
1 pint of vinegar	00–00–04½
1 m of Pins	00–00–04"

in addition to

"more for an Iron pot & pot hooke	00.08.06
an old frying pan	00.03.00
To 1 lb powd at 3s 9d	00.04.05
4 lb flint at 2^{d} p lb	
Tobacco Tongs	00.01.00"

which charges make it quite evident that the young couple went to housekeeping at once.

About 1664 his labors brought him the credit:

"By 1 d getting Timber for Boards for ye house of correction a p (——) acct 00–02–00"

SIMON[1] BEAMAN soon afterwards purchased a three-acre home lot, three acres of meadow and four acres of woodland. He received grants of a three-acre home lot, three acres of wet meadow and fourteen acres of woodland in February, 1653, and sold all three pieces on October 4, 1654. Another grant, on May 17, 1653, comprised two plots of twelve and four acres, respectively, located at Skipmuck. Additional lands given him were six acres on March 12, 1661–2, fourteen acres on December 8, 1664, eight acres adjoining the last-named tract and five or six acres of meadow on January 5, 1665, and various other small parcels.

For a time he chose, either for warmth or for economy, to ply his trade as "cordwainer," or shoemaker, in a cave or cellar, for the following record of a town meeting, held November 9, 1657, shows that there was "granted

liberty to SIMON BEAMON to dig a sellar to worke in, for this winter in ye Towne lot pvided he fill it vp againe in ye spring." On December 23, 1659, the "dignifying" or seating of the meeting house took place and he was assigned to the "8th seate." Again, on February 23, 1662, he received the same location, which included space for the wives of those who were married.

He was appointed one of the fence viewers on February 13, 1670. No record has yet been found showing that he became a freeman. His death evidently took place between August 17, 1675, when the last charge against him was made on Pynchon's books, "To 2^d ½. lead, 00.01.01," and September 26, 1676, when his widow displayed an inventory of his estate totalling £84–15–06. His estate included his shoemaker's tools and house and land at Skipmuck. Administration was granted to his widow and the eldest son, Simon[2].

On the morning of October 5, 1675, the Indians burned the town of Springfield, killed some of the inhabitants, destroyed many records and left but few habitations. It is possible that the Beaman home was one of those razed for, at a town meeting on February 3, 1679, "the Town being disirous to accommodate the poor widow BEAMON wth some Land to set an house vpon" appointed a committee "to see where they may wth most conveniency to her & lest inconveniency to the high ways & passages lay to her about a quarter of an Acre to set a building vpon." She was again favored, at a similar session on March 13, 1681–2, when it was voted that the regular six pence fine, charged against all the townsmen who were absent from the meeting without permission or good excuse, should, for that date, apply to her credit for the payment of her rates or taxes. There happened to be twenty-three men absent so she profited considerably.

Immediately following the last-mentioned account of SIMON[1] on the Pynchon books, is found the beginning of a series of items charged to the "wid BEAMON" which cover a period from December 6, 1676, to March 17, 1689–90. On April 6, 1683, she and Mr. Pynchon had a balancing of accounts and she then presented a bill for services rendered to him in 1682 by her sons, Daniel[2], Thomas[2], Josias[2], and Benjamin[2].

"ALLICE BEMON of Springfield, widow, was sick and died October 5, 1708."

The legal papers that definitely establish the names of the children of SIMON[1] and ALICE (YOUNG) BEAMAN are as follows:

(a). On January 23, 1706–7, Simon[2] Beaman, then a resident of Deerfield, conveyed to his brother, Benjamin[2], all his interest in his deceased father's lands at Skipmuck in the town of Springfield.

(b). On January 4, 1713, Josiah[2] Beaman, of Brookfield, sold all his interest in the estate of his father, SIMON[1], to his brother, Benjamin[2], of Springfield.

(c). Simon[2] Beaman, of Deerfield, left a will dated February 16, 1711–2, and probated March 5, following, providing for his wife, Hannah, brother Daniel[2], brother, SAMUEL[2], and nephew, Simon[3], son of brother Josiah[2].

(d). On March 29, 1717, SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN, of Windsor, sold all his interest in the estate of his father, SIMON[1], to his brother, Benjamin[2], of Springfield.

(e). Daniel[2] Beaman, who lived in Springfield, died about August 3, 1741, and administration of his estate was granted to his nephew, Captain Joseph Miller, on the eleventh of that month. In May, 1750, the real estate was ordered "set" to Miller and he was to pay the proper portions to the children of Beaman's deceased brothers SAMUEL[2], Josiah[2] and Benjamin[2], and deceased sisters, Ruth Miller, Abigail Baldwin and Mary Miller, respectively.

(f). On April 26, 1734, SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN, then of Simsbury, but formerly of Windsor, "Son of the Wid[w] BEAMON Late of Springfield in the County of Hampshire in New England Deceased," disposed of his interest in a lot in Springfield.

The children of SIMON[1] and ALICE (YOUNG) BEAMAN, all born at Springfield, but in unknown order, were[1]

I. Simon[2], the inscription on his grave stone, as published,[23] is "Limon Beamon Died 170½, aged 54" which would make his birth antedate his parents' marriage several years. But he left a will[1] dated February 16, 1711–2, and probated March 5, 1711–2, which corrects that death date. He m. Hannah (—) who is said to have "departed this Lif y[e] 13th of May, 1739, in ye 94th year of her age."[23]
II. John[2], b. April 12, 1657. Nothing further known.
III. Daniel[2], b. March 1, 1658; d. abt. August 3, 1741, prob. in Springfield. Presumably unm.
IV. Thomas[2], b. December 29, 1660. Living 1682.
V. Josias or Josiah[2], b. February 4, 1662; m. 1st, Martha (—), who d. November 29, 1691; m. 2nd, April 29, 1696, Lydia Warner.
VI. SAMUEL[2], see following.
VII. Ruth[2], m. April 9, 1685, Samuel Miller.
VIII. Mehitable[2], d. August 16, 1670.
IX. Benjamin[2], b. August 20, 1671; m. December 14, 1710, Hannah Huggins.
X. A daughter, b. June 11, 1673.
XI. Abigail[2], b. abt. 1675; m. May 15, 1694, Obadiah Baldwin.
XII. Mary[2], m. John Miller.
XIII. Alice[2], m. November 22, 1705, Nathaniel Baldwin.

Neither the birth record of SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN (*Simon*[1]) nor any statement of his age during his life has yet been found. In the decree for the division of the estate of his brother Daniel[2], he, SAMUEL[2], is named before Josiah[2], who was born in February, 1662–3, and it is, therefore, fair to assume that SAMUEL[2] was born before 1662. He "Deceased this Life September 1741"[1,6] doubtless at Simsbury, and married,[1] at Windsor, May 10, 1693, MARGARET[2] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 183].

The time of his settlement at Windsor is not known, but he resided there after his marriage and bought a house and home lot on October 10, 1698, when his occupation was given as cooper. His first official position, to which he was elected in December, 1703, was that of surveyor of highways. He was chosen as packer in December, 1708, 1709, 1711, 1713, 1714 and 1715; sealer of weights in 1711, 1713, 1714 and 1715 and sealer of measures in 1714 and 1715. While the former offices seem to have been strictly local in scope, and with only such sanction, he was evidently given greater powers in his appointment as packer for Windsor by the Hartford County Court on March 8, 1704–5, though the length of this service is not known.

In May, 1709, the General Assembly took measures toward the raising of three hundred fifty men as Connecticut's quota of the troops to be sent from the Colonies against the French in Canada.[3] SAMUEL[2] was one of the men in that expedition and, in July, 1713, there was ordered[3] paid to him £8–16–01 "which is in full of his wages in the expedition to Wood Creek in the year 1709."

At a meeting of the Governor and Council held in New Haven on August 8, 1711, an account was laid before them by Roger Wolcott, Commissary for the Colony in Canadian operations, for "sundry goods and stores" "bought impressed or taken up" by him in Hartford County "for the use of their forces: and also of service done by his order. . . ." This body ordered the treasurer to pay this account, one item of which was for £1–08–06 owing[3] to SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN.

Evidently planning removal from Windsor, SAMUEL[2] on September 12, 1716, paid £95 to Ebenezer Williams for his house and home lot and for several other pieces of land located in Scotland parish in the town of Simsbury.[1] He was listed with the freemen[4] of Simsbury who "entered October 1717" and was resident there about that time though he did not sell his Windsor homestead at "Hosford's Hill" until March 14, 1719–20, when William Mitchell acquired it. In January, 1722–3, when the town of Simsbury

THOMAS[4] BEAMAN (*Samuel*[3], *Samuel*[2], *Simon*[1]) was born July 6, 1734, at Simsbury,[2] and died May 3, 1804, at Hartland, Connecticut,[8] "aged 70." He married at the former place,[11, 17] January 18, 1753, LYDIA[3] ROBERTS, his first cousin [see Roberts, p. 714].

On October 14, following their marriage, THOMAS[4] and his wife, LYDIA, renewed their covenant with the church at Wintonbury* parish,[7] in Simsbury, and later their first four children were baptized there as among those who "belonged to the place."[7] His aunt, Hannah[3] Beaman, who had married[16] Caleb Moses in 1726, had moved with her family to Hartland and, presumably, reported favorably enough on the locality to induce this nephew to remove to that town for he bought there[13] a house and land of Daniel Adams on March 16, 1756 [see map on p. 35], and bought a farm of one hundred twenty acres of Abel Eno on January 1, 1759. This house was the family home for a great many years.[14] Just when THOMAS[4] and his family came to occupy it is not proved, but it was probably in or before 1758, for his fifth child, born there, was taken back to Wintonbury parish for baptism on June 24, 1759, being called son of "THOMAS of Hartland" and listed among those "which did not belong to the said parish."[7] The first church at Hartland was organized[12] May 1, 1768, and the last child in this family was baptized in it.[8]

Because of a deep valley through the middle of this town a separation of eastern and western portions seemed natural and desirable. The General Assembly agreed to the division and two post offices were eventually established. THOMAS[4] lived in East Hartland.[12]

In October, 1774, the General Assembly appointed him "Lieutenant of a Company or Train Band on the east side the river in Hartland in the 18th regiment"[15] and this title was used both in the record of baptism of his youngest child and in that of his death.[8] He fought in the Revolution in this regiment, composed largely of his old friends from Simsbury;[15] and, as lieutenant in Capt. Benjamin Hutchen's Company, served in New York in 1776, arriving there on August 18, and receiving his discharge on September 6, following.[15]

*The church was a plain, barnlike structure of logs, in the rafters of which the swallows made their homes and "the squirrels so abounded that it soon became necessary for the safety of the pulpit cushions to keep them at the tavern between Sundays. A hewn log lay along the middle aisle beside the raised pews for the little children who generally came barefoot in the summertime; and from this they would rise deferentially and 'make their manners' as the minister walked among them to the pulpit. . . . In the gallery was a high pew set apart for colored persons. The tithing-man, from his post in the Singer's Seat, kept watch over the demeanor of young and old, and not seldom some playful or weary urchin was rapped with his long stick, or pointed out to notice, or even treated to harsher measures. All the men sat on one side of the church, and all the women on the other."[21]

His sons, Thomas[5] and DANIEL[5] and daughter, Lydia Butler, with perhaps other members of his family, settled[14] in East Hartland. It seems probable that the father, THOMAS[4], owned at the time of his death the place on which his son Thomas[5] lived, for DANIEL[5] deeded to his brother, Thomas[5], one-fourth of his share of this property and later, referring to the same tract, deeded to his own son Reuben[6], on April 8, 1805, "one fourth of the house and barn that my father left me by will," on which Reuben[6] built a home near his uncle Thomas[5] as will presently be mentioned. Many land transfers are found in the name of THOMAS[4], and he and his family were prominent members of the community.[14]

The spelling of the name was shortened quite uniformly in this and the following generations, by the dropping of the first "a."

The children of THOMAS[4] and LYDIA (ROBERTS) BEMAN were[7]

I. Thomas[5], bap. October 21, 1753, at Wintonbury; m. at Hartland,[11] April 17, 1783, Ann Fuller.
II. Lydia[5], bap. January 26, 1755, at Wintonbury; m. at Hartland, March 6, 1771, Nathaniel Butler.
III. DANIEL[5], see following.
IV. Elisha[5], bap. June 24, 1759, at Wintonbury; m.[8] Sarah (—).
V. Reuben[5], b. at Hartland; bap. May 24, 1767, at Wintonbury; d.[14] April 16, 1775, at East Hartland, aged 8.
VI. Lois[5], bap. May 12, 1776, at Hartland; m.[11] October 19, 1794, Phineas Meacham.

DANIEL[5] BEMAN (*Thomas*[4], *Samuel*[3], *Samuel*[2], *Simon*[1]) was baptized August 29, 1756, at Wintonbury parish, Simsbury,[7] and died, aged sixty, on January 24, 1817, at East Hartland.[14] He married,[14] probably 1777–8 at Granby or Hartland, ABIGAIL[5] ACKLEY "of Granby"[18] [see Ackley, p. 48].

Their home was in East Hartland where, in 1783, he bought and built on, a piece of land a short distance west of his father's house[14] [see map on p. 35]. On February 20, 1785, he and his wife became members of the church there[8] and, in 1789, he was instrumental in getting a road laid out directly from his home to the "center"[14] where the meeting house, store and post office were. This was a great convenience to all of this neighborhood, shortening the distance to the town appreciably.

DANIEL[5] rendered service in the Revolution. The rolls of Hartland men have not been preserved in their entirety, but there is one "Hartland Return" among the "Miscellaneous Documents" containing his name, among others, with the following wording:

"Hartland, Jenuary ye 26th A.D. 1778.
This is to Certify that the above Named was in actual Service in the Year A.D. 1776"

with a note by it saying

"Although this Return is stated to be for service in 1776 it seems probable that that date is an error of the writer for 1775."[19]

On March 7, 1803, he was made guardian of four Moses children, aged five to twelve years,[16] probably orphans* of Abel[6] Moses, whose grandmother was the Hannah (Beaman) Moses[14] mentioned above. The last deed signed by DANIEL[5] was dated January 10, 1815, as guardian to one of these children.[13] He transferred on April 8, 1805, to his son Reuben[6] "one fourth of the house and barn that my father left me by will." About 1816 DANIEL[5] built a new house on his property, which was still standing in 1923 and in good repair.[14] That same year Reuben[6] built a home on this land which his father had deeded to him, near to his uncle Thomas[5]. When the building was about completed, and while the workmen were at the near-by home of DANIEL[5] for dinner, the new house caught fire and burned to the ground, with the carpenters' tools which were lying in it.[14] Later, Reuben[6] built another home and this structure is still [1926] in good repair.[14]

DANIEL[5] was for a long time captain of a local company of State Militia and it is said[14] of him that "he was a very smart man." He died and was buried at East Hartland on January 24, 1817, aged sixty years; and "ABIGAIL, wife of DANIEL BEMAN," died† there May 11, 1805, aged forty-four[8] years, or forty-five[14] years [gravestone].

The known children of DANIEL[5] and ABIGAIL (ACKLEY) BEMAN, undoubtedly all born at East Hartland but in uncertain order, were[14, 18]

I. son[6], b. abt. December, 1778; d. April 17, 1779, aged 4 months.
II. Reuben[6], b. abt. 1780; d. October 30, 1834, aged 54; m. November 1, 1804, Elizabeth[6] Gates (AARON[5], BEZALEEL[4], JOSEPH[3], JOSEPH[2], GEORGE[1]). Settled in Colesville, Broome Co., New York, before 1827. He had bap.[14] at Hartland, June 19, 1814, sons Ackley[7], Daniel[7], Aaron Gates[7] and Reuben[7].
III. Clarissa[6], b. (—); d. December 1, 1784.
IV. RUTH[6], b. June 28, 1784, at East Hartland; d. July 13, 1858, at Colebrook, Connecticut; m. at Hartland, July 25, 1803 or 1804, the Rev. AARON[6] GATES [see Gates, p. 24].

*This would make DANIEL[5] second cousin of his wards' father.

†From the gravestone[22] of ABIGAIL (ACKLEY) BEMAN:

"Dear friends be wise, it's time to know
The fading fate of things below.
O seek the Lord with every breath
And always be prepared for death."

v. Clarissa[6], b. August 10, 1788; m. August 31, 1804 or 1809,[20] Anson McLoud[18] of Hartland, son of Angus and Sarah (Giddings) McLoud of that place, and had at least six children.[20]

REFERENCES

1. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 141–53.
2. Simsbury, Conn., Vital Records, trans. A. C. Bates, 1898, diagram between pp. 8 and 9; pp. 104, 120, 125–6, 144, 152.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 91, 262, 392.
4. History of Simsbury, Granby and Canton, Conn., N. A. Phelps, 1845, p. 153.
5. Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 123, 391.
6. Ibid., III, 1906, 228.

6a. Ibid., III, 186–7, 191, 379, 671.

7. New England Register, LXXI, 78, 157–8, 278, 298; Ibid., LXXII, 29, 38.
8. New England Register, LX, 396; LXI, 31–2, 35.
9. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, pp. 10–4.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IX, 298–9; Ibid., IX, 530; Ibid., X, 37, 98, 194.
11. Early Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1899, IV, 114; V, 1902, pp. 77, 79, 81.
12. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 238–9.
13. Proprietors Records, Hartland, Conn., pp. 82, 127; Hartland Town Records, VII, 266, 268.
14. Manuscript data furnished by D. N. Gaines, Town Clerk, Hartland, Conn.
15. Connecticut Military Record, 1889, pp. 438, 472; Colonial Records of Connecticut, XIV, 338.
16. Moses Genealogy, Z. Moses, 1896, p. 65.
17. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 641.
18. Family Records.
19. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XII, 369.
20. Giddings Family, M. S. Giddings, 1882, p. 135.
21. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, I, 1891, p. 293.
22. *Hartford Daily Courant*, June 22. 1926, D. N. Gaines.
23. Inscriptions on Grave Stones in Northampton and Other Towns, T. Bridgman, 1850, p. 181.

BEAMON (William)

* † [430] WILLIAM BEAMON c.1608–1699	m 1643	LYDIA DANFORTH c.1625–1686
† ‡ [214] JOHN CHAPMAN 1644–c.1712	m 2nd 1677	ELIZABETH BEAMON 1650–1694
† [106] STEPHEN CHALKER 1677–1727	m 1703	ELIZABETH CHAPMAN 1679–c.1738
† [52] LEVI CHAPMAN 1708–by 1771	m 1735	LYDIA CHALKER 1713–aft.1752
† § ♦ [26] LEVI CHAPMAN 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	ELIZABETH HULL 1747–aft.1820
† § [12] JOSHUA SHIPMAN 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	SYBIL CHAPMAN 1768–1828
† § ‖ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
¶ § [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
§ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Salem, Mass.
† Saybrook, Conn.
‡ Haddam, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Salem, Ohio.

BEAMON (William)

WILLIAM[1] BEAMON,* aged twenty-seven, and John Beamon, aged twenty-three, from Bridgenorth,† co. Salop, England, probably brothers, embarked April 15, 1635, on the "Elizabeth," Captain Stagg, master, sailing from London to New England.[1, 2] Before leaving their home they took the oath of allegiance to the King and to the Church of England before[1, 3] "Sr Wm Whitimor" and "Sr Nicho Ranton," magistrates of Bridgenorth.†

The English government desired to build up a colony of monarchists and adherents of the Church of England in the new world and to that end they required that all emigrants should take this oath of allegiance before a

*Spelled "Beamond" when they took the oath in England but found in New England with such a variety of spelling, including "Beaumont," that all variations will be arbitrarily ignored herein.

†Extensive search has been made to establish the place of residence of the magistrates,[1] "Sr Wm Whitimor" and "Sr Nicho Ranton" [sometimes called Miles Runton], since that would also have been the residence of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON. These officials were finally found to have lived at Bridgenorth, co. Salop, in the west of England. The first reading of the records, which are nearly illegible, failed to show these names but a second reading made by "a noted archeologist of that county who has transcribed forty volumes of the early county records for the Archeological Society of Shropshire,"[3] discovered them. He found no Beamons mentioned in the parish records there, so WILLIAM[1] was evidently transiently employed in that locality and quite surely not born there. This antiquarian believes that the Beamon name originated in the vicinity of Bowman's Hill, in the western part of co. Salop, in the parish of Cardington and near Church Stretton. He is also of the opinion that the name itself was probably a contraction of "Bowman" and earlier of the Norman name "Beaumont"[3] which latter spelling was frequently used by members of the family of WILLIAM[1]. There is a tradition, published,[4, 4a] that WILLIAM[1] was a native of Carlisle, co. Cumberland, on the border of Scotland, but that seems[3] improbable for several reasons: the name Beamon is not found in the parish records of that county; WILLIAM[1] was certainly of Bridgenorth in 1635 when he took the oath of allegiance, and that town is one hundred and seventy miles distant [air line] from Carlisle; in that day there were few good roads in England except those leading to the large cities, and cross country removals of any distance were not common; finally, the only counties in England in which this antiquarian[3] found Beamons recorded were Stafford, Salop, as stated, and York. WILLIAM[1] may very likely belong to the family of co. York, for the Beamons of that county intermarried with the Saltonstall family[3, 5, 6] of which Sir Richard Saltonstall, of Old and New England, was a member, and Sir Richard's name was repeatedly associated in this country with that of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON. Sir Richard was born in 1586 at Halifax, co. York; his son, Richard Saltonstall, Jr., of Ipswich, Massachusetts, was born in 1610, at Woodsome, co. York, and Sir Richard was for a time a Justice of the Peace in the West Riding of Yorkshire. It was his maternal aunt, Elizabeth Ramsden, who married in 1571, Edward Beamond of Whitley Beaumont, and had an only son Richard Beaumont, who was first cousin to Sir Richard Saltonstall and was remembered in the will of Sir Richard's father.[6, 8] This all suggests co. York as the probable origin of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON [see NOTE following this chapter].

magistrate of their own parish or should be examined before sailing by the rector of the Church of England at Gravesend, the port of London. Lacking this oath they were refused permission to embark, though of course many stole away secretly.

After his arrival in New England, WILLIAM[1] BEAMON was for a time a resident of Salem, Massachusetts, being definitely recorded there[7,9] in 1637.

Several stories connecting his name with the Saltonstall family seem worthy of mention since they supply clues which may be of assistance to some student in establishing further facts about this family. Tradition says that WILLIAM[1] came to New England in the capacity of tailor to Sir Richard Saltonstall. That statement may have been true as pertaining to Sir Richard's son, Richard, Jr., who was resident here in 1635, but could not have been true of the father who was in New England only from 1630 to 1631, while WILLIAM[1] BEAMON did not emigrate until 1635. The statement is also made that WILLIAM[1] BEAMON was a member of the party which Sir Richard Saltonstall sent over [see NOTE following this chapter] in 1635 to settle Connecticut, an indeterminate territory to which he and others had received a grant in 1632. Some of this party [failing to get the lands at Windsor which they desired and felt that they had the right to], with others whom Saltonstall and his associates sent over later, started the settlement at the mouth of the Connecticut River at Saybrook. In this story also, somewhat of error is seen for WILLIAM[1] did not come over on Saltonstall's boat and, indeed, since he was counted a resident of Salem, Massachusetts, in 1637, he could not even have been among the earliest residents at Saybrook, Connecticut, which was begun in November, 1635. He must have arrived at Saybrook soon after 1637, however, for he is accounted one of the "early settlers" and indeed he may have gone there on Saltonstall's account. At least the repeated linking of their names is suggestive of association even though the details are in error. One fact is found which definitely shows that WILLIAM[1] BEAMON either had direct business dealings with Saltonstall or was at least cognizant of his affairs for, on July 25, 1644, WILLIAM[1] deposed in court[9] relative to an account owing to or owed by Sir Richard.

WILLIAM[1] was made a freeman of Connecticut on May 20, 1652; he was listed as one of the freemen who lived at Saybrook[14] on October 4, 1669, and sold land in Lyme to John Tilleston in 1673. He obtained no prominence in public affairs and left but one son to carry on the name. "LYDIA BEAMONT,"

undoubtedly his wife,[2] received a gift of two thousand acres by the will* of Joshua Uncas, the Indian Sachem, in 1675, being the only woman so honored.[15] Seven of our ancestors were beneficiaries of this testament.

WILLIAM[1] BEAMON was married[10] on December 9, 1643, to "LYDIA DANFORD" [see Danforth, p. 281], whom he probably met while he was living in Massachusetts since her family resided at Cambridge, or he may have sailed on some coastwise vessel and have made her acquaintance as a consequence. An original record book of Saybrook devoted a page to the family of each early settler and the Beamon page appears as though it might have been written by WILLIAM[1] himself. It contains both the grants of land which he received and the record of his family, but the poor writing has caused a shadow of doubt[11] in some minds as to the identity of his wife. However, other evidence,[4a, 12] including the naming of a grandson of theirs "Danforth," and a statement accredited to the Reverend Eliphalet Adams [who was born 1677 and died 1753, while LYDIA (DANFORTH) BEAMON herself did not die until 1686 and her husband WILLIAM[1] lived until 1699], who married their granddaughter, Lydia Pygan, establishes beyond reasonable doubt the fact that the wife of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON was LYDIA[2] DANFORTH (NICHOLAS[1]). Their daughter, Lydia[2], was the first female child born in Saybrook. The son, Samuel[2], received a deed of one-half of his father's lands after attaining his majority.[11]

The children of WILLIAM[1] and LYDIA (DANFORTH) BEAMON, all born at Saybrook, were[2, 10, 11, 12]†

I. Lydia[2], b. March 9, 1644–5; d. July 20, 1734; m. 1st, February 3, 1667–8, Samuel Boyes; m. 2nd, as his second wife, April 15, 1684, Alexander Pygan.
II. Mary[2], b. November 12, 1647; m. at Saybrook, January 3, 1671–2, John Tully.
III. ELIZABETH[2], b. March 2, 1649–50; d. October 30, 1694, prob. at East Haddam.[2] She m. at Saybrook, as his second wife,[10, 16] on March 26, 1677, JOHN[2] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 190].
IV. Deborah[2], b. November 29, 1652; d. June 17, 1683; m., September 27, 1681, Thomas Gilbert.
V. Abigail[2], b. February 20, 1654–5; d. September 29, 1683, at Saybrook.

* The original document cannot be found but a copy of it filed in Hartford, Connecticut, made and certified on May 26, 1679, by John Tully [who married Mary[2] Beamon] shows the impossible date on this instrument of February 29, 1675, as does also the published copy.[15] The latter erroneously makes "Lydia Beamond" read "Lydia Raymond."

† May they perhaps have had also a daughter Sarah? This is the only family of Beamons at that time in Saybrook and[18] Sarah Beamont, b. abt. 1661; d. October 11, 1716, aged 55; m., May 2, 1688, as his first wife, Nathaniel[2] Pratt (WILLIAM[1]). If she did not belong to the family of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON it seems likely that she emigrated from England.

vi. Samuel[2], b. February 28, 1656–7; d. November, 1747, at Saybrook;[17] m. Hester Buckingham (Rev. Thomas).

vii. Rebecca[2], b. September 7, 1659; said to have d.[19] April 3, 1742; m. at Saybrook,[10] December 17, 1684, John[3] Clarke, son of John[2] and Rebecca (Porter or Parker) Clarke and grandson of our JOHN[1] CLARKE, of Saybrook. They had a grandson named "Danforth Clark."

NOTE

Sir Richard Saltonstall was the first-named associate of the six original patentees of Massachusetts and later he was a patentee of Connecticut. He came over in 1630 with five of his six children and with John Winthrop, Sr., his friend.[5, 6, 8] He was one of the first assistants to the Governor in Massachusetts Bay Colony, but his daughter's ill health made it necessary for him to return with his children to England. His interest in and helpful influence toward New England was consistently and continuously shown.

In 1631–2 he, with Lord Saye and Sele, Lord Brooke and others, acquired a grant of land south of Massachusetts, rather indefinitely described, pertaining, however, to Connecticut territory, and, in 1635, they planned a settlement there. Sir Richard, as prime mover in the matter, outfitted a vessel at a cost of about £1000, placed on it twenty workmen with supplies and sent them across the ocean to settle the land and build houses for such of the patentees as might care to follow. These men landed at Boston on June 16, 1635, and, after a ten days' delay, proceeded to the Connecticut. On arrival they found in addition to the Plymouth people who had long been resident there, that two groups from Massachusetts had lately arrived and that the one made up of men from Dorchester claimed the very place Saltonstall's men had expected to settle [see Grant, p. 375, and Olmstead, p. 612]. These men who came over for Sir Richard were known as the Stiles party from the fact that several of them were of the Stiles family. The principal cause of the misunderstandings and controversial land claims was twofold: the general lack of knowledge of the geography and topography of the land granted and a consequent indefiniteness or inaccuracy of description, and also the old theory that possession is nine points of the law. In this case the Dorchester people, seeing that the Plymouth group were going to lose their cherished meadow in any event, for the Stiles party would take it if they did not do so, acted promptly for their own advantage, whether justly or not. They assigned a small plot to the Stiles party on which they might build a house and store their goods. This was immediately done and the vessel started back to England to report to Saltonstall and to receive further instructions; but a storm wrecked the vessel on Sable Island, though the men on it were saved and eventually reached home. When Sir Richard Saltonstall learned what had occurred he felt aggrieved and injured and wrote to New England, though courteously, of his financial loss and disappointment and added a criticism of "Mr. Ludlowe & others of Dorchester" for the "abuse and injurie" they had done him.[8, 13]

After having dispatched the vessel mentioned above to New England in the spring of 1635, Saltonstall and his associates opened negotiations with John Winthrop, Jr., son of Sir Richard's personal friend, Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts, to proceed to Connecticut, to build a fort and town for them at the mouth of the river and to act as governor of their property and interests there for the coming year. His commission was signed July 18, 1635, and he at once set out from England with a vessel filled with ammunition, ordnance and supplies, a number of workmen and with £2000 to defray the expenses of building. On his arrival at Boston in October, 1635, he learned of the conflicting claims to the lands on the Connecticut River and also that the Dutch were planning to take the site at the mouth of the river which he had been instructed to fortify. He hurriedly dispatched on November 9 about twenty men with provisions to hold the position and they had been on the ground but a few days when the Dutch appeared, but the moral effect of two mounted cannon dissuaded the latter from landing. Very soon there arrived Lion Gardiner from England to direct the building operations, and unexpectedly by December 3 or 4 there appeared also a group of half starved men, women and children from the hastily undertaken settlements up the river at Windsor and Hartford. These people expected to find at the mouth of the river the vessels on which they had shipped their goods and supplies from Boston; these vessels had been wrecked on Brown's Island near the Gurnet's Nose [where the Plymouth people whose meadow they had usurped at Windsor had carefully gathered, washed and dried for the owners the goods washed ashore], and the people themselves would have died without the assistance of food and shelter from the Saybrook men [whose employer, Sir Richard Saltonstall, they had forestalled if not injured]. Thus a forgiving spirit and kindness in return for injury were twice shown to these people of the Connecticut River towns. They were fortunate in finding a vessel at Saybrook on which they could at once take passage for Boston.

The Saybrook settlement grew but slowly and all too little of record remains to us, of this town where lived our ancestors of the Chapman, Chalker, Bushnell, Clarke, Pratt, Shipman, Kirtland and Beamon families.

The only one of the patentees who came over to live in Saybrook was George Fenwick and, in 1644, he ceded the fort and surrounding property to the Connecticut Colony. In 1647 the first fort was burned and, in the following year, a new one was built close to the river, and it was the structure of which Governor Andros demanded the surrender on July 8, 1675 [see Chapman, p. 187]. The original settlement on Saybrook Point, a promontory extending eastward into the river from the west bank [see map on p. 195], was surrounded by water on three sides and a stockade was built across the narrow neck. It was the first town in the colony to possess a fort and hope of success in trade and commerce seems to have been the moving spirit of its existence, while the river towns to the north were apparently moved by political convictions, and New Haven to the west by religious enthusiasm, though all three partook in some degree of each of these impulses as the cause of their being.[13]

REFERENCES

1. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Series 3, VIII, 259; New England Register, XIV, 310; Founders of New England, S. G. Drake, 1865, p. 24; Hotten's Emigrant Lists, 1880, I, 60.
2. Savage, I, 147, 361, 396.
3. The Beamon and Clark Genealogy, Emily Beaman Wooden, 1909, pp. 11–3.
4. New England Register, III, 158.

4a. Whittlesey Genealogy, C. B. Whittlesey, 1898, pp. 61–2.

5. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 969–70.
6. New England Register, XXXIII, 227–8.
7. Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 167.
8. History of Watertown, Mass., H. Bond, 1860, p. 415; Appleton's Encyclopedia, V, 379–80.
9. Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900, p. 41.
10. New England Register, IV, 20–2.
11. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, pp. 11–2.
12. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Series 4, I, 29–30, 50; New England Weekly Journal, 1734; History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, p. 341; Genealogy of the Redfield Family, J. H. Redfield, 1860, p. 11.
13. History of New England, J. Winthrop, 1790, pp. 83, 88–91; History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1898, I, 6, 38–40, 424–6; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 442, 459–60; History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 43–9; 250th Anniversary of the Settlement of Saybrook, 1886, pp. 10–4.
14. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 231; II, 523; Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 188.
15. New England Register, XIII, 235; Connecticut Colony Records of Deeds, D. 130–1.
16. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 38–9.
17. Buckingham Genealogy, J. Buckingham, 1892, p. 17; Porter Genealogy, H. P. Andrews, 1893, I, 40; Doty-Doten Family, E. A. Doty, 1897, pp. 38–9.
18. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, p. 287.
19. Colonial Families of the United States, G. N. Mackenzie, 1914, IV, 95; 1917, VI, 158.

BLISS

THOMAS[1] BLISS,* with his wife† MARGARET and his family, embarked, it is said,[5] at Plymouth, England, for New England, probably about 1635. He was a resident of Braintree in Massachusetts Bay Colony before February 24, 1639–40, for on that day he received there a tract[1] of land thirty-six acres in extent at three shillings per acre on the basis of a family of nine. His residence there must have terminated about that time for in that very month he was recorded in Hartford, Connecticut, as owning several pieces of land, on one of which he built his home.[2] However, he was not counted as one of the original proprietors of Hartford, but was among "Such Inhabitance as were Granted lotts to haue onely at the Townes Courtesie wth liberty to fetch wood & keepe swine or Cowes By proportion on the Common."[2] In spite of this limitation he was honored by having his name on the "Founders' Monument"[7] along with seven other of our ancestors.

His family came with him to Hartford where his home lot [see map on p. 613] was numbered[5] fifty-eight and that of his son, Thomas[2], adjoined and was numbered fifty-nine. Several members of the family removed to different localities; ANN[2] married ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and resided at Saybrook, down the Connecticut River to the south; Thomas[2] also settled there, while Nathaniel[2] and MARY[2] settled in Springfield, Massachusetts, up the river to the north.

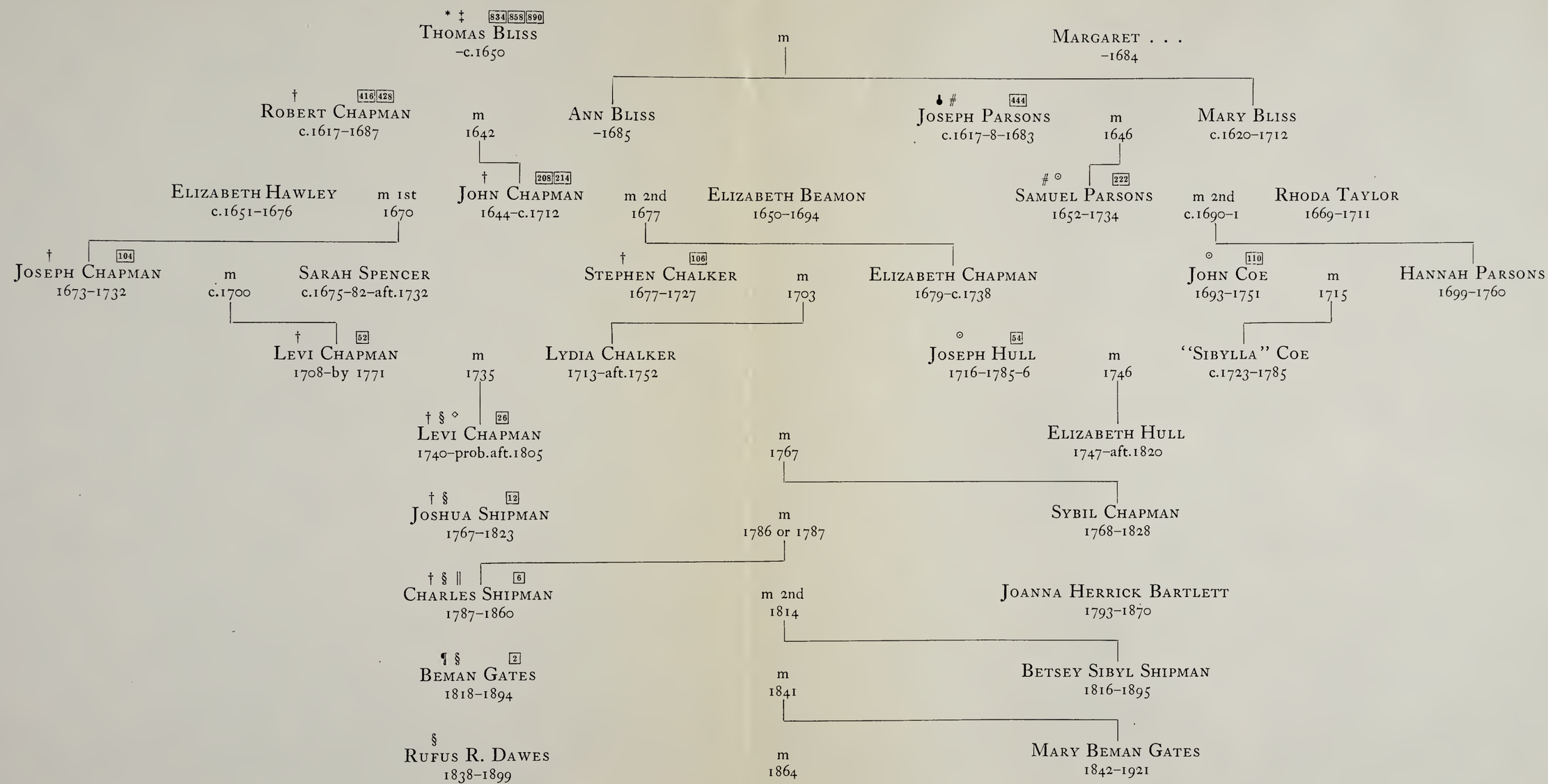
No evidence of participation of THOMAS[1] in public life is found. One of his name [probably he] was fined[6] two shillings sixpence on March 4, 1646, "for not trayneing." The date of his death‡ has not been found but it antedated

*He is called a brother[4, 5] of George Bliss of Newport, Rhode Island, and as brothers, they are assigned different parents and differing places of birth by two compilers[4, 5] whose works may be consulted by those interested in weighing the merits of their several claims but the weight of evidence seems to show that THOMAS[1] was born 1580–90 at Daventry, Northamptonshire, England, and resided, before emigration, at Preston Capes.[4]

†She is given the maiden name of "Ford" in one publication[11] which, however, attempts no proof and is probably wrong; she is given the name of "Lawrence" in others[5, 16b] which is more likely to be true since one of her sons carried that name.

‡It has been erroneously[5] assigned to 1640; he received land grants on March 3, 1640, and in 1641 and was mentioned as living[6] on December 6, 1642; it must have occurred before March 14, 1649–50, for under that date a piece of land belonging to Thomas Graves of Hartford is described[2] as "Abutting on the widow BLESES Land."

BLISS



* Braintree, Mass. † Saybrook, Conn. ‡ Hartford, Conn. § Marietta, Ohio. ‖ Athens, Ohio. ¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass. ♦ Springfield, Mass. ♦ East Haddam, Conn. # Northampton, Mass. ⊙ Durham, Conn. ◇ Salem, Ohio.

BLISS

THOMAS[1] BLISS,* with his wife† MARGARET and his family, embarked, it is said,[5] at Plymouth, England, for New England, probably about 1635. He was a resident of Braintree in Massachusetts Bay Colony before February 24, 1639–40, for on that day he received there a tract[1] of land thirty-six acres in extent at three shillings per acre on the basis of a family of nine. His residence there must have terminated about that time for in that very month he was recorded in Hartford, Connecticut, as owning several pieces of land, on one of which he built his home.[2] However, he was not counted as one of the original proprietors of Hartford, but was among "Such Inhabitance as were Granted lotts to haue onely at the Townes Courtesie wth liberty to fetch wood & keepe swine or Cowes By proportion on the Common."[2] In spite of this limitation he was honored by having his name on the "Founders' Monument"[7] along with seven other of our ancestors.

His family came with him to Hartford where his home lot [see map on p. 613] was numbered[5] fifty-eight and that of his son, Thomas[2], adjoined and was numbered fifty-nine. Several members of the family removed to different localities; ANN[2] married ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and resided at Saybrook, down the Connecticut River to the south; Thomas[2] also settled there, while Nathaniel[2] and MARY[2] settled in Springfield, Massachusetts, up the river to the north.

No evidence of participation of THOMAS[1] in public life is found. One of his name [probably he] was fined[6] two shillings sixpence on March 4, 1646, "for not trayneing." The date of his death‡ has not been found but it antedated

*He is called a brother[4, 5] of George Bliss of Newport, Rhode Island, and as brothers, they are assigned different parents and differing places of birth by two compilers[4, 5] whose works may be consulted by those interested in weighing the merits of their several claims but the weight of evidence seems to show that THOMAS[1] was born 1580–90 at Daventry, Northamptonshire, England, and resided, before emigration, at Preston Capes.[4]

†She is given the maiden name of "Ford" in one publication[11] which, however, attempts no proof and is probably wrong; she is given the name of "Lawrence" in others[5, 16b] which is more likely to be true since one of her sons carried that name.

‡It has been erroneously[5] assigned to 1640; he received land grants on March 3, 1640, and in 1641 and was mentioned as living[6] on December 6, 1642; it must have occurred before March 14, 1649–50, for under that date a piece of land belonging to Thomas Graves of Hartford is described[2] as "Abutting on the widow BLESES Land."

February 14, 1650, when his inventory* totaling £86–12–08 was taken[4, 6] and when three persons, including his daughter, MARY (BLISS) PARSONS, of Springfield, testified to his deathbed statement that he desired that her mother, his wife, should have the entire estate during her life. The court, six days later, granted that this disposal of the estate should be carried out and stipulated that the widow should educate the younger children and divide the property remaining at her death, among the children then unmarried in the proportions which she felt they deserved.[6, 8] This presupposes that the four who were already married had received their portions when they left home. However, a proviso was added, apparently at the suggestion of the widow, that the distribution should be as stated unless "the Elder Children Can giue Just grounds and reasons that they should come in with the younger Children for a proportion of the estate."[6]

On July 16, 1650, Nathaniel[2], of Springfield, evidently on the point of visiting his sick mother, purchased[6] at the Pynchon store in his home town "for goody BLISS at hartford 1 vomit [purge?] & 5 pills 0.1.10."

The widow MARGARET was still resident at Hartford on March 7, 1650–1, when she sued a neighbor for unlawfully detaining her cow and for selling it. The court ruled that the offending man should pay[4, 6] her £6.5s. She removed evidently soon after that, with her younger children, to Springfield, Massachusetts, where two members of her family already lived, but by so doing she separated herself more completely from ANN[2] and Thomas[2] who were in Saybrook. On January 22, 1651, the "Widdow BLISS" received a grant of meadow land[6] at Springfield. She had sold[2] at least six pieces of land in Hartford and in her new home town she acquired by grant and by purchase from Thomas Thomson various tracts[6, 14] including a seven acre home lot which lay next to that of her son-in-law, JOSEPH[1] PARSONS. By December, 1652, she had opened an account at the Pynchon store. On March 26, 1661, she made complaint to the Hampshire County Court of damage sustained by her by reason of the passage of water to the mill.[6]

A reminder to us of the present time of what was a daily sight to our early colonial ancestors, namely, the passing of Indians to and fro, is contained in a

*It included such items as[4, 6]

"It: One bedstead with 2 featherbeds vppon it with sheets and Blankitts
It: 2 old bibles
It: one beare vessel and old tubbs
It: 1 Chaire and 2 old stooles
It: 1 Charne, 1 buckett & 2 payles."

record of about 1665 when "Widdy BLISS hath granted unto her soe much of the pond as is at ye end of her lott in Long Meddow: provided ye Indians be not molested in comeing to or gathering of their pease:"[6] In May, 1678, and September, 1680, she and other land owners on the west side of the river were fined for defects in their fences.[14]

During her life in Springfield, the widow MARGARET had a very trying experience. Her daughter, MARY (BLISS) PARSONS, who had then removed to Northampton, was accused of being a witch. This first occurred about 1656 when MARY had incurred the displeasure and even enmity of some neighbors who retaliated by making that charge against her. Her mother, MARGARET, "lost no time in interviewing the author of these stories" who defiantly "told her to her face that she did hear that her daughter was suspected to be a witch" and even went on to furnish certain details.[10] After much trouble the matter quieted down but sprang up again with renewed fury in 1674 and, in this instance, MARY was brought to trial at Springfield and also before the Governor at Boston, being held in prison from March 2, 1675, until the following May, when she was acquitted at a jury trial.[9]

It is evident that the widow MARGARET was unusually capable and forceful. She was a very efficient business woman for during her widowhood of about thirty-four years she increased the £86 estate her husband left her to £278, which she left to her family, in addition to educating and outfitting at their marriage, six of her seven younger children. Her account at the Pynchon store continued[6] until July, 1682, and it seems probable that she kept up her own home or at least attended to business until that time. Her business capacity is doubly stressed by the fact that all too many who had accounts with the Pynchons eventually lost their lands to them in settlement of those accounts. She made her will on June 25, 1684, and died on August 28 following.[6] The document contained bequests to such of the seven* younger children as were then living, to the children of those who had died and, in addition, gave one-half of her clothing and household goods "to my daughter PARSONS."[4, 6] This fact taken in connection with the added one that her possession of the estate of THOMAS[1] BLISS rested largely on the testimony of this same daughter PARSONS to the effect that her father desired that "her mother should haue it"[6] seems to furnish fair evidence that MARGARET was the mother of the elder as well as the younger children.

The children of THOMAS[1] BLISS and, most if not all of them, by his wife

*Mentioned by the court in connection with the settlement of her husband's estate.

MARGARET [Lawrence?], born in unknown order, most of them in England, through two of whom we descend, were[3, 4, 5, 6, 12, 16a]

I. ANN[2], b. in England; d. at Saybrook,[13, 16] Connecticut, November 20, 1685; m., it is said,[13] at Saybrook, April 29, 1642, ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 189].

II. MARY[2], b. in England abt.[9] 1620; d. at Springfield, Massachusetts, January 29, 1712; m., prob. at Hartford, Connecticut, November 26, 1646, JOSEPH[1] PARSONS [see Parsons, p. 626].

III. Thomas[2], b. in England, perhaps 1615–8; d. at Norwich, Connecticut, April 15, 1688; m. at Hartford or Saybrook[13] at the "latter end of October 1644," Elizabeth (—) and lived in Saybrook and Norwich, Connecticut.

IV. Nathaniel[2], b.[16b] 1621 in England; d. November 18, 1654, at Springfield, Massachusetts; m. there, November 20, 1646, Catharine Chapin (Samuel).

V. Lawrence[2], b. in England; d. 1676 at Springfield, Massachusetts; m. October 25, 1654, Lydia Wright (Samuel).

VI. Samuel[2], b. abt.[12] 1624 in England; d. at Springfield, Massachusetts, March 23, 1720, aged 96; m. there November 10, 1665, Mary Leonard (John).

VII. Hester[2],* b. doubtless in England; d. June 12, 1683, in Springfield, Massachusetts;[16d] m. there December 26, 1661, as his first wife, Edward Foster.

VIII. Sarah[2], b., it is said,[12] at Braintree 1635–6; d.[16e] September 27, 1705, prob. at Springfield; m. 1st there, July 20, 1659, John Scott; m. 2nd, at that place, November 19, 1690, Samuel Terry.

IX. Elizabeth[2], b., it is said,[12] at Braintree about 1637; d. prob. before her mother for her only son received a bequest in his grandmother's will; m. at Springfield, February 15, 1669–70, as his second wife, Miles Morgan.

X. John[2], b., it is said,[5, 16c] about 1640 in Hartford, Connecticut; d. September 10, 1702, at Springfield; m. there, October 7, 1667, Patience Burt (Henry).

XI. Hannah[2], b., it is said,[12] at Hartford, Connecticut; d. at Springfield, January 25, 1660, unm.

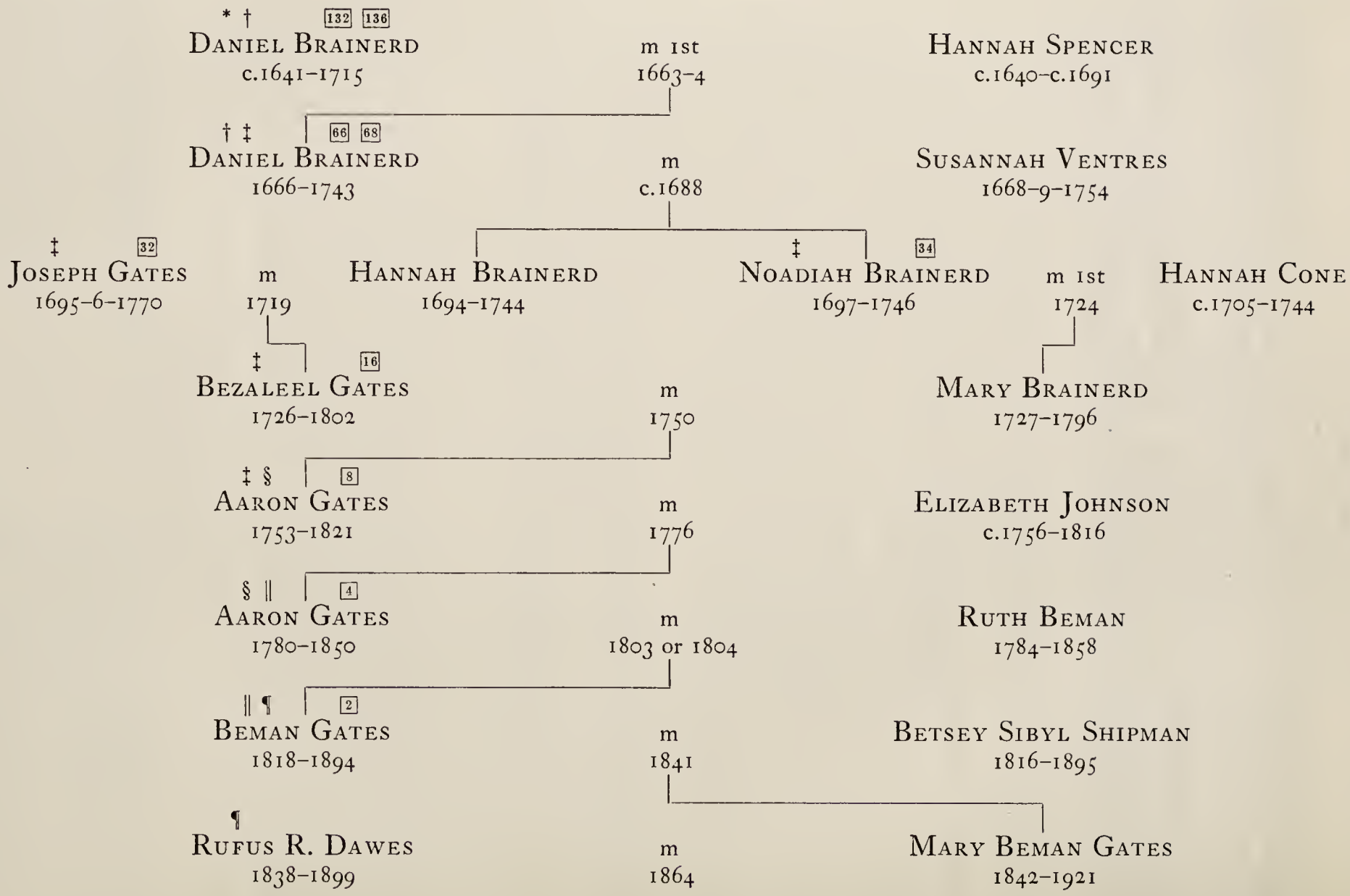
* Some students[5] have doubted that Hester[2] belonged to this family but the fact that the court listed her to receive a share of the estate of THOMAS[1] is conclusive. However, she apparently remained with relatives in England for many years after her parents' removal to the colony and she had evidently arrived in Boston in the fall of 1658. At that town she agreed with John Pynchon, of Springfield [where her mother then lived], to serve him for one year for £4, beginning that service on November 1, 1658, and he paid half of that sum to the "pinnace master" on her account.[2] Indeed it is said that Pynchon had arranged with her before emigration to work in his family for a time. Mary Ely, a neighbor of theirs, reported that Francis Hacklinton had carried on a flirtation with Hester[2] Bliss and, in July, 1660, that man sued the gossip for slander.[2] The man whom Hester[2] presently married was also employed[5] by John Pynchon.[15]

REFERENCES

1. Boston Record Commissioners' Report, II, pt. 1, 50; History of Old Braintree, W. S. Pattee, 1878, p. 28.
2. Savage, I, 201–2; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, pp. xvii, 241, 251, 256, 258, 285, 411, 413, 415, 449, 501, 607.
3. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 253–4, 258, 540.
4. The Bliss Book, C. A. Hoppin, 1913, pp. 131, 133, 136–7, 141, 146, 148–50, 171–6.
5. The Bliss Family, J. H. Bliss, 1881, pp. 16–31.
6. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, II, pp. 1–9.
7. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.
8. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, p. 98.

9. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, 1912, I, 40, 43–9.
10. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 44, 99, 228–9 et seq.
11. Worcester, Mass., Society of Antiquity, XX, 46.
12. History of Springfield, Mass., H. M. Burt, 1899, II, 530–4.
13. New England Register, IV, 20–1.
14. History of Springfield, Mass., H. M. Burt, 1898, I, 220, 241, 290, 420, 431.
15. Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society, 1881, p. 127.
16. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 37.
16a. History of Norwich, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1874, p. 167.
16b. Chapin Book, G. W. Chapin, 1924, I, p. 4.
16c. Henry Burt Family, H. M. & S. W. Burt, 1893, pp. 257–8.
16d. Foster Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1899, p. 59.
16e. Terry Families, S. Terry, 1887, p. 6.

BRAINERD



* Hartford, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

BRAINERD

DANIEL[1] BRAINERD was born near the year 1641, perhaps in Braintree, co. Essex, England, and is said to have been decoyed away from his home and brought to New England as a young child.[1] Certain old manuscripts, still extant and deposited with the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester, Massachusetts, written by a grandson of the emigrant and other early members of the family, give facts and legends relative to his origin and, while no documentary evidence has been found to prove some of the statements, neither have they been disproved.[1] One of these stories states, in part, that "DANIEL BRAINERD, who by the best account was stolen from his native town, Braintree, in the county of Essex, on the Island of great Britain, about eight years of age,—Being brought to America, landed up Connecticut at Hartford, was sold for his passage to Mr. Wadsworth, farmer in said town." The conditions of his service were "To be learned to read and write and at the time of his freedom, twenty one years old, two suits of clothes." After reaching the age of twenty-one he continued his work on this farm for one or two years, doubtless for wages, but in or about 1661 he purchased a proprietor's right of land in the new town of Haddam, twenty-five miles down the river from Hartford and upon the same side of the stream [see map on p. 773].

"It is said that his name was really Brainwood and that his family in England owned and employed two spring looms, likewise that his mother at his emigration was a widow, and by a certain letter sent him by her, she later married a Mr. Grey."

The statement is also found, though unconfirmed, that it was in the Wyllys family of Hartford rather than the Wadsworth family that DANIEL[1] grew to manhood and that the letter from his mother who signed her name "Brainwood" was received after he became an adult and settled at Haddam.[1, 2]

He was one of the twenty-eight young men, mostly from Hartford, who became the original proprietors of Haddam in the summer of 1662. These pioneers grouped themselves on the rising ground now known as Walkeley Hill lying

between the present villages of Haddam and Higganum. It is stated that his first habitation was a sort of dug-out under a bank, the remains of which were visible[1] in 1807. This was a temporary method of meeting their housing necessity and of quicker result than it would have been to fell trees and build more permanently of logs.

It would be hard for our minds to comprehend a fraction of the inconveniences, strenuous necessities and overwhelming hardships endured by those early pioneers as they struck out into a new country. Their experiences must have often rivalled our childhood tale of Robinson Crusoe, for their older settlements were scantily enough provided with tools, household equipment and supplies, that but little could be spared to outfit new expeditions, regardless of the ability of the individuals to purchase such. Then also the lack of easy transportation was an almost insurmountable obstacle to the conveyance of any great stock of implements or supplies. Having laboriously arrived at their destination they would lack even shelter from storm for their bodies, their clothing or their meager stock of food until, by their own hands, they could fashion a refuge. Until ground was cleared and crops planted and gathered, their little store, supplemented by fish or game, must have been carefully hoarded in order that life itself might be maintained. No commodity which was exhausted could be replaced, no building supplies or clothing could be bought, in case of sickness neither drugs nor doctor were obtainable and every neighbor was as hampered as the other. Verily it took courage to face such conditions and bravery of a high order to "carry on." To the inheritance of these traits from our emigrant ancestors we may credit whatever of industry, resolution, perseverance and self-mastery their descendants have shown.

The comparative location of the home lot of DANIEL[1] BRAINERD to those of our other local ancestral families of Ackley, Clarke, Cone, Gates, Spencer [father and son] and Ventres is made evident by the map of Haddam [on p. 773].

In October, 1668, these settlers were invested with town privileges, but not until February 11, 1686, did they receive patents for the lands previously granted to them. The settlement was confined to the western side of the river for some years but probably about 1670 a movement began by some of the families to the eastern bank which eventually created East Haddam. Included in this group were DANIEL[2] and Joshua[2], though DANIEL[1] himself remained in his old home on the west side of the stream. At first the Haddam people held most of their lands in common [see Gates, p. 11], assigning to each only a

homestead and a few other small tracts. Beginning in 1671 the common lands were gradually subdivided to the individuals and, in the first apportionment, DANIEL[1] drew the privilege of making fifth choice,[4] as to where his share should lie. In the "macha moodus meadows diuision" on June 2, 1688, "DANNEL BRANER S[r]" was granted a portion on the basis of an "estat" of £76:10 and evidently acted as agent for two other men, for lots 21 and 22 were listed to "BRANER for luxford" and to "BRANER for Tho Smith."[5]

Since DANIEL[1] and his children after him were closely associated with the church a consideration of its part in the common life will be pertinent to a study of these ancestors themselves.

As early as 1668 Haddam enjoyed preaching by the Reverend Nicholas Noyes who was just out of college. They agreed to give him "for one yeare Forty Pound and the use of the minester's Lote," and to pay it "one half in wheat and Pease, and the other half in Porke and indian Corne, to be payd in equall proportion upon this condishon, Mr. Noyes doth ingage to perform the worke of the minestry with vs for a yeare, exsept more than ordanary falle out that God by his Prouedence hinder by sickness, which we shall Looke at as noe hindrance." The next year they voted that the salary should be paid in "the same speaseah as the first yeares, and at springe and falle." This suggests a rather limited fare for the minister's family and certainly no luxuries. In 1670 he had become a freeman and was "admitted in to the toune an inhabytant upon the minestre's Lote, and in case he see cose to continooe too yeare more in the worke of the minestry with us, that then the Lote shall be his, with all the aportynansis thear to belonging." One qualification is found relative to the payment of his salary in produce, that in case any one could not pay according to the agreement, that they were to "satisfi' him to rational content." The town desired him to settle with them permanently as is evidenced particularly on August 16, 1681, when "The toune, by uoate grantes to M[r] Noyes for his incorridgment and settelling with us," in addition to the earlier compensation, twenty pounds in work and his firewood yearly, and if he should settle "and stand in ned of more maintynance, we shall be willing to do our utmost, if it shall please God in his Good prouidence to inabell us to giue it to him."[6, 18a] For some reason Mr. Noyes left the place in 1682 and because of his failure to have been installed, even the period of his service was hampered by his inability to perform all the rites of the church. An evidence of this is noted in the fact that several, if not all, of the children of DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, as well as of other families, were taken to Middletown eight miles away for baptism.[1] The

customary mode of early travel was on horseback along an Indian trail which had become a bridle path, with the father in the saddle, the mother on a pillion and her child in her arms.[1] Apparently DANIEL[1] did not possess church membership at this time for his children were baptized in the right of their mother who still retained her affiliation with the church of her native town, Lynn, Massachusetts, as the Middletown records specify. Similarly the children of DANIEL[1] CONE were baptized there in the right of their mother who also retained her membership at Lynn.[7]

DANIEL[1] BRAINERD became a deacon of Haddam Church at an unknown date and retained that position until his death. Many of his descendants held similar offices in this and the nearby churches for of the twenty-seven deacons of the First Congregational Church of Haddam down to 1902, nine were Brainerds[18a] and, in addition, at least DANIEL[2] and his son NOADIAH[3] held similar positions in East Haddam, so that this family, as well as that of Gates, has earned the distinction of being called "a family of Deacons."

At that early period the catechism was regularly taught the children of Haddam on the Lord's Day. In 1705 the law of the town required that every male between the ages of sixteen and sixty should cut wood one day of each year for the minister and it was planned that he should receive eighty loads by November 10th of the year.[4]

"The answers to some inquiries from England in 1680 are full of interest as to the state of affairs, civil and religious, during these formative years of our history. 'Our people in this colony,' says the report, 'are some strict Congregational men, others more large Congregational men, and some moderate Presbyterians; and take the Congregational men of both sorts, they are the greatest part of the people of the colony. There are four or five Seven-day men in our colony, and about as many more Quakers.'" The reply to one of these questions shows "how closely the civil government watched over the religious interests of the people: 'Great care is taken for the instruction of the people in the Christian religion, by ministers catechising of them and preaching to them twice every Sabbath day, and sometimes on Lecture days; and so by masters of families instructing and catechising their children and servants, being so required to do by law.' Nor can we fail to observe that the emphasis of pastoral obligation rested on religious teaching and training. The fathers enthroned religion in the family, the town and the state."[18a]

During the period 1691–1715 the Reverend Jeremiah Hobart was pastor of Haddam and it was for his home that THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD was to make

the nails in return for twenty acres of land at Moodus [see map on p. 195]. The Reverend Jeremiah did not get along harmoniously with the people and recourse was had to the General Court on occasion and in one such instance DANIEL[1] BRAINERD was chairman of a committee sent to that body.[8] The report of these differences was written in the first book of town records and some erratic whim caused the reverend gentleman to tear out a page of these minutes. Following the missing leaf is this curious self-explanatory record:

"Haddam, March ye 6th, $170\frac{6}{7}$

At a meeting of the Towne in Generall both west & east side inhabitants: Convened together to consider what may be thought advisable to be done in order to the unuseall & unthought of difficulty which arises in s'd Towne Respecting the Reverend Mr. Jerimiah Hobbarts tearing out part of a leaf out of the ancient Towne book, and for repairing of the foresaid breach wee doe unanimously make choyce of Cap'tn JOHN[2] CHAPMAN, Deacon Thomas[2] Gates, deacon Daniel[2] Cone, Lieut. James Wells and deacon Thomas Brooks a Committee: who are hereby Impowered and desired to take all moderate & ruleable Methods that the fore s'd Town book may be made vallid and sufficient to all persons that now or ever after Shall be concerned with s'd Town book. The fore said Inhabitants do oblige themselves to defray all necessary Charges that the fore s'd Committee shall be att in prosicuting the above said designe."[4]

The next [and last] minister under whom DANIEL[1] BRAINERD served as deacon was the Reverend Phineas Fisk who was ordained in 1714 and was offered certain lands and salary, one day's work annually from all the hands and teams in the town within a distance of two and one-half miles of his home, and the promise of a new house to be built for him. This building was to be two stories high, nineteen by forty-two feet in dimension, fifteen feet between joists, with a lean-to ten feet wide the length of the house, with a stone cellar under one room, with a "stack of chimneys with three smoakes below and two above in the chambers,"* and with the outside of the building and two rooms within, completely finished. However, it was specified that Mr. Fisk was to provide all the nails and glass.[4, 6]

DANIEL[1] BRAINERD was presented for freemanship[8] on May 13, 1669, was elected commissioner by the General Court in that year,[1] and was frequently

*The "smoakes" were doubtless fireplaces and built of the gray gneiss with which the town is liberally supplied and, since nails were then hand made by the blacksmith and since glass must be imported, it is evident that the most of the actual expense devolved upon the pastor.[1] A considerable amount of manual labor on his part in raising crops and in finishing the interior of his house was evidently also imperative.

constable, surveyor, fence viewer, assessor, collector and appointed on committees to stake out land and lay out highways.[1] In 1682 he served on a committee to secure a minister[1] and in May, 1692, it is found that "This Court doe for the present upon good considerations and till further order free DANIEL BRAYNARD from training."[8] In May, 1698, it was "Ordered by this Court that William Scovie* that was wounded in the late expedition to the eastward shall be placed with some able surgeon and Capt[n] GEORGE GATES and M[r] DANL BRAINARD are appointed to take effectual care that this order be attended."[8] DANIEL[1] and others were appointed in May, 1699, "to view the lands at Cockinchauge and the parts adiacent, and to lay out a township there in such forme as they shall judge most convenient for the farmes already laid out there."[8]

Some of the inhabitants of Haddam presented his name to the General Court in May, 1700, asking that he be made captain of their train band but "this Court considering the present circumstances of the people there, doe see cause to suspend that matter till their sessions in Octob[r] next,"[9] and no evidence is seen that favorable action ever followed. The only appearance of disturbance and friction in Haddam at that time was the factional condition resulting from the trouble with Reverend Hobart, so it seems fair to assume that the Court feared that this partisanship would react unfortunately on the train band if DANIEL[1] were made captain, for he was evidently prominent in the church differences. He was chairman of a committee to treat with Saybrook men before the General Court in October, 1701, relative to the disputed boundary line between the two towns, and was member of a similar group[9] in May, 1703. Appointment to the office of Justice of the Peace for Hartford County was tendered[10] him in May, 1701, May, 1704, and May, 1705, but his greatest service was rendered as a Deputy to the General Court in which capacity he acted during fourteen consecutive years from 1692 to 1706 inclusive, during at least twenty-six sessions,[11] and perhaps also during five sessions in 1710–12, though these may have pertained to his son DANIEL[2] who has various later attendances credited to him under the title of "Captain" or "Jr."

In 1674 the will of Thomas Smith of Haddam gave "to the wife of DANIEL BRAINWOOD all my Household Stuffe & Moveables that by this Will are not otherwise disposed of, and my hay to DANIEL BRAINWOOD. . . . I make John Bailey, sen. and DANIEL BRAINWOOD my Executors to see this my Will fulfilled and to take Care of my Buryall, on which I would have 40 shillings

* William[2] Scoville (John[1]).[8a]

expended, 30 shillings of which I would have John Bailey allow out of what is given to him and DANIEL BRAINWOOD the other 10 shillings."[12] DANIEL[1] refused this executorship, but he frequently acted in such a capacity, in taking inventories of estates, witnessing wills[12] and becoming guardian in 1682 of his nephew and niece Jared[3] and REBECCA[3] SPENCER, children of his brother-in-law, JOHN[2] SPENCER, whose will included the request that DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, DANIEL[1] CONE and GEORGE[1] GATES should be overseers of his estate.[12] This REBECCA[3] SPENCER, after her uncle's guardianship ceased, became our ancestress by marrying JOHN[2] ACKLEY.

DANIEL[1] BRAINERD married* first,[18] undoubtedly at Haddam, about 1663–4, HANNAH[2] SPENCER [see Spencer, p. 774]. He married secondly on March 30, 1693, Elizabeth (Wakeman) Arnold and married thirdly on November 29, 1698, Mrs. Hannah (Spencer?)[15]* Sexton [erroneously called daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Bearding) Spencer and doubtless truly called widow of George[2] Sexton (George[1])]. He died April 1, 1715, aged seventy-four, and his grave stone is still to be seen at Haddam.[1, 18] Letters of administration on his estate were granted to his sons DANIEL[2] and Hezekiah[2] and a most detailed inventory covering two (closely written) printed pages is on file showing property to the value of £834–10–3. A distribution agreement was entered into on May 2, 1715, by his seven sons and by Thomas[2] Gates (GEORGE[1]), on behalf of Hannah, his wife, who was the only daughter of the deceased.[1, 13]

DANIEL[1] BRAINERD had seventy-five recorded grand-children,[15] fifty-six of whom were born during his life and over sixty of whom bore the name "Brainerd" and the majority of these last were boys.[18a] It was computed by a descendant of the fifth generation in April, 1786, that, at that time, only seventy-one years after the date of the death of DANIEL[1], there had been born twenty-two hundred descendants. Although he lived more than fifty years after the settlement of Haddam began, yet only one inscription in the old burying ground antedates his, and that one pertains to a non-resident, namely, Edward Shipman "of Chester, near Shipman's Pond" who died in 1711 and was brought to Haddam for burial, apparently only for the reason that it was nearer to his home than was the cemetery at Saybrook Point where his family was buried. It seems certain that this man was the son of EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN.[18a]

The children of DANIEL[1] and HANNAH (SPENCER) BRAINERD, all born at Haddam, were[14, 15, 17, 18, 18a]

*The unusual coincidence is here seen of a man's first and third wives having identical maiden names if the above statement is true.

I. DANIEL[2], see following.
II. Hannah[2], b. November 20, 1667; d. September 7 or 17, 1750, at East Haddam; m. October 3, 1692–3, Thomas[2] Gates (GEORGE[1]).
III. James[2], (Deacon), b. June 2, 1669; d. February 10, 1742; m. 1st, April 1, 1696, Deborah Dudley; m. 2nd, May 23, 1711, Sarah Daniels.
IV. Joshua[2], (Captain), b. July 20, 1671–2, bap. September 8[18a] or October 7, 1672,[15] at Middletown; d. May 13, 1755; m. 1st, Mary Olmstead[16] [said to have been dau. of Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]][15]; m. 2nd, July 12, 1710, Mehitable Dudley.
V. William[2], b. March 30, 1673–4, bap.[15] May 5 or[18a] July, 1674, at Middletown; d. after September 11, 1747; m. December 13, 1698, Sarah Bidwell.
VI. Caleb[2], (Sergt.), b. November 20, 1675–6; d. August 11, 1742; m. May 1, 1700 or 1701, Elizabeth Bidwell.
VII. Elijah[2], bap. March 7 or May 26,[18a] 1678, at Middletown; d. April 20, 1740;[19] m. 1st, September 28, 1699, Mary[4] Bushnell (Joseph[3], Richard[2], FRANCIS[1]);[29] m. 2nd, September 6, 1738, Margaret (—).
VIII. Hezekiah[2], b. May 24, 1680 or 1681, bap.[15] perhaps March 7, but more likely[18a] "3.7th" [i.e., September 3], 1682, at Middletown; d. May 24, 1727; m. October 1 1701, Dorothy (Hobart) Mason.

DANIEL[2] BRAINERD (*Daniel*[1]) was born March 2, 1665–6, at Haddam, died[17] on January 28, 1742–3, or, by his headstone, on February 28 of that year, at East Haddam, and married[18] about 1688 SUSANNA[2] VENTRES [see Ventres, p. 807]. He was a farmer and removed to what became East Haddam locating, it is said, one mile north of East Haddam Landing near a spring of water at the southern end of "Creek Row" which was the earliest grouping of those who settled on the east side of the river. This property was owned as late as 1890 and, possibly even yet, by a descendant of his.[15] He publicly "owned the covenant" on May 31, 1691, at Haddam Church in the original town when his two eldest children were baptized.[18a] He was a collector for the town in 1688, surveyor the same year and in 1692, and a constable in 1693.[15]

The General Assembly, in October, 1714, "do establish and confirm Mr. DANIEL BRAINERD to be captain of the company or trainband in the town of East Haddam."[20] His wife, on February 5, 1720–1, joined the church on the east side of the river to which, in 1725, he was elected a deacon, retaining that office throughout his life.[3, 15] He often assisted in laying out lands and served on many committees such as one to audit the colony's accounts,[20] one to build a church[15] and one to present a memorial to the Governor and Council because of a difference of opinion in the town which hindered the completion of the last named edifice.[20] Continued calls were made upon him to witness wills and to take inventories.[21] He was chosen guardian, in 1733–4, by his nephew, Samuel[3] Ventres, and, in 1736–7, by his grandson, Daniel[4] Brainerd.[21a] DANIEL[2] served

as a Deputy to the General Court from East Haddam during at least thirteen sessions in 1715, 1721–2, 1726–30 inclusive, and in 1734.[22] He was probably also in attendance at some of the later sessions which have, herein, been tentatively assigned to his father because of the omission of the designating term "Sr.," "Jr." or "Capt." His wife as "SUSANNAH BRAINWOOD" received £10 in "provision pay" or produce by the will[23] of her father, WILLIAM[1] VENTRES.

The children of DANIEL[2] and SUSANNA (VENTRES) BRAINERD, all born in East Haddam, and through two of whom we descend, were[14, 15, 17]

I. Susanna[3], b. August 9, 1689, bap. May 31, 1691;[18a] d. February 6, 1746; m. John[4] Olmstead (Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]).
II. Daniel[3], b. September 28, 1690, bap. May 3, 1691; d. September 8 or 28, 1728; m. February 2, 1715, Hannah[3] Selden (Joseph[2], Thomas[1]).[28]
III. HANNAH[3], b. June 12, 1694, bap. June 21, 1696;[18a] d. March 20, 1744, aged 48, at East Haddam;[17] m. there, January 8, 1718–9, JOSEPH[3] GATES [see Gates, p. 16].
IV. NOADIAH[3], see following.
V. Stephen[3], b. February 27, 1699, bap. November 9, 1700;[18a] d. March 30, 1794; m. in East Haddam, December 24, 1730, Susanna[3] Gates (JOSEPH[2], GEORGE[1]).
VI. Bezaleel[3], b. April 17, 1701; d. October 9, 1749; m. 1st, November 30, 1727, Mary[3] Gates (Thomas[2], GEORGE[1]); m. 2nd, June 17, 1744, Elizabeth Warner.
VII. Mary[3], b. September 10, 1703; d. April 16, 1742; m. July, 1728, William[5] Olmstead[16] (Samuel[4], Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]).

NOADIAH[3] BRAINERD (*Daniel*[2], *Daniel*[1]) was born April 4, 1697, at East Haddam,[17] died September 30, 1746, at that place, married first there on June 4, 1724, his cousin HANNAH[3] CONE [see Cone, p. 236], and married secondly in 1745 Deborah (Dudley) Selden.[15] He was a farmer and, owing in part at least to his comparatively early death, but little mention is found of him. In 1735 he witnessed the will and helped to take the inventory of Green[3] Hungerford, son of our THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD and, in 1739, performed the same offices for Samuel Arnold.[24] In 1740 he was chosen guardian by his niece,[15, 24] Susanna[4] Brainerd (Daniel[3], DANIEL[2], DANIEL[1]), aged fifteen. His wife, HANNAH, had become a member of the Congregational Church of East Haddam on November 7, 1725, and he joined her in membership on May 21, 1732, being elected a deacon in April, 1743, as his father's successor.[3, 15] He is sometimes called "Dr."[26] but that may have been an error and was possibly intended as an abbreviation for deacon. He was a deputy from his home town to the General Court for at least seven sessions[25] in 1742–6.

An unusual and most interesting tale is told of this man and one which stirs the sympathies for it appears that he and Samuel Selden [the brother of the

sister-in-law[28] of NOADIAH[3]] were both suitors for the hand of Deborah Dudley. NOADIAH[3] won over his rival, but apparently by a very narrow margin for it seems that Deborah found it easy—though perhaps under pressure—to permit at the crucial moment of a substitution in the identity of the bridegroom—but let the printed words from "Colonial Days and Dames" tell the tale:[27]

"A groom who lost his bride upon the steps of the altar was NOADIAH BRAINERD. Young Samuel Selden of Hadlyme, Connecticut, so runs the tale, observing a notice on the door of Chester meeting-house stating that NOADIAH BRAINERD and Deborah Dudley proposed marriage in that house on the following Lord's day, tore the notice from the door and substituted another in which the name of Samuel Selden of Hadlyme and Deborah Dudley appeared as proposing marriage upon the self-same day. When the wedding morning arrived Captain Selden came early to the meeting-house, armed and equipped according to the law and, observing that the notice was undisturbed, took heart of grace and, when Mr. Joseph Dudley, his wife, and daughter Deborah appeared, he advanced, addressing the latter affectionately and led her up the aisle to the minister who married them according to the solemn forms then obtaining. What the groom-elect, NOADIAH, was about all this time we are not informed, but as the Selden family history records that Samuel took his bride across the river the same day, without objection or resistance on her part, it certainly looks as if the fair Deborah, like the love of the 'Young Lochinvar,' was not averse to a changeling groom, while the inscription upon the wedding ring, still preserved in the Selden family,—'Beauty is a Fair, but Virtue is a Precious Jewel,' shows that Samuel fully appreciated the various charms of his daringly won bride. The strange sequel to this romantic wedding is that after many years of wedded life and the birth of several children, upon the death of her husband, Samuel, Deborah Selden became the wife of her first lover, NOADIAH BRAINERD."[27] "The query very naturally suggests itself, Did she love him all the time, was she frightened into marrying her masterful lover, Samuel Selden? and, equally pertinent in those days of much marrying, Did the defrauded NOADIAH remain true to his first love all those years, or did he marry in the interim and find himself a widower thus opportunely?"[27]

The answer to this last quoted query is found in the fact that NOADIAH[3] lived single for approximately three years after this episode in 1721, before consoling himself by a marriage in 1724 with his cousin HANNAH[3] CONE, who, after twenty years, died on May 14, 1744, and fate also arranged that Samuel Selden should pass away on February 28, 1745. Evidently all the years which

had passed had failed to wipe out the affection of NOADIAH[3] for his first love and, in or about 1745, he finally led her to the altar. A story book would add that "they lived happily ever after" but in truth fate again stepped in and NOADIAH[3] died on September 30, 1746, after, evidently, less than a year of companionship with Deborah. She lived as his widow until her death March 8, 1800, being then in her ninety-ninth year, and was buried beside her first husband in North Lyme Cemetery.[15, 28]

The children of NOADIAH[3] and HANNAH (CONE) BRAINERD, all born at East Haddam, were[15, 17]

I. Hannah[4], b. April 24, 1725; d. February 1, 1748–9; m. December 26, 1744, William Selby [son of Jeremiah and Susanna (Dutton) Selby].
II. MARY[4], b. April 27, 1727; d. December 24, 1796, at East Haddam; m. there, February 26, 1749–50, BEZALEEL[4] GATES [see Gates, p. 18].
III. Noadiah[4], b. March 10, 1729; d. March 31, 1741 or 1750.
IV. Elizabeth[4], b. August 12, 1731; d. January 15, 1731–2.
V. Elizabeth[4], b. January 27, 1732–3; d. June 13, 1733.
VI. Sybil[4], b. June 7, 1736; d. July 5, 1755; m. October 24, 1751, Aaron Cleveland.
VII. Jared[4], b. September 17, 1737 or 1739; d. January 4, 1823; m. April 19, 1763, Sybil Bate [dau. of Joseph and Elizabeth (Spencer) Bate].

REFERENCES

1. Brainerd Family, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 1, pp. 24–7, 31–9.
2. Brainerd Family, D. D. Field, 1857, p. 9.
3. History of Haddam, Conn., D. D. Field, 1814, pp. 5, 30–4, 39, 44.
4. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 372, 374–5, 379.
5. New England Register, XIII, 19–20.
6. Historical Sketch of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., E. E. Lewis, 1879, pp. 10–1, 15, 18–9.
7. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 117, 161, 276, 314.
8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 106; IV, 71, 252, 277, 294.

8a. Scovill Genealogy, H. W. Brainard, 1915, pp. 144–5.

9. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IV, 321, 368, 429.
10. Ibid., IV, 347, 467, 499.
11. Ibid., IV, 66, 75, 78, 92, 102, 105, 117, 138, 149, 174, 197, 221, 235, 244, 265, 343, 359, 372, 395, 407, 434, 461, 482, 499, 521, 532; V, 141, 163, 275, 293, 345.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 234, 364, 401, 431; II, 129.
13. Ibid., II, 160–1.
14. Savage, I, 237.
15. Brainerd Family, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 1, pp. 39–46, 49–50; I, part 2, p. 41; I, part 3, pp. 41–2; II, part 1, p. 41; II, part 2, p. 41; II, part 3, p. 41; II, part 4, pp. 41–2.
16. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 16.
17. New England Register, XI, 275, 314; XII, 42; XIII, 130.
18. Goodwin's Notes, N. Goodwin, 1856, pp. 198–9.

18a. 200th Anniversary of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, pp. 11–14, 34–5, 41–2, 110–1, 193, 255–7.

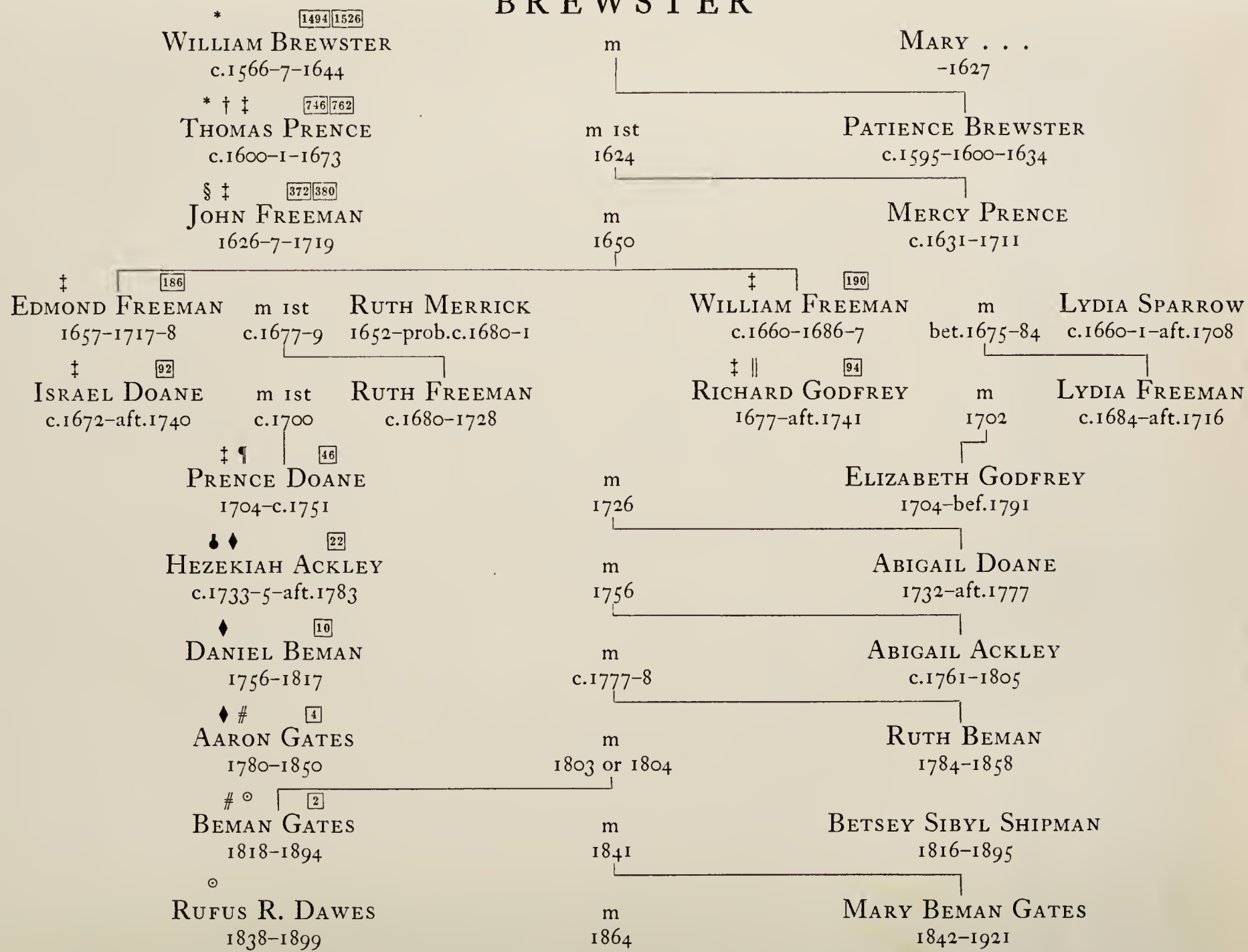
19. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1906, III, 234.
20. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 465; VI, 307; VII, 87.
21. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 570; II, 107, 144, 201, 238, 300, 302, 324, 487, 560, 565, 618; III, 10, 77, 115–6, 268.

21a. Ibid, II, 443, 472.

22. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 519; VI, 270, 304, 329; VII, 2, 121, 124, 149, 191, 221, 250, 293, 482.

23. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 129–30.
24. Ibid., II, 472; III, 170–1, 219–20.
25. Colonial Records of Connecticut, VIII, 486, 511, 552; IX, 102, 147, 155, 187.
26. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 319.
27. Colonial Days and Dames, A. H. Wharton, 1908, pp. 206–8; Connecticut Quarterly, 1896, II, 285.
28. Simeon Church Genealogy, C. W. Church, 1914, pp. 11–13; The Harvey Book, O. G. Harvey, 1899, pp. 196–7; Dudley Family, D. Dudley, 1886, pp. 348–9; Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, p. 71; Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 101–2; Our New England Ancestors, H. Whittemore, 1900, pp. 78–80.
29. Leffingwell Record, A. & C. W. Leffingwell, 1897, p. 33; Descendants of John Porter, H. P. Andrews, 1893, II, 784.

BREWSTER



* Plymouth, Mass. ‡ Eastham, Mass. ‖ Harwich, Mass. ♠ East Haddam, Conn. # Montague and Amherst, Mass.
† Duxbury, Mass. § Lynn and Sandwich, Mass. ¶ Saybrook, Conn. ♦ East Hartland, Conn. ⊙ Marietta, Ohio.

BREWSTER*

WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER,† son[2] of WILLIAM and PRUDENCE (——) BREWSTER of Scrooby, England, lived a life of amazing variety, of infinite loyalty to principle, of marvelous endurance, and of great meekness and righteousness. He was born[1, 2, 4, 8, 21] about 1566–7, probably at or near Scrooby,[1] where his family certainly lived by the time he was five years old. As a youth, having prepared himself by the study of Latin and Greek, he matriculated[1, 2] on December 3, 1580, at St. Peter's, more commonly called Peterhouse, the oldest of the fourteen colleges which at that time formed the University of Cambridge. He did not complete the course [which then required seven years, sometimes twelve, fourteen, or more], and, indeed, he probably left the university by 1583–4, for

*In this chapter, more than in most, the frequent use of reference numbers through the text is quite inadequate, and the authorities quoted might fitly be read in full.

†WILLIAM BREWSTER, senior (–1590), was[1, 2, 3, 4] resident at or near Scrooby when his son, the future "Elder," was only about five years old, as is shown by the fact that he was assessed in the township of Scrooby-cum-Ranskil in 1571. The Archbishop of York, referring to the father, granted in 1575–6 "to our trusty and well-beloved servant WILLIAM BREWSTER," the office of Receiver of the Manor of Scrooby "and all of the Liberties of the same in the County of Nottingham." Furthermore, he then commissioned BREWSTER as Bailiff of the same territory, these offices to endure "to the end of his life." This did not necessitate, but doubtless implied, actual residence in the manor-house and it made him responsible, both legally and financially,[21] for seventeen towns and probably more than five hundred tenants. By or before 1588 he also became postmaster there, under the Crown, and retained that office until his death in 1590. It involved not only the forwarding of mail and despatches but also the keeping of an inn at the Manor and a supply of post-horses. In June of that year, when the Earl of Worcester passed through Scrooby on his way to Scotland, WILLIAM BREWSTER, senior, furnished him fresh horses, but on the Earl's return, some weeks later, he found that the old gentleman had died. On July 24, 1590, administration of his estate was granted[2, 3, 21] to his son WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER with the approval of the widow, PRUDENCE, they being the only named heirs. For a year and a half previously the son had been performing the duties of post in his father's behalf and he at once asked for personal appointment. Through a misunderstanding, compliance was temporarily withheld, and the situation resulted in a series of letters (in part extant) between William Davison, his former patron and Sir John Stanhope, newly appointed postmaster-general. WILLIAM[1] was shortly, if not immediately, reinstated in this position in his own behalf; for the earliest existing records, dating back to April 1, 1594, show the payment from that date of his fees, which then amounted to twenty pence per day, being raised on July 1, 1603, to two shillings per diem. He filled this office until September 30, 1607, a total of fully seventeen years.[2, 4, 11, 12] It seems highly probable that his relinquishment of it was compulsory because of his religious views and his sponsoring of, and identification with, the Scrooby Separatists. This theory is strengthened by the fact that in April, 1608, he was fined £20 by the Commissioners of Ecclesiastical Causes for non-appearance to their citation.[4, 16, 27] It is said that, without WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER to act as leader, it is probable no Separatist Church would have been gathered.[4] His mother, PRUDENCE, died after July, 1590, and probably before 1608, when they removed to Holland.[1, 2, 3, 4, 21]

about that time he entered the employ[1, 2, 5, 6] of William Davison, then an ambassador for, and later Secretary of State to, Queen Elizabeth. In regard to this relation, it is said of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER that Davison "trusted him above all other that were aboute him, and only imployed him in all matters of greatest trust and secrecie. He esteemed him rather as a sonne then a servante . . ."[1, 2, 6, 21] With Davison, WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER went into Holland in August, 1585, on a diplomatic mission,[4, 5] returning soon after January 22, 1585–6. Davison was presently deliberately[6] and wrongfully accused by the Queen with responsibility for the execution of Mary, Queen of Scots, and in consequence was, on February 14, 1586–7, thrown into the Tower.[6] WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER remained near for some time to comfort and, if possible, to aid his friend and patron, but this occurrence definitely closed his career in the political or diplomatic field. "Afterwards he wente and lived in ye country . . .,"[11] which doubtless meant at Scrooby [see note, p. 143].

It is recorded of him[5] that "He did much good in ye countrie wher he lived, in promoting and furthering religion, not only by his practiss & example, and provocking and incouraging of others, but by procuring of good preachers to ye places theraboute, and drawing on of others to assiste & help forward in such a worke; he him selfe most comonly deepest in ye charge, & some times above his abillitie. . . . After they were joyned togither in comunion, he was a spetiall stay & help unto them. They ordinarily mett at his house [Scrooby] on ye Lords day, (which was a manor of ye bishops,) and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provission for them to his great charge." It seems, therefore, to have been the income from his interests and services* at Scrooby which enabled WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER to entertain and aid the Separatists as he did.

From 1562 may be dated[8] the attempted "separation" from the State Church of those who ultimately bore the titles[22] of either "Puritan" or the

*The following items of statements of payments[10] made to WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER by Sir Timothy Hutton in 1605, on his way to and from London, are significant of their customs:

"Item, to the post of Scrobie ffor 11 myle, and the gyde 6*d*.	0	10	0
Item, to hym that kept the post horses, and for drising of bootes.	0	0	6
Item, for a cawdall and supper, and breakfast.	0	7	10
Item, ffor ffyre.	0	0	7
Item, to the chamberlain and the maid that burnt the boothowse (sic).	0	0	6
Item, to the powre.	0	0	6"

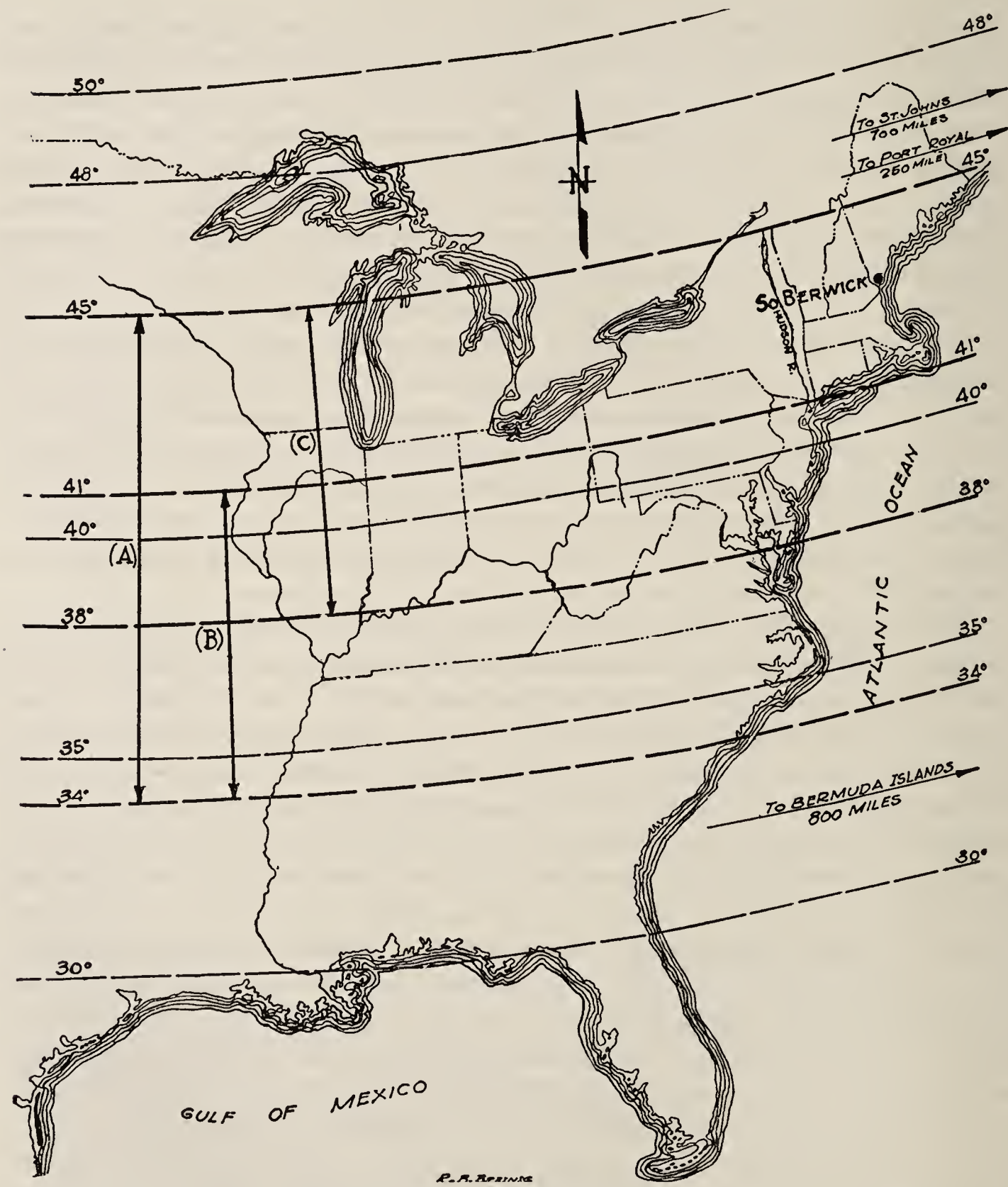
And on his return he paid:

"The post of Scrobie for 7 myle, and for hymselfe.	0	8	0
For burnt sack, bread, bear, and suger to wyne that was gyven.	0	2	0
The ostler 3*d*.; the powr 6*d*.	0	0	9"

stronger term "Separatist," to which latter class[1, 14] the Pilgrim Fathers belonged.* In the vicinity of Scrooby was a group of Separatists who, above all others in England, were so serious and single-minded in their belief, so cohesive in their common plan, that they eventually emigrated as a compact and united body.[11] But before that came to pass much of suffering was endured. A law was passed making it treason to worship other than in the State Church; the scaffold was the penalty for distributing Separatist literature and, as a consequence, many were jailed and some were executed. Yet they continued to hold their meetings in secret hidden places. As early as 1582 escape from the country had begun to be practised,[8] and by 1592 the idea of exchanging persecution and death in England for exile to some foreign land, preferably "in an unbroken company," was being considered.[8] Emigration then, however, meant expulsion beyond the limits of civilization, with danger and suffering to all and inevitable death to a large proportion of its participants. Indeed, "up to the time of the exile [to New England] of the Pilgrim fathers no American Colony had succeeded though many had been attempted."[18]

In the meanwhile the Separatist group at Scrooby was growing both in numbers and in strength of conviction. John Robinson had become their pastor; their meetings were held at the home of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER (often secretly, in his cellar or stable), and the youth William Bradford, later their historian, had joined them. In 1604, when Bancroft succeeded to the Primacy, persecution increased. Excommunication was the penalty for nonconformity, property was confiscated, and only by means of the Separatists' persecution, recorded by their enemies, do we learn of their lives. Finding themselves menaced by increasing persecution, constantly watched, imprisoned, unable to live peaceably or to worship as their consciences dictated, they decided in 1607 to go as a body to Holland, where certain English had preceded them and where freedom of worship was permitted. The ports were closed[9] to them, however, and no such departure would be legally permitted, so they had to plan to escape secretly and in small groups. To that end they would bribe captains of vessels and would embark at a remote place, often only to be betrayed. One rather large group, which included WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, chartered at great expense a vessel which was to take them aboard at Boston, Lincolnshire. This embarkation was accomplished under

* "The Pilgrim was the Puritan in his superlative degree . . . ,"[18] not as to the narrow religious views displayed by the Puritan of New England but as to the separation from the State Church.



MAP ILLUSTRATING EXTENT OF EARLY ENGLISH CHARTERS; PLACING OF BERWICK, MAINE, WHERE EARLY RAYMONDS LIVED AND WHERE BENJAMIN[2] OBER DIED; THE APPROXIMATE PLACING OF ST. JOHNS AND PORT ROYAL [see DODGE, p. 325], AND OF THE BERMUDA ISLANDS [see HOPKINS, p. 449].

EXPLANATION OF MAP ON OPPOSITE PAGE

(A) The territory in America between the thirty-fourth and forty-fifth degrees, north latitude, and extending one hundred miles westward from the coast, which was granted by English Charter on April 10, 1606, to the [then so called] Virginia Company. This company was at that time made up of two groups of men (colonizing agencies), the first of London and vicinity, and the second of Bristol, Exeter, Plymouth and the west of England. Of these, the first group retained the name "Virginia Company" and was presently assigned the southern portion of the territory [(B)], while the second group, which came to be known as "New England Company" acquired the northern portion [(C)].

(B) The southern tract, extending at first from the thirty-fourth to the forty-first degrees north latitude (and at another period only to the fortieth), was granted to the (southern) "Virginia Company," though the northern border thereof, between the thirty-eighth and forty-first degrees, seems to have been, for a time, open also to the "New England Company" on condition that it had not been previously settled by the southern group. It was for a tract at this northern edge of the (southern) Virginia Company's territory (namely, near the mouth of the Hudson River) that the Pilgrims, before sailing, acquired a grant and on which they expected to settle.

(C) The northern portion of the original 1606 patent, being the territory south of the forty-fifth and (at one time) north of the thirty-eighth degree north latitude, was at first all opened to the New England Company whose full title was "The Council established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New England in America." At other times the southern boundary of the colony's territory was named as the fortieth and, finally, as the forty-first degree. Within this area the Pilgrims actually settled, rather than under the Virginia Company as they had intended. [Bradford's History of Plymouth, 1912, I, 65, 95, 101-2.]

cover of night, but when all were aboard they and their possessions were turned over to the authorities, who not only confiscated the goods, stripped and searched their persons, even the women, for money, but threw them all into the local jail called[14] significantly "Little-Ease-Prison." After a month the greater number were set free, but seven of the principal men, including WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, were still held and bound over to the assizes.[1,2] The following spring another attempt was made to reach Holland by engaging a vessel belonging to a Dutch captain. They arranged a distant meeting-place on the coast which necessitated a trip of about fifty miles in small boats for the women, children and goods, and a cross-country walk of about forty miles by the men.[7,9] The captain, after loading a few of the men, saw armed constables and soldiers approaching to arrest his passengers, so he hurriedly sailed away, separating these men from their families and even their clothing, and leaving their women and children unprotected. The latter were taken into custody and brought before judge after judge who, finding no case against them, were loath to bear the expense of their support[9] and finally discharged the unhappy, homeless women and children to shift for themselves.

"And in ye end, notwithstanding all these stormes of opposition, they all gatt over at length, some at one time & some at an other . . ." though it required more than a year (during 1607–8) to accomplish this; and it is estimated that not less than one hundred twenty-five souls removed, among the last ones to leave being Pastor Robinson and WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER.

In Holland they settled first at Amsterdam for about a year, and in the spring of 1609 removed to Leyden.[5,9] Here they had great joy in their religious freedom but found it very hard to earn a livelihood, for their occupation had formerly been agricultural rather than in the trades; moreover, in Holland all lines of skilled labor [through the guilds] were open only to legal citizens of the country.

Here WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER was chosen as first assistant to John Robinson "in ye place of an Elder" and not later than 1613 he was duly elected Ruling Elder.[11] Scattered personal items show that on June 12, 1609, WILLIAM[1] was guardian to a girl named Ann Peck, who had been born near Scrooby; that on June 20, 1609, a child of his was buried, the family being then resident in Stink-Steeg [Stench Lane]; and that by June 25 of that year he had already removed to the lane called St. Ursulas. There deposition was made on that date, individually, by WILLIAM[1], aged about forty-two, by his wife, MARY, aged about forty, and by their son Jonathan[2], aged about sixteen, as to the

receipt at their home of a bale of cloth from Amsterdam.[21] WILLIAM[1] later moved to Choor-Steeg [Choir Alley], near St. Peter's Church and Pastor Robinson's home, the latter being in the building where the Separatists held their services. During their residence in Holland WILLIAM[1], his wife, his elder son, Jonathan[2], and daughter PATIENCE[2], were witnesses at the betrothal or marriage of various members of the Separatist group.[24] WILLIAM[1] occupied himself in part by teaching the English language to foreign students who came to Leyden to attend the university, and in addition was called a master printer.[21] In the latter business he was associated as a partner and manager [from about October, 1616, to the summer of 1619] with Thomas Brewer, an Englishman who financed the project and gave over his own attic in the "Green House" in Klok-Steeg [Bell Lane] in which to carry on the business.[17, 21] This was very near both the BREWSTER home and the Robinson home and church. Here many books were published, some in English and some in Latin, most of them religious in type and a number of them Separatist in import.[1] As a result, the English government, in July, 1619, demanded the arrest of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER on the charge that he had printed books on forbidden subjects.[7, 11, 17, 21] He quickly went into hiding[9] either in Holland or in England, or both, and appears to have remained hidden until the embarkation of the Pilgrims in August, 1620. Meantime the Dutch authorities in September, 1619, had searched and sealed the attic printing-shop and distrained the type, and stored it at the Leyden University, where it still remained[21] in May, 1620.

This undivided Separatist group lived in Holland for twelve peaceful, though toilsome, years from 1608 to 1620; but before 1617 they had realized that, if they would preserve the integrity of their religion, speech and nationality, they must find a home in a remote place where they could lay the foundation for a liberal Christian colony.[11] Bradford says:[11] "A great hope & inward zeall they had of laying some good foundation, or at least to make some way thereunto, for ye propagating & advancing ye gospell of ye kingdom of Christ . . . ; yea, though they should be but even as stepping-stones unto others for ye performing of so great a work." In the light of history their residence in Holland appears as a necessary period of probation[28] to fit them for the more arduous life which they must face if they attempted colonization. "They left England simply religious devotees; they finally left Holland trained, disciplined, practical men. They crossed the German Ocean, in 1608, full of religious zeal and trust in God; they crossed the Atlantic, in

1620, equally full of self-reliance and trust in themselves" in addition to their religious faith. In 1617 negotiations were begun in London to ascertain the possibilities for colonization, and for three years there followed a series of conferences [in some of which WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER took a part] which caused their hopes to be in turn raised, deferred, disappointed, and raised again. But through all of this turmoil of uncertainty the courage and determination of the leaders held true. They had had under consideration the possibility of settlement either in the northern part of the Virginia Company's holdings or under the Dutch on the Hudson River. In June, 1619, they acquired a patent under the former plan and, when they finally sailed, it was with the expectation of settling under the Virginia Company,[11, 12] which would have located them somewhere near, and probably south of, the mouth of the Hudson River* [see map on p. 146].

*In 1606 there were two companies formed in England[28, 29] for the purpose of colonization, and to them King James granted land in the New World consisting of a strip one hundred miles wide along the Atlantic coast [ignoring, then, the interior] from the thirty-fourth to the forty-fifth degrees of north latitude, which would have extended from Cape Fear to the British provinces and which, as a whole, was then called Virginia. The first, or south Virginia, company, made up of London gentlemen, received a patent from the thirty-fourth to the forty-first degrees, or between Cape Fear and a line running through Port Chester on Long Island Sound and the easterly corner of New Jersey on the Hudson. The second, or northern, company, made up of gentlemen from Bristol, Exeter and Plymouth, was often called the Plymouth Company and ultimately the "Council . . . at Plymouth . . . for . . . planting . . . and governing of New England . . . " Its grant covered lands between the thirty-eighth and forty-fifth degrees, or between the southeast corner of Maryland and the British provinces. That strip of land lying between the thirty-eighth and forty-first degrees, which was tentatively included in both patents, was to be granted to that company which should first occupy it, provided that neither organization should settle on any land within a hundred miles of a location previously occupied by the other. It was within this tentative northern part, but under the southern Virginia Company's claim, that the Pilgrims, while still in Leyden, received a grant and expected to settle [see map on p. 146]. Evidence of the use of the name "Virginia," as applied to territory far north of what that name now signifies, is found in the nuncupative will of William Mullins [father of the noted Priscilla], who died in New Plymouth during the winter of 1620–1. This document referred to a stock of boots and shoes which he had "in Virginia" and offered land to his son William, Jr., then in England, if he would "come to Virginia," meaning Plymouth Colony.[28, 29]

Many overlapping interests are found[30] linking together certain members of the Brewster family, certain members of the Virginia Company of London, and certain passengers in the Mayflower with certain early settlers in Virginia and Plymouth, New England. In connection with this subject may be listed these items:

(1) Sir Edwin Sandys, under whose encouragement and official sanction the Pilgrims, while in Leyden, acquired the above mentioned patent for lands in America, was a son of the Archbishop of York who had appointed WILLIAM BREWSTER, senior (father of Elder WILLIAM[1]), as his representative at Scrooby. Thus the sons continued the acquaintance and trust which their fathers had enjoyed. Incidentally, Sir Edwin was instrumental in sending the bride-ships to Virginia as well as the shipload of London orphans in 1618.

(2) In the diplomatic service of William Davison, secretary to Queen Elizabeth, WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER (later our Elder) was associated with George Cranmer, who was also a close friend of Sir Edwin Sandys; and that man's younger brother, William Cranmer, in June, 1619, acquired from Capt. Edward Brewster [see following] one share of Virginia Company stock and in 1621 removed to Virginia to become auditor for this company which Sir Edwin Sandys served officially, in England, from 1607 to 1620. George Sandys, younger brother of Sir Edwin, owned stock in the company and in 1621 became its colonial treasurer, emigrating in that year with Sir Francis Wyat, governor-elect, who had purchased in November, 1620, four shares of its stock from Capt. Edward Brewster [see following]. Moreover, in 1621, Christopher Davison (son of the Queen's secretary, above) became the company's secretary in Virginia.

After endless difficulty in preparing acceptable "Articles of Agreement"; in raising funds [by the sale of their own property to swell the common purse and by subscriptions from friends* called "adventurers" or stockholders]; in the purchase of needed supplies; and in engaging vessels, the departure was planned for the summer of 1620. It was decided that participation in the

(3) Stephen Hopkins sailed for Virginia in June, 1609, in the "Sea Venture," one of a fleet of nine vessels under Sir Thomas Gates, governor-elect. This bark, which was wrecked on the Bermudas, was eventually reported to England as lost and as a consequence Lord De La Warr (and with him Capt. Edward Brewster [see following] sailed for Virginia in March, 1610, and arrived in June to take over the government. Sir Thomas Gates with his party, including Stephen Hopkins, by means of vessels built on the island, reached Virginia May 24, 1610, only a few days prior to De La Warr, who had supposed them dead. This Stephen Hopkins is believed by most, if not all, students of both Virginia and New England history to have been identical with our STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS who sailed for Virginia, but landed at Plymouth, in the "Mayflower" in 1620 [see Hopkins, p. 450]. Christopher Martin, the "governor in the Mayflower," was another member of the Virginia Company and owned land on the James River.

(4) Though it is frequently overlooked, sufficient evidence is found to justify the belief that the family of Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER was also represented among the subscribers to, and settlers in, Virginia. Known facts are that (a) one "William Bruster, gentleman," unidentified, went to Virginia in 1607, but died there on August 10th of that year, thus eliminating himself; (b) in June, 1609, following the second charter to the Virginia Company (dated May 23rd, just past), Sir Thomas Gates [under whom Stephen Hopkins sailed on June second in the "Sea Venture" for Virginia (see Hopkins, p. 449)], and other gentlemen sent a carefully worded invitation to "His Majesties subjects in the Free States of the United Provinces" (which would include the Pilgrim group), offering them, in an English colony in America, the place of refuge they were seeking in the Netherlands; (c) a William Brewster (who is justly believed to have been Elder WILLIAM[1] himself), as a result of the above invitation, presently subscribed £20 and received shares to that amount under this charter. Moreover, Elder WILLIAM[1] was one of the agents who, ten years later, acquired for the Pilgrims a patent consonant with that invitation; (d) a Capt. Edward Brewster, who was recorded as "son of William" (undoubtedly our "Elder"), was also a subscriber to that second charter, paying £30, and this Edward Brewster left England in March and arrived at Virginia in June, 1610, with Lord De La Warr, as captain of that man's own company or bodyguard. After spending about eight years in the colony Capt. Edward had trouble in October, 1618, with Capt. Argall because of his criticism of Argall's handling of the estate of Lord De La Warr after the death of the latter. Argall, then acting-governor, as well as virtual plaintiff in the case, tried Edward Brewster by court-martial and sentenced him to death, but, on petition of the ministers and others in the colony, commuted his sentence to banishment, under oath not to return. Edward Brewster sailed for England "near the beginning of November," 1618, and there appealed the case, which was tried and retried in various courts from 1618 to 1623, with Sir Edwin Sandys (above) actively engaged as referee, counsel, or peacemaker. Ultimately Capt. Edward Brewster [see p. 154] was exonerated and Argall and his associates were whitewashed. Incidentally, Capt. Edward Brewster, on June 17, 1619, transferred one share of his stock in the Virginia Company to William Cranmer [see above] and on November 23, 1620, transferred four shares to Sir Francis Wyat [see above], after which there remained £30 to his credit on the books of the company.

Thus we see members of the Davison, Sandys and Cranmer families (all of whom were intimate with, and associated with, Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER), appearing as officials of, investors in, and emigrants to the colony of, the Virginia Company; and it seems as logical that Elder WILLIAM[1] should have invested £20 in its stock in 1609 as that he should have arranged with it, as he did, for a patent and the removal of the Pilgrims in 1619–20. One is led to believe, therefore, that Capt. Edward Brewster was definitely the son of Elder WILLIAM[1] and, since he sailed for England in November, 1618, undoubtedly that son of whom it was written in August, 1619, "BREWSTER's sonne, of his ffather's sect within this halfe yeare, now comes to Churche" [i.e., the English state church]; and "BREWSTER frightened back into the low countries, his son has conformed and comes to church." And again, " . . . Capt. Edward Brewster his [the Elder's] son also returned this year from Virginia and conformed to the church."[30]

*These included,[11, 12, 19] in addition to WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER and the other participants, John Beauchamp, brother-in-law of EDMOND[1] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 349], and Timothy Hatherly, who later came to New England and settled in Scituate, Massachusetts, where his sister EGLIN, our ancestress, lived [see DAWES–GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I, Foster chapter].

great adventure should be voluntary; that Pastor Robinson* should continue with the major part of the congregation, whether it went or stayed; and that Elder BREWSTER should lead the other group, which proved to be the emigrants. At the time of departure from Leyden the name "Pilgrim" was first applied to them, and by themselves.[25]

The detailed story[11, 12, 20] of all their trials before and during the voyage, and following their arrival at Massachusetts Bay, portrays a tragic picture and one of unrivaled endurance and courage. A summary of a few points shows that, because of the failure at the last moment by some of those who had promised to subscribe, it became necessary, in order to pay the port bill and get clearance papers,[7] to place upon forced sale many of their life-saving supplies such as butter, oil, sole leather and weapons.[9] One grasping stockholder attempted, almost at the hour of sailing, to force upon them, by the retention of a promised subscription, a new and disadvantageous contract. This they refused to sign, yet they generously tempered their refusal by offered concessions which were distinctly to their own detriment. After sailing in the two vessels "Mayflower" and "Speedwell" from Southampton on or about August 5, 1620, they were forced the next day to put into Dartmouth for repairs, thus losing many precious days of perfect weather. After sailing again on August 23, they were obliged a second time, on the following day, to enter port, in this instance at Plymouth, and again ostensibly for repairs. Here it was decided to dismiss the Speedwell (which was either unseaworthy, or whose crew was unwilling to sail) and to take only such passengers and cargo as the Mayflower could carry. Accordingly they reloaded once more and finally set sail[12, 19] from Plymouth on September 6, with one hundred two passengers and the crew and with the menace of fall storms a month nearer than they had anticipated. On board were WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, their leader, his wife, MARY, and their sons Love[2] and Wrestling[2], as well as STEPHEN[1] and ELIZABETH (FISHER) HOPKINS and FRANCIS[1] COOKE. The fair winds with which they started soon gave way to such fierce equinoctial storms that the survival of the vessel seems a miracle. After a voyage of sixty-five days they reached land on November 10, 1620.

*Of the pastor of the Separatists we read that "John Robinson wrote 'A man hath in truth so much of religion as he hath between the Lord and himself in secret, and no more,' and thus boxed the compass of religious life for all time." Another thought of his which commands respect for his liberal views in that age of bigotry was incorporated in his farewell address to the Pilgrims before they embarked, in which he charged them to follow him no farther than they found him to follow Christ and to hold themselves as ready to receive new truth from any other messenger as they had hitherto been to accept it from himself.[25]

The farseeing wisdom of WILLIAM[1] and his associates caused them before landing to prepare a notable document[20, 21] called "The Compact," which was designed to be the basis for their self-government. This was signed on the Mayflower on November 11, 1620, by forty-one men, mostly heads of families.*

The tale is well known[11, 12, 20] of the disappointment of the Pilgrims at being forcibly landed on the bleak coast of Massachusetts Bay when their patent was for the Virginia Company's land far to the southward; of their search for a fitting place to build their cabins; of their physical unfitness for the exceeding toil and cold; of the increasing shortage of food; of their fear of the Indians; and of the "great sickness" which caused the deaths during the first winter of half† their number, and which so shockingly depleted also the strength of the survivors; yet the courage of the leaders held firm.

Bradford wrote thus of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER during the early days of the colony: "But now removeing into this countrie, . . . a new course of living must be framed unto; in which he was no way unwilling to take his parte, and to bear his burthen with the rest, living many times without bread, or corne, many months together, having many times nothing but fish, and often wanting that also; and drunke nothing but water for many years togeather, yea, till within .5. or .6. years of his death. And yet he lived (by the blessing of God) in health till very old age. And besides that, he would labour with his hands in the feilds as long as he was able; yet when the church had no other minister, he taught twise every Saboth, and that both powerfully and profitably, to the great contentment of the hearers, and their comfortable edification; yea, many were brought to God by his ministrie."

Their sojourn in Holland, where the greatest privilege they had enjoyed was freedom, had broadened their views. This is proved by the fact that those who had themselves been persecuted in England are recorded as having been much more tolerant of Quakers and others of differing beliefs in New Plymouth than were the people of the Puritan Colony at Boston, or members of the Plymouth group [see Prence, p. 690] who had not endured such discipline. Students assert also that the Pilgrims brought from Leyden the institutions of Common Schools and The Registration of Deeds.[17]

"The first Plymouth town meeting of equal citizens with equal rights . . .

* It remained their law until 1636, when a committee[26] including WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER and JOHN[1] DOANE [see Doane, p. 300] was appointed to rewrite it. It has been called[16] the "Germ of the American Constitution."

† Of eighteen mothers who came over, fourteen died that first winter.[12]

was the first clear prophecy of the Republic which was to extend from ocean to ocean."

Jonathan[2] Brewster, son of Elder WILLIAM[1], followed his parents into the New World in the second boat to make that trip, "The Fortune," which arrived at Plymouth in November, 1621. On this boat came also[12] THOMAS[1] PRENCE, who married, in 1624, PATIENCE[2] BREWSTER, who, with her sister Fear[2], came[12] in "The Anne" in the fall of 1623. MARY, the wife, and mother of this family, whom Elder WILLIAM[1] had married probably at Scrooby about 1588, died[1] at Plymouth on April 17, 1627. Soon after settlement at near-by Duxbury began, WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER removed there, where his son Jonathan[2] preceded him.[23] Sixteen years after his wife's demise, and after only a short illness, the beloved Elder WILLIAM[1] died on April 10, 1644, and was buried at Plymouth.[8, 15] He left no will and his estate was divided between his two surviving sons, Jonathan[2] and Love[2], by four of his closest friends, including THOMAS[1] PRENCE, his son-in-law. The inventory of his estate[13, 18] showed the possession of a library of at least four hundred volumes, of which more than sixty were in Latin and ninety-eight were commentaries on, or translations of, the Bible. These volumes covered a broad scope of subject but were mainly of a religious character. This collection is declared by Dr. H. M. Dexter, who carefully analyzed it,[18] to have been undoubtedly "the richest accumulation of exegetical literature in New England during its first quarter-century." Only one man in the colony before 1630, besides the Elder, had the advantage of university training.[9] It has been said of him that he was

"A preacher who had never been a priest, a pastor who had never been an ordained clergyman, he was the fitting leader of a band . . . who were to found a Church without a Bishop as well as a State without a King."

The death of Elder WILLIAM[1] "was the sorest loss that had hitherto befallen them. . . ." "He bore his part in well [weal] and woe with this poor persecuted church above 36 years in England, Holand, and in this wildernes, and done the Lord and them faithful service in his place and calling."

The known children of WILLIAM[1] and MARY (——) BREWSTER, all born probably in England, but in uncertain order, were[1, 2, 5, 8, 15, 23]

I. probably Edward[2], b. as early as 1589, since the man of this name was a captain in Virginia[30] in 1610 [see p. 151].

II. Jonathan[2] [called* the first born],[26] b. at Scrooby, August 12, 1593; d. at New London,

*Though the words[26] "the first borne of his father" are definitely applied[26] to Jonathan[2] (ignoring the probability of an Edward[2]) they were used in connection with the division of the Elder's estate between Jonathan[2] and Love[2] and must have meant that of these two, Jonathan[2] was the "first born."

Connecticut, August 7, 1659; evidently m. 1st at Leyden an unknown wife[10] who was buried there May 10, 1619, and who may have buried a child there November 27, 1610; m. 2nd, at Plymouth, April 10, 1624, Lucretia Oldham "of Darby," who was prob. the sister of John Oldham. She d. March 4, 1678–9. They removed about 1630 from Plymouth to Duxbury, and about 1649 to Connecticut.

III. PATIENCE[2], whose name doubtless refers to the persecution of the Separatists at Scrooby, must have been b. there by and prob. before 1600, since she witnessed[24] on December 7, 1618, at Leyden, a betrothal between Thomas Smith and Anna Crackstone. She came with her sister Fear[2] in the "Anne," experiencing, in common with EDWARD[1] BANGS, a most dangerous voyage [see Bangs, p. 62]. They arrived at Plymouth the middle of July or the first of August, 1623, and on August 5, 1624, she m. there, as his first wife, THOMAS[1] PRENCE [see Prence, p. 692]. She d. in 1634 at Plymouth.[1, 2, 8, 12, 23]

IV. Fear[2], b. doubtless at Scrooby and probably shortly before the family's flight into Holland, of which her name would be significant; she d. at Plymouth December 1, 1634; m. there between[8] July, 1623, and May 22, 1627, and prob.[2] in 1626, as his second wife, Isaac[1] Allerton.

V. child[2], buried at Leyden, June 20, 1609.

VI. Love[2], d. at Duxbury soon after October 1, 1650, and before January 31, 1650–1; m. May 15, 1634, Sarah[2] Collier (William[1] of Duxbury), who m. 2nd, September 1, 1656, Richard Parke or Parks.

VII. Wrestling[2], "dyed a yonge man vnmaried" after May 22, 1627, but before his father's death.

REFERENCES

1. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, pub. by Massachusetts Historical Society, 1912, I, 316, 370; II, 342–52, 402–3, 405.
2. The England and Holland of the Pilgrims, H. M. Dexter, 1906, pp. 231–3, 236–7, 253–7, 320–9, 504–6, 514–5, 533–4, 557, 559.
3. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, 1871–3, XII, 98–103, 128–30.
4. The Founders of New-Plymouth, Rev. J. Hunter, 1854, pp. 18–23, 53–8, 63–86; Three Unknown Documents Concerning the Pilgrim Fathers in Holland, A. Eekhof, 1920, p. 6.
5. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 342–52; Ibid., 1856, pp. 410, 412.
6. Dictionary of National Biography, II, 1212–3; V, 629–32; XVII, 18–22.
7. Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers, A. Young, 1841, pp. 461–70.
8. Register of the Society of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, pp. 127, 140, 144, 200; Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones, 1908, pp. lxxvii-lxxviii, 3–27.
9. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 27–37, 39–46, 98, 134, 136, 145, 148.
10. The Correspondence of Dr. Matthew Hutton, Surtees Society Publication, 1843, pp. 197–204.
11. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 22, 24–5, 28, 30, 44–6, 48, 52–9, 65–162.
12. The Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 53, 71–86, 358–61, 378–80, 385–7, and, indeed, the whole volume.
13. Mayflower Descendant, III, 15–30; Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones. 1908, I, xlix-lxxv, 3–11, 21–9.
14. History of the Pilgrims and Puritans, J. D. Sawyer, 1925, I, 138–49.
15. Mayflower Descendant, I, 7–8, 72, 168.
16. The Life and Times of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, Rev. A. Steele, 1857, pp. 39–42, 91–103, 114–8, 134–50, 155–9, 171–389, 401.
17. Historical Magazine, 1853, III, 261–3, 330–5; Ibid., 1860, IV, 4–6.
18. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 2, V, 37–85.
19. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 6–7, 134, 296–300.
20. Mourt's Relation, with notes by H. M. Dexter, 1865, p. 1 et seq.

21. The England and Holland of the Pilgrims, H. M. Dexter, 1906, pp. 215–6, 222–7, 236–7, 242–7, 529–33, 649–51.
22. A Comparison of the Puritans and Separatists, Historical Magazine, 1867, XI, 261–77; XII, 275–9.
23. New England Register, LIII, 109–14; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, 1916, IV, 56; History of Duxbury, J. Winsor, 1849, pp. 171, 234–6.
24. Leyden Documents relating to the Pilgrim Fathers, 1920, pp. IV, VI, VII, X, XXXII, XXXV, and especially XXXVIII.
25. The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 17, 49 et seq.
26. Plymouth Colony Records, XI, 6; XII, 116.
27. New England's Memorial, N. Morton, [first published 1669] 1855, p. 485.
28. History of Plymouth County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 67–70.
29. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 2, V, 33–85; New England Register, XLII, 62–4; Waters' Gleanings, I, 254–5; History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 62, 65, 95, 101–2; Historical Collections, E. Hazard, I, 50, 103.
30. Dictionary of National Biography, II, 1212–3; V, 18–9, 625–32; VII, 943; XVII, 772–80; XX, 1256; The Genesis of the United States, Alexander Brown, 1890, I, 167, 214, 224, 407, 417, 492; II, 833; The First Republic in America, Alexander Brown, 1898, pp. 116, 127, 131, 135–6, 150, 262–3, 280–3, 300, 334–7, 339, 341, 390, 408, 453, 525; English Politics in Early Virginia History, Alexander Brown, 1901, pp. 13, 15–8; The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 285–6; English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers, C. E. Banks, 1929, p. 38; History of the Virginia Company of London, E. D. Neill, 1869, pp. 41–2, 50, 120, 129, 167, 187–8, 333; English Calendar of State Papers, Domestic, 1619–1623, pp. 68–9; The Story of Virginia's First Century, M. N. Stanard, 1928, pp. 42, 82–4, 92–4, 131–4; Force's Tracts, III, No. 5, 20–1.

BULL

* [426] Robert Bull –aft.1676	m 1649	Phebe Jose –aft.1663
* [212] Samuel Chalker 1650–2–1711	m 1676	Phebe Bull 1655–prob.aft.1695
* [106] Stephen Chalker 1677–1727	m 1703	Elizabeth Chapman 1679–c.1738
* [52] Levi Chapman 1708–by 1771	m 1735	Lydia Chalker 1713–aft.1752
* ‡ † [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
* ‡ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
* ‡ § [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
‖ ‡ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‡ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Saybrook, Conn.
† Salem, Ohio.
‡ Marietta, Ohio.
§ Athens, Ohio.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

BULL

ROBERT[1] BULL,* the earliest of this name in our line, is first found of record at Saybrook, Connecticut. He was, doubtless, one of the original proprietors of the lands divided in 1648. A notice of a town meeting of Saybrook January 7, 1655–6, perhaps the earliest extant record of a municipal character pertaining to this place, shows[4] that ROBERT[1] BULL was present. At a town meeting on February 22, 1676, the home lot[5] of ROBERT[1] was mentioned in the description of the location of the meeting house. He had an interest[10] in a fourteen acre tract of land at Cooks Hill which, with ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER and others, he transferred to ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN. On May 13, 1669, ROBERT[1] BULL was presented for freemanship[8] [see Appendix, p. 857].

ROBERT[1] married, probably at Saybrook, on December 15, 1649, PHEBE JOSE.[1, 2] Presumably she was, herself, an emigrant for no other person of the name is recorded until later. While no evidence has been found as to the death of either ROBERT[1] or PHEBE, it seems probable that hers occurred by, or before, 1679, for in that year ROBERT[1] BULL (than whom none other of this name is found in New England thus early), married a Sarah (Ruscoe) Cole, widow of Henry Cole who died at Wallingford in 1676, and daughter of William[1] Ruscoe, who was probably a relative of our MERCY (RUSCOE) SEYMOUR, and was intimately associated[9] with her husband, RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR.

The children of ROBERT[1] and PHEBE (JOSE) BULL, all born at Saybrook, were[2, 3, 6]

I. Mary[2], b. December 7, 1651.
II. John[2], b. March 10, 1653. Returned to England.

*The family probably emigrated from Donnington, parish of Stowe, Gloucestershire, England, to which place John[2] [undoubtedly the son of ROBERT[1]] returned. He became a resident and had children born[1] there in 1679 and 1682.

The Thomas Bull, of Saybrook, who was much before the public ,is said[2] to have been of a different line.

III. PHEBE[2], b. early in August, 1655, at Saybrook. She m.[7] November 7, 1676 [October 31, also given, probably intention], SAMUEL[2] CHALKER [see Chalker, p. 177].

IV. Robert[2], b. March 1, 1662–3.

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, IV, 20; V, 249 [erroneously paged 247].
2. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 400–1.
3. Savage, I, 293–4; New England Register, IV, 20.
4. History of Norwich, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1866, y. 53.
5. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 472, 537.
6. New England Register, IV, 20, 22.
7. Savage, I, 352; New England Register, LIX, 133.
8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 105.
9. New England Register, LXXI, 111–114.
10. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 342.

BUSHNELL

* [400] Francis Bushnell -1646	m	[Rebecca Holmes?]
* † [200] William Bushnell prob.c.1620-2-1683	m c.1643	prob. Rebecca Chapman -bef.1683
† [100] Joshua Bushnell 1644-1710	m 1682	Mary Seymour 1658-aft.1710
† [50] Joshua Bushnell 1690-1778	m 2nd 1717	Elizabeth Han[d]ly c.1696-1777
† [24] Samuel Shipman 1725-1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733-1806
† ‡ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767-1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768-1828
† ‡ § [6] Charles Shipman 1787-1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793-1870
‖ ‡ [2] Beman Gates 1818-1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816-1895
‡ Rufus R. Dawes 1838-1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842-1921

* Guilford, Conn.
† Saybrook, Conn.
‡ Marietta, Ohio.
§ Athens, Ohio.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

BUSHNELL

FRANCIS[1] BUSHNELL, "the elder," was one of a group of emigrants who came over from old England in 1639 and signed, on "this first day of June," during the passage, a document known as the Guilford Covenant. This was an agreement relative to common welfare and that the company should settle together near the present town of New Haven.[1] Since only the males of the company were signers, it is not known whether or not he brought a wife with him, though a damage suit brought by Thomas Jones of Guilford against "goodwife Bushnell" and others for injury done to his corn by their hogs[9] in November, 1648, over two years after the death of FRANCIS[1], seems to argue that he either brought a wife from England or married a second time, after his arrival here.*

Documentary evidence as to the number and names of the children of FRANCIS[1] has not come to light, except in the case of his daughter, Rebecca[2], who had married John Lord and had died before February 11, 1646, on which date her husband presented to the court an inventory of such items of the estate of FRANCIS[1] "the elder" "as were remaining in y[e] hands & possession of the said Rebecca at the time of her decease."[2] At an unknown date, this John Lord, husband of Rebecca[2] Bushnell, deceased, and "executor in the will of FRANCIS[1] BUSHNELL, the elder, deceased," sold certain lands of the latter to John Fowler.[3] At a session of the Plantation Court held October 13, 1646, the will of FRANCIS[1], the elder, was presented and proved on the oaths of Henry Whitfield and William Leete, being the first probate handled by this body.[4, 9]

The English home of FRANCIS[1] is said to have been Horsted, co. Sussex,[9, 14] and tradition says that his wife was Rebecca Holmes,[4a] though proof of that is lacking.

The children [including WILLIAM[2]], who are referred to in this work as positively of the second generation, are generally believed, and with good

*The prefix "goodwife" presupposes an older person and generation, and it is highly improbable that any woman would have been sued thus if her husband were living. In this family, only FRANCIS[1] is known to have died before the date of this suit.

reason, to have belonged to FRANCIS[1], but in each case other than that of Rebecca[2] it must be understood that no documentary proof is found or cited except a deed[20] made in 1692, by a grandson of Francis[2], who used the term "my kinsman" in regard to a son of WILLIAM[2].

The children believed to have belonged to FRANCIS[1] BUSHNELL and his wife (Rebecca?) all born in England and in unknown order, were [3, 4a, 14, 20, 31]

I. Francis[2], [see NOTE, p. 170] called "junior" and "the younger"; possibly the man of that name, aged twenty-six when he embarked[5] on the "Planter" in April, 1635, with a wife Marie, aged twenty-six, and a daughter Martha, aged one year; probably he who was admitted as a freeman[6] of Salem, April 15, 1639; quite certainly he who was listed as an original settler[9] at Guilford with FRANCIS[1], "the elder," in 1639. It was doubtless he who with another man was appointed in September or December 1645, to do some work for the town of Guilford;[7] and, since FRANCIS[1], the elder, d. before[2] February 11, 1646, it was quite surely "the younger" who was a resident there in October, 1646; and, who in May, 1648, was appointed to keep the town mill in place of a former miller who had died.[7] One writer claims[39] that Francis[2] was b. 1599 and that his wife was Eliza Chapman, whom he calls sister of our ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, but no proof is produced. "Goodman Bushnell" who inspected the New Haven mill and dam in 1658 and advised as to desirable changes or repairs[8] was undoubtedly this same Francis[2]. He also bought lands in Saybrook, of William Hide, on October 7, 1660,[20] removed there before March, 1661, and entered into an agreement with that town in October, 1662, whereby he was to build and maintain a mill and to receive therefor a farm, which land remained in the family for two hundred years.[9] Some of his property adjoined that of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON.[10] Francis[2] Bushnell deeded his Guilford home to William Johnson of that place who had m. his daughter[13] Elizabeth[3]. His will named WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL and JOHN[2] CHAPMAN as executors, but they declined to serve, and his son Samuel[3] was appointed administrator, with "Lieut. WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL to assist him with his advise."[11] He d.[11] at Saybrook, December 4, 1681, and his wife, of unknown name, appears to have d. previously. His children born in uncertain order were [10a, 38, 39]

(1) Elizabeth[3], m. July 2, 1651, William[2] Johnson (Robert[1]), b. about 1630.
(2) Sarah[3], m. June 20, 1655, Joseph Ingham.
(3) Mary[3], m. January 1, 1663, Samuel Jones (Thomas).
(4) Martha[3], m. 1663–4, Jonathan Smith of Glastonbury.
(5) John[3], m. May 15, 1665, Sarah[2] Scranton (John[1]), b. 1645.
(6) Hannah[3], m. Stephen[2] Hosmer (Thomas[1]), b. 1645.
(7) Samuel[3], m. [38] April 17, 1684, Ruth[2] Sanford (Zachary[1]), b. 1659.

II. WILLIAM[2], see following.

III. Rebecca[2], b. (—); d. before February 11, 1646–7, at Saybrook;[2] m. John[2] Lord (Thomas[1]).

IV. Richard[2], b. perhaps about 1620;[12] d. between December 1, 1659, and July 17, 1660, at Norwalk; m. at Hartford, October 11, 1648, Mary[2] Marvin (MATTHEW[1]), who in turn m. 2nd, before March 6, 1661–2, Thomas Adgate[12] and removed with him to Norwich.

V. Sarah[2], said to have been bap. November 26, 1625, at Horsted, co. Sussex, England, to have emigrated with her father and have m. at Guilford, July 14, 1642, Rev. John

Hoadley.[9] Town records do not show the marriage but do show the birth of five children, the first one on September 29, 1643.[10a]

VI. perhaps John[2], a glazier, who came[40] over in the "Hopewell" in 1635, at the age of twenty-one. He had a grant of land in Salem in 1636–7, and in 1637–8 was paid for "glassing" the meeting house there. He was still single in 1637, and in 1640 remained a resident of Salem, but before 1655 he, or another of the same name, resided at Boston and was a witness there in 1661 and 1663. If the John Bushnell of Boston was identical with him of Salem, he must have m. very late in life, for there are recorded to him in the former place, by his wife Jane, (1) Dorothy in 1651; (2) Sarah in 1655; (3) Elizabeth (who d. young) in 1657; (4) John in 1659, who d. April 10, 1662; (5) Jane in 1662; and evidently he had a later son (6) John to whom a second administration of the father's estate was granted on December 14, 1685, when he became of age. The father, John, d. in Boston about August 5, 1667, and his widow, Jane administered his estate at the time, but in 1685, when her son took it over, she had "removed out of this jurisdiction." That statement may be explained by the fact that a Jane Bushnell in April, 1670, m. some John Hill in Connecticut (but evidently not the John Hill assigned to her who was then but two years old).[40] The son John Bushnell, jr., was probably he who had married Sarah (——) and had[40] a son John, born at Boston, August 4, 1687.

WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL (*Francis*[1]) was born probably about 1620–2, in England, and died November 12, 1683, at Saybrook, Connecticut.[14] He was married about 1643 and, according to an ancient document held by the Bushnell family but not now obtainable, to a sister of ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN[15] whose name is generally believed to have been REBECCA, though proof of that, the date of their marriage, or her death are not now in evidence.

WILLIAM[2] was resident at Guilford, as were FRANCIS[1], "the elder," and Francis[2], "Jr." On April 12, 1652, Daniel Sledd, of London, executor of the will of his father William Sledd, deceased, signed a power of attorney to his uncle, John Leigh* of Ipswich, Massachusetts, whereby that man was authorized and requested to demand from WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL, then of "Guilford in New England, sadler," a debt of £8–14–6 for goods which BUSHNELL had bought of William Sledd, as shown by his accounts.

Evidently WILLIAM[2] was slow in paying this account for on October 5, 1666, this John Leigh, continuing as attorney for Daniel Sledd, authorized "Peter Blanchford" of New London, to collect from WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL, then of Saybrook, a debt of about £8–14, "long since due" and to sue therefor if not

* This John Leigh was also uncle to the children of THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD, and of these he reared Sarah[2] Hungerford in his home after the death of her mother [see Hungerford, p. 479]. The Peter "Blanchford" [Blatchford] whom John Leigh deputized finally to collect from WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL [probably because of their residence in the same general locality], was also remotely related by marriage, being the second husband of the second wife of THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD, who was himself the brother of John Leigh's wife.[14a]

paid.[17] While one can not really approve of the negligence of WILLIAM[2] in the non-payment of this account, it at least served a good end in proving to his descendants his places of habitation at these dates. He had evidently made the removal here shown before 1660, for in March of that year he is seen to have been constable of Saybrook and to have been collector of the colony rates in that vicinity in 1659 and 1660.[18] In October, 1661, he was "established" as sergeant of the train band there[18] under Lieutenant WILLIAM[1] PRATT and, in May, 1679, as WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL, senior, he was confirmed lieutenant of that body.[18] He was nominated to be a freeman in 1667 and doubtless confirmed as such at the succeeding court for he was named as one of the freemen of Saybrook "already made" in October, 1669, and was a Representative for that town to the General Court in 1670.[18] According to tradition he built the first meeting house and, by record, he and his son built the second one. He received six shillings for mending the drum which called the people to worship and to town meetings, and ten shillings, six pence for making pikes, "presumably for the eight soldiers who flanked the meeting house door,"[18a] but certainly for the public service and protection. By the will of Joshua Uncas, the Indian, dated in 1675–6, WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL received two thousand acres of land.[22a]

On June 25, 1681, either WILLIAM[2] or his son William[3] bought of Thomas Adgate [second husband of Mary (Marvin) Bushnell who was earlier the wife of Richard[2] Bushnell, deceased], land in Oyster River Quarter in Saybrook, which had belonged to the latter.[19] At various dates down to 1682 WILLIAM[2] was appointed or chosen to fill different town offices such as Lister, Surveyor of Highways, Townsman and Leather Sealer or Inspector, the latter office being significant of his trade as a saddler,[19] and in an appointment of February, 1673, he is described as "Sergeant."

A deed dated April 27, 1692, and acknowledged July 2, 1696, conveyed land in the "Planting Field" at Saybrook, from John[4] Bushnell (John[3], Francis[2]) to his *kinsman* William[3] Bushnell (WILLIAM[2]) of that place, which property had been bought on October 7, 1660, by Francis[2], grandfather of the grantor, from William Hide, and which, incidentally, was adjoined on the west by property of another of our ancestors, WILLIAM[1] BEAMON.[20] This instrument and other similar evidence justifies our acceptance of the stated relationship between WILLIAM[2] and Francis[2] and their common descent from FRANCIS[1].

The inventory of the estate of WILLIAM[2] was presented to the New London court on November 24, 1683, and administration was granted to his older sons,

JOSHUA[3] and Samuel[3] until the succeeding September term of court at which time they were reappointed with the addition of William Dudley; also at that time a distribution was ordered to the children as here named, all the daughters but Lydia being given a married name. No wife was mentioned in the settlement, she, doubtless, having died previously.[10a, 21]

The children* of WILLIAM[2] and [undoubtedly] REBECCA (CHAPMAN) BUSHNELL, all born probably at Guilford or Saybrook, were[10a, 14, 21, 22, 31, 34]

I. JOSHUA[3], see following.
II. Samuel[3], b. middle of September, 1645; d. 1727;[25] m. 1st, October 7, 1675, Patience Rudd (Jonathan); m. 2nd, April 17, 1700, Priscilla Pratt.
III. Rebecca[3], b. October 5, 1646; m. John Hand.
IV. William[3], b. February 15, 1648; d. December 9, 1711; m. 1st, October 7, 1675, Rebecca (——), who d. May 14, 1703; m. 2nd, June 9, 1705, widow Sarah (——) Bull or Buel.[18a] This first wife may have been Rebecca[2] Stratton (John[1] of East Hampton, Long Island).[37]
V. Francis[3], b. January 6, 1649; probably erroneously said to have d. young,[14] and undoubtedly the man who m. October 12, 1675, Hannah[3] Seymour (THOMAS[2], RICHARD[1]). He is sometimes named as son to Richard[2], who, however, had but two sons according to his will dated in 1659, and they were certainly named Joseph[3] and Richard[3]. This Francis[3] was a resident of Norwalk where the family of Richard[2] lived, as early as 1671, thus making his identification with them a natural error. He removed to Danbury about 1685, where he d. in 1697, leaving seven daughters.[24b] He is sometimes even confused[20a] with his uncle Francis[2].
VI. Stephen[3], b. January 4, 1653; d. August, 1727.
VII. Thomas[3], b. January 4, 1653; twin to Stephen[3].
VIII. Judith[3], b. in the early part of January, 1655; d.[23] November 17, 1740; m. February 5 or 7, 1681–2, Dr. Joseph[2] Seward (William[1]).[23]
IX. Abigail[3], b. middle of February, 1659; d. June 30, 1750;[23] m. June 25, 1678 or 1679,[14, 23] Capt. John[2] Seward (William[1]).
X. Lydia[3], b. 1661; d. August 24, 1753;[23] m. July 14, 1686,[23] Caleb[2] Seward (William[1]).
XI. Daniel[3], b. (—); d. February, 1727–8.

JOSHUA[3] BUSHNELL (*William*[2], *Francis*[1]) was born May 6, 1644,[21] doubtless at Guilford; died at Saybrook between January 12, 1709–10, the date of his will, and February 6, following, when an inventory of his estate was taken.[10a] He married at Norwalk[24a, 14] in May, 1682, MARY[3] SEYMOUR [see Seymour, p. 729]. Of his activities nothing has come to light though he is called "Deacon."[24b] His will provided for his wife and three children and made his wife and only son his executors.[10a]

*There is a suggestion which may lead to a knowledge of the English origin of this Bushnell family. This is incorporated in a reported will of a Peter Bushnell called "of Drogheda" (Ireland) dated June 19, 1698, which mentioned "uncle Francis Bushnell across the seas"; cousins Edward Ball, Judith Willis and Mary Taintor; and Samuel Bushnell who had married Elizabeth Ball.

The children of JOSHUA[3] and MARY (SEYMOUR) BUSHNELL, all born at Saybrook, were[10a, 14, 34]

I. Thankful[4], b. January 3, 1686.
II. JOSHUA[4], see following.
III. Hannah[4], b. November 16, 1693; d. before June 19, 1754; m. February 18, 1712–3, Joseph Nettleton.[14]

JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL (*Joshua*[3], *William*[2], *Francis*[1]) was born November 18, 1690, at Saybrook, and died December 24, 1778, at that place. He married first, there, January 21, 1712–3, Margaret[4] Chapman (Samuel[3], Robert[2], ROBERT[1]),[24, 26] who died February 14, 1716, aged eighteen years, ten months, nine days.[9a] He married secondly, at the same place, either[31] January 21 or[9a] February 23, 1717, ELIZABETH HANLY* or HANDLEY,[24] who died May 12, 1777, in her eighty-first year.[24] He lived in that part of Saybrook which became Westbrook and was a deacon of the Congregational Church there, where at least two of his daughters, HANNAH[5] and Thankful[5], were baptized.[10a] In May, 1738, a request was made to the General Assembly that the Colony Treasurer be instructed to replace "broken bills" [meaning, doubtless, worn or mutilated currency] to various inhabitants who held such, among whom were JOSHUA[4] who had ten shillings worth.[27] That same year he was Deputy for Saybrook to this body and was also executor of the will of Joseph Scone, requesting permission to sell land to settle the debts owed by that man's estate.[27] He was confirmed lieutenant of the first company or train band of Saybrook in May, 1740. His sons,[28] Phineas[5] and Handley[5] served in the Colonial Wars in 1758 to 1762 as well as in the Revolution in 1777–8 and the latter was employed extensively in the Commissary department until 1781. It seems probable that

* Considerable study of the Hanly, Hanley, Handley, Henly, Hendley (all variants), family previous to 1725, in a search for the parentage of ELIZABETH HANLY who married JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL, of Saybrook, has failed thus far to disclose her identity. No early Hanleys were found in Connecticut,[9a] so presumably our ELIZABETH was herself an emigrant or JOSHUA[4] became acquainted with her elsewhere. His family had relatives in Boston which, like Saybrook, was a seaport thus affording easy means of travel and acquaintance.

That others who may carry the search further may avoid duplication of effort it seems well to state briefly some of the ground covered and facts eliminated by the compiler [and others], who for some time believed ELIZABETH (HANLEY) BUSHNELL, wife of JOSHUA[4], who died at Saybrook May 12, 1777, in her 81st year, to be identical with Elizabeth Hanley of Boston whose history follows:

Terence Henley of Boston married there April 2, 1694, Elizabeth[3] Weekes (William[2], George[1])[36] who was born September 16, 1653. This couple had five children born at Boston: namely, (1) Charles Henley, b. April 13, 1695; (2) Nathaniel Henley, b. April 26, 1696; (3) John Henley, b. April 28, 1697; (4) Elizabeth Henley, b. August 24, 1698; and (5) Mary Henley, b. May 10, 1701; d. May 4, 1702. Recent search, by Mr. E. L. Smith of Boston, through the probates and deeds there, shows that the Boston Elizabeth, daughter of Terence and Elizabeth (Weekes) Henley, married there January 19, 1726, Pickering Hall. On November 21, 1732, administration on the estate of Pickering Hall, mariner, late of Boston, was granted to Elizabeth Henley, widow. In the recorded documents he was called her son-in-law: so perhaps his wife had died previously. Therefore the identity of our ELIZABETH (HANLY) BUSHNELL, wife of JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL of Saybrook, is still unknown.

his occupation was that of a blacksmith for he bequeathed to his grandson Elias[6] Bushnell "all my tools and Utensild for Smith work."[29]

The will of JOSHUA[4] was dated April 3, 1771, and was presented to the Guilford Court on February 19, 1779.[29] The inventory of his estate showed personal property and real estate to the value of £1900–09–06. The will* provided for his wife and made bequests to his three sons, Phineas[5], Jonathan[5] and Handly[5]; to four daughters, Margaret[5], Elizabeth[5], HANNAH[5] and Thankful[5]; to grandson, Elias[6] Bushnell,† and to two granddaughters, namely, Lucy[6] [daughter of Joshua[5] Bushnell, deceased, "and now wife" of Samuel Hart] and ‡Margaret ["the now wife of Jonathan Bushnell Junr"]. It made his three sons executors and the records of the resultant distribution of land with various succeeding transfers show positively many of the relationships as here given and, being taken in connection with family records, justify the assumption of others.[34]

On February 10, 1802, HANNAH (BUSHNELL) SHIPMAN, widow of Captain SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN of Saybrook, sold to Richard Tryon six and one-fourth acres and thirty-nine rods in the Oyster River District near Clapboard Hill which had "descended to me from my father's estate,"[30] father not named, but Margaret (Bushnell) Shipman,§ in a deed of 1787, more considerately named her father,[30] "JOSHUA[4]." His grave stone, with that of his wife, is still standing in the cemetery of Saybrook village, town of Old Saybrook.[10a]

The child of JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL and his wife Margaret Chapman was[24, 26]

I. Mary[5], b. August 27, 1714; d. before April 3, 1771; m. June 21, 1733, William Parker.[9a]‡

The children of JOSHUA[4] and ELIZABETH (HANLY) BUSHNELL, all born at Saybrook in an unknown order, were[24, 31, 34]

II. Phineas[5], b. April 23, 1718; an executor of his father's will; m. about 1742, Priscilla Clark (Samuel of Saybrook).[9a] ||

* This document was witnessed in 1771 by John Tully, Parnell Tully and Elias Tully, Jr., and was proved in 1779 by the last two named. The identities of these people were as follows:

(a) John[3] Tully (William[2], John[1]) whose paternal grandmother was Mary[2] Beamon (WILLIAM[1]) and whose wife was Parnell[4] Kirtland (JOHN[3], NATHANIEL[2], PHILIP[1]).

(b) Parnell[4] Tully was an unmarried daughter of (a).

(c) Elias Tully, Jr., was surely a nephew of (a) and probably an unrecorded son of that man's brother Elias[3] Tully. He had married Azubah[6] Kirtland (Samuel[5], Samuel[4], JOHN[3], NATHANIEL[2], PHILIP[1]), who was a daughter of Thankful[5] (Bushnell) Kirtland and granddaughter of the testator.

† Son of Jonathan[5] Bushnell and his wife Elizabeth[4] Shipman (JOHN[3], JOHN[2], EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN).

‡ Daughter of William Parker and his wife Mary[5] Bushnell (JOSHUA[4]), who had herself married her first cousin, Jonathan[6] Bushnell, son of Jonathan[5] Bushnell (JOSHUA[4]) and his wife Elizabeth[4] Shipman (JOHN[3], JOHN[2], EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN).[9a, 29]

§ Two Bushnell sisters and a brother of theirs had married two Shipman brothers and a sister of theirs.

|| Phineas[5] and Priscilla (Clark) Bushnell had[9a] children, John Hanley[6], Priscilla[6] and Phineas[6] who survived them.

III. Joshua[5], b. prob. 1720–30; d. intestate before May 5, 1767,[31] when administration was granted to his widow;[30a] m. abt. 1750, Lydia Lynde.[31, 35*]

IV. Jonathan[5], b. abt. 1720; d. March 19, 1801, in 81st year; was an executor of his father's will; m. at Saybrook, December 9, 1741, Elizabeth[4] Shipman (JOHN[3], JOHN[2], EDWARD[1]) [see notes to will of JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL].

V. Handley[5], b. abt. 1725; d. January 1, 1811, aged 86; m. 1st, at Saybrook (Vol. II, Land Records), Chloe Bishop, who d. December 24, 1791, in her 62nd year;[10a] m. 2nd, Priscilla (——).[9a] They were buried at Saybrook Point.[10a]

VI. Margaret[5], m. at Saybrook, October 17, 1742, John[4] Shipman (JOHN[3], JOHN[2], EDWARD[1]).

VII. Elizabeth[5], b. January 21 or 24, 1724; d. June 21, 1812;[23] m. May 2, 1744 or 1747, David[4] Seward (William[3], John[2], William[1]).[14]

VIII. HANNAH[5], bap. June 18, 1733, at Westbrook, Congregational Church;[10a] d. September 4, 1806,[32] at Saybrook; m. there, January 10, 1754, Capt. SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN [see Shipman, p. 737].

IX. Thankful[5], bap. May 1, 1736, at Westbrook;[10a] m. May 7, 1755, as his first wife, Deacon Samuel[5] Kirtland[33] (Samuel[4], JOHN[3], NATHANIEL[2], PHILIP[1]).

NOTE

The death, near Boston, on March 28, 1636, of a "goodman Bushnell" who, by C. W. Pope, is identified (rightly or wrongly), as the Francis Bushnell, aged twenty-six, who came in the "Planter" with wife, Marie, and infant daughter, Martha, confuses identities which were previously all too uncertain. The circumstances are these:[41]

Gov. John Winthrop, of Massachusetts and Gov. John Winthrop of Connecticut, father and son, owned a farm about six miles up the Mistick River from Boston which they called "Ten Hills Farm." The father wrote frequent letters to his son in Connecticut telling in detail of the progress of their various interests. Excerpts from these letters, which follow, will show that a goodman Bushnell whom they both honored and probably employed at "Ten Hills," died there on March 28, 1636, and Pope says this was the Francis, aged twenty-six, who came in 1635. If this be true, at least two others of this name came early to New England, namely, FRANCIS[1], the elder of Guilford, and a Francis who was made a freeman of Salem on April 15, 1639, and was probably identical with Francis[2] of Guilford and Saybrook, who died in 1681.

The letter of March 28, 1636, says, "I went to Ten Hills this morning with your mother and your wife, to have seen goodman Bushnell; but the Lord had taken him away half an hour before we came there. So I made haste down [to Boston] to send you notice of it; but the ship was under sail before I came, which gives me no time to write further to you, for I must send the boat presently after her. You shall receive of Mr. Hodges [master of the vessel] the key of one of his chests, where the seeds are; the key of the other can't be found; so you must break it open. There is in one of them a rundlet of honey which she [Bushnell's widow] desires may be sent to her against she lie down [confinement? see below]. She desires you to take an inventory of all he hath there."

---

* Considerable confusion has arisen in some quarters by the failure to discriminate between Joshua[5] and his father of the same name, for the elder man died about eleven years after the younger. The wife and daughter of the younger man have even been assigned to the elder.[35] In May, 1754, the General Assembly reimbursed Sarah Lynde in the sum of £2. 18. 9 and Joshua[5] Bushnell in the sum of 9s 5d for "bills of credit on this Colony, being their own proper estate, [which] was consumed in their house, which was burnt in May last."[35] This was, beyond doubt, Sarah (Pratt) Lynde, widow of Nathaniel, Jr., and mother-in-law of Joshua[5] Bushnell with whom he evidently then made his home.

Some added points of printed error and confusion are that this Joshua[5] is sometimes called "John," his wife's birth is sometimes omitted from the record of her brothers and sisters; his daughter Lucy is, in one publication, made to die in 1743, when in truth she was not born until about ten years after that date, was married in 1770 and actually died[35] in 1841.

Joshua[5] was an Ensign in 1757, a Lieutenant in 1764 and a Captain in 1766. He planted an orchard on land belonging to his father JOSHUA[4] which the latter, in his will, gave to the daughter of the former, Lucy (Bushnell) Hart, adding also other land as his personal gift.[29, 35]

The letter of April 26, 1636, said " . . . I sent you two letters lately, one by Mr. Hodges and the other by Mr. Oldham wherein I certified to you the death of goodman Bushnell, one whom you will miss above all the rest. I had him down to Boston, to do him what honor I could at his burial. Your carpenter and the other fellow (who, I think, truly fears God) are recovering, and, I hope, shall be able to come to you in the Blessing. I pray send me some saltpetre; for I suppose it was a means, through God's blessing, to save one of their lives being far spent in a fever."

The third letter of June 23, 1636, said, "Goodwife B.[ushnell?] is delivered of a daughter, and abroad again in a week. . . . I do not send you George, because they are speaking of putting off servants, etc. I suppose when they come to you, they will consider of the widow Bushnell and of the other widows at Ten Hills, widow Briskowe, who hath been sick ever since you went abroad, and is a great burden to us."

As appears here, this "goodman" Bushnell's wife bore a posthumous daughter between March 28, 1636, and June 23, 1636. C. W. Pope identifies(?)[41] mother and daughter, respectively as Martha Bushnell who joined Boston First Church on February 3, 1638, and had a daughter Mary baptized on February 17, following. But this statement does not coincide well with the wife Marie claimed for him in 1635. Pope further says the daughter Mary Bushnell m. October3, 1657, George Robinson. Yet another writer[14] thoughtlessly assigns this Mary, husband and all, to John[2] and Jane Bushnell whose recorded children were from fifteen to twenty-five years younger. The Bushnell who died in 1636 can scarcely be the John who came in the "Hopewell" in 1635 for he consistently appears in Salem in 1637–40, so he who died is still to be identified.

REFERENCES

1. "Leete Papers," Letters and Papers, 1632–1678, Doc. 7, Mass. Hist. Soc., Boston, Mass.
2. Guilford, Conn., Town Records, Vol. A, p. 20.
3. Guilford, Conn., "Terriors," Vol. 1, p. 20.
4. Guilford, Conn., Town Records, Vol. A, p. 15.

4a. Old Northwest Quarterly, VII, 1904, pp. 137–45.

4b. History of Guilford, Conn., B. C. Steiner, 1897, pp. 47, 502–3; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 469, 575–7.

5. New England Register, XIV, 305; Hotten's Emigrant Lists, I, 49.
6. Essex Institute Historical Collections, IX, 86.
7. Guilford, Conn., Town Records, Vol. A, pp. 2, 4, 15, 29.
8. New Haven Historical Society Collections, Ancient Record Series, I, 390–1.
9. History of Guilford, Conn., B. C. Steiner, 1897, pp. 43, 47, 52, 70, 88, 97.

9a. Statement of H. W. Brainard of Hartford, Conn.

10. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, I, 6, 40, 95.

10a. Consultation of Saybrook and Guilford, Conn., Records made and reported on by F. F. Starr, Middletown, Conn.

11. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, Vol. 1, p. 8; New London County, Conn., Court Records, Vol. 4–6, p. 18.
12. Hartford, Conn., Land Records, Vol. 1, reverse end, p. 23; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 607; Hartford County, Conn., Court Records, II, 6, Office of Sec'y of State; Ibid., reverse end, pp. 146–7; Norwich, Conn., Vital Records, I, 10; Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, p. 302.
13. Guilford, Conn., "Terriers," Vol. I, p. 9.
14. New England Register, LIII, 208–14; LXXII, 210; Connecticut Magazine, 1908, XII, 146–8; Manual of the First Congregational Church at Guilford, Conn., 1875, p. 21.

14a. John Leigh Genealogy, W. Lee, 1888, pp. 75, 83–5; Willey Genealogy, H. Willey, 1888, p. 3.

15. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 29–30.
16. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1902, p. 698a.
17. New London County, Conn., Court Records, Vol. 1, 100.
18. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 362, 375; II, 73, 127, 523; III, 28.

18a. Barton Genealogy, W. E. Barton, 1900, p. 105.

19. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, Vol. I, 3; Saybrook, Conn., Town Votes, various pages.
20. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, Vol. I, 6, 253.

20a. History of Norwalk, Conn., C. M. Selleck, 1896, pp. 64, 80, 197; Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, p. 581; History of Danbury, Conn., S. B. Hill, 1896, pp. 13, 25, 47–9; Ancient Historical Records of Norwalk, Conn., E. Hall, 1847, pp. 61, 84, 188; Norwich, Conn. Vital Records, I, 10.

21. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, Vol. I, pp. 6, 116; New London County, Conn., Court Records, Vol. 4–6, pp. 80–1, now in State Library at Hartford, Conn.
22. New England Register, IV, 19–20.

22a. Ibid., XIII, 235.

23. Ibid., LII, 323–4, 328; LIII, 212; History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, pp. 182, 350.
24. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, II, 125, 418.

24a. New England Register, LXXII, 210.

24b. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 308–9.
25. Early Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 446–8.
26. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 72.
27. Colonial Records of Connecticut, VIII, 156, 176, 186, 189, 292.
28. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, VIII, 178, 222; X, 93, 208, 276, 342; Records of Connecticut, II, 1895, p. 529; III, 1922, pp. 283, 348.
29. Guilford, Conn., Probate Records, XIII, 160–2.
30. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, IX, 467; XII, 430.
30a. Guilford, Conn., Probate Records, X, 53.
31. Data furnished by Rev. Joseph Brown Turner of Port Deposit, Md., which he says tallied with the findings of J. Gardner Bartlett.
32. Family Records.
33. New England Register, XIV, 241–4.
34. Deductions drawn by F. F. Starr of Middletown, Conn., from study of the original records at Guilford, Saybrook, Westbrook and Hartford.
35. New England Register, LIII, 212; LXXII, 210; Colonial Records of Connecticut, X, 274; XI, 68; XII, 250, 506; Salisbury Genealogies, E. E. and E. M. Salisbury, 1892, I, pt. 2, p. 407 and pedigree in Sup. I; Pratt Genealogy, F. W. Chapman, 1864, p. 288; Stephen Hart Genealogy, A. Andrews, 1875, p. 404.
36. Weekes Genealogy, R. D. Weekes, 1885, pp. 27, 32, 35–6; Boston Record Commissioners Reports, IX, 217, 222, 227, 233, 241; Savage, IV, 453–4.
37. A Book of Strattons, H. R. Stratton, 1908, I, 122.
38. Families of Ancient New Haven, D. L. Jacobus, V, 1029; Sanford Genealogy, C. E. Sanford, 1911, II, 1380; Hotten's Lists, I, 49; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, II, 65; New England Register, IV, 138; XIV, 305; Fifty Puritan Ancestors, E. T. Nash, 1902, pp. 147, 151–3; Salem, Mass., Town Records, I, 86; Steiner's Guilford, p. 128.
39. Scranton Genealogy, E. Scranton, 1855, p. 16.
40. New England Register, IV, 138; XIV, 306; LVII, 87–8; Hotten's Lists, I, 49; Boston Record Commissioners Report, IX, 33, 50, 60, 69, 83, 86, 99, 172; Pope's Pioneers, p. 84; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, I, 365, 455, 464, II, 65, 102; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 334; Essex Institute Historical Collections, I, 67; XXVII, 184; XXXIX, 231; Salem Town Records, I, 22, 61, 64–5, 103, 106; Suffolk Deeds, IV, fol. 88; VI, fol. 104; Savage.
41. History of New England, John Winthrop (Gov. of Mass.), Savage Edition, 1853, I, 465–7, 471; Boston Record Commissioners Report IX, 7, 62; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 70, 84.

CHALKER

* † [424] Alexander Chalker –c.1673 or 1675	m 1649	Katharine Post –aft.1666
† [212] Samuel Chalker 1650–2–1711	m 1676	Phebe Bull 1655–prob.aft.1695
† [106] Stephen Chalker 1677–1727	m 1703	Elizabeth Chapman 1679–c.1738
† [52] Levi Chapman 1708–by 1771	m 1735	Lydia Chalker 1713–aft.1752
† § ‡ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
† § [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
♦ ‖ § [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
¶ § [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
§ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Guilford, Conn.
† Saybrook, Conn.
‡ Salem, Ohio.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

CHALKER

ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER, sometimes called "SANDER CHALKER," came to Guilford, Connecticut, when a young man, very probably as one of the second shipload of prospective settlers,[1] in July, 1639. The first definite records concerning him[1b, 4, 13] are in 1645 and 1647; on both occasions he was brought before the court, having been charged, in the first instance, with neglect of duty while serving as a night watch,* and, in the second case, having "showed much rashness and confidence" in daring to criticize the amount of cotton allotted to him for a padded canvas coat. The New Haven Court had, in 1643, ordered that every planter should have a canvas coat quilted thickly with cotton as a defense against Indian arrows. The town bought and distributed a quantity of cotton and the secretary's bill showing "everyone's just proportion" was "proved to be just and true." The criticism of ALEXANDER[1] was construed as "speaking against the government" and he and a companion acknowledged their fault and craved forgiveness which was granted.[1b] He continued to hold to his own opinions, however, and on February 20, 1649–50, at a meeting held to consider the prospects for the continuance or increase of contributions to the minister's salary, he "doubted how he should."

The town of Guilford had neglected until May 22, 1648, the formality of reading the freeman's charge to those who had qualified though he, among others, was considered a freeman for some time previous to this date.[1b, 2, 3] This proves that he was also a church member, for Guilford was under the jurisdiction of New Haven and in that colony† none but church members could vote.

*On October 9, 1645, fines were imposed on five men, including ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER, who was charged with "being destitute and careless in his watch in a grosse manner, sleeping in his centrye and loosing his arms."[1b]

The words quoted, at that time had quite a different meaning than we give them now. "Destitute" meant "to forsake, desert, abandon, leave, to disappoint;" "grosse" [as applied to persons] meant "rude, uninstructed, ignorant."[1c]

†The power of the clergy reached its extreme point in New Haven Colony where each of the towns [New Haven, Milford, Guilford, Stamford, Southold on Long Island and Branford] was governed by seven ecclesiastical officers

ALEXANDER[1] had a home lot of three acres next south of John Scranton's on the east side of Crooked Lane, now State Street, and in 1648 he sold it to John Sheather.[1b] He is said[4] to have sold his lands at Guilford and to have removed to Saybrook between 1652 and 1655, but since he was married at the latter place in 1649–50 and all of his children from 1650 onward were born[6] there, it is evident that his change of residence must have taken place by 1649. The early home of the family was on or near Saybrook Point, the oldest portion of the town.[9] ALEXANDER[1] evidently owned considerable property in his later life for, in a list of land holdings of ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, of Saybrook, mention is made of various tracts at Cook's Hill, Oyster River Bridge, Long Point and at Poochaug River adjoining the Chalker lands.[7] Two plots, of about three and eleven acres[8] respectively, ALEXANDER[1] sold to ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN.

On October 11, 1666, the General Court appointed "Lt. PRAT, ROB[T] CHAPM: Goodm: CHAULK[R], Mathew Griswold and W[m] Waller a Comittee for enterteineing and approueing such as are receaued inhabitants on y[e] east side y[e] Riuer at Sea Brooke,"[10] showing plainly the standing of ALEXANDER[1] in that community.[13] One year [less a day] later he was one of a number of men at Saybrook to be nominated for freemanship[10] and on "y[e] 4th, 8th, '69" he was one of the "freemen already made" there.[11]

ALEXANDER[1] married[5] at Saybrook, September 29, 1649, KATHERINE[2] POST [see Post, p. 668]. Tradition says that he was killed in 1675 in the Narragansett War, being one of the eight men drawn from Saybrook for service in that campaign. "His sword is still preserved by his descendants. The names of the others have not been preserved."[24] However, other writers believe him to have died in or before 1673 for, on September 23, 1673, a "Katern Chalker" was married to John Hill, of Guilford, and many writers have drawn the conclusion that it was the widow of ALEXANDER[1] rather than the daughter of the same name.[4, 14, 15] The statement that ALEXANDER[1] was killed in the Narragansett fight in 1675 is further upheld in an article[27] telling of the will of Daniel Grinnell who made a bequest to his daughter, Jemima Chalker, who had married on March 4, 1724, Abraham[3] Chalker, Jr., son of Abraham[2] Chalker, Sr., and grandson of "ALEXANDER CHALKER who was killed in the Narragansett fight."

The children of ALEXANDER[1] and KATHERINE (POST) CHALKER, all born at Saybrook, were[4, 5, 12, 13, 26]

known as "pillars of the church." These magistrates served as judges, and trial by jury was dispensed with because no authority could be found for it in the law of Moses. None but church members could vote. This measure at the outset automatically deprived of the franchise more than half of the settlers in New Haven town and nearly half in Guilford.[28]

i. probably Stephen[2], b.* Sept. 8, 1650.
ii. SAMUEL[2], see following.
iii. Mary[2], b. April 27, 1653; m. March 7, 1677–8, Richard Cozens.[4]
iv. Abraham[2], b. October 19, 1655; said to have d. February 17, 1730–1;[26] m. 1st, January 16, 1679–80, Hannah Sanford; m. 2nd, September 23, 1686, Sarah Ingham; m. 3rd, November 19, 1691, Deborah Barber.
v. Katherine[2], b.[5, 12] September 8 or[4] November 8, 1657; prob. she who m. as his second wife, John[2] Jordan (John[1]) for his son, James[3] Jordan in 1705 was called great grandson of STEPHEN[1] POST [who was grandfather of this Katherine[2] Chalker] whose estate he shared. Katherine[2] Chalker has sometimes, but probably erroneously, been said to have m. John[1] Hill as his second wife. It may have been her mother, bearing identical name, who m. John[1] Hill on September 23, 1673, but if it were her mother, it proves that ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER d. before that date and therefore could not have been in the Narragansett fight.[4, 15, 17a]
vi. Sarah[2], b. October 19, 1659.
vii. Jane[2], b. March 25, 1662.
viii. Alexander[2], b.[5, 12] February 24 or 25,[4] 1666; d. May 25, 1727.[4]

SAMUEL[2] CHALKER (*Alexander*[1]) is said to have been† born[12, 17] in 1652 and also April 27, 1651,[26] is given as his birth date, but if the date assigned to Stephen[2] is correct this can scarcely be accurate. He died in 1711,[4, 12] but at what place has not yet been ascertained. He married[16] PHEBE[2] BULL [see Bull, p. 160], and two dates are given for this event, though the first date, October 31, 1676, may have pertained[5, 13] to the publication of the intention and the ceremony itself may have been performed[12, 13] on November 7, 1676.

On February 7, 1678, the town of Saybrook "agreed that the Souldiers that went out of the Town in the Indian war shall have five acres apiece of Land . . . The names of the soldiers that the Town have given Land to, are as followeth, viz . . . SAMUEL CHALKER . . ."[18]

The children of SAMUEL[2] and PHEBE (BULL) CHALKER, all born at Saybrook, were[4, 5, 12, 13]

i. STEPHEN[3], see following.
ii. Samuel[3], b. October 6, 1679; m.[26] June 24, 1711, Rebecca Ingram.
iii. Phebe[3], b. March 29, 1682; d. July 14, 1683, at Saybrook.
iv. Phebe[3], b. May 9, 1685.
v. Alexander[3], b. abt.[12] 1690.
vi. Mehitable[3].
vii. Ruth[3].

* A Stephen Chalker is uniformly stated[5, 12, 13] to have been born September 8, 1650, and no other origin than this presents itself for the Stephen Chalker who was fined twenty shillings in New London in 1673 for driving cattle on the Sabbath.[16a] Since he is not found later, he probably died unmarried or in young manhood.

† The identity of SAMUEL[2] is sometimes confused[4] with that of Stephen[2].

STEPHEN[3] CHALKER (*Samuel*[2], *Alexander*[1]) was born September 11, 1677, at Saybrook, and died[13] June 2, 1727, probably at that place. He married,[13, 19] either at Saybrook or East Haddam, June 3, 1703, ELIZABETH[3] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 192]. He made his home at Saybrook as his father and grandfather had done.

On April 8, 1712, after the death of his father-in-law, Capt. JOHN[2] CHAPMAN, an agreement between the heirs as to the division of the estate was recorded at Hartford showing that STEPHEN[3] had signed for his wife.[23] The estate of Lydia[3] Chapman, unmarried sister of ELIZABETH (CHAPMAN) CHALKER, inventoried at over £414, was admitted[23] to probate on August 1, 1738. The heirs signed an agreement of distribution on November 7, following, in which they referred to their "sister ELIZABETH CHALKER, late of Saybrook decd.," giving her share to her children.[23]

The children of STEPHEN[3] and ELIZABETH (CHAPMAN) CHALKER, all born probably at Saybrook,[4, 13, 19] were

I. Elizabeth[4], b. March 12, 1704; d. 1707.
II. Phebe[4], b. August 11, 1705.
III. Stephen[4], b. July 19, 1707; m.[4] 1st, December 4, 1727, Mehitable[4] Chapman* (Samuel[3], Robert[2], ROBERT[1]); m. 2nd, (——); m. 3rd, (——); m. 4th, November 5, 1753, Sarah (Denison) Babcock.[20]
IV. Mary[4], b. May 30, 1710.
V. LYDIA[4], b. July 30, 1713,[13, 21] and d. after 1752; m.,[17, 22] prob. at Saybrook, January 16, 1735, her first cousin, LEVI[4] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 193].
VI. Mehitable[4], b. August 13, 1715; d. March 7, 173–.
VII. Deborah[4], b. May 2, 1718.

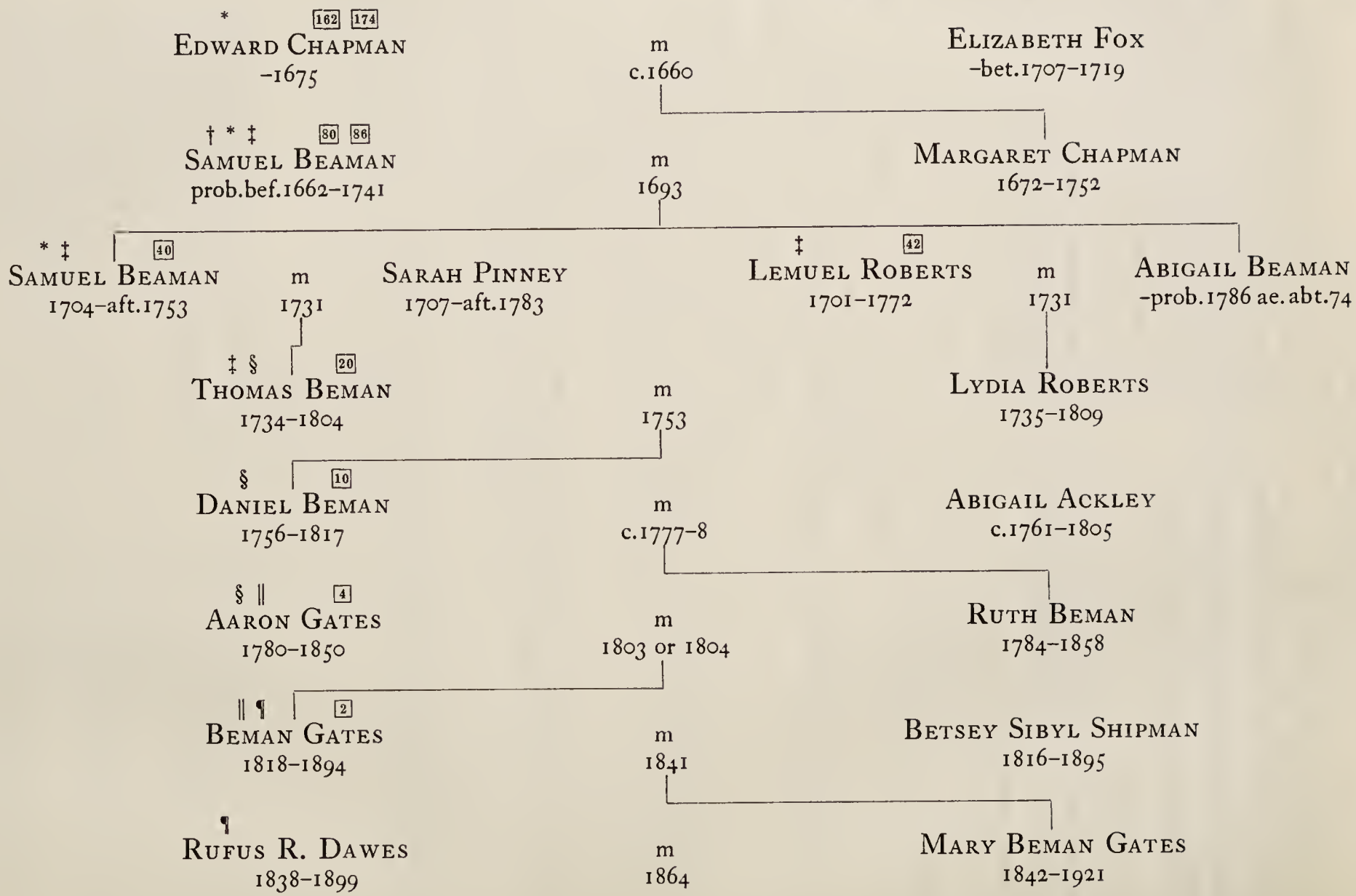
* Stephen[4] Chalker had by his first wife, Mehitable[4] Chapman, a daughter,[20, 25] Mehitable[5] Chalker, who married her cousin, Josiah[6] Hull, son of JOSEPH[5] and SYBIL (COE) HULL and brother of our ELIZABETH (HULL) CHAPMAN. The last named woman was wife of LEVI[5] CHAPMAN, Jr., who, in turn, was the son of LEVI[4] and LYDIA (CHALKER) CHAPMAN above [see Chapman, p. 194, and Hull, p. 464].

REFERENCES

1. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1902, pp. 626–7.
1b. History of Guilford, Conn., B. C. Steiner, 1897, pp. 54, 61, 81, 124, 126, 418. New Haven, Conn., Colony Records, I, pp. 121, 214.
1c. Murray's Dictionary.
2. History of Guilford, Conn., R. D. Smith, 1877, pp. 13, 25. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1881, p. 166.
3. History of New Haven County, Conn., ed. J. L. Rockey, 1892, II, 116.
4. New England Register, LIX, 133–4.
5. Ibid., IV, 22, 137–8.
6. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1902, p. 628.
7. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 343.
8. Ibid., pp. 341–2.
9. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 537.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 48, 73.
11. Ibid., II, 522–3.
12. Savage, I, 352.
13. Early Puritan Settlers in Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 517–8.
14. New England Register, LVII, 88; LXII, 333–4.

15. Ibid., LVII, 88, 250. Ibid., LXIII, 196.
16. Savage, I, 294.
16a. History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, p. 251.
17. Descendants of John Porter, H. P. Andrews, 1893, II, 592–3.
17a. New England Register, LXII, 333; Ibid., LXIII, 196.
18. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 456.
19. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 38–9.
20. Babcock Genealogy, S. Babcock, 1903, pp. 38–9, 77–8.
21. Saybrook Town Records.
22. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 41.
23. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, II, 173–4. Ibid., III, 242.
24. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 452.
25. Hull Family in America, Col. Weygant, 1918. Robert Coe, Puritan, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 100. D. A. R. Lineage Books, XXVI, 277; XXXVIII, 284. Munger Book, J. B. Munger, 1915, p. 67.
26. History of Trumbull County, Ohio, H. T. Upton, 1909, II, 420.
27. Putnam's Historical Magazine, N. S. Vol. VI, 1898, pp. 148, 192.
28. The Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, p. 148.

CHAPMAN (Edward)



* Windsor, Conn.
† Springfield, Mass.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

CHAPMAN (Edward)

EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN, the earliest known ancestor in this line, is first found at Windsor, Connecticut, about 1662. Whether or not he was related in any way to our ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, of Saybrook, does not appear. That EDWARD[1] came from England is proved by a church record[1, 2] in which statement is made that "EDWARD CHAPMAN married ELIZABETH Fox in Ingland." The marriage probably took place as early as 1660; he was sued in Connecticut for a debt of £6–03–02 on March 5, 1662–3, and must have been living in New England some time prior to that date.[2]

He took the freeman's oath [see Appendix, p. 853] on May 9, 1667, and his name appears in the list compiled October 11, 1669, of "all the freemen that live within the limits of Windsor."[2, 5] In 1672 he was one of those who signed a remonstrance to the General Court relative to a certain land grant which had seemed unfair to many of the inhabitants. On March 14, 1673–4, he was chosen fence viewer for that part of the town that lay north of the river.[2]

In the campaign against the Indians in 1675, afterwards known as King Philip's War, calls were made for men from the various towns and, on August 5, of that year, fourteen men from Windsor were commanded to march to Springfield. The following day twenty-five "dragoones" were ordered "raysed" in Windsor "to be in readiness upon an hower's warning for a march; whoe are to have their armes well fixed and fitted for seruice."[2, 8] EDWARD[1] was one who served, being called a "Trooper."[7] He gave his life for his country at the Great Swamp Fight [see Cooke, pp. 247–53], and it is thus recorded in the Windsor Town Records:[10, 15]

> "Here I set down the Deaths of Several parsons that were against the Indians, and were wounded that they dyed, it was on the 19th: of December, 1675, . . . EDWARD CHAPMAN. . . ."

Since few records appear showing that EDWARD[1] held property[3, 6] in his own name and since his only occupation seems to have been that of husband-

man, it is probable that on his arrival in Windsor, he and his wife, with her mother, MARGARET (CLARK) FOX [see Fox, p. 345], went to live on the homestead of Henry Clark in the absence of its owner who had removed to Hadley, Massachusetts, about 1661. Henry Clark was a brother of MARGARET (CLARK) FOX and uncle of ELIZABETH CHAPMAN, and they both were beneficiaries of his will though the former did not live to inherit. Four days after the untimely death of EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN in the Indian War, ELIZABETH (FOX) CHAPMAN, left with six young children, the eldest twelve years of age, fortunately came into possession of the property of her uncle,[3, 11] receiving his home at Windsor, where he had been a prominent citizen, and seven small near-by tracts of meadow land and swamp.

On December 15, 1675, the colony "laid" a tax of twelve pence on the pound to defray its indebtedness.[2] The collector was authorized to receive the rate, or assessment, in wheat at five shillings per bushel, peas at four shillings, Indian corn at three shillings, beef at forty shillings per barrel and pork at three pounds. He was to accept not more than one half the amount of the levy "in flesh," the remainder to be in grain. With the record of this order is included a statement of the debts to be paid from the proceeds, from which we quote this item:[2]

"To Mrs CHAPMAN for her husband on indian warr acount . . . £05–08–07."

A petition, still extant, presented at a much later date by Simon[2] Chapman to the General Assembly on May 8, 1718, requested a grant of one hundred and fifty acres of land in consideration of the fact that his father had volunteered in the "old Warr," had fitted himself with arms, ammunition, etc., at his own cost and had been killed leaving a family of small children, one of whom was and always would be a cripple, and that none of his armor or clothing had been returned. No record has been found of any action taken in this matter.[2, 9]

Notwithstanding the fact that her husband was killed in the war, ELIZABETH CHAPMAN is credited with having given "£0–10–6" to "ye uollintarie contrebution mad for ye poor in wanths in other collonyes. upon a motion sent to This collony of conecticot it was don Juen.11.76."[2, 9]

An inventory of the estate of EDWARD[1] was taken in February, 1675–6, and presented[13] on March 2, following, showing a valuation of £184–10–00, consisting wholly of personal property. It also gave a list of the children and their ages. The widow was made administratrix. A division of the estate was ordered by the Court in March, 1676–7, as the result of which the daughter,

MARGARET[2], our ancestress, received fifteen pounds fourteen years later when she became eighteen years of age.[2]

The Windsor Church record, though worn and illegible in places, seems to show that ELIZABETH was admitted to membership on April 22, 1677, and her seven children were surely baptized exactly one week later.[2, 14]

On June 19, 1677, less than a month before her second marriage, ELIZABETH conveyed to two trustees all of the estate of EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN then in her possession, to be held by them in trust for her children, reserving for herself the use of the property until they were of age. On the same day, by another instrument, she deeded to the "children that now I have & those that god Shall giue me" all the real estate willed to her by her uncle, specifying that it should be divided among them immediately after her death.[2]

ELIZABETH survived her second husband, Samuel Cross, who died November 5, 1707. He willed to her the life use of his homestead and ten acres of other land; he made various bequests to his relatives which were not to become payable until one year after her death.[2] Simon[2] Chapman, as administrator of his stepfather's estate, filed his accounting on April 13, 1719, showing the payment of these several legacies.[2, 12] From this we may assume that his mother, ELIZABETH, died before that date.

The children of EDWARD[1] and ELIZABETH (FOX) CHAPMAN, all born in Windsor, were[1, 2, 4, 14, 15, 16, 13]

I. Henry[2], b. July 4, 1663; d. December 22, 1713; m. May 11, 1692, Hannah[3] Grant (Tahan[2], MATTHEW[1]).
II. Mary[2], b. August 23, 1664; d. June 30, 1665.
III. Mary[2], b. October 27, 1665; d. unm. May 7, 1686.
IV. Elizabeth[2], b. January 15, 1667; m. December 11, 1684, Joseph Strickland.
V. Simon[2], b. April 30, 1669; d. October 12, 1749; m. Sarah (——).
VI. Hannah[2], b. May 3, 1671; d. December 28, 1752; m. October 29, 1690, Matthew[3] Grant (Samuel[2], MATTHEW[1]).
VII. MARGARET[2], b. March 7, 1672, and d. August 18, 1752, at Wintonbury.[17] She m. at Simsbury,[17] May 10, 1693, SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN [see Beaman, p. 109].
VIII. Sarah[2], b. May 24, 1675; living March 1, 1676–7.

REFERENCES

1. MATHEW GRANT's Church Record; History of Ancient Windsor, H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, Appendix A., pp. 872–81.
2. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 155–62.
3. History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 153.
4. Savage, I, 361; Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 542.
5. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 57–8, 519.
6. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 163.
7. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 468.

8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 345–6.
9. MATHEW GRANT's Church Record (pub. —), pp. 2, 4, 7–9, 11, 13.
10. Vital Records of Windsor, Conn., Trans. by E. S. Welles, 1898, p. 28; Lineage Book of the Daughters of the Founders and Patriots of America, IV, p. 164.
11. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 548–9; History of Ancient Windsor, H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 153.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 53.
13. Ibid., I, 187.
14. MATHEW GRANT's Church Record.
15. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 147.
16. New England Register, V, 66.
17. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, I, 149–52; New England Register, LXXI, 298; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 187.
18. Grant Family, G. H. Grant, 1898, pp. 3–4.

CHAPMAN (Robert)

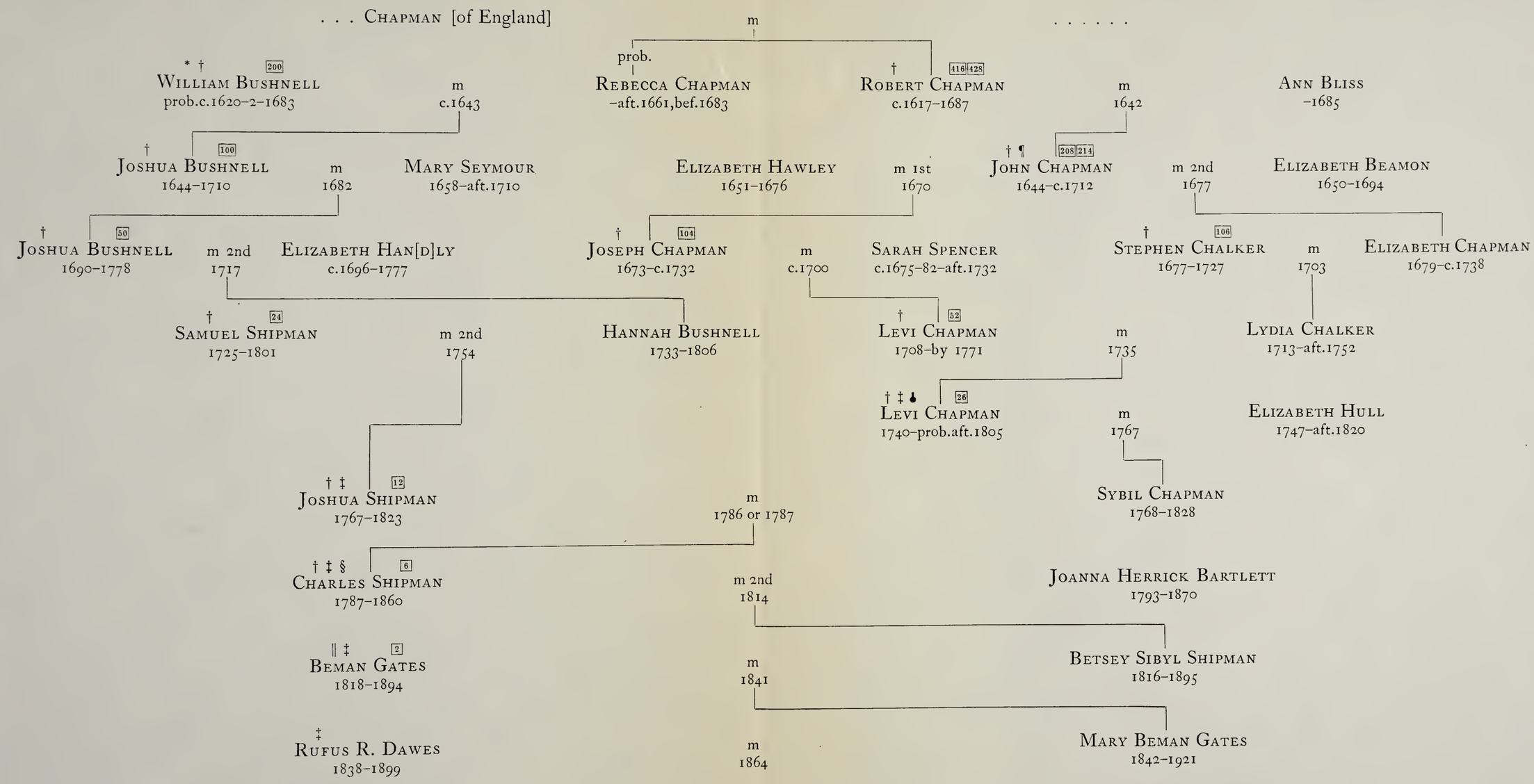
ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN is said to have been a native of Hull, co. York, England, and to have emigrated[1] from there to Boston in August, 1635, removing the following November to Saybrook where he was certainly an associate of Lion Gardiner and his company who took possession of the land at the mouth of the Connecticut River under the patent of the "Lords and Gentlemen" including Lord Saye and Sele,* Lord Brooke,* Sir Richard Saltonstall[3a] and, later, George Fenwick.† ROBERT[1] was born about 1616 and, according to family tradition, left Hull when he was about eighteen years old. This same record claims also that his father was a soap manufacturer of that city; that he had a brother who perished in the war in Flanders; that his mother was anxious to emigrate to America but when his father opposed the idea she induced ROBERT[1] [or "ROBIN"], and afterwards his three sisters, to embark for the new world in the hope that when they were established there their father would consent to accompany her and join them.[2] There is no evidence that the parents ever came but, from an ancient document in possession of the Bushnell family in Saybrook, it appears that one of these sisters married in New England WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL [through whom we also descend—see Bushnell, p. 165]; another married a man who removed with her to the West Indies and the third died unmarried.[2]

As soon as the Indians had been partly subdued, ROBERT[1] settled on a fertile farm about three miles west of the Saybrook fort and at the mouth of the Oyster River, a part of which land had been cleared and cultivated by the Indians and, apparently, earlier occupied by them as a settlement, for many shells, arrowheads and some remains of warriors have been uncovered there.[2] The original homestead must have comprised four or five hundred acres; it was bounded on the east by Oyster River, north by the Big Hill, west by the Little Hill and south by Long Island Sound.[2] The shore abounded

* The combination of the names of these two men became the name of the town "Say-brook."

† It was this man with whom tradition links the name of EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN.

CHAPMAN (Robert)



* Guilford, Conn. † Saybrook, Conn. ‡ Marietta, Ohio. § Athens, Ohio. ‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass. ¶ East Haddam, Conn. ♦ Salem, Ohio.

CHAPMAN (Robert)

ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN is said to have been a native of Hull, co. York, England, and to have emigrated[1] from there to Boston in August, 1635, removing the following November to Saybrook where he was certainly an associate of Lion Gardiner and his company who took possession of the land at the mouth of the Connecticut River under the patent of the "Lords and Gentlemen" including Lord Saye and Sele,* Lord Brooke,* Sir Richard Saltonstall[3a] and, later, George Fenwick.† ROBERT[1] was born about 1616 and, according to family tradition, left Hull when he was about eighteen years old. This same record claims also that his father was a soap manufacturer of that city; that he had a brother who perished in the war in Flanders; that his mother was anxious to emigrate to America but when his father opposed the idea she induced ROBERT[1] [or "ROBIN"], and afterwards his three sisters, to embark for the new world in the hope that when they were established there their father would consent to accompany her and join them.[2] There is no evidence that the parents ever came but, from an ancient document in possession of the Bushnell family in Saybrook, it appears that one of these sisters married in New England WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL [through whom we also descend—see Bushnell, p. 165]; another married a man who removed with her to the West Indies and the third died unmarried.[2]

As soon as the Indians had been partly subdued, ROBERT[1] settled on a fertile farm about three miles west of the Saybrook fort and at the mouth of the Oyster River, a part of which land had been cleared and cultivated by the Indians and, apparently, earlier occupied by them as a settlement, for many shells, arrowheads and some remains of warriors have been uncovered there.[2] The original homestead must have comprised four or five hundred acres; it was bounded on the east by Oyster River, north by the Big Hill, west by the Little Hill and south by Long Island Sound.[2] The shore abounded

* The combination of the names of these two men became the name of the town "Say-brook."

† It was this man with whom tradition links the name of EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN.

with shellfish of all kinds, yielding until 1854, and perhaps to the present time, thousands of bushels yearly. This farm still remains in the family, having descended in the line of the youngest son of each generation.[1] With the property have been handed down the traditions mentioned above as well as the statement that the favorite lot of ROBERT[1] was that which had been cleared by the Indians. It was for long, and perhaps still is, rented to the public in the season for surf bathing and seashore recreations, having been outfitted for that purpose and having a gallery erected at sufficient height to permit a view of thirty miles both up and down the Sound. It had in front about one hundred acres of level beach, bare at low tide and covered with about four feet of water at high tide. The original family home was built near the center of the farm. It served three generations before being rebuilt and was still in use, in its remodeled form,[2] in 1854.

In addition to this property, ROBERT[1] obtained by purchase, grant or legacy very large land holdings,[5] including, among other smaller tracts, Twenty Mile Island, now called Lord's Island, three hundred fifty acres in the Haddam vicinity and about five thousand acres in Hebron, this latter having been willed him by Joshua Uncas [vide infra]. Some curious names were given to various localities in the descriptions of his lands as written by him, such as "Treacle Hill," "long point," "Rock hill," "20 mile yland" and "Prikle pare Rock."

There were but few men in the Connecticut Colony who rose higher in public estimation or proved more useful[4,6] than ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN. Although he is not recorded as a freeman before October 4, 1669, when he appears as such "already made,"[12] he must have taken[4a] this oath before assuming the office of deputy from Saybrook which he filled forty-six times[7] after 1651, thus being a legislator from that place more times than any other man to date;[1] he was also an assistant in 1660–1, 1669 and 1681–4 inclusive,[8] commissioner in 1664–80 and 1685–7 inclusive,[9] and had "magistratical" powers granted[8] him in 1674 and 1686. He frequently served on committees, such as those auditing the treasurer's accounts, signing the bills for the town, hearing the cases between the English and the Indians, viewing sites for plantations and arranging limits therefor, and removal of families thereto; examining vessels leaving that port lest they break the law relative to the shipment of grain, considering the town's ability to erect a new meeting house, administering the freeman's oath, laying out lands and highways, "pressing" men and necessaries for prospective expeditions, repairing a fort

at Saybrook, engaging some one to keep it, purchasing ammunition for the artillery and performing other civic duties.[10] He served on grand juries at various times,[10] was made captain of the train band of Saybrook October 14, 1675, "dureing these present commotions with the Indians,"[11] meaning King Philip's War, and was confirmed in this position May 8, 1679. Many of his letters which were written to the Governor or General Court relative to public matters during his captaincy as well as at other times are on file in the office of the Secretary of State.[12] A particular instance is the occasion when Governor Andros* suddenly appeared at Saybrook on July 8, 1675, and demanded the surrender of the fort whereupon ROBERT[1] manned it, called out the militia of the town to resist Andros and then wrote to Governor John Winthrop, of the Connecticut Colony, for orders.[12a]

In addition to these offices he was clerk of the town of Saybrook[13] and of the Oyster River Quarter,[13] the records of both places being in his handwriting. One interesting item under the head "Death of Persons," written by, and pertaining to him, says: "It was the 9th of September, 1672, that I had that blow on my head in the woods, nigh death, the Lord was merciful to me."[13] It will be noted that he lived more than fifteen years after this entry. His sons followed him in public service, all three holding various offices. JOHN[2], the eldest, was representative to the legislature for thirty-four sessions,[21] Robert[2] for eighteen[13] and Nathaniel[2] for twenty-four sessions.

*Sir Edmund Andros[9a] was the governor of New York from 1674 to 1681 by appointment of James, Duke of York, and in this capacity became involved in numerous disputes with the adjoining colonies. In 1675 he attempted to annex Saybrook and its surrounding territory and, in 1680, he deposed Philip Carteret and seized the government of New Jersey. During the fall of that year he was recalled to England and accused of maladministration, but succeeded in clearing himself from this charge after which he retired from public life for a time. On the accession of James II, in 1686, he was appointed governor of all the colonies of New England which included all of the English North American settlements between Maryland and Canada, excepting Pennsylvania. He greatly antagonized the inhabitants by his despotic rulings. Among other things, in October, 1687, at the head of an armed force, he demanded the surrender of the charter of Connecticut, but was outwitted by the colonists who hid the document in the famous Charter Oak. He imposed arbitrary taxes, the writ of habeas corpus was suspended, all public records were ordered to be brought to Boston and it was proclaimed that all private titles to land were to be questioned and that whoever wished to have his title confirmed must pay a heavy quit-rent. The General Court was abolished and the power of taxation was taken from the town meetings and lodged with the governor. Against this crowning iniquity the town of Ipswich, Massachusetts, made protest. Its pastor was thrown into jail, fined and suspended from the ministry; during the trial which followed in October, 1687, it was openly declared that the people of New England had now no further privileges left them than not to be sold for slaves.[13a]

The news of political changes in England occasioned by the banishment of King James and the landing of the Prince of Orange was brought to New England in April, 1689, and encouraged the colonists to open revolt. On the 18th a signal fire was lighted on Beacon Hill, a meeting was held in the Town House, militia began to pour in from the country and Andros was summoned to surrender. Disguised in women's clothes, the despot tried to escape, but was arrested and imprisoned. Provisional governments in accordance with the old charters were at once set up in the colonies lately ruled by Andros. Bradstreet was reinstated as governor of Massachusetts and it was believed that self-government would thenceforth be guaranteed to New England.

ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and Thomas Hurlbut, probably in 1658, requested Lion Gardiner who had been in charge of the building and manning of Saybrook fort in 1635 and for four years thereafter,[14a] to write a report of those early days. This document, in the form of a letter addressed to them, is lengthy and detailed. It tells, among other things, of how ROBERT[1] acted as sentinel on February 22, 1637, when Gardiner with ten men went out to burn brush where trees had been felled, of the subsequent Indian attack and of a later similar menace when ROBERT[1] was beating samp. One incident was considered very amusing by these early settlers. To ward off an anticipated Indian attack, three great doors, four by ten feet, were bored full of holes into which were driven long carefully sharpened hand wrought nails. These devices were placed where footprints had been found and where the savages were expected to come again to set fire to the fort. The Indians, coming on a dark night, stepped on the nails of one door, jumped aside only to land on those of another and, when they finally reached smooth ground, quickly departed leaving many bloodstains as a proof of the effectiveness of the strategy.[14]

As stated above, ROBERT[1] was a beneficiary of the will of Joshua Uncas, member of the ruling family of the Mohegan Indians, friend and ally of the colonists. This remarkable document requested that he should be "buried at Saybrook, in a coffin after an English manner" and disposed of eighty-three thousand acres of land to twenty-eight of his friends, other large tracts to as many more of the colonists, as well as various lands to his two sons.[15] The definite bequests included three such, of five thousand acres each to ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, WILLIAM[1] PRATT and the Reverend Thomas Buckingham; three thousand acres to EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN, two thousand acres each to JOHN[2] CHAPMAN, WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL and to LYDIA BEAMON [wife[6] of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON], who was the only woman so honored. The three first-mentioned men he appointed as guardians of his two sons and daughter, authorizing them to collect debts and rentals due him and to dispose of the proceeds for the clothing and education of his children.[15] Before October, 1681, one son and the daughter had died leaving only "Abimelech" to be provided for. The General Court at this time appointed ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, James Fitch, Jr. [in place of WILLIAM[1] PRATT, deceased], and the Reverend Thomas Buckingham to administer the will and bring up the child.[16] On September 1, 1684, a petition, signed by these three administrators, was presented to the Court of Commissioners of the United Colonies sitting at Hartford. Therein was recounted the friendship of Joshua Uncas toward the

English; his desire, as expressed in his will, that his children should have an English education and, to that end, his choice of these three men to accomplish it; the fact of the death of two of the children leaving only the son, Abimelech, who had been under English care and teaching the past three years and who seemed "towardly and promising"; that the father had apparently thought he had left enough estate to support his children "but for reasons too tedious to give" this expectation had failed; that the child was in debt upwards of £20 and that now it seemed that the wish of Uncas could not be fulfilled unless the commissioners would arrange to defray past and future expenses. The petitioners added that it seemed a "pity" that the intent of Uncas should not be countenanced and accomplished by the English since it tended toward civilization and, perhaps, Christianization of the race; that the eyes of the Indians were upon them [the English] and that no way of handling this matter had been found "nearer home."[16]

Fairness would suggest that any one of the fifty-six beneficiaries of the Mohegan's will should have provided for his child under these circumstances. It is extraordinary that so fine a record as that of ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN should be dulled by one neglect like this. Several other ancestors of ours, as well as forty-eight other beneficiaries, displayed the same shortcoming. It is difficult to understand how the trend of public opinion even in those days could have justified their attitude but large land holdings then were no asset. No man could use more than he could farm, nor could he sell to advantage what others could get for the asking. Therefore Uncas' gifts were not negotiable.

ROBERT[1] is said to have been a man of exemplary piety and to have written a letter, only a short time before his death, to his children, all of whom were church members, wherein he exhorted them to live devoted lives. In his later years he was commonly called "Captain" from his military service in the train band.

He married at Saybrook, April 29, 1642, ANN[2] "BLITH" [see Bliss, p. 126], who died there[1, 2, 4] November 20, 1685. He died at that place, October 13, 1687, aged seventy.[1, 2]

The children of ROBERT[1] and ANN (BLISS) CHAPMAN, all born at Saybrook,[3, 6, 17] were

I. JOHN[2], see following.
II. Robert[2], b. abt. the middle of September, 1646; d. at Hartford, in the courtroom, November 10, 1711; m. 1st, July 27, 1671, Sarah[3] Griswold,* of Norwich, who d.

* Daughter of Francis[2] and Mary (Tracy) Griswold and granddaughter[40] of our EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD.

April 7, 1692; m. 2nd, October 29, 1694, Mary Shether, widow of Samuel, of Killingworth.

III. Anna[2], b. September 12, 1648; d. September, 1649.

IV. Hannah[2], b. October 4, 1650; d. after 1719; m. December 27, 1677, David Bull (Thomas).

V. Nathaniel[2], b. February 16, 1653; d. April 5, 1726, at Saybrook; m. 1st, June 29, 1681, Mary Collins, of Guilford; m. 2nd, July 26, 1698, Hannah Bates.

VI. Mary[2], b. April 15, 1655; d. between 1700 and 1717; m. in Saybrook, May 2, 1676, Samuel Bates.

VII. Sarah[2], b. September 25, 1657; d. after 1703; m. September, 1686, as his second wife, Joseph[2] Pratt (WILLIAM[1]).

JOHN[2] CHAPMAN (*Robert*[1]) was born in the early part[17] of July, 1644, at Saybrook, and died, probably in the spring of 1712, at Haddam, his estate being settled on April 8 of that year.[19] He married first, probably at Saybrook, June 7, 1670, ELIZABETH[2] HAWLEY[18] [see Hawley, p. 415], who died May 10, 1676. He married secondly, at that place, March 26, 1677, ELIZABETH[2] BEAMON [see Beamon, p. 119]. Through a child of each of these wives, we descend.

JOHN[2] was almost as much occupied with public affairs as his father had been. The General Court which was sitting October 13, 1687, the day on which his father died, on that day appointed him to fill out his father's unexpired term as commissioner,[20] and again in 1689 he was chosen to fill that office. He was Deputy from Saybrook twenty-two times between 1681 and 1691 and twelve times from Haddam between 1696 and 1707, after his removal there.[21]

He "stood nominated" for freeman of Saybrook[22] October 10, 1667, and was listed[22] as such "already made" October 4, 1669. He served on various committees for the settlement of estates,[23] compilation of lists of estates in the colony, making arrangements for the loan of artillery to New London, measuring of land "for the future"; and he alone took charge of the fort at Saybrook, keeping only two men in constant service and, when circumstances demanded, calling the town to their assistance. On October 8, 1691, the General Court refunded to him the sum of £5 which he had expended for powder for the fort and, on that same date, confirmed him as captain of the Saybrook train band, ordering that he be "commissioned accordingly."[23] It is evident that he was a resident of Saybrook until at least September 1, 1693, for on that date he had charge of the fort. He was, until 1687, called "sergeant" in the records, then for several years "Mr." and, beginning in

1691, "Captain." In 1678 he was a selectman at Saybrook and was empowered to arrange for the building of a new meeting house.[23]

He removed to Haddam some time between September 1, 1693, and May 10, 1694. He evidently had an interest in church affairs for, in 1706–7, he, then called "Captain," was made the chairman of a committee consisting of a lieutenant and three deacons, which had a rather delicate task to perform in considering and adjusting a controversy between the town of Haddam and its pastor. The minister was aggrieved, probably over tardy payment of his salary or failure to deliver his firewood and, after considerable discussion, he tore out the last leaf of the first book of town records on which were inscribed the facts relative to his engagement. The seriousness of the circumstances necessitated taking the matter to the General Court for final adjustment.[23a]

On May 10, 1694, this court granted "Captn JOHN CHAPMAN the priuiledg of setting up a ferry ouer the Great Riuer in Haddum for the future,"[24] hence the name "Chapman's Ferry" which was assigned to it; in 1698 permission was granted to him to charge the same fare that was allowed at Saybrook,[24] one shilling for each trip for horse and man during December, January and February. This ferry was at what is now Goodspeeds Landing about half way between the town of East Haddam and Twenty Mile Island [see map on p. 195]. His dwelling stood on the east side of the river, then in Haddam but now in East Haddam, and occupied the site of the Gelston House. The ferry has always been called "Chapman's" and has always remained a private property.[24a]

JOHN[2] was made a justice of the peace in Hartford County and acted in that capacity in the vicinity of his new home at East Haddam for the years 1704–9 inclusive.[24] The General Assembly, calling him "Lieut.," appointed him to be "captain of the train band in Haddum on the east side of the Great River" and ordered him to be so "commissionated" on May 9, 1706.[24]

That he retained some land rights in Saybrook after leaving there appears evident from the fact that his name was included in 1704 among those of other representative citizens in a patent issued by the General Court confirming grants which had been made in an earlier similar document relative to ownership and boundaries in that town.[24]

The exact date of his death has not been found though it was probably a short time before March 28, 1712, when his children signed an agreement as to the distribution of his estate.[25a] This division was approved by the court

on April 8, of that year. The five-thousand-acre tract near Hebron willed to ROBERT[1] by Joshua Uncas had been divided, at the death of ROBERT[1], between JOHN[2] and his two brothers. JOHN[2] owned considerable property at Saybrook and Haddam besides his share in this legacy. His entire estate was shared, at his death, by his sons, JOSEPH[3], Jabez[3] and Samuel[3], and daughters, ELIZABETH CHALKER, Anne Selden, Mehitable Richardson and Lydia[3] Chapman.[26]

The children of Captain JOHN[2] and ELIZABETH (HAWLEY) CHAPMAN, his first wife, all born at Saybrook,[4, 25, 26] were

I. John[3], b. September 8, 1671 (April 24, 1671); d. young.
II. JOSEPH[3], see following.
III. Elizabeth[3], b. February 10, 1675–6; d. June 27, 1676.

The children of Captain JOHN[2] and ELIZABETH (BEAMON) CHAPMAN, his second wife, all born at Saybrook but the last two and, perhaps, they also, were[25]

IV. Andrew[3], b. April 24, 1678; d. May 16, 1683.
V. ELIZABETH[3], b.[4, 18] September 26, 1679; d. before November 7, 1738, at Saybrook. She was m., prob. there, June 3, 1703, to STEPHEN[3] CHALKER[26a] [see Chalker, p. 178].
VI. Thomas[3], b. October 7, 1680; d. December 8, 1680.
VII. Thomas[3], b. January 23, 1681–2; d. November 27, 1682.
VIII. Lydia[3], b. February 13, 1682; d. before[26] August 1, 1738, at Haddam, unm.
IX. Anne[3], b. November 5, 1684; m., prob. at Haddam, December 19, 1706, Joseph Selden.
X. Andrew[3], b. October 1, 1686; d. June 23, 1686–7, at Saybrook.
XI. Mehitable[3], b. September 29, 1688; m. Lemuel Richardson.
XII. Jabez[3], b. 1690 at Saybrook or East Haddam; m. Esther Selden.
XIII. Samuel[3], b. 1692 at Saybrook or East Haddam; d. July, 1747; m. Mary (——), and removed to Salisbury and later to Stonington.

JOSEPH[3] CHAPMAN (*John*[2], *Robert*[1]) was born[2] July 31, 1673, at Saybrook, and died before November 7, 1732, at that place.[27] He married, probably there, about 1700, SARAH[3] SPENCER [see Spencer, p. 777] who survived him. He did not reside in Haddam as his father had, but returned to Saybrook. Not much has been found of record relative to the life of JOSEPH[3]. On March 25, 1714, he appeared as a witness before the court and testified as to the conduct of certain men who had put up the frame of a house on land set aside for the Mohegans.[27a] He executed a deed from which we quote:

> "I, JOSEPH CHAPMAN, for and in consideration of the love, good will and affection which I have and bear, and continue to bear toward my

loving friend, the Reverend Mr. Azariah Mather, do give, grant and confirm unto him the said Azariah Mather, his heirs and assigns forever, one 50 pound right in the corn pasture."[28]

This must have been because of friendship for no relationship is known. The exact date of the death of JOSEPH[3] has not yet been found. He is said to have died at Saybrook and that his will appointing his sons, Jonathan[4] and Simeon[4], executors of his estate was exhibited and approved on November 21, 1732. He had provided for his eldest son, Joseph[4], during his lifetime so the bequests were made[29] to his wife, SARAH, sons Jonathan[4], Simeon[4] and LEVI[4], and daughter Ruth[4].

The children of JOSEPH[3] and SARAH (SPENCER) CHAPMAN, born at Saybrook, were[29]

I. Joseph[4], b. March 2, 1701; d. abt. 1725; m. Eunice (——).
II. Jonathan[4], b. August 14, 1703; m., November, 1735, Mary Ingham.
III. Simeon[4], b. March 7, 1706; m., October 22, 1729, Mary Scone.
IV. LEVI[4], see following.
V. Ruth[4], b. September 12, 1709; d. December 1, 1709.
VI. Ruth[4], b. March 16, 1713; m., November 18, 1730, John[3] Loveland* (Thomas[2], Thomas[1]).

LEVI[4] CHAPMAN (*Joseph*[3], *John*[2], *Robert*[1]) was born March 19, 1708, at Saybrook, and died[43] after 1752, but before May 13, 1771. He was married[31, 42] at Saybrook [record at Deep River] on January 16, 1735, to his cousin, LYDIA[4] CHALKER, the daughter of his father's sister ELIZABETH (CHAPMAN) CHALKER [see Chalker, p. 178]. He was listed as being in training[32] in the first company, or train-band, in Saybrook, in March, 1745. In 1750 there was surveyed to him a tract of twenty-two acres "in Oyster River Quarter,† near Great Cedar Swamp," which was then a part of Saybrook, but is now the western part of Chester [see map on p. 195].

The decease[43] of LEVI[4] CHAPMAN by 1771 is conclusively shown by two documents: first, the sale of the above land to Daniel Barker on May 13th of that year by grantors "Ely Crane . . . and Mehetabel his wife, Titus Loveland . . . and Lydia his wife the two Mehetabel and Lydia [being] daughters of Mr. LEVI CHAPMAN, late of Saybrook, Deceased," and secondly, the will

*They probably had[30] Titus Loveland, b. 1744, who m. Lydia[5] Chapman, daughter of LEV [4].

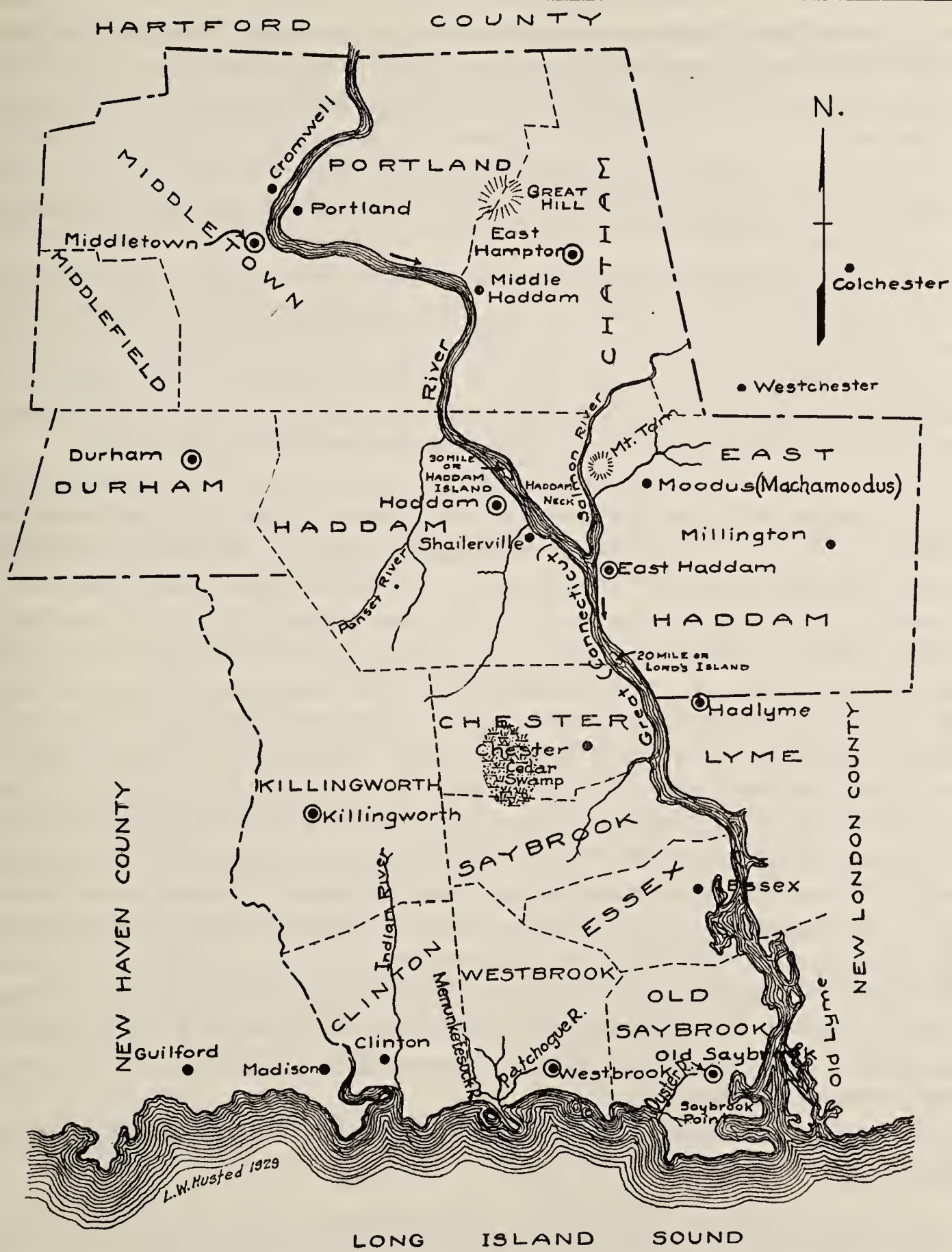
†Oyster River Quarter was one of the four early divisions of Saybrook town. Its southern boundary was a four-mile strip of the coast of Long Island Sound westward from Oyster River [see map on p. 195] to the western line of present Westbrook, which line it followed. The Quarter extended northwesterly from the coast for more than seven miles and included all of Westbrook and the western portions of Old Saybrook, Essex, Saybrook and Chester.

of the said Daniel Barker in 1784, in which he mentioned this land which he had bought from "Loveland and other of Mr. LEVI CHAPMAN's heirs. . . ."[43]

The children of LEVI[4] and LYDIA (CHALKER) CHAPMAN, all born at Saybrook, were[33, 42]

I. Joseph[5], b. December 9, 1735; prob. d. young.
II. Mehitable[5], b. March 8, 1738; d. at Durham, September 22, 1792, aged 55; m. before May 13, 1771, Eli[4] Crane (Silas[3], Henry[2], Henry[1]) and resided at Durham.
III. LEVI[5], see following.
IV. Lydia[5], b. January 3 or 31, 1743; d.[30] at Durham, May 20, 1790; m. abt. 1765–7, Titus Loveland, who was prob. her cousin and son of John[3] Loveland (Thomas[2], Thomas[1]).
V. Ezra[5], b. January 6, 1745; d. young.
VI. Isaac[5], b. May 9 or 19, 1747; m. abt. 1773, Ruth Robinson.
VII. Sybil[5], b. July 10 or 20, 1749; said to have m. (——) Crane.
VIII. Ezra[5], b. October 4, 1752; perhaps he who d.[42] December 30, 1752 or 1753.

LEVI[5] CHAPMAN (*Levi*[4], *Joseph*[3], *John*[2], *Robert*[1]) was born October 9, 1740, at Saybrook, and died, probably after 1805, at Salem, Washington County, Ohio. He married at Durham, September 15, 1767, ELIZABETH[6] HULL[34, 42] [see Hull, p. 464]. During the Revolution LEVI[5] in various ways made plain his stand in favor of the colonies.[44] At a town meeting held March 31, 1777, he was chosen a member of the "Committee of Supply" and in that capacity signed an "Account of Provisions Isued to the Soldiers Familes in the year AD 1777 at the Stated Price . . . for the Town of Say Brook to the Amt of the Sums annext to Each Soldiers Names." On January 21, 1778, the state of Connecticut was debtor to SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN and also to LEVI[5] CHAPMAN in the sum of fourteen shillings for transporting saltpeter for the army. On June 3, 1779, LEVI[5] signed a protest against the illicit trade being carried on with the enemy by the commissioned whaleboats which were cruising on the Sound against that enemy. Evidence is found of the continuance, extent and menace of this practice. On May 13, 1779, the General Assembly had appointed Colonel Worthington of the 7th Regiment of Militia to be in charge of a guard, consisting of a sergeant, corporal and thirteen men, which was posted in the west parish of Saybrook, now Westbrook [see map on p. 195], for the defence of the seacoast and to prevent intercourse with the enemy. Evidently this officer failed sadly in his duty, for on January 6, 1780, complaint was made to the Assembly that he had knowingly permitted contraband English goods to be landed near Saybrook and disposed of in the state. In May, 1781, detailed information as to further



MIDDLESEX COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS

irregularities by this officer was laid before the Assembly. Witnesses, including John Shipman, appeared in person and many depositions were presented, including one by LEVI[5] CHAPMAN, in which he stated, as one of the selectmen of Saybrook, that Colonel Worthington "had often talked to him in favor of the illicit trade." With other inhabitants of Saybrook LEVI[5], as selectman, signed another petition to the Assembly. It showed not only that Worthington personally favored contraband trade but that he associated with and assisted those who were engaged in the unlawful business and even harbored them in his home. The petitioners asserted that his election to the Assembly as representative of their town had been accomplished by intrigue and asked that something be done to prevent him from retaining that office. As a consequence Worthington was officially denounced as a smuggler, was deprived of his office, and was ordered to appear for trial before the next court.[44]

LEVI[5] CHAPMAN and SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN bought together[39] one share of the Ohio Company's lands which was later settled upon by their children JOSHUA[5] and SYBIL (CHAPMAN) SHIPMAN, as well as by LEVI[5] CHAPMAN himself with his family. Though no details of his life at Saybrook have been found, it is known that he reared his family there. His oldest daughter, SYBIL[6], through whom we descend, emigrated with her husband and child to Marietta, Ohio, in 1790, and evidently sent back good reports of the country for, in 1794, her parents, with the rest of their large family, followed[33] and located along Duck Creek, in Washington County, Ohio.[36] LEVI[5] and his wife were among the original members and assisted in the establishment of the First Congregational Church at Marietta, December 6, 1796, presenting their letters from the First Church at Saybrook.[37] On June 3, 1797, he and his eldest son, Joseph[6], were signers of a petition at Salem, Ohio, this name having been adopted by the settlement along Duck Creek. LEVI[5] was constable there in 1797 and 1798 and, on May 27, 1799, as collector of taxes, he compiled a list of taxables.[38] The date of his death has not yet been found but the Marietta church records show that a Levi Chapman attended a meeting in 1805. Whether this was LEVI[5] or his son of the same name does not appear.

The children of LEVI[5] and ELIZABETH (HULL) CHAPMAN, all born at Saybrook, were[33, 35, 42]

1. SYBIL[6], b. August 4, 1768; d. June 16, 1828, at Marietta, Ohio. She m. at Saybrook, January 17, 1787, JOSHUA[5] SHIPMAN[36] [see Shipman, p. 740 and plates xxii p. 736, xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2].

II. Joseph[6], b. May 12, 1770; m. in Connecticut, August 31, 1794, Lydia Doane.*
III. Levi[6], b. February 23, 1772; m. 1st, in Connecticut, April 18, 1794, Lois Ackley,† who d. January 7, 1838; m. 2nd, October 14, 1838, Sarah Davis.
IV. Ezra[6], b. January 29, 1774; m. 1st, in Ohio, November 10, 1799, Betsey Jones; m. 2nd, there, May 20, 1812, Polly Walker.
V. Betty[6], b. March 8, 1776; m. Asahael Griffin; removed to Ohio.
VI. Isaac[6], b. June 4, 1778; m. 1st, in Ohio, 1805, Sarah Perkins; m. 2nd, 1841, Lucy Payne.
VII. Hezekiah[6], b. January 21, 1781; d. June 2, 1852; m. in Ohio, October 5, 1808, Martha Allen.
VIII. Stephen[6], b. April 24, 1783; m. in Ohio, December 25, 1808, Mary Walker.
IX. Samuel[6], b. March 4, 1786; m. 1st, in Ohio, September 20, 1810, Hannah Loring; m. 2nd, October 10, 1816, Letty Organ.
X. Hervey[6], b. April 14, 1788; m. in Ohio, November 5, 1807, Ruth Hill.
XI. Hepzibah[6], b. November 17, 1790; m. in Ohio, July 16, 1807, Seth Jones.
XII. Jerusha[6], b. November 17, 1790, twin with Hepzibah; m. 1st, July 16, 1807, Orgillous Doane,‡ who d. October 22, 1823; m. 2nd, January 3, 1824, Harry Hill.

* The origin[41] of Lydia Doane is Prince[5], PRENCE[4], ISRAEL[3], DANIEL[2], JOHN[1] DOANE.

† Effort has been made [thus far unsuccessfully] to learn whether or not this Lois Ackley was the one of that name baptized at East Hartland on May 26, 1776, being the daughter of Joel[4] and Lois (—) Ackley and first cousin of our ABIGAIL (ACKLEY) BEMAN, wife of DANIEL[4] BEMAN.

‡ The origin[41] of Orgillous Doane is Prince[6], Prince[5], PRENCE[4], ISRAEL[3], DANIEL[2], JOHN[1] DOANE.

REFERENCES

1. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 18, 26, 28–9, 37, 344; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 449; Bliss Family, J. H. Bliss, 1881, p. 29, 30.
2. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 29, 340–1; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1854, pp. 447, 449.
3. Booth and Allied Families, C. E. Booth, 1910, pp. 220–4; Descendants of John Porter, H. P. Andrews, 1893, II, 592; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 449.
3a. History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1898, I, 38–42, 423–6; 250th Anniversary of the Settlement of Saybrook, Conn., 1886, pp. 10–5, 29–30.
4. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 253, 444, 538, 540–1.
4a. History of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 42.
5. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 29, 341–6; Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 228; Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 539; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 368.
6. Savage, I, 361–3; New England Register, IV, 21.
7. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, pp. 235, 240, 246, 288, 293, 300, 306, 308, 315, 318, 323, 334, 340, 347, 354, 372, 379, 384, 399, 407, 410, 417, 431, 439; II, 14, 58, 70, 83, 94, 105, 116, 127, 136, 147, 159, 221, 249, 265, 300, 318; III, 2, 26, 36, 66.
8. Ibid., I, 264, 351, 375; II, 105, 221, 250; III, 75, 96, 114, 139, 208.
9. Ibid., I, 426; II, 17, 32, 63, 84, 106, 131, 152, 170, 192, 221, 250, 275, 304; III, 5, 26, 49, 169, 194, 230.
9a. The Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 242–78.
10. Ibid., I, 263–4, 315, 349, 366–7, 375, 397, 400; II, 16, 21, 26–7, 47–8, 88, 122, 165, 385–6, 468, 511–2; III, 50, 119, 141, 182; Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 538–9; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, pp. 472, 483.
11. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 269; III, 28; Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 468.
12. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 334, 422, 468, 522, 580, 583–4.
12a. Ibid., II, 334; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 452.
13. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 341–5; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, pp. 444, 446–7, 449, 451–2.

13a. History of Essex Co., Mass., R. Crowell, 1853, pp. 137–8, 146, 150; History of New London County, Conn., D. H. Hurd, 1882, p. 552; Appleton's Cyclopaedia of American Biography, I, 77.
14. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 14–18, 325–39; History of the Pequot War, C. Orr, 1897, pp. 116–7, 129, 148–9; Massachusetts Historical Collections, Series 3, III, 132, 136, 143, 159–60.
14a. History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 449; History of the Pequot War, C. Orr. 1897, p. 116.
15. New England Register, XIII, 235–6.
16. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 87, 513–4.
17. New England Register, IV, 21–2; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 37–8, 68–9, 188, 190, 255, 263.
18. Hawley Record, E. S. Hawley, 1890, pp. 2–3, 304–5; New England Register, IV, 21; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 38–9.
19. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 173–4.
20. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 243, 252.
21. Ibid., III, 86, 121, 139, 151, 155, 169, 181, 195, 208, 211, 214, 223, 227, 230, 236, 249, 251, 254; IV, 9, 23, 33, 55, 158, 221, 235, 265, 359, 434, 461, 482, 499, 532; V, 2, 17.
22. Ibid., II, 73, 523.
23. Ibid., III, 187; IV, 19, 56, 60, 103, 150; History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, pp. 456, 473.
23a. History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 375.
24. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IV, 124, 280, 467, 473, 499, 532–3; V, 20, 62, 94.
24a. History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 305.
25. New England Register, IV, 21; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 38–40.
25a. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 347–50.
26. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 173–4; III, 242.
26a. New England Register, LIX, 134.
27. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 541.
27a. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 421.
28. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 39.
29. Ibid, pp. 39, 41–2.
30. Loveland Genealogy, J. B. and G. Loveland, 1892, I, 42; III, 105, 137. Crane Family, E. B. Crane, 1895, I, 72, 80; History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, p. 281.
31. Descendants of John Porter, H. P. Andrews, 1893, II, 592.
32. History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, p. 462.
33. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 41, 45–6, 48–52.
33a. Descendants of John Porter, H. P. Andrews, 1893, II, 593.
34. History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, p. 330.
35. Family Records in possession of the Dawes family, Marietta, Ohio.
36. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 46, 48, 49–52.
37. MSS. Record of the First Congregational Church, Marietta, Ohio, p. 5; History of the First Congregational Church, Marietta, Ohio, C. E. Dickenson, 1896, pp. 164, 170.
38. The *Marietta Leader* [newspaper], Marietta, Ohio, 1883 ("A Quaint Old Document").
39. New England Register, LXV, 140.
40. Fifty Puritan Ancestors, E. T. Nash, 1902, p. 104.
41. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 112–3, 196, 353.
42. Saybrook, Conn., records furnished by town clerk at Deep River, Conn., Vol. Ia, 54, 94, 238.
43. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, VIII, 285; Probate Records, I, 115.
44. Public Records of Connecticut, II, 283, 468; III, 405; Connecticut Archives (MSS) Revolutionary War, Ser. I, XI, 488; XIV, 171; XXI, 221b, 232; XXX, 123a; Supplementary material, extracts from Saybrook records, p. 4.

CLARKE (John)

* † ‡ § [398] JOHN CLARKE –1673	m 1st	MARY [Coley?]
* † ‡ [198] WILLIAM PRATT –1678–9	m c.1640	ELIZABETH CLARKE –aft.1672
⊙ ‡ [98] JOHN KIRTLAND 1659–1716	m 1679	LYDIA PRATT 1659–aft.1704
‡ [48] JOHN SHIPMAN 1687–1742	m 1715	ELIZABETH KIRTLAND 1688 or 1689–1778
‡ [24] SAMUEL SHIPMAN 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	HANNAH BUSHNELL 1733–1806
‡ ‖ [12] JOSHUA SHIPMAN 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	SYBIL CHAPMAN 1768–1828
‡ ‖ ¶ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
♦ ‖ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
‖ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Newtown or Cambridge, Mass.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Milford, Conn.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
⊙ Lynn, Mass.

CLARKE (John)

JOHN[1] CLARKE* and his brother, George, came from Great Munden, co. Herts, England,[1] where the latter had land that he retained throughout his life and devised in his will. The date of their emigration has not been

*There have been many differences of opinion as to the complete identity, various accomplishments and places of residence of JOHN[1] CLARKE. Many authorities have been quoted to support differing views but a careful comparison of these, together with certain records not frequently mentioned, will show an agreement that tends to dispel this long-standing confusion.

Savage recognized that JOHN[1] CLARKE, of Newtowne, and JOHN[1] CLARKE, of Hartford, were one and the same, that possibly he also went to Milford later and that his daughter, ELIZABETH[2], married WILLIAM[1] PRATT, but assumed that the John Clarke who was prominent in Saybrook affairs was a different individual.[9]

Hinman, who specialized on Connecticut families, agreed that JOHN[1] CLARKE was first of Newtowne, then for a time of Hartford, adding however, that he was the first of that name at Saybrook, being very prominent and useful there, but did not mention his being at Milford.[3]

The authorities shown by reference numbers 3, 5, 9, 10, 13 and 15 all agree that JOHN[1] CLARKE was of Newtowne and Hartford. A number of families, including those of STEPHEN[1] POST and WILLIAM[1] PRATT, who were neighbors and friends in Newtowne and Hartford, did remove to Saybrook. Further, the latter man, with his father-in-law, JOHN[1] CLARKE, was, on January 24, 1648, a member of a committee of five to divide the "lands that lye remote" in Saybrook.[13]

The will of JOHN[1] CLARKE who died in Milford, in 1672–3, shows conclusively that he was earlier of Saybrook where the bulk of his property still remained, that he was the father of ELIZABETH[2] who married WILLIAM[1] PRATT, and that he was the husband, at his death, of Mary (Ward) Fletcher Clarke. This document is filled with interesting details. He gives largely of his lands at Saybrook to his son, John Clarke, Jr., of that place, also gives him the "silver cup at Milford, and the silver spoon marked I. C." Further bequests are made to his "son WILLIAM PRATT, daughter ELIZABETH PRATT, daughter Sarah Huntington and her daughter Sarah; to his wife, her daughter Abigail Fletcher, and to his brothers Samuel Croley and Samuel Eels." One clause[1] says: "It is my will that all my household goods, brass-pewter, iron pots, brass mortar, spitt, cobb-irons and whatever else may be found or remain of what I brought from Say-Brook, bedding or anything else, shall return to Say-Brook, to be divided among my children."

Documentary evidence[27] is found proving that George Clarke, of Milford, had a brother Daniel who, of course, was brother also to JOHN[1].

Probably much of the confusion relative to the identity of JOHN[1] CLARKE and his civil and military services has been due to the fact that, among the many men named Clarke who were resident in Connecticut, there were three who stood out pre-eminently in public life,—Henry, Daniel and JOHN[1], all three having been named as patentees in the charter of 1662. Frequently the recorded activities of one or another of these men omitted their first names and they were referred to as "Mr. Clarke." Needless to say, only the services definitely assigned to one specified as JOHN CLARKE have been herein considered. A careful comparison of these records[24] and also of those showing residence at Newtowne, Hartford, Saybrook and Milford, displays no overlapping such as would undoubtedly occur if more than one man was concerned, each serving occasionally during a given period.

The Society of Colonial Dames has accepted and published data showing that those of the name of JOHN CLARKE at these four towns were, in reality, one man and that his services were as here given.[15] Further, the Society of Colonial Wars likewise authorizes records that settle disputed points regarding his identity and services.[25] In view of all these facts, the conclusions drawn seem justifiable.

found, but JOHN[1] was in Newtowne, Massachusetts, early in 1632, for in August of that year he was required to fence a share of the common lands in proportion to his holdings, evidently not large as his assessment was only three rods.[5] On November 6, following, he became a freeman.[2, 6, 9] He was granted two acres in the west end of town in August, 1634, and was listed as owning one house[7] there on January 4, of the next year, besides other small tracts subsequently.[8]

The town contracted with him March 1, 1635–6, to make a sufficiently large weir [trap] before April 12, following, to catch alewives [fish] in the Menotomies River, and to sell and deliver them to the inhabitants of that town and no other, except for bait, at the price of three shillings six pence per thousand, while the run was heavy, or two pence per score, undelivered, and three pence per score, delivered, at other times, agreeing that he should have his money within fourteen days after he did the fishing.[5, 7] The alewives were much used for fertilizer, being placed in a hill when planting corn, but were thoroughly good for food and must have been of considerable value to the town, for various other items are found on the town records showing arrangements for making "a rate for the division of the alewives," making a cartway to the weir and, later, offering payment of sixteen pence per thousand to one who would load them at the weir and deliver them to the inhabitants.[7]

JOHN[1] CLARKE owned, in 1635, a two-acre lot and house located at what is now the easterly corner of Brattle and Mason streets; he subsequently sold this property to Edward Winship[5, 8] before removing to Hartford, Connecticut. The exact date of his departure to the new home is not known but the inference is drawn that he did not go with the Reverend Mr. Hooker's company in June, 1636, from the fact that he was made hog reeve of Newtowne, Massachusetts, on December 5, of that year,[7] yet he must have removed early[10] in 1637 for he was one of the quota from Hartford, Connecticut, who went to fight the Pequots that spring, afterwards receiving a lot in Soldier's Field there in recognition of his services.[3, 10, 11] He was considered an original proprietor of Hartford and received lots at the first division of land there in 1639, also being one of the committee to apportion it.[3, 10] On January 3, 1639–40, he had a twenty-two-acre right in the undivided lands at that place,[10] and his house lot lay along what is now Trumbull Street.[2, 11a, 21] He served on a jury[3, 12] at Hartford, September 2, 1641, and in 1642; he was a party to two law suits[12] on March 5, 1645, and acted as surveyor and in various other capacities at different times.[2] His home was for several years in the western part of the village and during

his residence he owned at least twelve pieces of property of varying sizes, and held proprietorship in the undivided lands throughout his life.[2, 11a, 21] His name is on the Founder's Monument at Hartford.[18] He moved again, probably about 1644, to Saybrook, Connecticut, for in that year he is said to have represented that town at the General Court[3, 13] and, in 1647, he was on a committee to build a fort there.[2, 3] On January 24, 1648, he and his son-in-law, WILLIAM[1] PRATT, were two of a committee of five to make a division of the "lands that lye remote" in Saybrook.[13] In March, 1651–2, he evidently boarded certain men working for the town and rendered a bill therefor which the General Court considered too high and ordered that the treasurer should not pay him over six shillings per week per man.[12]

In what is probably the earliest remaining record of a municipal character of Saybrook, namely, the report of a town meeting held on January 7, 1655–6, the townsmen present included[19] JOHN[1] CLARKE, ROBERT[1] BULL, ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and STEPHEN[1] POST.

JOHN[1] CLARKE served as Deputy from Saybrook in twenty-seven sessions[15, 24] of the court in 1649, 1651–9, 1661–3. Other services rendered by him there, were the laying out of lands[12] to the soldiers in May, 1651, a trip in company with the governor to Stratford to try Goody Basset for her life on a charge of witchcraft[3, 12] in 1651 and the impressment of men and "necessaries" for service in an expedition against Ninigret, chief of the Narragansetts,[12] in 1654. In May, 1656, he was appointed one of the magistrates for Saybrook.[12] He was on a committee in 1661 to collect and sell certain horses belonging to the "country" and to distribute the money resulting from this sale according to the instructions of the Court.[12] He was one of the petitioners to King Charles for a Royal Charter for Connecticut and one of the patentees named in that document[14] dated April 23, 1662. In 1644 he was a commissioner for Saybrook[13, 15] and had been, for some years, a large land holder there.

About this date he moved once more, this time to Milford, Connecticut, where his brother George lived. He was a commissioner from that place in 1665–7 and 1669–73 and a deputy[15, 16, 24] in 1665–8.

JOHN[1] CLARKE was married twice. His first wife, MARY (——), may possibly have been a sister of Samuel Croley or Coley, whom her husband mentions in his will as "brother." The date of her death has not been found. After his removal to Milford, JOHN[1] married, secondly, Mary (Ward) Fletcher,[9] the widow of John Fletcher,[1, 2] of that place. JOHN[1] is said[26] to have died on February 5, 1673. His will[1, 20] was signed January 19, 1673, probably at Milford.

One of the witnesses, Samuel Eells, of that place, signed the inventory of the Milford property which amounted[1, 2] to £207–2s–6d [see note, p. 201]. The Saybrook property was valued at £227–8s–00, the combined inventory showing a total valuation of £434–10s–6d; the document was dated February 28, 1672–3.

The children of JOHN[1] and MARY (Coley?) CLARKE, born in unknown order were[1, 2, 4, 9, 13]

I. ELIZABETH[2], d. after 1660, m. first, abt.[23] 1640, WILLIAM[1] PRATT [see Pratt, p. 680], and is said to have m. 2nd, between December, 1680 and 1682, William Parker of Saybrook, who d. there December 28, 1686.

II. John[2], was killed by a cart which overturned upon him September 21, 1677; m. October 16, 1650, Rebecca called both Parker[3, 9] and Porter[4, 13] perhaps a daughter of John[1] Porter of Windsor. She m. 2nd, (——) Spencer. His son John[3] Clarke m.[4] December 17, 1684, Rebecca[2] Beamon, daughter of WILLIAM[1] and LYDIA (DANFORTH) BEAMON; and his son Samuel[3] Clarke, m.[4] December 14, 1699, Mary[4] Kirtland (Nathaniel[3], NATHANIEL[2], PHILIP[1]), b. February 1, 1679.

III. Sarah[2], d.[13, 17] Milford in 1721, aged 88 years; m. October, 1653, Simon[2] Huntington (William[1]).

IV. Joseph[2], d. at sea before August 27, 1663, leaving a wife but no children. His will was dated[22] August 27, 1658.

REFERENCES

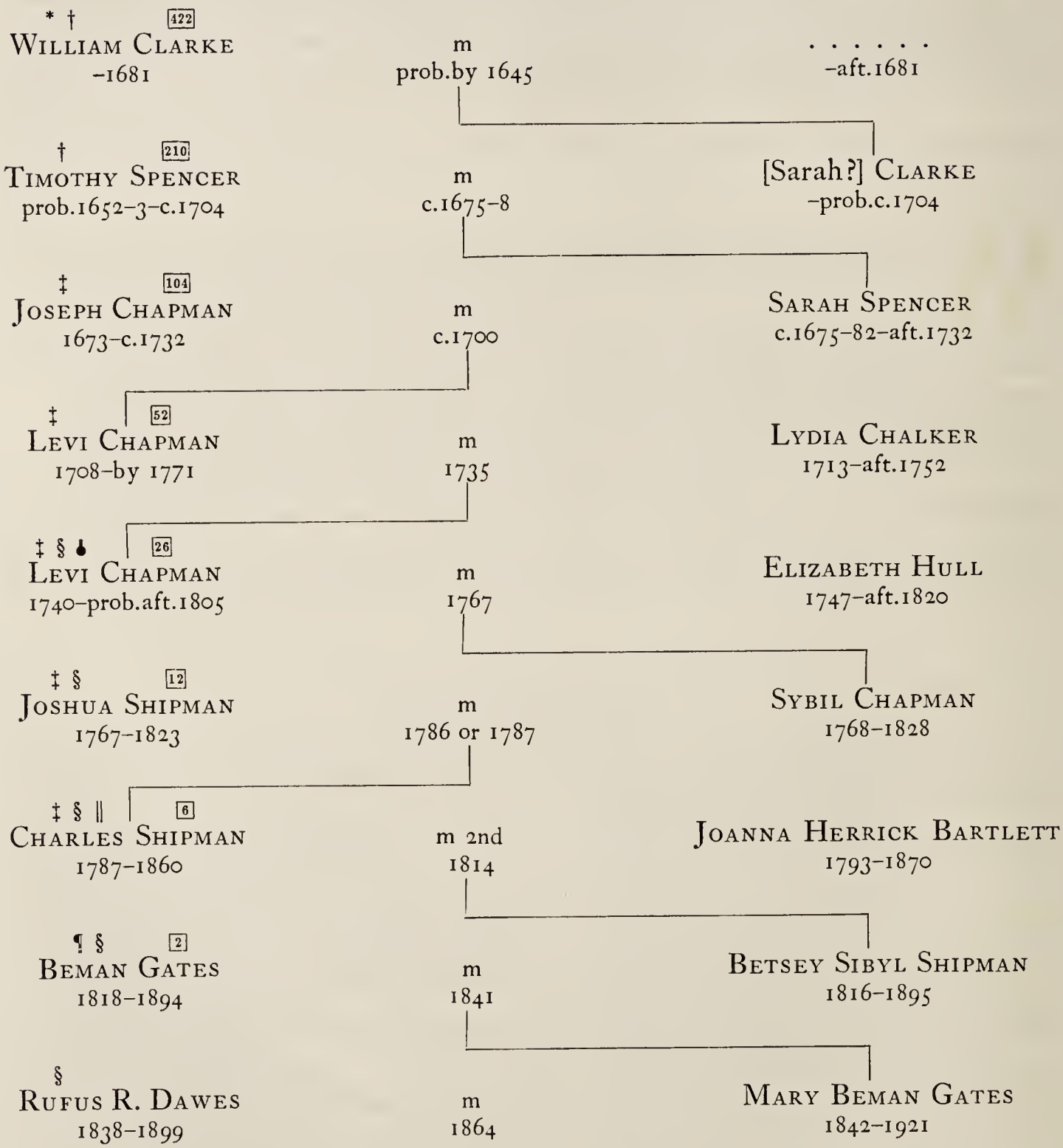
1. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 340–2.
2. New Haven, Conn., Probate Records; Clark Genealogy, J. Gay, 1882, pp. 5–12.
3. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 609–10.
4. John Clarke of Hartford and Saybrook, Conn., H. M. Kyes, 1922, pp. 1–2; Central New York Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1912, III, 1174; Rand Family, F. O. Rand, 1898, p. 14; Lynn, Mass., Vital Records, I, 228.
5. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 10, 11, 32, 38, 510.
6. New England Register, III, 91.
7. Town Records of Cambridge, Mass., pub. 1901, pp. 9, 18, 20, 24.
8. Register Booke of the Lands and Houses in Newtowne, Mass., pub. 1896, pp. 17, 56.
9. Savage, I, 394.
10. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 2, 33, 125–6, 147.
11. Hartford in the Olden Time, ed. by W. M. B. Hartley, 1853, pp. 33, 116–7.

11a. Ibid., p. 30, and the map between pp. 46 and 47

12. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 66, 137, 218, 220–1, 230, 261, 264, 280, 367.
13. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 449–50, 537, 539.
14. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 3, 13, 17, 32, 523–4.
15. Rhode Island Society of Colonial Dames, Record Book, III, 178.
16. Hall Family, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 174–6.
17. Colonial Families of the United States, G. N. Mackenzie, 1914, IV, 94; 1917, VI, 157–8; Huntington Family in America, 1915, pp. 419–20.
18. Olmstead Family in America, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.
19. History of Norwich, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1874, p. 53.
20. New Haven, Conn., Probate Records, I, pt. 2, p. 43.
21. Historical Notices of Hartford, Conn., W. S. Porter, 1842, No. 1, pp. 19, 23.
22. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 187–8.

23. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 53, 340–2.
24. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 66, 76, 185, 218, 224, 236, 240, 246, 261, 264, 274, 280, 281, 282, 288, 293, 306, 308, 315, 318, 323, 334, 340, 364, 372, 379, 384.
25. General Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1894, pp. 192–4; 1895, p. 211; 1896, p. 108; 1897–8, p. 442; 1899–1902, p. 597.
26. Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland, 1905, p. 94.
27. History of Ancient Windsor, H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 155–6.

CLARKE (William)



* Hartford, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Salem, Ohio.

CLARKE (William)

WILLIAM[1] CLARKE is first inauspiciously recorded[1] in Hartford, Connecticut, on January 2, 1639, while he was in the relation of servant[2] to John Crow of that place and "was fined 40s. for misdemeano^r in drinking, and corporall punishment was remitted vppon his p^rmise of his care for future to avoyd such occations."[1] Following this sorry introduction, it is a comfort to say that, though varied, his career, as will be seen, ended with no small honor and success. His term of service to John Crow was evidently completed by 1642, for in December of that year Hartford granted[3] him "to hafe" one half of a tract earlier allotted to John Pearce on the east side of the road to the cow pasture and adjacent[4] to the home of THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD [see map on p. 613]. In 1643 Matthew Allen brought suit[1] against Nicholas Clarke and WILLIAM[1] CLARKE and the jury found for the plaintiff a verdict of damages in the sum of £3–3–4 and costs. At an unstated date WILLIAM[1] bought from NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD a three-acre plot "wth a messuag or tenement Standing there on together wth a Barn & orchard," which "abutteth on ye west on a high way leading from ye Cowe pasture into the old ox pasture. . . ."[4] In 1655 the mill rates[4] of WILLIAM[1] were 08–06; in 1656, 11–10; and in 1657, 14–09, totaling £1–15–01. His business affairs had evidently reached a low ebb by February 23, 1659, and he had been most unwise in his attempt to better them, for on that date "This Court considering the low estate of WILL^M CLARKE his family, doe order respecting the fine imposed on him for tradeing Liquors contrary to law, that he shall pay to ye publique Treasurie 40s. p^r yeare, for foure yeares, the first payment to be made this spring, at ye demand of the Treasurer."[1] We may safely assume that this served as a lesson to him and that he mended his ways. At least, his material affairs began to take an upward trend, for on March 14, 1660, when Robert Reeves sued him in court, the decision was in favor of WILLIAM[1], and on May 16, 1661, the court remitted £4 of the above £8 fine laid upon him two years before.[1] At that period and place the prevailing

custom is shown by the vote[1] that "John Tinker hath licence to retayle liquors distilled by him, vntil Octob[r], 1662, and to indeavor to suppress others that shal sell by retaile in y[e] Towne."

WILLIAM[1] was one of the group which removed[2,5] to Haddam in 1662, where his home lot lay next north of that of GEORGE[1] GATES [see map on p. 773]. Here he showed himself to be a helpful and respected member of the community, for in 1669 he was appointed[5] a special commissioner from Haddam to the General Court, with power to employ counsel if necessary regarding the boundary dispute with Saybrook. He was also one of the building committee for the first meeting-house[5] at Haddam and in November, 1674, he assisted in taking an inventory of the estate[6] of Thomas Smith. Of his sons,[5] Joseph[2] and Thomas[2] remained in Haddam, John[2] went to Middletown and William[2] is said to have settled in Wethersfield.

WILLIAM[1] married probably by 1645 but the name of his wife, who survived him,[10] has not been learned. His will,[10] dated June 30, 1681, and witnessed by GEORGE[1] GATES and the Reverend Nicholas Noyes, gave to his "wife £4 a year during her natural life . . . the use of my Dwelling house & the little Orchard, half the Garden so long as she live a Widow. Moreover I give unto my wife a Cow, which my son Thomas shall winter for her during his Mother's life. Also I give unto her half my Household Stuff, & that in her half she be suited with a Bed & Bedding & such things as are most suitable for her, which she shall dispose of at her death to which she please of her Children." That document named each of his children except Mary[2], who had died, leaving a son, Daniel Hubbard, Jr., eight days old. The testator gave this grandson a goodly portion of land, directed that he be "learned to read & to write," and added, "I declare him to the dispose of my wife so long as she liveth. . . ."[10] The death of WILLIAM[1] occurred on July 22, 1681. The inventory of his estate was taken on August 19 by GEORGE[1] GATES, WILLIAM[1] VENTRES, Simon Smith and JOHN[2] SPENCER, Selectmen, and showed a valuation[10] of £412–18–00, which was considerable for that period.

The children of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE and his wife (——), born at unknown dates but probably most, if not all, of them in Hartford, were[2,5,6,10]

I. William[2], if he was a William of Wethersfield he[7] either m., by 1668, Susannah Treat, and d. January–February, 1710–1, or m. Margaret (——) and died in the fall of 1708.

II. John[2], d. July 26, 1731; m. by 1675, Elizabeth[3] White (Captain Nathaniel[2] of Middletown, Elder John[1] of Hartford).[8]

III. Joseph[2], d. 1723; m. Ruth[2] Spencer (GERRARD[1]).[2,11]

IV. Thomas[2], executor of his father's will.[10]
V. Mary[2], b. probably abt. 1650; d. December 24, 1673; m.[9, 10] February 24, 1670, Daniel[2] Hubbard (George[1]), who was bap. December 12, 1645.
VI. Elizabeth[2], d. after[12] January 5, 1697–8; m. abt. 1667, James Wells, Sr., of Haddam.
VII. daughter[2], named in father's will; m. (——) Fennoe[10] or Jennor.[13]
VIII. DAUGHTER[2],* [perhaps Sarah] who received £8 by father's will and had previously m.[10] (——) SPENCER, undoubtedly TIMOTHY[2] [see Spencer, p. 777]. She d.[14] about 1704.
IX. Hannah[2], probably unmarried at time of father's death.

REFERENCES

1. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 41, 92, 344, 360, 365.
2. Savage, I, 399, 404.
3. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 235, 255.
4. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 401, 496, 519, 535.
5. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 369, 373–4; Two Hundredth Anniversary of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, pp. 42–3.
6. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 234.
7. Ibid., II, 43, 179–80; History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 238.
8. Memorial of Elder John White, A. S. Kellogg, 1860, pp. 25–7.
9. One Thousand Years of Hubbard History, E. W. Day, 1895, pp. 274–5.
10. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 290–1.
11. Savage, IV, 147; Goodwin's Notes, 1856, p. 204.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 592-3.
13. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, pp. 605–7.
14. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 117; Statement by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn.; Goodwin's Notes, 1856, p. 204.

*The will[10] of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE of Haddam made a bequest to "my daughter SPENCER." The wives[14] of all the sons of GERRARD[1] SPENCER of Haddam are known, except the wife of TIMOTHY[2] and no one of them was a Clarke. Added evidence of relationship is seen in the fact that James Wells, of Haddam, son-in-law of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE, served the family of TIMOTHY[2] SPENCER, another son-in-law, (a) by taking the inventory of SPENCER's estate, assisted by a third brother-in-law, and (b) by distributing the said SPENCER's estate to his heirs with the assistance of two other uncles of the heirs. It seems genealogically evident, therefore, if not legally proved, that TIMOTHY[2] SPENCER, of Haddam, married a daughter of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE of that place. Her name may have been Sarah, as was that of her eldest daughter.[14] She died surely before[14] May 6, 1704.

COE

* † ‡ ‖ ¶ § [880] ROBERT COE 1596–c.1689	m c.1623	MARY . . . –1628
* † ‡ ♠ [440] ROBERT COE c.1626–1659	m c.1650	HANNAH MITCHELL –1702
♠ ♦ [220] JOHN COE 1658–1741	m 1682	MARY HAWLEY 1663–1731
♠ * # [110] JOHN COE 1693–1751	m 1715	HANNAH PARSONS 1699–1760
# [54] JOSEPH HULL 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"SIBYLLA" COE c.1723–1785
⊙ ◇ ● [26] LEVI CHAPMAN 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	ELIZABETH HULL 1747–aft.1820
⊙ ◇ [12] JOSHUA SHIPMAN 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	SYBIL CHAPMAN 1768–1828
⊙ ▲ ◇ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
+ ◇ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
◇ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Watertown, Mass.
† Wethersfield, Conn.
‡ Stamford, Conn.
§ Hempstead, L. I.
‖ Newtown, L. I.
¶ Jamaica, L. I.
♠ Stratford, Conn.
♦ New Haven, Conn.
\# Durham, Conn.
⊙ Saybrook, Conn.
◇ Marietta, Ohio.
▲ Athens, Ohio.
\+ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
* Haddam, Conn.
● Salem, Ohio.

COE

OUR English Coe* ancestry has been definitely established, for eight generations before ROBERT[I] COE emigrated to New England, and the results published.[1] The family had estates at Gestingthorpe, co. Essex, England, was armigerous, and for five of these eight generations—1340 to 1520—was Roman Catholic, but within twenty years after the death of the ancestor JOHN of that fifth generation (who died in 1520) the Protestant Reformation was firmly established in England and his children and their descendants conformed thereto.

Evidence of an interesting English custom is seen in the records of this family for this JOHN of the fifth generation back of our emigrant had, as is proved conclusively by his will, two living sons named "John" who were made joint executors of this will. He called them "John thelder" and "JOHN the yonger" and it is the latter, born about 1495, who was the great-great-grandfather of ROBERT[I] the emigrant. In the following generation the same situation arose but in that case JOHN "the elder" was our forbear. In at least five different instances parents in the Coe relationship named each of two living sons "John" and in one case two brothers were named "William." To the modern mind this seems like a useless bidding for trouble.

As the years passed different members of the family scattered more or less and acquired through marriage various other estates and, though the grandfather of our emigrant lived at Gestingthorpe, HENRY, the father of ROBERT[I], spent much of his life at Thorpe Morieux, co. Suffolk, where ROBERT[I] himself was baptized on October 26, 1596. The fact that a sister of his who was to be named for her grandmother DOROTHY (——) COE was christened "Godsgift," which is the Puritan form of that name, indicates that the changing religious convictions of HENRY COE somewhat influenced his children and furnished a motive for the ultimate removal of his second son, our ancestor, to the new world.

*The material here presented is drawn from Mr. J. Gardner Bartlett's excellent compilation, "ROBERT COE, Puritan, His Ancestors and Descendants."

ROBERT[1] was living at Boxford about eight miles south of his native town in 1625 and the fact that he was then called "cloth overseer" implies that he had learned the cloth making business. He was elected questman in the church there in 1629. His first marriage to MARY (——) occurred about 1623. She was the mother of all his children, died in England and was buried on October 27, 1628, at Boxford. He married secondly, at Assington, in the parish next south, on April 29, 1630, Hannah Dearslay. On April 30, 1634, ROBERT[1], aged 38, with this new wife and his four children, embarked at Ipswich, the port which is fifteen miles east of Boxford, on the "Francis" for New England.

Religious conditions and environment were the dominant factors in determining for ROBERT[1] COE a career different from the lives of his ancestors. During his early manhood Puritanism, which had been growing in England for a generation, became paramount in Essex and Suffolk, and persecution of its adherents resulted in the great Puritan emigration to New England in 1630 under the leadership of Governor John Winthrop of Groton, co. Suffolk, the parish adjoining Boxford on the north. Brought up amid Puritan influences, ROBERT[1] COE became imbued with their fervid faith and desire for religious liberty, and joined the throng that left their beloved ancestral home and braved the perils of the deep and the hardships of pioneer life in a wilderness infested with hostile savages, to found a nation in the New World.

In those days a voyage to New England took about ten weeks, so ROBERT[1] COE probably arrived in Boston in July, 1634, and he immediately went to Watertown, Massachusetts, a suburb of Boston, where he found located many settlers who came with Governor Winthrop in 1630 from the vicinity of Boxford in England. The first mention of his name in New England is his admission as a freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony on September 3, 1634, showing a previous admission to the church which was a requisite for freemanship, i.e., the privilege of voting and holding public office. His residence at Watertown lasted less than a year as the town became crowded by the influx of new settlers; so in June, 1635, ROBERT[1] COE joined with a few others in starting a new plantation at Wethersfield, Connecticut, in the fertile valley of the Connecticut River, being dismissed from the Watertown Church on May 29, 1635 [see maps on pp. 373, 511].

He resided at Wethersfield, Connecticut, about five years. His house stood on a three-acre home lot situated on what is now the northwest corner of East Main and Broad streets. Besides this home lot he also owned several other parcels of land in Wethersfield, amounting to twelve acres of meadow, thirteen

acres of swamp, and over a hundred acres of upland, recorded April 28, 1641. These lands he sold to James Boosey who had them recorded May 11, 1644. On May 4, 1641, ROBERT[1] COE had recorded a tract of nine hundred acres which he bought of Matthew[1] Mitchell where the present town of Glastonbury stands which he soon sold to Robert Rose. A few years after the settlement of Wethersfield a disagreement arose in the church there, the exact nature of which is not certainly known, but it has been claimed that it was caused by a faction to which ROBERT[1] COE belonged desiring a form of church government of a nature similar to that of the present Presbyterian Church. After fruitless efforts by the churches at Watertown and New Haven to reconcile the dissension, it was proposed that one faction withdraw. Accordingly in November, 1640, the faction to which ROBERT[1] belonged purchased lands for a new plantation at Stamford, Connecticut, and removed thither [see map on p. 645].

This settlement took place in the early spring of 1641, and ROBERT[1] COE was granted a home lot of fourteen acres, but two of the company of twenty-eight proprietors having a larger amount. He seems to have been a leading man at Stamford, being appointed a magistrate there on April 5, 1643, and serving as deputy to the General Court at New Haven the same year and also in 1644 but his residence there was destined to be of brief duration. With the growth of the town from new settlers and attempts by the government at New Haven to regulate its affairs, a difficulty shortly arose similar to that which had caused the withdrawal from the Wethersfield Church; and the faction led by the Reverend Richard Denton and ROBERT[1] COE, despairing of success in living at peace in their views under New Haven jurisdiction, in 1644 crossed the Sound to Long Island [then under the Dutch government at New Amsterdam which was, after its conquest by the English in 1644, called New York], where a new settlement was established which was named Hempstead. A church was immediately organized of which ROBERT[1] COE is said to have been chosen elder, and here he remained eight years, acquired extensive grants of land, some of which he retained until near the close of his life, and was the magistrate of the town under the Dutch government.

But the energetic and enterprising spirit of ROBERT[1] COE craved further activities and, in the spring of 1652, he was the leader in the formation of another new settlement a few miles farther west on Long Island. A patent was obtained from the Dutch government at New Amsterdam and the land was bought from the Indians. The proprietors immediately organized a new church of which the Reverend John Moore became the pastor and ROBERT[1] COE the

elder. The new settlement was at first called Middleburg, and later for a few months in 1664, Hastings, but in 1665 was permanently named Newtown. On a rate made in 1656 for the Indian payment, fifty-five proprietors appear; the land was purchased at 1 sh. per acre and the assessments varied from 2 sh. to £4, only ROBERT[1] COE and Edward Jessop paying this largest sum. ROBERT[1] remained at Middleburg [Newtown] for four years, being the most prominent man in the town and the local magistrate during the whole period of his residence there. In 1653 he went to Boston as the deputy of the town to invoke the protection of the Massachusetts Bay Colony against the Indians who were threatening to attack the English settlements on Long Island, and in November of the same year he was sent as a deputy to New Amsterdam to confer with the Dutch government for the common safety.

The settlement at Newtown being well established, ROBERT[1] COE made over his interests there to his eldest son, John[2] Coe, and in the spring of 1656 was again the leader of another new settlement, for he and his youngest son Benjamin[2] Coe and several others had purchased of the Indians in September preceding, a large tract of land south of Newtown [see map on p. 533], and removing thither founded the town of Jamaica [in the Dutch records also called Rustdorp].

ROBERT[1] COE was appointed by the Dutch government in 1658 as the magistrate for Jamaica, and held that office until 1664. During this period a turmoil arose in Jamaica over the prosecution of some Quaker, and on January 28, 1662–3, it was ordered that all records at Rustdorp be delivered to Mr. ROBERT[1] COE, actual magistrate and oldest inhabitant of the town.

In the autumn of 1663 the English population on Long Island revolted from the Dutch government at New Amsterdam and transferred their allegiance to Connecticut; following this revolution, in May, 1664, ROBERT[1] COE was deputy for Jamaica to the General Court at Hartford, by which body he was appointed commissioner [or magistrate] for Jamaica. August 27 the same year New Amsterdam surrendered to an English fleet and force commanded by Col. Richard Nicolls who became its governor as an English province, the name being changed to New York. On the reorganization of the government by the English, Long Island returned to the jurisdiction of New York as a county called Yorkshire, and of this county ROBERT[1] was appointed judge of courts of oyer and terminer held April 7, 1669, and from 1669 to 1671 he was also High Sheriff of Yorkshire. At the age of seventy-five he retired from the office and appeared no more in public positions.

For a period of a little over a year, 1673–4, New York was again under the control of the Dutch. In 1674 by a treaty between England and Holland it was ceded to the former. At a court held under this temporary Dutch régime on December 12, 1673, ROBERT[1] COE was unjustly sued by a Dutchman for £15, and the fearless independence of the aged Puritan is shown when at the next court held January 30, 1673–4, the court messenger announced he had served a summons on COE to appear "who said he had nothing to do with this Council and would not come."

Of the patriarch's old age but few glimpses are seen. During his active life he settled most of his estate on his three sons; and in February, 1674–5, when almost an octogenarian he married a third wife, Jane, formerly wife of John Smith and also of Edward Rouse, she being nearly a score of years his junior. On November 29, 1678, he bought of Jonah Fordham a farm of fifty acres at Foster's Meadow in Hempstead where he settled with this bride of his old age and passed his declining days.

In the foregoing records gleaned, ROBERT[1] COE is found to be a fine example of the Puritan of his day; a man of vigorous physique, restless energy, strict integrity, strong convictions, and great force of character; and these characteristics have remained impressed on his descendants for generations. His abilities and worth were recognized by his contemporaries by whom he was honored for many years with numerous positions of trust which he filled with ability, performing well his part in laying the foundation of a new nation.

No record of his death or place of burial has been found and, as he disposed of his property in his lifetime, there are no probate records of his estate. From certain documents it seems likely that he died about 1689 at the advanced age of, approximately, ninety-two years.

The children of ROBERT[1] and MARY (——) COE, all baptized at Boxford, co. Suffolk, England, were

I. John[2], b. 1625; d. after 1692; m. about 1656 (——).
II. ROBERT[2], see following.
III. Mary[2], bap. September 19, 1626.
IV. Benjamin[2], bap. October 18, 1628; d. after January 1, 1693–4; m. before 1660, Abigail Carman (John).

ROBERT[2] COE (*Robert*[1]) was baptized on September 19, 1626, at Boxford, England, died about September, 1659, at Stratford, Connecticut, and married about 1650, probably at Wethersfield, HANNAH[2] MITCHELL [see Mitchell, p. 589].

He was brought to New England by his father in the spring of 1634 when seven years of age, and taken in the successive removals to Watertown, Massachusetts, and Wethersfield and Stamford, Connecticut. Although his father and brothers removed to Long Island in 1644, he remained permanently on the mainland, perhaps at first in care of his father's interests there, some of which were not disposed of for some time. About 1650 he settled at Stratford, Connecticut, where he purchased about 1652 a homestead from the widow of Thomas Ramble. This homestead was located on what is now the west side of lower Main Street, between South Avenue and Birdsey Street. Besides this homestead he also had forty-seven acres of land elsewhere in Stratford [see map on p. 645].

It seems likely that ROBERT[2] COE was of a delicate constitution, and as he was cut off by death at the early age of thirty-three years, he acquired no prominence in public affairs as did his father and his brother John[2]; but there is evidence from some memorial lines* written after his decease by Reverend Abraham Pierson of Branford, Connecticut, that the young man was esteemed for piety and exemplary character.

The descendants of ROBERT[2] COE were a prolific and vigorous race and for a century after his death lived in Connecticut. Most of them have been Congregationalists, several members of the family being ministers in that church.

ROBERT[2] died intestate about September, 1659, and was buried at Stratford. On October 20, 1659, his widow presented an inventory of his estate showing a valuation of £179–18–0. The court ordered the estate to be divided among the widow, son JOHN[3], aged one and a half years, daughter Susanna[3], aged six and a half years, and daughter Sarah[3], aged three and a half years; son JOHN[3] to have his portion at twenty-one, and the daughters theirs at eighteen or at marriage.

His widow married, secondly, Nicholas Elsey of New Haven whither she went to reside taking her Coe children with her [see map on p. 645].

* "Rest blessed Coe, upon thy bed of ease;
I' the quiet grave with the is no desease—
All, all our anguish hath its perod fixt,
Err hens we goe: not any joy but mixt.
Raer grace which maks the life of man the best,
This young man lived to God and now is blest.
Come parallel this saint: now far exceed:
Omit no means that may true goodness breed.
Are tryals come, bestowed for days of need?
The Lord his widow bless, and take his seed."[2]

The children of ROBERT[2] and HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE, all born in Stratford, Connecticut, were

I. Hannah[3], b. December 14, 1651; probably died young.
II. Susanna[3], b. August 16, 1653; d. April 2, 1746, at New Haven; m. January 11, 1671–2, Captain John Alling.
III. Sarah[3], b. about 1656; m. 1st, about 1680, Timothy Gibbard; m. 2nd, about 1687, Jeremiah Osborne.
IV. JOHN[3], see following.

JOHN[3] COE (*Robert*[2], *Robert*[1]) was born May 10, 1658, at Stratford, died April 19, 1741, there and married at that place, December 20, 1682, MARY[2] HAWLEY [see Hawley, p. 415]. When a small child he was taken by his mother to New Haven, Connecticut, upon her marriage to Nicholas Elsey of that place, and he lived there until attaining his majority. On January 12, 1678–9, his mother, HANNAH Elsey of New Haven, conveyed to him the real estate of his father in Stratford, consisting of the home lot of about one acre on the west side of Main Street, and various other parcels containing twenty-nine acres of upland, nine acres of meadow, two acres of swamp, thirty-six acres of woodland, and rights in ten acres of commons. On December 13, 1683, he exchanged his home lot for another and on this he built a capacious dwelling which he occupied the rest of his life, and which was a homestead of the family for six successive generations.

JOHN[3] COE was a man of ability and energy of character, and besides acquiring a handsome estate and establishing comfortably in life a large family of children, he also became the leading man of the town in public affairs. His business interests were many, as he was a farmer, land speculator, merchant, miller, and innkeeper, as appears from his account book in the possession of his descendant, Mr. David[8] Coe (Dennis[7], James[6], James[5], Capt. Ebenezer[4], JOHN[3], ROBERT[2], ROBERT[1]) of Stratford. Besides holding numerous town offices, in 1701 and 1715 he was deputy for Stratford in the Connecticut Assembly.

In military matters he was also prominent, being successively commissioned ensign on May 25, 1698, lieutenant on May 20, 1706, and captain on October 13, 1709. Nor was his military service confined to mere militia training, as he was active in the French and Indian War in 1708. While on this expedition he dispatched the following letter to his wife which illustrates the spirit of the times and so seems worthy of presentation. The original letter is now in the possession of Mr. David[8] Coe of Stratford, Connecticut.

"Westfield Mass.
August 23d 1708.

My Dear Wife:

Thies come to bring my harty love and efections to you and to tell you of my earnest desiar to imbrace you in the arms of my love hoping they may find you and ouers in health.

I have been very well ever since I left you for which I prays God. The post from Albani last weeke brings news that the enimy disagre and the french indians are turned bak; the scouts from dearfield have not yet discouvered the army. We look for a post from Albani tomorrow after which we are in great hops of being drawn ofe or the greater part of us. I am just now going to Northampton to wait on our govener which makes me in so much hast. So I remain til death your loving husband

JOHN COE.

Our soldiers here are all well.

[Superscribed] To Mrs. MARY COE living at Stratford, these dd."

The will of Captain JOHN[3] COE of Stratford dated January 29, 1740, and probated May 5, 1741, stated that, having already given to his sons Robert[4] and Joseph[4] lands in Durham, to JOHN[4] lands in Haddam and to Ephraim[4] lands in Middletown, he then gave to Ebenezer[4] his property in Stratford as well as making bequests to his daughters. Both he and his wife were buried in the cemetery of the Congregational Church of Stratford.

The children of JOHN[3] and MARY (HAWLEY) COE, all born at Stratford, were

i. Robert[4], b. September 21, 1684; d. bet. February 21, 1761, and February 20, 1762, probably at Middletown; m. December 21, 1708, Barbara Parmalee.
ii. Joseph[4], b. February 2, 1686–7; d. July 15, 1754, at Durham; m. there November 21, 1708, Abigail Robinson.
iii. Hannah[4], b. April 14, 1659; d. March, 1758; m. September 16, 1709, James Curtis.
iv. Mary[4], b. August 11, 1691; d. February 19, 1763; m. November 27, 1712, Samuel Pickett.
v. JOHN[4], see following.
vi. Sarah[4], b. March 26, 1696; d. February 6, 1731–2; m. March 4, 1718–9, Israel Burritt.
vii. Ephraim[4], b. December 18, 1698; d. November 10, 1765, at Durham; m. at Middletown, November 28, 1723, Hannah Comfort Miller.
viii. Catherine[4], b. September 23, 1700; m. 1st, November 11, 1725, Joseph Fairchild; m. 2nd, August 24, 1728, David Calhoun.
ix. Abigail[4], b. November 11, 1702; d. March, 1747, at Durham; m. June 1, 1727, John Guthrie.
x. Ebenezer[4], b. August 18, 1704; d. March 26, 1766; m. at Stratford, December 18, 1728, Mary Blakeman.

JOHN[4] COE (*John*[3], *Robert*[2], *Robert*[1]) was born December 5, 1693, at Stratford, died September 24, 1751, in what was then Durham, and married December

22, 1715, HANNAH[3] PARSONS [see Parsons, p. 639]. He lived at Stratford until maturity, when, like his brothers, he received from his father the gift of a tract of land. It lay in that part of the town of Haddam, Connecticut, which in 1773 was officially annexed to Durham, although for a generation the inhabitants had attended Durham church. Settling here about 1715 he improved a farm on which he passed his life, which was not of the prominence of those of his brothers, and but little mention of him appears in the records.

In a Haddam rate list dated January 14, 1719, the estate of JOHN[4] COE was valued at £42.

The children of JOHN[4] and HANNAH (PARSONS) COE, all born in Haddam and recorded in Durham, were

I. John[5], b. January 9, bap. 11, 1718–9; d. January 16, 1778; m. in Haddam, February 7, 1745, Anna (——).
II. Simeon[5], b. March 22, bap. 26, 1721; d. September 23, 1782; m. January 16, 1745–6, Anna Morris.
III. SIBYLLA[5], bap. May 5, 1723; d. March 18, 1785; m. January 1, 1745–6, JOSEPH[5] HULL of Durham [see Hull, p. 463].
IV. Sarah[5], b. December 13, bap. 19, 1725; possibly it was she who m. at Saybrook, May 29, 1759, Jabez Chalker.
V. Tamar[5], b. October 22, bap. 26, 1729.
VI. Lois[5], b. August 13, bap. 20, 1732.
VII. Phebe[5], b. January 21, bap. 25, 1735–6; m. September 3, 1756, Samuel Camp.
VIII. Zipporah[5], bap. January 10, 1741–2.
IX. Eunice[5], b. February 25, bap. 27, 1742–3; m. February 29, 1763–4, John Camp, 3rd.

REFERENCES

1. ROBERT COE, Puritan, 1911, J. Gardner Bartlett, pp. 16–67, 73–7, 80–1, 87–9, 99–100.
2. History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Conn., 1886, S. Orcutt, I, pp. 116–7.

CONANT

* ⊙ † ‡ § [934] ROGER CONANT 1592–1679	m 1618	SARAH HORTON –1666–7
‡ § [466] WILLIAM DODGE 1640–1720	m 1st c.1663	MARY CONANT [widow Balch] c.1632–bef.1685
§ [232] JOSEPH HERRICK 1666–1726	m 1st c.1684	MARY DODGE 1666–1719
§ [116] HENRY HERRICK 1688–1755	m 1st 1709	JOANNA WOODBURY 1689–1738
§ [58] HENRY HERRICK 1716–1780	m 1738	ANNE BATCHELDER 1717–1815
§ ‖ [28] WILLIAM BARTLETT 1741–1794	m 1761	JOANNA HERRICK 1745–1810
§ ‖ ¶ ♣ [14] HENRY BARTLETT 1771–1850	m 1792	BETSEY COREY 1772–1857
◇ ♣ # [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
♦ # [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
# RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Plymouth, Mass.
† Cape Ann, Mass.
‡ Salem, Mass.
§ Beverly, Mass.
‖ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
¶ Merrittstown, Pa.
♣ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Marietta, Ohio.
⊙ Nantasket, Mass.
◇ Saybrook, Conn.

CONANT

ROGER[1], youngest son of RICHARD and AGNES (CLARKE) CONANT, was baptized on April 9, 1592, at East Budleigh, co. Devon, England.[1, 2] His parents are said to have been "esteemed for their exemplary piety" and their origin has been established and published showing good material circumstances coupled with fine character and religious loyalty.[1] In 1619 and 1620 ROGER[1] was a resident of the parish of St. Lawrence, Jewry, London, carrying on the business of salter.* He probably removed to that city a number of years earlier, as the position he seems to have held at that time required a seven years' apprenticeship.[1, 1a] He was married in the parish of St. Ann's, Blackfriars, London, on November 11, 1618, to SARAH HORTON, and doubtless resided in that city until he emigrated[1, 2] to New England in 1622–3, probably with his wife and oldest son.[4] By some students he is believed to have come in the "Ann" in July, 1623, as did his brother[1] Christopher, while others claim he came[2, 6] as early as the autumn of 1622. He remained at Plymouth for about a year and probably was one of the group with John Oldham, called "particulars,"[1] to whom were assigned[3] garden plots near "Hob's Hole," in 1623. The members of this group were not the so-called "regulars" of the Plymouth Company, which was financed by the English "Adventurers" and was under contract to hold all property in common and do all work in common for a period of seven years; but were on their own expense, desired to live near the settlement for safety[4] but had not come to unite with the colonists and favored[15] the Church of England rather than the Separatists' religious beliefs. Arrangements were made whereby these "particulars" might live in the village, share equally in its advantages and be free from community labor except for military and similar duties, but must obey the laws, refrain from trading in furs with the Indians and must annually contribute to the public Treasury one bushel of corn for each male of sixteen years or over.[4]

* A manufacturer of or dealer in salt, or one who salts meats or fish.

While it is not proved that ROGER[1] CONANT came as a "particular," the fact that he resided among the "regulars" for about a year, yet was not mentioned by William Bradford in his history of the early days of the colony, and also the fact that he removed to Nantasket with two or more who were designated as "particulars," justifies the belief that he was one. However, pride can be felt in the certainty that, unlike these associates, ROGER[1], throughout his life, had only honor, integrity and usefulness recorded of him. It is admitted that a difference in religious belief from the Plymouth people was one cause which induced him to remove from them and, apparently, another was inability to credit the evidence of misconduct on the part of John Oldham and of the Reverend John Lyford, or else an unusual charity toward these "particulars" and trouble makers.[4] Oldham had defied the laws, conspired against the colony and acted as informer and defamer of it to a disaffected portion of their financial sponsors in England and after trial he was expelled from the settlement and preceded Lyford to Nantasket, but ultimately he repented and "Mended his ways." Lyford showed many similar and even worse faults which were the more objectionable because of his ministerial pretensions, because of special favors shown him and his family by the Plymouth people, and because of his apparent lack of penitence.[4] He, too, was expelled and followed his friend to Nantasket whither ROGER[1] CONANT also repaired, about the same time, being erroneously[1, 8] credited with expulsion himself by one writer[7] who misconstrued the early records.

At Nantasket ROGER[1] is said to have been[5, 6, 7] "the principal person" as well as a "pious sober and prudent gentleman," "religious and well affected."[8] After about a year's residence there he was requested by the Dorchester Company of England, a group made up of various investors and a few idealists who had been maintaining a fishing settlement at Cape Ann [now Gloucester, see map on p. 373], for approximately a year, to go there to "be their governor in that place," having charge of both the fishing and of the plantation.[8] They also invited Lyford to preach and Oldham to trade for them with the Indians, and of these ROGER[1] and Lyford accepted. In this way two items of interest transpired, for CONANT became the successor to THOMAS[1] GARDNER [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I] who had been overseer of planting at Cape Ann during the previous year, and, under Lyford, the local worship became Episcopal in form[8] rather than Congregational as was the rule in New England.

The most outstanding incident during the term of service as Governor,

of ROGER[1] CONANT, occurred when some of the disaffected Adventurers in England who were favorable to and influenced by Oldham and Lyford, in 1625 sent a vessel and crew to open the fishing season at Cape Ann early and to take possession, as by reprisal, of the drying stage there and other possessions of the Plymouth people, their erstwhile proteges. When this usurpation was discovered the Plymouth men, headed by Myles Standish, demanded restitution and were ready to fight to enforce it, but ROGER[1] CONANT stood firm for tolerance and peaceful measures and suggested, with the approval of Captain Peirce, whose boat lay at anchor near by, that his men and the crew would assist the Plymouth men in building a new stage and they thus prevailed upon them so to do, leaving the aggressors in undisputed possession.[8] Since CONANT, representing the Dorchester Company, had unity of interests with the Plymouth people, as against the disgruntled group of usurpers, it was the more high-minded of him to counsel and practice moderation.

The business venture of the Cape Ann settlement proved to be ill-advised and became a heavy liability. Farming was an impossibility on such rocky soil, the fishing trade was uncertain and was operated at a loss and the men were dissatisfied and disorderly. CONANT soon realized the undesirability of remaining there and looked around for a location which would be desirable for farming as well as convenient for fishing. He found, about sixteen miles southwest, on the mainland at Naumkeag, now Salem, a fertile peninsula by a wide river with a good harbor. When the Dorchester Company decided to pay off the men, to give passage home to such as desired it and to discontinue operations at Cape Ann, he suggested this more suitable location to such of his friends in England as were loath to give up the plan of colonization. One of these, the Reverend John White, wrote ROGER[1] CONANT not to "desert the business, faithfully promising that if he himself, with three others [whom he knew to be honest and prudent men, viz. JOHN WOODBERY, JOHN BALCH and Peter Palfreys, employed by the adventurers], would stay at Naumkeag and give timely notice thereof, he would provide a patent for them, and likewise send them whatever they should write for, either men or provision, or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians. Answer was returned that they would all stay on those terms. . . ."[8] This negotiation evidently contemplated the continuance of ROGER[1] at the head of the colony. On the strength of this plan he and the associates named, with a few others, in the fall of 1626 removed to Naumkeag where they built homes and began

to clear land. Very soon the three named companions of ROGER[1], induced by the trouble maker, Lyford, who had received a call to Virginia, "repented of their engagement to stay at Naumkeag, for fear of Indians and other inconveniences" and considered going south instead, urging CONANT to accompany them, but his firm refusal and determination to remain at that place influenced them to stay with him.[5, 6, 7]

Soon the plan was made to send JOHN[1] WOODBURY to England to arrange for the patent and the supplies promised them, and he departed on this mission in the winter of 1627–8. He returned the following spring after an absence of about six months bringing assurance of success in the grant of a new charter and of the promised speedy arrival of men and goods. This must have cheered them greatly but their joy was short-lived for, in the meantime, the patent and entire interests had changed hands in England, and the new owners deputized one of their number, John Endicott, to come to New England as their representative and Governor, superseding ROGER[1] CONANT. John Endicott arrived, unannounced, in September, 1628, with a group of settlers about equal in number to those already on the ground, to take over control of the territory and improvements made by the first planters during the five years of their occupancy and indeed, of the men themselves.[15] Much dissatisfaction arose at the decided injustice of deposing Governor CONANT and of advancing the newcomers' rights to the detriment of the men who had stood the brunt of settlement. It must have been a time of great discouragement to the "old planters" and it shows high character indeed that the troubles were "quietly composed by the prudent moderation of Mr. CONANT, agent before for the Dorchester Merchants; that so meum and tuum, that divide the world, should not disturb the peace of good Christians, that came so far to provide a place where to live together in Christian amity and concord."[8] This forgiving spirit must have been the harder to maintain since Mr. Endicott, though a man of strict integrity, was arbitrary, unyielding, self-assertive and sometimes violent therein.[8]

It is evident that the English company realized their unfairness to the old planters and feared that these might consequently join themselves to some other similar project, for Oldham was by this time possessed of a Virginia patent which he would naturally desire to have settled. Therefore instructions were sent from England on May 28, 1629, to Governor Endicott, though in a condescending tone, to make concessions to these first settlers whereby they were permitted to become co-members of the corporation; to share in

the privileges of the charter, to enjoy the lands they occupied, had cleared and planted, as well as to receive additional grants; to have representation of two members on the council of twelve;[8] to continue the cultivation of tobacco which was forbidden the newcomers* on the score that it was unhealthful and immoral;[4, 9] and to profit by a reduction in the cost of transportation of goods brought over in the company's vessels.[1] The old planters were not really conciliated but chose the lesser evil of acquiescence[9] and political union was established, though the distinction between old and new was not soon forgotten. Not until nine months later on June 30, 1629, at a General Court convened by Governor Endicott, did they officially accept him as such, and by common consent "all combyned together into one body politique under the same governor," showing a consummation of the efforts of ROGER[1] CONANT toward peace which entitles him to a greater fame than has yet been accorded him.[8, 10] Thus he was the first acting governor at Massachusetts Bay and the only one under the Cape Ann Charter, while Endicott was the second incumbent in that position and the first one under the Massachusetts Charter.[8] As a memorial to the union of old and new forces under Endicott, the name Naumkeag was changed to Salem, signifying "City of Peace."[10]

Thereafter ROGER[1] supported the new government and served his community quite constantly in many lesser ways, such as on trial juries and grand juries, as surveyor of highways, as arbitrator, as selectman for eleven years between 1637 and 1658, as delegate for the church to ordinations elsewhere, as scribe of the book of grants in 1637, as one of the "ratters" [assessors of taxes] in 1645, as Representative to the General Court, as Justice of the Quarterly Court for three years, as witness to wills and deeds, in taking of inventories, on committees to apportion land, to set and certify bounds, to examine and mark canoes,† to raise a general stock for the purpose of trade, to seat all the "married persons in the meeting house" and to contract for the building of "a meeting house of 25 feet long, the breadth of the old

*It required "that the new settlers be not allowed to cultivate tobacco, except in small quantities for sickness; that none but 'ancient men' be permitted to take [use] it, and they do it privately; that the old planters be persuaded to discontinue the raising of such an article. . . ."[16]

†In regard to the use of canoes in Salem in 1633 it is said: "There they crosse these rivers with small Cannowes, which are made of whole pine trees, being about two foot and a half over, and 20 foot long. . . . In these likewise they goe a fowling, sometimes two leagues to sea. There be more cannowes in this town than in all the whole Patent. Every household having a water horse or two." In 1636 it was ordered that all the "canooes . . . be brought . . . to be viewed" and none shall be used under penalty than such as the surveyors "shall allowe of and sett their mark upon."[9, 11] They were the principal vehicles for travel in all coast towns.

building with a gallery answerable to the form [with], one catted chimney twelve feet long. . . ."[1]

ROGER[1] and his wife whose leanings were Episcopal, worshiped under Lyford at Nantasket, Cape Ann and for a time at Salem. After Endicott's arrival the form of worship was changed to Congregational and the first Church Society formed in New England came into existence, of which, in spite of their evident preference, ROGER[1] and his wife became original members.[1, 10] They signed the renewed covenant[11] in 1637. In 1649–50 the members resident at "Bass Riverside," including ROGER[1], petitioned that they might have preaching among themselves, for convenience. This was soon granted, but they did not become a separate organization until 1667, at which time he and his wife headed the list of members.[12]

It is interesting to note the interweaving of business interests and association in that early day between families whose eventual interrelation of marriage gives us our heritage, as for instance, on March 23, 1670, when ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] RAYMOND and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH sold to ISAAC[1] HULL nine acres of land; on the same day those three grantors, with WILLIAM[1] DODGE and PETER[2] WOODBURY each gave him one acre lying near "the south east corner of the great pond";[1] again, ROGER[1] CONANT, WILLIAM[1] DODGE, BENJAMIN[2] BALCH and JOHN[1] RAYMOND were executors of the estate of THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS in 1656; the inventory of ROGER[1] CONANT himself was taken by JOHN[1] RAYMOND and WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, and many other such instances are found. [For Balch, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]

ROGER[1] was a large land owner for he not only bought many tracts but he also received in January, 1635–6, as one of the perquisites of the five "old planters" a farm of two hundred acres where Beverly now is, and in June, 1671, was granted by the General Court another two hundred acres called a "parcell of land in the wilderness." This second grant was said to have been in consideration of his being a "very ancient planter" but in truth it was intended to act as balm for a last sad disappointment which came to him. The facts are that shortly after the old planters each received their two-hundred-acre farms in 1635–6, four of them, including ROGER[1], moved onto them and for some time the locality was called "Bass Riverside," but in 1668 the inhabitants were granted permission to incorporate and the Court assigned it the name of Beverly. The wags of the community annoyed the residents by nicknaming it "Beggarly" and the dissatisfaction of the

inhabitants culminated in a petition to the General Court in May, 1671, written and signed by ROGER[1] CONANT with thirty-four appended signatures of the majority of the male residents. This document recounts in humble but pitifully appealing fashion the summary of the long life in New England, of hardship, disappointment and the service of ROGER[1], then over eighty years old; the fact that in his upwards of forty years of residence he had asked no other favor of the Court; that the other settlers as well as himself were from the general locality of Budleigh, which was his birthplace; of their displeasure with the name Beverly, which was not of their choosing, and of their desire that it be changed to Budleigh. None of these points carried weight enough to move the Court to grant the request, and it is impossible not to feel regret that ROGER[1] had to bear this last disappointment, for the above-mentioned gift of land which he was too old to use must have been a sorry substitute for the granting of his one request. Of the thirty-five petitioners eleven were ancestors* of ours.[1, 10]

Roger[2], son of the emigrant, received a grant of land in 1639 while still a youth because he was the "first borne childe in Salem."[9, 11] His mother, SARAH, wife of ROGER[1], was living in 1666 when she was mentioned in a deed[1] and in June, 1667, as a petitioning member of Beverly Church,[12] but she died[12] before September 20, 1667.

The will of ROGER[1] CONANT, dated March 1, 1677, gave £5 to his daughter MARY DODGE and £5 to be divided equally among her five children, including MARY (DODGE) HERRICK, and it made his son WILLIAM[2] DODGE one of the overseers. This document was proved November 25, 1679, and the estate amounted to about[1, 11] £258, but large amounts of land had been deeded to his various children earlier.[1] His death occurred on November 19, 1679, at Beverly.[12]

The children of ROGER[1] and SARAH (HORTON) CONANT were[1, 2, 11, 14]

I. Sarah[2], bap. September 19, 1619, in parish of St. Lawrence, Jewry, London, Eng.; buried there October 30, 1620.
II. Caleb[2], bap. May 27, 1622, at same place. Doubtless came to New England with his parents, but died before 1633 in England where he had probably gone for education.
III. Lot[2], b. about 1624 either at Nantasket or Cape Ann; d. September 29, 1674; m., abt. 1649, Elizabeth Walton of Marblehead.
IV. Roger[2], b. 1626, Salem; d. June 15, 1672; m. Elizabeth (——).
V. Sarah[2], b. abt. 1628, Salem; d. June, 1662; m. John Leach.

*ROGER[1] CONANT, WILLIAM[1] DODGE, WILLIAM[2] DODGE, JOHN[1] RAYMENT, BENJAMIN[2] BALCH, PETER[2] WOODBURY, WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, HENRY[2] HERRICK, ISAAC[1] HULL, JOHN[1] WOODBURY, ZACHARY[2] HERRICK.

vi. Joshua[2], b. abt. 1630, Salem; d. 1659; m. Seeth[2] Gardner (THOMAS[1]) [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

vii. MARY[2], b. abt. 1632 at Salem; d. before 1685; m. 1st, John[2] Balch (JOHN[1]), who was drowned[13] January 16, 1662; m. 2nd, prob. abt. 1663, WILLIAM[2] DODGE [see Dodge, p. 323].

viii. Elizabeth[2], living unmarried 1679.

ix. Exercise[2], bap. December 24, 1637, Salem; d. April 28, 1722, at Windham, Conn.; m. Sarah (——).

REFERENCES

1. Conant Genealogy, F. O. Conant, 1887, pp. 49–57, 99–128, 137–8.

1a. Warren Jackson and Allied Families, 1903, B. W. Davis, pp. 163–7.

2. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, pp. 78–86, 89–93, 96–7, 101, 206, 463.

3. The Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, p. 388.

4. The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 52–3, 247, 259, 261–74, 324–5.

5. History of New England, W. Hubbard, 1848 ed., pp. 91–3, 102, 106–7; Chronological History of New England, T. Prince, 1826, pp. 230–3.

6. History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, 1856, pp. 157, 169, 195–6.

7. New England Register, II, 233–9.

8. The Landing at Cape Anne, Mass., 1854, pp. 24, 41–53, 55–60, 62–73, 79–81.

9. Annals of Salem, J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 46, 77–9, 106, 122–3, 177, 182, 187, 209, 235; Historical Collections, E. Hazard, 1792, I, pp. 257–8.

10. Address of the 200th Anniversary of Beverly, Mass., C. T. Thayer, 1868, pp. 5–13; History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 14–21.

11. Essex Institute Historical Collections, I, 38, 145–8; III, 49–50; XVIII, 307–8.

12. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 2–7; Beverly Vital Records, II, 406.

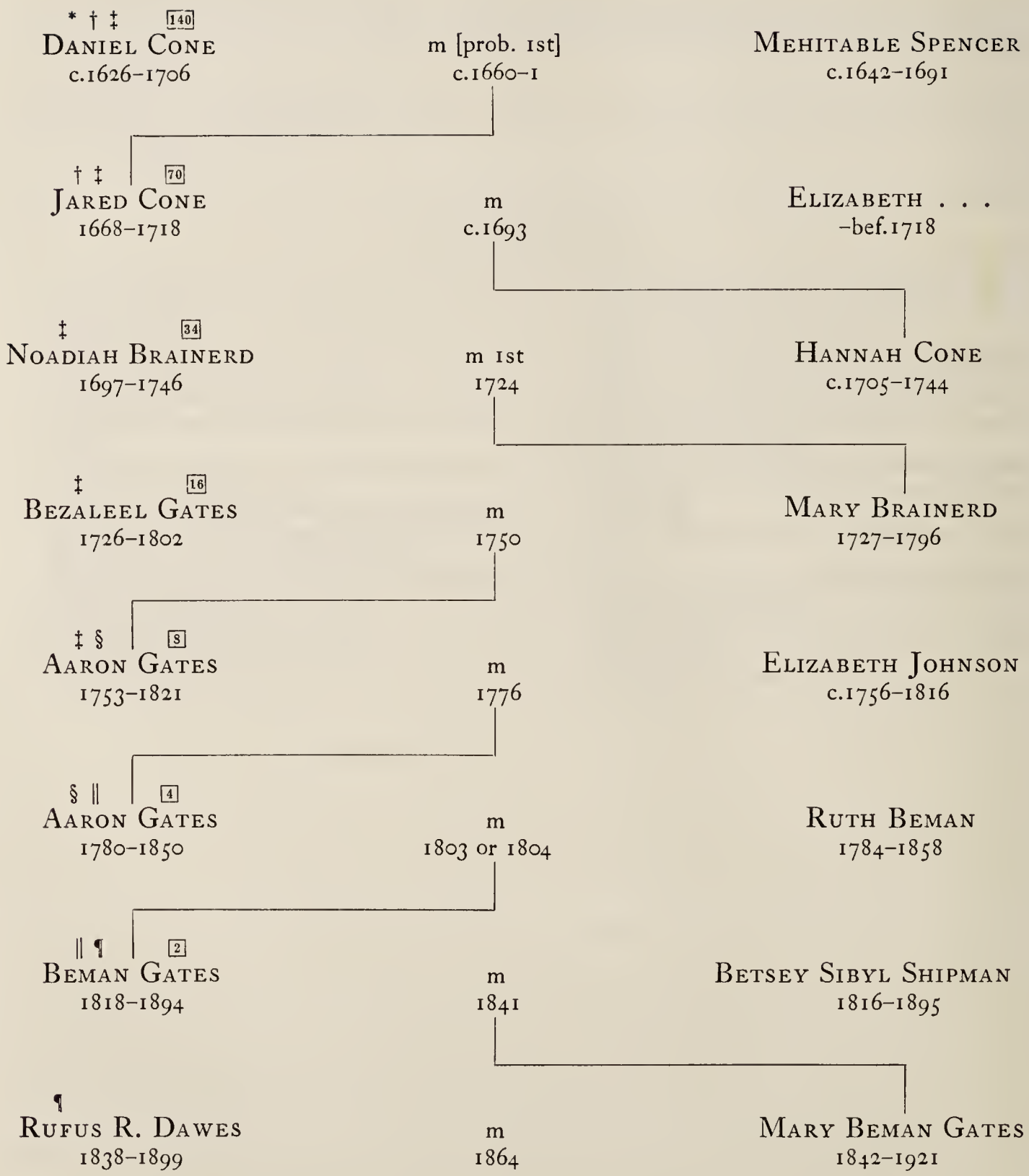
13. Dodge Genealogy, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 18, 20.

14. The Warren, Jackson and Allied Families, B. W. Davis, 1903, pp. 163–6.

15. Ships and Sailors of Old Salem, R. D. Paine, 1912, pp. 18–9.

16. New England Register, VI, 118.

CONE



* Hartford, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

CONE

THE earliest New England record of DANIEL[1] CONE indicates that he was then a resident of Connecticut Colony. It is found in a letter written March 2, 1657–8, by Governor John Winthrop of that Colony to Governor Peter Stuyvesant of the New Netherlands explaining that DANIEL[1] CONE and John Cockerill were bound for a debt of fifteen pounds owed by James Parker to Richard Fellows of Hartford and that both Parker and Cockerill had "escaped to New Netherland" leaving DANIEL[1] CONE alone responsible for the payment of this obligation. It requested that these two wandering men should be returned to New Haven unless they satisfactorily arranged for payment of the amount due.[3]

The home of DANIEL[1] was doubtless in Hartford for some years; he married into a family of that town and was one of the group of twenty-eight young men who removed in 1662 from Hartford to settle Haddam.[4] This removal probably took place in the spring in order that crops might be raised and suitable habitations built before cold weather. The home lot of the Cone family in this new town consisted of four acres and was centrally located [see map on p. 773] near the homes of the Brainerd, Gates and Spencer families. The young people of this group intermarried and became ancestral to us.

The new settlement "Ordered that every inhabitant of this plantation shall personally inhabitt here upon his land four years from the time of his first comeing hither before he shall have liberty to sell his land."[4] The home lots of the settlers all ran east to the river bank but at the other end fronted on the highway, on the western side of which each owner had an additional plot of about three acres.

In one of the divisions of town-owned property [see Gates, p. 12] DANIEL[1] CONE received, as did the other residents, an allotment on the east side of the river to which he later removed. In the division of February 7, 1671, when the householders drew lots to determine the order in which they might select

a share, he unfortunately drew the twenty-fifth choice out of a possible twenty-seven or eight.[4]

In 1664 DANIEL[I] had a case in the local court with "Mr. Lord"* relative to the ownership of a steer. The trial jury could come to no decision and the Court and jury then unitedly attempted to agree upon a verdict. Failing in that, the Court advised the parties either to divide the steer between them or carry the case to the General Court for trial. The latter course was followed by the litigants[6] with the result that the General Assembly, on October 13, 1664, appointed five men "as a Comittee to ripen the busines respecting the calfe in controuersie between Mr. Lord and DAN^LL CONE, whoe returne that they haueing veiwed the sayd beast and the evidences of both sides, doe iudge it to be Mr. Lord's steere. The Court confirmes this y^r determination that the stear doth belong to Mr. Lord."[7]

On May 13, 1669, DANIEL[I] was presented for freemanship as of Haddam[8] and, in October of that year, he, with GEORGE[I] GATES and one other man serving as selectmen[9] or townsmen,[8] reported to the Court the complete list of freemen of that town [see p. 806]. About 1670–80, a number of these families removed to the east side of the river[10] and settled what is now East Haddam but which was for many years merely an outlying district of Haddam. On June 2, 1688, in the division of meadow land at "Machamoodus," lot twenty-six was assigned to "DANNEL CONE" on the valuation of his estate[11] at £74.

This place, perhaps more properly called Matchit-Moodus, but now shortened to Moodus, lay about three-quarters of a mile north of East Haddam Village and in the township of the same name. The locality received this name, which means "the place of noises," from the Indians because of its proximity to Mount Tom [see map on p. 195] which they believed to be the habitation of Hobbamocko, the author of all human calamities. Mysterious noises, ominous rumblings and sharp, cracking sounds, in many instances accompanied by jarring and quaking, issued at intervals from the mountain. Almost daily the aborigines offered sacrifices to Hobbamocko, maintaining that "the Indian's God was very angry because the Englishman's God came there."

Some of the inhabitants ascribed these mysteries to witchcraft and believed that a cave under Mount Tom, lighted by a great carbuncle embedded in its roof, was the meeting place of witches and that the rumblings and

* Doubtless William Lord, of East Haddam.

jarrings were caused by the revelries presided over by the Evil One. In the early days superstition had been decidedly prevalent in New England and it was still a considerable factor in forming the opinions of the residents of this locality, particularly when these unusual occurrences gave added cause for a belief in their supernatural origin.

In 1729 the Reverend Stephen Hosmer, minister at East Haddam, wrote a letter to Mr. Prince, of Boston, describing these disturbances which occurred sometimes daily and again at considerable intervals, and which were heard either locally or, at times, over a radius of from fifty to seventy-five miles. Many visitors* came to explore the region in the hope of hearing the noises and of learning their cause. The theories propounded included the suggestion that a subterranean passage ran from a large cave out to the sea and that the noises were produced by certain delicate combinations of wind and tide, or that certain chemical or mineral combinations were existent and caused occasional explosions within the earth.[12, 17, 26]

In 1674 a Thomas Smith of Haddam died, apparently leaving no relatives, for he devised his property to various neighbors; a small bequest to DANIEL[1] CONE included an account which was due the testator as well as a part of his turnips.[14] In 1682 DANIEL[1] was one of the overseers of the will[14] of JOHN[2] SPENCER, his brother-in-law, and in 1696 administered the estate[14] of John Bailey. He returned to Haddam on the west side of the river to live about[10]

*One such visitor, an odd, old gentleman, calling himself Dr. Steel, of Great Britain, made a critical observation about 1765 and expressed the belief that there was a large jewel [perhaps the witches' carbuncle!] embedded in Mount Tom and that this was in some mystical way disturbing nature. The story goes that he at length dug up two pearls of great value near Salmon River, calling them carbuncles, and telling the people that the disturbances would stop for many years as he had taken away their cause. He warned them that they would eventually begin again for he had discovered other tiny jewels. Strange to say, this prophesy came true both as to cessation and as to recurrence; the sounds were heard again in 1788 and at intervals at least as late as 1852.

Another version of the story is that, after coming to the decision relative to the buried gems, Dr. Steel disappeared from his usual haunts and was presently found to have taken possession of an unused blacksmith shop standing in a lonely place, to have carefully closed every window, crack and knothole and to have barred the door against inquisitive neighbors. All was quiet there through the day but the noise of clanging hammers, the shower of sparks from the chimney and powerful odors flung on the breeze were evidences of nightly activity. For weeks he labored making his preparations and then, one night, the watchers down by the roadside saw him, clad in strange robes, stealing silently from the shop and proceeding toward Mount Tom. A faint glimmer of light moved slowly before him as he climbed to the very top of the mountain where he started to work with pick and shovel and, after long effort on his part, the observers related that suddenly "the rock turned and from the hole beneath streamed forth the blaze of a carbuncle piercing the midnight sky and dyeing the stars a blood red. Loud roared the noises then. The hills shook, huge boulders crashed down the mountain sides and the air was filled with shrieks and groans. The watchers waited no longer but fled for their lives and the despoiler was left to do his fearful deed alone." One variation of this legend says that the jewel bore with it a curse and that on the homeward voyage of Dr. Steel, the ship and all on board were lost but the carbuncle continued its evil spell by terrifying sailors with the rays of light it sent up through the waves in mid-ocean. A long poem narrating these occurrences was printed about 1825 in the *Hartford Mirror;* it was written by J. G. C. Brainerd.[12, 17, 26]

1695. His children shared equally with their uncles and aunts in the estate of their grandfather[19] GERRARD[1] SPENCER.

It was enacted by the General Assembly in May, 1698, that "This Court frees DAN[LL] CONE, Sen[r]., from paym[t] of rates to the countrey for his head"[13] which undoubtedly refers to his poll tax and was probably done because of his advancing age. In May, 1703, he, with GEORGE[1] GATES and DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, were agents for the town of Haddam before the General Court in a controversy with Saybrook.[13]

A short time before he died, DANIEL[1] CONE deeded his home property on the west side of the river, where he made his first settlement and his last home, to his youngest son,[10] Caleb[2]. This property continued to pass from father to son and was occupied by the Cone family for about two hundred years.[5]

It has been said that DANIEL[1] was married and left a son in England and, while he may have done so, no proof of the fact has as yet come to light. He married at Hartford,[16] about 1660, MEHITABLE[2] SPENCER [see Spencer, p. 774]. He married, secondly,[2, 5, 10] before August 4, 1692, Rebecca (——) Walkley, widow of Richard. MEHITABLE (SPENCER) CONE had in her youth acquired membership in the church at Lynn, Massachusetts, and retained it as late as 1682, when their son Caleb[2] was baptized[10a] at Middletown, Connecticut, as had been at least their three preceding children. She died in 1691 at Haddam and DANIEL[1] died there on October 24, 1706, in his eightieth year.[10, 15]

The children of DANIEL[1] and MEHITABLE (SPENCER) CONE, all born probably at Haddam or East Haddam, and numbers VI to IX baptized at Middletown[15] were[5, 10, 10a, 16, 17, 18]

I. Ruth[2], b. January 7, 1662–3.
II. Hannah[2], b. April 6, 1664.
III. Daniel[2], b. January 21, 1666; d. June 16, 1725; m., at East Haddam, February 14, 1693, Mary[2] Gates (GEORGE[1]).
IV. JARED[2], see following.
V. Rebecca[2], b. February 6, 1670, bap. June 2, 1672.
VI. Ebenezer[2], bap. May 25, 1673; d. after 1719; m., by 1696, probably Sarah[4] Olmstead (Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]). This woman definitely married some Cone, for in the distribution of her father's estate in 1726, she was called "Sarah Cone" and every other contemporary Cone than Ebenezer[2] is otherwise provided with a wife. Moreover, if he married thus, his youngest son, Samuel[3], would have been named for the wife's father and this Samuel[3] would have had good reason to name a son Joseph "Olmstead" Cone, as he did do. Further, Ebenezer[2] Cone may likely have been the

father of the Noadiah[3] and Rachel[3] sometimes erroneously assigned to our JARED[2] CONE. This seems the more probable since Rachel[3] Cone named a son "Ebenezer."

VII. Nathaniel[2], bap. June 6, 1675; d. 1731–2 in East Haddam; m. there, probably abt. 1697, Sarah[3] Hungerford (THOMAS[2], THOMAS[1]).

VIII. Stephen[2], b. 1677, bap. May 26, 1678; d.[18] December 1, 1756; m. February 5, 1702, Mary[3] Hungerford (THOMAS[2], THOMAS[1]).

IX. Caleb[2], b. 1679–80, bap. March 19, 1682; d. September 25, 1742–3; m. 1st, December 16, 1701, Elizabeth (——); m. 2nd, September 6, 1723, Elizabeth Cunningham.

X. perhaps David[2], d. young.

JARED[2] CONE (*Daniel*[1]) was born[1, 5, 16, 16a] January 7, 1668, at Haddam or East Haddam, and is said[15] to have been baptized at Hartford; died April 11, 1718, at East Haddam[10, 20, 23] and married about 1693, ELIZABETH (——),* thus far unidentified. In 1685, when he was eleven years old, he received by the will of his grandfather, GERRARD[1] SPENCER, for whom he was named, that man's carbine as well as an equal share with the testator's own children.[19] Practically nothing is found of record concerning the activities of JARED[2], although occasionally his name is mentioned in neighborhood services such as taking inventories of the estates of his nephew, Jonathan[3] Spencer in 1714–5 and of JOSEPH[2] GATES in 1711–2.

His wife's death preceded his and the inventory of his estate showed property valued at over £496, of which his eldest son Stephen[3] was made administrator. A study of the settlement of his estate and the distribution of his property shows that some of the children assigned to him by some authorities[1] could not have been his. A part of the nine called his, might have and probably did, die young; two definitely but erroneously listed in his family[1] [namely,[10b] Noadiah and Rachel who lived to marry in 1724 and 1726, respectively] were neither given a share of his property nor were they provided with guardians by the Court as were the other three minor children[23] who actually belonged to him. Thus the facts that only five children were mentioned in the settlement of the estate and that the invariable legal custom is to mention all known heirs in an intestate settlement, show beyond a doubt that he left neither widow† nor other children.

The Court appointed DANIEL[2] BRAINERD (DANIEL[1]), Daniel[2] Cone (DANIEL[1]) and Thomas[2] Gates (GEORGE[1]) to distribute the property,[23] of

*ELIZABETH is shown to have been a member of the First Church of Christ in Hartford,[15] 1697–1701, at the baptisms of three of her children.

†The statement that he married,[21] probably at Hartford, Sarah[4] Olmstead (Samuel[3], NICHOLAS[2], JAMES[1]) is certainly untrue. She married some one by the name of Cone, probably his brother Ebenezer[2], and received land in 1726 from her father's estate[22] under that name, but the court settlement of the estate[23] of JARED[2] CONE in 1718 gives evidence that he left no widow.

which Stephen[3], the eldest son, received a double share and each of the four others, including our HANNAH[3], received £82–07–09. The Court also[23] appointed DANIEL[2] BRAINERD as guardian to Elizabeth[3] Cone, appointed Daniel[2] Cone in the same capacity to his niece Ruth[3] Cone and appointed Ebenezer[2] Cone as guardian of his niece, our ancestress, HANNAH[3] CONE.

The known children of JARED[2] and ELIZABETH (——) CONE, all born at Haddam or East Haddam, and numbers II, III and IV baptized at Middletown[15] were[1, 10, 10a, 23]

I. Jared[3], b. 1694; d. before father.
II. Stephen[3], bap. June 13, 1697; d. after 1739; m. June 6, 1724, Abigail Barnes.*
III. Thomas[3], bap. November 13, 1698; d. after 1750; m. February 20, 1734, Mehitable[3] Cone (Stephen[2], DANIEL[1]).
IV. Elizabeth[3], bap. October 26, 1701; living in 1718.
V. Ruth[3], bap. July 16, 1704; d. 1757, at East Haddam; m. probably there, September 14, 1721, Samuel Emmons, Jr.[24]
VI. HANNAH[3], baptized November 18, 1705, at East Haddam and died May 14, 1744, at that place. She married there June 4, 1724, NOADIAH[3] BRAINERD[20] [see Brainerd, p. 137].

The other children sometimes erroneously assigned to this family, said to have been born and baptized at East Haddam, were[1]

Noadiah[3], bap. 1700; d. (——); m. 1724, Elizabeth (——).
Rachel[3], bap. 1708; m. November 17, 1726, Samuel Dutton, probably son of Joseph and Mary Dutton.

*The extreme frequency of intermarriage between the comparatively few families of the communities of the early days, the dizzying maze of relationships resulting therefrom and the difficulty of solving some of the genealogical puzzles which present themselves, is suggested by the records of the frequent alliances[25] between the Cone and Barnes families.

William and Mary (Smith) Barnes had eight children, of whom, five married Cones, each one of the latter being a grandchild of DANIEL[1] CONE. Of these five Cones, two were daughters of Stephen[2], one was a daughter of Nathaniel[2], one was a son of Daniel[2] and the fifth was a son of our JARED[2]. This is not an unusual case.

REFERENCES

1. First Settlers of Connecticut and Massachusetts, N. Goodwin, 1856, p. 200.
2. Treman Family, E. M. Treman, 1901, I, 509; Genealogical Record of the Heath, Clark and Cone Families, D. Stillwell, 1905, pp. 28–9.
3. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. V, VIII, 44.
4. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 321, 369, 371–2.
5. Hall Family Ancestry, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 196–200, 211.
6. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 126.
7. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 434.
8. Ibid., II, 106, 526.
9. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 693.
10. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 11–13, 101.
10a. Ibid., pp. 101–4, 117, 161, 276, 314.
10b. Ibid., pp. 102–4; Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 29; Fuller Genealogy, W. H. Fuller, 1908, I, 189–90.

11. New England Register, XIII, 19.
12. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 306–8.
13. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IV, 254, 429.
14. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 234, 363–4, 535.
15. 200th Anniversary of Haddam, Conn., Congregational Church, 1902, pp. 193, 255–8.
16. Savage, I, 442; IV, 147.
16a. Haddam, Conn., Records, I, 125.
17. Connecticut Magazine, VII, 451–8; History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1898, II, 65–6; In Olde Connecticut, C. B. Todd, 1906, pp. 142–52.
18. Genealogical Record of the Heath, Clark and Cone Families, D. Stillwell, 1905, pp. 28–9.
19. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 363–4; II, 201, 300.
20. Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, pt. 1, p. 43.
21. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 16.
22. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 557.
23. Ibid., II, 373–4.
24. Emmons Genealogy, E. N. Emmons, 1905, p. 18.
25. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 14, 101, 162, 276; Connecticut Magazine, XI, 341.
26. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 308; Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp. 62–8.

COOKE (Francis)

* [296] FRANCIS COOKE c.1583–1663	m 1603	HESTER MAHIEU –bet.1666 and 1675
* [148] JACOB COOKE c.1618–1675	m 1st 1646–7	DAMARIS HOPKINS aft.1627–1666–9
* † [74] CALEB COOKE 1651–1722	m c.1682	JANE . . . . –1736
* ‡ [36] JAMES JOHNSON prob.abt.1685–1743	m 1717	ANNE COOKE 1686–aft.Apr.,1752
‡ § [18] CALEB JOHNSON c.1724–prob.aft.1800	m 1745	# MARY COOKE prob.1728–prob.aft.1800
‖ ¶ [8] AARON GATES 1753–1821	m 1776	ELIZABETH JOHNSON c.1756–1816
¶ ♣ [4] AARON GATES 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	RUTH BEMAN 1784–1858
♣ ♦ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
♦ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

*Plymouth, Mass.
†Kingston, Mass.
‡Middletown, Chatham, East Hampton, Conn.
§Burlington, Otsego Co., N. Y.
‖East Haddam, Conn.

¶East Hartland, Conn.
♣Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦Marietta, Ohio.
#See Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–6.

COOKE (Francis)

FRANCIS[1] COOKE was born in England probably after[1] August, 1583, since he was listed in August, 1643, as being less than sixty years old and, consequently, "able to beare Armes."[25] He had evidently preceded the Pilgrims to Leyden, and at the time of his marriage there, was called "woolcomber, bachelor, from England." The entry in the Betrothal Book at Leyden[1] is dated June 30, 1603. The ceremony must have occurred shortly after. His bride was HESTER MAHIEU, "spinster, from Canterbury in England." Her mother, JENNY MAHIEU and sister[1] (Jenny) accompanied her. HESTER was a Walloon* of which sect there was a large congregation in Canterbury from whence she came.[1, 4a] ". . . by vertue of the communion of Churches" the Walloons affiliated with the Pilgrims as HESTER did, doubtless before, as well as after, their removal to Plymouth.

Leaving his wife and younger children behind FRANCIS[1] with his eldest son, John[2], came to America in the Mayflower. The courage and endurance of these voyagers passes our imagination. After sailing[28] they turned back twice for repairs, thus losing valuable time and a "faire winde" which would have taken them far on their journey. The vessel was so overcrowded with passengers and their supplies [which must be made to serve them until a crop could be raised] that the greatest discomfort prevailed, and the delay in their departure brought upon them the fury of the equinoctial storms. ". . . Many feirce stormes" shook the ship "and her upper works [were] made very leakie; and one of the maine beames in the midd ships was bowed and craked" but its buckling was overcome by the use of "a great iron scrue [which] the passengers brought out of Holland" by which they raised "the beame into his place." "So they commited them selves to the will of God, and resolved to

*The term "Walloon" was originally applied to inhabitants of southern Belgium. The wars of reformation and the persecutions of the Inquisition drove many of these to the Netherlands and to England. The Pilgrim Church, while in Holland as well as in New England, practised the interchange of courtesy of offering communion to members of both the French (Walloon) and the Dutch Reformed Churches, and also of accepting it from these bodies for its own members.[1, 2a, 4a]

proseede. In sundrie of these stormes the winds were so feirce, and the seas so high as they could not beare a knote of saile, but were forced to hull,* for diverce days together." During one such experience, when John Howland, "a lustie yonge man," came on deck, he was washed overboard as the vessel pitched, but "he caught hould of the top-saile halliards, which hung overboard" and "though he was sundrie fadomes under water . . . he was hald up by the same rope to the brime of the water, and then with a boathooke and other means got into the shipe againe. . . ." After many trying experiences during the sixty-five days aboard, they reached land.

FRANCIS[1] COOKE was one of the signers of the compact.† On arriving the company divided into nineteen groups, or families, in order to reduce the number of houses needed to shelter them. Then they cast lots for location and a plot on the south side of the only street in the tiny settlement, fell to FRANCIS[1]. In February, 1620–1, he and Capt. Standish were at work in the woods when they heard the alarm warning of Indians. Dropping their tools they hurried home. The natives carried off the tools but returned them about a month later.[4a]

At the first temporary division of land, 1623 [see Bangs, p. 63], FRANCIS[1] received for garden purposes an acre apiece for himself and John[2] who had survived that first awful winter of sickness, and an additional four acres upon the arrival,[4a] late in July or early in August, on the "Anne" or "Little James," of his wife HESTER and children, Jane[2], JACOB[2], and Hester[2].

The reunion of the family filled them with devout thankfulness for their preservation, through the years of separation, from untold dangers in the colony and from the hazardous ocean voyage. HESTER and her children came

*Lying at hull implied striking all sails and allowing the vessel to be tossed to and fro by the waves until the wind moderated.

†The compact signed[28] in the cabin of the Mayflower before the Pilgrims went ashore, became "the first foundation of their governmente in this place" and was "occasioned partly by the discontented and mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall . . . " [see Hopkins, p. 450]. It specified that the purpose of planting the colony was "for the glorie of God, and advancemente of the Christian faith, and honour of our king and countrie . . . " The purpose of the Compact was to covenant and bind themselves together into "a civill body politick" for the furtherance of the above end and the ordering of the colony's affairs. This has been variously spoken of as follows:

> "Thus in a few minutes was this little unorganized group of adventurers converted into a commonwealth."
>
> "At that hour was born that 'free and equal' government of 'popular constitutional liberty' which now spans the continent."
>
> "It was here that the government based on the will of the governed was first established on the American coast."

The Compact stood as their body of laws[28] until 1636 when it was revised and amplified by the governor and council assisted by Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, Deacon JOHN[1] DOANE and others [see Doane, p. 300].

over in company with and shared the experiences of our PATIENCE[2] BREWSTER, her sister Fear[2], and our EDWARD[1] BANGS [see Bangs, p. 62]. In 1627 when community ownership ceased, the cattle were divided into lots and assigned to certain groups. The first lot fell to FRANCIS[1] COOKE, his wife, and five unmarried children with six unmarried men who were perhaps boarding with his family. One of these men later married into the family. This first lot consisted of "the least of the 4 black Heyfers [that] Came in the Jacob, and two shee goats."[23]

So far as is known FRANCIS[1] occupied himself here only with farming as did both his sons, though the practice of a trade is suggested by the fact that in October, 1636, he took as an apprentice John Harmon, son of Edmond of London, who was to serve FRANCIS[1] for seven years "and then to be dowble apprelled" and to receive twelve bushels of corn from him.[23] In November, 1636, several men who were working for John Brown, senior, abused and injured some cattle belonging to FRANCIS[1] who sued their employer for £10. The jury, which included JOHN[1] DOANE and *Josiah[1] Cooke* granted damages of £3 plus the costs of suit and authorized an execution against Brown; but in June, 1637, FRANCIS[1] was still trying to collect the damages.[23]

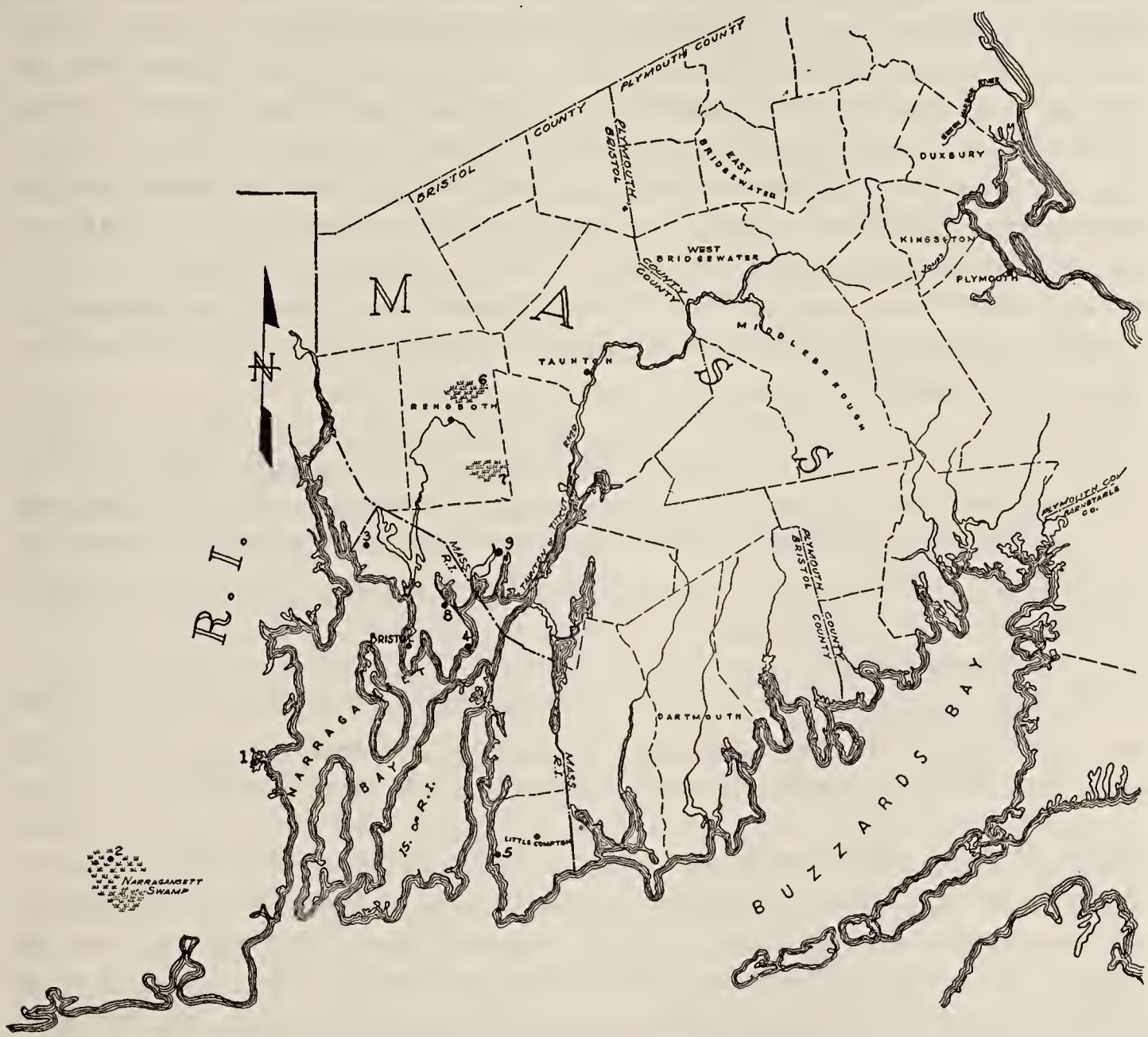
A glimpse of his interests is obtained from such scattered items as these: In February, 1641–2, FRANCIS[1] and his son John[2] contributed £12–10, which was one-sixteenth of an estimated £200 total cost, for building a vessel of forty or fifty tons.[22] In June, 1644, it was required that one member of the family of FRANCIS[1] should immediately hasten to Jones River to join other appointed men in case of an alarm in time of danger.[22] FRANCIS[1] apparently led a rather less eventful life than many of the Pilgrims; he is said to have "expended a considerable estate" in promoting the colony;[4a] he earned no marked honors but it is evident from his oft-repeated services that his character and judgment commanded the respect and confidence of the community. He served[3a, 4a] as surveyor of "Heighwayes," meadows, land grants, and disputed boundaries during the years 1627–8, 1634, 1637, 1640–2, 1645, 1650, 1659, and 1662; this service may have covered a greater time. He was on trial juries repeatedly during each of the years from 1637 to 1643; on grand juries in 1638, 1640, 1642–3; on a coroner's jury in 1648; and frequently helped in taking inventories and in the arbitration of controversies.[3a, 4a] In 1627 when the state of public finances necessitated that a small group (who called themselves "partners" or "undertakers") should bind themselves personally for the colony's debts [see Prence, p. 687] FRANCIS[1] was one of the

other and larger group (termed "purchasers" or "shareholders") who signed[4a, 23] an agreement to abstain for six years from all trade with the Indians or the outside world in order to give the said "partners" the advantage of a monopoly of trade by which means the colony debts might be paid. The list of "partners" included WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER and THOMAS[1] PRENCE and the "purchasers" or signers of the agreement included, in addition to the said BREWSTER and PRENCE, FRANCIS[1] COOKE, EDWARD[1] BANGS, STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, and STEPHEN[1] TRACY.

In addition to the acre apiece for garden purposes assigned to FRANCIS[1] for each of the six members of his family in 1623, he received in 1627, when personal ownership of land became a fact, twenty acres for each share held in the Plymouth Company, that is, for each member of his family. This division of land was made[23] by six "layers-out" two of whom were FRANCIS[1], himself, and EDWARD[1] BANGS. In recompense for this service it was provided "that euery man of ye surueighers haue a peck of corne for euery share of land laid out by them; to be payed by the owner there of when the same is layed out."

In October, 1640, two hundred acres at North River was granted to FRANCIS[1] and his son John[2], and many additional holdings were acquired[4a, 22, 23] by him including, in 1651, land at what became Little Compton; in 1652, at what became Dartmouth, and, in 1662, at what became Middleborough [see map on p. 243]. As late as June, 1662, he drew land in the right of his daughter Mary[2]; for an early law provided a grant for the first child born in New England of each family.[21] He gave[22] generously of these lands to his sons, sons-in-law, and to at least some of his grandsons. On June 10, 1646, he signed a deed of gift whereby his son JACOB[2] should receive, as soon as he married DAMARIS[2] HOPKINS, the one hundred acres of land at North River (as above) as well as one half of all future divisions of land acquired by his father's right as a shareholder in the Plymouth Company. The deed also gave to JACOB[2] one ox, one cow, one calf, and one colt; assistance in building a house at "Rockynooke" [see map on p. 685] and, after the death of both parents, "the teame with all the furniture belonging thereunto." HESTER (MAHIEU) COOKE signed this deed, making her mark; no other instance of her signature has been found.[22]

Bradford called FRANCIS[1] "a very old man" "who hath seen his childrens, children, have children"; but his wife outlived him by several years, dying after[22] June 8, 1666, but before[1a] December 18, 1675. FRANCIS[1] made his will[22]



PLYMOUTH—RHODE ISLAND TERRITORY
ILLUSTRATING KING PHILIP'S WAR

1. Wickford [now Rhode Island]
2. Narragansett Fort
3. Camp of Massasoit
4. Mount Hope
5. Treaty Rock
6. Squannakonk Swamp
7. Manwhague Swamp
8. Colonial Fort or Garrison
9. Swansea

December 7, 1659, giving to his wife, HESTER, all his personal property and the use of his real estate during her life. He died at Plymouth[4, 8] April 7, 1663, and the inventory of his estate, sworn to as accurate by the widow HESTER, showed personal property amounting to over £86, including "1 great bible & 4 old bookes," three horses, five cattle, and twenty-one sheep. The widow and her son John[2] were the executors. On June 8, 1666, the other heirs signed an agreement of distribution which stated that their mother was still living, and which divided the lands left in her hands into five parts of which John[2], the eldest, was to have two parts and JACOB[2], Hester[2], and Mary[2] one part each.[22]

The children of FRANCIS[1] and HESTER (MAHIEU) COOKE, the first four born in Holland[1, 1a, 2, 22] were

I. John[2], b. by, or before, 1612; d. November 23, 1695, at Dartmouth where he resided, being the last of the male survivors[2] of the Mayflower passengers; m. March 28, 1634, Sarah[2] Warren (Richard[1]). He was appointed in 1658, with Isaac Robinson, to attend[21] certain Quaker meetings "to endeavor to reduce them from the error of their ways" [see Prence, p. 690].
II. Jane[2], b. as early as 1612; d. before the agreement of distribution of her father's estate, June 8, 1666; m. after May 22, 1627, Experience[1] Mitchell.
III. JACOB[2], see following.
IV. Hester[2], d. after June 8, 1666, probably before December 7, 1675; m. November 21, 1644, Richard Wright.
V. Mary[2], b. in Plymouth between March, 1624, and May 22, 1627; d. March 21, 1714–5, in her "88th year"; m. there December 26, 1645, John Tompson (Tomson).

JACOB[2] COOKE (*Francis*[1]) was born[1, 1a] in Holland about 1618, for he deposed[1] July 14, 1674, that he was aged fifty-six, or thereabouts. He died at Plymouth after December 11, 1675, the date of his will, and before December 18, 1675, when the inventory of his estate was taken.[5] He married first at Plymouth, shortly after[1, 3] June 10, 1646, DAMARIS[2] HOPKINS [see Hopkins, p. 448]; married secondly,[3] November 18, 1669, Elizabeth (Lettice) Shurtleff, who died October 31, 1693, at Swansea.[10]

When JACOB[2] was about nineteen he volunteered to fight the Indians. This occurred in June, 1637, when the first actual Indian War, that with the Pequot tribe, was threatening[24] and the Plymouth court voted that the colony should raise a company of about thirty men to assist Massachusetts and Connecticut. THOMAS[1] PRENCE was appointed "Counsell of War" and directed to go with the company.[24] The "Names of the Souldiers that willingly offer themselues to goe vpon the s^d Service wth Mr PRINCE . . ." included JACOB[2] COOKE and STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS whose daughter JACOB[2] married later.

The war was practically won before the Plymouth contingent was ready to march, so they were not called into service.[24] In August, 1643, JACOB[2] was listed[25] as "able to beare Armes"; was propounded for freemanship in June, 1647, and admitted freeman in June, 1648. He served[25] on trial juries in 1653, 1655, 1657–60, 1666, and 1670; on grand juries in 1650, 1662, and 1667; as constable of Plymouth in 1671, and as supervisor or surveyor in 1647–8, 1664, and 1666. The possibilities of misspelling are demonstrated in his case when he is recorded as one of the "Supvisors of the Highwaies" and the "Servayors for the Hyewayes."[25]

JACOB[2] received, June 10, 1646, by deed[22, 26] from his father, a gift of land and other property which was to become operative at the time of his marriage. This included one hundred acres of land at North River and the promise of half of all future divisions of land acquired by FRANCIS[1]. In April, 1650, FRANCIS[1] acknowledged this deed and on the same day JACOB[2] sold the hundred acres for £16 sterling.[26] In July, 1649, JACOB[2] bought of THOMAS[1] PRENCE, for £21–10, about forty acres in "Rocky Noocke near Plymouth." In May, 1665, and in July, 1672, he sold and exchanged land at Dartmouth which had come to him from his father. On June 8, 1666, he signed, with his brother and sisters, Hester[2] and Mary[2], an agreement of distribution of the lands left by his father and lately held by his mother; of which JACOB[2] received one-fifth. His father's prenuptial gift to him had included the land at North River, an ox, cow, calf, and colt, assistance in building a house at "Rocky Nooke," where the father lived, and, after the death of both parents, "the teame with all the furniture belonging thereunto."[22] He and his bride DAMARIS must, therefore, have been more completely outfitted than most young couples for, beside what he had, she inherited[27] from her father's estate "the Cowe called DAMARIS heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley . . .," also one-fourth of his personal property which was thus mentioned at the division of his estate by the executors:

"DAMARIS porcon

Inpris i feather bed boulster pillow a stray bed a suite of cloathes another pettycote and a beaver muffe	04	10	00
It i silver spoone	00	08	00
It ii checker coverings	00	16	00
It i peere of linnen sheets	00	08	00
It i pillow beere	00	03	00
It 2 napkins & 2 table cloths	00	02	06
It i chest box and a Case	00	08	00

It an Alkemy spoone	00 00 02
It i great Cittell	01 02 00
It 5 trenchers 2 pewter platters 1 quart pot i pynt pott i salt 2 porringers i chamber pott i tin candlestick i earthen judg i linke & i sive	00 12 00
It i stoole	00 05 00
It Due for hemp	00 02 00
It for part of a cloake	00 10 00"

The will[5, 27] of JACOB[2] dated December 11, 1675, gave to his son CALEB[3], as eldest son, "a Double portion of all my lands; that is to say one halfe of them for quantitie and quallitie." CALEB[3] and the widow were executors of the estate which was inventoried December 18, 1675, and showed a personal estate of more than £104 beside a large amount of land.

The children of JACOB[2] and DAMARIS (HOPKINS) COOKE, all born at Plymouth, were[1, 3, 4, 8]

I. Elizabeth[3], b. January 18, 1647–8; d. November 21, 1692; m. about 1667, as his first wife[2] John[2] Doty (Edward[1]).
II. CALEB[3], see following.
III. Jacob[3], b. March 26, 1653; d. April 24, 1747, in his ninety-fifth year;[7] m. December 29, 1681, Lydia[3] Miller (John[2], Rev. John[1]).
IV. Mary[3], b. January 12, 1657–8; living[5] 1675; m. John Rickard.
V. Martha[3], b. March 16, 1659–60; d. September 17, 1722; m. March 2, 1682–3, as his second wife,[4] Elkanah[3] Cushman (Isaac[2], Thomas[1]).
VI. Francis[3], b. January 5, 1662–3; erroneously said[1] to have died young; his will was dated[8] October 28, 1732, a codicil was added May 15, 1736, and it was probated September 18, 1746. He m.[8, 11] August 2, 1687, at Plymouth, Elizabeth[2] Latham (Robert[1]).
VII. Ruth[3], b. January 17, 1665–6; living[5] 1675.

The children of JACOB[2] COOKE and his second wife, Elizabeth were[2]

VIII. Rebecca[3], living 1675.
IX. Sarah[3], d. February 8, 1744–5, in her seventy-fourth year; m. April 1, 1691, as his second wife, Robert[3] Bartlett (Joseph[2], Robert[1]).[18]

CALEB[3] COOKE (*Jacob*[2], *Francis*[1]) was born[1, 3] March 29, 1651, at Plymouth, and died there of smallpox, February 13, 1721–2, in his seventieth year.[17] He married by or before 1682, JANE (——) who survived him.[5] In 1675 he served[29] on a coroner's jury and, in 1686, on a trial jury. And for some reason he was fined £1–10 before June, 1685. He was received as a freeman in June, 1689. Like his father and grandfather before him he lived at Rocky Nook [see map on p. 685],[22] and in May, 1688, received title from his uncle, Richard Wright, to additional land there, that had originally be-

longed to his grandfather, FRANCIS[1], but for some reason this deed was not recorded[29] until February, 1734–5. This part of Plymouth, with portions of Plympton and Pembroke, was set off in 1717 as a separate parish, and in 1726 as a township called Kingston.

The life of CALEB[3] was ended close to the completion of the first century of the New England settlement. During this period, and especially during his adult life, the Indian problem must have been the most delicate and harassing that the pioneers had to face. CALEB[3] was a neighbor of Col. Benjamin Church (1639–1718) of Duxbury, and at least through King Philip's War, 1675–6, was closely associated and saw service with him.[22, 29, 32]*

A digression here to summarize[30, 31, 32, 33] Colonel Church's outstanding activities is justified, for they suggest the extent of the menace of the Indians and its ultimate cost to the settlers. Moreover, they portray two events in the life of CALEB[3] COOKE which illustrate the extremes of conduct toward the Indians: on the one hand, that of death at sight and ignominious retribution toward one who had grievously offended; on the other, a policy of mercy and kindness toward many, which turned enemies into friends.†

Benjamin Church was absolutely fearless, understood the psychology of the natives, and adopted their own methods of warfare as to combat and capture. The prisoners he took he usually amazed, and often bound to him as loyal followers, by sparing their lives and providing generously for their needs. As a consequence, he had uncanny success in both parley and warfare, rendering especially valuable service from 1671 to 1678 and particularly during King Philip's War, 1675–6.

From the beginning of Philip's reign‡ there had been frequent suspicions of him, and complaints against him, for double-dealing and conspiracy; by

*In addition to the service of CALEB[3] COOKE in King Philip's War, many other ancestors of MARY (GATES) DAWES took a part.[35] Those from Plymouth Colony included JONATHAN[2] SPARROW, JOHN[2] FREEMAN and DANIEL[2] DOANE; from Connecticut Colony, NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD, THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD, EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN, JOSEPH[3] HULL and EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN, who lost his life, with ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER, reported to have been slain; and from Massachusetts Bay, Capt. WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, ZACHARY[2] HERRICK, NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND, WILLIAM[2] DODGE, JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX and JOSEPH[1] PARSONS [see chapters on each of the above families for details]. Others might be named who also served, though less actively, in guarding the various settlements.

†The term "Netop" was applied to any friendly Indian.[30]

‡In historical retrospect[33] it will be remembered that in March, 1621, just one hundred and one days after the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, they were surprised and honored by a visit from the Indian chief Massasoit, who lived in Rhode Island near what is now Warren or Barrington. He came in friendship, and for the remaining forty years of his life continued a loyal friend, not only passively for himself and his people but actively as well, by warning the whites of occasional plots against them and by using his influence to pacify other tribes that would have attacked them. In July, 1621, Edward Winslow, with STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS as interpreter [see Hopkins, p. 445], made a return visit to Massasoit and his tribe, and Winslow went again in 1623, on receiving word of the serious illness of Massasoit. On this second visit Winslow undoubtedly saved the life of the chief, thereby cement-

1670–1 his conduct became openly menacing, and, in 1675, the crisis was reached. The Narragansetts, whom Philip's father had so effectually fended off from the Plymouth colonists, were now more or less in league with Philip and had definitely demonstrated that they must be dominated if the settlers expected to avoid extinction. Consequently in the late fall of 1675, Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut Colonies arranged to combine forces and raise one thousand men to do battle. Benjamin Church was a member of one of the two companies sent by Plymouth to meet the Massachusetts contingent of six companies of foot and one of mounted troops at Wickford in the northeast corner of the Narragansett country [see map on p. 243]. On December 18 these troops were joined by the three hundred men sent[36] by Connecticut, and this little army marched at once to attack the Narragansett fort lying about twenty miles northeast from the location of the Pequot fort which had been destroyed in 1637, nearly forty years before [see Pratt, p. 677 and Olmstead, p. 616]. There is probability that CALEB[3] COOKE accompanied them on this march, but if not, he certainly faced the conditions which brought about the battle.

After assembling at Wickford and spending the intensely cold night with no shelter and but little sleep, the colonists marched eighteen or twenty miles through deep snow with but rations for one meal, and immediately stormed the Narragansett fort. This battle on December 19, 1675, was called the Great Swamp Fight, and resulted in the destruction of the military power of this formidable tribe,* but it cost† the colonists seventy killed and one hundred fifty wounded. During the night following the battle the nearly exhausted survivors carried their dead and wounded back to Wickford through a heavy snowstorm, arriving about two o'clock in the morning, and there

ing more firmly the bond between them. One of the principal advantages of Massasoit's protection was the fact that his tribe lived directly between the territory of the aggressive and warlike Narragansetts and the colonists [see map on p. 243]. This advantage was gradually lost after the death of Massasoit in 1661, and during the reign of his son and successor, "Metacom," who, in 1660, by his request to the Plymouth court, had been given the English name "Philip" and who was "commonly for his ambitious and haughty spirit nick-named King Philip." The son became as constant a menace to the colonists as the father had been a protection. Philip is variously judged to have been "crafty," "an astute politician," "an unreasoning and cruel barbarian," or a penetrating statesman and high-minded patriot concerned for the rights of his race. If, however, he was a "patriot," he could scarcely have qualified also as "sagacious" or "a statesman," for under his father's rule the tribe had prospered, but under his leadership they, as well as various other tribes, were gradually wiped out.[33]

*The effect on the other tribes, and the remnants of this one, was to spur them, temporarily, to greater and fiercer activity than formerly.

†Among[35] the slain was EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 181] and perhaps also ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER [see Chalker, p. 176], and among the fatally injured was PHINEAS[2] UPHAM [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

forty were buried.[30] On this common grave an apple-tree was planted, which stood until 1815, and was known as the "grave apple-tree."[30]

Among the wounded in this battle was Benjamin Church, who was hit by three bullets, one of which tore his thigh and injured his hip-bone; one made only a small flesh wound; and "a third peirced his Pocket, and wounded a pair of Mittens, that he had borrowed of Capt. Prentice; being wrap'd up together had the Misfortune of having many holes cut thro' them with one Bullet." His endurance is shown[30] by an incident that occurred about a month later while he still had "Tents* in his Wounds, and [was] so Lame as not able to Mount his Horse without two Mens assistance." Under these conditions he rode from the "Island of Rhode Island" [near Newport], where he had been convalescing, to Wickford to take leave of his commander, Gen. Winslow, who was just starting on a long march toward the northwest in pursuit of marauding Indians† who, in January, 1676, had stolen from only one man two hundred sheep, fifty cattle and fifteen horses, besides killing several persons. Winslow urged Church to accompany him on this march, and in spite of his wounds he acceded. But the Indians scattered and eluded them, and no opportunity arose of forcing a decisive battle, so Winslow presently decided to return home, for his men were worn with long marching, severe exposure and scant rations. Indeed, on this trip which has always been known as "The Hungry March" they were reduced to such straits that many of their horses were killed and eaten.[30]

Another instance of Benjamin Church's bravery occurred in June, 1676, when he arranged for a conference with Awashonks, a female sachem of the Sogkonate (Saconet, now Little Compton, Rhode Island) tribe with the hope of breaking her allegiance to Philip and acquiring it for the colonists. He stipulated that she should meet him at Treaty Rock [see map on p. 243], bringing with her to the rendezvous only four specified councillors, and that he would come alone. The Newport government, considering this project unreasonably dangerous, at first forbade and finally merely tolerated his plan. Church kept the appointment armed only with a roll of tobacco and a small bottle of rum. He soon found that they were surrounded by a great body of armed and painted warriors, one of whom presently threatened to kill him but was restrained by the others. The outcome of the conference, however,

*"Tent" implied a roll of soft absorbent material inserted in a wound for drainage.

†A noteworthy adventure on January 21, 1676, with two of these Indians [see Dodge, p. 324], is recorded[34] of our WILLIAM[2] DODGE.

was highly successful and resulted in a lasting alliance and friendship with the colonists.

Throughout his service Church and the men whom he frequently commanded took many prisoners, singly and in groups, all of whom were questioned and detained, but were treated so well that not infrequently they transferred their allegiance to him and became his guides, fighters or servants. Church's most important service followed July 24, 1676, when he was commissioned and requested by the Plymouth government to raise and command a company of about two hundred (of whom not more than sixty were to be Englishmen and the others friendly Indians) in an endeavor to capture Philip. This company included CALEB[3] COOKE.

Again the temper of Church is seen in the fact that, following the receipt of his above commission, "he Marched the same Night into the Woods" toward the southwest. By July 30 they were close on the track of Philip, who never stayed long in any place. From August 7 to 10 they were still in pursuit. "One thing which emboldened King Philip in all his outrages, was the assurance which his magicians, consulting their oracles gave him, that *no Englishman* should ever kill him . . ." but "It seemeth that night Philip . . . dreamed that he was fallen into the hands of the English, and Just as he was saying to those that were with him, that they must fly for their lives that day . . . Our Souldiers came upon him . . ." and surrounded his camp. For just previously Philip had made the mistake of slaying one of his own men who had angered him. A friend of the dead man (brother, it is said) informed Capt. Church of Philip's whereabouts and offered to lead the English to his camp on Mount Hope Neck. There, "on a little spot of upland that was in the south end of a mirey swamp just at the foot of the Mountain," Philip, with a few of his men was camped [see map on p. 243]. Church hurriedly took advantage of this offer and by midnight (August 11) surrounded the knoll where the camp was, placing on two sides groups of soldiers who should presently drive in, and on the other sides, at frequent intervals wherever shelter permitted, placing guards in twos, an English soldier with an Indian, with orders to shoot and kill all who tried to escape. One of these groups of guards consisted of CALEB[3] COOKE and an Indian called "Alderman," and Philip ran directly toward them. The dampness of the morning mist caused the gun of CALEB[3] to miss fire when he snapped it, but the Indian shot Philip through the heart on that morning of August 12, 1676. It is recorded that CALEB[3] induced "Alderman" to exchange guns with him and for many years

it was treasured by the family as a memorial of the virtual end of the Indian War. The lock of it was finally given (before 1816) by Sylvanus[5] Cooke (John[4], Jacob[3], JACOB[2], FRANCIS[1]), grand-nephew of CALEB[3], to the Lothrop family, who in turn gave it to the Massachusetts Historical Society, in whose cabinet it now is. Many years later the barrel was presented by John Cooke, of Kingston, to the Pilgrim Society, in whose cabinet at Plymouth it is preserved.

After Philip's death Capt. Church and his men returned to their homes, for they were weary from their campaign; but very soon news of further depredations near Rehoboth, by Indians under the chief Annawon (a captain under Philip), caused the Plymouth government to entreat Church "to ingage [in] one Expedition more; he told them Their incouragement [pay] was so poor* he feared his Souldiers would be dull about going again: But being a hearty friend to the Cause, he Rally's again, goes to . . . his old Lieutenant, and some of his Souldiers, as us'd to go out with him; told them . . . that he . . . wanted hands to hunt with him; they did not want much intreating; but told him, They would go with him, as long as there was an Indian left in the Woods." This time his party consisted of but five Englishmen, including CALEB[3] COOKE, and twenty Indians. They must have left Plymouth Wednesday or Thursday, September 6 or 7, going to Rhode Island to rest until Monday, but early on the Lord's Day a messenger arrived telling of the passing of an Indian party which, in spite of weariness, Church and his men hastily followed in the hope of capturing and questioning them as to the location of Annawon's camp. The following night Church and his men spent in the woods in hunger. "They concluded to make no fires . . . (and indeed they had no great need of any) for they had no victuals to cook, had not so much as a morsel of Bread with them. And as soon as day broke" they set out for a certain garrison or fort where they roasted "Horse-beaf, enough to last them the whole day, but had not a morsal of Bread; tho' salt they had which they always carryed in their Pockets, which at this time was very acceptable to them." After eating, Capt. Church, with one Englishman, who proves to have been CALEB[3] COOKE, and a few Indians started out to scout further for knowledge of Annawon's camp. After capturing and questioning a

*The remuneration for these men varied somewhat, but was never high. For a time, their ammunition and provisions being furnished by the government, the English soldiers and officers received as pay one-half of the prisoners (or their value) and the friendly Indian soldiers received the loose plunder. At another time the volunteers received half of both the prisoners and their arms. At still another time, in lieu of all wages they received 30sh. per head for their prisoners, but even at that rate the party under Benjamin Church (including CALEB[3] COOKE), on the march which cost Philip his life, received a trifle less than seven and three-fourths pence per day for the time they were out.[31]

number of prisoners who gave consistent answers in return for kindly treatment, Church by this method persuaded one old Indian and a squaw, who were hunting provisions for Annawon, to guide them to his camp. The Indian, grateful for his own safety, offered also to protect Church from attack, but announced that they must start at once if they were to arrive by night, as "Annawon . . . never roosted twice in a place." Church was obliged to send back one of his men as a messenger to notify his lieutenant and men of his movements, and though he was hesitant to attempt so dangerous a task with so few men at hand, yet he was more unwilling to lose this chance to come up with Annawon, the last of Philip's leaders. So "he asked his small company that were with him Whither they would willingly go with him and give Annawon a visit? They told him, they were always ready to obey his commands . . ." but reminded him that this chief was a very subtle and valiant fighter and that it would "be a pitty that after all the Great Things he [Church] had done, he should throw away his Life at last. . . ." Church, replying, admitted the need of caution but voiced his trust that Providence would still protect them and ". . . with one consent they said, They would go. Capt. Church then turned to one COOKE of Plymouth, (the only English Man then with him) and ask'd him, What he thought of it? Who replyed, 'Sir, I am never afraid of going any where when you are with me.' " So the captain sent one Indian back to his lieutenant with orders that they should take the prisoners then held to Taunton [see map on p. 243] "and to come out in the Morning in the Rehoboth Road, in which he might expect to meet him, if he [Church] were alive and had success." He then hurriedly set out with CALEB[3] COOKE and their four Indians, September 11, 1676, to follow the guidance of the lately captured old Indian and squaw. After dark they reached Annawon's camp, which was situated in a depression or hollow near Rehoboth, closely guarded on every side except one, which had, as a natural barrier, a steep rocky ledge about thirty or forty feet high. Immediately under this ledge Annawon, his son and a few chiefs lay sleeping beside their campfire and within easy reach of their stacked arms. There was a squaw pounding corn in a mortar and, at a short distance, three other fires and camps, as Church saw when he peeped cautiously over the ledge. The old Indian told them Annawon had ordered such of his people as were out foraging to return by way of this steep ledge, whose descent was possible only by clinging to boughs of trees and bushes which grew in its crevices. Church ordered the Indian and squaw, with their baskets on their backs, to descend

first while he and his men crept closely after, in their shadow, moving only when the noise of mortar and pestle covered the sound of their movements. The plan was entirely successful and he was enabled to step over the head of Annawon's son and to reach their stacked arms at the moment his presence became known. The young man "discovering of him, whip'd his blanket over his head and shrunk up in a heap," and the father, after a cry of surprise and despair, lay silent, for they must have felt certain that the English had an overpowering force at hand. Church sent his Indian soldiers to each of the three campfires and companies to tell them their chief was taken, to advise them to surrender peacefully, and to offer a promise of fair treatment if they quietly gave up their arms. Since the speakers themselves had received just treatment at Church's hands they soon induced the entire company of fifty or sixty seasoned warriors to surrender. Church then asked Annawon what he had for supper, for he had come to sup with him. Annawon asked whether he would prefer "Cow-beaf or Horse-beaf" and bade his women to serve their captors. Late in the night Annawon rose from his bed and brought to Church the various belts and bands of intricately-wrought wampum, the red blanket and the two ornate powder-horns which had constituted the dead King Philip's official regalia. He told Church that, since, through his efforts, Philip was dead, and he, Annawon, with his company, "the last that war against the English," were taken, these, "Philip's Royalties," he now surrendered to the victor.

It is recorded that these trophies were sent by Gov. Josiah Winslow of Plymouth to King Charles. Though it has not been generally recognized, it seems evident that the courage of Caleb[3] Cooke matched that of his friend and commander, the valiant Capt. Benjamin Church, of whom many other similar exploits could be told.

Under Philip's unfortunate reign the Indian problem, as a power to be reckoned with, disappeared forever. For the tribes concerned, it spelled military destruction, and for the colonies, ultimate safety, but at an appalling cost.[33] They might reasonably have expected financial aid from the English government, since they were dependencies and fighting for the king's cause as well as their own lives; but such assistance was neither sought nor offered. "Divers Christians in Ireland" raised nearly £1000 in 1676 for distribution among them, and Connecticut, who had borne her share of service and cost, but had not suffered as great loss of property at the hands of the marauders, generously released her share of the gift to her more distressed sister colonies

of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay,* whose loss by destruction of life and property was simply frightful. Out of their ninety-eight towns, twelve were utterly destroyed and more than forty others partially so. About six hundred houses were burned, and the expenditure of the colonists, in addition to loss of goods and cattle, has been estimated at more than £100,000 sterling. They had lost nearly one thousand men and scores of women and children. Hardly a family throughout the land but was in mourning. In King Philip's War the loss of life endured by the English is said to have amounted to about one in eighty-four, while in the Civil War the Northerners lost only about one in two hundred twenty-two. Massachusetts Bay possessed by far the most wealth as well as the greatest population, and consequently had the strongest recuperative power, but Plymouth Colony was nearly ruined. It has been reckoned that its war debt exceeded the total amount of personal property in the colony; yet, although it pinched every household for many years, by frugality and steady industry the colony paid its enormous debt, principal and interest, to the uttermost farthing,[33] and CALEB[3] COOKE and his family did their share.

The government had promised "a gratuity of land, besides their wages," to the men who marched against the Narragansetts in December, 1675, "if they played the man, took the fort, and drove the enemy out . . ." but it was more than fifty years later that the final distribution of land occurred, and in it the heirs of CALEB[3] COOKE received a grant in Narragansett Township Number 4, now Greenwich, Massachusetts.

The children of CALEB[3] COOKE began to migrate far from the family home. Elizabeth[4] removed to Maine and our ANNE[4] and her brother Joseph[4] to Middletown, Connecticut. It is said[15] that, in the male line of descent from FRANCIS[1] COOKE, the family of this Joseph[4] (CALEB[3]) was the only one which did settle in Middletown, and that "It is highly probable that all the other Cooke families of that vicinity were descendants of *Josiah*[1] *Cooke* of Cape Cod. This is plainly proved relative to most of them, and circumstantially

*In Massachusetts Bay Colony, from 1646 on, a so-called "rate" or estimated tax was made up by

(a) a regular poll-tax of, at first, one shilling eightpence, and later two shillings sixpence, on males of sixteen and upwards;

(b) a tax of one penny in the pound on property, and on the profits of mechanics and tradesmen. Ordinarily, in time of peace, such a "rate," or at most one and one-half rates, had sufficed for the year's expenses. The Bay Colony's share of the monetary cost of King Philip's War necessitated the levying in 1676 of sixteen "rates," or the enormous assessment of one shilling fourpence on the pound (nearly seven percent) of valuation. Following that, in 1678, the raising of three rates, and in 1680 of four rates, practically cleared the matter for them; but for Plymouth Colony, with her smaller population, poor soil, fewer industries and greater war loss, it was an appallingly greater burden.

evident of the rest."[15] This statement is most significant as pertaining to the origin of MARY COOKE, wife of CALEB[2] JOHNSON [see Johnson, p. 492], who was himself grandson of CALEB[3] COOKE. The will of CALEB[3] COOKE dated February 10, 1721–2, and proved March 31, following,[5] incorporated a bequest to "my daughter ANN JOHSON . . ." [spelled JOHNSON in his wife's will] of "thirty pounds in bills of Publick Credit . . . or Currant Money . . . to be paid at my decease by my Son Caleb Six pounds yearly Suceessively untill the s[d] thirty pounds be paid." His inventory showed more than £193, with debts of about £61. The will of his widow, JANE, dated April 8, 1736, and proved the 24th of that month,[5] gave, among other legacies, £5 to "my daughter ANNE JOHNSON the wife of JAMES JOHNSON late of midleton in the Colony of Connecticut in new england husbandman."[5]

The children of CALEB[3] and JANE (——) COOKE, all born at Plymouth, were[1a, 5, 6, 7, 12]

I. John[4], b. February 5, 1682–3; d. between[19] May 6 and July 6, 1741; m. first, by 1707–8, Elizabeth[3] Sears (Silas[2], Richard[1]); m. 2nd, before April 3, 1727, Hannah (——), widow of Ephraim[4] Morton (George[3], Ephraim[2], George[1]).[19]

II. Mercy[4], b. February 21, 1683–4; d. February 11, 1713–4.

III. ANNE[4], b. August 21, 1686; d. probably at Middletown, Connecticut, after April 28, 1752, when she signed[20] a deed; m. at Plymouth,[1a, 9] February 6, 1716–7, JAMES[1] JOHNSON [see Johnson, p. 485]. They removed to the vicinity of Middletown, Connecticut, as did her brother Joseph[4].

IV. Jane[4], b. March 16, 1688–9; d. February 8, 1716–7, at Bridgewater;[10] m., March 27, 1707, Isaac[3] Harris (Isaac[2], Arthur[1]).[11]

V. Elizabeth[4], b. November 30, 1691; m. at Plymouth, October 27, 1715, Robert Johnson [was he related to JAMES[1] above?] and removed 1727–9 to North Yarmouth, Maine.[5, 12]

VI. Mary[4], b. August 20, 1694; m. March 28, 1717, Robert[4] Carver (John[3], John[2], Robert[1]).[12]

VII. Caleb[4], b. April 17, 1697; d. March 15, 1724, in his twenty-seventh year; m.[14] May 6, 1722–3, at Kingston, Abigail[4] Howland (James[3], Joseph[2], John[1]).

VIII. James[4], b. August 19, 1700; d.[13] 1757; m. February, 1731–2, at Taunton, Abigail[4] Hodges (William[3], John[2], William[1]).

IX. Joseph[4], b. November 28, 1703; d. probably at Middletown, after 1768, when his son Joseph[5] made his will;[15] m. in 1732 (int. June 17 at Kingston),[13] Experience[4] Hodges (Samuel[3], John[2], William[1]). In 1741 they sold their homestead in Kingston and removed to Middletown, Connecticut, where they remained at least until[13] 1744, and probably the rest of their lives. They are said[16] to have had ten children, of whom five were as follows:[15]

1. Anne[5], b. August 14, 1733, at Kingston;[13] unm. in 1768 and perhaps it was she who d. unm. at Chatham, Connecticut, July 27, 1815, aged 84 years.[15]
2. Joseph[5], d. unm., January 26, 1768, naming in his will[15] of the previous day, his father, his sisters Anne[5] Cook, Mary Rogers and Susanna Holmes, and his brother Caleb[5].

3. Caleb[5], d. June 28, 1784, at East Hampton;[15] m. Lucy (——). He served in the Revolution from Chatham.[13]
4. Mary[5], mentioned in the will[15] of her brother Joseph[5] as Mary Rogers. It was doubtless she[16] who m. February 19, 1756, as his second wife, Thomas Rogers [probably son of Samuel[3] Rogers (Samuel[2], James[1])].
5. Susanna[5], d. aft. 1768; m. (——) Holmes.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, I, 445–7; Mayflower Descendant, II, 45–6; III, 95–105; VIII, 48–50; XXII, 13–4; XXIV, 84; Leyden Documents Relating to the Pilgrim Fathers, E. J. Brill, pub. 1920, p. LXXIII; Hypocrisie Unmasked, E. Winslow, London, 1646, pp. 95–6; Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 187.

1a. Register of Society of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, pp. 128, 188, 193, 316, 346.

2. Mayflower Descendant, IV, 150–1; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 39–40; Savage, IV, 427; New England Register, LV, 73–4; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 4, VIII, 251.

2a. History of Plymouth Plantation. W. Bradford, 1912, I, 46; II, 400, 408.

3. Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 5, 12, 15, 17, 22–3, 32; Mayflower Descendant, IV, 114–9; V, 48–52; XV, 27; XVIII, 57.

3a. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 8, 10, 28, 31, 52, 58, 74, 87, 152, 155, 163; II, 7, 34, 40, 53, 56, 84, 132, 160; III, 169; VII, 7, 13–4, 16, 31–2, 34; XII, 14; Mayflower Descendant, III, 98–9, 101.

4. Mayflower Descendant, II, 27–8; III, 236–42; Doty Family in America, E. A. Doty, 1897, pp. 143–4; Cushman Genealogy, H. W. Cushman, 1855, p. 123.

4a. Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 158, 180, 299, 360, 362, 373, 378, 383, 386, 448; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 8, 73, 80, 86, 89; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 36, 183, 186, 244, 246, 293, 298, 474.

5. Mayflower Descendant, III, 236–42; XV, 136–9.

6. Ibid., IV, 111.

7. Ibid., VII, 26; XXI, 42–3.

8. Ibid., XVI, 149–50, 237–8; XVII, 70, 72, 182–3; XVIII, 147–50.

9. Ibid., XIV, 38; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, II, 25.

10. Vital Records of Bridgewater, Mass., II, 159, 479.

11. History of Bridgewater, Mass., E. C. Mitchell, 1897, pp. 175–7, 230–1.

12. Yorke, Me., Deeds, XIII, 834; Mayflower Descendant, XIV, 37–8; Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1899, pt. 2, pp. 52, 69, 162–3, 320.

13. Hodges' Genealogy, A. D. Hodges, 1896, pp. 97, 103–4; Vital Records of Kingston, Mass., pp. 47, 198.

14. Vital Records of Kingston, Mass., pp. 197, 330; Mayflower Descendant, VII, 26; XVI, 148–9; XVIII, 144; Howland Genealogy, F. Howland, 1885, p. 335.

15. Research by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn., in Plymouth, Mass., Middletown, East Hampton, Lebanon, and Middle Haddam as well as Hartford, Conn.; 150th Anniversary of the Congregational Church of East Hampton, Conn., 1898, pp. 86, 114, 119.

16. James Rogers and His Descendants, J. S. Rogers, 1902, pp. 48–9, 429; Matthew Smith Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1890, p. 15; Treman Family, E. M. Treman, 1901, I, 403, 506, 509.

17. Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts [Collections, 1920], XXII, 191, 221.

18. Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 39; Mayflower Descendant, XX, 117.

19. Mayflower Descendant, XVII, 45–58.

20. Middletown, Conn., Land Records, XV, 93.

21. Plymouth Colony Records, IV, 19; XI, 16, 124.

22. Mayflower Descendant, II, 24–8; III, 95–105; History of Plymouth County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 249–50.

23. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 46, 60; II, 177; IV, 54; V, 44; XII, 9, 14, 185–6, 196; History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 31, 285.

24. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 61; History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 6–11, 457.

25. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 114, 116, 123–4, 155, 163; IV, 14, 61, 123, 148; V, 55; VII, 13, 68, 75, 83, 87, 98, 100, 129, 160, 163; VIII, 187.

26. Plymouth Colony Records, XII, 175, 185–6, 196; Mayflower Descendant, II, 27–8; III, 101.

27. Mayflower Descendant, II, 12–3; III, 236–42; IV, 114–5; XIV, 115; Plymouth Colony Records, V, 203.

28. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 64–5, 399–402; Bancroft's History, 1888, I, 206–7; History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 137–8, 149–51, 189–91; II, 70.

29. Plymouth Colony Records, V, 182; VI, 196; VIII, 165, 203; Mayflower Descendant, III, 105; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, IV, 63; History of Plymouth County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884; pp. 249–50; History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 191, 427, 429.

30. History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 33, 39, 190–1, 199–204; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, III, 175–206; History of King Philip's War, Thomas Church, from notes by Benjamin Church, annotated by H. M. Dexter [and referred to hereafter as "Entertaining Passages"], 1865, pp. xix–xxii, 50–175 et seq., 185–90; Descendants of Richard Church, J. A. Church, 1913, pp. 16–34; Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, p. 229; Hubbard's History of the Indian Wars in New England, S. G. Drake ed., 1865, I, 156, 177.
31. Descendants of Richard Church, J. A. Church, 1913, pp. 16–34; History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Winsor, 1849, pp. 245–6; Mather's Magnalia, 1853, II, 573–7, especially 576; History of Plymouth, J. Thacher, 1832, pp. 144–6; King Philip's War, G. W. Ellis and J. E. Morris, 1906, pp. 260, 269–73; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 24–39, 204–5, 387–8, 427, 429; Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 471; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, IV, 63.
32. History of King Philip's War, G. W. Ellis and J. E. Morris, 1906, p. 272; History of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 191, 387–8, 429; Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 471; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, III, 205–6; History of King Philip's War, I. Mather, 1862, pp. 193–5; History of Plymouth County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1884, pp. 249–50; "Entertaining Passages" (see reference 30), p. 147; History of Plymouth, J. Thacher, 1832, p. 144; The One Hundred Fiftieth Anniversary of Kingston, Mass., 1876, p. 49; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 2, IV, 63; Ecclesiastical History of New England, J. B. Felt, 1862, II, 598, 638.
33. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1928, III, 87–95; Descendants of Richard Church, J. A. Church, 1913, p. 26; Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 211–41; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1885, III, 142–3, 159, 172, 175–9, 187, 203–4, 222–32; History of Warren, R. I., G. M. Fessenden, 1845 [being a Supplement to a Discourse at the Dedication of the Baptist Church, J. P. Tustin, 1845], pp. 13–40, 64–7, 73; History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 202; II, 258, 366; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 52; III, 192; Hubbard's History of the Indian Wars in New England, S. G. Drake ed., 1865, I, 52 et seq. to 278.
34. A Narrative of the Indian Wars in New England, W. Hubbard, 1801, p. 164; Hubbard's History of the Indian Wars in New England, S. G. Drake ed., 1865, I, 163–4.
35. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 260, 278, 290, 406, 423, 440, 444–6, 450, 468; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 452, 456; Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, pp. 143, 283, 351, 360; Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 253.
36. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 34–67, 384–5.

COREY

* † # ‡ [30] JOHN COREY prob.c.1740–bet.1775–1785	m 2nd bet.1765–1770	BETSEY LITTLE prob.1745–6–prob.1790–1800
§ # ‡ ‖ [14] HENRY BARTLETT 1771–1850	m 1792	BETSEY COREY 1772–1857
¶ ♣ ♦ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
⊙ ♣ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
♣ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Cape May Co., N. J.
† Sussex Co., Del.
‡ Fayette Co., Pa.
§ Beverly, Mass.
‖ Athens, Ohio.

¶ Saybrook, Conn.
♣ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
\# Westmoreland Co., Pa.
⊙ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

COREY

JOHN[a] COREY,* of Springhill Township and of Dunlap's Creek Settlement[1] [then Westmoreland County but now Fayette County, Pennsylvania], came to that section after April 3, 1769, when all of southwestern Pennsylvania was opened for settlement [see Little, p. 549], and before December 19, 1772, for on this last date he borrowed[1] a sum of money from Michael Cresap and gave that man a note for it.

This obligation was liquidated on September 1, 1775, when JOHN[a] deeded[1] to Cresap two hundred acres near Middle Run [see map on p. 263] for a stated valuation of fifty pounds. JOHN[a] had received this same land[1] by

*The name Corey or Cory is ordinarily stated to have been of Scotch origin. Since the predominating element where our Coreys lived, in southwestern Pennsylvania, was Scotch-Irish [that is, of Scotch origin but transplanted into the north of Ireland to settle upon the escheated estates of rebel earls], it will be seen that by such environment, if not by heredity, the Coreys would have acquired Scotch tendencies. One of the utterly undependable tales, yet interesting in a way because it pictures what was real truth in many cases, is told of the exodus of a Corey family from Britain. It features the usual "three brothers," tells that their lives were in danger from religious persecution, that they left the lights burning in their store to avert suspicion, hid themselves in a vessel then ready to sail for America, and did not venture on deck for three days. Some such method as this really must have been employed by many emigrants, including the family of the Reverend John Youngs of which his stepdaughter, our ANNA (PALGRAVE) WOODBURY, was a member [see Palgrave, p. 622].

With deep regret the admission is made that, in spite of most diligent and far-reaching search[2] over a period of years, the American ancestry of JOHN[a] COREY has not yet been established. Indeed, definite knowledge of his early life is lacking, but evidence which is dependable has come down[3] through the testimony of his daughter BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT [whose life covered the period 1772–1857], and has been recorded by her granddaughter BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES [who was born in 1816 and was therefore about forty-one years of age before her said grandmother died]. The facts thus obtained were verified[3] to BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES when she made a trip from her home in Marietta, Ohio, to Paris, Illinois, to question an aged great-aunt of hers, Rachel (Findley) Bartlett [born December 27, 1776, and married in Fayette County, Pennsylvania, on April 3, 1798 to George W. Bartlett (WILLIAM[4], WILLIAM[3], WILLIAM[2], JOHN[1])]. "Old Aunt Rachel" as she was called, was for more than twenty-five years contemporaneous with, and a neighbor to, the JOHN[a] COREY family, and became a sister-in-law to his daughter, our ancestress, BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT. The relationships learned from these two sources will be stated in this volume as *fact*, for intensive search[2] has not developed one iota of negative evidence, but has, on the contrary, furnished very many pertinent details which all tend to prove these statements. Incorporated in these family records[3] are the facts that JOHN[a] COREY married first, in New Jersey, a Miss Hand, who at her death left one daughter, Joanna, and that he married secondly[4] our BETSEY[4] LITTLE [of Sussex County, Delaware], "whose mother was a Pettyjohn," and removed to southwest Pennsylvania. Relative to his first marriage, it seems highly probable that it was he who was referred to in the record:[4] "John Corey of Cape May and Johannah Hand of Cape May married [there] June 14, 1762," Henry Young of that place acting as surety with the bridegroom, and William Foster and Azariah Hewet acting as witnesses.

deed* of March 18, 1774, from a Josiah Little, for a consideration of but seven pounds ten shillings, and the discrepancy in value on these two dates suggests that the acquisition was in the nature of a gift and that in all probability Josiah Little was a near relative of BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY, wife of JOHN[a].

JOHN[a] COREY and his family, with his wife's relatives, the Little and Pettyjohn families [see Little, p. 550, and Pettyjohn, pp. 653–4], undoubtedly followed the usual custom, for protection and companionship, of traveling together on the wearisome and hazardous journey over the mountains and into the wilderness. This adventure occurred probably in 1770–1, for each of these three family groups is first recorded in Pennsylvania by loan,[1] deed[12] or tax[13] in 1772.†

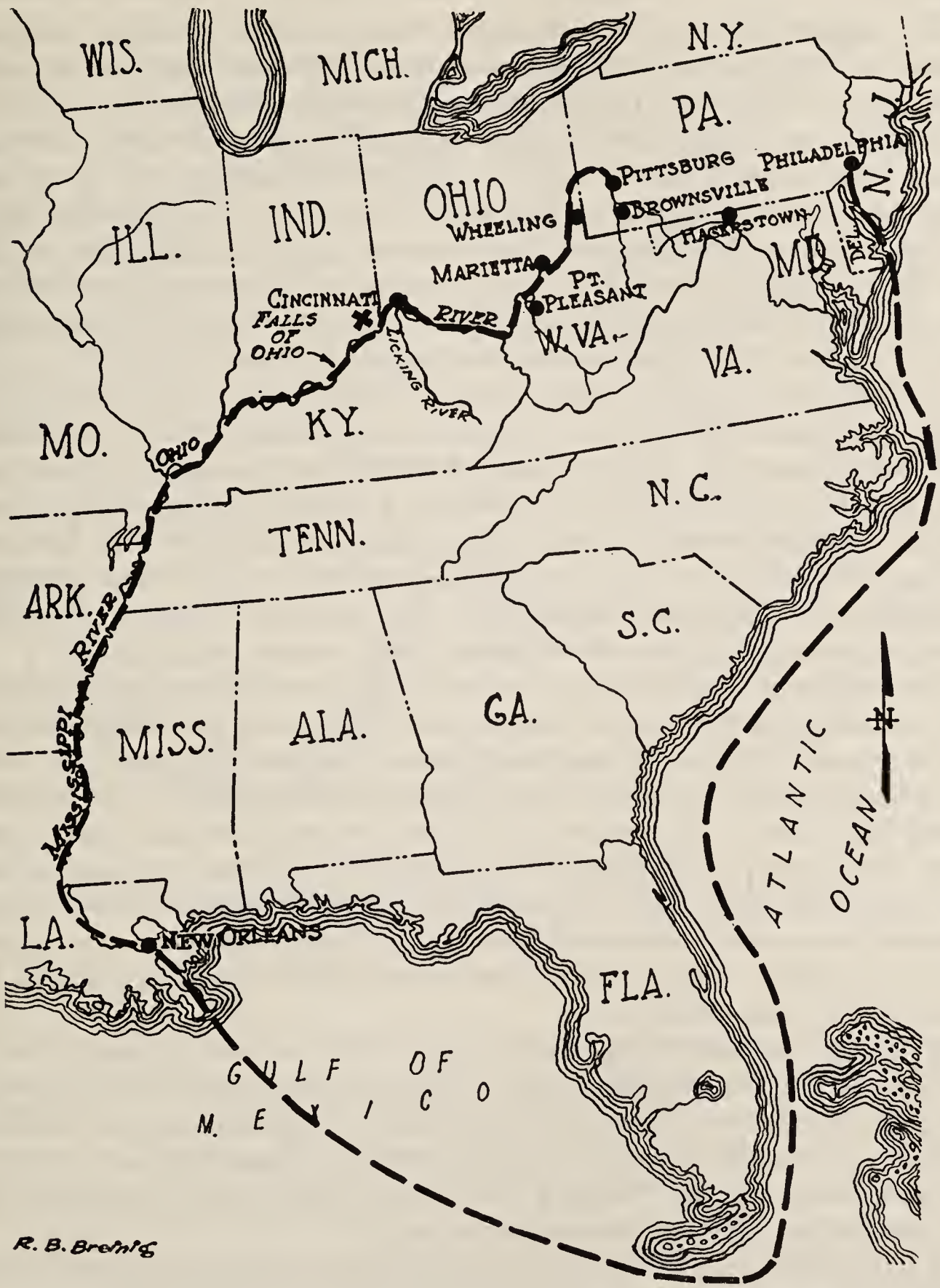
In the deeds referred to [vide supra] JOHN[a] COREY was in March, 1774, called of Springhill Township, which at that time lay south of an east and west line from the mouth of Brown's Run [see map on p. 263], while Josiah Little, the grantor, lived in Menallen Township, north of that line, and the land transferred [on Middle Run] lay in what was then Menallen but is now German Township.

In September, 1775, however, JOHN[a] called himself of Dunlap's Creek Settlement, which argues a removal to the north of Brown's Run and into what was then Menallen Township. Family records say variously that they lived between Brownsville and Merrittstown, in the vicinity of Heistersburg, and between New Salem and McClellandtown; but the roads were so infrequent that the route from one town to another might swing far afield and justify this variation of statement.

*This land[1] was described as "Containing two hundred acres . . . butted and bounded Easterly on the lands of Andrew Rob &c Westerly on the Land of Isaac Willson and the Watters of the Middle Run [see map on p. 263] Northerly on the lands of sd Willson & Rob & Southerly on the Land of Hugh Gilmore at the Lick called the Buffaloo Lick" and the document was witnessed by John Pettyjohn, who was related to, and probably a cousin or nephew of, our ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE. The land had earlier been purchased from James Willson by Josiah Littel [frequently spelled Little, the form adopted in this work].

†A John Corey [though sometimes written Carey], who may have been this man,[2, 16] was taxed in 1779 in what became Bullskin Township [see map on p. 263] on twenty-five acres of cleared land and on two cattle. In 1787, after the death of our JOHN[a] COREY, one of this name [possibly his son, on the father's settlement], had land surveyed in Bullskin Township. Later, in 1800, a John[b] Corey, undoubtedly the son, aged between twenty-six and forty-five, with a wife of similar age, and a son and daughter each under ten, was taxed there on twenty-five acres and two cattle. He was called "Joiner" [carpenter] and was taxed similarly in 1801, after which the name disappears from Bullskin and in 1803 [only] appears in Luzerne Township, where Joshua[b] son of our JOHN[a] lived. That year—1803—this John[b] Corey was taxed only on one head of cattle, and in 1805 he is recorded in Athens County, Ohio, where his brother-in-law HENRY[5] BARTLETT had preceded him [see also p. 273].

An Elnathan Corey, who may have been a relative, was also resident[16] in Bullskin Township in 1788, 1791 and 1795–6, and perhaps it was he who removed to Warren County, Ohio, for a short time and later to Fort Findley, Hancock County, Ohio.[24]



ILLUSTRATING GIBSON'S AND RODGER'S POWDER EXPEDITIONS AND THE MASSACRE +, AUGUST 24, 1781, OF LOCHRY'S "LOST BATTALION"

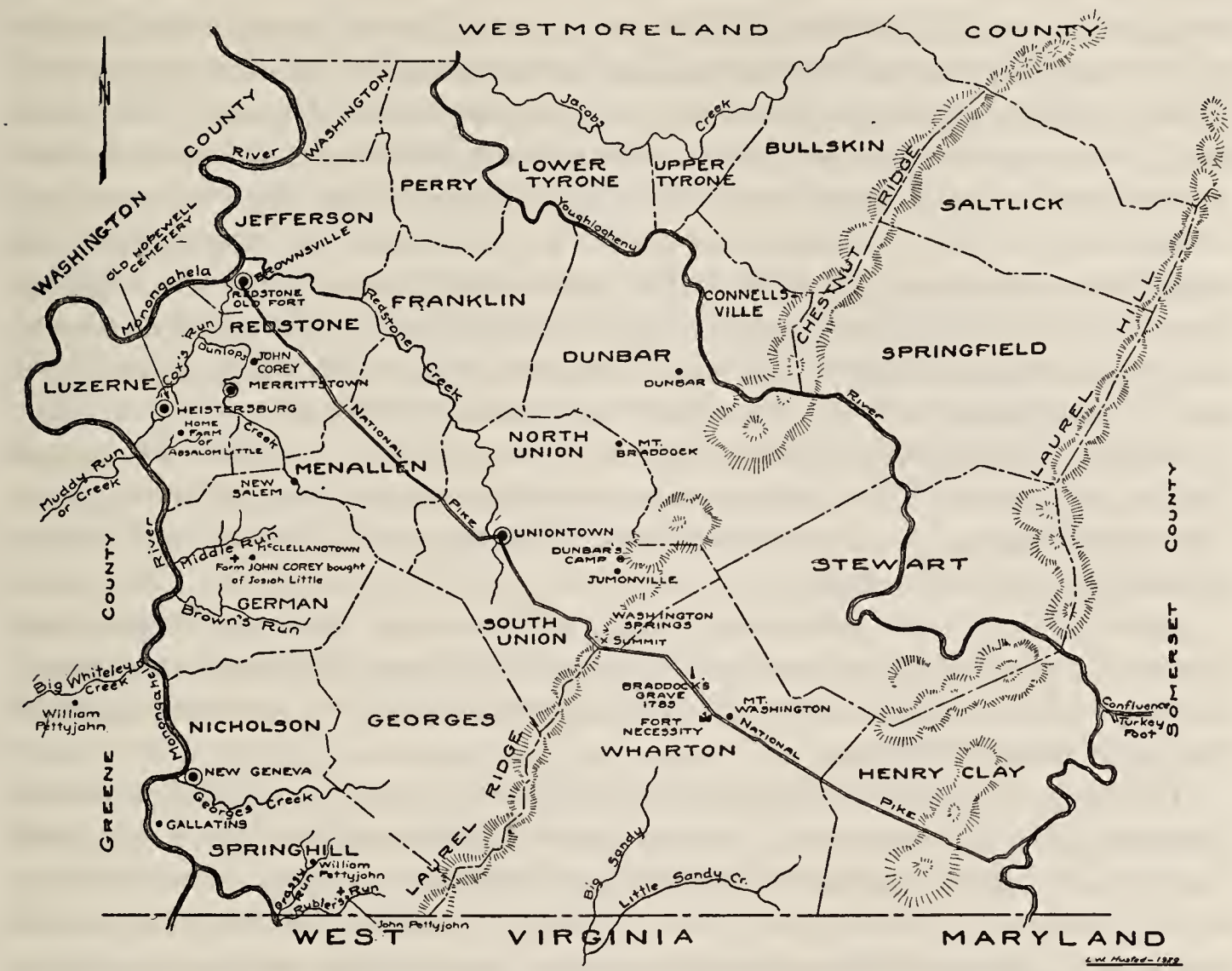
The region tributary[18] to Dunlap's Creek Church included not only Dunlap's Creek Valley but Uniontown, Brownsville and the country known as Redstone Settlement. This church was organized in September, 1774, in a sugar grove on Philip Tanner's farm, under the guidance of the Reverend James Power. There were sixty-one constituent members, of whom eight were elders, indicating that at that time all the church-going people in this community were Presbyterians. Unfortunately this early list is lost. A later list shows Joshua[b] Corey, son in this family, as a member of this church. Shortly after its organization a log meeting-house was built on Tanner's farm, and in that, or in the open woods, they worshiped until 1814.

"There is an amusing story told of the appearance of the Rev. James Finley [who was the first man to preach in the Dunlap's Creek Settlement] and Philip Tanner, in Dunlap's Creek Valley. It recites that they rode up to the house of Capt. John Moore, of German Township, and upon arrival were espied by Moore's youthful son, Aaron, who, running fast as he could into the house cried out to his father 'Pap, pap, there be two great men out there. I know they're great men 'cause they've got boots on.' Evidently 'men with boots on' must have been rare objects in that country at that day."[18]

The deplorable lack[15] of many necessities and conveniences is suggested by the Journal of the Reverend David Jones, who, with the Reverend John Davis, made a trip to and beyond Fayette County in October, 1772, when the Corey and Little families were already resident there. The Reverend Davis died there in December of that year, and the Reverend Jones wrote: "My distress was not small on this occasion for materials to make a coffin and a spade to dig the grave. Was relieved by hearing that in a cabin at some distance there were some sawed boards and a spade could be had in going about eight miles. Happily I had carried some nails with me, so that he was buried with some decency."[18]

A petition[18] is found under date of 1774 from "we who at present live on the west side of Monongahela river," asking for a new road because they "are obliged frequently to carry their corn twenty miles to the mill of Henry Beeson near Laurel Hill; and in all probability, at some seasons of the year will ever have to do so." What a far cry from that condition and opinion to the possibilities and conveniences of today!

It is interesting to note the tendency in that day to the use of unusual words in describing trades[18] or occupations to be taught to apprentices or bound children, and also the form of compensation given them at the close of



FAYETTE COUNTY, PENNSYLVANIA,
ILLUSTRATING THE COREY, LITTLE, AND PETTYJOHN FAMILIES
RESIDENT THERE BY 1772

[See also maps on pp. 535, 537, 539]

their term of service. As, for instance, "the art and mystery of the cooper's trade," "the Mistery of farming," "the art and Mistery of a wheel wright"; while gifts at the expiration of service varied thus: "a new Bible and £10," "one Ax one Grubbing Hoe and one Bible," "a horse & Saddle," "two suits of Cloathing, sufficient shirts stockings & shoes or equivalent, ax, Grubing hoe—wedges." Often the added requirement of a primary education was laid upon masters, as when on February 28, 1780, "At the request of Ann Hammon [the Court] Ordered that her son Isaac Hammon be bound to Isaac McMichael until he arrive at the age of 21 years being now 5 years of age,

and that the sd. McMichl teach him to read wright & cipher as far as the rule of three, also trade and Mystery of Husbandry and give him one new suit of Cloth, a Bible, Grubing how and ax, at the expiration of sd Term."[18] Another fact,[22] showing customs peculiar to that section, is that suicides were buried at the crossroads, in accordance with an old English law. A rather amazing comparison of land values is suggested in the following excerpt showing appraisals of that day as against the great wealth and valuation resulting from the coal veins later developed all over this region—perhaps even on the land once owned by JOHN[a] COREY: "The best land S. W. of the Laurel Hill and Youghiogheny river, sells from 20 to 60 dollars per acre; . . . the remainder of this section is worth from 12 to 30 dollars per acre. The great body E. of Laurel Hill, unimproved, is worth from 50 cts. to 5 dollars; . . . The population . . . is enterprizing, industrious, and frugal, and consequently thrifty and happy."

JOHN[a] COREY* was undoubtedly a poor man and quite inconspicuous, since so little evidence is found of property holdings or of business affairs pertaining to him, but his descendants were, without known exception, deeply and consistently religious.

The history of the period during which JOHN[a] COREY lived in what is now Fayette County [from about 1770 on] shows that he experienced[22] events and faced problems second to none in historical importance, dramatic interest, or daring personal adventure, and often, indeed, in terrible suffering and heroic endurance. These settlers, who were mostly Scotch-Irish, were an especially brave and hardy race. "They were tall, angular and muscular, made no claim to personal beauty and had no particular pride in it. . . . They were prouder of their skill with the rifle and ax than of any other personal achievement; yet, with the instinct of their race, they neglected not the building of a log church and log schoolhouse in the neighborhood, as soon as the extent and character of the settlement could justify it."

It is unfortunate for us that "Those who braved the dangers, privations, and hardships of pioneer life, and participated in the stirring scenes and

*The name Corey, spelled with an "e," was rare enough in the section to arouse interest whenever found. Therefore a suggestion of possible relationship is seen in the presence of a Joseph Corey, who lent £113 Pennsylvania Currency to Zopher Blatchly and his wife, Elizabeth, of Monongalia County, West Virginia, and on October 9, 1794, received[20, 23] from them as security a deed to about one hundred twenty acres of improved land on Big Sandy Creek [see maps on pp. 263, 535].

Another resident on Big Sandy Creek[23] was a William Little, who is believed by the compiler to have been related to the ABSALOM[3] LITTLE family and, if so, was probably also related to this Joseph Corey, his neighbor. William Little was recorded as living there before January 10, 1811, and as purchasing on that date, from a group of Colerin heirs, the property on which he resided.

events" of that early day ". . . seldom kept diaries, or left written records or histories of their wonderful achievements and thrilling experiences . . . and therefore, as the older generations passed away, many of them carried with them recollections and traditions that can never be recovered, and thus has been lost much of pioneer history probably as interesting as any that has been preserved."

The Indian menace never ceased. The uprising in 1774, known as Dunmore's War, caused little if any actual fighting or bloodshed in what is now Fayette County, yet the universal terror caused by the Indian butcheries west of the Monongahela River [called the "Indian side"][27] induced such of the settlers as remained in the country to build stockades and block-houses and to organize a force of rangers. At every report the people sought the shelter of the forts, and St. Clair reported that, in a ride of twenty miles, he "met no fewer than two hundred families and two thousand cattle fleeing from the territory." Again he wrote: "The panic which has struck this country threatens an entire depopulation thereof." This war was practically closed on October 10, 1774, by the decisive battle of Point Pleasant, but, as a consequence of it, almost no crops had been raised the previous summer, and the settlers who had remained on their farms, or who had returned to them, were in the following winter confronted with famine. That season was long known as "the starvation year" and, if supplies had not been sent them from the East, loss of life would have resulted.

Soon thereafter the first guns of the Revolution were fired and found an echoing answer in an intense patriotism along the western slopes of the Alleghenies; for on receipt of the news the settlers met and formulated a memorable and admirable document known as the "Hannastown Declaration," which put themselves and their county in the forefront of the Colonial ranks and cause. The spirit of this document was identical with that of the national Declaration of Independence which was signed the following year at Philadelphia, and its terms provided for the immediate formation of active military units.

"The die was now cast. The state of vassalage was terminated . . . a Republic was inaugurated. A Nation was born. The struggle ceased to be a Civil War. Rebels were now patriots." Evidence of the uniformity with which all men able to shoulder muskets were included in Military Companies is suggested by the fact that on May 21, 1779, tax-assessors were assigned to list the tithables in the various companies "as though a muster list of the

companies would include all possible tax payers." Most of these muster rolls burned at Morgantown in 1796, but one which escaped contained as many as three hundred names. As late as 1780 Monongalia County voted £3000 for provisions for the use of troops in actual service on its frontiers.[27]

For the seven years' duration of the Revolution the people of this locality suffered as much as, or more than, those of any other section; for the absence of all able-bodied men in service left their families practically at the mercy of the Indians, who were spurred on by the British to more determined and aggressive warfare against the colonists than before. We are told[22] that "Not only were the Indians very terrible in battle but they were cruel beyond belief in victory, . . . the inhuman love of cruelty for cruelty's sake . . . marks the red Indian above all other savages. For the hideous, unnameable, unthinkable tortures practised by the red man on their captured foes, and on their foes' tender women and helpless children, were such as we read of in no other struggle, hardly even in the revolting pages that tell of the deeds of the Holy Inquisition."

The excellent marksmanship of these frontiersmen, and their easy endurance of long marches and of every hardship, made them invaluable in the Revolutionary War, and many units were recruited from among them, but almost no record is found to establish their identities. Presently the frontier was quite denuded of man power except for youths and aged men who with redoubled energy patrolled the frontier as rangers and gave warning of any approaching foe.

One story depicting the indomitable will of these westerners in overcoming obstacles justifies repetition. Very early in the Revolution a Captain George Gibson and Lieut. William Linn recruited for Virginia a company around Pittsburgh and from the Monongahela Valley, and marched them to the Virginia seaboard, where they so distinguished themselves for fierce valor in two conflicts with the British and Tories that they received the name of "Gibson's Lambs." Realizing the unprotected condition of the frontier, Virginia ordered them back to the Monongahela. Then, perceiving the existing shortage of powder, which had to be brought from the East across the mountains, and the very certain menace of an even greater lack of it, as the needs of the army increased, Virginia ordered Gibson, with the pick of his "Lambs," to undertake a trip to New Orleans to purchase a supply of powder from the Spanish government. Fifteen of the company were chosen, flatboats were built at Pittsburgh, and on July 19, 1776, they started on their

perilous journey the full length of the Ohio River [nearly one thousand miles] and down the Mississippi, an added twelve hundred miles, to its mouth, the full distance being menaced by the Indians or British or both. In about five weeks they reached New Orleans in safety and, lacking money with which to purchase powder, Captain Gibson presented credentials to certain American merchants living there, including Oliver Pollock, a former Philadelphian, who arranged credits for twelve thousand pounds of powder at a price of $1800. English agents, suspecting their errand, caused Captain Gibson to be arrested, but the arrangements for the powder went quickly forward. One-fourth of it, marked falsely as merchandise, was put aboard a sailing vessel bound to Philadelphia by way of the gulf and ocean, and just before its departure Captain Gibson was permitted to "escape" from prison just in time to board it. The other three-fourths of the powder was turned over to Lieut. Linn, who had it smuggled by night to the barges tied in a secluded place above the city. He hired more than a score of extra boatmen and on September 22, 1776, secretly started the return trip, which necessitated the almost superhuman task of poling the clumsy, heavily loaded barges approximately twenty-two hundred miles up the Mississippi and Ohio rivers. At the falls of the Ohio (now Louisville, Kentucky) it was necessary to unload the cargoes, carry the heavy casks of powder to the head of the rapids, drag the barges up with heavy ropes, and then reload them. After more than seven months of mighty effort the return trip was successfully completed on May 2, 1777, when Lieut. Linn delivered his precious cargo to the authorities at Wheeling, now West Virginia. [See map on p. 261.]

Virginia generously distributed some of this powder among the Pennsylvania frontier rangers, but a goodly portion of it was used by George Rogers Clark in the spring of 1778 for his famous expedition to the Illinois country. Since their supply was thus almost exhausted, Captain David Rodgers, of Redstone, attempted the next year to repeat the feat of Gibson. He started for New Orleans in June, 1778, with two flatboats and about forty men. After getting his cargo of powder safely aboard he succeeded in returning as far as Licking River [in Kentucky and opposite Cincinnati], which he reached in October, 1779. There they were ambushed, their powder was taken, and all but thirteen of the party were killed outright. Of these thirteen, two "aided each other throughout nineteen endless days (until a passing flatboat picked them up), one was shot through both legs and the other through the right arm and left shoulder. Of these, one would shoot whatever game

strayed his way or was driven up by the other member of their queer partnership. Then he with legs would kick to his companion wood for the fire and the game which had been shot. The man with arms would dress and cook it and feed his friend. To procure water, the man with arms would place a folded hat between the teeth of the man with legs, who would wade into Licking River, fill the hat and carry it to his partner. These men both survived."[22, 26] Of such caliber was the manhood of southwestern Pennsylvania, and regret is strong that we may not learn exactly the part JOHN[a] COREY bore in contemporaneous affairs.

One other tragic experience, in which it has seemed that possibly JOHN[a] COREY [sometimes mispelled "Core"] might have lost his life and have been recorded (as some man was) under the name "John Corn," was the expedition in 1781, under Col. Lochry of the so-called[29] "Lost Battalion of the Revolution." In July, 1781, Col. George Rogers Clark intending to lead an expedition against the western Indians, asked Col. Lochry to assemble a body of one hundred or more men from Westmoreland County [which then included Fayette and the COREY home] to assist him. When ready this consisted of one company of volunteer riflemen raised by Capt. Robert Orr, two companies of rangers under Captains Stokely and Shannon [the latter including John Corn (or Core?)] and a company of horse under Capt. Campbell, with Col. Lochry as the only field officer.

They rendezvoused on July 24, 1781, at Carnahan's block house, eleven miles west of Hannastown [see map on p. 537] and next day started via Pittsburgh for Ft. Henry (Wheeling) where they expected to meet Clark and his army. He had started down river, however, leaving instructions for them to follow. This they did, but at each succeeding camp he departed before they arrived and at the mouth of the Kanawha he left a letter affixed to a pole directing them to follow to the Falls of the Ohio instead of striking north up the Great Miami as earlier planned. At this time Lochry hurried a letter to him by Capt. Shannon requesting needed supplies and ammunition, but Shannon and the letter were captured by the Indians who then laid an ambush for Lochry and his men. When they landed, about ten A. M., August 24th, to hunt and to cut grass for their horses, on the north side of the Ohio at the mouth of a creek (since called "Loughrey's") ten miles below the mouth of the Great Miami, they were surrounded, greatly outnumbered, and when their ammunition was gone, the entire command was wiped out by the killing of thirty-seven men and the taking of sixty-four prisoners. Some of the

wounded who were unable to travel were tomahawked. The survivors were taken through the wilderness to Detroit and Canada from whence some of them eventually returned. Their relatives were un-informed as to their fate for several months and most of the families of Westmoreland were in mourning "Lochry's party being all their best men of their frontier."

Lieut. Anderson who took over command of Shannon's men kept a journal which has preserved for us the details of the defeat and his own captivity, for he was taken to Montreal and with one or more other prisoners succeeded in escaping May 26, 1782. They made their way on foot back to New England and finally to their homes in Westmoreland County, arriving July 16, 1782, but most of the captives were absent much longer.[29] Their slow trip back imposed many hardships upon them. He mentions the following among many others:

". . . killed two lambs, and took two horses and rode all night . . . then made a halt, skinned and barbacued the lambs." ". . . encamped on a very high mountain. Found a large quantity of snow on said mountain." "Crossed three mountains." ". . . crossed four creeks, one very difficult . . . obliged to camp on bad ground . . . our provisions were done." ". . . made a raft expecting to go by water, but was disappointed by driftwood." "Made two rafts and never got service of them by reason of rapid running water" "Made two more rafts; and got no service of them by reason of falls." ". . . roasted some toads for supper and almost poisoned ourselves; cut one pair of leggins to make more moccasins." ". . . got a pair of shoes." And he added, finally, with deep appreciation, ". . . we met with a friend, but no acquaintance, who lent us money to carry us to Philadelphia which was a great favor."

And so may be pictured in high lights and extremes the hard lives of these people—showing excesses of physical endurance, of danger, of high courage and of sudden death; and over against that a daily round of what would seem to us an unendurable monotony of drudgery.

Other trials besides the war troubled these people, for the winter of 1779–80 has been called the "winter of the deep snow" and "perhaps the severest in the history of the United States." By February 1st four feet of snow lay over the mountains and in the woods, stopping all travel. The next summer was called the "summer of the big harvest," yet many people were hungry; for, though the crops were bounteous, there was no water to run the mills and grind the grain. Fresh meat was very scarce because of the demands of the army and because of destructive raids by the Indians. The Continental

currency was so depreciated that forty dollars of it were equal to but one dollar of Pennsylvania money. The due bills used to pay the soldiers must be carried or sent to Philadelphia to be redeemed. In view of these things it seems not surprising that, when the state government in 1791 laid an excise tax upon distilled spirits and the stills used therefor, and when a few months later Congress laid an additional tax upon all distilled whiskey, these harassed people felt a bitter resentment, and that their so-called "Whiskey Rebellion" began.

With the high cost of carriage over the mountains, their only possibility of marketing their crops at a profit was to convert them into whiskey, and they regarded this double tax as unjust discrimination against the industries of their section, as well as being almost confiscatory of possible profits which would pay their taxes and pay for their imported salt, powder and iron. Their natural feelings of injustice and injury were fed and inflamed by many unwise leaders [see Little, p. 551]; "liberty poles" were raised and various disorders followed for several years. It became necessary in 1794, for the first time, to use the young nation's militia against its own citizens. But a psychological change soon took place in public opinion, and acquiescence to the law was a natural result. No lives were lost; by November, 1794, the insurrection was practically at an end; and by August, 1795, pardons had been proclaimed to those who had been implicated. Soon after this the children of JOHN[a] COREY removed to Ohio and to comparative peace and plenty, after five generations of their ancestors had endured almost incessant hardship, injustice and conflict during the pioneer days in New Jersey, Delaware and Pennsylvania.[22, 25, 26]

The sports of these men and their sons included running, jumping and wrestling. A well-grown boy of twelve or thirteen years was furnished with a small rifle and a shot-pouch. He then became a fort-soldier and had his porthole assigned to him. Hunting squirrels, turkeys and raccoons soon made him expert in the use of his gun.

No later record of JOHN[a] COREY than the quoted deed[1] of September 1, 1775, has been found, and he must have died at a rather early age, for his erstwhile wife, BETSEY[4] LITTLE, married secondly[3] [by about 1785], Roger Roberts, of Luzerne Township [see map on p. 539], and she had by him a son[3, 11] Samuel Roberts, born about 1786, who died in 1866, aged eighty [see Roberts NOTE, p. 561]. The early demise of JOHN[a] COREY would have left his widow, BETSEY, with six small children to care for. Their lives would have

been mightily influenced by the conditions pictured [p. 273], as well as by their inheritance of endurance and courage, which was passed down to them from their Little, Pettyjohn and White ancestors of New Jersey and of Delaware [see chapters on those families].

As the country developed, the building of river-boats, called flat-, keel- or Kentucky-boats, became a paying industry on both the Youghiogheny and Monongahela rivers* for the purpose of shipping flour and whiskey to New Orleans, and also for sale to emigrants to Ohio or Kentucky. Such travelers, after crossing the mountains, would embark on either of these rivers and would make the remainder of their journey with comparative ease.[18] Another source of income was the accommodation of stock-drovers and of freighters on their way east. Especially was this true at Merrittstown (first called Newtown), where HENRY[5] BARTLETT, son-in-law of JOHN[a] COREY, was in business before his removal to Ohio. William P. Schell [born 1822], of Schellsburg, described the methods of drovers thus: Prior to construction of the railroad, all horses, cattle, sheep, etc., were driven from Ohio and the West to the eastern markets over the National Pike and the turnpikes leading from Wheeling and Pittsburgh to Philadelphia and Baltimore. Horses were driven about thirty at a time, sometimes tied to a long cable, one on each side; or six abreast, tied together with a rider on one. Cattle, about one hundred at a time; sheep between three and four hundred, and hogs about two hundred at a time. The horses were driven about twenty to twenty-five miles a day, and other animals about ten miles. Cattle were pastured at night—sometimes two thousand at a time. They had brass knobs on the ends of their wide horns to prevent injury.

As the years rolled on, the children of this family scattered widely[3]—the son Joshua[b] to Tuscarawas County, Ohio; our BETSEY[b], her sister Polly[b] and her brother John[b], to Athens, Ohio; and Ruth[b] also to the west, leaving, after their mother's death about 1790–1800, only Hetty[b] in Fayette County.

The child of JOHN[a] COREY and his first wife [probably Joanna] Hand was[3]

1. Joanna[b], b. probably about 1763–4 in New Jersey, and probably brought up by her mother's people. She is said to have married and resided near Philadelphia.

*One authority says,[18] "The Monongahela River . . . has no common name from head to mouth. It should be called Monongahela from Pittsburgh to Mingo [Randolph County, West Virginia]; but it has instead three names. From Pittsburgh to the mouth of West Fork it is Monongahela, from the mouth of the West Fork to the gap in Laurel Hill below Elkins it is the Valley River; from Laurel Hill to the source it is Tygert's River, or Tygart's Valley River." The name "Monongahela" by Indian pronunciation is "Meh-monawangehelak," which signifies "Falling-in-bank-river," because, on account of the richness of the soil, the banks of the river frequently break and fall into the stream.

The children of JOHN and BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY, most and perhaps all of whom were born [in unknown order] in what is now Fayette County, Pennsylvania, were[3]

II. Joshua[b], b. 1770–80 [by 1830 and 1840 census];[17] d. 1840–3 in Westchester, Ohio. He is said[3] to have married [probably first] Phebe Darnell or Durnell; m.[5] [2nd?] Elizabeth [called[5] Fawcett], who survived him and died in Westchester 1844–50. He has, in some quarters,[19] been erroneously called son of Benjamin Corey of Orange County, New York, born there May 2, 1772. During the period 1799–1801 he was listed in Luzerne Township as a distiller[2] [see Whiskey Insurrection, p. 551], with but four acres of cleared land, with one horse and from one to five cattle. Subsequently he disposed of the still and he was called variously "renter" and "farmer" up to 1815. In 1810, besides himself and his wife, aged between twenty-six and forty-five, he had one son between ten and sixteen, and a son and two daughters under ten. He was[6] a member of Dunlap's Creek Presbyterian Church in September, 1812, when he signed the call to the Rev. William Johnston and subscribed toward his salary. In 1812 he was[2] assessor, and Abraham[4] Little [son of our ESTHER] was collector of taxes in Luzerne Township; but in 1814 they two were assessors and Samuel Roberts [son of our BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY Roberts] and George Dearth were collectors. Joshua[b] is said to have remained in Fayette County until shortly after the birth of his youngest child, when he removed to Tuscarawas County, Ohio, and settled at Westchester, where he ran a tavern for the accommodation of drovers and freighters to and from the East, [vide supra]. He was[7] a magistrate there in 1828 and in 1832, and after his death his widow continued to run the tavern and provided a home for her grandson,[8] David Fawcett[d] Corey [b. 1835], whose father, John O.[c], had died previously. The children of Joshua[b] were (1) Joshua[c], b. 1794–1800; (2) John Oliver[c], b. about 1798, d. 1843–4 and m. Ruth Lupton; (3) William Newton[c], b. about 1815; (4) Zilpah or Zilphia[c], b. 1800–10; m.[3, 9] Samuel Fordyce; (5) "Betty[c]," also called "Elizabeth Amanda," b. 1800–10; m. (——) Greenawalt; (6) Dovice F.[c]

III. Polly[b], m. Moses Bean and removed to Athens, Ohio [see p. 276], where he is recorded 1806–11 and probably longer. They had (1) John, d. May 12, 1873, at Payson, Ill., having m. Betsey Tibbetts; (2) Susanna, m. Elias Gabriel; (3) McCraven; (4) Betsey, m. James Tippy and resided near Troy, Ohio; and perhaps (5) a daughter Joanna, who m. (——) Johnson.

IV. BETSEY[b], b. Feb. 8, 1772, in Fayette County; d. April 26, 1857, in Athens, Ohio [see plates XIII p. 86, XIV p. 90, XVI p. 272, XXVI–XXVIII pp. 865–7]; m., January 24, 1792, in Fayette County, HENRY[5] BARTLETT* [see Bartlett, p. 89]. It is said that "She was a member of the church for a great many years, . . . was always at prayer meeting and in her old age her feeble voice often joined in the singing." A great-granddaughter of Joshua[b] says[8] she has always been told that "the Coreys were handsome."

* By the word of BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES [see p. 745], her grandfather HENRY[5] BARTLETT used to tell his grandchildren that they were "descended from Oliver Cromwell's daughter Elizabeth, who married Gen. Claypoole, and that is why the name 'Betsey' is so frequently found in this family." Tradition is almost invariably erroneous in part, but is quite as uniformly founded on fact. The above statement by HENRY[5] BARTLETT is no exception to the first part of this rule, and is probably entirely true as to the second part, for Gen. Claypoole and his wife had no grandchildren who lived to maturity, and therefore could not have had "descendants"; but very frequently persons whose minds are not of genealogical type use interchangeably the phrases "descended from" and "related to."

GRAVESTONE IN THE OLD CEMETERY AT ATHENS, OHIO. ON THE REVERSE IS CARVED AN INSCRIPTION TO HENRY[5] BARTLETT, HUSBAND OF BETSEY COREY

[See, following, a Tribute to the pioneer women of Pennsylvania including BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT and also (p. 276) an early experience of her own at Athens, Ohio.]

v. Ruth[b], m. 1st, (——) Wallace; m. 2nd, (——) Culver; m. 3rd, (——) Horr; had daughters Myra, Ruth and Betsey. She removed "to Champaign County."

vi. Hetty Ann[b], d. December 11, 1852, aged 81 [gravestone in Old Hopewell Cemetery, Heistersburg, Pa.]; m., by or before 1794, her stepbrother, William Roberts (Roger) [see Roberts NOTE, p. 562], who, in his will[11] of November 30, 1849, made provision for his "beloved wife Hetty, in consideration of a long life of affection and kindness to meward." They had, in unknown order, (1) Ruth, d. December, 1850; (2) John M.; (3) Isaac N., who became the first plow-maker in Tuscarawas County, Ohio; (4) William Y.; (5) Hetty Jane, b. August 25, 1795; m., September 10, 1834, Clark Breading, of Uniontown, Pa.; (6) Betsey, d. before 1849; m. John Dearth and removed to Tuscarawas County, Ohio; (7) Mary, m. Westly Frost, of Brownsville, Pa.; (8) Caroline, d. before 1849; m. Joshua Y. Gibbons, of Fayette County, Pa.

vii. John[b], b. 1774–84; m. Sarah Miller and removed by 1805 to Athens, Ohio, whence he moved again about 1815 to the vicinity of Columbus, Ohio. In March, 1810, being then resident in Athens, Ohio, he sold[10] for $100 to John Hare, then called "of Virginia," two hundred acres of land "on the waters of Tygers Valley River" [see map on p. 535] and contiguous to land owned by William Pettyjohn, a relative of his. This land had been surveyed to John[b] Corey on May 14, 1796, and patented to him on December 20, 1799. At Athens he served[14] on grand juries in 1805, 1806, 1807 and 1812. In 1805 he was elected a commissioner for Athens County, and served as clerk of that board at a salary of $12. He was a road-viewer in 1806, and township clerk continuously from 1806 to 1812. On August 26, 1806, John[b] Corey, with EPHRAIM[6] CUTLER [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I] and Silas Bingham, leased from HENRY[5] BARTLETT two hundred twenty-eight acres of land, and on May 13, 1808, John[b] Corey took from the Ohio University a ninety-nine year lease for two hundred twenty-nine acres, at $9.54 yearly. Another indenture is found whereby he acquired in March, 1810, from the University the right to eighty acres "renewable forever" at the payment of $4.08 annually.[14] This he disposed of in April, 1813.

TRIBUTE[21]

TO THE

PIONEER MOTHERS AND WIVES

[INCLUDING BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT]

History is continually busy with the valiant and virtuous deeds of our forefathers. Occasionally this monotony is broken by stories of the heroic and helpful lives of the mothers of nations. . . . It is the more fitting, therefore, . . . to declare the parity of womankind with mankind in the service, sufferings, and success of pioneer life. . . . Especially is this true of the pioneers of southwestern Pennsylvania. . . . As they traveled westward their friendships and even the frontiers of civilization were left behind them. The wooded heights of the Alleghenies rose before

---

Such an error was probably made in this case, for two of the brothers of Gen. Claypoole, James[1] and Norton[1], emigrated to America and Norton[1] settled as neighbor to the JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN family in Sussex County, Delaware. By his second wife, Rachel (——), Norton[1] Claypoole had there a daughter Elizabeth[2], born[28] on May 16, 1687, of whom neither marriage nor death is recorded, but who would have been of the right age, in the right place, and as is seen, of the right name, to become the [thus far unknown] wife of WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN, son of JOHN[2] above [see Pettyjohn, p. 651], and to verify the above tradition by becoming also the great-grandmother of the wife of HENRY[5] BARTLETT who voiced it. Information or evidence on this point is invited.

them. Rude wagon roads were lost in Indian trails. Pack horses were the vehicles of transportation. The children were swung in willow creels across the horses' backs, and the women, too, sometimes found rest in the same rough carriages. Oftener they trudged the narrow trail, forded rivers, threaded dark and tangled mountain paths, traversed vast forests within whose depths lurked the real perils of savage beasts and savager men; and which enfolded creatures of imagination no less terror-striking and tormenting to the mind. Who can adequately depict the bodily fatigue and pain and the mental tortures of that long, tedious, and perilous journey from the seacoast to the frontier which our pioneer grandmothers endured?

If one were simply to consider the point of personal suffering to body and mind, caused by the peculiar conditions of frontier settlement, he must give the meed of praise to women. There was an excitement about the dangers of frontier life, and an engrossment of mind and affections which had strong attractions to a male organization, and gave large compensation for physical hardships endured. A journey on horseback through several hundreds of miles, making bivouac in the open air, was not a serious trial to a man; but was a sore affliction to a woman with a babe at her breast. To face the mysteries of the wilderness; to listen to the strange night cries of wild animals; to cower under the ever present yet ever unseen terrors of the lurking savage foe; to endure the weariness of body which pack horse traveling involves to an inexperienced rider, and bear the fret and anxiety of caring for helpless children —all this bore with especial hardship upon the women.

Arrived on the frontier, the hard work of home making began. Home? There was no home! Not a house, often, for miles around. . . . A wooded knoll hard by a spring, or a sheltered rock of bottom land by a creek side, would be chosen for the site of the new home. There, in lairs of dry leaves, they bivouacked under the trees and stars until a rude log cabin could be put together. A one-roomed hut with a mud floor and a mud chimney! But it was a paradise to a woman after the damp ground and the open air. . . .

The log cabin home, the log cabin school, the log cabin church—these are the true symbols of the heroic era of our country's genesis, and the presiding and guiding spirit thereof was the pioneer woman!

After neighbors had come, mutual help in building became the custom. On an appointed day a company of wood-choppers met, felled trees and cut them off at proper lengths; a man with a team hauled them to the selected spot. Meanwhile search was made for a few straight-grained trees from which to make clapboards for the roof. These were split four feet long and as wide as the trunk would allow. Other workers prepared puncheons for the floor by splitting logs about eighteen inches in diameter, hewing the faces smooth with a broadax, ready to lay, flat side up. These were usually the preparations of the first day. The second day, the house was erected. The clapboards of the roof were held securely by logs laid over them. The doors were of clapboards fastened by wooden pins to crossbars, which projected on one side sufficiently to form one part of a hinge. Small openings were cut from two adjacent logs to form windows, which were glazed with paper or linen, oiled with hog's lard or bear's grease. The third day's work usually consisted in "furnituring" it—making a clapboard table from a split slab with four sapling legs set in auger-holes; some three-legged stools made similarly; a bed made in a corner of the room by means of a forked limb placed in the ground for an outer post, which held two poles placed at right angles to each other, the other ends of each being inserted in cracks in the angled walls. From the front pole to the crack in the wall, boards were placed which formed the bottom of the bed. To complete the domicile a fireplace would be built. Pegs were placed upon the wall to hold the rifle and shot-pouch, to hang clothing upon and to hold a shelf which carried the table furniture. This consisted of a few pewter dishes, plates and spoons, but mostly of wooden bowls, trenchers and noggins. If these last were scarce, gourds and hard-shelled squashes made up the deficiency.[15, 21]

In these humble log huts began the work of home building, constructing that prime factor of all strong and good social order, the family . . . and in pioneer family building, woman was the chief architect. The husband indeed must fend and fight for wife and weans, for steading and glebe; he must shoot game, and chop down trees, and clear up fields and plant grain; but the duty and burden of home making fell upon the wife and mother. . . .

A journal of one of these emigrants, the Reverend John McMillan, a graduate of Princeton, written about 1776, describes the beginnings of his home. There was neither bedstead nor stool nor chair nor bucket; no domestic comfort but such as could be carried on pack horses through the wilderness. Two rough boxes, one on the other, served as a table; two kegs for seats; "and so," said the journalist, "having committed ourselves to God in family worship, we spread our bed on the floor and slept soundly until morning. The next day, a neighbor coming to our assistance, we made a table and stool, and in a little time had everything comfortable about us. Sometimes, indeed, we had no bread for weeks together; but we had plenty of pumpkins and potatoes, and all the necessities of life." Pumpkins and potatoes! Necessities of life! . . . His log cabin home became the first college west of the mountains, growing into Jefferson College in 1802.

The original settlers, of course, did not have even the luxuries of "pumpkins and potatoes," to begin their culinary duties with. They had, in sooth, to invent a cuisine. Everything must be begun anew. The wild fruits, wild berries, and wild game and the fish of the New World were utilized. Indian corn had to be wrought into the primitive menu, mush and milk; or if milk was scarce it might be eaten with sweetened water, molasses, bear's oil or

meat drippings. Next morning, fried mush with wild honey from a near-by bee tree! Or pone bread, or Johnnycake, or Indian meal griddle cakes! "Hog and hominy was a staple dish." That was not all of the new cereal, for—there were roasting ears and succotash! . . . For tea they used the root of sassafras or sage from the garden; for coffee, rye and chestnuts parched to a crisp and broken in a mortar. As to sugar, they had discovered the sugar maple, and their sugar plantation and sirup refinery were in the adjoining grove. One or two cast-iron vessels usually comprised the entire equipment with which they cooked.

Cooking was not the only sphere that solicited the pioneer woman's creative faculties. She had to invent a pharmacopœia. Wounds and sickness came, and must be cared for. The forest was full of healing "yarbs," if she could only find them. And some of them she did find—and perhaps our octogenarian members still have recollections of ginseng and snakeroot teas, and slippery elm poultices, and the like. The woman pioneer had to be physician and surgeon, trained nurse and apothecary, all in one, and often supplied the patient, too, in her own person. In times of personal sickness, and during the illness of children, the strain upon women thus situated must have been intense. Such a life indeed developed self-reliance, fertility of resources, strong and independent characters; but many fell under the grievous strain, and thus became veritable martyrs of civilization.

Not only were the ordinary household cares in woman's hands, but to her belonged the duty of providing the household wearing apparel. She grew flax in her garden and raised sheep for their wool. In many cases, almost all the clothing, both for men and women, for feet and head as well as for body, were manufactured in these log cabins, by the hard-working pioneer women. . . .

Would you have a glimpse of the outer premises of one of these pioneer homes, in which your Scotch-Irish ancestress reigned supreme? A clearing around the cabin was given up to a field of Indian corn and pumpkins, a patch of potatoes and a small planting of flax. Beyond this the high timber was "girdled" or ringed around the butt with an outchopped belt to kill leaves and cut off shade and thus allow the plants to grow between, time and help being too scant to permit full clearing at first. A sty close by held a sow and litter of pigs. Other porkers were running wild in the woods, feeding upon the rich mast. Beechnuts, hickory nuts, pignuts, and acorns were abundant in their season, not to speak of other lush morsels which swine affect. So these mothers cared for the garden and the cow, milked and churned, caught rainwater in troughs and barrels from the roofs for the washing, made their own soap, baked their own bread, washed, picked, dyed and carded wool, broke, carded and spun the flax, wove the cloth, cut and made the garments, nursed the sick, and brought up their children. They rocked their babies in cradles made from hollow logs or of peeled bark, learned to run bullets and to load and fire a gun with deadly aim. In the earlier days, before schools were established, they taught their children to read and write.

When the children were small their mothers would tie them in bed to hinder them from gadding off, and to fend them from the fire and from snakes; and, taking trail by the tinkling of the bell, make their way through the rank growth, all beaded with dew, to where the beasts grazed; and so back to get the breakfast, with drabbled skirts, and moccasins wet and clammy to the feet. For deerskin shoes might be pretty, and all that, but in wet weather they were only a respectable way of going barefoot. Indeed, every one of these women could do, with her own pair of hands, what half a score of women in these days would think themselves overtasked to attempt. . . .

In addition to these and other cares was the ever present dread of an Indian attack. At times an alarm would be sounded through the settlements by riders hastening in hot speed to the scattered cabins, and then with the utmost expedition wife and children, and such household belongings as the exigency required, were hurried away to fort or blockhouse built at some convenient point in the settlement. Here for days, often for weeks, these congregated families must abide, suffering great inconveniences from their cramped surroundings, and haunted continually by fear of attack, or the dread that husband and father, who had gone off to meet the foe, might fall a victim to tomahawk or scalping knife. One need not be told that the chief sufferers through the wear and tear and fret and anxiety of these trying occasions were the women. . . .

It was common for families to ride ten or fifteen miles to meeting. There, between services, the women had some opportunity for social intercourse. Beyond that, they had occasional pleasures at spinning- or husking-bees, house-raisings and, later, spelling-matches and singing-schools.

Our ancestral dames were no doubt masterful spirits, and they had need to be. They had good backbones, straight and well stiffened with Scotch granite and the "Shorter Catechism." Stalwart of frame no doubt they were, with muscles hardened under the strain of toil; vigorous and strong, able to wield the ax against the trunk of a forest monarch or the head of an obtruding savage; able to aid their husbands and fathers to plow and plant, to reap and mow, to rake and bind and gather. They could wield the scutching-knife or hackling-comb upon flaxen stocks and fibers, as well as the rod of rebuke upon the back of a refractory child. They could work the treadle of a little spinning-wheel or swing the circumference of the home-made great one. They were usually dressed in moccasins or home-made woolen shoepacks, hoods or plaited poke sunbonnets, and linsey-woolsey or deerskin aprons and sacks. Often a white linen folder was worn over the breast, or a full-frilled cap by the older women. Their feet were large, and their hands large and brown but beautiful with service.[21]

Following these generalizations, it is fitting to complete the survey of woman's life in the West with some of the experiences of BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT, and her family as they migrated from Pennsylvania to Ohio and even after their removal to Athens, Ohio. She lived until her granddaughter, BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, was forty-one years old and for twenty of these years in the same town, and many times repeated to her the stories of the earlier days. The granddaughter BETSEY wrote down[3] as follows, the facts she learned from her grandmother:

"They came in a peerogue from Zemrells Ferry [now West Newton] Pennsylvania to Marietta in the fall of 1796 with three children JOAN [later the second wife of CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN and mother of the scribe] and Betsey and Theresa [twins born 1796] and spent the winter in the stockade in the house belonging to Zeb Corey, next to the one Grandfather SHIPMAN owned. In the spring they went by peerogue down the Ohio and up the Hocking to Athens on to a farm in the Reynolds Neighborhood, grandfather having built a log cabin of one room for the new home. This cabin was a good sized room with one door and one window and a good large fireplace. Instead of glass the window sash was covered with oiled paper so as to let in the light as there was no glass to be had. The bedsteads were made by driving stakes in the wall and making a corner post and putting slats across for their beds. Grandmother was well supplied with bedding and she was the only one in the whole settlement that had any tea. Having taken a ten pound chest of tea with her into the wilderness. Whenever anybody was sick they had to have some of Mrs. BARTLETT's tea. When the supply was exhausted they sent some one to Marietta a distance of more than 40 miles for more. Mrs. BARTLETT had the only needle for sewing buckskin breeches which were altogether worn in those days, and the needle was used so much that it was worn off and ground down till it was so short that they could hardly sew with it. About 1-2 mile from my grandmother lived her sister Polly (Corey) Bean. Moses Bean and wife Polly with two children McCraven and John, [eldest], came to the new country and Squire [HENRY[5]] BARTLETT gave them some land and built a cabin for them on it. Mr. Bean was a pious good man but not a very enterprising and his kind brotherinlaw not only gave him his farm but ever after saw to it that he did not want. There was no doctor in the neighborhood and as the time of need approached Mr. BARTLETT wrote to a Mrs. Bobo the old midwife at home in Pennsylvania, that if she would come there and live he would give her a farm and build her a cabin. So what was their surprise and joy at seeing the old lady and two boys trudging over the hill one morning in 1798 (before the time of trouble came) embracing the first opportunity to come to the new country without announcing her intention to do so.

The first settlers were annoyed by panthers and wolves and bears. Wolves came often to the cabin door. Mrs. [BETSEY (COREY)] BARTLETT went once a few rods from the house to gather blackberries taking a little child with her. She sat the child down and stepped upon a log the better to reach them and upon the other side of it lay a panther, with appetite appeased no doubt for though she sprung for the child and made for the house he did not care to follow her. The four cousins McCraven & John Bean and Betsey and Theresa Bartlett [the twins] used often to play on the hill between the two cabins and one day saw what they supposed was a small panther. Having the spirit of the times, though the oldest was not more than 8 and the youngest 5, they got sticks and killed it, but were surprised and amazed at the smell that disturbed them. On going with their trophy to their homes they were astonished to learn that the panther was a polecat, and that water could not cleanse them. They were stripped and their clothes buried, till the earth had deoderised them."[3]

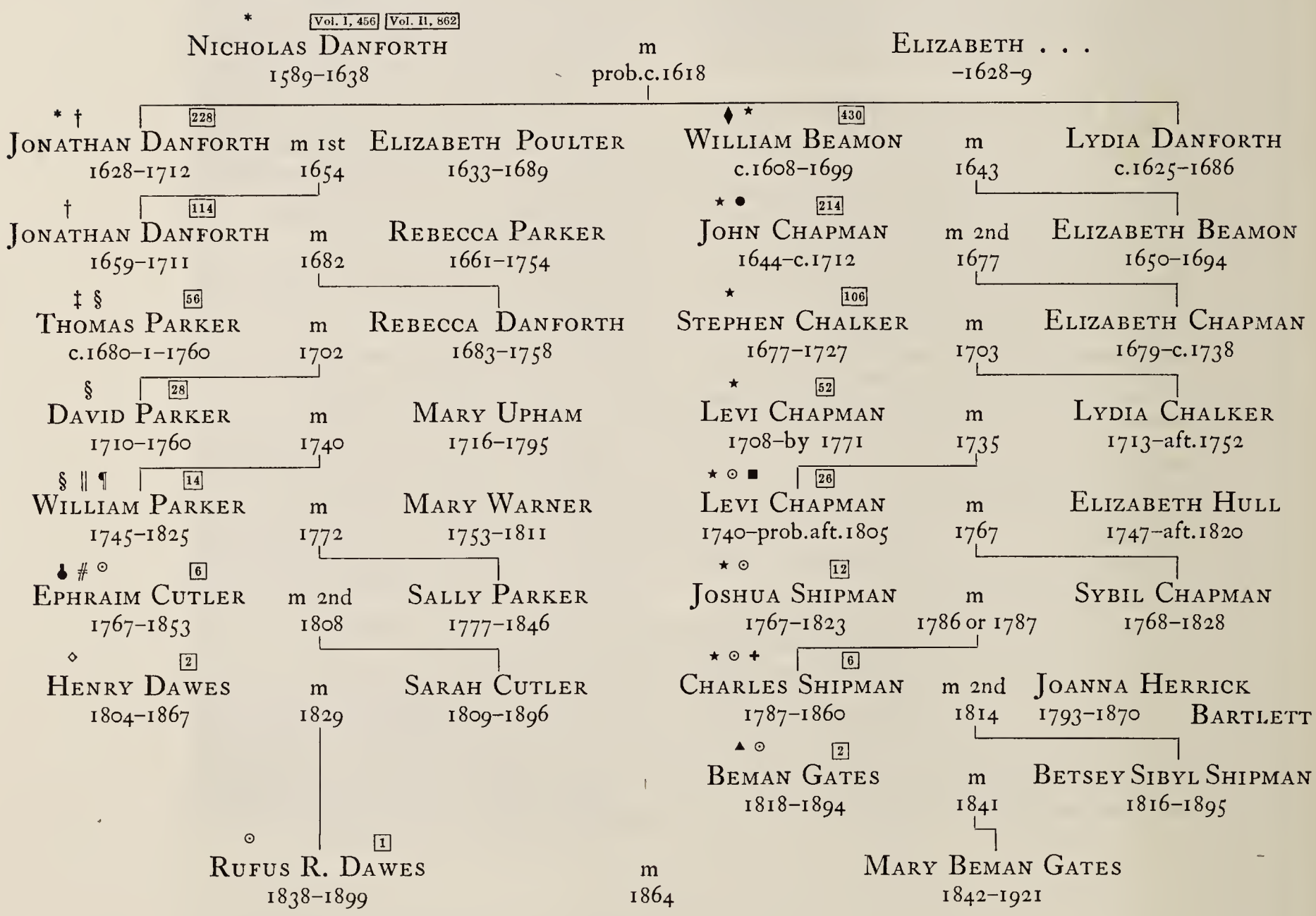
REFERENCES

1. Annals of Carnegie Museum, 1902, I, 552; 1905, III, 311–3.
2. Search by the compiler, in person and by proxy, of local MS. records in Westmoreland, Fayette and Washington Counties, Pa.; Monongalia County, W. Va.; Cape May and Essex Counties, N. J.; Tuscarawas and other Counties, Ohio; and Sussex County, Del.; also search of MSS. mentioned in references 3 and 5, and wide correspondence over a period of years.
3. Interviews obtained and letters and documents gathered, 1855–95, by Mrs. BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES.
4. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXII, 75.

5. MS. records gathered over a period of forty years by James Enos Corey, deceased, of Shelby, Ohio, now in the hands of Charles H. Corey, Jr., St. Petersburg, Fla.; MS. records gathered over a period of twenty-five years by William M. Robinson, deceased, of Grand Rapids, Mich., examined by the courtesy of Judge C. E. Corey, Fort Scott, Kan.; correspondence with Amanda[d] Corey, deceased, of Uhrichsville, Ohio, daughter of John Oliver[c] Corey and granddaughter of Joshua[b] Corey (JOHN[a]), dated 1902, and with Peter G.[e] Corey, deceased, of Gilmore, Ohio, her nephew.
6. Early History of Dunlap's Creek [Presbyterian] Church, J. G. Johnston, 1914, p. 14.
7. History of Tuscarawas County, Ohio, Warner, Beers & Co., 1884, pp. 623–6.
8. Statements of Mrs. Sue Ella (Corey) Butler, of (1927) Barberton, Ohio, daughter of David Fawcett[d] Corey (John O.[c], Joshua[b], JOHN[a]).
9. Jennings Family, W. H. Jennings, 1899, pp. 23–4.
10. Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds, O. S., V, 75.
11. Fayette County, Pa., Wills, I, 53; III, 93–4.
12. Sussex County, Del., Deeds, L-11-284.
13. Monongahela of Old, J. Veech, 1892, pp. 199–205.
14. History of Athens County, Ohio, C. M. Walker, 1869, I, 146, 150, 154, 158, 215, 217, 245–6, 248; Athens County, Ohio, Records, I, 32–3; V, 140–1, 332–3.
15. Southwest Virginia and Shenandoah Valley, T. Bruce, 1891, pp. 19–21.
16. History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 485–7.
17. Census Records, 1800–50, Washington, D. C.; MS. Records at Uniontown, Pa.
18. History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 279, 421, 424, 654, 735, 768; Historical Magazine, 1860, IV, 180; Annals of Carnegie Museum, 1903, II, 357, 389, 399, 408–11; History of Randolph County, W. Va., H. Maxwell, 1898, p. 190; Sabin's Reprints, No. 2, Rev. David Jones' Journal, 1774, pp. 18, 34–5.
19. Statement of Charles H. Corey, Jr., from MS. in his hands (see reference No. 5).
20. Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds, O. S., I, 14.
21. The Scotch-Irish in America, VIII, 83–93; "Women Pioneers," Henry C. McCook; Historical Collection of Pennsylvania, S. Day, 1843, p. 124; Pershing Family, E. J. Pershing, 1924, pp. 84–6; History of Athens County, Ohio, C. M. Walker, 1869, pp. 264, 485; Family Records; Old Redstone, Joseph Smith, D. D., 1854, pp. 93–106.
22. Scotch-Irish in America—VI, 93, The Scotch-Irish in the Old Northwest, J. M. Scott; VI, 111–2, Scotch-Irish Conflicts, J. H. Keatley; II, 177, 186, The Scotch-Irish in Western Pennsylvania, John Dalzell; II, 247, The Scotch-Irish of Pennsylvania, Daniel Agnew; Trans-Allegheny Pioneers, J. P. Hale, 1886, pp. 9–10; Pershing Genealogy, E. J. Pershing, 1924, pp. 58–66; History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, p. 68; The Winning of the West, T. Roosevelt, 1889, I, 86, 95–6, 101–133, 194–216, 272–280; II, 1–31, 136–7; Gazeteer of Pennsylvania, T. F. Gordon, 1832, p. 168.
23. Monongalia County, W. Va., Entry Book I, 351; Deeds, V, 262; Deeds, O. S., I, 14.
24. Historical Collections of Ohio, H. Howe, 1869, p. 239; History of Hancock County, Ohio, D. B. Beardsley, 1881, pp. 311–3.
25. Pershing Genealogy, E. J. Pershing, 1924, pp. 62–7, 87–90; History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 157–80, 567, 569, 595.
26. Old Westmoreland, E. W. Hassler, 1900, pp. 31–6, 54–9, 102–3, 109–15; Notes and Queries of Pennsylvania, W. H. Egle, Ser. 2, II, 274–5; Ser. 3, III, 421–6; Bench and Bar of Washington County, Pa., B. Crumrine, 1902, pp. 9–10.
27. History of Monongalia County, W. Va., S. T. Wiley, 1883, pp. 42, 58, 67, 69–70; History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, p. 433; History of Western Pennsylvania, I. D. Rupp, 1846, p. 129.
28. Some Records of Sussex County, Del., C. H. B. Turner, 1909, p. 137.
29. Pershing Family, Edgar J. Pershing, 1924, pp. 69–76. National Genealogical Society Quarterly, 1928, XVI, 44–51. History of Dearborn and Ohio Counties, Ind., F. E. Weakley & Co., 1885, pp. 66–74. Ohio Valley Historical Series No. 4, Pioneer Biography, J. McBride, 1869, I, 265–300, especially 285–7. Public Archives of Canada, B. Haldiman Series, Vol. 185, p. 157.

DANFORTH

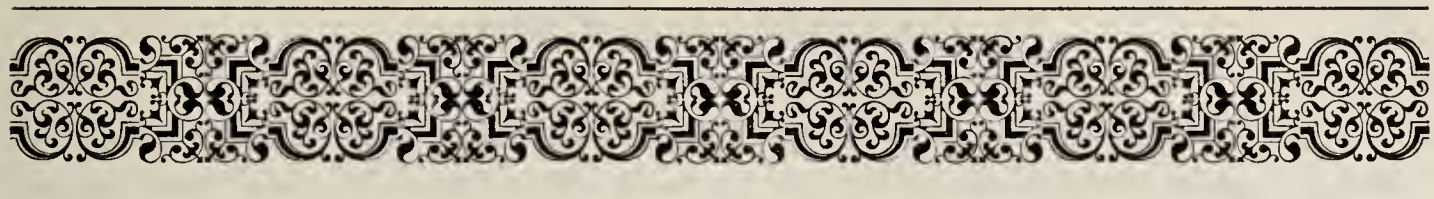
The Danforth family is the only one which is ancestral to both RUFUS R. DAWES (see Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, Vol. I) and to his wife MARY (GATES) DAWES [ibid., II, pp. 3 to 6]. The left half of the Chart below, as will be seen, pertains to RUFUS R. DAWES and to Vol. I only, while the right half pertains to his wife and to this volume.



* Cambridge, Mass.
† Billerica, Mass.
‡ Chelmsford, Mass.
§ Malden, Mass.
‖ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
¶ Meigs Co., Ohio.

♦ Killingly, Conn.
♦ Salem, Mass.
\# Waterford, Ohio.
⊙ Marietta, Ohio.
◇ Malta, Ohio.

▲ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\+ Athens, Ohio.
* Saybrook, Conn.
● East Haddam, Conn.
■ Salem, Ohio.



DANFORTH

NICHOLAS[1] DANFORTH, the son[1] of THOMAS and JANE (SUDBURY) DANFORTH, was baptized March 1, 1589, at Framlingham, co. Suffolk, England, where his ancestors had lived for generations.[1] Cotton Mather says: "He was a gentleman of such estate and repute in the world that it cost him a considerable sum to escape the knighthood which King Charles I. imposed on all [possessed] of so much [income] per annum; and of such figure and esteem in the church that he procured[1a] that famous lecture at Framlingham in Suffolk, where he had a fine mannour, which lecture was kept by Mr. Burroughs and many other noted ministers in their turns. . . ."* He was "the progenitor of a family in New England whose successive representatives have been more than ordinarily distinguished in their day and generation and whose name, honorable alike in church and state, has been the ornament and the oracle of each of the learned professions in turn. . . ."[9]

In 1622 NICHOLAS[1] was a church warden[1] of St. Michaels at Framlingham, but he was apparently a man of liberal views and felt a growing sympathy with the Puritan party, even while a resident there, and he promptly associated himself with them on his removal to New England.[1]

With his children, he arrived in the new world some time during the year 1634. He is mentioned in the town records of Cambridge, Massachusetts, as a proprietor in 1635; he bought land there in October, 1635; was chosen selectman November 23, of that year;[3] joined the church February 1, 1635–6, and was made freeman March 3, the same year; also on this date was, with others, "deputed to sett out the bounds of the new plantacon above Charles Ryver."[1] He bought[1] land again in May, 1636, and, in September following, was appointed one of those to "Measure and sett the bounds of Roxberry."[1]

As Deputy[4a] or Representative to the General Court, he served during two

* Presumably he financed or endowed a chair or lectureship there.[10]

years, first in September and December, 1636, being then called "Serj." on the roll; again in April and May, 1637, with the title of "Capt." and, lastly, in September, the same year, when he was listed as "Mr."[4] On November 15, 1637, he acted as surveyor to set the bounds between Dedham and Dorchester.

When the important committee to "take order for a Colledge [which became Harvard] at Newtowne" was selected on November 20, 1637, he was one of those included.[5a] Settlement of another land boundary was submitted to him and his associates on March 6, 1637–8. He was one of the eleven men, in as many towns, authorized by the Court, by its vote on March 12, 1637–8, "to sell wine & strong water."[5a]

The record of its deliberations shows that: "Whereas it hath appeared vnto this Court, vpon many sad complaints, that much drunkennes, wast of the good creatures of God, mispence of precious time, & other disorders have frequently fallen out in the inns, & com̄on victualing houses wthin this iurisdiction, whearby God is much dishono^{r}ed, the pfession of religion repached, & the welfare of this com̄onwelth greatly impaired, & the true vse of such houses (being the necessary releefe of travellers) subverted; ffor redresse hearof it is now ordered, that after the last day of this psent month, it shall not bee lawfull for any person that shall keepe any such inne, or com̄on victualing house, to sell or have in their houses any wine, or strong waters, nor any beare, or other drinke other then such as may & shall be souled for 1^{d} the quart at the most; & for this end none of those psons (other then in such townes as for want of a com̄on brewar shalbee alowed by this Court, or by the Court of Assistants, or by two of the counsell) shall brewe any beere to sell, but shall take the same of some com̄on brewer, vpon paine to forfet for every offence against this order x$^{£}$. And it is further ordered, that no such com̄on brewer shall sell or vtter to any inn or com̄on victualing house, wthin this iurisdiction, any beare, or other drinke of any stronger size then such as may & shalbe affoarded at the rate of 8sh^{s} the barrell, vpon paine of 20$^{£}$ for ev^{r}y offence against this order."[5a]

"The lawe for impositions to bee paid vpon wine & strong water is repealed; & it is ordered, that every towne shall psent a man to bee alowed to sell wine & strong water made in the country, & no other strong water is to bee sould."[5a]

"For . . . Newetowne Mr DAMPORT. . . . No man else is to sell by retaile eith^{r} sack or strong water, wthout license from the counsell."[1, 5a]

NICHOLAS[1] married, probably about 1618, ELIZABETH (——).* The wife of NICHOLAS[1] died before his emigration and was buried at Framlingham, England, on February 22, 1628. His death occurred in April, 1638, at Cambridge, Massachusetts.[6]

The children of NICHOLAS[1] and ELIZABETH (——) DANFORTH, all born at Framlingham, England, and through two of whom we descend, were[2, 3a, 5, 6]

I. Elizabeth[2], bap. August 3, 1619; d. June 26, 1680, at Cambridge; m. there October 1, 1639, Andrew Belcher, of Sudbury.

II. Mary[2], bap. May 3, 1621.

III. Anna[2], bap. September 3, 1622; d. December 9, 1704, at Lexington; m. about 1644, Matthew Bridge, of Cambridge.

IV. Thomas[2], bap. November 20, 1623; d. November 5, 1699, at Cambridge; m. February 23, 1643, Mary, daughter of Henry Withington, of Dorchester. Thomas[2] was Deputy Governor of Massachusetts from 1679 to 1686, president of the district of Maine from 1680 to 1686 and Judge of the Supreme Court in 1692.

V. LYDIA[2], bap. May 24, 1625; d. August 16, 1686, at Saybrook, Conn. She married there[2, 5] December 9, 1643, WILLIAM[1] BEAMON† of that place [see Beamon, p. 119].

VI. Samuel[2], bap. October 17, 1626; d. November 19, 1674, at Roxbury; m. November 5, 1651, Mary, daughter of the Rev. John Wilson, of Boston. Samuel[2] was assistant minister to John Eliot, of Roxbury, and was made the second Fellow of Harvard College from which he had been graduated in 1643.

VII. JONATHAN[2], b. February 29, 1627–8; d.[7] September 7, 1712, at Billerica, Mass.; m. 1st, at Boston, Mass., November 22, 1654, ELIZABETH[2] POULTER; m. 2nd, at Billerica, November 7, 1690, Esther (Champney) Converse.[8] [For continuance of the life of JONATHAN[2] DANFORTH and the Poulter family, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]

*She is sometimes called daughter of the Reverend William Symmes, of Canterbury, England, but no proof of this relationship has been found. If it existed, she would have been sister of the Reverend Zachariah Symmes, of Charlestown, Massachusetts.

†In an old volume of Saybrook records, a page is devoted to each of the early settlers and, inscribed therein, is a record of his family and his lands. The page pertaining to WILLIAM[1] BEAMON seems to have been written by himself, except for the last item recording his death. Poor writing on his part has furnished, in the opinion of some,[5] a shadow of question as to the surname of his wife, there apparently given as "Danford," but other evidence seems to justify the opinion[9] that she was the daughter of NICHOLAS[1] DANFORTH.

The majority of marriages in that early day were between individuals who resided near each other; in this case, their places of residence [Cambridge, Massachusetts, and Saybrook, Connecticut], though remote, were both coast towns so that communication was easy. WILLIAM[1] BEAMON earlier lived in Massachusetts and probably still had relatives there, thus furnishing considerable opportunity for acquaintance between the families.

REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 1405–6; Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, pp. 2–5; New England Register, VII, 315–21.
1a. Magnalia Christi Americana, C. Mather, 1853, II, 59.
2. New England Register, IV, 20; Savage, II, 7–8.
3. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 36.
3a. Ibid., pp. 529–32.
4. New Hampshire Historical Collections, II, 210–1.

4a. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 178, 184, 191, 194, 204.
5. Danforth Genealogy, J. J. May, 1902, p. 5.
5a. Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, I, 213–4, 217, 221.
6. New England Register, IV, 55; Cambridge Epitaphs, W. T. Harris, 1845, p. 167; Vital Records of Cambridge, Mass., I, 189–90; II, 108, 466, 525.
7. Vital Records of Billerica, Mass., pp. 53–7, 241–3, 354–5.
8. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 506, 529–32.
9. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 4, I, pp. 29–31, 50; New England Weekly Journal, 1734; History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, p. 341; Redfield Genealogy, 1860, pp. 11–2.
10. Brittanica, 11 ed., X, 774; Murray's Dictionary, VI, 169.

DEVEREAUX

* [450]
JOHN DEVEREAUX
c.1614–21–1694–5

m

ANN . . .
c.1621–1708

* [224]
JOHN BARTLETT
1645–1724–5

m
c.1680

BETHIA DEVEREAUX
c.1649–1718

* [112]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
c.1685–1749

m
1709

MARY ANDREWS
c.1695–1748

* ‡ [56]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
1710–c.1759

m
1740

ANNA OBER [widow Hale]
1715–1791

‡ § [28]
WILLIAM BARTLETT
1741–1794

m
1761

JOANNA HERRICK
1745–1810

‡ § ‖ ♣ [14]
HENRY BARTLETT
1771–1850

m
1792

BETSEY COREY
1772–1857

⊙ ♣ ¶ [6]
CHARLES SHIPMAN
1787–1860

m.2nd
1814

JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT
1793–1870

♦ ¶ [2]
BEMAN GATES
1818–1894

m
1841

BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN
1816–1895

¶
RUFUS R. DAWES
1838–1899

m
1864

MARY BEMAN GATES
1842–1921

* Marblehead, Mass.
‡ Beverly, Mass.
§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

♣ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Salem, Mass.
⊙ Saybrook, Conn.

DEVEREAUX

JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was born, doubtless in England,[1] about 1614–21. According to his own deposition made on December 24, 1694, when he was approximately eighty years old, "About ye year of Our Lord One Thousand and six hundred and thirty I came over from old England to New England & ye place of my abode and residence has since been Salem and Marblehead."[2] He probably came from Stoke by Nayland, co. Suffolk.[22]

JOHN[1] asked for a home lot in Salem on September 21, 1637, and, a couple of months later, was given one half acre for this purpose.[3] He also possessed a ten-acre tract and that year's tax list, calling him of Marblehead,[3, 4] showed his valuation at 50 [pounds?] while the other inhabitants ranged from 5 to 150. This suggests that even then his home was in that part of Salem called "Marblehead" from its rocky outline and surface,* and which in 1648–9 was made a separate town under that name, at which time JOHN[1] was chosen one of its first group of selectmen.[4]

This locality is rich in tradition and landmarks of the past, fruitful of strong men and valiant action and commemorated by some of the best writers in poetry and prose. Longfellow there wrote "The Fire of Driftwood," commemorating the old Devereaux home and farm.[2, 5a] Lucy Larcom wrote "Hannah Binding Shoes," Hawthorne's "Foot-prints on the Sea-shore" had its birth there, Whittier penned "Skipper Ireson's Ride" and then added an apology for his unintentional detraction; Gunnison wrote "Old Huldah or the Women

*It has been called "a backbone of granite, a vertebrae of syenite and porphyry thrust out into Massachusetts Bay in the direction of Cape Ann and hedged about with rocky islets . . . the whole coast hereabouts looking as if the ocean had licked out the softer parts, leaving nothing that was digestible behind. At the entrance [of the harbor which is a mile and a half long by half a mile wide] a light house is built on the extreme point." "Looking off to sea the eye is everywhere intercepted by islands or sunken ledges . . . bearing such names as 'Satan, Roaring Bull, Great and Little Misery, Great and Little Haste, Cut-throat Ledge, The Brimbles, Cat Island and the like'" each of which has a story connected with the origin of its name. "The channels are intricate among these islands and must be hit with the nicest precision or a strong vessel would go to pieces at the first blow on the sharp rocks." A visitor asked where the dead of Marblehead were buried for the great lack appears to be that of earth.[4a]

of Marblehead" and Holmes, as well as various lesser poets, have found inspiration in its rocky shores, romantic history and crooked streets.[4, 5, 5a, 5b]*

The famous painting[19] "The Spirit of '76," by Archibald M. Willard, was posed† by descendants of Marblehead men who were in the Revolution.

When the French King sent over de La Fayette in 1780 to announce the speedy arrival of Rochambeau's army, the "Hermione" which carried him anchored first at Marblehead so possibly that town first heard the good news.

The inhabitants of Marblehead in the early days had a distinctive dialect of their own but it is now quite obsolete. The men and boys before they were in their teens were all sailors and fishermen‡ [see Bartlett, p. 73]. This occupation naturally made them rugged both physically and temperamentally. The life in the open created strong physique, the dangers of the sea necessitated quick thought and action in meeting emergencies and great endurance of inconvenience, of discomfort and often of keenest suffering. Even the women and children§ were not exempt from the discipline of endurance, for the toll of the men who went to sea and never came back was great.

* The old town presents a maze of narrow streets and rocky lanes, alleys and courts. There are few sidewalks for the streets average not over a rod in width. "It is unique; there is nothing like it on this side of the water. There is more crust of antiquity about it than any other place of its years in America."[4a]

† The original was purchased by General J. W. Devereux and presented to his native town, Marblehead, Massachusetts, where it now hangs in Abbott Hall. Harry Devereux, son of the general, was one of the models for the work; and the others were Hugh Mosher, a local fifer, and Mosher's father.

‡ "Fisheries have often been called the agriculture of the seas. . . . The wealth and power of Holland has been attributed, not to its commerce or carrying trade, but to its fisheries. . . . Franklin seems to have preferred the fisheries of America to agriculture; and Edmund Burke paid our fisherman the noblest panegyric of them all: 'No sea but is vexed by their fisheries. No climate that is not witness to their toils. Neither the perseverance of Holland, not the activity of France, nor the dexterous and firm sagacity of English enterprise ever carried this most perilous mode of hardy industry to the extent to which it has been pushed by this recent people—a people who are still, as it were, but in the gristle, and not yet hardened into the bone of manhood.' 'Add to this Napoleon's opinion that the American was the superior of the English seamen, and national self-complacency may safely rest on two such eminent authorities.' "

One writer calls the fishery "a great nursery of the marine, from whence a constant supply of men, inured to the perils of the sea, are constantly ready for the service of their country." Supposing this doctrine correct, it becomes an interesting question where the sailors of the future navies are to come from. The cod and mackerel fisheries have dwindled into insignificance and the whale-fishery has been fairly beaten out of the field by oil-spouting rocks. Why should we brave the perils of the Arctic Circle when by sinking a tube in Pennsylvania we may strike a fellow of a thousand barrels, and wax rich while we sleep?

"In 1746 Marblehead shipped off more dried cod than all the rest of New England besides. In 1732 Marblehead had about 1200 schooners of about 50 tons burden, seven men aboard and one man ashore to make [dry] the fish, or about 1000 men employed beside the seamen who carry the fish to market. Two hundred quintals considered a fare. In 1747 they have not exceeding 70 schooners and make five fares yearly to Isle of Sables, St. George's Banks, etc."[4a]

§ The natural consequence of hardship upon them resulted, as it did for the men, in wills that were strong and brooked no interference, and conduct that was straightforward and vehement, though often intolerant. The absence of their men during the greater part of each year also operated toward independent thought and action on the part of the women. Evidence of this is seen in their violence, which proved to be unjust, toward poor Flood Ireson and of their summary meting out of punishment in 1677 to two Eastern Indian prisoners held at Marblehead

Though this instance is subsequent to our own ancestral connection with the town, it is indicative of the loss of life by previous storms, that "the gale of 1846" alone, cost the lives of sixty-five men of Marblehead and left forty-three women widows, and one hundred fifty-five children fatherless.[6]

The habitual use of liquor in such a life of exposure is a foregone conclusion,* nor need the fact occasion surprise or shame. Naturally its use frequently caused a quarrelsomeness that is greatly to be deplored, for these men, apparently without exception, resented a slight or fought out a grudge, either by fists or by law, as courageously and defiantly as they met the dangers of the deep.† Consequently one frequently finds the leading men of the community

for the slaying of some whites, for "Sabbath-day was sennight, the women of Marblehead, as they came out of the meeting-house, fell upon two Indians that were brought in as captives and, in a tumultuous way, very barbarously murdered them."

One writer estimated about 450 houses in Marblehead in 1750 and added, "The place is noted for children, and Nourishes the most of any place for its bigness in North America; it is said the chief cause is attributed to their feeding on Cod's heads, etc. which is their Principall Dish. The greatest distaste a person has to this place is the stench of the fish, the whole air seems tainted with it. It may, in short, be said its a Dirty, Erregular Stincking place." Even in 1875 the number of children seemed out of all proportion to the adult population. Instinct guided them to the water from their birth. Even their talk had a salty flavor. An instance is given of an urchin who, having incurred maternal displeasure and having taken to his heels to escape chastisement was followed by the goodwife with broom aloft breathing vengeance on her son. With a fair wind and her heavy spread of petticoat she was gaining on the culprit, when a boy comrade who was watching, helpfully called out, "Try her on the wind, Bill; try her on the wind." [4, 4a]

* "Not a vessel went from its harbor, whether for a long trip to the Banks or for a few days, fishing in the bay, without a plentiful supply of liquor. Not a vessel arrived with a fare of fish without providing a good store of 'something to take' for washing-out day. This custom was so universal that even at the town meetings liquor was provided as a matter of course. As a consequence, many were disorderly, and the meetings were frequently disturbed."[4]

It was, no doubt, owing to the lawless habits introduced that the character of the sea-faring population partook of a certain wildness manifesting itself in everyday transactions and infusing into the men an adventurous and reckless spirit which fitted them for deeds of daring and gave to the old seaport no small portion of the notoriety which it enjoys.

† The truth of this statement and its value to us as a nation was seen never so clearly as at the time of the Revolution—after our own ancestral connection with Marblehead had ceased—typifying the earlier as well as the later fishermen and their sturdiness, sagacity and effectiveness in crises.

Colonel John Glover, of that town, recruited a regiment of nearly five hundred, composed chiefly of Marblehead men, for service either on land or sea. As soon as it was decided to fit out armed vessels as privateers General Washington ordered Colonel Glover's men to Beverly to man these. A small number of this regiment was assigned aboard these privateers but the bulk of it remained a land force under Colonel Glover. Historians apply to this regiment such adjectives as "hardy, adroit, weather-proof" and "amphibious" for some of the most difficult tasks of the war were performed by them. Notable instances were (a) the transport, on August 28–9, 1776, by the Marblehead men in rowboats [some of which had had to be brought fifteen miles to the scene of action], and with muffled oars, of 9000 troops with their ordnance and supplies from Long Island to the mainland, across a strait three quarters of a mile wide and swept by rapid tides, within a six-hour period between dark and daylight, though the British force was so near that the sound of every stroke of spade or pickaxe in their trenches was audible in the Colonial camp. This accomplishment is called "one of the most signal achievements" and the "most extraordinary retreat in its silence and celerity" throughout the war. "By the efforts of Glover and his heroic fishermen of Marblehead alone, the American army was saved from destruction." (b) The transport, by the Marbleheaders, of Washington's army of 2400 men with their horses, ordnance and supplies, across the Delaware on the night of December 25, 1776, through bitter cold, a storm of sleet and snow, high wind and a strong current of floating ice, which made possible the victory at Trenton. Years after, General Knox, who was Chief of Artillery at Trenton, told

in difficulty with their neighbors and resorting to court action or physical force with, apparently, an enjoyment of the conflict. This is noticeably true of the early settlers of all the villages peopled by fishermen.

JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was true to type—a fine man and a useful one in the community—but with a record of turbulence which might easily be termed a discredit if conditions had been different, though, even so, it was much less than most of his neighbors showed. As it was, it merely marked him as a strong man who lived his life vehemently. He was frequently in court as witness for others, but much oftener in his own behalf, either as plaintiff or defendant. Many of these cases are too unimportant to require mention but some of them throw interesting light on the man and his period.

In 1641 he "undertook to pay" fines for two men who had received "stoulne" silver and who were, in addition to the fines, "To be whipped tomorrow, being lecture."[7]* At least one of these was a bound man who was also, because of this theft, required to "serve his master . . . a month extra time" and who probably had no money, himself, to pay his fine.

In 1643 JOHN[1] was "fined 40s for striking Henry Stacy in his own house" and in January, 1644–5, he and nine others were fined for drinking wine.[7] He witnessed, in February, 1645–6, against one who worked on the Sabbath and, after the death of George Pollard, presented a bill against that man's estate for £17–12s for "diet for two years and a quarter."[7]

Thomas Gray brought suit against JOHN[1] in July, 1647, relative to fish which he said was due him. The record of the action is not complete and does not show its outcome, but it is reasonable to surmise that it was not satisfactory to JOHN[1] for, shortly thereafter, the highly significant statement is made that "JOHN DEVEREXE" was fined for fighting with Gray, "Also for breaking his face!"[7]

JOHN[1] had several suits against Valentine Hill of Boston for whom he made fishing trips to "Munhegan" in 1646–7, 1649–50 and 1651, sometimes claiming a balance in money due himself and, at other times, presenting bills for expenses which he claimed that Hill should pay, but refused to.† Some of these

the Massachusetts Legislature of how Washington, on his arrival at the forbidding stream, demanded, "Who will lead us on?" and that "the men of Marblehead and Marblehead alone stood forth to lead the army along the perilous path to unfading glories and honors in the achievement at Trenton. There . . . went the fishermen of Marblehead, alike at home upon land or water, alike ardent, patriotic and unflinching whenever they unfurled the flag of the country."[4a, 4b] Their record of actual combat was as fine as their skill at sea was notable.

* Lecture day was the occasion of the mid-week religious service.

† A contract between an owner of a vessel, or one who financed a fishing trip, the man who managed it and the men who performed the labor, always designated the proportions of the "fare" [catch] which each of these should receive as remuneration, or the sums in lieu of such, and also stated how the expenses incurred should be met.

items charged against the owner included "beer & provitions att the sharinge" [of the fish] suggesting that it was made a sort of holiday; "for the diett after the fishe was shared" [doubtless the usual board of the crew]; "for Lose in the fishe att the second waying"; for "canvice"; "sayle nedells"; "rede & licker"; "sallet oyle"; "2 bush. of pease"; "more 2 bush of pease"; "more of oyle" and for a "Cannow."[8] ". . . sould to JNO. DEVORIX for Mr. Hill to be paid at the end of the viage: Strong watters . . ."; "for trimming Mr. Hill's boat: Myself & boy 5 deaies . . . a eleauen gallands of tarr . . . a halfe hundred 4d neals, 2s, one hundred of 10d neales 2s, dozen of ocom. . . ."[8] The latter items remind one that in those days only handmade nails were known.

One case in court in 1651 shows that JOHN[1] sued a neighbor for defamation, asserting that "Pitford oftened threatened him, whereby he went in fear of him. Pitford was bound for good behavior"[8] but the query naturally arises as to whether, in view of the evidence of this fearsomeness of JOHN[1], his attitude was not merely a strong play for sympathy.

In 1653 a case was tried which brought out indirectly the fact that when JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX made a trip to Munhegan to fish, he kept a couple of swine on the Island, undoubtedly that they might fatten from the scraps from the table and probably from the refuse from the fish. In this case when he left he made arrangements that a later boat should bring the swine "into the bay" [to Marblehead] but before that was done, some fishermen killed and used one.[8] The reaction of JOHN[1] to this act is not recorded! Two years later he had two cases on trial against Emanuel Clarke "To know how he had disposed to six tons of goods [fish?] for which he had received "six pounds 'factoredy'"* and the other against Samuel Yew "For killing his cow by the falling of a tree in the commons."[8]

JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was constable of Marblehead in 1657 and 1658, a member of a trial jury in 1663 and in 1672, and of the grand jury in 1660, 1661, 1678 and 1679, though he evidently failed to serve in the latter capacity in 1661 and was fined therefor.[9] In 1670 he also acted as Deputy for the Marshal at Salem.[9]

In the spring of 1660 EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON had organized a "company to go fishing" and was considered leader of the group. His two sons, Christopher[2] and Joseph[2] Nicholson, went along on stated pay, and certain men, including JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX, went as sharesmen. The latter man also held the position

*Probably merchandise to the value of £6. A factor, meaning agent or dealer in goods, has been said to manufacture "a few articles and factor the rest."[20]

of master of the vessel which they rented. EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON died before complete settlement of their joint interests had been made and, in 1661, his son, Christopher[2], brought suit to force an accounting and received a verdict. JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX made the preliminary moves toward an appeal of the case to the Court of Assistants but, for some reason, failed to follow it up and was fined £2 for that neglect. This did not improve the feeling between the two families as is evidenced by a suit of June 24, 1662, wherein JOHN[1] sued young Christopher[2] for trespass and "pulling down the fence of said DEVORIX and laying open his ground to the common."[10] Arbitrators, largely drawn from the selectmen and, apparently favoring Nicholson, were appointed "in this action concerning pulling down a small parcel of fence standing, as Jo. DEVERIX pretended, upon that parcel of rocks which the selectmen gave him, reported as follows: "Trueth it is we gave him a quarter of an Acre of land which the s^d^ pretended Fence wch is yet at the Commoners pleasure for limitation for it was neuer bounded out by any, & therefore we conceiue it is no matter of Trespasse because the s^d^ Jo DEVORIX was not to ympeade any neaghbour of free Ingresse & regresse To or from the waters side, we used all means we could that so this Court might not be troubled to pswade unto Arbitration wch being Assented unto The men chosen met, there could be nothing done unlesse the s^d^ Jo DEUORIX might be Judge in the case wch was refused to be Assented unto."[10] However, JOHN[1] broke the weight of the foregoing evidence by showing that the major part of the selectmen of Marblehead who gave him this disputed plot in 1660 ". . . do freely grant and bequeath (diuers Consideracons moving us thereunto) on smale pcell of Rockes adiacent to a stage of his newly erected unto JOHN DEVORIX . . . hauing full power to act by generall consent of the towne who gave us fule power to agitate the Towne affaires Uppon the 5th of Janaery w^t^hout limitation, These rockes being by estimacon one quarter of an acre The s^d^ rockes lying"[10] next to the purchased land of JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX. Various other depositions were made showing that the destruction of the eight or ten poles of fence laid open to the common, the stage, housing and flakes as well as the butts, hogsheads and barrels of oil belonging to JOHN[1] who, by this time, "went to the eastward" [i.e. to sea]; that "Said DEUVEUXES wife," in his absence, took up the matter with the selectmen who suggested that her employees replace the fence.[10] This was done but just before its completion [as told by her workmen] "said Christopher [Nicholson] came & puld it downe again, & bad me go home & tell my dame y^t^ what he had done he would answer it, & if I did set it up neuer so often he would

pull it downe, if it cost him a hundred pound then I gaue him charge of ye fence to looke after it, being my master's goods, then I went to ye selectmen & they wished me to sett it up where it was before & take wittnes with me our neighbours being thus disturbed & in an uprore, my dame ordered me to pull downe our orchard fence 9 or ten panell of rails to secure their Corne, which we need not else to have done, this being in planting tyme in ye midst of our business." Arbitration having failed of satisfactory settlement the case went to the jury at the adjourned session of the court who decided that "if DEVORIX had a legal title to the land . . . they found for the plaintiff, if not, for the defendant." The court adjudged the grant to be legal, so JOHN[1] finally won.

JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was a townsman or selectman in 1668 and 1671.[12] He frequently took inventories and administered estates and often sat on coroner's juries whose findings, though sad in subject, were sometimes interesting in wording. One such jury [which included JOHN[1]], was called by the constable in December, 1665, to meet at the DEVEREAUX home "to view two dead men who had been driven ashore. Their verdict was that they belonged to the catch Phenix and were shipwrecked."[12] JOHN[1] served again, similarly, in November, 1669, following the death of Marie Latimore, aged between seven and eight years, when a verdict was returned "that from information given by those who found her and took her out of the well or pump that was in the well, it being uncovered, she fell or slipped into the well and was drowned."[12]

Included in the expense of the building of the prison at Salem, as reported in November, 1669, there was due £4–5s to JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX "for 17 trees, & drawing to ye waterside." In the "stintinge" [apportionment] of the commons in 1674 he had accommodation for two cows. He was made a freeman in that year[13] and was one of the group of Marblehead men who, in March, 1678–9, entered into an agreement with John Wolcott, millwright, of Newbury, to build and equip for them a windmill for grinding grain. JOHN[1] owned one-eighth of the value of this mill which proved not to work perfectly and caused a suit at law.[13]

On April 6, 1672, the town voted to build a "Lentoo" or addition at the back of the meeting-house and the selectmen were instructed to seat the members therein. They found this a more trying task than usual and so much dissatisfaction arose that they threatened to resign. . . . A regular town quarrel ensued and the matter was put into the hands of a committee, which included JOHN[1], and which possessed wide powers to end the confusion and

compel acquiescence in its rulings. The raising of this addition was made a public holiday and, in accordance with the prevailing customs, we find that they "Paid for rum and charges about fish with wine at raising the 'Lentoo' at the Meeting House . . . £4–2s–6d."[4]

One other fruitful cause for disagreement was boundary lines. Adjacent owners ordinarily shared equally the building and maintenance of their common fence. The fencing of the public commons was usually pro-rated to the inhabitants and frequently JOHN[1] and others had occasion to complain of some neighbor for non-performance of his share. In 1670 the town brought suit against JOHN[1] for fencing in for his own use a part of the common and received a verdict in its favor which was nullified by a subsequent official admission of possible error and a consequent re-trial.[14] In 1678 the selectmen found fault with a stone fence between the land of JOHN[1] and the commons and they gave bond to abide by the decision of the arbitrators. These men ruled that the fence as usual should be maintained equally by each party, that in regard to the "way into the Neck of Marblehead the gats and barrs of JNO. DEVEREXE are to stand unlesse Marblehead doe make another fence to make a lane on the other side as JNO. DEVEREXE hath done on the one side . . ." but presumably this was not acceded to by the selectmen for in June, following, JOHN[1] had the temerity to attach the orchard and barn of one selectman, the orchard of another and the dwelling house of a third as a forfeiture of their bond. In this matter the Court evidently felt that he was going too far and found for the defendants.[14]

A case apparently of much greater aggravation and one wherein one's sympathies lean particularly toward JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX arose earlier but was first aired in court in September, 1670, when he brought suit against the then joint owners of the Humphrey farm which adjoined his own. Various depositions showed that, during the term of their earlier ownership, these joint owners delayed in building their share of the common fence, thus laying the DEVEREAUX farm open to the menace of stray cattle and swine which trespassed daily and rendered a constant watch necessary in order to protect the crops which had, even so, been damaged to the extent of at least £20. "Also said DEVORIX lost a horse and a bull which strayed away from home on account of the fence, the horse being lamed and spoiled, and the bull mired and lost, only the hide being of value, with a damage of six or seven pounds." Not only was the delay of building this fence a source of annoyance and loss to JOHN[1] but it developed that the boundary line had been deliberately shifted

to DEVEREAUX' detriment. In the spring of 1668 John[2] and Samuel[2] Gardner* had been engaged by DEVEREAUX and the joint owners to run the line between their properties. Both parties accompanied the surveyors to the boundary where the line was run and a stake was driven every twenty poles and the line agreed to by all present. JOHN[1] built his share of the fence but for some time the others failed to construct their portion, as stated above, and finally some of those stakes were pulled up and, in May, 1670, a different line was run by Lieut. Fisher which cut into DEVEREAUX' farm to the extent of about two acres and deprived him of some of his "best land full of good timber, worth not less than eight or ten pounds" and the fence which the adjoining owners finally built ran along this erroneous Fisher line. At the time of running the second line JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was requested to accompany them, but refused, saying "Jentel men doe what youe please. I will not Com a monst youe for my lien is all Readdy Ren."[15] As late as 1676 there was still friction and recrimination about this boundary.[15] In the summer of 1676, JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX served under Capt. Samuel Hunting in the latter part of King Philip's War, and September 23, 1676 had due[21] him £1 8 6.

For a time JOHN[1] rented, and in 1659 purchased, of Charles Gott the land which had belonged to the Reverend Hugh Peters, deceased. After the death of JOHN[1] it was claimed by Elizabeth (Peters) Barker, of Deptford, England, daughter and heir of the former owner, on the grounds that the agency of Gott was not valid. On the advice of the friends of widow ANN against court action in the matter, her son Robert[2] Devereaux was forced to pay £350 for the land and home which his father had paid for many years before.[2] This meekness under evident injustice seems entirely out of keeping with the spirit of the times. JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX also owned land at Dunstable but it was, apparently, only an investment.[2]

JOHN[1] married at an unknown date, but certainly in New England, ANN (——), who was born about 1621, as shown by repeated depositions of hers. Many incidents show strong evidence that she was closely related to [and likely a sister of] Margaret (——) Bennet, widow of John[1] Bennet of Marblehead, whose home lot adjoined that of the DEVEREAUX and whose family, not only in this generation but also in at least the two succeeding ones, was closely and quite incessantly associated with Devereaux.[18]† ANN must have been a

*These men were sons of our THOMAS GARDNER and brothers of SARAH (GARDNER) BALCH [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

† (a) Margaret (——) Bennet [b. abt. 1606], widow of John[1] Bennet [deceased about 1663], sued Andrew Rowland

capable woman for she is shown to have not only run her home and reared her family but also to have taken in as boarders various outsiders[7] and to have assisted her husband in some of his business transactions by weighing and keeping account of the catch. She was frequently called upon to testify in court and, in one such case, had the temerity to call John Peach* a "wittall."[15]

The punishment put upon the youth of that day seems heavy indeed, one instance being, in May, 1670, when two sons in this family, John[2] and Humphrey[2], aged about fifteen years, with five neighbor boys were found to have "a combination to meet a nights in ye woods as they did 4 times & stolle divers smalthings" for which the Devereaux boys were to be whipped or pay a mark apiece, while one other lad was to be whipped ten stripes and the rest had the alternative of a whipping or a fine of a noble† apiece and beside the group "were to pay Henry Stacy 8s. for the poultry they stole from him."[18] Of course no theft can be excused or justified but in view of the sympathy now commonly

in 1664 for pork which she had sold him[1] and ANN (——) DEVEREAUX, who lived next door, deposed that she had weighed the pork.[6a]

(b) In 1667 widow Margaret Bennet had a suit against the wife of "Sander Migilligan" and ANN (——) DEVEREAUX, aged 46, and her daughter Ann[2], aged 20, deposed.[6b]

(c) This John[1] and Margaret (——) Bennet had a daughter Mary born in 1638, who m. first, about 1654, Christopher Codner, who died about 1660, leaving two children, Joan, b. abt. 1655, and Christopher, Jr., b. abt. 1657. This Mary[2] Bennet m. 2nd, before March 3, 1663, Elias White, and m. 3rd, between November, 1663, and November, 1665, her cousin Richard Downing. If he was literally her cousin either his mother must have been a sister of John[1] Bennet, or else his father, (——) Downing, was brother to the wife of John[1] Bennet, in which case Margaret (——) Bennet would have been a Downing and, if ANN (——) DEVEREAUX was her sister, she would also have been a Downing.[6c]

It has been suggested that Richard Downing, b. abt. 1637, may have been a grandson of Emanuel Downing, but no evidence has been found upholding that theory, and his residence would make it seem more likely that he was related to Theophilus Downing of Marblehead and Salem [perhaps as eldest son or nephew], who with wife Elin or Elinor had in this country Theophilus, baptized in 1642, Ann or Hannah in 1644 and Benjamin in 1647.

(d) In 1660 JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was trustee of the children's share of the estate of Christopher Codner, deceased, and, in 1679, was appointed to assist in setting off to the son, Christopher, Jr., his portion.[6d]

(e) JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX, aged about 60, and ANN, his wife, aged 54, deposed in 1674 that Christopher Codner, Jr., lived at their home with Joseph Emmons to whom he was apprenticed.[6e]

(f) A letter of attorney, given in 1667, by widow Margaret Bennet and her son-in-law and daughter, Richard and Mary Downing, was witnessed by ANN (——) DEVEREAUX and her daughter BETHIA[2].[6f]

(g) In 1665 JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX acted as attorney for, went on the bond of, and was called "loving friend" by Richard Downing.[6g] Many other similar associations are found.[11]

(h) A deposition made in June, 1684, by John Peach, aged about 80, stated that John[1] Bennet, of Salem and Marblehead, deceased, came with him to New England in 1630 and that man's wife Margaret came over some years later. Is there any chance that wife Margaret's origin is hinted at in the following?

(i) A Robert Davis, aged 30, came to New England in 1638 and with him a Margaret Davis, probably a sister [both as servants to Peter Noyes], and Robert's will of 1655 named his wife Bridget and his sister Margaret Bennett, as well as brothers John Davis and Henry Loker.[6h] The birth here of a daughter to John[1] and Margaret (——) Bennet, in 1638, seems to eliminate this Margaret Davis as wife for John[1] Bennet, yet the names are too significant to ignore. On the other hand, light on the Davis-Loker relationship may be found in the fact that Henry Loker m. at Sudbury on March 24, 1647, Hannah Brewer, who died there February 14, 1679.[6i]

* A neighbor whose son had married her daughter.

† An English gold coin first minted by Edward III, having the current value of 6s. 8d. [or 10s.].[19]

felt for the very real urge, in youth, for life in the open, and the tolerance which has come to be a habit in connection with college escapades, one can hardly fail to feel pity for these lads who so craved an outing, a camp fire and a meal cooked over it, even while disapproving of their exact manner of obtaining supplies.

The will of JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX, dated September 4, 1693, and proved May 20, 1695, is different from many in that he specified that the land he owned was "to remaine in the family and name of the Devereaux from generation to generation in way of intale fforever and ever . . ."[2] Another interesting item refers to "my land within the Stonnwall . . . being three hundred Acres more or less." He gave to BETHIA (DEVEREAUX) BARTLETT and her children "the land that her house stands upon and that part of her house which belongs to me with the garden and land . . ." as well as £20 in current pay.[2]

JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX died between December 24, 1694 [when he deposed in court], and May 20, 1695, when his will was proved,[2] and his wife ANN survived him and died April 26, 1708, in her eighty-eighth year.[2]

The lack of an organized church at Marblehead until about 1684 probably accounts for the failure to find birth dates for the children of this family. Some of these have been approximated by depositions or by stated age at death, but even their sequence of birth is uncertain. The order in which they are here listed is that in which they were mentioned in their father's will.[2]

The children of JOHN[1] and ANN (——) DEVEREAUX, all born undoubtedly in Marblehead, were[2]

I. Robert[2], b. (—); d. before December 22, 1740; m. Hannah Blaney, of Lynn.
II. Humphrey[2], b. about 1655–6 [by his various depositions];[16] d. January 31, 1689–90; m.[16] 1680 Elizabeth (——).
III. John[2], d. before September 4, 1693; m. Susannah Hartshorn.
IV. Hannah[2], m. 1st, Peter Greenfield, who was born 1633; m. 2nd, Richard Knott, surgeon, who d. 1684; m. 3rd, before September, 1693, John Swett.
V. Ann[2], b. about 1647 [by her depositions];[16] m. 1st, (——) Boasum; m. 2nd, before September 1, 1693, (——) Nichols.
VI. BETHIAH[2], b. about 1649; d. April 22, 1718, aged 69 years, at Marblehead;[17] m. there, about 1680, JOHN[1] BARTLETT [see Bartlett, p. 74].
VII. Emme[2], b. about 1657; d. June 17, 1737, aged 80, at Marblehead; m. before 1680, William Peach (John).

REFERENCES

1. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 114, 313; V, 110; VI, 19; VII, 200; VIII, 180.
2. New England Register, LXXIV, 114–20.
3. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, pp. 25, 55, 59, 63, 102.
4. History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, Jr., 1880, pp. 12–3, 17, 25–6, 28, 232–4.

4a. Nooks and Corners of the New England Coast, S. A. Drake, 1875, pp. 228–9, 231, 233–5, 238–9, 243–5, 253–4.
4b. History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, Jr., 1880, pp. 140, 143–6, 154–6; Life of George Washington, W. Irving, 1857, II, 329–35, 476–8; Field-Book of the Revolution, B. J. Lossing, 1852, II, 226, 812.
5. "Skipper Ireson's Ride," J. G. Whittier.
5a. Complete Poems of H. W. Longfellow, Cambridge Edition, 1893, p. 106, "Fire of Driftwood."
5b. Fireside Encyclopedia of Poetry, Ed. by H. T. Coates, 1901, p. 512–3 [Lucy Larcom's "Hannah Binding Shoes"]; Complete Works of Nathaniel Hawthorne, Riverside Press, 1891, Twice-Told Tales, II, 504–16; Gunnison, E. Norman G., "Old Huldah or the Women of Marblehead" [in Five Minute Recitations, W. K. Fobes, ed.].
6. Old Naumkeag and other towns, C. H. Webber & W. S. Nevins, 1877, pp. 269–70, 272.
6a. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 157–8.
6b. Ibid., III, 414.
6c. Ibid., I, 74; III, 110–1, 157–8; Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., III, 34; Vital Records of Salem, Mass., I, 262; Savage, II, 67; Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, I, 325–6; III, 313.
6d. Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, I, 325–6; Record and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 225.
6e. Ibid., VI, 18.
6f. Ibid., III, 443–4.
6g. Ibid., III, 272.
6h. Pope's Pioneers, pp. 45, 133; New England Register, XL, 65.
6i. Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass., pp. 231, 314.
7. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 35, 58, 77, 93, 107, 116, 135.
8. Ibid., I, 214–6, 233, 243, 325, 409.
9. Ibid., II, 59, 136, 250, 281, 300; III, 102; IV, 251; V, 76, 106; VII, 106, 151, 195.
10. Ibid., II, 290–1, 338, 407–8, 431.
11. Ibid., III, 272, 295; VII, 225.
12. Ibid., III, 296; IV, 211, 213, 276, 378.
13. Ibid., V, 280, 358; VII, 384–5.
14. Ibid., IV, 251, 289; VII, 5–6.
15. Ibid., I, 62; II, 291; III, 414; IV, 285–6; VII, 324.
16. Ibid., III, 158, 414; V, 247; VI, 19; VIII, 145, 174.
17. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., II, 482; III, 34.
18. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 158, 272, 295, 414, 443; IV, 274; VI, 19; VII, 225.
19. Americana.
20. Murray's Dictionary.
21. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1906, p. 290.
22. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 72.

DOANE

* † [368] John Doane c.1590–1685	m	Ann . . . –bet.1648–1659
† [184] Daniel Doane c.1636–1712	m 1st prob.1663–6	. . . . .
† [92] Israel Doane c.1672–aft.1740	m 1st c.1700	Ruth Freeman c.1680–1728
† ‡ [46] Prence Doane 1704–c.1751	m 1726	Elizabeth Godfrey 1704–bef.1791
§ ‖ [22] Hezekiah Ackley c.1733–5–aft.1783	m 1756	Abigail Doane 1732–aft.1777
‖ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
‖ ¶ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
¶ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Plymouth, Mass.
† Eastham, Mass.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ East Hartland, Conn.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.

DOANE

JOHN[1] DOANE, an Englishman, born about 1590, came to New England in or near 1630 bringing undoubtedly a wife and one daughter, Lydia[2]. They settled at Plymouth, Massachusetts, where they had a second child Abigail[2], born[1] in January, 1631–2. About fifteen years, well filled with varied public services and private enterprises, were spent there. He was one of the few who bore the title of "Mr." The Pilgrims were very careful to give no titles where they were not due.* He was chosen one of the "Cowncell" or Assistants to the Governor, on January 1, 1632–3, and became a freeman that year.[2,3] A law had been passed the year before laying a fine of £20 sterling against any one who refused to serve as Governor after election to that position, or of £10 in the case of Councillor, although refusal of a second consecutive term in these offices was optional.[4]

Before January 2, 1633–4, JOHN[1] had been made a Deacon in the place of Thomas Blossom and, on this date, "at the request of the church and himselfe was freed from the office of an Assistant in the Comonweale."[2,3] This suggests his personal preference for religious rather than civil service and also hints at a belief of incompatibility between the two.[1,4] However, his activities in both lines continued in marked degree and he retained his position as Deacon in this church until his removal from Plymouth in 1645. As an agent for this body he bought for £120, in 1642, the home and grounds of the Reverend Ralph Smyth whose ministerial services had terminated, and that year, with the approval of the organization, he made over the same property to John Reynor,[5] who was succeeding the Reverend Mr. Smyth as pastor.

* "About this time [1631] it was customary with the inhabitants here [Salem] and elsewhere to give the title of Mr. and Mrs. to but very few of either sex. The usual appellations of adults were goodman and goodwife before their respective surnames.

"Mr. was applied to captains and sometimes to mates of vessels; to military captains; to eminent merchants; to schoolmasters, doctors, magistrates and clergymen; to persons who had received a second degree at College and who had been made freemen. The wives and daughters of those men who were called Mr. were named Mrs. or Mistress.

"September 27, 1631, Josiah Plaistow, of Boston, for a misdemeanor, is sentenced by Court of Assistants 'hereafter to be called by the name of Josias & not Mr as formerly hee vsed to be.'"[57]

JOHN[1] was chosen on January 5, 1635–6, to assist the Governor and Council "to sett shuch rates on goods to be sould & labourers for their hire, as should be meete & juste"[6] thus showing an early instance of government control of prices and wages. He was chosen again on March 1, following, to assist the same group "for the ceasing of men for the publick charge of this prnt [present] yeare" and chosen also, on November 15, 1636, to assist in the first revision of the laws of the Colony,[4, 6] namely, the Mayflower Compact.[6a, 21] This latter assignment constitutes no small compliment to his wisdom and integrity. He served on juries at least twenty times between March, 1636–7, and March, 1652–3,[7] on grand juries in 1640 and 1641 and as Deputy or Representative for Plymouth at least seven times between May, 1639, and March, 1643–4.[8, 9]

The type of punishment in vogue at that time is shown in the case of a servant who "had runne away & absented himselfe fiue daies from his masters service, and being lost in the woods, & fowned by an Indian, was forced to returne" and was "privately whipped before the Govr & Cowncill" of which JOHN[1] was then a member.[10] Another instance is seen in the case of widow Billington to whom had been assigned, in March, 1635–6, the use of certain marsh from which to cut hay for her stock, with the statement that "what is too much for her is for Mr DONE."[10] Evidently this indeterminate grant caused friction[4] and recrimination on her part for on June 7, following, "JOHN DONE, yeoman, entreth an acco^u of slander, & layeth it in an 100 li [£] against Helen Billington, widow" and the Court upheld his contention as to defamation but not his claim for damage, by sentencing the defendant to pay him £5 and "to be sett in the stocks & be whipt."[10]

In both 1633 and 1634 JOHN[1] assisted in making out the assessment and tax lists for the Colony and was himself "rated" at 01:07:00 to be paid in corn at six shillings per bushel.[10] He was one of a committee to collect money for the building of a mill for the town in 1635 and to engage workmen and oversee them in its construction; to divide meadow in 1633, and to lay out lands in 1642.[10] He was one of several leading men whom the Court appointed in March, 1636–7, and re-appointed in June following, to advise with the Governor and Assistants regarding the continuance, encouragement and control of the trade in "beaver, corne & beads" with the Indians.[1, 6a, 11]

As is well known, only dependable men whose integrity was proved were allowed to sell liquor in the early days so it is a recommendation rather than a disparagement that on June 4, 1639, "Mr JOHN DONE is allowed to draw wine vntill the next Court, that further order may be taken therein." Through some

misunderstanding, when his year's license was about to expire, on June 2, 1640, the jury voted that "we psent Mr DONE for selling wine contrary to order made by the Court," but immediately his exoneration was recorded as follows:

"It was mistaken by the grand inquest [jury] and so he was discharged by the Court the 3d of Septemb^r, 1640, and appoynted by the Court to be thus rased [erased] out."[11] That he held this same privilege at a later date is evident from the statement of January 7, 1644–5, that

"Whereas Mr JOHN DONE is lycensed to draw wyne in Plymouth, and that James Cole is likewise lycensed to keepe the ordinary there, wch is very inconvenyent to many passengers, the Court hath therefore, lycenced the said James Cole from this day forward to draw wyne, if he shall agree wth Mr DONE to take off those wynes hee now hath in his hands. Agreement was after made betwixt them."[11]

In 1641 JOHN[1] was one of a committee appointed to audit the accounts of James Luxford and, again in 1644–5, was one of another committee to audit the books of the Treasurer of the Colony, THOMAS[1] PRENCE, reporting to the Court in each case.[12] He was chosen as an assistant[21] to the Governor in 1642.

He had many grants of land and made various purchases of such beside.[13, 14] One grant in 1636–7 was of "hey ground at the Heigh Pines"* and one purchase in 1633–4 from John Coomb was of "a dwelling house & misted [mearstead] wth the inclosure & out howsing thereunto belonging. . . ."[14] The home "neere unto Plaine Dealing" which he occupied in and before 1636 he owned in partnership with John Atwood who, on December 24 of that year, bought for £60 the share formerly owned[14] by JOHN[1]. In 1642 the latter "in consideracon of four goats payd him by Mr Willm Bradford sold a garden place adjoining his home."[14] Being called "JOHN DONE, of Plymouth, gent." he signed a bond in 1637 in the amount of £11 for Thomas Butler of Duxbury and, on February 19, 1645, he sold his residence to William Hanbury[14] doubtless because of the removal of himself and family from Plymouth. The transfer of this property included a reservation that "The corne now groweing in the garden is excepted wth some half a dossen of smale fruite trees wch the said Willm Hanbury shall giue the said JOHN DONE at fall or spring."[14] These were, undoubtedly, intended for transplanting to the new home in Eastham.

It is evident that JOHN[1] had acquaintance and business relations with John Atwood while the latter was resident in London in 1633, as well as after he removed to Plymouth in or before 1636 for, in the former year, JOHN[1] had

*This place was known as the "High Pines" until 1849, and, perhaps, even to the present time.[54]

"comand of" Walter Harris, Atwood's servant; in 1636 he and Atwood were joint owners of real estate and on June 3, 1639, JOHN[1] acknowledged and agreed to pay on June 1, following, a debt of £3–17s. to Atwood who "pmised to forbeare y[t] vntill."[14, 17]

JOHN[1] reared at least two children beside his own for, in 1633, he became guardian of and took into his home Mary Browne, whose father, Peter, had just died, and he received from the widow Browne, at the direction of the Court, £15 which he might use but must repay to Mary when she reached the age of seventeen. This payment was made in 1644, with the consent of his ward and the approval of the Court, in the form of two cows valued at £13 and of "swyne and wheate" to the value of 40 shillings.[15] The other child to receive shelter in his home in 1633 was probably his own nephew. That year JOHN[1] was made the administrator for and presented an inventory of the estate left by the widow Martha Harding, who is believed to have been his sister,* and who left to his care, her son[15] Joseph even though she had adult Harding relatives living in the community.[1] This fact, with the added ones that JOHN[1] had advanced over £9 to her before her death and that this Joseph Harding was complained of in 1652 for "carrying an Indians gun Vnto the smith to bee mended in his *vnkels* name,"[16] justifies a belief in their close relationship.

The custom of having bound servants frequently obtained in those days and JOHN[1], as agent for John Atwood, then of London, had control of the services of Walter Harris for five years and, in 1633, sold this claim, with the consent of the latter, to Henry Howland for £14.[17] In his own behalf, about 1637, he bought for £8 the remainder of a six-year term of service due from Matthew Osborn to John Reed.[17]

On May 10, 1644, JOHN[1], with Myles Standish, took an inventory of the personal property left by Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER.[18] In 1643 or 1644 the church at Plymouth appointed a committee, which included JOHN[1], to explore, survey and purchase of the Indians, Nauset which, in 1651, became Eastham. They did this, reserving for the natives the right to gather shell fish in the cove and to have a part of the blubber of all the whales which were driven on the shore.[19, 21] The church, in turn, transferred this purchase at its cost price to seven families of Plymouth, including those of THOMAS[1] PRENCE, JOHN[1] DOANE and EDWARD[1] BANGS, who wished to settle there.[19] The removal of these families occurred in 1644–5, that of the Doanes evidently being in the latter year since JOHN[1] did not dispose of his wine stock in Plymouth until after

* An Anna Doane who is said to have married William[1] Twining in 1652 was perhaps also his sister.[56]

January 7, or of his house there until February 19, 1645.[11, 14] It is said that the mother church regretted the departure of these families for they "were among the most respectable inhabitants of Plymouth."[20]

The religious and civic activities of JOHN[1] were carried on in his new home for he soon became, and continued until his death, a Deacon of the Church which was soon formed and served as a Representative of this town of Eastham probably from its organization in 1646, and certainly in 1647, 1649 to 1654 and 1659.[21, 22] The early records are far from complete but the service of JOHN[1] as Deputy continued "until the infirmities of age forced him to ask the town to be relieved of that duty, but so confiding was the town in his ability, wisdom and integrity that they unanimously voted him additional compensation to induce him to continue to serve in that capacity."[6a] Much other service as selectman and otherwise may also have been performed by him but since his son John[2] was old enough by this time to have qualified and no positive discrimination is possible between these two men of the same name, it is assumed that these positions may have been held by the younger man.

In April, 1653, the Plymouth Court enacted that

"Whereas wee haue intelligence out of our native countrey [England] of danger that may bee towards vs in regard of the great varience betwixt the two nations of Holland and England, the Court haue ordered, that warrants bee directed to euery towne . . . to require them to make choise of two deputies for eich towne, to meet with the maiestrates att Plymouth on Wensday, the sixt of Aprill next, and with them to treat and conclude on such milletary affaires as through Gods blessing may probably tend to our psent and future safety" and the

"Names of those that mett at Plymouth as Deputies for the several Townes for the Ends aboue mencioned" included "Mr JOHN DOANE" and RICHARD[1] SPARROW for Eastham.[20, 22]

The menace herein, to the colonists, lay in the direction of their Dutch neighbors in the new world in case the two mother countries became involved in war. As a result of this conference the Court ordered that money should be raised; a force of sixty soldiers enlisted, including a quota of three from Eastham; "arms, powder and balls" procured and that a military watch be kept in each town as well as armed protection by a certain part of the military force at all public worship.[20]

JOHN[1] was appointed by the court, in 1663, to "adminester marriage" and to swear witnesses in Eastham.[23] He had numerous grants of land in this

vicinity and, in October, 1657, with RICHARD[1] SPARROW, was among several who asked for "som proportions of land att a place about thirteen English miles from Rehoboth" and, with them, in June, 1658, received land[23] "lying betwixt Bridgewater and Waymouth," though no removal on his part is apparent. In October, 1662, either he or his son JOHN[2] received a grant "on the northerly bounds of Taunton"[23] [see map on p. 243]. This gives an idea of how scattered the holdings of the early proprietors were.

Certain laws and penalties of that day are of interest by comparison with our own freedom from restraint. In 1651 it was ordered that if any "lazy, slothful or profane persons" in any town should neglect to frequent public worship they should forfeit ten shillings for every such failure or be publicly whipped.[21] In 1655 a fine of similar amount was levied against one who lied, in 1660 a fine of £1 was assessed for slander, while humor is stirred by evidence of a like penalty, in 1661, "for lying about a whale."[20] A law was passed in 1665 justifying the infliction of corporal punishment on all persons who denied the scriptures; providing that all persons who should stand outside of the meeting house during the time of divine service should be set in the stocks and requiring that local officials should complain to the authorities of all who should absent themselves from public worship.[21]

In 1643 it was ordered that beans should be used in voting for councillors, a white one to signify a ballot in favor of a candidate and a black one the contrary, with a heavy penalty attached for any one who might drop in more than one bean.[21a]

Stone monuments bearing the initials of JOHN[1], presumably erected and perhaps even chiseled by his own hands, are still to be seen where they were planted as boundary stones of his large farm north of the "Town Cove" in the present town of Eastham.[6a, 21]

JOHN[1] DOANE had a wife, ANN (——), in 1648, for on December 4, of that year, she signed with him a deed covering an exchange of land with Daniel Cole.[23a] ANN had died and he had married again by 1659 for, on April 1 of that year he, "with the concent of his wife Mistris Lydia Done" deeded to widow Alice Bradford a tract of one hundred acres in Plymouth which had been paid for by, but not conveyed to, her husband, William Bradford, during his life.[24]

On May 18, 1678, JOHN[1] signed his will, calling himself "eighty and eight years or there about," directing that his wife [unnamed] should have the home, certain other described property and all the personal estate during her life and

providing that at her death the home and land should go to his daughter[25] Abigail[2] who was still unmarried. JOHN[1] did not die until February 21, 1685, and the accuracy of the inventory of his estate was sworn to on May 29, 1686, by an Abigail Doane[25] who was undoubtedly his daughter. On December 2, 1681, in a deed which called him "Gent., Tayler," he conveyed to this daughter, unconditionally, the identical property[1] bequeathed, by the will of 1678, to his wife and following her, to the daughter, thus suggesting the demise of the wife, Lydia, between the date of the will and that of the deed mentioned, and suggesting that he was merely carrying out this intent of the former document in advance of his death.

His will gave to his son DANIEL[2] "all that Land which he now Liveth upon and twenty acres of land nere a place called the dry swamp; and . . . four acres and a half of meadow" with a share of the personal property.[1, 25] According to his own statement of his age he must have been born about 1590 and, therefore, have been about ninety-five years old at his death, though the inventory of his estate calls him one hundred and ten at death and tradition adds, probably erroneously, "that he was rocked in a cradle several of his last years."[6a]

The children of JOHN[1] DOANE and probably his wife ANN (——) were[26, 27]

i. Lydia[2], b. doubtless in England; m. at Plymouth, September 11, 1645, Samuel[2] Hicks (Robert[1]).
ii. Abigail[2], b. January 13, 1631–2, at Plymouth; d. January 23, 1734–5, at Norwich, Conn., in her 104th year; m. at Eastham in 1690, Samuel[2] Lothrop (Rev. John[1]).
iii. John[2], b. about 1635 at Plymouth; d. March 15, 1708, at Eastham; m. 1st, at Eastham, April 30, 1662, Hannah[2] Bangs (EDWARD[1]); m. 2nd, January 14, 1694, Rebecca Pettee.
iv. DANIEL[2], see following.
v. Ephraim[2], b. probably before 1645 and at Plymouth; d. 1700 at Eastham; m. 1st, February 5, 1667, Mercy Knowles (Richard); m. 2nd, after 1692, Mary (Smalley) Snow.

DANIEL[2] DOANE (*John*[1]) was born about 1636, probably at Plymouth,[26] and died December 20, 1712, at Eastham, in his 76th year.[29] The name of his first wife, whom he married by or before 1666 and who was the mother of all but one of his children, has not yet been found. He married secondly[28] at Eastham, after July 28, 1682, Hepsibah (Cole) Crispe who is said to have been many years his junior.

He removed with his father's family from Plymouth to Eastham and settled in that portion now known as East Orleans.[26] An account was kept in each town of the "Liquors, Powder, Shott and Led" imported into that locality that

a tax might be levied on them and, on November 28, 1664, DANIEL[2] was listed as having received one gallon of liquor, three pounds of powder and twenty pounds of shot.[31] He was a legal voter in,[30] and doubtless before, 1675, and that year saw service in King Philip's War, for his claim to a grant of land therefor was recognized when Narragansett Township No. 7, at what is now Gorham, Maine, was distributed in 1733 by the assignment to him[30a] of lot 29.

One of the unique laws of his day passed in 1667 and in force for many years required that every householder or head of a family should kill yearly twelve blackbirds or three crows because of the damage they did to crops. In 1695 it was amplified to require every unmarried man to kill yearly six blackbirds or three crows while he remained single, with the penalty attached for failure therein, that none such might marry until he had obeyed this order.[30] This probably was not so intended, but it looks very much like laying a double penalty, even though a light one, against the matrimonial state!

DANIEL[2] DOANE served on a coroner's jury[31] in 1667–8; on a grand jury[31] in 1677; on other juries[26] in 1686–7 and 1689; as surveyor of highways[26, 31] in 1667, 1672–3, 1699, 1700 and 1704; as selectman from 1687 to 1691[32] and probably from 1691–6;[26] besides which activities the town clerkship is variously assigned to him from 1676 to 1692[31] or from 1676 to 1703,[33] though finally one compiler disputes his own earlier statement by saying that the latter service belonged, rather, to Daniel Cole.[33]

A picture of certain conditions obtaining during his life is found in this preamble and vote passed in 1705:

"Whereas there is much disorder and inconvenience in the town of Eastham, in not orderly attending town meetings; also by persons disorderly and tumultuously speaking in said meetings; also by disorderly departing without leave; it is, therefore, ordered by the town, that whenever there shall be a town meeting, duly warned, every person qualified to vote in said meeting, and living within seven miles of the meeting house, who shall not attend at the time appointed, or at the time the meeting is called to order, shall be fined sixpence for every such default; or shall depart, without leave of the moderator, before the meeting closes, or speaks without liberty, shall be fined the same."[34]

DANIEL[2] was a Deacon of the First Church of Eastham for many years, probably succeeding his father. During his incumbency and before 1695, disaffection arose in the minds of some of the church members, and, undoubtedly, sadness in his home, because of the conversion of a number of people, including his son, Daniel[3], to the Friends' faith. Because of this, the latter man removed,

before 1700, to Newtown, Pennsylvania, thus creating the first break in the family circle, as well as being the first to forsake the church of his fathers. It is stated that William[2] Twining (William[1]) of that town, who was a Deacon, and whose daughter Daniel[3] Doane appears to have married, was excommunicated from the church for this cause and also emigrated to Pennsylvania.[35, 37a, 56]

DANIEL[2] DOANE was the first physician of Eastham and practiced as such until near the time of his death.[6a, 21] He was an extensive land owner, having received much by various grants and doubtless more by purchase, most of which acreage lay in the vicinity of Orleans which was eventually cut off from Eastham. One of his children, evidently the eldest, was accidentally drowned in a well, according to an inquest[27] held September 20, 1667.

In the will of George Crispe, whose widow he later married, is found the request that ". . . my friend and neighbor Goodman DANIELL DONE be healpful to my wife," as overseer.[26] DANIEL[2] evidently decided he could best carry out this injunction by making the widow his wife.

His own will, dated September 18, 1711, and proved October 9, 1712, incorporates some odd items of a sort frequently found in documents of that day, such as a proviso that his "Loving Wife Hepsibah" should have "all her wearing apparell" and "That end of my Dwelling House wherein we now Live (viz.) ye Eastern End from the foundation to the roof." This document among other provisions divides between his sons Joseph[3] and ISRAEL[3] the "Whole Right. Title & Interest which I have or ought to Have In Land Lying in ye Town of Middleborough . . . both divided and undivided" as well as a share in the personal property. The inventory of his estate showed him to have had property valued at £553–16–09.[26] He "was buried in the old Town Cove burial ground where a small slatestone still legible, marks his grave."[26]

The children of DANIEL[2] DOANE and his first wife, all born at Eastham, and perhaps in this order, were[35, 37]

I. son[3], [b. perhaps abt. 1664]; drowned about September 20, 1667.[27]

II. Daniel[3], [b. perhaps abt. 1666, and m. about 1687, since he had a child b. February 23, 1688]; d. September 1, 1743, at Newtown, Pa.; m. 1st, at Eastham, Mehitable [probably Twining, daughter of William, Jr.];[56] m. 2nd, in Pa., Mary [Yates?].

III. Joseph[3], [b. perhaps abt. 1668, though stated[35] as June 27, 1669]; d. July 27, 1757, at Eastham; m. 1st, doubtless there, January 8, 1690, Mary[2] Godfrey (GEORGE[1]); m. 2nd, there,[37] February 29, 1727–8, Desire Berry.

IV. Constant[3], b. March 7, 1669–70, and called[35] "son," but if so, died young and a daughter of the same name was, in that case, born later; but it seems more likely considering her probable age at marriage and the known facts and dates of the

other children, that this Constant was rather the daughter herself, and if so, m. January 8, 1690, George Shaw.[36]

v. Rebecca[3], [b. perhaps 1672–3]; m. Benjamin[2] Merrick (WILLIAM[1]) [who was born in 1665] and by him had a daughter who married a man b. in 1696.

vi. ISRAEL[3], see following.

vii. or viii. Abigail[3], b. prob. early in this group; m. 1st, March 17, 1702–3, Timothy Dimmock, b. 1668. They lived in Mansfield, Conn., where she received a grant of land in 1718 as his widow; she m. 2nd, (——) Follet, of Windham. In 1728 she deeded land to her sons.[55]

vii. or viii. Nathaniel[3], [b. perhaps 1680–3]; d. 1758 at Harwich; m. Mary (——) [perhaps about 1705].

ix. Ruth[3], [b. perhaps 1685–90]; d. before March 15, 1722; m. July 13, 1710, Nathaniel[4] Mayo (Nathaniel[3], Nathaniel[2], Rev. John[1]) who was b. in July, 1681.

The child of DANIEL[2] DOANE and Hepsibah (Cole) Crispe was

x. Hepsibah[3], unm., non compos mentis.

ISRAEL[3] DOANE (*Daniel*[2], *John*[1]) was born, probably about 1672, at Eastham, and certainly not much later, for he was called a legal inhabitant of that town[38] in 1695. He died after June 5, 1740.[35] He married first, undoubtedly at Eastham, about 1700, RUTH[4] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 362], and married secondly, at that place, April 17, 1729, Mercy (Cobb) Sparrow,[37] whose mother, Sarah (Lewis) Cobb, was the third wife of our JONATHAN[2] SPARROW, which made Mercy, therefore, stepdaughter of the latter, as well as wife of his son Richard[3] Sparrow[35] (JONATHAN[2], RICHARD[1]).

On June 20, 1705, ISRAEL[3] was witness to a deed between the various heirs of Jonathan Shaw,[39] including his own sister Constant[3] and her husband George Shaw. On October 28, 1713, he was witness to one by which his brother Nathaniel[3] Doane came into possession of the lands of Amos Sipson, Indian, of Harwich, which the latter man inherited from his father John Sipson.[39] ISRAEL[3] himself traded to Thomas Linnel five acres of land at Harwich for "one tenth part both for quantity and quallity of all right title Claim & Interest y^t I (Linnel) have In & to ye trees woods pine knots & herbags that now is or Ever shall be growing standing Lying being or belonging to all & singular that tract or parcel of land . . ."[39]

In behalf of his first wife, RUTH[4] FREEMAN, ISRAEL[3] signed the agreement of the heirs of Major JOHN[2] FREEMAN, her grandfather, on January 27, 1719–20.[39] On May 28, 1728, he, being called yeoman, was appointed guardian of Priscilla[4] Sparrow (Richard[3], JONATHAN[2], RICHARD[1]) who had become his stepdaughter by his marriage with her mother the preceding February.[39] He had,

at an unknown date, a grant of land which his son Edmund[4] sold to William Cohoon on November 10, 1757.[40] His pastor, the Reverend Mr. Osborn, a native of Ireland, who was ordained in Eastham in 1718, taught the parish the use of peat for fuel.[34]

ISRAEL[3] was admitted as a townsman of Eastham on March 17, 1701–2; served as a surveyor in 1704, 1705–6, 1724–5 and 1734–5; as constable in 1709–10; as selectman in 1719–20 and 1725–6 and as a juryman in 1731–2.

The appointment of an administrator, in January, 1740, for the estates of his sons, Israel[4] and Daniel[4], who were mariners,[35] suggests the possibility that some shipwreck or similar accident may have taken them both. The removal of each of his other sons, PRENCE[4] to Saybrook, Connecticut, Elnathan[4] to Putnam County, New York, and Edmund[4] to Nova Scotia,[35] shows the complete breaking up of this branch of the Doane family on the Cape.

The date of the death of ISRAEL[3] has not been found but it was after June 5, 1740, for on that day he and Daniel Doane witnessed a deed[39] from Richard[4] Mayo (Thomas[3], Nathaniel[2], John[1]) to Thomas Mayo. The only other known man of his name, viz., his son Israel[4], was dead some months before as stated above.[35]

The children of ISRAEL[3] and RUTH (FREEMAN) DOANE, all born at Eastham, were[40, 41]

I. Israel[4], b. November 2, 1701; d. before January 21, 1740.[35]
II. PRENCE[4], see following.
III. Abigail[4], b. December 29, 1706; m. Thomas[4] Snow (Ebenezer[3], Stephen[2], Nicholas[1]).[35]
IV. Elnathan[4], b. April 9, 1709; m. at Eastham, February 25, 1736–7, Martha Paddock.
V. Daniel[4], b. August 9, 1714; d. before January 28, 1740.[35]
VI. Edmund[4], b. April 20, 1718; d. November 20, 1806, at Barrington, N. S.; m. at Eastham, November 10, 1749, Elizabeth Osborn.

PRENCE[4] DOANE (*Israel*[3], *Daniel*[2], *John*[1]) was born March 20, 1703–4, at Eastham, Massachusetts,[40] and died about 1751 at Saybrook, Connecticut. He was married at Eastham on February 3, 1725–6, to ELIZABETH[3] GODFREY [see Godfrey, p. 369]. Sometime between 1734 and 1736 they removed from their old home to Saybrook. Both he and his son Prince[5] were enrolled as members of the first Train Band of that town[45] on March 26, 1745. The only known purchase of land by PRENCE[4] in this section was made on September 13, 1745, from Ebenezer Pratt and consisted of thirty-three and three-fourths acres "on Bushey Hill in Oyster River Quarter," in what is now Westbrook,[42] which became the family home.

Details of his life and activities have not been found but it is evident that the financial depression existent during the first half of the eighteenth century must have affected him as well as his contemporaries. The colonies had for many years been laboring under an increasing monetary burden as a direct result of repeated issues of paper money, but which really had its inception in the amounts expended in the expedition of 1690 against Canada, and was markedly increased by the cost of the Louisbourg campaign in 1745. Each succeeding issue of bills of credit "slid down the same lapse of depreciation" until the colonial and individual finances were in a truly pitiable state. However, about the middle of the century great improvement was brought about by the triple means of the withdrawal into the various colonial treasuries of outstanding issues of their currency; the laying of heavy province taxes to cover in part the sums thus represented; and coincident with these actions, the vote of the English Parliament to reimburse the colonies for the expense they had incurred in 1745 in taking and securing Cape Breton, the key to the Canadas, for the Crown. The sums thus refunded included about £183,649 to Massachusetts and £28,863 to Connecticut. In 1749 the former portion arrived in Boston and was conveyed to the treasury. It consisted of two hundred and fifteen chests of silver and one hundred casks of copper and made twenty-seven cart and truck loads.

"This act was designed to put an end to paper money and establish a silver currency for the future. It provided that after March 31, 1750, all debts should be paid in coined silver. . . . By this act the most important interests of the public were promoted, and the principles of justice were settled on a firm basis. . . ."[46]

After the death of PRENCE[4], in or before 1751, his widow, ELIZABETH, wrote a note, which is still extant, to the Judge of Probate at Guilford declining to act as administrator of his estate and suggesting that her son Prince[5] serve in that capacity.[44] That recommendation was followed, and the appointment was made by November 8, 1751, when he presented an inventory of his father's property taken October 11, preceding, and totaling £1,032–08–06.[44]

On April 15, 1755, his brothers, Elkanah[5] and Israel[5], chose him as their guardian and on that day he made an accounting to the court of his administration showing that he had paid out over £208 and had on hand over £800 for distribution among the heirs. Of this amount the court directed that the widow should receive one third; the eldest son and administrator, Prince[5], a double share; and each of six other children a single share amounting to

£68–12–10¼ apiece.[44] Since PRENCE[4] and his wife had recorded eight children, this proves that before the last named date one of them had died and the quoted land transfers etc. show that this was doubtless either Ruth[5] or her sister Mary[5]. The division of the estate left the home property to the widow ELIZABETH who later married (——) Thomas and died before July 25, 1791, leaving the homestead of PRENCE[4] to their children.[42] On that date Israel[5] sold to his brother Prince[5], both of Saybrook, all his title to lands that his mother, Mrs. ELIZABETH Thomas, late widow of his father, PRENCE[4] DOANE, both deceased, had as her dower from the estate of his father. "Said lands lie in the 2nd society of Saybrook in the homestead where my father dwelt."[42] Elkanah[5] and Phebe[5] Doane [unmarried] sold their brother Prince[5], all of Saybrook, their share in the same property[42] on October 10, 1792, so that the latter then owned four shares and it appears as though the other children than these with James[5] of West Springfield, Massachusetts, and our ABIGAIL[5], were probably dead.

The oldest and two youngest sons of PRENCE[4] settled in what is now Essex.[43] Neither the marriage nor death of Ruth[5] or Mary[5] has yet been found and only by accumulated circumstantial evidence has identification been established relative to ABIGAIL[5] who married HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY at East Haddam on September 15, 1756.

In this connection it will be noted that (a), the home of ABIGAIL[5] after her father's death would naturally have been with her mother at Westbrook or with a brother at Essex, either town being within ten or fifteen miles of East Haddam where the Ackley family lived. (b), An extensive study and careful charting of the early generations of the Doane family shows that at this period none other of that name than PRENCE[4] with his wife and children had removed to the vicinity of Saybrook and that but three Doane girls named "Abigail" are to be found in that generation, two of whom married and remained on the Cape,[48] leaving only ABIGAIL[5], daughter of PRENCE[4], either near Saybrook or not otherwise accounted for by marriage. (c), By or before the time of the death of PRENCE[4] at least three of his cousins had removed from Barnstable County, Massachusetts, to the vicinity of Middletown, Chatham and Easthampton, Connecticut, and, of their children, at least eleven had intermarried with or settled among the families of that locality[52] thus establishing a center of relationship and an occasion for a probable interchange of visits between these two branches of the Doane family which, if followed, would necessarily broaden the acquaintance of ABIGAIL[5] and her near kin, northward up the Connecticut River toward and beyond East Haddam which was the home of

HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY. (d), After the removal, about 1762, of HEZEKIAH[4] and ABIGAIL[5] (DOANE) ACKLEY to Hartland, Connecticut, their children were all baptized,[49, 50] and five out of the eleven bore names compellingly significant of the branch of the Doane family here discussed, viz., "Lydia," "ABIGAIL," "Israel Done," "Ruth," and "Mary." The two latter names will be noted as those of the sisters of ABIGAIL[5], at least one of whom died early, and "Israel Done" would have been jointly in memory of the brother, uncle and grandfather of ABIGAIL[5] than whom none other of that name has been found in any way recorded up to that date. Finally, (e), a copy of the Hartland Church record filed in Hartford, shows that ABIGAIL ACKLEY, wife of HEZEKIAH[4], who was baptized and received into church membership on May 6, 1769, was "born 1733" tallying in round numbers with the birth date of ABIGAIL[5], daughter of PRENCE[4], thus by cumulative evidence identifying them as one and the same, and justifying the belief that it was either Ruth[5] or Mary[5] who had died before the division of their father's estate[44] in 1755.

The children of PRENCE[4] and ELIZABETH (GODFREY) DOANE, the first five of whom were born at Eastham, were[41, 51]

I. Prince[5], b. November 12, 1726; d. 1816, Saybrook; m. 1st, (——) Wise; m. 2nd, Deborah Pratt.
II. Ruth[5], b. September 20, 1728.
III. Phebe[5], b. December 10, 1730; living in Saybrook, unm., October 10, 1792.
IV. ABIGAIL[5], b. at Eastham, Mass., June 17, 1732;[43, 51] d. after 1777; m. at East Had dam, Conn.,[47] September 15, 1756, HEZEKIAH[4] ACKLEY [see Ackley, p. 45].
V. Mary[5], b. May 3, 1734.
VI. James[5], b. abt. 1736 at Saybrook; d. May 18, 1818, West Springfield, Mass.; m. there, May 1, 1766, Martha Huxley.
VII. Elkanah[5], b. abt. 1737–8 at Saybrook; d. April 15, 1802, at that place; m. there, January 3, 1759, Hannah Farman or Farnum.[47]
VIII. Israel[5], b. January 21, 1739, at Saybrook; d. August 30, 1829; m. there, April 3, 1763, Priscilla Shipman.[47]

REFERENCES

1. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 1–21.
2. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 5, 23.
3. Historical Memoirs of New Plymouth, F. Baylies & S. G. Drake, 1866, I, pt. 1, pp. 209, 214, 276.
4. The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 343, 376, 401.
5. Plymouth Colony Records, XII, pp. 79–80, 87.
6. Ibid., I, pp. 36, 38, 43–4; XI, 6.

6a. Library of Cape Cod History & Genealogy, 1914, No. 33, pp. 9–12; Ibid., 1914, No. 51, pp. 1–4; History of Barnstable County, Mass., S. L. Deyo, 1896, pp. 769–70.

7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 58, 88, 121; II, 7, 11, 60, 75; VII, 5, 7–9, 11, 16–7, 23, 25, 28–9, 32, 38, 40, 64.
8. Ibid., I, 126; II, 31, 40, 45, 57, 59, 63, 68, 72.
9. Colonial Lists, E. W. Pierce, 1881, pp. 17–8, 21–2, 48, 59, 76.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 7, 9, 14, 26, 35, 40–2, 48.

11. Ibid., I, 54, 62, 127, 156; II, 79–80.
12. Ibid., II, 24, 82.
13. Ibid., I, 40, 47, 65–7, 69, 111–2, 154.
14. Ibid., I, 25, 47, 56, 63; XII, 79, 133–4.
15. Ibid., I, 18; II, 76; Genealogical Register, Rev. A. Morse, IV, 1864, p. 9.
16. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 18; III, 10; Mayflower Descendant, I, 82–3; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 367.
17. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 12–3, 65; VII, 11.
18. Mayflower Descendant, III, 18.
19. Historical Memoir of New Plymouth Colony, F. Baylies, 1866, Vol. 1, part 2, p. 219.
20. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 206–7; II, 350, 356–7, 359, 361.
21. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, 11, 16–8, 22, 34–5, 102.
21a. Ibid., p. 180; Records of Massachusetts Bay, II, 42, 48.
22. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 144, 154, 168; III, 23–4, 32, 44, 162.
23. Ibid., III, 123, 142; IV, 27, 43.
23a. Eastham, Mass., Town Records, Book I, by kindness of Mr. E. L. Smith.
24. Mayflower Descendant, XIII, 232.
25. Ibid., III, 177–8.
26. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 18–31.
27. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 88; IV, 169; VIII, 57.
28. Cole Genealogy, T. Cole, 1887, p. 68.
29. Mayflower Descendant, VIII, 3.
30. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 35, 49; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 367, 374.
30a. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 440.
31. Plymouth Colony Records, IV, 23, 67, 100, 125, 176; V, 93, 115, 231.
32. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 105–7; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 414.
33. Colonial Lists, E. W. Pierce, 1881, pp. 11, 18, 152.
34. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 51, 56.
35. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 27–30, 49–55.
36. Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, p. 18; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 596; Connecticut Magazine, 1905, IX, 929.
37. Mayflower Descendant, III, 178; XV, 55; XIX, 110.
37a. Library of Cape Cod History & Genealogy, 1914, No. 55, p. 10.
38. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 370, 374.
39. Mayflower Descendant, V, 151; VIII, 68; XIV, 179; XV, 55, 151, 155–6, 203; XX, 45.
40. Ibid., VIII, 244; XVII, 127, 146.
41. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 74–7, 112–4.
42. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, VI, 312; XI, 62–3.
43. Investigation of Saybrook and Guilford Records by F. F. Starr, Middletown, Conn.
44. Guilford, Conn., Probate Records, V, 9, 70; VI, 251.
45. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 462.
46. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 62–3.
47. Early Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1904, VI, 120; VII, 57.
48. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 68, 74, 90.
49. New England Register, LX, 393–4, 396.
50. Consultation of East Hartland Church Records, by D. N. Gaines, of that place and for 25 years its town clerk.
51. Mayflower Descendant, XVI, 75.
52. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 51–2, 71–2, 107–10.
53. Louisbourg from its Foundation to its Fall, J. S. McLennan, 1918, pp. 166–7; Historical Account of Massachusetts Currency, J. B. Felt, 1839, pp. 24, 119; Colonial Records of Connecticut, IX, 452–4.
54. History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Winsor, 1849, p. 28.
55. Connecticut Magazine, IX, pp. 929–30.
56. Twining Family, T. J. Twining, 1905, pp. 14–8.
57. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 92; Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1827, pp. 56, 523.

DODGE (*Richard*)

RICHARD[1] DODGE, elder brother of WILLIAM[1] [vide infra], through both of whom we descend, was the son of JOHN and MARGERY (——) DODGE of Middlechinnock, co. Somerset, England, and received by his father's will, dated April 2, 1635, and proved October 15 following, one sheep which he was permitted to choose from the flock, while his son John[2] received 40 shillings.[1] Since RICHARD[1] appears to have been born as early as 1602 and would have been, therefore, the elder son,[2] it seems evident that he must have previously received his patrimony, probably at the time of his marriage about 1626–7. His early married life was spent at Coker, a neighboring parish to Chinnock where his parents lived, both being in the southeasterly part of county Somerset.[1] His brother Michael, who remained in England, also lived there, though that man's son William came to New England and was called "Coker William" to identify him. [See note, p. 319.]

RICHARD[1] must have been of a more retiring disposition than his brother WILLIAM[1] for, while the latter man adventured to the new world in 1629 at about the age of twenty-one, evidence of the presence of RICHARD[1] on this side of the water is first seen in 1638 when he must have been about thirty-six years old, and after his marriage and the birth of four children.* Moreover, though he was a fine type of citizen, a loyal church member and one of the most liberal contributors to that body, as well as far more successful financially than most men of his time [since his estate totaled £1,764 at his death], yet he acquired but little prominence in public matters, either civic or religious.

When he first arrived with his family he lived for a time on land belonging to his brother WILLIAM[1] and then in October, 1638, was "receaued Inhabitant and desireth accomadacion" in Salem and was shortly afterwards given a ten-acre lot[3] there. Within a month he and his brother were granted eighty acres lying east of the farms[3] of ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] WOODBURY and JOHN[1] BALCH and he established a residence on what is now known as "Dodge Row" in

*Tradition says that the descendants of RICHARD[1] had sandy hair and complexion and were "speckled."[10]

DODGE (Richard and William)

John Dodge –1635 m Margery . . . [both of England]

* † [926] [950] Richard Dodge c.1602–1670–1 m Edith . . . c.1603–1678

* † [932] William Dodge c.1604–9–1685–92 m Elizabeth . . .

* † [462] Peter Woodbury 1640–1704 m 2nd 1667 Sarah Dodge c.1644–1726

* † [474] Zachary Herrick 1636–1695–6 m 1653 Mary Dodge c.1632–3–1710

* † [466] William Dodge 1640–1720 m 1st c.1663 Mary Conant [widow Balch] c.1632–bef.1685

† [230] Jonathan Raymond 1666–1745 m 1689 Sarah Woodbury 1668–1747

* † [236] John Batchelder 1650–1684 m 1673 Mary Herrick 1654–1684

† [232] Joseph Herrick 1666–1726 m 1st c.1684 Mary Dodge 1666–1719

† [114] Benjamin Ober 1689–1723 m 1713 Rachel Raymond 1690–aft.1724

* † [118] Josiah Batchelder 1679–80–1749 m 1700 Mary Raymond 1682–1763

† [116] Henry Herrick 1688–1755 m 1st 1709 Joanna Woodbury 1689–1738

‡ † [56] William Bartlett 1710–c.1759 m 1740 Anna Ober [widow Hale] 1715–1791

Anne Batchelder 1717–1815 m 1738 † [58] Henry Herrick 1716–1780

† § [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794 m 1761 Joanna Herrick 1745–1810

† § ‖ ♣ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850 m 1792 Betsey Corey 1772–1857

¶ ♣ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860 m 2nd 1814 Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870

♦ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894 m 1841 Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895

¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899 m 1864 Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Marblehead, Mass.
§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
# Saybrook, Conn.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

DODGE (*Richard*)

RICHARD[1] DODGE, elder brother of WILLIAM[1] [vide infra], through both of whom we descend, was the son of JOHN and MARGERY (——) DODGE of Middlechinnock, co. Somerset, England, and received by his father's will, dated April 2, 1635, and proved October 15 following, one sheep which he was permitted to choose from the flock, while his son John[2] received 40 shillings.[1] Since RICHARD[1] appears to have been born as early as 1602 and would have been, therefore, the elder son,[2] it seems evident that he must have previously received his patrimony, probably at the time of his marriage about 1626–7. His early married life was spent at Coker, a neighboring parish to Chinnock where his parents lived, both being in the southeasterly part of county Somerset.[1] His brother Michael, who remained in England, also lived there, though that man's son William came to New England and was called "Coker William" to identify him. [See note, p. 319.]

RICHARD[1] must have been of a more retiring disposition than his brother WILLIAM[1] for, while the latter man adventured to the new world in 1629 at about the age of twenty-one, evidence of the presence of RICHARD[1] on this side of the water is first seen in 1638 when he must have been about thirty-six years old, and after his marriage and the birth of four children.* Moreover, though he was a fine type of citizen, a loyal church member and one of the most liberal contributors to that body, as well as far more successful financially than most men of his time [since his estate totaled £1,764 at his death], yet he acquired but little prominence in public matters, either civic or religious.

When he first arrived with his family he lived for a time on land belonging to his brother WILLIAM[1] and then in October, 1638, was "receaued Inhabitant and desireth accomadacion" in Salem and was shortly afterwards given a ten-acre lot[3] there. Within a month he and his brother were granted eighty acres lying east of the farms[3] of ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] WOODBURY and JOHN[1] BALCH and he established a residence on what is now known as "Dodge Row" in

*Tradition says that the descendants of RICHARD[1] had sandy hair and complexion and were "speckled."[10]

North Beverly, not far east of Wenham Lake. He and his wife, EDITH (——), were members of the Salem Church where he was received on May 5, 1644, and they helped to establish Beverly Church in 1667.[6, 11] In December, 1641, he received an added forty acres of land, in June, 1646, he took the oath of freeman[4] and he later bought forty acres of Roger Haskell [brother of WILLIAM[1] HASKELL, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I], which had belonged to that man's father-in-law[4] John Hardy.

RICHARD[1] "had a high appreciation of the value of education for in 1653 in the list of twenty-one subscribers to Harvard College, his name ranks first, while the next largest sum was only one-fourth as much as his."[2, 6] He dedicated a piece of his land on "Dodge Row" in North Beverly to cemetery purposes and it is still so used.[2, 9] His nearest neighbors[2] included his two sons-in-law, ZACHARY[2] HERRICK and PETER[2] WOODBURY, and the latter man's father, JOHN[1] WOODBURY.

RICHARD[1] retained ownership until his death in certain lands in England, probably at East Coker* where he had lived and where his brother Michael also lived, which lands were rented to that man for £4 per annum. RICHARD[1], in his will dated November 14, 1670, and proved June 29, 1671, bequeathed these lands to his wife and eldest son.[1, 4] This document provided bountifully for his wife EDITH; gave to his daughter MARY (DODGE) HERRICK only an ewe since she had already received her portion; gave to that woman's five daughters [including the eldest, MARY[3] HERRICK, who married JOHN[2] BATCHELDER] fifty shillings apiece to be paid when they married or became twenty-one years old; it gave to his daughter SARAH (DODGE) WOODBURY only £5 since she also had had her portion, but gave £5 at marriage or at the age of twenty-one, to her eldest daughter SARAH[3] WOODBURY [who later became the wife of JONATHAN[2] RAYMOND]. He appointed his brother WILLIAM[1] DODGE as an overseer; the will was witnessed by that man's son WILLIAM[2] DODGE and by ISAAC[1] HULL, and JOHN[1] RAYMOND assisted in taking the inventory of his estate.[4, 5] He died on June 15, 1671, at Beverly.[8] His widow EDITH, whose family name and date of marriage are not known, survived him seven years, dying on June 27, 1678, in Beverly at the age of seventy-five,[2, 8] from which fact it is deduced[2] that he himself was born probably about 1602. She died intestate, though leaving an unsigned will, which was accepted as the basis for distribution of her property. Her son John[2] Dodge and son-in-law ZACHARY[2] HERRICK were appointed administrators of her estate which was valued at about £100. On March 16,

* RICHARD[1] was "duly admitted tenant, by entry-hold, of lands in Helgar Manor, East Coker" in 1633.[2]

1678, her five sons, with "PEATER WOODBERY" and "ZACHRY HERRICK" for her two daughters, their wives, signed a document stating that they were "all well satticefied" to abide by her wishes as to the apportionment of her estate, which included the bequest to her daughters MARY (DODGE) HERRICK and SARAH (DODGE) WOODBURY "for there children, equally to be divided between them for their children's vse all my wearing apparrell with my bed, bedstead and furniture therevnto belonging, my Cubbord, Chest, warming pan and all other goods belonging to mee in the roome where I now (live) Also . . . my two Cowes and sheepe . . ."[2, 5]

The children of RICHARD[1] and EDITH (——) DODGE, the first four born in East Coker, England, and the others in Beverly, Massachusetts[2, 6, 8] through two of whom we descend, were

I. Richard[2], bap. 1628; d. young.
II. Margery[2], bap. September 7, 1630; bur. February 2, 1630–1.
III. John[2], bap. December 29, 1631; d. October 11, 1711, aged abt. 80, at Beverly; m. perhaps in 1658, Sarah (——).
IV. MARY[2], b. abt. 1632–3; bap. April 19, 1635, in England; d. August 18, 1710, aged abt. 78, in Beverly; m. there in 1653, ZACHARY[2] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 424].
V. SARAH[2], b. 1644;[6] bap. 1644; d. September 11, 1726, at Beverly; m. there in July, 1667, PETER[2] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 826].
VI. Richard[2], b. 1643; d. April 13, 1705, aged 63, at Wenham;[7, 8] m. there, February 23, 1667, Mary Eaton.
VII. Samuel[2], b. 1645; d. December 4, 1705, in 61st year; m. Mary Parker [perhaps dau. of Deacon Thomas of Reading].[7]
VIII. Edward[2], b. (—); d. February 12, 1726–7, at Beverly; m. there, April 30, 1673, Mary[2] Haskell (WILLIAM[1]). [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]
IX. Joseph[2], b. 1651; d. August 10, 1716, aged abt. 65, at Beverly; m. at Reading,[7] February 21, 1671, Sarah Eaton.

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, XLIV, 297–8.
2. Dodge Genealogy, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 6, 13–33, 419–22.
3. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 73–7, 112.
4. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 96; IV, 2, 404–6, 452.
5. Probates of Essex County, Mass., II, 230–3; III, 198–9.
6. New England Register, XLVI, 383–91.
7. Vital Records of Wenham, Mass., p. 111; Vital Records of Reading, Mass., p. 173.
8. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 90, 94, 98, 417, 419–20, 422, 470, 613.
9. Essex Antiquarian, III, 105–8.
10. New England Register, XV, 255.
11. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 3, 7.

SEE CHART FACING PAGE 315

DODGE (*William*)

WILLIAM[1] DODGE and his older brother RICHARD[1] [vide supra], through both of whom we descend, were sons of JOHN and MARGERY DODGE of Middlechinnock, co. Somerset, England.[1] The will of the father dated April 2, 1635, and proved October 15, following, after providing for his wife, gave to this son WILLIAM[1] "forty pounds more over and above that portion which I have already given him."[1] WILLIAM[1] had previously come to New England in the "Lyons Whelpe," "a neat and nimble ship of 120 tons," which sailed from Gravesend, April 25, 1629, from the Isle of Wight, May 11 following and landed at Salem, Massachusetts, his prospective residence, on June 29,[1,3] having made a more rapid voyage than many did.

Tradition says that WILLIAM[1] was tall and dark[2], and about twenty-one years of age when he first came over to New England to see how he liked the prospect, that he returned to England and his father's home, announcing that he had decided to settle in the new country and craving a present. His father said, "Get married and I will give it." The story adds that in his endeavor to fulfill this requirement he met with two rebuffs, but finally found a girl courageous enough to face the dangers and hardships of pioneer life and that he received from his father the gift of a pair of bulls.[3] It is most unfortunate that the identity of his wife is not known. She has sometimes been erroneously named as "Elizabeth Haskell" who in truth was the wife of his nephew and namesake* William Dodge, son of Michael Dodge who

*There were five related and contemporaneous men by the name of "William Dodge" in Beverly, namely:

(1) WILLIAM[1] [b. abt. 1608; d. 1685–92] who was uniformly called "Farmer WILLIAM."

(2) His son WILLIAM[2] [b. 1640; d. 1720] called "Captain" and "Malster" and who married MARY (CONANT) Balch.

(3) This latter man's son William[3] [b. 1663–4; d. 1747] called "Deacon" and "Malster" and who married Mary Porter.

(4) William[3], son of John[2] and grandson of "Farmer WILLIAM[1]" [b. 1665; d. 1706] who was often called "quartus" and who married Hannah[3] Woodbury (John[2], JOHN[1]).

(5) The nephew of "Farmer WILLIAM" who was also son of Michael who remained in England [b. 1643–4; d. aft. 1692], who was called variously "tertius" [and at times, it is said, "secundus," but that would likely have been after the death of "Farmer WILLIAM[1]"] because of his comparative age; and also called "Coker William" from the name of the parish in England from which he had come. It was he who married Elizabeth[2] Haskell (Roger[1]), niece[1, 2, 3, 12] of our WILLIAM[1] HASKELL [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

remained in England. However, various authorities call his wife ELIZABETH and say that she was living[16, 23] in 1668.

Certain depositions[5] on his own part in later years place the birth of WILLIAM[1] not earlier than 1604–5 and probably about 1608–9. In a letter written at London by the Reverend John White to Governor Endicott of Massachusetts recommendation was made to the colony that they "shew all lawfull fauo[r] and respect vnto the planters that come over in the Lyons Whelpe out of the counties of Dorset and Somsett: that yo[u] would appoint vuto WILLIAM DODG, a skillfull and painfull husbandman the charge of a teame of horses . . ."[4] thus suggesting that this boat load of passengers promised a higher grade of usefulness than usual and stressing the special capacity of WILLIAM[1] for husbandry, as was subsequently recognized by the identifying name of "Farmer WILLIAM" by which he was known throughout his life.

Circumstances suggest that he possessed more initiative than his elder brother RICHARD[1] since he came to New England about nine years earlier and throughout his life took a much more prominent part in public affairs, though he appears not to have acquired as much property as the other.

He[6] assisted in handling the estate of George Taylor of Lynn in 1649, assisted ROGER[1] CONANT to take the inventory of THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS in 1654, took the inventory of widow Elizabeth Hardy that year, was called "loving friend" and made overseer by the will of John Friend in 1655, was appointed to assist in the administration of the estate of Samuel Porter in 1659, was overseer of the will of his brother RICHARD[1] in 1671 and, with JOHN[1] RAYMOND, took the inventory of the estate of Lot[2] Conant (ROGER[1]) in 1674.

WILLIAM[1] had a bound boy or apprentice in 1636, who persisted in running away and was finally ordered whipped by the court.

WILLIAM[1] DODGE served on grand juries in 1645, 1658, 1659, 1666, 1675 and 1676; on trial juries in 1647, 1653, 1656, 1657 and 1661–3; on a coroner's jury in 1660 and was a commissioner that year.[6] He became a freeman in 1637, he and his brother RICHARD[1] each received grants of the undivided half of an eighty-acre tract at the east end of the Old Planters' farms[2] in 1638 and he paid £40 for the two hundred acres which was earlier the farm of Peter Palfrey* in 1644.

*One of the five Old Planters. By this transfer and by the acquirement of William Trask's farm by THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS the entire 1000-acre tract given to these first five comers passed into the possession of our ancestors. [See Raymond, p. 698.]

WILLIAM[1] was evidently selectman in June, 1649, for then he, with ROGER[1] CONANT and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH instituted suit for trespass against three men in behalf of the town; at that time he also sued THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS for refusing to make good a part of a fence and, in December of that year, these four last-named men, with the widow of JOHN[1] WOODBURY, sued William Hubbard for trespassing on and damaging their meadow.[7] In November, 1653, a young man of the neighborhood was "fined for pilfering apples and a knife and for lying, and [was] to pay Mr. CONANT for wrong by apples and jerkin 2 li 17s and to WILLIAM DODG 3s 9d."[7] In June, 1657, WILLIAM[1], as attorney for another, was sued by Roger Haskell and, in June, 1658, he and others signed a report beginning "We hose names are under written beinge apointed by the too Tounes to lay out a cuntrie way be twine the too Townes Salem & Topsfield. . . ."

WILLIAM[1] had John Harris, a youth of 18, bound out to him in 1661. A lawsuit in 1673 with its various depositions brought out the fact that WILLIAM[1] DODGE and John Proctor, Sr., had "made up the match between John Dodg and Sarah Proctor, son and daughter of DODG and Proctor, said WILLIAM DODG promised to give a parcel of land with his son John and said Proctor engaged to give 40 li with his daughter Sarah. DODG further said 'Notwithstanding what is Giuen: what shall thess young beginers do for housshould stuff,' and deponent [John West] proposed that DODG should give his son John 10 li and Proctor should give his daughter 5 li, to be paid at the merchants to which proposition they both agreed."[8] In 1675 WILLIAM[1] DODGE, with the Raymond brothers (JOHN[1] and WILLIAM[1]), testified[7] in a lawsuit between WILLIAM[2] DODGE and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH.

During 1675 "the following freeman who had also taken the oath of fidelity" voted for Isaac Woodbury* for constable . . . JOHN RAYMENT, Sr., ROGER CONANT, . . . BENJAMIN BALCH, Sr., WILL. DODGE, Sr., ZACH. HERRICK . . ." in which case an interesting instance of extreme reluctance to accept office is seen for Isaac Woodbury protested to the court at length, even presenting arguments up to "5[ly]" against this election, insisting that his business did not admit of office holding, that his family would suffer if he were forced to such service, that he was ineligible, and that his choice for this position was unfairly planned and accomplished and a number of

*Isaac Woodbury was either son of Humphrey[2] (JOHN[1]) or son of NICHOLAS[2] (WILLIAM[1]). The two cousins of this name were contemporaneous, lived near each other and were frequently confused. The first of these (1643–1725) m., in 1671, Mary Wilkes (Thomas) and the second one m., in 1668, Elizabeth Herrick (HENRY[2], HENRY[1]).[15, 20]

men deposed to prove this last point of illegality.[8] His deposition states that

> "Y^e providence of God hath soe ordered It that my Caling Is at sea wch as I have done heretofore soe I must still atend It In a constant way the greatest part of the year Constantly for the providing for my famely as the word of god Requires . . . 4^ly the like precedent Canot be produced either In Salem or with us for any whose Imploiment Lies wholy at sea . . . to be chosen to serve In ye ofice of a Constable. . . . It is not that I would decline any service to god and the country that I am Capeable of for I have now a servant prest Into the Country service & I doe Redily and Cherfuly yeald to It & besides If gods provedence order It at any time that there be any extraordinary service by sea we that are seamen shall be exposed to It more than the Landmen, though we ar equaly exposed In thes present expeditions."

He further deposed

> "that he would be worse than an infidel in not providing for his family, if he was forced to take the office. . . ."

This forms an interesting comparison with the trend of modern times.

WILLIAM[1] was appointed to oversee repairs on two bridges in both 1646 and 1647, to help make the county rate and gather the tax for the minister in 1656, to look after the pastor's maintenance in 1665, to be paid that year for his ground which was "had for the ministry"; he evidently failed of that settlement for, in 1671, he "accepted from the town the land bought of him for the ministry and not paid for." He was a selectman in 1668, 1674, 1676 and 1679, was to oversee the building of four forts in 1675, was to provide 7⅓ cords of wood for the minister in 1676, was to inspect the neighbors "as to tippling" in 1678, was to assist in seating the people in the new meeting house and rendered service in many other ways.[3]

WILLIAM[1] DODGE petitioned the court in October, 1679, relative to a disputed boundary between Beverly, Wenham and Salem; with RICHARD[1] OBER he was made a tithing man in that year and was a Deputy to represent Beverly in 1680 and in 1682.[2,8] On July 20, 1677, many "inhabitants of Gloucester, alias Cape Ann, and places adjacent," including WILLIAM[1] DODGE, JOHN[2] PERKINS,* SIMON[1] STACY,* DANIEL[2] WARNER* and WILLIAM[1] HASKELL* signed a petition of protest to the King stating that over fifty

* The Perkins, Stacy, Warner and Haskell families as well as the Balch [supra] will be discussed in DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.

years before they or their forbears had received certain lands by purchase from the Indians and by grant from the crown, which in 1657 were included in the territory claimed by Robert Mason and by the date of protest these early acquired rights were even questioned by the throne itself.[9, 10]

WILLIAM[1] DODGE in May, 1685, disposed of all of his real estate by deed, including the transfer of his homestead lying east of present Cabot Street and south of Herrick Street,[2] to WILLIAM[2]; of his farm to John[2] and he made a gift of sixteen acres "taken from my home farm next to the south end of Brimble Hill" to his nephew "Coker William," son of Michael. At the same time he imposed upon his son WILLIAM[2] the duty of paying "to my brother if he come to New England and dwell in this town [Beverly] £5 per annum as long as he shall dwell here." This doubtless refers to his brother Michael, who thus far, and probably permanently, remained in England. This gift to "Coker William" was for some reason not completed or else a second similar gift was offered for, in 1692, this beneficiary still claimed ten acres that his uncle had promised him and that man's eldest son, John[2] Dodge, who had inherited the farm, honored his father's word by giving the claimant five acres in settlement.[1, 2, 3]

WILLIAM[1] died between 1685 and 1692, as disclosed by deeds,[2] and probably close to the former date for about that time references to his son WILLIAM[2] omit the word "junior." His wife, undoubtedly, died earlier than he.

The children of "Farmer" WILLIAM[1] and ELIZABETH (——) DODGE, all born at or near Beverly, were[1, 2, 3, 23]

I. John[2], bap. December 25, 1636; d. January 14, 1723; m. 1st, April 10, 1659, Sarah Proctor; m. 2nd, Elizabeth (——) Woodbury, widow of John[2] (JOHN[1]).[16, 23]
II. WILLIAM[2], see following.
III. Hannah[2], bap. July 24, 1642; d. January 2, 1688;[16] m. 1st, Samuel Porter, who d. 1660; m. 2nd, as his first wife, on December 2, 1661, Thomas[3] Woodbury[16] (Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]).
IV. perhaps Josiah[2], who was killed in Narragansett War, in 1675.

WILLIAM[2] DODGE (*William*[1]) was born[3] or baptized[23] September 19, 1640, undoubtedly at Beverly, died there on March 24, 1719–20, aged[12] about eighty. He married first, probably at that place, about 1663, the widow MARY (CONANT) Balch* [see Conant, p. 228]; married secondly, at Charlestown,[12] on May 26, 1685, the widow Joanna (Hale) Larkin; and married thirdly, at

* John[2] Balch (JOHN[1]), this lady's first husband, is said to have been drowned on January 16, 1662; his inventory was taken March 19, 1662, and administration of his estate granted to his widow on March 25 of that year. She was called wife of WILLIAM[2] DODGE on September 26, 1665, and had married him probably during 1663, since their first child's birth is given as March 20, 1664.[3, 13, 14]

Marblehead[12] [int. April 1], October 27, 1698, widow Mary (——) Creatty.[2, 3, 23] He spent his life on the family homestead at Beverly, was a malster* and husbandman and was noted for his intrepid courage. An instance of this was seen during the trouble with the Narragansett Indians in 1675 when

> "Capt. Prentice his Troop being abroad met a Party of the enemy, of whom they took two Prisoners, and killed nine, in which Exploit something happened very remarkable; for one W. DODGE of Salem, riding in Company with another Friend, they happened to meet with two Indians. The said DODGE, being better horsed than his Friend, made after the foremost, leaving his Friend to deal with the hindmost; but his [the friend's] Pistol missed firing; whereupon the Indian taking him by the Leg turn'd him off his Horse, and getting upon him was about killing him with his Knife, which W. DODGE by chance espied, and came time enough to rescue his Friend, and dispatch the Indian lying upon him, and yet overtook the first Indian he was Pursuing, time enough to do his Business also: by that Means he did three good Offices at once, saved the life of one Friend, and slew two of his enemies."[17] [See Cooke, p. 249.]

In this expedition a Josiah Dodge, who may have been brother to WILLIAM[2], was killed, as was also Peter[3] Woodbury (Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]) and Joseph[3] Balch (BENJAMIN[2]).[14, 23] The service which WILLIAM[2] rendered in King Philip's War covered a considerable period, for evidence is seen of various sums due or paid to him, and his heirs received a compensatory grant of land in what is now Amherst, New Hampshire.[26]

WILLIAM[2] DODGE, with ISAAC[1] HULL, witnessed the will of his uncle RICHARD[1] DODGE in 1670; he was deputy marshal in 1672; was made overseer by the will of his father-in-law ROGER[1] CONANT in 1677; was surveyor of highways in 1671, 1673 and 1674; with ZACHARY[2] HERRICK signed bond for the appearance at next term of court of his cousin "Coker William" Dodge, in 1672; was constable in 1679, 1683 and 1685; selectman, 1684 and 1689; on trial juries in 1682, 1684 and 1703; was commissioner in 1692; town treasurer, 1694–7 and 1701–3; on grand juries, 1703, 1705 and 1707;[3, 18] became a freeman in 1683[3a] and was a deputy in 1689 and in 1690.[2, 25]

WILLIAM[2] was intimately connected with an interesting series of occurrences which began in 1654 when Captain Lothrop and a group of Salem

* Malster was a contraction for malt master, referring doubtless to the operation of a mill for grinding malt or of the processes of making that product. Since WILLIAM[2] and his son William[3] both had that term applied to them it seems to suggest the existence of a mill on the homestead which was owned by both of these men in sequence.

and Beverly men were under the command of Major Sedgwick at the taking of St. Johns and Port Royal. The captain asked his superior to give him a bell[24] from the spoils to be taken to Beverly Church. This request was granted and the bell from the New Friary at Port Royal was taken down and loaded on the boat of Captain Richard More of Beverly for transport to that town. On its arrival Captain More refused to give it up without the presentation of a bill of lading which, under the circumstances, could not be produced, and without the payment of the freight which was neglected, probably because the first requirement could not be fulfilled. Captain More placed the bell in his yard and there it stood for a great many years—maybe even twenty—until WILLIAM[2] DODGE [perhaps he who was with the expedition at Port Royal when the bell was acquired] and Thomas Tuck, Sr., with one or more others,* decided to put it to the use for which it was intended [see Raymond, p. 704]; to that end they boldly walked into the captain's yard, though in his absence, appropriated it and hung it in the Beverly Church. Following that, Captain More brought suit against WILLIAM[2] DODGE and Thomas Tuck in November, 1679, and got an attachment for a table and chest belonging to the former and the house and land of the latter;[3, 19, 24, 25] but at least their independence of action had accomplished the desired end and Beverly church members could finally assemble at the call of the musical tones of the old bell instead of to the beat of a drum.

In 1672 there was an active plan afoot to build a new meeting house at Salem and an arrangement[8] was made "with WILLIAM DODGE for drawing of s^d timber" but certain men of that town contended that they should be allowed to do that work as a part of their contribution instead of paying an outsider, and the man in charge of construction admitted that their argument "moved him to break of as hee said from DODGE & Comp^y and to agree with them, although he was to give DODGE & Comp^y twenty shillings to Release him. . . ."[21]

A long drawn out family controversy occurred covering many years and implicating directly WILLIAM[2] DODGE [through his wife] and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH, though practically our entire relationship in that community, including our Conant, Woodbury, Eliott, Herrick and Raymond families, as well as many others, were drawn into it as witnesses or in an official capacity. The evidence shows that a five-acre tract of marsh land which was granted to JOHN[1] BALCH had been divided by him between his sons Freeborn[2] and John[2].

*Tradition says HENRY[2] HERRICK was one of these.

The former son died about 1657 and in 1658 his brother BENJAMIN[2] bought his estate from the administrator [who may have held a claim against it]. John[2] Balch, who had married MARY[2] CONANT, was drowned in 1662, leaving her a widow with an infant daughter and they were to share equally his estate. Presently the daughter died, and an agreement seems to have been entered into whereby BENJAMIN[2] BALCH, as his brother John's next of kin, was to receive at once that man's unimproved lands and, after seven years' possession by the widow, was to get also the improved property. Since BENJAMIN[2] BALCH had, as eldest son, received one-half of his father's lands and later had acquired all those of his brother Freeborn[2], it seems a bit grasping for him to expect all those belonging to John[2] as well. In the meantime, widow MARY (CONANT) Balch had married WILLIAM[2] DODGE, who, backed by her aged father, ROGER[1] CONANT, disputed the right of BENJAMIN[2] BALCH to the entire property of her first husband. In fulfillment of one of the various agreements between BENJAMIN[2] BALCH and WILLIAM[2] DODGE, the latter man voluntarily assumed at least one debt left by his wife's first husband. As time went on the controversy smouldered but finally flamed up with violence in May, 1680, and subsequently several trials, re-trials and appeals were before the court, bringing forth many depositions and filed copies of documents, resulting, in the first instance, in a judgment for BENJAMIN[2] BALCH, later in a reversal which gave the verdict in favor of WILLIAM[2] DODGE, then an appeal by BALCH; but a second and even a third decision for WILLIAM[2] DODGE followed the display of a deed for the land from BENJAMIN[2] himself,[11, 13] so that in the long run WILLIAM[2] DODGE and his wife won.

The activities of WILLIAM[2] DODGE included, among many other things, service toward the repair of the meeting house in 1670; provision of firewood for the minister at six shillings a cord in 1674; the building of a new meeting house in 1681–2 and work towards its completion in 1685; going in company "with constables to look into families that no idle person be found in town" in 1676; the choice of a teacher in 1702, 1703 and 1706; and frequent loans of money to the town to meet special needs such as building of forts in 1690, the purchase of flints for the town stock in 1696 and also of "small casks to divide the powder and shot"; and for "setting forth the soldiers" [outfitting?] in that year.[3]

In May, 1683, the court granted a petition that Beverly and Wenham men might form a separate squadron of troopers among themselves on condition

that they should not draw on nor interfere with the foot company there, and it appointed WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND as lieutenant or commanding officer, John Dodge, Sr., cornet and "WM. DODGE, the son of Farmer DODGE, Sen. to be quarter m[r] to the said troope. . . ."[22] WILLIAM[2] DODGE was quite uniformly called "Junior" until 1684, "Quartermaster" in 1684 and 1685, "Lieutenant" from 1688 to 1696 and "Captain" from 1696 to death, with the use of the designating term "malster" applied to him intermittently.

The children of WILLIAM[2] and MARY (CONANT) DODGE, all born in Beverly, were[2, 3, 12, 15, 23]

i. William[3] ["Deacon" and "Malster"], b. March 20, 1663–4; d. January 7, 1747, aged 82, at Beverly; m. there, December 12, 1689, Mary Porter.
ii. MARY[3], b. May 26, 1666; d. August 1, 1719, aged 54, at Beverly;[12, 15] m., probably about 1684, JOSEPH[3] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 429].
iii. Joshua[3], bap. August 29, 1669; d. April 15, 1694, aged 25, at Beverly; m. there, Joanna Larkin, his stepsister.
iv. Hannah[3], bap. July 9, 1671; m. at Beverly, January 24, 1692, John Green.
v. Elizabeth[3], b. October 26, 1673; d. March 13, 1712–3, aged about 39, at Beverly; m. October 28, 1696, Jonathan[3] Herrick[15] (HENRY[2], HENRY[1]).
vi. Sarah[3], bap. March 3, 1677–8; prob d. young.

The children of WILLIAM[2] DODGE and his second wife Joanna (Hale) Larkin were

vii. Robert[3],* b. October 9, 1686 (twin); d. January 1, 1764, at Beverly; m. there [int. June 26], 1709, Lydia[4] Woodbury (Isaac[3], NICHOLAS[2], WILLIAM[1]).
viii. Rebecca[3], b. October 9, 1686 (twin); d. June 22, 1687.
ix. Josiah[3], b. January 8, 1688–9; prob. d. young.
x. Elisha[3], b. January 8, 1688–9.

* An interesting evidence of the fearless courage shown during the Revolution by one of the women who had common origin with us is seen in the story of a group of Beverly women who had gathered to discuss their defenceless condition while the men were in service, and some of whom faced the prospect with consternation. The common query was "If the regulars come what will become of us, what shall we do?"[7] "Do!" exclaimed Mrs. Hannah (Dodge) Batchelder, a fair representative of many hearts as bold and determined as her own, "Do! Who cares for the regulars? Let them come and if they do not behave themselves, we'll take our brooms and drive them out of town." This woman was the great-granddaughter of WILLIAM[2] and MARY (CONANT) DODGE and was also descended from our Woodbury, Herrick and Laskin ancestors. Her husband who was out fighting was Josiah[5] Batchelder, grandson of JOSIAH[3] and MARY (RAYMOND) BATCHELDER.[24]

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, XLIV, 297–8.
2. Ibid., XLVI, 383–91; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, IV, 290.
3. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 8–10, 13–21, 32–3.

3a. New England Register, III, 345.
4. Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, I, 398–401.
5. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 181; VIII, 6–7.

6. Ibid., I, 4, 89, 114, 157, 309, 313; II, 6, 59, 123, 157, 223, 256, 320; III, 6, 102, 367; V, 316, 432; VI, 73, 145; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 185–6, 200, 238, 306; II, 232, 420; III, 43.
7. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 170, 183, 322; II, 44, 105, 323; VIII, 6–8.
8. Ibid., V, 195, 273; VI, 101–2, 289; VIII, 19.
9. Massachusetts Bay Colony Record, V, 276, 336, 409–10.
10. Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, p. 10.
11. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 382, 389–91; VIII, 6–8, 190, 228, 323–4, 396–7.
12. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 108, 110, 114; II, 87, 91, 97, 99, 150, 157, 417, 422–3, 469–70.
13. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 365–6.
14. Balch Family, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 11, 18; New England Register, IX, 237.
15. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 134, 151, 198.
16. Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, XXXV, 261–2, 264–5; Savage, III, 463; IV, 636.
17. History of the Indian Wars of New England, W. Hubbard, 1865, I, 163.
18. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 337; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 405; V, 24, 121; VII, 181, 322; VIII, 440.
19. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 310–2.
20. Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, II, 274; XXXV, 263; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 179–80; Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 384, 387–8, 390–2, 394; II, 605, 617, etc.
21. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 273–4.
22. Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, V, 409–10.
23. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 79, 84, 116–7, 135, 198, 428, 459, 463.
24. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 25–6, 250; History of Essex County, Mass., 1878, p. 71; Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, p. 415.
25. Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 133–4, 148.
26. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 423.

ELIOTT

* † [470] Andrew Eliott c.1627–1704	m 2nd 1654	Mary Vivion –1719–20
* † [234] Andrew Woodbury 1665–c.1694–5	m c.1688	Emme Eliott –aft.Feb.,1715
† [116] Henry Herrick 1688–1755	m 1st 1709	Joanna Woodbury 1689–1738
† [58] Henry Herrick 1716–1780	m 1738	Anne Batchelder 1717–1815
† ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
† ‡ § ‖ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ‖ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

ELIOTT

IN East Coker, Yeovil, co. Somerset, England, in the spring of 1627, ANDREW[1] ELIOTT, son of WILLIAM and EMMA, was baptized.[1, 3] He married first, at that place, on April 23, 1649, Grace Woodier, who bore him at least one child and died, being buried there on February 8, 1652. His second wife whom he married, probably there, on February 2, 1654,[1] was MARY VIVION who survived him. The latest mention of him found in East Coker is in 1668 after which he evidently soon emigrated to New England, for he is said to have been in the vicinity of Salem, Massachusetts, in 1670[1] and was definitely settled there and prominent enough to act as recorder at a selectmen's meeting in April, 1679. At this gathering he was one of those chosen to "goe in perambulation" and signed the report of the compliance to this order during the following week.[4] Though he had thus acted as recorder in 1679, in that capacity had started a new book of records in 1685 and, with the schoolmaster, was employed to transcribe all the town records in 1684, there was no one formally chosen for such a position until April 11, 1690, when he was elected and his yearly compensation fixed at thirty shillings in money or forty shillings in produce.[5] He was frequently called upon to act as a selectman, was a representative to the General Court for five years and suffered sufficiently under the arbitrary administration of Governor Andros that the town later favored him with a compensatory grant of land.[5, 5a] [See Chapman, p. 187.]

In 1679 he and Nehemiah Grover had liberty to cut two loads of timber on the town's common, to be used in building a ketch [vessel]; in 1686 he was one of five witnesses from Beverly to attend at the signing of an Indian deed at Salem; in 1690 he and PETER[2] WOODBURY, with four others, were appointed "a committee in behalf of the church and town of Beverly" to protest, though it proved to be in vain, to the General Court against the invitation of that body to their pastor, the Reverend Mr. Hale, to act as a chaplain in the pending expedition against Canada; and, in 1698 ANDREW[1], then called "Lieutenant," with two Deacons, was chosen to assist at the ordination of a minister at

Salem Village.[5, 6] His wife joined Beverly Church on July 10, 1681, as he did on April 24, 1687, and his daughter, "EME"[2], then wife of ANDREW[3] WOODBURY, was "admitted to the Lord's table" there on June 3, 1694.[6]

Great sorrow came to this family in the loss at sea of the eldest son Andrew[2], who left a widow and several children. The father, who is said to have written a fair hand, though his occupation was that of cordwainer recorded the death of this son in the town book in these words:[1]

"Andrew Eliott, the dear and only son of ANDREW[1] ELIOTT, whose mother's name was Grace, and was born in East Coker, in the County of Somerset, in Old England, being on board a vessel appertaining unto Philip English, of Salem, one Bavidge being master; said vessel being then at Cape Sables, by an awful stroke was violently thrown into the sea, and thus perished in the water, to the great grief of his said father, the penman hereof, being aged 37 years, on the 12th day of September, about ten o'clock in the morning, according to the best information, in the year of our Lord 1688."

The most spectacular act in the life of ANDREW[1] was so tragic as to permit only of regret in its memory. He was a member of the jury which tried the witchcraft cases in Salem and, with the other jurors, he afterwards made a public recantation and greatly reproached himself for the part he had taken. HENRY[2] HERRICK was another member and signer with him and their apology reads:

"We, whose names are underwritten, being in the year 1692, called to serve as jurors in Court at Salem, on trial of many who were by some suspected guilty of doing acts of witchcraft upon the bodies of sundry persons;—We confess that we ourselves were not capable to understand, nor able to withstand, the mysterious delusions of the powers of darkness and prince of the air; but were for want of knowledge in ourselves, and better information from others, prevailed with to take up with such evidence against the accused, as, on further consideration and better information, we justly fear was insufficient for the touching the lives of any, [Deut. xvii. 6,] whereby we fear, we have been instrumental, with others, though ignorantly and unwittingly, to bring upon ourselves and this people of the Lord, the guilt of innocent blood; which sin, the Lord saith in scripture, he would not pardon, [2 Kings, xxiv. 4,] that is, we suppose, in regard of his temporal judgments. We do, therefore, hereby signify to all in general, [and to the surviving sufferers in special] our deep sense of, and sorrow for, our errors, in acting on such evidence to the condemning of any person; and do hereby declare, that we justly fear that we were sadly

deluded and mistaken; for which we are much disquieted and distressed in our minds; and do therefore humbly beg forgiveness, first of God, for Christ's sake, for this our error; and pray that God would not impute the guilt of it, to ourselves, nor others; and we also pray that we may be considered candidly, and aright by the living sufferers, as being then under the power of a strong and general delusion, utterly unacquainted with, and not experienced in matters of that nature.

"We do heartily ask forgiveness of you all, whom we have justly offended; and do declare, according to our present minds, we would none of us do such things again, on such grounds, for the whole world; praying you to accept of this, in way of satisfaction for our offence, and that you would bless the inheritance of the Lord, that he may be entreated for the land—

"Foreman,	Thomas Fisk,	Thomas Pearly, Sen.
	William Fisk,	John Peabody,
	John Bachelor,	Thomas Perkins,
	Thos. Fisk, Jun.	Samuel Sayer,
	John Dane,	ANDREW ELIOT,
	Joseph Evelith,	H. HERRICK, Sen."[8]

A Bible printed in 1613 and brought to America by ANDREW[1] has been located in Beverly, never having left that town and being, in 1889, in the family of Israel Eliot Lovett. It contains certain family records, and photographs of the volume have been made for distribution.[1] His will, dated February 26, 1703–4, and proved April 3, 1704, is in perfect preservation and bears a seal from his ring and a diphthong "Æ" as a signature.[1] It commends his wife MARY "for the love, care and faithfulness which she has always manifested for & towards mee for forty years past and more" and mentions, among other children and grandchildren, daughter EMMA (ELIOTT) WOODBURY Blower, and the latter's children Andrew[4] and JOANNA[4] WOODBURY. He died at Beverly March 1, 1703–4,[7] and his widow MARY died between the date of her will, December 8, 1718, and its date of probate, August 1, 1720.[1]

The child of ANDREW[1] ELIOTT and his first wife Grace Woodier, born at East Coker,[1, 2, 7] was

1. Andrew[2], b. January 30, 1650–1; d. September 12, 1688, at sea; m. at Beverly, December 9, 1680, Mercy Shattuck.

The other children of ANDREW[1] ELIOTT, probably all by his second wife, MARY VIVION, and doubtless in about the order given, were[1, 2, 7]

II. Emma[2], b. (—); buried March 8, 1661, East Coker.

III. William[2], b. (—); d. bet. January 19 and February 19, 1721–2;[1] m. at Beverly, June 10, 1681, Mary (Browne) Parker.

IV. Mary[2], bap. at East Coker, January 11, 1662; m. 1st, at Salem, June 4, 1684, Nicholas[3] Woodbury (NICHOLAS[2], WILLIAM[1]) who d. October 13, 1691; m. 2nd, at Beverly [int. May 29], bet. 1692 and 1702, Captain Kinsley Hall of Exeter, N. H.

V. EMMA[2], m. 1st, at Beverly, before 1689, ANDREW[3] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 836]; m. 2nd, there, July 23, 1702, Rev. Thomas Blower,[7] by whom she had a number of children and died after[7] February, 1714–5. Her name was often spelled EMME.

REFERENCES

1. Eliot Family, W. G. Eliot, 1887, pp. 11–22, with annotations by the Editor and Supplement No. 3, 1889, pp. 1, 9–12.
2. New England Register, XXIII, 337.
3. Ibid., LXXI, 168 and note.
4. Salem, Mass., Town Records, 1913, II, 301–2.
5. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 34–6, 111–2, 193, 212–3, 224, 316–7.

5a. Massachusetts Historical Society Collection, 3rd series, IV, 290; History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 690, 693, 695, 745; Early Records of the Town of Beverly, A. A. Galloupe, 1907, pp. 71–2.

6. History of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, pp. 23, 26, 31, 35, 37–8.
7. Beverly, Mass., Vital Records, I, 47, 388; II, 107, 111–2, 428, 430–1, 617.
8. Lectures on Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1832, pp. 127–9.

FOOTE

* † [876] Nathaniel Foote c.1593–1644	m c.1615	Elizabeth Deming c.1595–1683
† ▲ ‡ [438] Robert Foote c.1627–1681	m 1659	Sarah Potter c.1641–aft.1706
§ ‖ [218] John Graves 1658–1726	m 1685	Elizabeth Foote 1664–1730
¶ ♣ [108] Cornelius Hull 1687–1756	m 1715	Mehitable Graves 1688–1747
♣ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785
♦ # + [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
♦ # [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
♦ # ⊙ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
◇ # [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
# Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Watertown, Mass.
† Wethersfield, Conn.
‡ Branford, Conn.
§ Guilford, Conn.
‖ Madison, Conn.
¶ Killingworth, Conn.
♣ Durham, Conn.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.
\# Marietta, Ohio.
⊙ Athens, Ohio.
◇ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
▲ New Haven, Conn.
\+ Salem, Ohio.

FOOTE

NATHANIEL[1] FOOTE, born about 1593 in England,[1] is believed to have been the son of ROBERT and JOAN FOOTE, of Shalford, co. Essex, England.[2] He married, about 1615, ELIZABETH DEMING, who was born about 1595, a sister of John Deming who became an early and prominent settler of Wethersfield, Connecticut. NATHANIEL[1], with his wife and probably six children, emigrated to New England where he became a freeman[3] of Watertown, Massachusetts, on September 3, 1634, owned a homestead of sixteen acres and a two-acre marsh[4] and was still a proprietor[1] as late as 1642, but removed before that date to Wethersfield, Connecticut,[3] probably with the first group of its settlers[5] in 1634–6 [see map on p. 511].

In this new home he was the wealthiest man and the largest holder of the so-called "Adventurers' lands." He held a ten-acre home lot and gradually added various other tracts[5] including the southern part of "Pennywise Island." In 1639 he laid out a road[5] two rods wide which ran east from the Connecticut River "to the Wilderness" through his "3 mile lot." Farming was his occupation and, apparently, he established a good reputation as a stock raiser, or else he had superior breed of swine, for in May, 1637, when the tiny "army" of ninety men under Captain John Mason was being provisioned to go against the Pequots, the Colonial authorities specified that[5] "there shalbe 1 hogg provided att Wythersfield for the designe in hande, wch is conceiued to be NATHANIAL FOOTES. . . ."[6]

In Particular Court in July, 1640, Leonard Chester sued NATHANIEL[1] FOOTE and John Edwards for £4 damage by "trespas, for brech of order," with unknown result. In August, 1644, John Robins sued NATHANIEL[1] on an unstated charge, with a verdict found for the latter of costs of court and NATHANIEL[1] himself sued Robert Rose and received twelve pence damages and costs of court from him.[6]

His was not an eventful life in a public way, but all obtainable evidence goes to show that it was useful and dependable. He acted as Representative[5, 6]

to the General Court from 1641–4 and served the community in other useful capacities.

This family, as a whole, had a large share in the tragedies of that early day for Philip Smith, husband of Rebecca[2] Foote, was announced[5, 5a] to have been "murdered with an hideous witchcraft"; among the members of the early generations, Nathaniel[2] Foote had, (a), a daughter-in-law and two of her children taken captive by the Indians and another child killed; (b), a daughter and three of her children killed, while (c), her husband and two other children were made captives; and (d), two more of her children wounded; and Frances[2] Foote lost two husbands by the Indians as well as one son-in-law killed and another, with four of his children, taken into captivity.[1a, 5]

NATHANIEL[1], aged about fifty-one, died intestate before December 11, 1644. On that day the court evidenced the trust then placed in brotherly friendliness by stating that "Mr. Heynes and Mr. Willis are desired to consider of the estate of NATH: FOOTE, deceased, and to take in what helpe they please fro any of the neighbours to aduise how yt may be disposed of and to report their apprhensions to the next Court."[6] He was buried at Wethersfield in the rear of the meeting house where nine generations of the name now lie.[1] An inventory of his estate was taken November 20, 1644, and showed him to have been well supplied with the comforts of that day by a valuation of over £395 in personal property beside his land,[6] and other possessions which furnished a total[14] of more than £800—an unusually large estate for that time. He had more than £3 invested in goats and, with but one exception, no one else in this colony is shown to have had them so early. His hogs were appraised at £66, which was more than double the value of his horses.[14]

The widow was given a large portion of the estate and was made sole administratrix. The eldest son received a double share and ROBERT[2] inherited property to the value of £74. Provision was made for the married daughters and an interesting proviso specified that the three younger children should have £74 each "prvided it is lefte at the dispose of their mother to detracte from any of them if shee see just cause, 5£ of the portion here set downe, and to adde yt to such of the other as best desearue yt."[6]

Shortly after the assumption of administration by the widow ELIZABETH, Robert Bedle committed several thefts in the neighborhood, including one "Frō wydowe FOOTE, of Rye, iiij bush" and was sentenced[6] "to restore double for the seuerall thefts acknowledged by him, and to be seuerely

whipped and branded in the hand vppo Wensday next." Such instances of crime deterrence could well be recommended to present day dispensers of justice.

Widow ELIZABETH (DEMING) FOOTE married[1] secondly, about 1646, as his second wife, Thomas Welles, who was then a magistrate and later Governor of Connecticut Colony. She survived him and died July 28, 1683, aged about 88 years,[1] leaving a will dated March 28, 1678, which carried a codicil or memorandum dated August 16, 1682, and which was proved[1, 7] in August or September, 1683. The inventory showed a valuation of over £328 and the will itself assigned, among other bequests, certain land to ROBERT[2] with the requirement that he should pay certain specified legacies, but his death before the addition of the memorandum caused her to dictate a redistribution.[1, 7] Her recognized ability is shown by the facts that her first husband's estate was left solely to her administration, although her eldest son was twenty-four years old, and her second husband's will contained a proviso whereby she might have the use of his entire estate while she remained a widow[5, 7] in order "that she may keep the better hospitality."

A vivid picture of the stately ELIZABETH (DEMING) FOOTE, widow of Gov. Welles, is suggested by the following excerpt[14] from the inventory of her estate:

"By her grogorum [grosgrain?] Gowne 30s black	£01–10–00
by her red braucht sattiniscoe petticoat	01–00–00
by her gray searge petticoat	00–16–00
by her black cloath Gown	01–00–00
by her red scarlett wescoat	00–15–00
by her red Bayse petticoat	00–10–00
by her blackish paragon suit	00–15–00
by her black prest searg petticoat & wascoat newly made	01–16–00
by her searg under coat blackish	00–08–00
by her greenish gown 8s, her searg Hood 10s	00–18–00
eight other lines of gowns & wardrobe	09–03–06
It 15 payre of Lining Sheets at 25s	18–15–00
It 2 swine 18s, & 1 cow 3£	03–18–00
It what is due from George Graves per Bill	17–00–00
It what is due from Goody Graves for rent	01–00–10

The children of NATHANIEL[1] and ELIZABETH (DEMING) FOOTE, all born in England except, perhaps, the last one, were[1, 1a, 5, 6, 7]

I. Elizabeth[2], b. abt. 1616; d. September 8, 1700; m., 1638, Josiah Churchill.
II. Nathaniel[2], b. abt. 1620; d. 1655; m., 1646, Elizabeth Smith (Lt. Samuel).
III. Mary[2], b. abt. 1623; m. 1st, 1642, John Stoddard, who d. December, 1664; m. 2nd, 1674, John Goodrich, who d. April, 1680; m. 3rd, Lt. Thomas Tracy.
IV. ROBERT[2], see following.
V. Frances[2], b. 1629; m. 1st, 1648, John Dickenson, who d. 1676; m. 2nd, 1677, Francis Barnard.
VI. Sarah[2], b. abt. 1632; d. 1673; m., 1652, Jeremiah Judson.
VII. Rebecca[2], b. abt. 1634; d. April 6, 1701, in Hadley, Mass.; m. 1st, abt. 1657, Philip Smith (Samuel), who d. January 10, 1685; m. 2nd, October 2, 1688, Major Aaron Cook.

ROBERT[2] FOOTE (*Nathaniel*[1]) was born in England about 1627 since he was aged seventeen years in 1644 when his father's estate was administered. He died suddenly, in 1681, in Branford, Connecticut. In 1659, doubtless in New Haven vicinity, he married[1, 1a] SARAH[3] POTTER [see Potter, p. 673]. He came to Wethersfield with his father, there grew to maturity and is cited as a member of the first church of that town.[8] For a young man he seems to have dealt rather heavily in improved real estate there, retaining some of his holdings until long after his residence changed. He bought, among other tracts, in 1648 or earlier, the three-acre home lot of Samuel Gardner and sold, probably as early as 1645, other land to that man. He sold, in 1655, the Joseph Boosey homestead to his stepfather, Thomas Welles; sold in 1663 twenty-four acres to Thomas Atwood and sold in 1667 the Samuel Hubbard homestead to Eleazur Kimberly.[8]

The dates of his removal from one location to another are not clear, for, while he is said to have emigrated from Wethersfield to Totoket [Branford] in about 1644, it seems more probable that he merely became one of the purchasers of that place at that time[8] and removed later. Such an ownership would easily lead to residence in the vicinity of New Haven, of which Branford was then a part, and he is said to have located first in that portion of New Haven which is now called Wallingford[9] [see map on p. 677]. Since he was made a freeman[10] of Connecticut Colony, and undoubtedly of Wethersfield, on May 21, 1657, it argues that he went to New Haven Colony after that date; and his marriage, in 1659, to a girl of the latter locality, suggests the probability that his residence there began prior thereto. In 1659 plans were in the making relative to a diversion of Sackett's brook through the plains into Beaver Pond by digging a new channel and building a dam, to the end that water power might be developed for a new mill; one of the towns-

men objected to the plan on the score that "he vuderstood that it would drowne Goodman FOOT and put him out of his dwelling" and he was informed by one of the committee "that there would be no feare of yt, but that some of his land would be drowned was probable."[12] The seating of the New Haven meeting house on February 20, 1661–2, shows that ROBERT[2] was placed in the fourth pew of "the side seats above the door" and his wife in the first pew "Below the door."[12] His change of residence from New Haven to Branford has been variously placed all the way from 1668 to 1678 but certain definite facts give evidence that he lived under New Haven jurisdiction to, and perhaps through, 1668, that he was at least considering removal to Branford in 1669 and had actually accomplished it by or before 1670. In 1674–5 he had under consideration another change to what had then become Wallingford and interest attaches to the care which that town took to avoid the advent among them of undesirables; but though Wallingford put the seal of approval on him, the fact that he was in 1677 a military officer of Branford justifies the belief that he did not move again, but reconsidered and retained his residence at the latter place. The established facts mentioned are, (a), the recorded births of his children from 1660 to 1668, inclusive, at New Haven;[11] (b), the presentation for nomination for freemanship of Branford of the names of ROBERT[2] FOOTE and seven others on[10] May 13, 1669; (c), the recorded births of three of his children from 1670 to 1672, inclusive, at Branford;[1a] (d), the vote by Wallingford on October 20, 1674, "that Good^{n} FOOTE shall have liberty to buy the lott, yt is Joseph Eives provided he procure sufficient testimony of his good conversation in ye plase where he now pretendeth to remove," and the sequel recorded[9] the following January that "The teastimony for Good^{n} FOOTE being sevesente [sufficient] and axepted, he was admitted a planter upon the lott that was Joseph eives"; and (e), the confirmation[10] of ROBERT[2] FOOTE as Lieutenant of Branford Trainband on May 10, 1677.

Until 1678 the minister of Branford had also acted as teacher but in that year a regular teacher was employed. In regard to provision for salary[12] "It is ordered that the minister's pay shall be brought each half year. For every milch cow he shall have two pounds of butter in part pay every year; for the rest, for the first half year in beef or pork or Indian corn or wambum; for the second half year, in wheat and peas good and marketable." Evidence is found that SARAH (POTTER) FOOTE made public protest against the gossiping tongue of a neighbor whom she was personally unable to silence.[12]

The children of ROBERT[2] and SARAH (POTTER) FOOTE, the first five recorded at New Haven and the last three at Branford, were[1, 1a, 11]

I. Nathaniel[3], b. April 13, 1660; d. 1714 at Branford; m. Tabitha Bishop.
II. Sarah[3], b. February 12, 1662; m. 1st, August 13, 1682, Isaac Curtis; m. 2nd, August 9, 1714, Nathaniel How.
III. ELIZABETH[3], b. March 18, 1663–4, at New Haven;[11] d.[13] May, 1730; m., January 6 or 12, 1684–5, JOHN[3] GRAVES [see Graves, p. 390].[1, 1a, 13]
IV. Joseph[3], b. March 6, 1665–6; d. March 6, 1751, at Branford; m. 1st, 1690, Abigail Johnson; m. 2nd, 1710, Sarah Rose; m. 3rd, September 8, 1740, Susannah (——) Frisbie.
V. Samuel[3], b. May 14, 1668; d. 1696 at Branford; m., 1694, Abigail Barker.
VI. John[3], b. July 24, 1670; d. 1713 at Branford; m., 1696, Mary (——).
VII. Stephen[3], b. December 14, 1672 [twin]; d. October 23, 1762, at Branford; m. 1st, 1702, Elizabeth Nash; m. 2nd, June 27, 1739, Hannah (——) Howd.
VIII. Isaac[3], b. December 14, 1672 [twin]; d. February 11, 1758; m., 1709, Rebecca Dickerman.

REFERENCES

1. Foote Genealogy, A. W. Foote, 1907, I, 17–32; Savage, II, 179–81.
1a. Foote Genealogy, N. Goodwin, 1849, pp. XX, XXVI–XXX, XXXV–XXXVII, 47–8, 174–7, 268–71, 275–7.
2. Water's Gleanings, 1901, II, 1276, 1284; Lt. Joshua Hewes, Eben Putnam, 1913, pp. 11–3, 38.
3. History of Watertown, Mass., H. Bond, 1860, p. 225.
4. Town Records of Watertown, Mass., I, pt. 2, p. 106.
5. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 84, 117, 193, 270; II, 326–8.
5a. Ibid., I, 679–81, 684–6; Mather's Magnolia, II, Book 6, Chap. 7, pp. 454–6.
6. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 10, 56, 67, 69–70, 87, 93, 103, 109–10, 115, 461–3.
7. Manwaring's Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, I, 161–2, 379.
8. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 26, 149, 157, 190, 247, 270.
9. History of Wallingford, Conn., S. H. S. Davis, 1870, pp. 83, 744.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 298; II, 112, 304.
11. New Haven, Conn., Vital Records, I, 17–8, 21, 23, 27.
12. History of New Haven Colony, E. E. Atwater, 1902, pp. 551, 553, 599; New Haven Town Records, Ancient Series, I, 423, 511, 513, 528.
13. New England Register, LVI, 261.
14. Bassett Genealogy, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 304–9.

FOX

. . . Fox
–in Eng.

m

* [327][351]
Margaret Clark
–1673

* [162][174]
Edward Chapman
–1675

m
c.1660

Elizabeth Fox
–bet.1707–1719

* † [80][86]
Samuel Beaman
prob.bef.1662–1741

m
1693

Margaret Chapman
1672–1752

* † [40]
Samuel Beaman
1704–aft.1753

m
1731

Sarah Pinney
1707–aft.1783

† [42]
Lemuel Roberts
1701–1772

m
1731

Abigail Beaman
–prob.1786 ae.abt.74

† ‡ [20]
Thomas Beman
1734–1804

m
1753

Lydia Roberts
1735–1809

‡ [10]
Daniel Beman
1756–1817

m
c.1777–8

Abigail Ackley
c.1761–1805

‡ § [4]
Aaron Gates
1780–1850

m
1803 or 1804

Ruth Beman
1784–1858

§ ‖ [2]
Beman Gates
1818–1894

m
1841

Betsey Sibyl Shipman
1816–1895

‖
Rufus R. Dawes
1838–1899

m
1864

Mary Beman Gates
1842–1921

* Windsor, Conn.
† Simsbury, Conn.
‡ East Hartland, Conn.
§ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.

FOX

MARGARET (CLARK) FOX, the widow of (——) Fox, emigrated to New England with her daughter ELIZABETH (FOX) CHAPMAN and son-in-law, EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN, locating at Windsor, Connecticut, probably about 1661. Presumably her husband died in England but nothing is known concerning him.

As the "wido Fox" she was admitted to full communion of the Windsor Church[3, 4] in June, 1671. She was a sister of Henry Clark, of Windsor, Connecticut, and of Hadley, Massachusetts, residing at his home in Windsor after his removal to Hadley in 1661 and she would have received this and other property as a bequest from him had her death not preceded his. This document, dated December 30, 1672, and probated in December, 1675, reads in part:[1, 2, 10]

> "The house & Barn at Windsor togeather with ye outhouseing Orchard, Home lott & all my other Land in Windsor on ye West side of Coniticutt of w^t^ sort soeever wheather Meadow or upland subdued or unsubdued with all ye Privelleges Appurtenances & imunities thereto belonging
>
> "I doe freely & whoely give to my loveing & beloved Sister MARGARET FOX & to her Daughter ELIZABETH CHAPMAN after her decease & to her heirs forever."

There is excellent reason to believe that MARGARET[1] had an elder daughter, Hannah[2] Fox, who preceded her to New England, perhaps with her uncle, Henry Clark, to become a member of his childless household[1, 2, 3] for he, in his will, called her husband Thomas Loomis "kinsman" and made bequests to Loomis' two daughters.[1, 3]

The death of MARGARET[1] is recorded as follows:[3, 5, 11]

> "Ye ould wido Ffox Mr Henery Clarks sister dyed aprl. 13, 1673."

The children of MARGARET[1] CLARK and her husband (——) Fox were

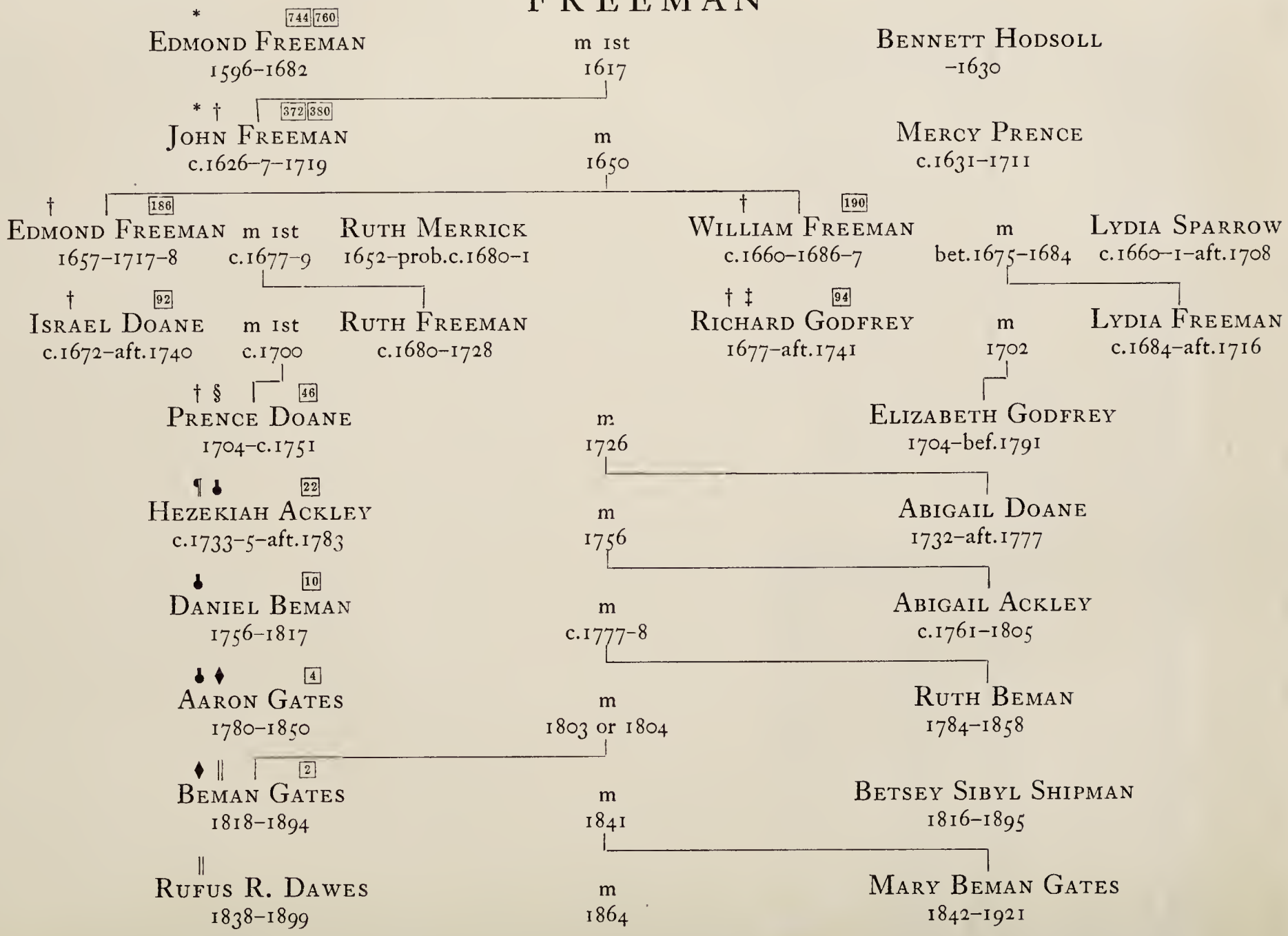
I. Hannah[2], [undoubtedly]; d. April 25, 1662, at Windsor; m.[6] there, November 1, 1653, Thomas[2] Loomis (JOSEPH[1]).

II. ELIZABETH[2], born in England and died before April 13, 1719, at Windsor.[9] She m.[7] first, in England, abt. 1660, EDWARD[1] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 181]; and secondly,[8] at Windsor, July 12, 1677, Samuel Cross.

REFERENCES

1. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 163.
2. Hampshire County, Mass., Probate Records, I, 164.
3. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 164–5.
4. The MATHEW GRANT Church Record, pp. 17, 97; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 872–81.
5. Connecticut Colony Land Records, I, 58.
6. The MATHEW GRANT Church Record, p. 54.
7. The MATHEW GRANT Church Record, p. 41.
8. Windsor, Conn., Births, Marriages and Deaths, I, 55.
9. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 161; Hartford County, Conn., Probate Records, IX, 100; Probate Files of Samuel Cross estate.
10. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 153.
11. Vital Records of Windsor, Conn., transcribed by E. S. Welles, 1898, p. 27.

FREEMAN



* Lynn and Sandwich, Mass.
† Eastham, Mass.
‡ Harwich, Mass.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ East Haddam, Conn.
♣ East Hartland, Conn.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

FREEMAN

While it has been customary in these sketches to treat only of those who lived in America, certain points relative to this family will be clearer if the immediate relationships in England are first considered.

EDMOND FREEMAN, senior, yeoman, and his wife ALICE COLES lived at Pulborough, co. Sussex, England, where he was buried[1c] on June 6, 1623. His will, dated May 20, 1623, and administered on June 18, following, made his sons, EDMOND[1] and William, his executors, and disposed of over £800 besides his various lands and tenements;[1a] aside from a bequest to EDMOND[1], it gave £20 to each of his children. The testator's widow, ALICE, sister of George Coles, of Amberly, co. Sussex,[1a] spent her later years at Reigate, co. Surrey, in the home of her daughter and son-in-law,[2a] Alice and John Beauchamp [see Prence, p. 689]; and her will, dated November 13, 1650, and proved March 5, 1651–2, included a bequest to EDMOND[1] FREEMAN and his wife.[1b]

The children of this EDMOND and ALICE (COLES) FREEMAN, al born at Pulborough, were[1c]

I. EDMOND[1], see following.
II. Alice, bap. April 15, 1601; m., December 27, 1615, John Beauchamp[1c] of London and of Reigate, county Surrey.
III. William, m. 1st, between 1617 and 1624, Christian Hodsoll[1d, 1e] [daughter of JOHN HODSOLL and his wife, the widow FAITH (——) Bacon], who was sister of the wife of EDMOND[1]. It was doubtless this William who m. 2nd, on May 15, 1638, the widow Jane Gratwick, of Cowfold, and died[1e] September 15, 1666.
IV. Eleanor, bap. August 25, 1603; bur. April 7, 1618.
V. John, bap. January 29, 1605–6 or 1606–7; living 1623.
VI. Elizabeth, bap. August 27, 1609; m. John Coddington.

EDMOND[1] FREEMAN was baptized July 25, 1596, at St. Mary's Church, Pulborough,[1c] died between June 21 and November 2, 1682, at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, New England, and married first at Cowfold, co. Sussex, on June 16, 1617, BENNETT HODSOLL, daughter of JOHN HODSOLL and his

wife, the widow FAITH (——) Bacon, of that place;[1e] he married, secondly, probably either on the voyage to New England or soon after his arrival, Elizabeth (——).*

Both EDMOND[1] and his brother William, with their respective wives, were beneficiaries in the wills of, respectively, their father-in-law JOHN HODSOLL and his son of the same name, the said wives being co-heirs to their brother.[1e] BENNETT (HODSOLL) FREEMAN was buried April 12, 1630, at Pulborough.[1c]

In January, 1633–4, EDMOND[1], on behalf of himself and his five living children, brought suit in Chancery Court against his brother William and others in regard to the disposition of certain lands and tenements formerly belonging to JOHN HODSOLL, his father-in-law. The depositions taken, give evidence among other things, of the dates of baptism of four of the six children of EDMOND[1] at Billingshurst, the register of which was then existent though not now to be found; that he then owned lands in both Pulborough and Billingshurst; that he must have removed in 1619–20 to Billingshurst for a period of seven or eight years; and that he was a man of good credit and repute in the community.[1f] By September, 1627, he had evidently returned to Pulborough[1f] where[1c] his youngest child was baptized on September 2, 1629, and buried ten days later, and where he buried his wife on April 12, following.

He, with his four children, in company with several other individuals of the same family name, whose relationship is not yet established, engaged passage[2] for New England on the "Abigail," Robert Hackwell, Master, early in July, 1635, and arrived in October following.[3] It is said that "he was a man of consideration in England and brought with him much valuable plate."[6] He settled first at Lynn, in Massachusetts Bay Colony, for a short time. During his residence there he presented to the Colony twenty corslets or suits of plate armor.[4] These he doubtless brought over in view of the Indian menace.[2a] For some reason† he and others of Lynn wished to remove to Cape Cod and asked Plymouth Colony for a grant of land there. On April 3, 1637, it was ordered "that these ten men of Saugus" [Lynn], including EDMOND[1], "shall haue liberty to view a place to sitt downe & haue sufficient lands for

* She may have been a widow Perry and may have had a son[1] Edward, for EDMOND[1] in his will called Edward Perry his son. It has sometimes been assumed that this man was called son because of his having married a Mary (Freeman?), surmised daughter of EDMOND[1], but careful study reveals no evidence of the existence of such a daughter and leaves the stepson theory the more tenable.

† Probably because of displeasure, on the part of some, with the theocratic form of government in the Bay Colony [see Appendix, pp. 855–6], but doubtless, also, on the part of EDMOND[1], because of the financial and friendly interest of his brother-in-law, John Beauchamp, in Plymouth Colony.

three score famylies. . . ."[5] The present location of Sandwich was chosen and a number of men, many of whom had families, removed there from Lynn in, or perhaps even before, 1637. Certain conditions were to be met before an absolute deed would be given to them by the Colony and in 1647 this document was made out to EDMOND[1] as agent, who in turn devised the lands to the town and to its various proprietors on their repayment to him of money invested and their promise to complete the requirements,[5] the matter not being closed[6] until 1651. As a consequence of this agency he is called "the original proprietor of Sandwich."[6]

The status of EDMOND[1] may be inferred from the fact that of the fifty-eight men who became entitled to shares in the divisions of lands at Sandwich, his portion was much the largest and his name was ordinarily[2a] preceded by the title "Mr." or followed by that of "Gent." [see note, p. 299]. He was called a freeman of Plymouth Colony on March 7, 1636–7, although he was not "sworn and admitted" [see Appendix, p. 853] as such until January 2, 1637–8,[7] so his removal to Sandwich undoubtedly preceded these dates.

The Massachusetts men who were the first settlers of this town were Puritans rather than Pilgrims, many of them were merchants and some were well-to-do. They were "friends of good order" and good government and were a religious people but free in a remarkable degree "from the acerbities of polemic strife"[6] existing in some parts of the Bay Colony. They started a church as early as 1638, of which EDMOND[1] was a member[6] and a deacon. Evidence that they, as a group, were less intolerant than most church bodies of Puritan origin of their day is seen in the fact that their neighborhood later became the earliest stronghold of Quakerism in Plymouth Colony. The Sandwich Monthly Meeting, established in 1660, was the first organized Meeting in New England and even antedated most of those in England.[6] Some of the earlier adherents of this faith seem to have really craved and invited difficulty with, and persecution by the authorities, but the majority, who are said to have asked only freedom to worship as they chose, soon gained the good will of their neighbors, who often shielded them from the law and thus sometimes incurred penalties on their own behalf. EDMOND[1] evidently felt this tolerance for though he was actively interested in church affairs, as is evidenced by his signing about 1655–6 a call to a pastor, giving at that time £1 toward the building of a meeting house[8] and contracting on July 17, 1657, to give £1 yearly thereafter toward the pastor's salary,[8] yet he and his wife were indicted on October 7, 1651, for absence from public

worship contrary to the order of June 6 preceding,[5] which absence was a method then frequently employed to show disapproval of the policy of the authorities against the Quakers. He is generally recognized as disfavoring the current "ecclesiastical censures and legislative coercion"; of sympathizing with the Quakers, some say even to the point of considering personal alliance with them; and of having views too liberal for the times.[8] The stringency of the laws provided that freemen who became Quakers, or who encouraged such by attending their meetings, by entertaining them or by any other means, should lose their citizenship and various men were so penalized.[5] Many more were fined and Captain Cudworth of Scituate was even deprived of his military command because of his sympathies.[9] He made the statement too, that in 1658 "almost the whole town of Sandwich is adhering to them."[8] EDMOND[1], who had been a Magistrate or assistant to the Governor for several years, was permanently dropped at the election in 1646, some say as a result of his general theological tolerance.[8] Public opinion in this section in favor of the Friends became so marked, and protection of them from many harshnesses was so frequent, that the Plymouth government* about 1657–8 appointed one George Barlow as a state marshal for this locality to collect the fines from and inflict the punishments upon these passive offenders "and their encouragers," but his great unfairness only increased the resentment of fair-minded people. While the most extreme penalties such as cutting off of ears and hanging were not resorted to in Sandwich, the local persecutions included whipping, imprisonment which carried with it a fee for committal, as well as a second one for discharge, and heavy fines for the non-payment of which the offender's cattle or goods were distrained at a preposterously low valuation and with an admitted intent to confiscate the most needed articles rather than such as could be more easily spared. At one court in 1661 fines amounting to £150, for attendance at Quaker meetings and for refusal to take the oath of fidelity, were laid on certain Sandwich men in such respective amounts as £24, £46 and £20, the last-named fine being assessed against a poor weaver whose entire holdings were of less than £10 valuation. One list[8] of fines imposed upon nineteen Friends in and near Sandwich for this period showed a total of £660 of which over £89 was distrained from Edward Perry, called "son" by EDMOND[1] FREEMAN. Knowing the disapprobation of the

* Before this date the original Pilgrim leaders had all died and some of their successors lacked the mellow tolerance which persecution had produced in their elders. Some, however, of the younger generation were true "Independents" in principle and as firm in loyalty thereto as those who had gone before.

Freeman family for these measures, Marshal Barlow had the audacity to call upon Edmond[2] for "aid" in his duties! Prompt and indignant refusal of such assistance caused Barlow to enter a complaint at court, and consistency caused the authorities to lay a fine of ten shillings on Freeman.[2a, 7, 8] Another intimate phase of the question is seen in the fact that this Edward Perry married,[14] about 1653, Mary (——), but was so imbued with Quaker ideas that he persistently and repeatedly declined[8] the services of Thomas Tupper, who was the constituted authority to perform marriages. The result was that the matter was brought before the General Court on March 7, 1653–4, and Edward Perry was fined £5. Governor THOMAS[1] PRENCE [who would have been doubly interested in that he was father-in-law to JOHN[2] FREEMAN] was directed to see this marriage "ratifyed as hee goeth home," and Thomas Tupper for not forcibly performing the ceremony "was required henceforth to desist, and is not intrusted with that business any more."[7]

Evidence that even the Governor's persuasive powers lacked potency in this matter is seen in the Court record of June 6, 1654, when Edward Perry "for refusing to haue his marriage rattifyed before Mr. PRENCE . . . is fined fiue pounds for this psent Court and soe fiue pounds for euery Generall Court that shall bee during the time of his said neglect for the future."[7] Knowledge of the outcome of this conflict would be interesting, but is not found.

In 1643 EDMOND[1] and his two sons Edmond[2] and JOHN[2] were among those "able to bear arms" in Sandwich.[6] The former served on the grand jury in 1636 and 1647, as Assistant[10] continuously from 1640 to 1646 and as a Representative in the latter year.[6, 10] As Assistant he and his associates held court for the three townships, Yarmouth, Barnstable and Sandwich, "for small causes."[11] In 1641 he with Governor Winslow and Myles Standish dealt true justice in ruling that a certain man should pay for a deer which his son had bought of an Indian long before, and that another man should pay two shillings for mending a hole which he had shot in the same Indian's kettle.[8] The attitude of EDMOND[1] toward the natives is further shown in a case where he addressed several notes to the General Court about 1655 relative to "spoyle done in the Indians corn by horses" and about suitable recompense therefor.[11]

Suggestion of some of the unpleasant duties devolving upon the Assistants is seen in rulings whereby EDMOND[1], in that capacity, was required by the General Court in September, 1641, to inflict punishment upon "Mr. Crowes

mayde servant for pilfering goods in his house" and to oversee the whipping of certain offenders.[11]

The importance to the community of the whaling industry is seen in certain early legislation. There seems to have been somewhat of conflict between the Colony, which demanded a portion of the oil as the right of the Crown and appointed agents to receive it "for the country," and the town, which claimed similar rights and promised a division of the proceeds "equally to every inhabitant," with a double share to the Indian or white man who spied and reported a floating or stranded whale. In 1652 the town appointed a committee of six, including EDMOND[1], to "take care of all the [oil-yielding] fish that Indians shall cut up within the limits of the town, so as to provide safety for it and . . . dispose of the fish for the town's use," also to provide laborers and equipment to try out the blubber of any such as are reported and to dispose of the proceeds "to the town's use, to be divided equally."[8]

In spite of the evident good standing of EDMOND[1] in the community, he occasionally offended in small matters and he was promptly taken to task, as when in 1638 he and others were fined ten shillings apiece for "being defective in armes"; that same year he was one of several who were presented "for keeping swine vnringed"; in 1641 he was before the Court for lending a gun to an Indian and in 1646 he was fined eighteen pence for absence from General Court.[11] In 1642 he was one of the Council of War to coöperate with Massachusetts Bay Colony in mutual protection against the Indians;[10] and he was often on committees to view land, divide and assign such, and to run bounds.[12] He acquired much property both by grant and by purchase.[12]

He made one sale of land in 1648 for the sum of £75 sterling "to bee payed . . . in Corn or Cattell."[12] Side lights are thrown on local customs and conduct by such items as that a neighbor girl, who had "uttered speeches against" EDMOND[1] in 1655, was sentenced to be whipped; Thomas Tupper signed a document in 1656 to "foreuer acquitt" EDMOND[1] "of all manor accoumpts, speciallities, and demaunds, from the begiñing of the world to this prsent day" and EDMOND[1] himself, with two others as agents for the town, in 1673 complained against Samuel Fuller for unjust entry on their land two years before and for cutting down a certain young tree.[11]

That EDMOND[1] was a man of large business interests, a merchant in Sandwich and also the representative of a group of London investors in the new world is proved by various recorded documents. Several of these suggest

that he dealt in clothing, for in 1639 he made a trip to England and while there bought a consignment of "hats and beavers" to the amount of over £52 from Arthur Mansfield, haberdasher of London, signing an agreement, dated July 20, 1639, to pay for them "six months after the said hatts shall be safely landed in New England." They were shipped in the "Planter" and EDMOND[1] himself returned to his home during 1639 on the "Champion." This bill was paid in 1640 but his failure to receive the receipted note caused him to have all pertinent correspondence recorded.[13] Evidence is also seen of a considerable investment in New England by three merchants of London, including John Beauchamp, brother-in-law of EDMOND[1], who on July 11, 1639, evidently during the latter's visit there, gave him a power of attorney. Their business covered a partnership in the beaver trade in Plymouth Colony with the use of certain vessels for the transport of it, and included as partners the following New England men: William Bradford, Edward Winslow, THOMAS[1] PRENCE, Myles Standish, John Alden, John Howland, Isaac Allerton and the heirs of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER [see Prence, p. 688]. The task assigned EDMOND[1] was to make collections of accounts due in New England, or to accept land in lieu of money, to make good Beauchamp's investment of £400 with perhaps similar amounts due to the two other London men. Accounts with the Indians had been poorly kept, returns were scanty and finally by or before 1645 after "diuers differrences," the various Plymouth debtors to this group each deeded property to cover their obligations and received their releases[13] from EDMOND[1]. Following this he made sale of much of this property for Beauchamp.[12, 13] As late as 1682 his interest in church affairs is seen when he and Ezra Perry, senior, were appointed to arrange for the minister's salary.[14]

When his wife died, February 14, 1675–6, she was buried on the hill of the Freeman farm "about one and one-fourth miles west of the town hall" [1875], which spot thus became the oldest known burial ground of that locality.[2a, 14] We are told that at that time his sons hauled from a distant field a rock which in shape resembled a pillion, as a monument for her grave; at his request they brought another which he imagined simulated a saddle and placed it beside where his own grave would presently be, and enclosed this spot, containing also two oak trees, with a massive circular wall. "Within the memory of persons yet living [1875] the remains of those ancient trees were standing and the last vestiges of the wall were removed . . . but neither the two graves nor the two monuments placed over them have ever been disturbed."[2a, 14]

Certain discrepancy is found between the approximated age of EDMOND[1] at emigration and at death as compared with his lately established baptismal date[1c] but the consensus of evidence justifies the conclusions as stated. The estate he left amounted to £190 but he had deeded most of his property to his descendants during his life.[2a, 14] His will dated June 21, 1682, was probated November 2, following, and named his three "sons," Edmond[2] and JOHN[2] FREEMAN and Edward Perry, as his executors, reaffirmed all prior conveyances and divided such lands as he then possessed.[2a] It is interesting to note that his personal estate[2a] included "One Dixionary & gt. Bible £1–15–0," the former volume being a rare possession in the colonies in that early day.

The children of EDMOND[1] and BENNETT (HODSOLL) FREEMAN, all born in England, the first and fifth at Pulborough and the others at Billingshurst, co. Sussex, were[1g, 2a, 15]

I. Alice[2], bap. April 4, 1619; d. April 24, 1651, at Plymouth; m. there, November 24, 1639, William Paddy.[16]
II. Edmond[2], bap. November 26, 1620; d. March 29, 1673, at Sandwich; m. 1st, April 22, 1646, Rebecca[2] Prence (THOMAS[1]); m. 2nd, July 18, 1651, Margaret Perry.
III. Bennett[2], bap. January 20, 1621–2; d.[1f] bet. November 28, 1633, and January 13, 1633–4.
IV. Elizabeth[2], bap. April 11, 1624; m., prob. abt. 1647, John Ellis.
V. JOHN[2], see following.
VI. Nathaniel[2], bap. September 2, 1629; d. there ten days later.

JOHN[2] FREEMAN (*Edmond*[1]) was baptized January 28, 1626–7, at Billingshurst, co. Sussex, England,[1g] died October 28, 1719, at Eastham, Massachusetts, and married,[16] undoubtedly there, on February 13–4, 1649–50, MERCY[2] PRENCE [see Prence, p. 693]. He came to New England with his father in 1635, being then listed as eight years old on the Customs House rolls.[2] His home during his youth was with his father at Lynn and at Sandwich; he left the latter place for Eastham probably by or before 1649–50, the date of his marriage, and certainly before June, 1651, when he served on the grand jury from there.[18, 19] His name was propounded for freemanship in June, 1651, and he was admitted[17] as such in June, 1652. His life was filled with official duties, even more than his father's had been; he served as a grand juror on various occasions, as surveyor of[17] highways at Eastham in 1653, as a selectman there from 1663 for ten years,[17, 21] as a Deputy from that town from 1654 to 1666 inclusive and as an Assistant to the Governor from 1666 to 1686 and from 1689 to 1691, all inclusive.[18, 21] The break in his term of service from 1686 to 1689 was caused by the usurpation of Gov.

Andros and the cessation of all colonial offices for that period. His duties in the latter capacity were quite incessant and much more varied than those of a Judge of our present-day courts. He was appointed as late as 1692 to the bench[15] of the first Court of Common Pleas which was established after the Union of the Colonies,[21] and his military service was as helpful as his civic activities. In August, 1643, he was a member of the military company of Sandwich, on March 6, 1654–5, was made ensign bearer of the Eastham Company and in October, 1658, as such he became, by order of the Council of War, a member of the Council or Staff of Maj. Josias Winslow.[19] Having apparently become a lieutenant before October 6, 1659, he was then made an officer of that grade in the troop of horse.[19, 20] In April, 1667, as a result of a menace to the colonies by the French and the "Duch," there was appointed a council in each town to assist the regular officers and Lt. JOHN[2] was so named for Eastham.[19] On September 15, 1673, the Court, with him present as an Assistant, "haueing considered the information giuen concerning the Duch theire actings att New York and places adjacent" ordered that the "troop of horse allowed by the Court shalbe sixty, whoe shall haue horse pistolls, and each of them a carbine, with other acculterments fitt for seruice"; that volunteers should be encouraged to bring the membership to that number and that in case of attack at any given town, the portion of the personnel of this troop which was resident in a near-by town might, by direction of their local council, hasten to their relief and might even "presse horses for theire better expedition if they shall see cause."[19] At a meeting of the Council of War held at Plymouth, July 8, 1671, relative to the menace to the colony of King Philip and his followers it was decided to impress a body of one hundred men and "forty of our trustiest Indians" for a campaign against them during the following month and Lt. JOHN[2] was to be second in command under Maj. Josias Winslow.[19] This action was followed on August 23rd by a decision to send letters to the neighboring colonies asking their advice and coöperation and the letter to Massachusetts Bay was sent by the hand of Lt. JOHN[2]. Before October 4, 1675, he had been made a Captain, for as such, on that date, he was one of a committee to take an account of the charges "arising by this p̃sent warr"[19] meaning King Philip's War. He also served actively in that campaign and as a result his estate received a grant of land in Narragansett Township No. 7, at what is now Gorham, Maine. This section was not assigned to the heirs of the participants until 1733, or fifty-eight years after the battle occurred, but it finally assured[20] lot No. 34

to the estate of JOHN[2]. It develops that in June, 1678, Taunton still owed the colony certain sums "for billetting Captaine FREEMAN and his men and theire horses" "in the late warr with the Indians," "likewise to pay for beef which was disposed off when Capt. FREEMAN was att youer towne, either by Capt. FREEMAN or any of youer celect men for the releiffe of some of youer poor, whoe were in extreamyty."[19] On June 2, 1685, the military companies of Barnstable, Sandwich, Yarmouth and Eastham were made the 3rd Regiment and JOHN[2] FREEMAN was commissioned Major Commandant thereof, with other companies added later.[18]

JOHN[2] was called upon to assist in auditing the books of the Treasurer[29] of the Colony in 1662, 1664, 1673 and 1674. In 1663 he and two others were appointed for a year to hold certain wampum belonging to the colony and to pay from it fifteen shillings bounty to each Indian who would bring in a wolf's head.[29] Of nine Indians who had stolen a cask of liquor in 1667, three were sentenced to be whipped and the other six were ordered to pay £10 to JOHN[2] as agent for the colony, in "Indian corne, or porke, or feathers."[29] In June, 1670, he and JONATHAN[2] SPARROW were a Committee for Eastham to "looke after the Minnesters Rate."[29] By or before that year the Court had ordered that no tar which was made within the colony should be sold outside of it, and that its price for a two-year term should be eight shillings in money for a small barrel containing not less than sixteen gallons, beer measure, or twelve shillings for a "great barrell" and that JOHN[2] should handle all that was made in Eastham.[29]

A certain Indian called Hoken was a "notoriouse theife" and was finally put in prison, but broke out and stole a horse on which to escape. The Court, stating the belief in July, 1674, that he "will not be reclaimed, but lyeth sherking and lurking about, whereby many persons are greatly in feare and danger of him" ordered that "Leiftenant FREEMAN or any other magistrate that can light off the said Hoken, that they cause him to be apprehended and sold or sent to Barbadoes, for to satisfy his debts and to free the collonie from so ill a member."[29] During 1675–6, while JOHN[2] FREEMAN and JONATHAN[2] SPARROW were members of the council of Eastham their duties[18] included the assignment of men to both watch and ward,[29] to keep garrison and to do scout duty; included also arrangement for the supply, conservation and apportionment of the town's stock of ammunition and for laying a tax to cover the purchase of the same. "Watch" implied service from sunset to sunrise and "Ward" from sunrise to sunset. If anyone who was called for such

service failed to appear, he was to be fined five shillings for each failure and a distress warrant therefor levied on his estate; or if he had no property he was "to be sett necke and heeles* . . . not exceeding halfe an houre." Fines were also specified for those who were tardy in arrival as watchmen or who came without "fixed armes and suitable ammunition."[29] In June, 1676, the Treasurer's account showed that "Capt. FREEMAN" owed the Colony £1 for a gun.[29]

The suffering and loss occasioned to the colonies by King Philip's War stirred the sympathies of many people across the water and contributions were made which were apportioned between the colonies, Plymouth receiving a share of over £120. In March, 1676–7, the Court ordered the "destribution of this collonies p̃te of the contribution made by diuers Christians in Ireland for the releiffe of such as are impouerished, destressed, and in nessesitie," and named "Captain FREEMAN" to handle Eastham's share.[30] Innumerable instances are found where JOHN[2] was called upon to make surveys, to divide land, set bounds, etc. In November, 1679, Thomas Clark asked £50 damage from him, claiming that JOHN[2] had pulled up a boundary stake by Clark's land and the jury gave the plaintiff ten shillings and costs[30] to the amount of £3. In February, 1682–3, for some unseen reason the Deputy Governor, JOHN[2] FREEMAN, JONATHAN[2] SPARROW, JOHN[1] DOANE and John Miller "departed this Court before it was finished, all being members thereof," therefore, "this Court orders, that if att June Court they render not a suffiẽnt excusse they shalbe fined according to law."[30]

In order to prevent all possible lawsuits and controversies between those who went whaling, the General Court on November 4, 1690, appointed a

*The meaning of this term in New England was undoubtedly essentially the same as it was in Old England and as follows:

A punishment called "neck and heels," which probably had its origin in an instrument devised by Leonard Skeffington, Lieutenant of the Tower of London in the sixteenth century. It was a broad iron hoop for forcibly compressing a culprit's body, and the victim was kept in this state for about an hour at a time. The instrument came to be known as "Skevington's Irons" or "Skevington's Daughter," and afterwards, corruptly, as "Scavenger's Daughter." . . . But ropes and straps came into use instead of iron bands, and Sir Ashley Cooper tells us that at Dorchester in 1646 two soldiers convicted of desertion were sentenced to be tied neck and heels. The punishment was in frequent use in our garrison at Tangiers soon after 1660, the culprit being sometimes ordered to undergo it one hour daily for three days; and Randle Holme, writing in 1688, says "it is a punishment of decrepiting and benumming the body by drawing it all together, as it were, into a round ball, by ropes or match-ropes; that is the heel to the breech, and the head between the knees, and the arms tyed backwards; and thus to lye tumbling for a certain time, according to the hainousness of the soldier's offence."

One other description of it, written in 1761, says, "The criminal sits down on the ground, when a firelock is put under his hams and another over his neck, which were forcibly brought almost together by means of a couple of cartouch-box straps. In this situation, with his chin between his knees, has many a man been kept till the blood gushed out of his nose, mouth and ears, and ruptures have also too often been the fatal consequences."[35]

"viewer" in each coast town, whose word and record should be considered good testimony in law, and to whom each whaler should report all whales killed, or wounded and left at sea, describing the wounds so given with time and place where they occurred. The further requirement was made that when any whale was brought or cast on shore that it should be "viewed" and record made of its injury and the time and place of its landing before any mutilation took place, so that its rightful ownership might be established. If anyone ignored the last ruling, he lost all right to the fish and was fined £10 beside. The viewer received a fee of six shillings for each whale viewed and recorded and had permission to appoint a Deputy if he chose. One who found a drift whale a mile from shore "not appearing to be killed by any man" might claim such by paying "an hogshead of oyle to ye county for every such whale." Major JOHN[2] held this office of viewer for Eastham[30] in 1690.

An interesting original deed [which was in 1901 in the possession of Judge Henry Varnum Freeman of Chicago, Illinois] contains, among others, the signatures of THOMAS[1] PRENCE, JONATHAN[2] SPARROW and JOHN[2] FREEMAN. It covered an exchange between Hannah (Prence) Mayo and JOHN[2] FREEMAN of two pieces of land given them by THOMAS[1] PRENCE who was respectively father and father-in-law of the principals.[31] The inventory of the estate of THOMAS[1] PRENCE taken in April, 1673, shows a debt of £17 owing to JOHN[2] FREEMAN and in a codicil dated on March 28, 1673, to his will of a year earlier, the former gave to the latter "Speeds Cronicle and Wilson's Dictionary and the abridgement; and Simpsons History of the Church and Newmans Concordance."[31] Through a long term of years JOHN[2] was a Deacon of the Eastham Church.[15, 21, 26] He was a large landholder and possessed considerable means. In 1691 the town mortgaged to him two islands, as security for the payment of £76 which he had advanced as the town's proportion of the expense of obtaining the new charter from England.[15]

The gravestones of Maj. JOHN[2] and his wife are still to be seen at Eastham, and on her stone a heart is chiseled within which is her epitaph. His will was dated June 1, 1716, and a codicil was added on June 16, 1718. The document was probated on November 10, 1719, and the controversy which had arisen between the heirs was settled by an agreement signed by them on January 27, 1719–20. The will gave to EDMOND[3] a number of tracts of land and a share of the personal estate. It gave £10 in money to each of the testator's two grandchildren, LYDIA (FREEMAN) GODFREY and William[4] Freeman, children

of his deceased son WILLIAM[3], and gave their freedom to his negroes "Tobye" and Bess, with the added gifts of four acres of land, a horse and a cow.[31] The inventory shows a bountiful estate including such items as one hundred sixty-one pounds weight "In silver money and Plate." The agreement of the heirs includes the name of ISRAEL[3] DOANE who had married and who signed in behalf of his wife RUTH[4] FREEMAN, daughter[31] of EDMOND[3].

The children of JOHN[2] and MERCY (PRENCE) FREEMAN, through two of whom we descend, all born undoubtedly at Eastham, were[15, 16, 21, 22]

I. John[3], b. February 2, 1650; d. young.
II. John[3], b. December, 1651; d. July 27, 1721, at Harwich; m. 1st, at Eastham, December 18, 1672, Sarah[2] Merrick (WILLIAM[1]); m. 2nd, 1701, Mercy (Bradford) Watson.[23]
III. Thomas[3], b. September, 1653; d. February 9, 1715–6; m. December 31, 1673, Rebecca[3] Sparrow (JONATHAN[2], RICHARD[1]).
IV. Patience[3], b. (—); d. February 15, 1745; m. January 31, 1682–3, Samuel Paine.[23]
V. Hannah[3], b. abt. 1664; d. February 15, 1743, "aged 79"; m. April 14, 1681, John[3] Mayo (John[2], Rev. John[1]).[23]
VI. EDMOND[3], see following.
VII. Mercy[3], b. July, 1659; d. 1744; m. December, 1679, Samuel Knowles.[23]
VIII. WILLIAM[3], see following, page 363.
IX. Prince[3], b. February 3, 1665–6; d. young.
X. Nathaniel[3], b. March 20, 1669; d. January 4, 1760; m., abt. 1690, Mary (probably Howland).[23]
XI. Bennett[3], b. March 7, 1670–1; d.[23] May 30, 1716; m. March 14, 1688–9, John Paine (Thomas).[31]

EDMOND[3] FREEMAN (*John*[2], *Edmond*[1]) was born in June, 1657, at Eastham[16] and is said to have died there either[33] December 10, 1717, or February 11, 1718–9 [gravestone],[23] but evidently the former date, for on February 25, 1717–8, his widow and eldest son were appointed administrators of his estate.[24] He married undoubtedly first[23, 26, 33] and at Eastham, perhaps in "Jan. 1677" but surely by 1679, RUTH[2] MERRICK [see Merrick, p. 585].* He married "as his second wife"[27] probably about 1681, Sarah[3] Mayo (Samuel[2], Rev. John[1]). Their home was in that part of Eastham called Tonsett, as shown by his father's will, which gave him the property he then occupied there, as well as several other tracts. The fact that he had a cousin of the same name in Sandwich creates somewhat of doubt as to which

*Since WILLIAM[1] MERRICK by his will of 1686 left to his "Grand Child RUTH FFREEMAN" "an equal share amongst the Rest of my Children" it suggests that she was an only child of a deceased daughter who could have been only Rebecca[2] or RUTH[2] MERRICK. Since the only contemporaneous Ruth Freeman of record is this daughter of EDMOND[3], the fact of his first marriage[27] to RUTH[2] MERRICK who died early leaving but this one child is accepted[23, 26, 33] even though its actual record has not been found [see Merrick, p. 584].

of them performed certain public service, but it was probably EDMOND[3] who was on the grand jury[19] in 1663 and[28] in 1683. He was a selectman of Eastham from 1695 for seven years and was called lieutenant.[24]

Since no other adult of the name is found at Eastham at that date than EDMOND[3] an item recording admission as a freeman of that place,[28] in June, 1690, must refer to him. He died intestate and the Court settled all the real estate on Isaac[4], the eldest son, who gave bond to pay certain sums to each of his two brothers and nine sisters and the widow was allowed the use of one third during her life, after which, it also should be divided. The real estate was valued at £849–7–6 and the immediate share of RUTH (FREEMAN) DOANE was to be £47–8 with an added £21–15–10 after her stepmother's decease.[24] It is indicative of the relative ages of these children that the Court in directing Isaac[4], stated to have been the "eldest son," named first the other sons and then all the daughters, doubtless giving each individual in his or her chronological sequence, within the limitations of sex, and the various dates of marriage, for the most part, correspond with this theory. In this listing RUTH[4] is mentioned first among the daughters, which placing coincides with other evidence tending to show that she was the eldest daughter of EDMOND[3] and by a first marriage. She had a child[26] in November, 1701, so she must have married as early as 1700. At the agreement of the heirs of Maj. JOHN[2] FREEMAN, her grandfather, in January, 1719–20, her husband, ISRAEL[3] DOANE, signed for her as one of the heirs of her father EDMOND[3], then deceased.[22]

The child of EDMOND[3] and [undoubtedly] RUTH (MERRICK) FREEMAN, born at Eastham, was[22, 23, 24, 26, 27]

I. RUTH[4], b. abt. 1680;[23, 26] d.[32] on June 7, 1728; m., about 1700, ISRAEL[3] DOANE[23, 26] [see Doane, p. 308].

The children of EDMOND[3] FREEMAN and his second wife Sarah Mayo, all born probably at Eastham and in about the following order, were[23, 24, 25]

II. Sarah[4], d.[34] January 21, 1743–4; m. May 22, 1701, Benjamin[3] Higgins (Benjamin[2], Richard[1]).[34]
III. Mary[4], living March 26, 1736–7; m., about 1703, Samuel Hinckley.
IV. Isaac[4], d. before 1736 at Fairfield, Conn.; m. March 16, 1715–6, Bethia Sturgis.
V. Ebenezer[4], b. about 1687; d. June 11, 1760; m. October 12, 1710, Abigail Young.
VI. Experience[4], d. probably before March 26, 1736–7; m. Thomas Gross.
VII. Mercy[4], b. about[26] 1696; living March 26, 1736–7; m. October 14, 1717, Thomas Cobb.
VIII. Thankful[4], living March 26, 1736–7; m. October 16, 1718, Jonathan Snow.

ix. Elizabeth[4], d. probably before March 26, 1736–7; m. Isaac Pepper.
x. Hannah[4], b. 1628; d. July 7, 1751; m. October 10, 1717, Christian Remick.
xi. Edmond[4], b. about 1702; d. July 22, 1782; m. 1st, April 22, 1725, Lois Paine; m. 2nd, September 25, 1729, Sarah[4] Sparrow (Richard[3], JONATHAN[2], RICHARD[1]).[22]
xii. Rachel[4], living March 26, 1736–7; m. October 2, 1729, Thomas Gray.

WILLIAM[3] FREEMAN (*John*[2], *Edmond*[1]) was born[15] about 1660, doubtless at Eastham, died probably there "in ye year 1686" [i.e., before March 25, 1686–7, when the new year was then considered to begin], married there after 1675 and before[25] 1684, LYDIA[3] SPARROW[15, 25] [see Sparrow, p. 767]. But little mention is found of him, partly because of his early death. Tradition says that he planned a settlement at Portanumqut, Pleasant Bay, on land which belonged to the early proprietors and which is now within the bounds of Orleans and that he erected a house there but "his wife not liking the locality, the frame was taken down and removed to another place."[23]

He left no will and his inventory presented May 31, 1687, showed but about £90 valuation, of which property his widow LYDIA was made administrator.[25] She married secondly, probably between 1687 and 1691, Jonathan[3] Higgins.[25, 34] Her report as administrator of the estate of her first husband was made on April 27, 1696, and showed that she "hath expended for ye Bringing up of Said Deceaseds Children" £39, "and She hath paid Debts due from Sd Estate about" £9, "And . . . there hath been Lost in Cattel . . . about" £28, leaving for distribution only about £13 of which she was granted one third, the son William[4] a double share or £6 "And LYDIA FREEMAN shall have three pound."[25] On April 27, 1696, Thomas[3] Freeman and John[3] Sparrow, who were respectively paternal and maternal uncles, were appointed "Gardians to william ffreeman and LYDIA FFREEMAN the two children of WILLIAM FFREEMAN Late of Eastham Deceased."[25] Though so little property came to them from their father each of their grandfathers made bequests to them. Maj. JOHN[2] FREEMAN in his will of 1716 left each of them £10 in money beside giving to William[4] "The house and land . . . wherein he now liveth,"[22] and Capt. JONATHAN[2] SPARROW in his will of 1706–7 stipulated that "William Freeman and LYDIA GODFREE shall have one half of their mother's part" of his estate.[25]

The children of WILLIAM[3] and LYDIA (SPARROW) FREEMAN, born probably at Eastham, were[22, 23, 25]

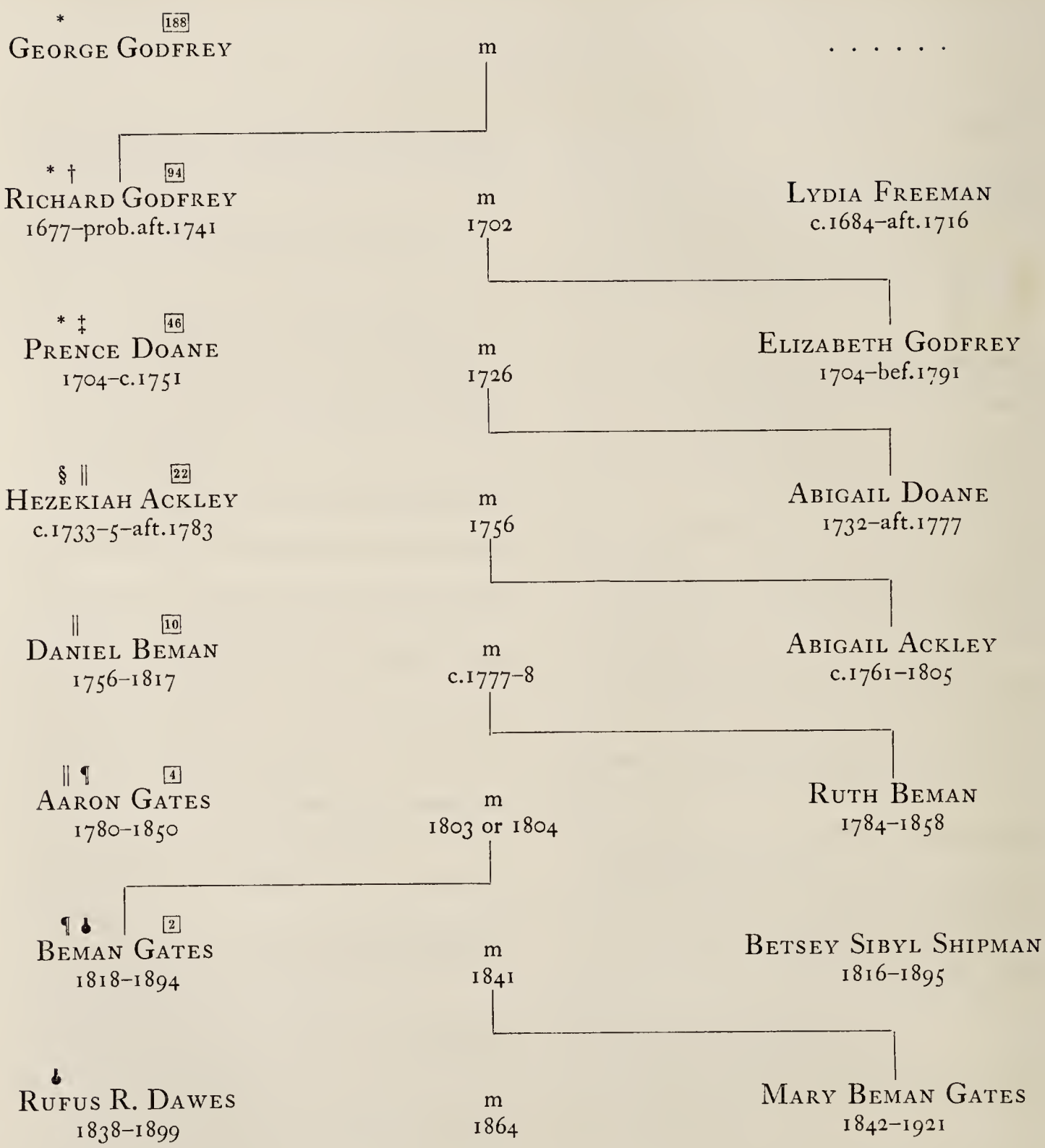
1. LYDIA[4], b. probably by 1684; d. after 1716; m. at Eastham,[22] Feb. 4, 1701–2, RICHARD[2] GODFREY[25] [see Godfrey, p. 368].

11. William[4], b. Feb. 24, 1686; d. Mar. 13, 1772, at Harwich; m. Oct. 16, 1711, Mercy Pepper.

REFERENCES

1. Acknowledgment is made to Mr. Willis Freeman, 7505 Stewart Ave., Chicago, Ill., for the English documents, facts and conclusions quoted under references 1a to 1g.
1a. Will of Edmond Freeman, P.C.C., Swann, 59.
1b. Will of Alice Freeman, P.C.C., Bowyer, 56.
1c. Parish Registers of Pulborough, County Sussex, Eng.
1d. Will of John Hodsoll, Jr., P.C.C., Barrington, 104.
1e. Will of John Hodsoll, Sr., P.C.C., Weldon, 101; Sussex Record Society, XXII, Parish Register of Cowfold, County Sussex, pp. 103, 192; Ibid., XIV, Notes on Inq. p.m., taken in Sussex, I, Hen. VII to 17th Century, No. 566; Ibid., I, Sussex Marriage Licenses, p. 247.
1f. Chancery Depositions, F $\frac{14}{17}$ Eliz.-Car. I, E. Freeman as guardian of his children vs. Hodsoll, Gratwick, Freeman et al.
1g. Parish Registers of Billingshurst, County Sussex, Eng.
2. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 266–8.
2a. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 12–24.
3. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1856, p. 404.
4. History of Lynn, Mass., A. Lewis & J. R. Newhall, 1865, pp. 153, 169.
5. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 57, 88–9; II, 173; III, 167; IX, 167; XII, 210–2.
6. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1858, I, pp. 616–7; 1862, II, pp. 18–20, 36–7, 44, 168.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 53, 57, 74; III, 46–7, 52, 173.
8. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1862, II, pp. 48–50, 54–65, 169–70, 208; The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 481–90, 545.
9. History of the Society of Friends in America, J. Bowden, 1850, I, 154; History of New England, D. Neal, 1720, I, 291–7, 302–30.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 54, 161; II, 8, 15, 27, 33, 38–40, 43–5, 47, 49, 52, 63, 68, 71, 74, 89, 94, 98, 104, 116; Colonial Lists, E. W. Peirce, 1881, pp. 4, 12–3, 19.
11. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 107, 155; II, 24, 35–6, 106; III, 89, 96; IV, 68; V, 121; VII, 192.
12. Ibid., I, 147, 149–50; II, 19, 22, 42; III, 62, 97, 167; IV, 40, 45; XII, 84, 118–9, 132–3, 143, 147, 151, 154–5, 179, 183, 188–9.
13. Ibid., XII, 90, 120–5, 127–33; Mayflower Descendant, I, 215–8.
14. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1858, I, pp. 461, 568, 616–8; 1862, II, pp. 36–7, 74–5, 153; History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Winsor, 1849, p. 260.
15. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 23–30.
16. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 134; II, 98; VIII, 9, 26, 56.
17. Ibid., II, 167–8; III, 7, 33; IV, 124; VI, 107.
18. Ibid., III, IV, V, VI, VII, see indices; Historical Memoir of New Plymouth, F. Baylies, 1866, I, pt. 1, p. 62; Colonial Lists, E. W. Peirce, 1881, pp. 4, 10, 18, 22, 68–9, 73.
19. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 168; III, 74, 153, 174; IV, 146; V, 74, 76, 134, 175, 263; VI, 169.
20. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 440, 557.
21. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1858, I, pp. 601–2; 1862, II, pp. 413–4.
22. Mayflower Descendant, III, 180; V, 143–51; VII, 20; XI, 2, 5.
23. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 34–44, 61–7; Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, p. 18.
24. Mayflower Descendant, VIII, 65–72; X, 7–8.
25. Ibid., III, 177; XII, 60; XIII, 19; XIV, 2–5, 193–203.
26. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 52–3; Munsey-Hopkins Genealogy, D. S. O. Lowell, 1920, pp. 99–103, 130.
27. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, C. W. Swift, pub., 1917, No. 31, J. W. Hawes, p. 31; 1916, No. 33, Josiah Paine, p. 29.
28. Plymouth Colony Records, VI, 107, 239; VIII, 209.
29. Ibid., IV, 167; V, 37, 46–7, 152, 186–7; VIII, 12, 106, 110, 141, 145; XI, 209.
30. Ibid., V, 222; VI, 100, 251–3; VII, 218.
31. Mayflower Descendant, III, 65–6, 205, 214; V, 143–51; XXV, 115.
32. Ibid., VIII, 244–5.
33. Foster Record, F. M. Hawes, 1889, pp. 50–4, 60–2.
34. Richard Higgins and his Descendants, K. C. Higgins, 1918, pp. 67, 86.
35. Notes and Queries, Ser. 9, V, January–June, 1900, p. 370.

GODFREY



* Eastham, Mass.
† Harwich, Mass.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ East Haddam, Conn.

‖ East Hartland, Conn.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♁ Marietta, Ohio.

GODFREY

GEORGE[1] GODFREY is the earliest established ancestor[1] of this line although it has been suggested that he may have been the son of Francis Godfrey of Plymouth[2] who was at least old enough for that relationship since he was granted land there in September, 1638, and was called "Goodman Godfray" in January following. But slight knowledge of GEORGE[1] is found beyond the number and names of his children.[1] His home was at Eastham[1] but neither the date of his arrival, marriage or death, nor the name of his wife has yet been found. A list of certain inhabitants of the town who had been "long resident here"[2] but had not claimed the right of franchise includes his name and thus in some degree accounts for the inability to find recorded reference to him as a freeman or participant in civic affairs.

A hint suggesting that he and perhaps his wife also, may have died when their children were small is seen in the statement that their daughter Mary[2] in her childhood became a member of the family of Thomas Calley and continued with them until her marriage, receiving all the attention foster parents could give. After her marriage in 1690 to Joseph[3] Doane (DANIEL[2], JOHN[1]), when Mr. Calley became aged and infirm they gave him a home, and on their promise "to keep and provide for him during life" he gave them all his estate by a deed dated[7] June 27, 1697 or 1698.

The children of GEORGE[1] GODFREY and (——), all born at Eastham, were[1, 2, 4, 5]

I. George[2], b. January 2, 1662; moved to Chatham[3] about 1690.
II. Samuel[2], b. January 27, 1664.
III. Moses[2], b. January 27, 1667; d. April 16, 1743;[6] m. Deborah[3] Cooke, daughter[3, 5] of *Josiah*[2] (*Josiah*[1]) and *Deborah* (*Hopkins*) *Cooke*.
IV. Hannah[2], b. April 25, 1669.
V. Mary[2], b. June 2, 1672; d. July 22, 1725; m. at Eastham, January 8, 1690, Joseph[3] Doane[7] (DANIEL[2], JOHN[1]).
VI. Ruth[2], b. January 1, 1675.
VII. RICHARD[2], see following.

viii. Jonathan[2], b. June 24, 1682; d. bet. March 7 and April 23, 1765;[3] m. October 30, 1707, Mercy Mayo,[8] daughter of Thomas and Barbara (Knowles).[3]
ix. Elizabeth[2], b. September 10, 1688.

RICHARD[2] GODFREY (*George*[1]) was born June 11, 1677, at Eastham[1] and married there on February 4, 1701–2, LYDIA[4] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 363]. He either settled first in the southern part of Eastham or removed to that locality, which in 1694 was incorporated as Harwich.[2] On June 28, 1712, he assisted in taking the inventory of the estate of widow Jane Snow of that place.[9]

The services of school teachers were hard to obtain in those days and the families of this town were numerous enough and sufficiently scattered to make it quite necessary to apportion the time of the teacher between the various sections of the settlement. To that end a committee was appointed in 1725 to "settle the school, and proportion the six removes, both as to the number of families and children belonging to each remove, till the school hath gone once around the town."[2] Each of these six "removes" accommodated a group of neighbors and the larger the number of families and children served, the longer was the session held at that place. The fourth such group, which included the children of RICHARD[2] GODFREY, consisted of twenty-five families possessing forty-seven children and the school was maintained there for eight months and one week.[2] One complete circuit of the town at that time required over forty-two months of teaching before a second session at the first "remove" was possible. This shows the handicap under which education was acquired then. The record of the apportionment of school sessions in May, 1741, was so worded as to make it appear that RICHARD[2] GODFREY was still living.[2]

Evidence of various relationships, in addition to material bequests, is found in both the will of Captain JONATHAN[2] SPARROW, dated March 10, 1706–7, and in that of Major JOHN[2] FREEMAN, dated June 1, 1716, when the former directed a division of one-half of their mother's share of his estate between LYDIA[4] FREEMAN, already the wife of RICHARD[2] GODFREY, and her brother William[4] Freeman; and when the latter testator gave £10 in money each, to his granddaughter LYDIA (FREEMAN) GODFREY and grandson William[4] Freeman.[14]

A discrepancy of dates, probably due partly to a worn condition of the records, is found in regard to the births of a part of the children of this family.*

The children of RICHARD[2] and LYDIA (FREEMAN) GODFREY, all born at Harwich, were[10]

*See footnote on page 369.

I. Hannah[3], b. January 26, [worn]*; m. at Harwich, July 3, 1727, Edward Gray.[2, 11]
II. ELIZABETH[3], b. December 20, 1704;[2, 10, 12] d. before July 25, 1791;[15] m. 1st, at Eastham, February 3, 1725–6, PRENCE[4] DOANE[13] [see Doane, p. 309]; m. 2nd, after 1751, (——) Thomas.[15]
III. Mary[3], b. August 23, 170 [worn]*; m. October 26, 1732, David[5] Hopkins[2, 12] (Nathaniel[4], Stephen[3], Giles[2], STEPHEN[1]).
IV. Lydia[3], b. July 27, 170 [worn]*; perhaps she who m. October 20, 1735, Eleazer Crosby, Jr.[14]
V. Phebe[3], b. June 24, 1 [worn].*
VI. Rebecca[3], b. July 7, 1709.*

REFERENCES

1. Mayflower Descendant, IV, 30.
2. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 375, 505–6, 509.
3. Library of Cape Code History and Genealogy, C. W. Swift, pub., No. 36, W. C. Smith, 1915, pp. 9–10; History of Chatham, Mass., W. C. Smith, pt. III, 1917, pp. 221–3.
4. Savage, II, 266.
5. New England Register, VI, 45.
6. Mayflower Descendant, VIII, 237.
7. Ibid., III, 178–9; Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 49–51.
8. Mayflower Descendant, V, 195.
9. Ibid., VII, 20; XVIII, 196.
10. Ibid., III, 175.
11. Ibid., XI, 174.
12. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 41, 66.
13. Mayflower Descendant, XVI, 75; Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, p. 74.
14. Mayflower Descendant, V, 145; XII, 59–60; XIX, 58, 118.
15. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, XI, 62–3; Guilford, Conn., Probate Records, V, 9, 70; VI, 251; Investigation of same by F. F. Starr, Middletown, Conn.

*Other sources give dates for these children as
I. Hannah[3], b. January 26, 1702[12] or 1703–4.[2]
III. Mary[3], b. August 23, 1707.[2, 12]
IV. Lydia[3], b. July 27, 1709.[2, 12]
V. Phebe[3], b. June 24, 1711[12] or 1716.[2]
VI. Rebecca[3], b. July 27, 1709,[2] or July 7, 1716.[12]

GRANT

* † [390] Matthew Grant 1601–1681	m 1st 1625	Priscilla . . . 1601–1644
† ‡ [194] Michael Humphrey –bet.1688–95	m 1647	Priscilla Grant 1626–aft.1669
§ [96] John Shipman 1664–by 1718	m 1686	Martha Humphrey 1663–aft.1697
§ [48] John Shipman 1687–1742	m 1715	Elizabeth Kirtland 1688 or 1689–1778
§ [24] Samuel Shipman 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733–1806
§ ‖ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
§ ‖ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♦ ‖ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‖ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Dorchester, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

GRANT

MATTHEW[1] GRANT was born* in England[2] on October 27, 1601, and married there on November 16, 1625, PRISCILLA (——). He, with his wife, eldest child and perhaps also his mother or mother-in law,† embarked[1, 1a] in the "Mary and John" at Plymouth, England, on March 20, or 30, 1629–30, and landed in Massachusetts on May 30, following. The company on this vessel included[1b] two ministers, the Reverend John Maverick and the Reverend John Warham,‡ as well as ROGER[1] CLAPP and THOMAS[1] FORD [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I, for Clapp and Ford as well as Balch (infra)]. The master of the vessel, Captain Squeb, had agreed to land his passengers at the Charles River, but at the last moment he arbitrarily refused to do so and put them ashore with their baggage, freight and stock at Nantasket Point,§ now Hull [see map on p. 373], which ROGER[1] CLAPP, in his Memoirs,[1] called "a forlorn Place in this Wilderness." Only by borrowing a boat from some of the earlier settlers could they remove their goods to Charlestown.[1, 1b, 2] After a few days they found a suitable place for settlement on a neck of land at Dorchester which, with but little fencing, made their cattle secure.[12, 15, 16] Here, on May 18, 1631, MATTHEW[1] was admitted to freemanship[2] [see Appendix, p. 852].

In 1633 he was listed as owning two cows and as being obligated to share

*The English origin of MATTHEW[1] GRANT and his wife PRISCILLA (——) has been elaborated upon in a printed volume[6] and accepted by the Grant Family Association, but eminent authority on English research has revealed[6a] the absolute lack of evidence to substantiate the said pedigree.

†She died[2] in Windsor, Connecticut, on May 19, 1640, being recorded, not by name, but as the mother of MATTHEW[1].

‡The Reverend John Warham became the first pastor at Windsor, Connecticut.

§About twelve miles across the bay from Boston. One version of this story is that Captain Squeb insisted that he had agreed only to take his passengers to the mouth of the river and that his lack of knowledge of the coast thereabouts made any other landing place dangerous. Protest on their part against this "merciless misdemeanor" was in vain but the rights in the matter are suggested by the fact that Captain Squeb was later fined in England for his conduct. The friendly rescue of these passengers by the loan of a boat and by assistance in rowing it, to move them and their goods to a temporary place of abode, was accomplished by "'the old planters,' who, independent of the Plymouth Colony, had settled above them on Massachusetts Bay some years before Endicott and his company arrived at Salem." Among the old planters were ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] WOODBURY and JOHN[1] BALCH.[18]

in the fence-building of the town to the extent of twenty feet of fence per cow.[11] On May 24, 1634, he was appointed fence-viewer for the "Westfield" and on April 17, 1635, he, with another, was ordered to proceed with the measuring of the great lots, receiving for that service two pence per acre from the owners of the land. On November 11, 1635, he and THOMAS[1] FORD were on a committee to lay out large tracts to several inhabitants.[11]

Though some of the early records are lost, it is evident that he had several grants of land at Dorchester for there was a sale in 1642 of "that great lot that was granted MATHEW GRANT that was about 3 ackers within the fence of the great lots . . . and also six ackers of land in the neck of land. . . ."[11]

An unrest soon arose among the settlers in Dorchester and several other Massachusetts towns. Exhaustive study shows that this was probably, in part, because of rumors of the rich lands down the Connecticut River, but it was as surely due to dissatisfaction with the form of government[5] obtaining in Massachusetts whereby only church members were franchised. The desire for freedom which had brought many men across the seas was in certain respects noticeable principally by its absence. After repeated requests to the General Court, and long discussion by it, permission was finally granted to some of the people of Dorchester, including MATTHEW[1] GRANT, to form a new settlement on the Connecticut River.*

He was one of the party that went from that town in the summer of 1635 to select a site for a plantation[2] in the Connecticut Valley. A settlement had already been made near what is now Windsor by members of the Plymouth Colony who had gone there in 1633; they had bought land of the Indians to add to their holdings near Cape Cod and had built a trading-house in which they had since lived. A special service was rendered New Englanders by these Plymouth men in holding this land against the Dutch.† On arrival they

* At about the same time similar permission was given to some inhabitants of Watertown and to some of Newtowne, now Cambridge. The Dorchester people settled what is now Windsor, Connecticut, and among the early residents there in addition to MATTHEW[1] GRANT were[5] THOMAS[1] FORD, EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD, THOMAS[1] GUNN, ROBERT[1] HAYWARD, GEORGE[1] HULL, MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY, JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS, HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY, RICHARD[1] SAXTON and WILLIAM[1] THRALL. The Watertown, Massachusetts, people founded what became Wethersfield, Connecticut, and among the early settlers there were[5] NATHANIEL[1] FOOTE, ROBERT[1] COE and THOMAS[1] KILBOURN. Hartford, Connecticut, which was founded by people from Newtowne, Massachusetts, included among its early proprietors[5] THOMAS[1] UPSON, THOMAS[1] BLISS, JOHN[1] CLARKE, GEORGE[1] GRAVE, THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD, MATTHEW[1] MARVIN, JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, STEPHEN[1] POST, WILLIAM[1] PRATT and RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR.[10] [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I for Ford and Upson.]

† Almost simultaneously with the Plymouth group, some Dutchmen had made a settlement on the Connecticut, had built the "House of Hope" near what is now Hartford and had laid claim to the whole valley. They also made an attempt to make a settlement at Saybrook and to thereby control the river, but Lion Gardiner with ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and a few others, preceded them slightly at that strategic point and thus held it for the English.

EARLY SEABOARD SETTLEMENTS OF VARIOUS ANCESTORS

had found cleared tracts along the river which had been used for planting and for meadow by Indian tribes subsequently exterminated by a smallpox epidemic. These Plymouth colonists settled on what they called Plymouth Meadow, a tract about one hundred acres in extent, and planned to hold for their friends who might come later the "Great Meadow" comprising six hundred acres[7] [see map on p. 569], both of which they had bought from the Indians.

Jonathan[2] Brewster, head of the Plymouth company, disturbed by the aggression of these several committees from Massachusetts Bay looking for desirable sites for settlement, wrote home under date[5, 14] of July 6, 1635, that

"Ye Masschuset men are coming almost dayly, some by water & some by land, who are not yet determined wher to setle, though some have a great mind to ye place we are upon, and which was last bought. . . . I shall doe what I can to withstand them. I hope they will hear reason; as that we were here first, and entered with much difficulty and danger both in regard of ye Dutch & Indeans, and bought ye land (to your great charge, allready disbursed) and have since held here a chargeable possession, and kept ye Dutch from further incroaching, which would els long before this day have possessed all and kept out all others, &c. I hope these and such like arguments will stoppe them. It was your will we should use their persons & messengers kindly, & so we have done, and doe dayly, to your great charge; for ye first company had well nie starved had it not been for this house, for want of victuals; I being forced to supply 12 men for 9 days togeather; and those which came last I entertained the best we could, helping both them (& ye other) with canows & guids. . . . Also I gave their goods house roome according to their ernest request. . . . And what trouble & charge I shall be at further I know not; for they are coming dayly, and I expecte these back againe from below, whither they are gone to view ye countrie. All which trouble & charg we under goe for their occasion may give us just cause (in ye judgmente of all wise & understanding men) to hold and keep that we are settled upon."

"The greatest differences fell between those of Dorchester plantation and them hear; for they [of Dorchester] set their minde on that place, which they [of Plymouth] had not only purchased of ye Indeans, but wher they had builte; intending only (if they [of Dorchester] could not remove them) that they [of Plymouth] should have but a smale moyety left to ye house* as to a

*The trading house or garrison in which the entire group of adventurers from Plymouth lived.

single family; whose [Dorchester] doings and proceedings were conceived to be very injurious [to Plymouthites] to attempt not only to intrude themselves into ye rights & possessions of others, but in effect to thrust them out of all."[14] Ultimately, however, "for peace sake (though they conceived they suffered much in this thing) they thought it better to let them [of Dorchester] have it upon as good termes as they could gett; and so they fell to treaty . . . this was ye conclusion they came unto in ye end after much adoe: that they [of Plymouth] should retaine their house, and have the 16. parte* of all they had bought of ye Indeans; and ye other [Dorchester] should have all ye rest of ye land; leaving such a moyety to those of New-towne as they [of Plymouth] reserved for them. . . . Also they [of Dorchester] were to pay according to proportion what had been disbursed to ye Indeans for ye purchass. Thus was ye controversie ended, but the unkindnes not so soone forgotten. They of New-towne delt more fairly, desiring only what they [Plymouth] could conveniently spare. . . ."[5, 14]

It was about two years[8] later that a settlement of the difficulty was accomplished. The grasping attitude of the Dorchester men can hardly be admired or excused though, at the time they became squatters on the disputed tract, there was the extenuating circumstance that another interloping party was endeavoring to take it over if they did not do so. At the time of which Jonathan Brewster's letter speaks, and while part of the Dorchester men were exploring up and down the river, there appeared a vessel from England carrying a group called the "Stiles party" with their supplies, to start a settlement for certain Englishmen designated as the "Lords and Gentlemen" who claimed to hold a patent† for all of Connecticut, ignoring the pretensions of the Dutch, of Plymouth and of Massachusetts Bay. The confusion of claims already existing was further complicated by the intent of these later arrivals to settle on the coveted "Great Meadow." The Dorchester envoys at once solved the matter by claiming precedence of arrival, by taking possession of it and leaving some of their party, including MATTHEW[1] GRANT, to lay out lots thereon, while others went back hurriedly to Dorchester to bring some of their families on at once, thus making their possession secure instead of waiting until the following year as had been originally planned.[5, 7, 15] A small plot was given to the Stiles party on which they could be housed and

* They agreed to retain only one-sixteenth part of their purchase or "one man's share" of about forty-four acres on which their house was built and to receive a proportionate refund of the Indian purchase price.[5, 14]

† The early patents were very ambiguous in their wording and the boundaries specified were indeterminate. Those who made them were quite ignorant of the geography of the new world and frequently grants overlapped.

could unload their vessel, which at once started back to England for further instructions and which foundered on the way.

In pursuance of the plan for immediate removal sixty men, women and children [see Olmstead, p. 612], on October 15, 1635, started from Massachusetts for the Connecticut valley,[15] most of them being from Dorchester and some from Newtown.[7, 9] They sent the larger part of their supplies by boat from the Bay. While plans for settlement were rapidly maturing up-river, a settlement was begun and a fort was built at its mouth, now Saybrook, by Lion Gardiner, ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and others for the "Lords and Gentlemen." In spite of the earlier contention between the "Stiles party" and the Dorchester men, this fort built for the Englishmen proved to be the salvation of these Massachusetts people when, in the dead of winter they left their rude shelters and, to avoid starvation, started down to the river's mouth hoping to meet their shiploads of provisions.[7, 14] The vessels had, however, been cast away on Brown's Island, a shallow near the Gurnet's nose [see map on p. 685], and the men were all drowned.[19] Most of their goods washed ashore on the Plymouth coast, and the care they received there forms a significant contrast to the conduct of the Massachusetts men who forcibly took over the Connecticut meadow. The goods were "driven all alonge ye shore, and strowed up & downe at high-water marke. But ye Govr caused them to be gathered up, and drawn togeather, and appointed some to take an inventory of them, and others to wash & drie such things as had need thereof; by which means most of ye goods were saved, and restored to ye owners. Afterwards another boate of theirs (going thither likewise) was cast away . . . and such goods as came ashore were preserved for them."[14] This conduct, as well as their tolerant and peaceable attitude in regard to the "Great Meadow" controversy, displays an admirable Christian spirit on the part of Plymouth.

After laying out the lots at the chosen location MATTHEW[1] GRANT returned to Massachusetts for the winter, but removed permanently to Connecticut[2, 17] in the spring of 1636. The temporary habitations of the few who remained on the Connecticut River that first winter are said to have been excavations in the side of the hill, with the loosened earth thrown up at the sides and rafters placed across for the roof, which was thatched with coarse wild grass so that only one end of the hut required boards or was visible to passers-by.[7] For a time the settlement was called Dorchester, after their Massachusetts home, but in February, 1636–7, it was renamed Windsor.[10]

MATTHEW[1] continued indefinitely his services as surveyor at Windsor and became the town clerk in 1652. He held the latter office for nearly thirty years and served so acceptably in it that he has been called the "model town clerk." The records he kept covered a wide scope, including vital statistics, land transfers, town business and church affairs. They were complete in detail and were interpolated with explanations and descriptions which make them invaluable now. The church records kept by him were lost from 1681 until about 1800, having probably been considered a personal possession rather than of official character and having been, apparently, in the possession of some of his descendants. They were finally found in a heap of rubbish in an old house which was being demolished.[3,7] He frequently served on juries from 1644 to 1668. In 1651 and again in 1660 he assisted in surveying the line between Windsor and Hartford. He was a selectman for fourteen or more years and, in 1651 and 1654, was chosen to "lay the rate" for his home town.[2] The following entry in the town record shows the varied character of his work:

"Also this Day acounts taken of the Town debbts——
for impliment by MAT. GRANT for the Towne the yeare past as followeth:

for time spent about ordering the last spring Town rat of 49[l] wth uarious acounts wth men for worke Don, keeping of the acounts of seural rats to distingwish them	£2– 9–0
for ordering the list of the towne stat last year and 2 days spent at hartford about it	0–15–6
for drawing the state into the book for the rule of rating making m[r] warams rat in october and publishing of it from howse to howse	0–16–0
for transcribing 18 court orders and going with my sonn: and others podang line and som time alredy bounding wayes. 4. days	1– 1–6
	5– 2–0"

His "Rules for Measuring Land" taken from his manuscript note book are as follows:

"Rules which I have larned by experance in practic for helpes in measureing Land. In the euse of the Compas—
In runing upon a poynt euery fiue rod opens one rod betwene to poyantes, fower rod upon twenty and so onward. Runing out upon three poyntes 6 rod

in length and drawe a strayght loyne from the eand of the first poynt to the eand of the third poynt; and the said loyne will cut of one quarter of a rod of the length of the second poynt in the midell;

but drawe a way the sayd loyne upon a square from the eand of the first poynt thin the second poynt will be six rod and a half—and the third poynt will be seuen rod and one quarter in length."[3, 17]

PRISCILLA, the first wife of MATTHEW[1], died at Windsor April 27, 1644, aged forty-three years and two months, and he married secondly, at that place,[2] on May 29, 1645, the widow Susanna Rockwell, daughter[12] of Bernard Capen, who died November 13, 1666. He spent the last years of his life in the home of his son John[2] Grant to whom he left the bulk of his estate. His will was dated December 9, 1681, and his death occurred one week later on December 16. His inventory, taken January 10, following, showed a total valuation of £119–18–06 aside from such land as he had earlier given to his eldest son. The will contained a "legassy of fiue pownd to be payd in Country paye, two yeers after my decease, alsoe . . . all my wareinge cloathes" to "my Daughter HUMFERRYES."[2]

The children of MATTHEW[1] and PRISCILLA (——) GRANT were[2, 3, 4, 12, 13, 16, 17]

I. PRISCILLA[2], b.[9] September 14, 1626, in England; d. after October 21, 1669; m.[4] at Windsor, October 14, 1647, MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY [see Humphrey, p. 471].
II. Matthew[2], d. September 10, 1639, at Windsor.
III. Samuel[2], b. November 12, 1631, at Dorchester; d. September 10, 1718; m. May 27, 1658, Mary Porter (John).
IV. Tahan[2], b. February 3, 1633–4, at Dorchester; d. May 30, 1693; m. January 22, 1662, Anna or Hannah Palmer.
V. John[2], b. April 30, 1642, at Windsor; d. July 22, 1684; m. August 2, 1666, Mary[3] Hull (JOSIAH[2], GEORGE[1]).[2, 3, 17]

REFERENCES

1. Memoirs of ROGER CLAPP, Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1844, I, 19, 39–41; 53–4; History of New England, J. Winthrop, 1853, I, 33–4.
1a. Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester, T. M. Harris, 1804, pp. 4–6.
1b. Annals of Dorchester, J. Blake, Collections of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1846, II, 10; History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 41, 51, 55, 60, 73; Pope's Pioneers, pp. 100, 172, 196, 247, 362; History of Fairfield County, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, 303–4.
2. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 99–110.
3. Grant Family, A. H. Grant, 1898, pp. 1–2; Ancestry of Gen. U. S. Grant, E. C. Marshall, 1869, pp. 6–25, 100–1; Report of the Grant Family Association, 1899, pp. 9–17.
4. Humphreys Family in America, F. Humphreys, 1883, I, pp. 98, 112.
5. History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 19–36; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, pp. 17–63; History of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 17–22.

6. Report of the Grant Family Association, 1914, p. 25.
6a. Genealogical Magazine, N. S. 3, 1915–6, pp. 63, 128.
7. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 24–39, 45–55, 157, 871–89.
8. Ibid., 1891, I, 22–6.
9. Ibid., I, 33–7, 52.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 7.
11. Boston Record Commissioners Reports, IV, 1, 6, 10, 12, 52; Early Records of Dorchester, Mass., W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 6, 13, 18, 20.
12. Savage, I, 333; II, 292; III, 558.
13. New England Register, XXI, 174.
14. History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford pub., 1901, pp. 402–8.
15. Journal of John Winthrop, pub. 1790, p. 89.
16. History of Stonington, Conn., R. A. Wheeler, 1900, p. 400.
17. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 302–4.
18. History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1884, I, 302–4, 310–1.
19. The Journal of John Winthrop, 1790, p. 87; History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1898, I, 41; History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 232.

GRAVES

* [872] George Graves –1673	m 1st	. . . . . –bef.1670
* † [436] John Graves c.1633–1695	m 1st 1657	Elizabeth Stillwell –c.1668–9
† ‡ [218] John Graves 1658–1726	m 1685	Elizabeth Foote 1664–1730
§ ‖ [108] Cornelius Hull 1687–1756	m 1715	Mehitable Graves 1688–1747
‖ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785
¶ ♣ ◇ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
¶ ♣ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
¶ ♣ ♦ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
# ♣ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♣ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Hartford, Conn.
† Guilford, Conn.
‡ Madison, Conn.
§ Killingworth, Conn.
‖ Durham, Conn.
¶ Saybrook, Conn.

♣ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
\# Montague and Amherst, Mass.
⊙ Middletown, Conn.
◇ Salem, Ohio.

GRAVES*

GEORGE[1] GRAVES, weaver, born in England, was an original proprietor at Hartford,[1] Connecticut, in 1635. Evidence tending toward an establishment of the English origin of this family is found[1a] in the will of "widow Anne Grave of St. Buttolph without Algate, London," which was dated February 10, 1675, with a codicil added March 1, 1675–6, and was proved March 20, 1676. This document bequeathed a considerable amount of real estate and money to her two minor grandsons, Josiah and Jonathan Hardey, and, failing issue by them, "then to George Grave the elder of Hartford in Connecticot in New England and JOHN GRAVE of Guilford in the County of New Haven in New England and to their own natural sister living also in New England. . . ."[1a] These men can be none other than George[2] and JOHN[2], sons of GEORGE[1], and doubtless the sister referred to was Mary (Graves) Dow, who was the only daughter mentioned in the will[6] of GEORGE[1] GRAVES in 1673. This English document also gave definitely and unreservedly £30 to be distributed among the children of these three mentioned New England members[1a] of this family and, though no relationship is stated, it seems highly probable that such existed.

GEORGE[1] was dignified in Hartford by the title of Deacon[1] and was chosen as representative to the General Court, perhaps in 1646, and surely[3] in 1656–7 and was a selectman[2a] in 1649. His name is one of those carved on the Founders' Memorial Monument in that town.[2] In 1644 he testified relative to the verbal will of Thomas Crump and in June of that year received high compliment as to his ability in his trade, by the adoption by the Court of the resolution that

> "Whereas by reson of the badnes and rottennes of much yarne and other defects that fall out in the ordering of yt, both lynnen and woolen, many weauers are discouridged to goe on in their trade.
>
> "It is, therefore, Ordered that two experienced men shall be chosen

* Often the final letter was omitted.

in ech Towne who shall haue power to judge and determine the price or rate that any weauer in the said Towne shall reseaue by the yard for such yarne, who shall vewe and make tryall thereof, vpon complaynt made vnto thē; and whereas they are many tymes much hindred by seekeing for their pay, they are now to retayne their worke in their custody vntill they receaue their pay for yt, Joseph Magott & GEORGE GRAUES are chosen for Hartford. . . ."[3]

In 1639 GEORGE[1] GRAVES is shown to have owned twelve pieces of land, including a home lot of twelve acres [see map on p. 613], and a proprietor's right in the undivided lands, by which he received additional tracts[4] at least as late as 1671. A copy of the mill rates shows that his tax[4] for that improvement totaled, in 1655, £1–02–00, in 1656, £1–09–09, and in 1657, £1–00–04. His son JOHN[2] removed in early manhood to Guilford, but his namesake, George[2], spent most of his life in Hartford, removing only temporarily (from about 1650 to 1659) to Middletown.[3, 23] GEORGE[1] and his son George[2] were included in a list dated October, 1669, of freemen of Hartford and, in the following October, one of these two men was appointed "to be the sealer and approuer of the measures for the seuerall countyes, and allso for the towne of Hartford."[8] In March, 1658–9, one of this name had been appointed on a committee to "discover" the lands for six miles up and down the river [as well as east and west] in the vicinity of Thirty Mile Island, later Haddam.[23]

The name of the first wife of GEORGE[1], who was the mother of a part, and perhaps all, of his children, has not been found but she or his second wife may have been a sister of William Andrews, first schoolmaster of Hartford, who called GEORGE[1] GRAVES his "brother." He married secondly, before February 12, 1669–70, when they became members of the Second Church in Hartford,[5a] Sarah (——), who survived him and whom he called, in his will, "mother-in-law"[6] to his son George[2]. He made a bequest of several pieces of land to his son JOHN[2], established the fact of a deceased daughter's marriage by giving two cows to "son-in-law Jonathan Deming" and suggested the earlier existence of a third daughter who married William Markham[6a] by remembering "grand daughter Priscilla Markham" who, after the second marriage and removal of her father, became an inmate of her grandfather's home.[6a] A decided contrast to tax evaders of today is seen in the clause, "My will is that all my Land shall pay their rates, according to their proportion, to the Maintenance of the Ministree at the new meeting house."[6] This will was dated September 17, 1673, and proved November 5, following,

but his death had occurred in Hartford before September 30, for on that day an inventory of his estate was taken showing a valuation[6] of over £278.

The children of GEORGE[1] GRAVES and his first wife, probably some of them born in England, and in unknown order, were[1, 4, 5, 6, 13]

I. George[2], b. abt. 1631; d. December 3, 1692, at Hartford; called "Marshal"; m. there, April 2, 1651, Elizabeth Ventres[15] [probably a sister of WILLIAM[1]].
II. JOHN[2], see following.
III. Sarah[2], b. (—); d. June 5, 1668, at Wethersfield; m., November 21, 1660, Jonathan[2] Deming[1, 6, 7] [nephew of NATHANIEL[1] and ELIZABETH (DEMING) FOOTE].
IV. Mary[2], d. after[6] September, 1673, and undoubtedly after[1a] February, 1675; m., December 12, 1665, Samuel Dow.[15]
V. Priscilla[2], d. before 1658;[6, 6a] m., as his first wife, William Markham of Middletown, who removed to Hadley, Massachusetts.[22]
VI. probably a daughter who m. Thomas Thornton.*

JOHN[2] GRAVES (*George*[1]) was born about 1633, probably in England,[11, 12] died December 31, 1695, at Guilford, married first, at that place,[1, 11, 12] on November 26, 1657, ELIZABETH[2] STILLWELL [see Stillwell, p. 782], and married secondly, about 1670, Elizabeth Crittenden.[1, 13] He was probably the man of that name who became a freeman in May, 1657, and was definitely listed as such among the inhabitants[8] of Guilford in September, 1669, for he apparently removed to that town about the time[18] of his marriage in 1657 and thereafter made it his permanent home. He was a blacksmith by trade. In October, 1667, he was confirmed as ensign of the train band and, from about 1676, or perhaps as early as 1666, to the time of his death, held the position of Deacon and, in May, 1690, was made captain of the local military company.[8, 12, 13, 18] He represented his town in General Court in 1670–9, 1681–2, 1684, 1686–93 and attended probably more than 37 sessions.[8, 11, 12] He was town clerk from 1673 to 1685 and "townsman" at least[12, 13] in 1669.

As the union of New Haven and Connecticut Colonies became a certainty, Guilford voted, in February, 1664–5, that JOHN[2] GRAVES and two others should "auditate the books of account belonging to the Towne, both Towne and Minister's Booke of accounts & the accounts about the mill."[11] In July, 1672, he was directed to join with the townsmen in getting "'Arter' Smith of Hartford to come to mend the Towns' Arms" which, not long hence, were to find use in King Philip's War; in November, 1675, he was "appoynted" by the Council and in October, 1676, by the General Court, as one to "signe

*That man in 1699 owned a home earlier possessed by Marshal George[2] Graves whom Thornton called "my brother."[21] The term "brother" was also applied to George[2] in 1676, in the will of Sarah (——) Lord, widow of Capt. Richard[2] Lord (Thomas[1]).[27]

bills in their respective plantations for what is due from the country"[9] and, in March, 1676, he was chosen to aid the townsmen to see to the building of fortifications and to call out all males of fourteen years or over to assist.[11]

The town voted in February, 1677, to build a new schoolhouse "for the use of the school and watch," and the townsmen, with JOHN[2] GRAVES, were to fix its dimensions and "agree with a man or men for the building of it."[11] At that period the requirements of the schoolmaster included the ability "to instruct all sorts and that from their A.B.C., and to be helpful in preaching when required."[11, 14] For this service the yearly remuneration was about £20 "in current county pay," meaning produce.

After the affiliation with Connecticut, all towns were required to take out charters and JOHN[2] was appointed one of a committee to arrange for that formality and, in 1685, was named in that document as one of the twelve grantees representing the town.[11, 18] He frequently served in such ways as to establish boundaries or arbitrate disputed ones; to treat with neighboring towns; "to draw up a map . . . and to consider some way of regulating defects . . . in the streets and highways"; to arrange for the engagement of a minister and in many other ways.

His first marriage brought him the property of JASPER[1] STILLWELL on whose homestead he lived, on the east side of South Lane which is now called Harbor Street.[12] In addition to these holdings he bought various lands, received[9, 13] by grant 100 acres in 1673 and, after his death, his estate gained by another grant[9] in 1698.

About 1670–5 it was deemed desirable to have settlement made[10, 11, 25] in the eastern part of Guilford, now Madison [see map on p. 195] and to that end allottments of land were offered to her residents with certain concessions as to taxation and with the understanding that unless they each built "a convenient house" thereon within three years that they would forfeit ten shillings per year. Being called "the Smith from Hartford" JOHN[2] GRAVES acquired a grant on these terms, and in 1675 built a house on it which he probably never occupied, but which became the home of his son, JOHN[3] at or before his marriage in 1685. This house, which was built in the solid and enduring fashion of that time, "is still standing [see plate XVII p. 384] and is now [1923] occupied by the sixth generation of the descendants of JOHN[2] GRAVES and from parlor to attic is a museum of antiquities."[25]

Very intimate and interesting knowledge of this family has come to light by means of an article[10] written by Annie Kelsey Maher, a descendant of

HOME BUILT IN 1675 BY JOHN[2] GRAVES, OCCUPIED BY HIS SON JOHN[3] GRAVES AND BY DESCENDANTS TO THE PRESENT DAY

Courtesy of Connecticut Colonial Dames, and Yale University Press[25]

JOHN[2] in the eighth generation, relative to an account book, now in her possession, for which he sent to England about 1677, received in due time and used, not only for debits and credits, but also for many more personal items, as well as family records, so that a study of it pictures for us various phases of the life he and his family lived and justifies numerous excerpts. The volume itself is leather bound, "about six inches wide and more than twice as long, with leaves of coarse, strong paper and slender tape-like leather thongs attached to the front edge of each cover by which it was securely tied together when not in use. A most dignified and substantial book, as befitted a man of the character and standing of JOHN[2] GRAVE. . . . JOHN[2] GRAVE, his son JOHN[3], his grandson John[4] and his great-grandson Elias[5] left their records in this book. The first item is dated March 6, 1678–9. ". . . JOHN[2] had his own ideas in the matter of bookkeeping. Having written, in his best hand, on the inside of the front cover:

'JOHN GRAVE, SENR.*
His Booke'

he proceeded to record on the top of the first page the fact that he had that day 'reconed with Mr. Pitman and balanced all accounts.' . . . The family of JOHN[2] . . . may fairly be taken as a representative one among the well-to-do households of that time. In the colony of Guilford he was 'a citizen of credit and renown,' a deacon of the church, a deputy to the General Court and 'eke a train-band captain.' By his marriage with the only child of JASPER[1] STILLWELL he had come into possession of a large estate to which he was constantly adding by his own energy and thrift. . . . His carefully kept accounts give a good idea of the cost of bringing up a flock of little Puritans in the closing years of the seventeenth century. . . .

"To begin at the foundation, here are items from his shoemaker's bill, taken from an account extending from 1679 to 1694. No small part of the pleasure of the old book is the delightfully original lack of method in spelling.

Mr. John Collynes, Cred.	£	s.	d.
August: 1679: By a paire of shoose for Sarah[3]	0–	4–	6
By a paire of shoose for JOHN[3]	0–	8–	6
By a paire of shoose for myselfe	0–	8–	6
By mending JOHN's[3] shoose	0–	2–	9
By Nathaniell's[3] shoose	0–	2–	8
By Abegalls[3] shoose	0–	3–	9
By a paire of pumps for JOHN[3]	0–	4–	0
By a paire of shoose for my wife	0–	6–	0
By soalling a paier of shows for Nathaniell[3]	0–	2–	6

* Capitalization of names and insertion of generation numbers are added to these excerpts by the compiler.

"Ready money was scarce in the colony of Guilford in those days. Each family drew most of the material for its food and clothing from its own farm; and the few articles not thus supplied were paid for in farm products or in labor. The other side of John Collin's account shows how he was paid for his 'shoose':

Mr. John Collynes, Debt.	£	s.	d.
Aprell: 79: For one bushell measslin*	0	4	6
For one bushell inden corne	0	2	8
Octtobr: 79: For on cow hide	0	12	6
For 21 lbs, of flax	1	0	0
Anno: 80: For on steere hid, wate 63 lbs.	0	15	9
May: anno: 80: On day worke on JOHN[3]	0	2	6
Aprell: 83: For five bushells of barly	1	2	6
March: 83: For 8: bushells of bark	1	16	0
Jenewary: 88: For one bushell of wheat	0	5	6

"From this it appears that John Collins tanned his own leather, as did most of the shoemakers of that time. It also shows the Grave farm supplied not only the 'inden corne' and 'barly' which paid for JOHN'S[3] and 'Abegall's[3] shoose,' but also the leather of which they were made and the bark for tanning it. . . .

"Evidently Guilford supported two tailors, between whom JOHN[2] divided his patronage. William Jones' account contains these items:

	£	s.	d.
Aprell: 80: By makeing JOHN[3] a sute	0	10	0
By making Sarah[3] a samar	0	8	0
Anno: 84: By makeing a sarge coat for me	0	7	0
Anno: 90: By cutting a coat for Joseph[3]	0	2	0
By cutting a rideing houd	0	0	6
Octobr: 93: By makeing my wife a wastcoat	0	4	0
By mending leather britches	0	1	0
By making a muff	0	1	3

"What was the 'wascoat' like which Mistress ELIZABETH GRAVE wore? Who, in this year 1900, has any idea of the 'samar' made for her daughter Sarah[3]? A reference to the dictionary reveals the fact that it was 'a coat with skirts reaching to the knee.'

"These items, taken from the account of the rival tailor, show him to have been a man of versatile talents, able on occasion to overstep the limitations of his trade:

Wm. Stone, Cred.	£	s.	d.
Mar. 3th: 79–80: By makeing trousers and cutting bunnits	0	2	0
By making two bunnits	0	1	8
By cutting out a wastcoat and sleeves	0	0	5
By makeing a sarge wastcoat	0	2	6

* Meslin, which appears under various spellings, was a mixture of rye and wheat.

"The debit side of William Stone's account has these items:

	£	s.	d.
By a mistak in account for cutting and makeing hay	0	1	0
March: 81: For 4 lbs. and ¾ of veale	0	1	2
For a jorney of himsolf and horse to hamonasett	0	5	0
For wrighting	0	2	6
Aprell: 89: For 12 pound tobaco	0	9	0

"The 'sarge' and 'karsie' for JOHN'S[2] coat and his son's 'wascoat' were made of the wool from his own sheep. From various accounts scattered through the book we can trace its progress from the sheep's back till in the bravery of JOHN'S[2] Sunday 'sute.'

	£	s.	d.
Thomas Wright, Cred.			
Aprell: 88: By shaving 11 sheep	0	1	0
Widow Bartlett, Cred.			
By carding 1 pound and half of wool	0	0	9
By dieing and spineing two pd. wooll	0	4	0
Isaac Everrest, Cred.			
Nov: 93: By weaveing 4 yards and three quarters of carsie	0	4	9
By weaving, fulling and dying 7 yards of plaine cloth	0	17	6

"An entry made by JOHN[3] [his son] in 1718, gives a hint of the color which the wool was dyed.

	£	s.	d.
For coulering a pound of sheep's wool blew	0	1	0

"Probably the popularity of 'blew' wool accounts for the frequent charge of an 'ounce of endigo.'

"The house linen and also JOHN'S[2] shirts were supplied from the flax that grew in his fields. In the winter his wife and daughter wore dresses of linsey-woolsey, a mixture of linen and wool. The following entries give the cost of manufacturing these cloths:

	£	s.	d.
Anno: 82: For spining 7 pound ¾ wool	0	11	9
For spining 2 pound flax	0	3	0
June: 84: For weaving 5 yards and a ½ and 2 nails* of Linsiwoolsie cloth	0	3	11
July: By weaveing 40 yards Linen cloth	1	1	6
August: 84: By weaveing 6 yds, tow cloth	0	3	0

"The material in the last item, made of the coarser parts of the flax after the finer parts had been separated by hetcheling, furnished JOHN'S[2] summer 'sutes,' and often appears in his accounts disguised as 'toe-cloth.'

"Without doubt Mistress GRAVE and her daughters spent the winter evenings knitting their 'blew' yarn into stockings; but there were ten pairs of feet to be covered, and their fingers, were they ever so nimble, could not

*A nail was 2¼ inches or the sixteenth part of a yard.

always make the supply meet the demand, so we find an occasional item like this:

Isaac Everrest, Cred.	£ s. d.
Aprell: 79: By knitting on paire stokings	0– 5– 0

"When we remember that JOHN'S[2] 'leather britches' extended only to his knees, and consider the length of the stockings that met them, we have to admit that Isaac Everrest's prices were not unreasonable.

"JOHN'S[2] table was for the most part supplied from his own farm. The following items, taken from different accounts ranging from 1680 to 1696, the period of the first JOHN'S[2] bookkeeping, show the money value of various articles of food:

	£ s. d.
March: 80: For three bushels inden corne	0– 8– 0
By on bushell wheat	0– 5– 0
Desembr: 80: For 56 pound of porke	0–15– 0
ffebruary: 82: For 3 bushels messlin	0–13– 6
For a barrell of sider	0–14– 0
ffeb: 83: For four bushels of ry	0–14– 0
ffeb: 82: For 5 and ahalf of beefe	0– 0–11
Anno: 82: By 3 pound of butter	0– 1– 6
Anno: 82: By the half of a beefe	1–13– 5
Aprell: 83: For on pound of hony	0– 1– 0
ffeb. 84: For three pound of mutton	0– 6–10
Anno: 88: By five bushels turnups	0– 6– 0
June: 82: For 4 pound ¾ of veale	0– 1– 2
Aprell: 86: By one gallan malasses	0– 2– 6
Oct: 86: By on bushell of salt	0– 4– 0
Dec: 87: By 9 pound of sugar	0– 4– 6
ffeb: 84: For 9 chickens	0– 1– 0
July: 95: For 2 piges	0– 5– 3

"Here are other items from JOHN'S[2] expense account:

	£ s. d.
July: 85: By one Ivery combe	0– 3– 0
By one sieth	0– 7– 6
Desember: 88: By 1000 and 500 of pins	0– 5– 0
Des: 85: For half a pound of candles	0– 0– 5
For 2 scaines of silke	0– 0– 4
Nov: 89: For 2 quire of peaper	0– 3– 0
For pair of leather briches	0–10– 0

"JOHN[2] held for many years the office of town clerk, and his accounts show the revenue derived from this service:

	£ s. d.
Aprell: 83: For recording five children	0– 1– 3
Anno: 80: For recording a grant of land	0– 0– 6
ffeb: 83: For recording a large deed	0– 2– 0
For recording and truble about it	0– 5– 0

"These items show how church rates were paid:

	£	s.	d.
ffeb: 85: For ½ bushell inden to the church	0–	1–	0
ffeb: 86: For half a bushel of wheat paid to the church	0–	2–	6

"With the cares of church, state and family JOHN[2] GRAVES was a very busy man, but he found time in the summer of 1680 to conduct a sale of gloves. His accounts illustrate the use of farm products to supply the lack of ready money:

August: 1680: Goodman Thorutum (he began to write 'left' but erased it and substituted a more formal phrase) did leave with me 32 paire of glufes att 3 lb of swingled flax a paire, and 4 paire of glufes att to pound of swingled flax apaire.

"Then follows a list of gloves 'souled' and the account is closed with the quaint entry:

Reconed with Tho. Thorutum the: 19 ffeb 83 and ballanced all acount about his gloves.

"This is a variation of his usual form, 'Reconed and rest due to me.'

"The smallest item was not too insignificant for JOHN'S[2] attention. On a certain page he credits Nathaniell Chittenden with '2/ for killing a cow.' He seems to have reconsidered the matter and on the next page he makes this entry on the debit side of Mr. Chittenden's account:

	£	s.	d.
Overpaid for killing a cow	0–	0–	5

"He used the same exactness in his dealings with his minister, the Reverend Joseph Eliot, in whose account we find this charge:

	£	s.	d.
Aprell: 85: For a sider barrell not returned	0–	3–	0

"He is no less scrupulous, however, when the account is on the other side, as witness this entry:

John Dowd, Cred.	£	s.	d.
Aug: 81: By fetching up the cows one day	0–	1–	0

"He seems to have made the following transaction go as far as possible towards Isaac Everest's bill for weaving:

	£	s.	d.
Nov. 89: For a cow	3–	15–	0
For wintering the cow	0–	15–	0
For taming and milking the cow	0–	6–	0

"In the year 1697 [error 1695] the accounts of 'JOHN[2] GRAVE, Senr.' were closed forever, and the book fell to his son JOHN[3]. . . ."[10]

The children of JOHN[2] and ELIZABETH (STILLWELL) GRAVES, all born at Guilford, were[13]

I. JOHN[3], see following.
II. Elizabeth[3], b. April 11, 1661; d. young.
III. Elizabeth[3], b. September 16, 1665; d. May 28, 1687.
IV. Sarah[3], b. March 14, 1667–8; m. January 13, 1692, Thomas Robinson.

The children of JOHN[2] GRAVES and his second wife, Elizabeth Crittenden, all born at Guilford, were[13]

V. Abigail[3], b. March 6, 1669–70 [may this not be 1670–1?]; d. August 13, 1753; m., June 14, 1694, Ebenezer Benton.
VI. Joseph[3], b. August 17, 1672; d. bef. 1716; m., abt. 1697, Margaret (——).
VII. Daniel[3], b. September 17, 1675; d. young.
VIII. Nathaniel[3], b. January 27, 1677–8; d. January, 1727; m. November 25, 1709, Elizabeth Barnes.
IX. Hannah[3], b. January 12, 1679–80; d. March 21, 1757; m., January 6, 1709, Nathaniel Stone.

JOHN[3] GRAVES (*John*[2], *George*[1]) was born[13] February 27, 1658, at Guilford, died December 1, 1726, probably at East Guilford, and married[16] January 6 or 12, 1684–5, ELIZABETH[3] FOOTE [see Foote, p. 342]. He had left the paternal home and settled in East Guilford, then called "the east farms" and now Madison, as early, perhaps, as 1680, and certainly by 1685 when he took his bride to the home his father had earlier built, with its "heavy oak beams in the corners and across the ceilings, and in the centre a rough stone chimney, twelve feet square, whose wide fireplaces open into all the living rooms. . . . In front the house is two stories high, but the long slope of the back roof reaches to within six or eight feet of the ground. . . . In the front room are triangular corner cupboards . . ."[25] in which the bride ELIZABETH (FOOTE) GRAVES would have kept her choice possessions. "A curious feature in the construction of this old house is a small compartment or room built between the back of the chimney and the north side of the house. It is seven and a half feet long by five feet wide and can only be entered from the garret, by removing some loose boards and descending a roughly constructed stairway about one foot in width. There is one small window facing north in the room, which is about breast-high. No regular floor was ever there, only some loose boards laid down. . . . The belief is that it was meant to serve as a hiding place . . . in the event of Indian attacks. . . ."[25] JOHN[3] GRAVES and Aaron Blatchley [perhaps the man who married, as her second husband, SARAH (POTTER) FOOTE and thus

became stepfather of ELIZABETH (FOOTE) GRAVES], on April 24, 1694, were, with two others, "granted permission" to "drown" a swamp above Tuxis Pond and to have it set out to them when "drowned," "to prevent varment harboring."[11]

As time passed a number of the farmers at the "East end" became desirous of attending meeting and of paying "rates" therefor at Killingworth, which was five miles nearer to their homes than Guilford was, and, in 1694–5, they petitioned to that effect, but Guilford was quite unwilling to let them go and more or less of conflict resulted for a number of years until, in March, 1702–3, a petition signed by thirty-one men of the "esterly farms" stated that the "present surComstances . . . are preiodisiall to us" and "will be of equall preiodice to our children and posteritie; Whereupon we account it our duty to seek reluef, and desier your favorable judgment for the upbuilding the publick worship of God among ourselves, in order to ferder address to the General Cort for confarmation," and finally the town granted their request to be a society by themselves. On February 12, 1704–5, they were freed from taxation for Guilford, with the understanding that they would employ a minister of their own, and would bear all the charge that might arise among themselves "for bulls & bridges & wolves and all other charges. . . ."[11] This hint of the anticipated expenses of a village of that day contrasts almost as vividly with our own period as do the comparative modes of conveyance, for they traveled to church or elsewhere, either in ox-carts or on horseback, using a pillion for wife or sweetheart, and even horses were such luxuries that frequently two couples would use the same steed on the "ride and tie" plan whereby one couple rode a part of the distance, then dismounted, tied the horse and proceeded on foot, while the second couple who started on foot would continue so until they reached the waiting animal, when they would mount and ride the remaining distance.[11]

These Easterly Farmers, including JOHN[3] GRAVES, built their first meeting house in 1705 and the people were called to worship by the beat of the drum until 1724 when an appropriation of £8 was made from the profits of the town mill, to buy a bell. The yearly stipend for beating the drum ranged from 13 shillings 4 pence to 20 shillings, and JOHN[3] served thus for a considerable period.[10, 11]

On October 13, 1709, he was confirmed as lieutenant of the first train band[17] and evidently took part in the campaign against Canada for, at a meeting of the Governor and Council on February 21, 1711–2, it was ordered

that Philip Livingston be reimbursed for moneys advanced by him to certain soldiers who were in the late expedition to Canada but who had not yet received debentures for their pay, and this list included JOHN[3] GRAVES who had been accommodated with six shillings.[17]

In May, 1714, he and others of Guilford vicinity petitioned the Governor for a "commission of sewers" to drain their land and were granted their request.[17] In 1717 he was chosen by the town to act as Tavern Keeper,[11] and then the old house would have been a wayside inn on the post road between New York and Boston. In May, 1778, he was paid 18 shillings for attending court to answer the petition of James Hannison[17] [Henderson[13]], who was son-in-law of and administrator for the estate of John[3] Graves (George[2], GEORGE[1]), and in October of that year he and another were granted permission to sell enough of the lands of his brother Joseph[3], deceased, as would pay his debts,[17] in addition to which JOHN[3] later took into his home for a time one of the fatherless nieces.[10]

He, in his turn, owned and used the account book[10]* which had been his father's. He recorded

I began to teach schoole the 16th of December, 1707.

Then followed a list of his pupils, nine boys of whom two were his own sons.[25] The variety of charges he made in the old book suggests that he may have done a general merchandising business beside running his farm and tavern. "His accounts furnish interesting items of various kinds. The following entries recall the time when the clouds of Queen Anne's War gathered over the country:

'I went up to hadley in the queen's service on the eleventh of August and taried till the 27th (in the yeare) 1708 with my horse and all my accoutrements at my owne finding.'

Country debt in 1709	£	s.	d.
By a bullet pouch impressed into Her majestes service	0	2	0
By a powder horne	0	1	0
By a horse jornye to Seabrooke to fetch a doctor to sicke soulder in her majesties service	.....		
By a souldier three meals whilst waiting on the sick soulder	0	1	0
By vitling and lodging a souldier	0	0	6
By four meals of victuals to Indians in the queen's service	0	2	0
By a new pair of stockings	0	8	6
By a snap sack	0	3	0
By one meal to Rase Marks when he returned back sick from the armie at Woodbery	0	0	6

"It would be interesting to know whether the new stockings went to the 'sicke soulder.'

* Capitalization of names and generation markings are added by the compiler.

	£	s.	d.
By a small wallet and snap sack for Joseph Parks in the expedition to poartriall [Port Royal]	.....		
Sept. 17: 1709: By sowing and harrowing 3 acres of land for Ebenezor ffield when he was in the country service	0	6	0

"His interest in the war news led JOHN[3] to subscribe for a paper, concerning which he makes this memorandum:

Boston News Leters: *
The time of our news leters began the 25 of Aprill or the 30th, in the yeare 1711.

"These items show that luxuries had begun to encroach on the plain living of the Puritans:

	£	s.	d.
A dram of orong water	0	0	6
Half a tankerd punch	0	0	4
1717: Half a point of rhum	0	0	6
1714: A pot of phlip	0	0	4
A tankcord of metheglin	0	0	4
1702: A bottle of mint water	0	1	3

"'A boal of todde' does not appear till some years later, but the increasing frequency of a 'pot of phlip' and a 'point of rhum' suggests that the East Guilford field was already ripe for a course of temperance lectures.

"There is no price attached to the following, but its exactness is suggestive of the methods of JOHN[2] senior [though its date proves otherwise]:

Mr. Gilbert Warner, Cred.
To a cage (keg) of spirits wanting four inches of being full—receaved on the 14th of June, 1725:

"This is offset by the indefiniteness of another item:

Delivered to Joshua Leete one bushel of pears on the tenth of febuary or thereabouts in the year 1707.

"Here are some unique items:

Nathaniel Stone, Debtor [who married Hannah[3] Graves, half sister of JOHN[3]].

	£	s.	d.
By a puppe	0	3	0
In the year 1713, the improvement of two goats for milk	0	2	6

Abraham Dowd, debt.

	£	s.	d.
By 36 foot of boards for his father's coffin	0	2	0
March: 1714: By house room one year on Sabbath days	0	6	8

"Did JOHN[3], for a consideration, permit his friends from the remote districts to warm their hands and eat their lunch by his fireplace between the Sunday services?

*This was the publication with which NICHOLAS[2] BOONE was connected in its earliest issues [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

Ebenezor Benton, debt [brother-in-law of JOHN[3] GRAVES].

	£	s.	d.
1722: By one ounce gabbonam and an ounce of assafetida and one ounce of castor from Yoarke . .	0–	8–	0

"Evidently Mr. Benton was replenishing the family medicine chest.

	£	s.	d.
By two pots of cider, one ordered sweetened	0–	0–	7

"In 1721 he became guardian of Thankful[4] Grave, his orphan niece, who lived for a time at his house. He makes these entries:

	£	s.	d.
Jan: 1721: Money to recover Thankful to my house	0–	3–	0
A pair of shoes	0–	5–	0
A yard of hollan	0–	4–	0
A blew linsiewoolsie apron ¾ yd	0–	3–	0
A cap lace	0–	4–	0
Money disburst to recover Thankful home	0–	3–	0

"In some leisure hour JOHN[3] catalogued his library. The list shows the cheerful character of the religious reading of that day:"[10]

"An account of some books of divinitie, belonging to me, JOHN[3] GRAVE, with some of their titles.[25]
First The Triumph of a True Christian.
one a practicall exposition on the 130 psalme.
one harts division the evill of our times.
an interest in a book intitled the rare jewell of contentment.
two psalme books.
one the pious remains of Mr. Henry William Ludolf on Meditation.
one the glory departing from New England.
one a call to the unconverted.
one my peace I give unto you my peace I leave with you.
one war with the Divell or the young mans conflict with the powers of darkness.
one Zion in distress or the groans of the 'protestant' Church.
one the familiar explanation of the Assemblie of devines short cattechism.
one old booke called pilgrims progress.
one small booke Thirstie siners invited to Christ.
one old Testament.
one old Bible, and part of old Bible.
one the horers and terors that size upon the unpardoned siners in the day of judgment.
one the old mens tears.
three books of Mr. Wises works.
one the quarell of the church espoused.
two other paper books.
one the dutie of all christians urged.
one Mr. Whitman's election sermon.
Sundry other small paper books.

Many of these books are still preserved in the old house."[25]

"The following seems to refer to an heirloom:

1713: Memorandum for the redemption of a silver spoon belonging to my sisters by agreement the weight of it in cash delivered to Ebenezor Benton [who had married Abigail[3], half sister of JOHN[3]].

"On page 24 JOHN[3] records that in the year 1713 he paid Ebenezor Stone one pound and seven shillings for making a drum. Knowing that he held

the rank of lieutenant in the military company of the colony, we naturally connect the drum with training days. But when we reach page 131 we learn that it was designed not for military but for religious service.

I had the care of beating the drum on Sabbath days the first day of July 1713.

". . . At the death of JOHN[3] the second, in 1726, the book became the legacy of his son. This third John[4] seems to have been of a gay and frivolous disposition and to have taken the leather book much less seriously than had his predecessors. He scribbled his name irreverently over the pages [and] relieved the monotony of debit and credit with a joke or by dropping into 'poetry,' one example of which is

"If this book in which you look
By axedent be Lost
Convay it to me for I am he
Who best knows what it cost."[10]

The children of JOHN[3] and ELIZABETH (FOOTE) GRAVES, doubtless all born at East Guilford, now Madison, were[13]

I. Elizabeth[4], b. July 17, 1686; d. May 25, 1687.
II. MEHITABLE[4], b. February 1, 1687–8; d. 1747 in Durham;[24] m., February 1, 1714–5, CORNELIUS[4] HULL[19] [see Hull, p. 463].
III. John[4], b. February 1, 1689–90; d. July 17, 1763; m. 1st, May 10, 1714, Elizabeth Stevens; m. 2nd, in 1728, Abigail Starr; m. 3rd, after August, 1752, Naomi (——) Blatchley.
IV. Ann[4], b. August 29, 1692.
V. Noahdiah[4], b. December 4, 1694; d. July, 1751; m., abt. 1718, Sarah (——).
VI. Mindwell[4], b. November 4, 1696; m., November 11, 1713, Nathaniel Stevens.
VII. Sarah[4], b. April 14, 1699; m. December 14, 1720, Thomas French.
VIII. David[4], b. January 31, 1701; d. November 16, 1726; m., February 17, 1721 or 1725, Prudence[4] Willard (Samuel[3], Josiah[2], Simon[1]).[26]
IX. Elizabeth[4], b. July 15, 1703; m., abt. 1728, Daniel[4] Redfield (Theophilus[3], James[2], William[1]).[20]
X. Ebenezer[4], b. July 15, 1705; d. March 1, 1785; m., February 12, 1730, Mary Isbel.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, I, 481; II, 35, 64, 294–5.
1a. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 1210–1.
2. Olmstead Geneaology, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.
2a. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, pp. 177–8.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 104, 122, 288, 293, 299, 306, 318, 333; II, 141, 518; Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, p. 205.
4. Colonial History of Connecticut, W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 32, 125; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 249–51, 497, 499, 551–2, 565.
5. Ibid., 608–9.
5a. History of the Second Church in Hartford, Conn., E. P. Parker, 1892, pp. 280, 290.
6. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, I, 203–4, 455.
6a. H. W. Brainard of Hartford, Conn., in *Boston Transcript* of July 16, 1924; History of Hadley, Mass., S. Judd & L. M. Boltwood, 1905, pt. 2, p. 90; Kirby Genealogy, M. E. Dwight, 1898, p. 34; Webster Genealogy, W. H. & M. R. Webster, 1915, pp. 30–1.
7. Deming Genealogy, J. K. Deming, 1904, pp. 10–1.

8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 297; II, 74, 525; III, 16, 26, 75, 86, 97, 106, 139, 151, 155, 195, 208, 211, 214, 223, 227, 230, 236, 249, 251, 254; IV, 3, 33, 42, 54, 64, 66, 75, 79, 89, 92, 102, 104.
9. Ibid., II, 200, 294, 386; IV, 85, 262.
10. The Connecticut Magazine, 1906, X, 18–24.
11. History of Guilford, Conn., B. C. Steiner, 1897, pp. 113, 121, 128–9, 141, 143, 159–60, 162–3, 185, 195–6, 212, 242, 292, 344–51, 396, 420–1; Manual of the First Congregational Church, Guilford, Conn., 1875, p. 8.
12. History of Guilford, Conn., R. D. Smith, 1887, pp. 20, 24, 78–9, 105, 158–61, 182, 186.
13. New England Register, LVI, 260–3.
14. 250th Anniversary of Guilford, Conn., 1889, pp. 174, 177–8, 180, 249, 254.
15. New England Register, XIII, 141; XLVII, 89; Historical Catalogue of First Church in Hartford, 1885, pp. 236–7; The Book of Dow, R. P. Dow, 1929, p. 748.
16. Foote Genealogy, A. W. Foote, 1907, I, 29; Foote Genealogy, N. Goodwin, 1849, pp. 175–6.
17. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 116, 303, 447, 461; VI, 61, 71.
18. History of New Haven County, Conn., J. L. Rockey, 1892, II, 116–7, 121, 123, 142, 184–6, 193–4.
19. History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, p. 345.
20. Redfield Family, J. H. Redfield, 1860, p. 15.
21. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 241, 276.
22. History of Hadley, Mass., S. Judd and L. M. Boltwood, 1863, p. 532; Grafton Magazine II, 4, 6.
23. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 62, 64, 66, 73; Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 256, 293, 306, 308, 315, 323, 333; Centennial Address, Middletown, Conn., D. D. Field, 1853, pp. 40–1, 144, 236.
24. Hull Family in America, Col. Weygant, 1913.
25. Old House in Connecticut, edited by Bertha Chadwick Trowbridge for the Connecticut Society of Colonial Dames, published 1923, New Haven, Yale University Press, pp. 91–100.
26. Willard Genealogy, C. H. Pope, 1915, p. 27.
27. Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, I, 216.

GRISWOLD

* † [330] Edward Griswold abt.1607–1691	m 1st	Margaret . . . –1670
* [164] Nathaniel Pinney 1640–1676	m 1670	Sarah Griswold [widow Phelps] 1635–1715
* ‡ [82] Nathaniel Pinney 1671–1764	m 1693	Martha Thrall 1673–aft.1710
* ‡ [40] Samuel Beaman 1704–aft.1753	m 1731	Sarah Pinney 1707–aft.1783
‡ § [20] Thomas Beman 1734–1804	m 1753	Lydia Roberts 1735–1809
§ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
§ ‖ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
‖ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Windsor, Conn.
† Killingworth, Conn.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

GRISWOLD

EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD, who was born[1, 2, 5] about 1607, lived for a time at least in Kenilworth, co. Warwick, England, whence he emigrated[27] in 1639, as is disclosed by various depositions;[5, 27] namely, one by himself in 1684, another by his son George[2] in 1700, and a third by two of his grandsons in 1737–8. EDWARD[1] brought with him his wife, several children, and his younger brother Matthew. In his own deposition, dated May 15, 1684, EDWARD[1] stated that he was then aged about seventy-seven years and that "about the year 1639 Mr. William Whiting, Decd, was Undertaker [financial sponsor] for a shipp in England, in which Shipp I came to New England." He further stated that he was to act as agent for the said Whiting in the receipt (probably at Windsor) of about £200 borrowed by that man from a Mr. John St. Nicholas, who expected soon to emigrate to Windsor. Mr. St. Nicholas had lived in England as neighbor to, and under the ministerial care of, the Reverend Ephraim Huet, then of Wroxall, near Kenilworth, who was persecuted in 1638, for non-conformity, by Archbishop Laud and driven to emigrate in 1639, probably in company with EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD and his family and perhaps also with JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS. On August 17, 1639, the Reverend Huet, with a party which doubtless included these two ancestors of ours, arrived at Windsor, Connecticut, where he became the first teacher in the church and colleague with its pastor.[1, 2, 5, 27]

EDWARD[1] received his share of lands[5, 27] at Windsor, the first recorded division of which occurred in January, 1640–1. In 1642 the Indian title to Poquonock[2, 3, 5] [an outlying section about four miles northwest of the settlement] was extinguished and probably about that time a few families, including those of EDWARD[1] and two of his sons, removed to that locality [see map on p. 569]. These few families were living north of the point where Stony Creek crosses the highway and their home lots were bounded on the west by the brook. EDWARD[1] had the first or corner lot, which was bounded both south and west by this stream and contained twenty-nine acres.[2] On

September 13, 1649, the General Court, taking into consideration the many dangers to which these settlers were exposed by reason of their living so "remotely" from the town, freed, in turn, one "souldger" member of each of these families from attendance on each training-day, requiring that he who "tarryes at home, stands about the aforesaid howses vppon his sentinel posture."[3]

In 1656 EDWARD[1] was deputy from Windsor to the General Court and continued, with the exception of one session, to represent[5, 7, 11] the town until the charter was received from King Charles in 1662–3.

Interesting sidelights on the people and affairs of that day have come to us from an ancient account-book kept [partly in an undeciphered shorthand] by Henry[2] Wolcott (1611–1680), of Windsor, who carried on a mercantile and importing business and specialized also in the cultivation and sale of fruit-trees and their crops.[27] Page five in this old book carries a record of his dealings with EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD in 1647–9 and, incidentally, illustrates the early method of settlement of debt* by the transfer of commodities, which was necessitated by the lack of a national coinage or currency. It reads:[27]

"I owe EDWARD GRISSELL for keeping a calfe	£0–8– 0
of which I have paid to the fienes for him	0– 2–0
It I paid him 2 bushels of pease	0– 6–0
aprill 26, 1647 I sould to EDWARD GRISSELL 4 bushells of Indian corn for 9 $^{6m}_{x}$ wompom paide allredy and he hath received thereof, 1 bushell for there remains due to him 3 bushell	0– 6–9
of which I payed to John Bartlet one bushell	0– 2–3
It to John bartlet 2 bushells of Indyan corn	0– 4–6
It for the cannooe 2 days	0– 2–4
It he received of Simon Woolcot for me	0–12–0
and I owe him for keeping 2 calves	0–16–0
It I payed EDWARD GRISSELLS note to (shorthand)	0–13–0
and he wrought with me (shorthand)	1– 0–0
It he had of me a bushell of corn	0 –2–6
soe March 29, 1649 I owe him	0– 5–8
for wch he had a peck of buckwheat	0– 5–0

* Madam Sarah Knight, in her "Journal of a Horseback Journey from Boston to New York and Return," 1704, described the currency of the day as "Pay," "Money," "Pay as Money," and "Trusting." "Pay" meant Grain, Pork, Beef, &c., at the prices set by the General Court in that year. "Money" implied Pieces of Eight, Ryalls, or Boston (also called Bay) shillings; in other words, "hard" money, coins, specie. Also wampum (Indian beads) was used for small amounts. "Pay as Money" signified provisions as aforesaid, but at a price one-third cheaper than that set by the General Court; and "Trust" meant "credit." For example, a sixpenny knife in "pay" cost 12 pence; in "pay as money," eight pence; and in hard money, its own price, or sixpence.[28]

It he had apple trees (shorthand) 0–8–0
It I pay to Mr. Wereham (shorthand) 26, 1649 ..... 0–7–6"
"A Noate of the hire of the cannooe 1648: It. to EDWARD GRISSELL 2 dayes.... £0–2–4"

EDWARD[1] built the old fort[10a, 27] at Springfield, Massachusetts, for William Pyncheon in 1659. His contract specified that he should receive £40 for the construction, including both the stonework and the brickwork. Such hewn logs as were needed were prepared by his future son-in-law, Samuel[2] Buel, then aged eighteen, and by our own TIMOTHY[2] THRALL. This building stood until 1831, and prior to 1800 was the only brick building in the town.[27]

On January 18, 1658–9, both EDWARD[1] and our JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS paid six shillings for space in the "short seats" in the meeting-house.[6] EDWARD[1] served repeatedly on juries, at least two of which, in 1651 and 1662, deliberated on witchcraft cases and brought in verdicts of guilty.[27] In October, 1662, he was appointed on a committee to lay out to such Windsor settlers "as desire and need it" all undivided lands at what became Simsbury, where SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN, JOHN[1] ROBERTS and MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY located.[10, 27]

In March, 1663, the General Court appointed a committee to view Hamonoscett, later Killingworth, and to decide if it be fit for a plantation. The first report, signed July 3, following, was to the effect that thirty families could subsist comfortably there, and the final report, in October of that year, showed a list of the original planters, including EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD, then called sixty-four years old, and JOSIAH[2] HULL (GEORGE[1]) both of whom had grants of land. The requirements for settlement were that they should actually establish residence there within two years or forfeit the grants and should "abide for four years after the first years have expired or else to lose their Land Receiving only the equitable expense."[9] EDWARD[1], with his wife and younger children, was among the first to remove to this new locality,[8] undoubtedly[12] in 1663. He deeded most of his property at Windsor to his oldest sons, who remained there, reserving only a small annuity for himself.[5] In May, 1667, he sat in the General Court as the first representative from the new town, which had thus far been called by its Indian name but which at this session was renamed "Kenilworth" [later corrupted into "Killingworth"], undoubtedly as a courtesy to EDWARD[1] in memory of his English home.[5, 27] With JOSIAH[2] HULL he had been appointed March 10, 1663–4, to lay out lands there. He is said to have been a deacon of the First Church[1a, 12] and his civil service in this new town included that of townsman for years, and of filling the office of deputy to the General Court continuously from 1667 to

1689 (except perhaps in 1671 and 1688), thus attending fifty-eight or more sessions.[13] He also served as commissioner for sixteen or more years[14] between 1667 and 1687. Indeed, it is said of him that[27] "as deacon, deputy or commissioner, with many of the lesser offices, it may be said that for over fifty years EDWARD was in the continuous service of the State" in Windsor and in Killingworth. The standing of the family is further evidenced by the fact that, during his representation of his town at General Court, his son Francis[2] represented Norwich and his brother Matthew[1] represented Lyme.[20] Moreover, at the listing of the freemen of Killingworth in 1669, EDWARD[1] was one of but two whose names were dignified[5, 16] by the prefix "Mr."

Evidence of his varied activities is suggested by the fact that on July 27, 1674, he was chairman of a committee to arrange for the making and upkeep of highways and bridges.[9] In 1674 he had a grant from the General Court of two hundred acres which was finally laid out to him in 1682 at the north end of "Lyme bounds" together with one hundred acres which the town of Killingworth had "passed over to him."[12, 17] He was on a committee October 12, 1676, to put a valuation on all lands in the several plantations and to report to the General Court;[16] and on another in 1678 to establish a Latin school in New London.[12, 19] In October, 1678, he and another were appointed to hear a controversy between two townsmen and report to the General Court; and in May, 1688, he and Captain ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN were named to lay out a highway four or five rods wide between Killingworth and Saybrook.[18]

In lieu of a will EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD on Christmas Day, 1672, signed a conditional inheritance deed[27] of all his property to his son John[2], who was to pay certain legacies; but EDWARD[1] did not die until 1691, when he was in the eighty-fourth year of his age, and was buried at Killingworth. He had married first, in England, MARGARET (——),* who died[5, 12] in Killingworth August 23, 1670, where her gravestone may be seen, the oldest in the cemetery,[27] marked "M. G. 1670." He married secondly, in 1672–3, Sarah (——) Bemis, widow of James of New London.[21] His children were all by his first wife. Four are said to have been baptized and one to have died at Kenilworth, England, and that place was probably the birthplace of two others, while the remaining six were born at Windsor, Connecticut.

The children of EDWARD[1] and MARGARET (——) GRISWOLD (the older ones probably in the order given) were[5, 12, 20, 22, 25, 27]

1. Sarah[2], bap. 1631, Kenilworth, England; prob. d. young.

* She has been called[26] MARGARET Hicks, but no authority is cited.

II. George[2], bap. 1633, Kenilworth, England; d. September 3, 1704, Windsor; m. October 3, 1655, Mary Holcomb (Thomas).

III. SARAH[2], bap. 1635, in Kenilworth, co. Warwick, England, and d.[23] November 6, 1715, in Windsor, Connecticut. She married first at Windsor, November 10, 1650, Samuel[2] Phelps[23] (William[1]). They settled in Poquonock [Windsor] where they had nine children and he died May 15, 1669. She married secondly,[24, 25] at Windsor, July 21, 1670, NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY [see Pinney, p. 662].

IV. Lydia[2], bap. 1637, Kenilworth, England.

V. Francis[2], b. prob. in England; d. October, 1671; m. Mary Tracy.[4]

VI. John[2], b. prob. in England; d. 1642 at Windsor.[12]

VII. Ann[2], b. at Windsor, bap. June 19, 1642.

VIII. Mary[2], b. at Windsor, bap. October 13, 1644; m. 1661, Timothy[2] Phelps (William[1]).

IX. Deborah[2], b. at Windsor, bap. June 28, 1646; d. February 7, 1717–8;[27] m.[4] November 13 or 30, 1662, Samuel[2] Buell (William[1]).

X. Joseph[2], b. at Windsor, bap. March 12, 1647–8; d. November 14, 1716; m. June 10 or July 14, 1670, Mary Gaylord (Samuel).

XI. Samuel[2], b. at Windsor, bap. November 18, 1649; d. July 6, 1672.

XII. John[2], b. at Windsor, bap. August 1, 1652; d.[27] August 7, 1717; m. 1st, November 28, 1672, Mary Bemis, his stepsister;[4, 21] m. 2nd, Bathsheba North.[4]

REFERENCES

1. Family Histories and Genealogies, E. E. and E. M. Salisbury, 1892, II, 2–5.
1a. Hall Family, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 149–50.
2. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 74–5, 80, 157, 281; Ibid., II, 348–51.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 196.
4. Fifty Puritan Ancestors, E. T. Nash, 1902, pp. 35, 102–4, 124, 131–2.
4a. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 522.
5. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 349–51; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, I, 60.
6. Ibid., 1891, I, 153, 157–8, 179.
7. First Record Book of the Rhode Island Society of Colonial Dames, 1896, I, 28.
8. Genealogical and Family History of Connecticut, W. R. Cutter, 1910, I, 29.
9. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 417–9, 422.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 379, 397.
10a. Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Hist. Society, 1881, pp. 127–8.
11. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 281, 315, 318, 323, 330, 334, 337, 340, 344, 346, 347, 354, 358, 378, 383, 384, 392.
12. Family Histories and Genealogies, E. E. and E. M. Salisbury, 1892, II, 9–12.
13. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 58, 82, 94, 105, 116, 126, 136, 169, 184, 192, 204, 209, 221, 236, 249, 265, 274, 286, 300, 318; Ibid., III, 3, 17, 26, 36, 48, 75, 86, 97, 106, 121, 139, 151, 155, 169, 195, 208, 214, 223, 237, 251, 254.
14. Ibid., II, 63, 152, 170, 193, 212, 250, 275; Ibid., III, 5, 26, 49, 76, 97, 140, 169, 195, 230.
15. Ibid., I, 419.
16. Ibid., II, 294, 525.
17. Ibid., II, 240; Ibid., III, 91.
18. Ibid., III, 22, 50.
19. History of Norwich, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1874, p. 92.
20. Savage, II, 316.
21. History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, p. 283; Savage, I, 163.
22. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., R. H. Stiles, 1891, I, 882.
23. Phelps Family, O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, 1899, I, 88–9; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 564.
24. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 610.
25. Births, Marriages and Deaths of Windsor, Conn., trans. by E. S. Welles, 1898, pp. 9, 12, 34–5.
26. Statement by G. S. Porter of Norwich, Conn. (decd.)

27. Bassett Family, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 163–4, 360–7; Wolcott Genealogy, C. Wolcott, 1912, pp. 40–1; Magazine of American History, 1884, XI, 121–3 et seq.; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 165; Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 58.
28. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. R. Lambert, 1838, p. 194; Descendants of John Clark, J. Gay, 1882, p. 17.

GUNN

* † [334] Thomas Gunn –1681	m	. . . –1678
† [166] Timothy Thrall 1641–1697	m 1659	Deborah Gunn 1641–2–1694
† ‡ [82] Nathaniel Pinney 1671–1764	m 1693	Martha Thrall 1673–aft.1710
† ‡ [40] Samuel Beaman 1704–aft.1753	m 1731	Sarah Pinney 1707–aft.1783
‡ § [20] Thomas Beman 1734–1804	m 1753	Lydia Roberts 1735–1809
§ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
§ ‖ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
‖ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Dorchester and Westfield, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

GUNN

THOMAS[1] GUNN, the first of this line in New England, was one of the early settlers at Dorchester, Massachusetts, receiving land there in or before 1634. On February 10, 1634, a grant was made to Thomas Marshall of "8 goad* in bredth, next unto THOMAS GUNN in the late buriall† place, for building."[1, 2] The first four pages of the original record book are missing and the land holdings of THOMAS[1] GUNN were probably listed thereon.

He must have been a church member at Dorchester[3] for he was one of the freemen[4] of May 6, 1635. He removed to Windsor, Connecticut, in or before 1640 where he was granted a lot twelve rods wide[5] on the "common road," or Main Street, running north from the "palisado" and also situated next south of Thomas Stoughton's "Old Stone Fort."[6, 7] GEORGE[1] HULL, JOSIAH[2] HULL and HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY had home lots a short distance north of this stronghold[6, 7] and these families were close neighbors [see map on p. 569].

Though he lived on the west side of the Connecticut River, THOMAS[1] also had, on the other side, an early grant having fifteen rods frontage on the stream and extending three miles eastward,[8] which he gave, in 1678, to his son-in-law, TIMOTHY[2] THRALL.[6, 8] Although no corroborative evidence of a deed has been found, an early map shows a considerable tract farther north under Gunn ownership, also "Gunn's Brook," part of which flows through it, running eastwardly into the Connecticut River north of the "Sequestered Meadow" and the stone pit.[7]

At a session of the Particular Court, probably between February 14, 1643, and April, 1644, the following action occurred: "John Dymon pl. ag[t] THO: GUNNE deft, in an ac. of trespasse for Fals Imprisonment."[9] THOMAS[1] served

*Goad, gad—ten feet.

†The original burial ground, near the first meeting house and also near what was in 1867 the junction of Pleasant and Cottage streets, had been replaced by a new graveyard at a different location.

on trial juries on October 24, 1644, and again September 4, 1645, and on the jury of the Particular Court[9] May 16, 1649. He either kept a sort of lodging house or desired to accommodate some single men for, on December 10, 1659, "The townsmen approved of that THOMAS GUNN should entertain as a tabler, Capt. Thomas, in his family for this winter."[10] Soon afterwards, he had "liberty to entertain Isaac Holt in his family one quarter of a year, but no longer, without approbation."[10] Captain Thomas had not been admitted as a permanent inhabitant and Isaac Holt had no family so both were obliged to secure the permission of the townsmen and to accept a living place of their choice before making a lengthy sojourn in the town.

On January 18, 1659–60, THOMAS[1] paid six shillings for the placing of himself and wife in the long seats in the Windsor meeting house.[11] In or about 1665 he had as an apprentice Joseph Pomeroy for whom certain property was reserved by that youth's father[11] until "his time should be out" with "Goodman GUNN." He either had or contemplated having an interest in the settlement of Killingworth for, in 1663, he, with others, signed a petition relative to that locality.[11]

At an unknown date he sold part of his home lot to Thomas Gilbert (later giving the remainder to his son-in-law, TIMOTHY[2] THRALL),[5] and removed to Westfield, Massachusetts. This change of residence took place in or before 1668 for, at a meeting on March 13, of that year, of the proprietors of that town it was agreed that certain land should be divided into three parts, "one part of it next to the ffort river shall . . . go in lieu of meadow, where every man shall have his share." . . . "Nextly the plowland is to lye in two divisions and every man to have his proportion in each Division" and each one's location was to be by the casting of lots. "The first lott came out to THOMAS GUNN, who lyes next the river on the easterly syde of all the other lotts where he hath seventeen acres, length 160 rod, breadth 10 rods at the front and 24 rods at the west and besides this there is 2 rods broad allowed more to this lott for a highway downe to the river all the length of it." In addition to this grant, he received in the first plowland division lot number six, consisting of six acres, and, in the second, lot number five, of nine acres and also ten acres of lowland south of Little River.[14]

In 1676 THOMAS[1] was one of the selectmen of Westfield.[14] Some time during March of that year, as shown by the following extract from a quaintly worded document, the townspeople, in order to meet the exigencies resulting from the Indian War, established a temporary co-operative government in

which the rights of the individual were subordinated to the interests of the community as a whole. THOMAS[1] was one of the signers of this document as well as one of the directors of its enactment:[15]

> "The town considering the hand of God upon us in having or letting loose the Indians upon us, so that now we cannot carry on our occasion for liberty had as formerly; and considering that it is not a time now to advance our state, but tardy our rate of our former advantage, so that we may carry on something together for the good of the whole, and so by God's blessing on our labors we may be in a way of getting food for our families, therefore, . . . we agree to carry on as followeth; . . . it shall be ordered by some men that we shall appoint, who shall go out to work and who shall tarry at home from day to day; and if it shall please God to give opportunity to rate the long fit of laboring, men shall resume an equal proportion according to his family. Necessary public charges [if] any, first charged. And the rest, if any man sow more seed than his proportion, he shall reserve that again in the first [place]. The men chosen to order the whole matter for service and farming are Goodman Ashley Seignoir [Senior] and Goodman GUNN."

While it is definitely stated that THOMAS[1] GUNN had but four children, one son and three daughters, born[16] at Windsor, there is a difference of opinion as to their order. Some records show Elizabeth[2] to have been the eldest, born[17] in 1640, while others, probably more reliable, place her as the youngest, born[13] in 1649, with DEBORAH[2] the eldest. The identity of his wife is not yet known. The death,[16] at Windsor, of an Elizabeth Gunn, "Aug. 22," 1639 or 1640, might lead to the inference that this was his first wife but, if this be true, she probably left no children and he must have soon married again considering the birth dates of the children. The mother of his children died at Westfield, November 28, 1678, and he died there[1, 17, 20] February 26, 1680–1.

The children of THOMAS[1] GUNN and his wife, born at Windsor,[12, 17, 19] were

I. Elizabeth[2], b. October 14, 1640,[17] or more likely, 1649;[13] d. January 3, 1655, at Windsor.[18]
II. DEBORAH[2], bap. February 21 or 27, 1641–2, and d. January 7, 1694, at Windsor. She married there,[19] November 10, 1659, TIMOTHY[2] THRALL [see Thrall, p. 794].

III. Mehitable[2], b. July 28, 1644; m. 1st, at Hartford, October 22, 1663, David Ensign;[21] m. 2nd, 1685, Isaac Sheldon.

IV. John[2], b. July 8, 1647; m. at Westfield,[20] January 22, 1678, Mary Williams.

REFERENCES

1. Early Records of Dorchester, Mass., W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 4, 5, 8, 10, 16, 17.
2. History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, 1859, pp. 66, 93.
3. Good Old Dorchester, W. D. Orcutt, 1893, p. 40; Records of the First Church of Dorchester, Mass., 1891, p. XV.
4. New England Register, III, 93.
5. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 552.
6. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 141, 158.
7. Ibid., I, maps between pages 144–5 and 148–9.
8. Ibid., I, 547.
9. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 102, 111, 129, 182.
10. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 82; Ibid., II, 362.
11. Ibid., I, 164, 178, 479.
12. Ibid., I, 157; Ibid., II, 362.
13. Ibid., II, 362, quoting Colonial Records.
14. History of Hampden County, Mass., A. M. Copeland, 1902, II, 328–9, 444.
15. Ibid., II, 348–9.
16. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 878, 882.
17. Savage, II, 323–4.
18. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 878, 879.
19. New England Register, V, 225, 363.
20. Ibid., VI, 267–70.
21. Ibid., XIII, 142.

HAWLEY

JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY,* born about 1603, is believed to have come from Parwich, England, since in his will many years later he said,[1, 5] "I give to my son Samuel Hawley† all my lands and buildings in Parwidge in Darbyshere, Old England." It is evident that he had a first wife, perhaps in England, and of unknown name, preceding his marriage[1, 7] to KATHERINE BIRDSEY‡ for his will referred to KATHERINE as "my now wife." He probably lived§ at Wethersfield, Connecticut, for a time, removing by or before 1649 to Stratford, which is the first town in which he is definitely recorded.

The Stratford company of settlers was organized from among Wethersfield and Hartford men in the early part of 1639; in the spring of that year fifteen or seventeen of these families began the new settlement though no records of their affairs are found prior to 1650. JOSEPH[1] did not receive a grant of a home lot as the earliest families did. He bought[12] for his home, in or before 1650, lot number thirty-seven with its buildings from Richard Miles and probably also that man's entire "rights." Those, however, who came by 1650–1 were called "first settlers" and among these was our ROBERT[2] COE whose home was on lot number seventeen.

JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY and two other men are called "the first principal gentlemen in the town and church of Stratford." He became the first town clerk, serving from 1650 to 1666. His "style of penmanship was that recognized by the government of England at the time as the legal or court style for recording public documents, the capital letters being those of the French

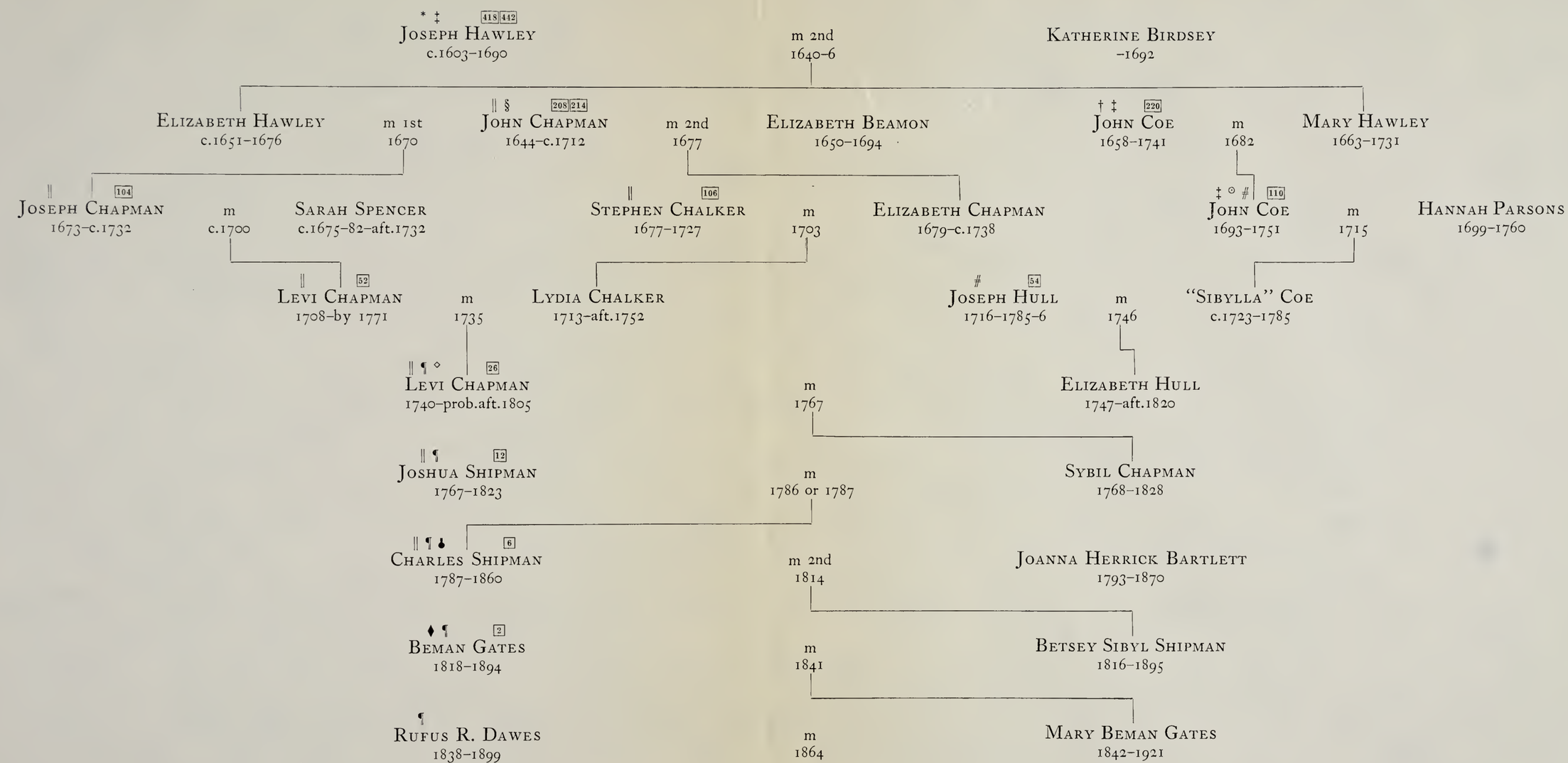
*He had a sister[2] called[4] Elizabeth who married Richard[1] Booth of Stratford. He is assigned[1, 4] also a brother Thomas of Roxbury and a sister[4] Hannah who married[2] first John Uffoot or Oviatt (Thomas) and married, secondly,[4] John Beard.

†These lands passed to his son Samuel[3] who quit-claimed them to his younger brother Nathaniel[3], beyond which nothing is known of them.[5]

‡KATHERINE BIRDSEY, definitely stated[8] to have come from New Haven to Wethersfield, is believed to have been a niece of John Birdsey of Milford and Stratford. Tradition says that her father[18] was Edward, and that he came from New Haven to Wethersfield where he died, leaving only daughters.[1]

§He is said,[12] perhaps truthfully, to have been first at Roxbury where his reputed brother Thomas lived. The latter man named a son "Joseph."

HAWLEY



* Wethersfield, Conn.
† New Haven, Conn.
‡ Stratford, Conn.

§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ Saybrook, Conn.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

♣ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Durham, Conn.

⊙ Haddam, Conn.
◇ Salem, Ohio.

HAWLEY

JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY,* born about 1603, is believed to have come from Parwich, England, since in his will many years later he said,[1,5] "I give to my son Samuel Hawley† all my lands and buildings in Parwidge in Darbyshere, Old England." It is evident that he had a first wife, perhaps in England, and of unknown name, preceding his marriage[1,7] to KATHERINE BIRDSEY‡ for his will referred to KATHERINE as "my now wife." He probably lived§ at Wethersfield, Connecticut, for a time, removing by or before 1649 to Stratford, which is the first town in which he is definitely recorded.

The Stratford company of settlers was organized from among Wethersfield and Hartford men in the early part of 1639; in the spring of that year fifteen or seventeen of these families began the new settlement though no records of their affairs are found prior to 1650. JOSEPH[1] did not receive a grant of a home lot as the earliest families did. He bought[12] for his home, in or before 1650, lot number thirty-seven with its buildings from Richard Miles and probably also that man's entire "rights." Those, however, who came by 1650–1 were called "first settlers" and among these was our ROBERT[2] COE whose home was on lot number seventeen.

JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY and two other men are called "the first principal gentlemen in the town and church of Stratford." He became the first town clerk, serving from 1650 to 1666. His "style of penmanship was that recognized by the government of England at the time as the legal or court style for recording public documents, the capital letters being those of the French

*He had a sister[2] called[4] Elizabeth who married Richard[1] Booth of Stratford. He is assigned[1,4] also a brother Thomas of Roxbury and a sister[4] Hannah who married[2] first John Uffoot or Oviatt (Thomas) and married, secondly,[4] John Beard.

†These lands passed to his son Samuel[3] who quit-claimed them to his younger brother Nathaniel[3], beyond which nothing is known of them.[5]

‡KATHERINE BIRDSEY, definitely stated[8] to have come from New Haven to Wethersfield, is believed to have been a niece of John Birdsey of Milford and Stratford. Tradition says that her father[18] was Edward, and that he came from New Haven to Wethersfield where he died, leaving only daughters.[1]

§He is said,[12] perhaps truthfully, to have been first at Roxbury where his reputed brother Thomas lived. The latter man named a son "Joseph."

language.'"[12] [See plate[10] XVIII p. 414.] This suggests that he had been well educated and perhaps in government employ before his emigration.

He was a deputy from Stratford to the General Court in 1661, 1665, 1667–71, 1673–5, 1677–8, 1680–5 and 1687, serving during thirty recorded terms.[12, 13] His public service included also incumbency as a Commissioner[14] in 1682–5, 1687 and 1689–90, and as a member of various committees[12, 15] whose duties included signing an agreement in April, 1679, relative to the boundaries between Stratford and Fairfield; laying out one hundred acres in May, 1680, to some Indians; petitioning the General Court in October, 1680, on behalf of the town and against its undertaking the support of an indigent person; laying out land in 1684 to Governor Treat; and arbitrating in January, 1686–7, on what Fairfield should pay to Norwalk.

In November, 1678, Stratford voted to build a new meeting-house[12] as soon as possible and in November, 1679, they decided that it should stand on "Watch-house hill" and that £100 should be raised to pay for it. The building was erected during the summer of 1680 and in September it was near enough to completion so that they proceeded to fix rules by which it should be seated, as follows:

"First, that every inhabitant in Stratford, both men and women, shall be seated and placed in the proper seats . . ." by a committee of three, including JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY, under these "rules of dignity"—

"First, Magistrates and Commission officers according to their place of dignity.

2ly, that all persons past the age of sixty years should be accounted honorable, notwithstanding their payments and be seated accordingly.

3ly, that all other persons under the age of sixty years should be seated according to their disbursements and payments to the new meeting house which has been according to law.'"[12]

Before October, 1669, JOSEPH[1] had become a freeman[14] [see p. 857] and in December, 1675, at the town election, and probably also in other years, he was chosen[12] to be the "ordinary keeper." That position included not only furnishing the tavern accommodations for man and beast but also the sale[12] of "liquor, tea, sugar, molasses, indigo, logwood, nails of all kinds made in England and at home," imported fabrics and other supplies. He is said[5] to have been also the town treasurer, and, as such, to have collected taxes which were paid in produce, so that his duties would have included not only their collection but measuring, storing and finding sale for such, as well.

From 1650 to 1680 JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY and Isaac Nichols, Sr., carried on the principal mercantile business of the town and JOSEPH[1] broadened the scope of his business by acquiring vessels for a freighting trade to Massachusetts Bay and to the Barbadoes. He built vessels at Stratford and at Derby and in October, 1678, he bought from John Rogers a one-eighth share in the "John and Esther" for £58–1–2 and later sold it to John Prentice.[12] After his death his son Samuel[2] carried on the mercantile business on an even larger scale.

His frequent acquisition and disposal of lands must have constituted a considerable part of his business. On April 22, 1662, an Indian deed was signed[12] by Okenonge to "my loving friends Ensign Joseph Judson and JOSEPH HAWLEY and John Minor of Stratford. . . ." In 1667 JOSEPH[1] and others had received liberty to establish a plantation at Potatuck [afterwards Newtown] but for the time being the enterprise was abandoned.[12] In December, 1668, he sold land to Thomas Kimberly who had the year before been received as an "outliver" of Stratford.[12] In 1668 JOSEPH[1] and Henry Tomlinson bought a large tract of land in Derby[12] for £6–10. On February 29, 1671, he received[16] his third and fourth divisions of lands in Derby, as well as others later. That town had been settled[12] in 1654 by Milford people and by several men from Stratford, including JOSEPH[1], though he was a non-resident.

On May 25, 1671, Stratford made its last purchase of land from the Indians and paid[12]

> "Mr. HAWLEY for goods to ye Indians for ye White Hills purchase £3–10–00.
>
> "Mr. HAWLEY for entertainment of ye Indians at y[t] time with his own time £1–00–00.
>
> "To Mr. HAWLEY for one coat upon that account £1–00–00."

In 1671 the land holdings of JOSEPH[1], as shown by the Stratford tax list, were exceeded by but one man. In April, 1672, he sold for £34 to the town of Derby for their minister a number of tracts which he had earlier bought of Alexander Bryan. He still retained large holdings in Derby and, when the town voted in November, 1673, to build their pastor a home on the property bought of JOSEPH[1], the contract was let to John Hull for £33 and JOSEPH[1], with four others, subscribed[16] £20 "in equal proportion among themselves toward this structure. Of this amount one-half was to be paid at the raising and the balance at the covering of the house and because these subscribers

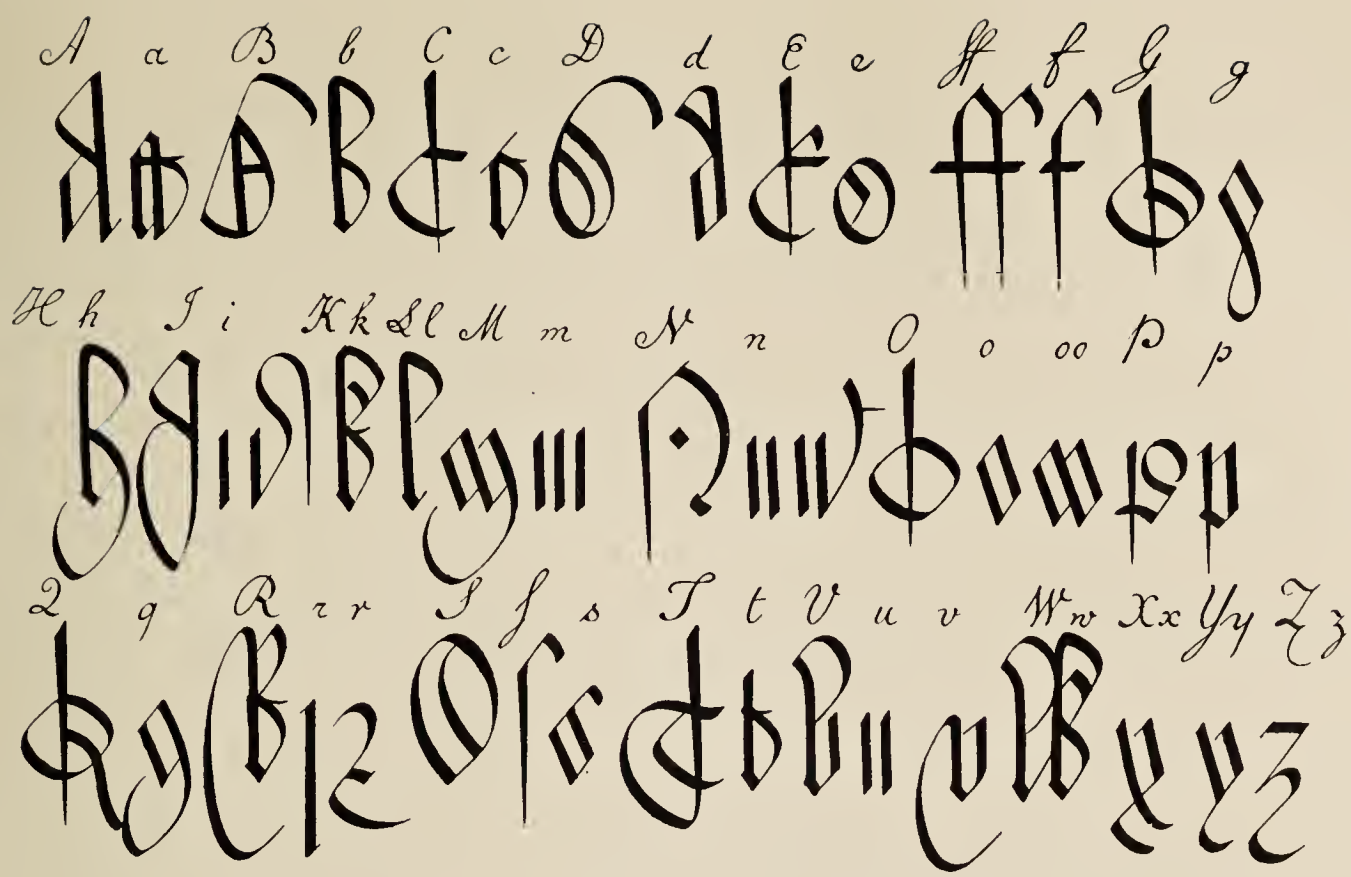
lived at a distance they were to be exempt from particular days works about the building."

Evidently JOSEPH[1] financed the purchase of a considerable quantity of land for the town of Derby[3] and found difficulty in collecting from the townsmen, while they in turn brought pressure to bear on him to force immediate settlement on lands which they had granted to him for his son, threatening him with the alternative of losing it. On his part, he withheld from them the deeds of the land he had bought in their behalf and also took the matter before the General Court in May, 1677. That body appointed a committee to investigate and to report at once. This committee recommended the payment by the town of Derby to JOSEPH[1] of over £40 and an extension of time for the settlement of his son on the lands. Derby made various feeble and ineffectual efforts to accede to this requirement. In October, 1679, JOSEPH[1] again brought the matter before the General Court which sharply ordered the committee to "fully issue the sayd case . . ." but apparently it was January, 1686–7, before it was completely settled.[16, 17] The payments made to JOSEPH[1] partook of the following forms,—money, corn, wheat, flax, rye, hops, cow hides, steers, a due bill and cloth.[3, 16]

On March 28, 1680, JOSEPH[1] deeded[16] to Samuel Brinsmade about three acres of land at the place commonly called "ye honny spott," and his wife, KATHERINE, and sons Samuel[2] and Ephraim[2], witnessed the document. Exactly three weeks later Ephraim[2] died and in less than two months JOSEPH[1] himself had passed on. His will disclosed that he owned land[5] in "ye great neck," at "Clapboard Hill," at "Gallows Creek" and elsewhere and, after his death, his children continued to receive[16] apportionments of land at Stratford and Derby due his estate on his "rights." His will,[5] dated September 17, 1689, confirmed the deeds made earlier to his sons and grandsons, provided for his widow, distributed all his personal estate to his family and named his sons as his executors. He died[7, 18] May 20, 1690, aged eighty-seven. His wife, KATHERINE, whom he had married about 1640–6, probably at Wethersfield, died June 25, 1692, doubtless at Stratford.[17]

The children of JOSEPH[1] and KATHERINE (BIRDSEY) HAWLEY, most, if not all, of them born at Stratford, and through two of whom we descend, were[1, 2, 4, 5]

1. Samuel[2], b. 1647; d.[7] August 24, 1734; m. 1st, May 20, 1673, Mary Thompson (Thomas); m. 2nd, Patience (Nichols?) Hubbell,[7] widow of John Hubbell.



THE ALPHABET IN EARLY ENGLISH COURT HAND[10]

II. Joseph[2], b. January 9, 1649–50; d. unmarried in middle life and his property went[5] to his nephew, Joseph[3].

III. ELIZABETH[2], b. at Stratford,[2] December 17, 1651, or January 26, 1651;[1, 4] d. there May 10, 1676; m. June 7, 1670, as his first wife, JOHN[2] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 190].[1, 2, 11]

IV. Ebenezer[2], b. September 17, 1654; d. October, 1681, or[18] before May, 1683; m. April 19, 1678, Esther[3] Ward (William[2], Andrew[1]).[18]

V. Hannah[2], b. May 26, 1657; m. 1st, December 13, 1678, Josiah Nichols (Isaac); m. 2nd, June 22, 1692, John Wolcott, of Windsor.[9]

VI. Ephraim[2], b. August 7, 1659; d. April 18, 1690; m. December 4, 1683, Sarah Welles (Samuel of Wethersfield).

VII. John[2], b. June 14, 1661; d. July 27, 1729; m. April 23, 1686, Deborah Pierson.

VIII. MARY[2], b. at Stratford July 16, 1663; d. there September 9, 1731, aged 66; m. at that place December 20, 1682, JOHN[3] COE [see Coe, p. 217].[1, 2, 6]

REFERENCES

1. History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Conn., S. Orcutt, 1886, I, 118, 120, 127–8; II, 1149, 1176, 1212.
2. Savage, I, 212; II, 384; III, 305.
3. History of Derby, Conn., S. Orcutt, 1880, pp. 60–1 et seq.
4. Hawley Record, E. S. Hawley, 1890, pp. 2, 304, 396, 429–34.
5. House of Hawley, E. H. Platt, 1909, pp. 5–9.
6. Robert Coe, Puritan, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 88.
7. Sterling Genealogy, A. M. Sterling, 1909, I, 311–2.
8. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 101–2, Note by F. F. Starr.
9. Savage, III, 281; IV, 622.
10. Court-Hand Restored, A. Wright, 10th ed., C. T. Martin, 1912, plate 1.
11. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 38.
12. History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Conn., S. Orcutt, 1886, I, 25, 89, 93, 104–5, 135, 159, 179, 182–3, 187, 194, 201–2, 241, 249, 263, 268, 271–2, 290, 293–4, 440; II, 1106.

12a. Ibid., II, 1221, 1252; Lineage Book of Daughters of Founders and Patriots, 1916, p. 94.

13. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 24; III, 66, 75, 85, 97, 106, 115, 155, 181, 230, 236.
14. Ibid., II, 522; III, 97, 115, 140, 169, 230, 252; IV, 24.
15. Ibid., III, 55, 68, 71–2, 145, 224.
16. Town Records of Derby, Conn., 1901, pp. 19–20, 33, 49–52, 101–7, 110–4, 133, 193, 385.
17. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 301; III, 37, 41, 223.
18. Connecticut Magazine, XI, 504; Powers-Banks Ancestry, W. H. Powers, 1921, 209–10.

HAYWARD

♦ * † [358]
ROBERT HAYWARD
c.1613–1684

m
c.1640

LYDIA KILBOURN
c.1616–aft.1684

† ‡ [178]
JOHN SPENCER
c.1638–1682

m
c.1663–5

REBECCA HAYWARD
1648–bef.1682

‡ § [88]
JOHN ACKLEY
c.1662–1736

m
1699

REBECCA SPENCER
1666–bef. 1736

§ [44]
BENJAMIN ACKLEY
c.1708–12–aft.1767

m
c.1730–3

EXPERIENCE . . .
–aft.1753

§ ‖ [22]
HEZEKIAH ACKLEY
c.1733–5–aft.1783

m
1756

ABIGAIL DOANE
1732–aft.1777

‖ [10]
DANIEL BEMAN
1756–1817

m
c.1777–8

ABIGAIL ACKLEY
c.1761–1805

‖ ¶ [4]
AARON GATES
1780–1850

m
1803 or 1804

RUTH BEMAN
1784–1858

¶ ♥ [2]
BEMAN GATES
1818–1894

m
1841

BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN
1816–1895

♥
RUFUS R. DAWES
1838–1899

m
1864

MARY BEMAN GATES
1842–1921

* Windsor, Conn., and Northampton, Mass.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Haddam, Conn.
§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ East Hartland, Conn.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♥ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Dorchester, Mass.

HAYWARD–HOWARD

"ROBERT HAIEWARD," said to have been the progenitor of this family,[1] came to New England in the vessel "Assurance" in July, 1635, at the age of twenty-two years.[2] Our forbear of that name was certainly at Dorchester for a short time before becoming an inhabitant of Windsor, this fact being disclosed by the records of the latter place,[3] where he was admitted to the church[1] on July 10, 1642, and served[4, 5, 7, 9] as a juror in 1643, 1645 and 1649. He had a grant[3] of land there in or before 1643, on which he undoubtedly lived, and which he sold in 1658 to Peter Brown[3] [see map on p. 569]. On May 16, 1649, he testified before the Particular Court at Hartford and, on June 7, following, at a session of the same body he signed a bond for £10 that James Westover would appear "at the Perticular Courte in Septemb^r next and carry good behauier in the meane time."[4] His special business was evidently that of millwright and, in this capacity, he served several different towns, apparently removing to them temporarily and receiving grants of land in them, but returning repeatedly to Windsor where he died. An order of March 20, 1649–50, provided that "ROBERT HAWARD, miller of Wyndsor, is freed from seruing vppon Juryes during his attendence vppon the mill."[4] In 1652 he sold to Daniel Clark certain lands which he had previously bought[1] from Anthony Dorchester.

The town of Hartford, at a meeting on December 18, 1655, appointed a committee "to treat wth ROBART HAYWARD of Windsor about his tearmes for Building a mill."[6] It seems highly probable that he was engaged for this service and perhaps paid, in part at least, by a tract of land, for grants were made for "rendering service to the public" even when permanent settlement was not anticipated and record is found that "ROBERT HOWARD" was one of eight people so recompensed by vote of the town of Hartford.[13]

In 1657 ROBERT[1] bought property at Windsor from Nathaniel Phelps and, two years later, sold it.[3] At the seating of the meeting house in that town in 1659–60 he was "placed in the short seats" and paid seven shillings for that

assignment.[3] This arrangement may have been to accommodate members of his family rather than himself for, by or before 1658, he had temporarily removed to Northampton, Massachusetts, undoubtedly to build their first mill and perhaps receiving there also a land grant in part payment for, in that town, he is called "mill-wright" and is shown to have had a two-acre home lot and twenty acres of meadow in 1658. He subscribed two acres for the minister of Northampton in 1659 and operated the first mill for JOSEPH[1] PARSONS [see Parsons, p. 628] and others of that town from 1659 to 1661. He bought that property from the owners in 1661 and sold it for "four score and fifteen pounds" to Praisever Turner in November, 1662, giving possession[12] thereof in April, 1663. In April, 1661, he was on a committee there to arrange for an assignment of land grants[12] and probably removed to Hartford, Connecticut, shortly after his disposal of the mill in April, 1663, for, on August 10, of that year, he received a "letter of Attourney" from Mrs. Mary Shrick of that place and he certainly had arrived there before August 14, 1665, when he testified as follows:[7]

> "I, ROBERT HAYWARD of Hartford as an attourney for Mestees Marey Screat have receiued of William Leueredg of Hartford fiue pownds six shillings & a penny which Ballenceth all acco^{ts} & Bills Between mee William Leueredg & mestris Mary Screat from the Beginning of the world unto this day as witness my hand this 14th of August 1665.
>
> ROBERT HAWERT"

The land records at Windsor call him "of Hartford"[1,3] in 1667, though that may have referred to ownership of land rather than personal presence. By October 11, 1669, he was certainly resident of Windsor for, on that date, he was reported to the General Court as a freeman of that place.[4] On June 11, 1676, he contributed five shillings as his share of a subscription for the help of the poor of the other colonies[3] and, in 1677, was summoned as a witness, apparently from that town.[3]

A deposition[8] was made in 1680 by John London, formerly of Windsor, to the effect that in May, 1679, he and "Dr. ROBERT HOWARD of Windsor saw Col Goffe the regicide at the home of Capt Joseph Bull Sr in Hartford." This is believed[8] to refer to ROBERT[1] HAYWARD who may have been a practicing (but not graduate physician[1]) since no other man of the name is found there. It was customary in those days for an apprenticeship with an older doctor to qualify one to practice medicine and probably very few had the

foundation of a technical education. In August, 1682, his ten-year-old granddaughter, Lydia[3] Spencer [daughter of JOHN[2] SPENCER], who "had a defective hand," was intrusted to ROBERT[1] HOWARD by her father's will, which gave her an extra portion of his estate because of her affliction.[15]

ROBERT[1] married LYDIA[2] KILBOURN [see Kilbourn, p. 514][1, 9] who survived him. He died August 23, 1684, at Windsor.[1] The inventory of his estate, amounting to £96–02–00, was taken August 28, of that year, and administration granted[10] to his widow, "aged 70 years or thereabouts," and to his only son, Ephraim[2].

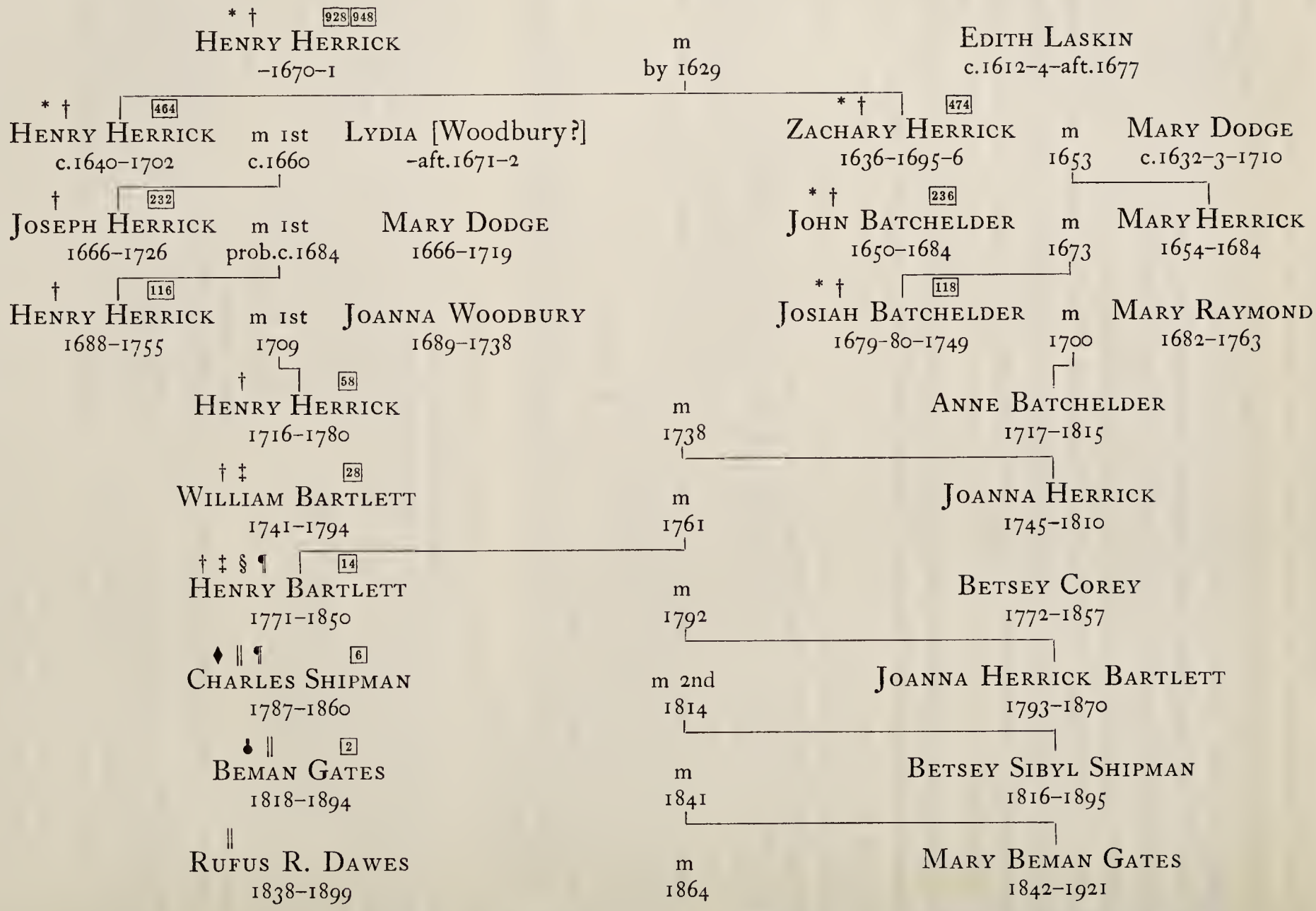
The children of ROBERT[1] and LYDIA (KILBOURN) HAYWARD, at least five of whom were born in Windsor,[3] the order of birth unknown, were[1, 5]

I. Mary[2], b. (—); d. 1647.
II. Mary[2], b. (—); d. 1650.
III. Sarah[2], b. January 1, 1644; d. 1647.
IV. Tabitha[2], b. January 1, 1646–7 [perhaps same as Taphet or Tayhath].[1, 9]
V. REBECCA[2], b. August 17, 1648, at Windsor; d. after[15] September, 1676, and before 1682, since her husband previous to his death in that year arranged for various relatives to care for his children, one of whom was left to "Father HOWARD." She m.,[5] abt. 1665, JOHN[2] SPENCER[11] [see Spencer, p. 775].
VI. Esther[2], b. June 8, 1651; d. December 5, 1657.
VII. Lydia[2], b. January 13,[2] bap. June 16,[1] 1655; d. 1676.
VIII. daughter, probably d. young.[5]
IX. Ephraim[2], b. January 11, 1656–7; d. November, 1690; m. January 8, 1684, Abigail Newberry.[14]

REFERENCES

1. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 409.
2. Hotten's Emigrants, I, 111.
3. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 159, 179, 229, 882.
4. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 88, 129, 149, 184, 191–2, 205; II, 519.
5. Savage, II, 391–3.
6. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, VI, 106–7.
7. Ibid., XIV, 491.
8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 284.
9. Kilbourn Genealogy, P. K. Kilbourn, 1856, p. 42.
10. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 319–20, 364–5.
11. Genealogical Notes of First Settlers of Conn. and Mass., N. Goodwin, 1856, p. 197.
12. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 78, 95–6, 103, 146.
13. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, pp. 126, 196.
14. Newberry Genealogy, J. G. Bartlett, 1914, p. 54.
15. Two Hundredth Anniversary of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, p. 255; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 363–5; First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 237.

HERRICK



* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

HERRICK

HENRY[1] HERRICK* probably came to New England in the spring of 1629 in the fleet with[1b] the Reverend Francis Higginson. Indeed it is suggested[33] that he may have come in the "Lyon," William Peirce, Master, which sailed from Bristol in May and arrived at Plymouth in August, 1629, but that seems quite unlikely for by August 6 he had been at Salem long enough to contract a marriage and to join the Church with his wife EDITH[2] LASKIN [see Laskin, p. 528] who had arrived the previous September. They were among the thirty original members of the Salem Church of which the Reverend Mr. Higginson† was teacher.[1a] HENRY[1] settled at Salem in Massachusetts Bay, requested freemanship there on October 19, 1630, and took the oath pertinent to that position on May 18, following.[1b, 5]

Although HENRY[1] and nearly all his family were affiliated with the church, they evidently were less narrow than some of their associates, for we read[1a] that "HENERIE HERICKE and EDITH his wife are fined 10s. and 11s. for Costs of Coort for aiding and comforting an excommunicated‡ person contrary to order."[1, 1a]

*He is sometimes called[1, 1a] son of Sir William Herrick and his wife Joan May, of Beau Manor Park,[1c] co. Leicester, England. If that statement be true, he was born August 16, 1604. The evidence cited to justify this claimed relationship is circumstantial rather than direct. It centers around a letter preserved at Beau Manor, dated June 28, 1653, written to John Herrick, son of Sir William, by his brother Henry who was then resident somewhere outside of England and who is presumed to have been this HENRY[1] HERRICK of New England.[1a]

†The Reverend Mr. Higginson had been a non-conforming minister in the parish of St. Nicholas and at Claybrook, co. Leicester, England, and after emigration was ordained as teacher[2] of the First Church at Salem, Massachusetts, on July 20, 1629. Many of his friends accompanied or followed him to New England,[2] and his origin is thus shown to be similar to that claimed for HENRY[1] HERRICK.

‡The church discipline for any misconduct, whether gross, trivial or merely displaying a broader mind or more tolerance than one's fellows, consisted of (a) admonition, (b) fine, or (c) excommunication. The ecclesiastical rules required that all inhabitants should "forbear to eat and drink with excommunicated persons" and, in 1638, a law was even passed to the effect that if an excommunicated person continued as such for six months [i.e., did not sooner bow to the will of the church] he should be liable to fine, imprisonment or banishment; but that ruling so resembled the laws in England from which they had escaped that it was repealed in 1639. It is evident, however, that friendly intercourse with one in such disfavor would not be easily tolerated and the fine recorded against HENRY[1] and his wife may have been because they housed, fed or employed one whom we might consider had merely claimed the right of personal liberty.[2a]

A deference which was uniformly shown to ministers in that day was, at Salem, also shown to the elders; in 1644, HENRY[1] and three others were appointed to see that "both o[r] Elders be convenientlie provided wth wood sufficient for them."[4]

Various recorded facts reveal something of the background of HENRY[1] and we are afforded a glimpse of his type of mind and environment, though it should not be forgotten that, in those days, exposing the sins of one's neighbors was considered not only laudable but a duty. About 1642 Margaret White arrived from Wincanton, England, and became[2] a servant in the Herrick home. HENRY[1] was a witness, in 1647, against a neighbor who spoke falsely; he generously paid, in 1651, the court charges which had been laid against his servant; he testified, in 1662, that a neighbor had, the preceding winter, "suffered tippling in his house by those who came to keep Christmas there;"* he bore witness, in 1665, against the miller for not keeping scales and weights at the mill according to law; and witnessed that year against a man "for being disguised with drink two several times."[3] About 1657 a family by the name of Sargent removed to Salem on pretense that the father had undertaken certain work in that town. The selectmen did not consider them desirable citizens and ruled that they should either depart or secure the town against loss by being sponsored by some dependable man. HENRY[1] vouched for them and later was loser to the amount of sixteen shillings three pence on this account.[4] That same year he engaged with the selectmen to keep Richard Lambert's daughter for the sum of five pounds per year.[4]

One ruling of the times was that strangers should not be entertained without the approval of the authorities and in May, 1660, HENRY[1] and our BENJAMIN[2] BALCH were fined ten and five shillings, respectively, for "intertayninge" Nicholas Deacon. Apparently this was not because of disapproval of Deacon for, at that very same meeting, the selectmen admitted him as an inhabitant. He seems, however, to have failed to meet the requirements of

*The severity of Puritan opinion as to suitable conduct upon that day is seen by the law passed[4a] on May 11, 1659 "For pventing disorders arising in seuerall places w[th]in this jurisdiccon, by reason of some still observing such ffestiualls as were superstitiously kept in other countrys, to the great dishonnor of God & offence of others, it is therefore ordered by this Court and the authority thereof, that whosoeuer shall be found observing any such day as *Christmas* or the like, either by for bearing of labour, feasting, or any other way, vpon any such accounts as afore sayd, every such person so offending shall pay for euery such offence fiue shillings, as a fine to the county. And whereas, not only at such tjmes [Christmas], but at seuerall other tjmes also, it is a custome too frequent in many places to expend in vnlawfull games, as *cards*, *dice*, *&c*, it is therefore further ordered, and by this Court declared, that after publication hereof, whosoeuer shall be found in any place w[th]in this jurisdiccon playing either at cards or at dice, contrary to this order, shall pay as a *fine* to the county the some of *fiue shillings* for *euy such offence*."

By 1665 moderation was apparent for certain Commissioners from England suggested "that the poenalty for keeping Christmas, being directly against the lawe of England, may be repealed."

popular approval for on November 29, 1660, HENRY[1], with a neighbor, complained against Deacon for living away from his wife and on May 23, following, the court summoned him to explain this matter.[3,4]

HENRY[1] HERRICK evidently failed at one time to report for military training and was fined accordingly; he evidently showed extenuating circumstances for in June, 1658, a part of the fine was remitted and he was freed from training.[4,7]

In 1662 HENRY[1] brought suit against Francis Masters, a Frenchman, for "withholding a cow" but, by the testimony of PETER[2] WOODBURY in 1665, he had by that time taken Master's young son to live with him for a period of eleven and one-half years.[3,7]

The public activities of HENRY[1] were not spectacular but included[2] service on petit, trial or grand juries once or more each year from[7] 1648 to 1655 and 1659 to 1664; he was chosen constable[4] in 1656; with ROGER[1] CONANT and WILLIAM[1] DODGE, he settled disputed bounds[4] in 1658; he was a surveyor of highways the two following years; and he, with ROGER[1] CONANT and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH, testified in 1661 relative to measuring the way to the clay pit.[7] In 1657 HENRY[1] took the inventory of the estate of[3] Agnes (——) Balch* and in 1659 he administered the estate[3] of his father-in-law, HUGH[1] LASKIN. In this matter he evidently incurred the displeasure of Paul Mansfield (second husband of the daughter-in-law of the deceased) who received two-thirds of the estate for his step-children, while one-third went to EDITH, the wife of the executor. Mansfield brought suit against HENRY[1] for "breaking up housen" and taking away the goods and cattle belonging to the estate.[10]

The Herrick home was in that part of Salem which became Beverly [see map on p. 830] and when a separate church was formed there in 1667, HENRY[1] with his wife EDITH and most of their children affiliated with it.[11] His occupation was exclusively farming and he owned much land. Among the many tracts which he acquired by grant or purchase was a "fearme" which the town of Salem gave him in January, 1635–6. It was situated on the "North side of Jeffry Massyes Cove, bounded by the Rock on one side & Wooliston's River on the other." This rock was evidently a landmark. Reference is found to a neighbor who, in 1647, was given permission to "mow the grasse yearly vppon the highway . . ." from "HENRY HERRICKS Rock" to a specified point.[4]

The will[10a] of HENRY[1], dated November 24, 1670, and probated March 28, 1671, provided for the division of his land among his sons, and gave his wife

*Widow of JOHN[1] BALCH [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

for her lifetime an entire half of the home, four cows, four sheep, all the household goods and one-sixth part of the produce of the corn fields and orchard. It gave to ZACHARY[2] a farm in Birch Plain and to HENRY[2], who was made executor, it gave a portion and, in addition, the wife's share after her death.[10a] HENRY[2] was to provide for the wintering of his mother's stock, to keep "her fire-wood redy cut for fire at the dore, for all the yeare long and liberty to keepe 3 swine at the dore. . . ." The inventory of the estate showed a valuation of £974–17s. It was taken by JOHN[1] RAYMOND and ISAAC[1] HULL and showed among the personal property the possession of four Bibles and other books, a musket, a sword and a rapier.[10a] In 1677 the youngest son, Benjamin[2], died unmarried and intestate and the income from his estate was given to his mother during her life.[10]

The known children of HENRY[1] and EDITH (LASKIN) HERRICK, all born at Salem and through two of whom we descend, were[1, 1b, 6, 8]

I. Thomas[2], d.s.p.; m. Hannah Ordway.
II. ZACHARY[2], see following.
III. Ephraim[2], bap. February 11, 1637–8; d. September 18, 1693, at Beverly; m. at Salem, July 3, 1661, Mary Cross.
IV. HENRY[2], see following, p. 427.
V. Joseph[2], bap. August 6, 1645; d. February 4, 1717–8, in Salem; m.[8] 1st, February 7, 1665, Sarah Leach (Richard) who d. 1674; m. 2nd. about 1677–8, Mary Endicott; m. 3rd, June 28, 1707, Mary (——) March, widow of George of Newbury.
VI. Elizabeth[2], bap. July 4, 1647; d.s.p. May 6, 1727, at Ipswich;[12] m. there January 23, 1672–3, Philip Fowler.
VII. John[2], bap. May 26, 1650; d. February 14, 1680, at Beverly; m. March 25, 1674, Mary Remington.
VIII. Benjamin[2], "above 21 years the first day of March,"[10] 1677; d.s.p. March 27, 1677.

ZACHARY[2]* HERRICK (*Henry*[1]) was baptized[1, 6, 8] at Salem on December 25, 1636, and died at Beverly on May 3, of either[8] 1695 or 1696, aged about sixty. He married there,[9] in 1653, MARY[2] DODGE [see Dodge, p. 317]. He was a farmer, as was almost every man of that day, but he was also a carpenter and, in that capacity, he and two others were appointed, in 1659, to view the work done on a house for the minister. He was called a carpenter when he took the oath of fidelity in 1677 with many other men of Beverly.[19] He lived near the home of his father-in-law, RICHARD[1] DODGE, and of his brother-in-law, PETER[2] WOODBURY.

ZACHARY[2] was not a church member, at least in his early life, for his children were baptized in their mother's name,[11] but his general habits,

* Spelled also Zachariah, Zacri and various other ways.

deduced from the scattered items of record, appear to have been as useful and respectable as his father's. In 1660, he and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH testified that a neighbor woman made uncivil speeches; he, with ROGER[1] CONANT and his wife, witnessed against a neighbor who had been drunk; in 1661, he gave testimony against a resident for stealing a "parcel of timber" and for lying about it; and in 1669 he was a witness at the trial of two quarreling neighbors.[19]

He was fined in 1664 for a breach of peace, having struck Nicholas Deacon* several blows. He was fined again the following year for striking the same man "many blows on the highway."[19] In 1669, he and ANDREW[1] ELIOTT testified in court that the latter had been struck by a neighbor; in 1670 ZACHARY[2] was sued by Sarah Marsh, having had, as administrator of the estate of her deceased husband, some controversy with her; and in 1671 he and BENJAMIN[2] BALCH made an appraisal of the amount of damage which had been inflicted by the cattle of John Dodge upon the cornfield of Osmund Trask, deciding upon twenty bushels.[19]

ZACHARY[2] was on a coroner's jury[19] in 1660 and was fence-viewer[4] for "Cape Ann Side," now Beverly. In 1672 he and WILLIAM[2] DODGE were bound by the court for the appearance, at its subsequent term, of "Coker" William Dodge. Thomas Chubb, who had stolen a horse from ZACHARY[2], was in 1672 ordered to pay him eight pounds, as well as a fine of five pounds to the colony for the offense; in this year also ZACHARY[2] served on a trial jury.

It appears that ill-feeling on the part of an irresponsible neighbor[20] woman existed toward ZACHARY[2]. In November, 1659, Joan, wife of Robert Hibbard, was presented to the court "for railing and speaking several lies upon ZACKARY HEREK, affirming that he was drunk, and went away from John Ston's house drunk about one or two o'clock at night. . . ." MARY (DODGE) HERRICK, the wife of the accused man, and HENRY[2] HERRICK, his brother, and Lydia Grover, a neighbor, testified to the contrary; Joan was sentenced to make acknowledgment or to pay a fine and costs, and is on record as having paid the fine. In the following June, however, the matter was again before the court and at this time Joan "denied, to those who heard her, that she spoke the words, and took God to witness, and also said, as she had a soul to save, it was not true." She apparently felt a distinct grievance against Lydia Grover because of her earlier testimony in the case for she said of Lydia and one of her relatives that they were the "veriest lyers att bass riuer & they

*Whom his father had once vouched for and later complained against.

were able to ly the deuill out of Hell." For this last speech, which was testified to by the wife of ZACHARY[2] and by his brother, HENRY[2], Joan was again brought before the court. She defiantly "confessed she said it and that it was true" and was fined ten shillings.[20]

In 1660 a case was before the court wherein ZACHARY[2] and others deposed that Roger Haskell* had removed a certain landmark, the defendant admitting that he had done so. Haskell, in the capacity of constable, in company with John Raymond,† went to the home of ZACHARY[2] and demanded payment of rates or taxes which he asserted were due. ZACHARY[2] was away from home and Haskell appropriated a kettle in lieu of payment; the head of the house just then arrived and "took said Hascull by the shoulder and threatened that he would make him an example to all such knavish constables. . . ." For this defiance of authority ZACHARY[2] was fined and required also to pay a witness-fee for the attendance of John Raymond; the trial brought out the fact that ZACHARY[2] had already paid that particular rate, for one of the witnesses present had loaned him the barley with which to pay it and another had accompanied him when he took it to the constable. Added evidence showed that other witnesses had similar demands made upon them by this same constable[20] for the payment of a tax which had already been settled.

In 1667 ZACHARY[2] was again before the court, this time accused by Osmund Trask and his son of being drunk and of swearing,[20] but whether justly, does not appear.

In September, 1676, ZACHARY[2] "complaining of his infirmity that he is not able to ride was dismissed from the troop‡ to the foot."[20] He was credited, however, on June 24, 1676, with £3–08–07 earned in King Philip's War under Captain Poole.[24]

A servant, William Chubb, who in 1672 was apprenticed to ZACHARY[2] for six years to learn the carpenter's trade, was away in military service at Hadley and failed to return to his work for eleven weeks after his military dismissal. In June, 1678, ZACHARY[2] brought suit against him and the verdict was that the plaintiff should receive ten weeks' service or equivalent pay in corn or cattle.[20] In June, 1679, he was a tithing-man,[20] which suggests that he may have by this time become a church member.

* Brother of WILLIAM[1] HASKELL [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

† Either our ancestor of that name or his son.

‡ From the cavalry to the infantry.

ZACHARY[2] had an indirect connection[22] with the witchcraft delusion, as several members of his family, including a son, grandson, niece and brothers Joseph[2] and HENRY[2] (q.v.), were prominent as witnesses and officials in the trials.

By the will of his father in 1670 ZACHARY[2] received a farm on Birch Plain, five acres of meadow and sixteen acres where his home was.[10a] In 1677 he received[21] one-sixth portion of the estate of his deceased brother Benjamin[2] and that year was made one of the administrators of the estate of his mother-in-law, EDITH (——) DODGE, who died intestate but leaving an unsigned will. Her expressed wishes were carried out and in March, 1678, all her heirs, including ZACHARY[2] HERRICK and PETER[2] WOODBURY, for their respective wives, signed a statement to the effect that they were satisfied with the division of property.

The children of ZACHARY[2] and MARY (DODGE) HERRICK, born, some in Salem and some in Beverly, were[1, 1b, 6, 8]

I. MARY[3], b. at Salem, October 1, 1654; bap. October 10, 1654; d. there August 19, 1684; m. at that place, August 14, 1673, JOHN[2] BATCHELDER [see Batchelder, p. 99].
II. Elizabeth[3], b. March 25, 1657, at Salem; m.[6] March 11, 1684, Samuel Stone.
III. Henry[3], b. 1659; d. young.
IV. Sarah[3], bap. October 15, 1662, at Salem; m. December 22, 1692, Samuel Morgan, of Manchester.[12]
V. Martha[3], b. August 5, 1665.
VI. Hannah[3], bap. September 19, 1669, at Beverly;[11] probably she who d. there February 9, 1746, in her 79th year; m. there June 21, 1706, Jonathan Stone.
VII. Henry[3], bap. August 25, 1672, at Beverly;[11] d. there September 28, 1747, aged 76; m. at Salem, July 23, 1694, Susanna Beadle.
VIII. Abigail[3], bap. May 10, 1674, at Beverly.[11]

HENRY[2] HERRICK (*Henry*[1]) [from p. 424] was baptized at Salem[1, 6, 8] on January 16, 1639–40, died at Beverly in June, 1702, and married first, about 1660, LYDIA, called Woodbury, who was the mother of all his children. Her connection with our Woodbury families has not been established. She died after 1672 and before 1690 when HENRY[2] married, secondly, Sarah (——) Giddings, the widow of John Giddings of Gloucester[1] or Chebacco.[11]

HENRY[2] and his wife were among those who petitioned for a separate church at Beverly. LYDIA signed the covenant when the church was organized in 1667, but her husband was not then in full communion.[11] Their children were all baptized at Beverly. His second wife became a member of the church, but he seems to have participated in community affairs less than his father, HENRY[1], or his brother, ZACHARY[2].

Tradition says that HENRY[2] was of the party when the church bell, taken at Port Royal and held for many years by Captain More for the freight charges [see Dodge, p. 325], was high-handedly taken by some of the young men of Beverly and hung in the church.

In 1659 and 1660 he, with MARY (DODGE) HERRICK, gave testimony to clear his brother ZACHARY[2], her husband, from the charge of maligning a neighbor; when this same brother had a horse stolen in 1672, HENRY[2] was again a witness. In 1674–5 he served on the grand jury; in December, 1677, he, with other Beverly men, took the oath of fidelity; and, in 1680, he was constable of that town.[23] After the construction of the second church building in 1682, HENRY[2] was honored* by the assignment, with six other men, to a seat in the first pew.[28]

He unfortunately became prominent as a member of the jury in one or more of the witchcraft trials in 1692. His brother Joseph[2] was constable about that time and was at first closely connected with the horror, but presently, realizing the enormity of it, he went so far as to sign a petition in behalf of one victim, which act in itself laid him open to the chance of similar persecution.

HENRY[2], with eleven others, including our ANDREW[1] ELIOTT, later publicly expressed their remorse for their part in the affair; they "had acted in conformity with their obligations and honest convictions of duty in bringing in

* At that time the system for estimating each person's just placing provided—

" 'That every male be allowed one degree for every complete year of age he exceeds twenty-one.

'That he be allowed for a captain's commission twelve degrees; for a lieutenant's, eight degrees, and for an ensign's, four degrees.

'That he be allowed three degrees for every shilling for real estate in the last parish tax, and one degree for every shilling for personal estate and faculty.

'Every six degrees for estate and faculty of a parent alive, to make one degree among his sons, or where there is none, among the daughters that are seated.

'Every generation of predecessors heretofore living in this town, to make one degree for every male descendant that is seated. That parentage be regarded no farther otherwise than to turn the scale between competition for the same seat.

'That taxes for polls of sons or servants shall give no advancement for masters or fathers, because such sons or servants have seats.

'That no degree be allowed on account of any one's predecessors having paid towards building the meeting-house, because it had fallen down before now, but for the repairs since made.

'That some suitable abatement in degrees be made, where it is well known the person is greatly in debt.

'That the tenant of a freehold for term of years shall be allowed as many degrees as half the real estate entitles him to, and the landlord the other half.

'That the proprietor of land in other parish shall be (if under his own improvement) allowed as much as he would be if they lay in the parish; but if rented out, only half as much.

'Married women to be seated agreeable to the rank of their husbands, and widows in the same degree as though their husbands were yet living. . . . [The women were seated separately from the men.] . . .

'That the foremost magistrate seat (so called) shall be the highest in rank, and the other three in successive order . . . '[28]"

the verdicts. They had sworn to decide according to the law and the evidence. The law under which they were required to act was laid down with absolute positiveness by the Court. . . . If it had been within their province, as it is always declared not to be, to discuss the general principles . . . it would not have altered the case; for at that time not only the common people, but the wisest philosophers, supported the interpretation of the law that acknowledged the existence of witchcraft, and its sanction that visited it with death.

Notwithstanding all this, however, so tender and sensitive were the consciences of the jurors, that they signed and circulated a "humble and solemn declaration of regret for the part they had borne in the trials." [See Eliott, pp. 332–3.]

HENRY[2] was the executor of his father's will; by its provisions he was especially designated to see to his mother's needs and comforts during her life and was the recipient of the family homestead, including her share after her death.[10a] Upon the death of his brother, Benjamin[2], in 1677, HENRY[2] received also one-sixth of his estate.[10]

The children of HENRY[2] and LYDIA (Woodbury?) HERRICK were[1b, 6, 8, 11, 13]

I. Lydia[3], bap. September 26, 1666, at Salem; d. at Wenham, February 19, 1737, in her 76th year; m.[12] before 1681, John[3] Porter (Samuel[2], John[1]).
II. JOSEPH[3], see following.
III. Elizabeth[3], bap. December 6, 1668, at Beverly; m. before 1688, Isaac[3] Woodbury (NICHOLAS[2], WILLIAM[1]).
IV. Samuel[3], bap. 1670; d. 1743; m. at Salem, May 15, 1690, or at Beverly, March 25, 1690–1, Sarah Leach.
V. Jonathan[3], bap. June 16, 1672, at Beverly; d. July 29, 1724, in his 53rd year, at Concord[12] to which place he had removed.[13] He m. 1st. at Beverly, October 28, 1696, Elizabeth[3] Dodge (WILLIAM[2], WILLIAM[1]);[13] m.[12] 2nd, there, October 15, 1713, Bethia[4] Conant (John[3], Lot[2], ROGER[1]).[12]

JOSEPH[3] HERRICK (*Henry*[2], *Henry*[1]) was baptized[6, 13] September 26, 1666, at Salem, and died May 29, 1726, aged sixty-one, at Beverly.[8] He married first,[13, 14] there, about 1685, MARY[3] DODGE [see Dodge, p. 327] and married secondly, at Beverly (intention, December 24, 1721), on[15] January 11, 1721–2, Mary (Thaxter) Cushing of Hingham.

His first wife, MARY, was admitted to full communion in Beverly Church on June 19, 1687; his second wife became a member in 1692 and JOSEPH[3] identified[11] himself with the organization on August 7, 1698.

In 1696 WILLIAM[2] DODGE and his wife conveyed houses and lands[15] to JOSEPH[3] HERRICK; on February 2, 1696–7, JOSEPH[3] bought from "Coker"

William Dodge a house and lot in Beverly. From the wording of a deed from WILLIAM[2] DODGE to his son, William[3], it is revealed that, though the grantor and his son-in-law, JOSEPH[3] HERRICK, lived near each other, their friendly relations had been marred by a suit for trespass.[25]

JOSEPH[3] commanded a troop of mounted rangers in the French and Indian[6, 13] War. He was uniformly called "Captain"[8] as early as 1721 and, it is said,[29] even before 1707.

He arranged with his father-in-law, WILLIAM[2] DODGE, on March 25, 1708, to lay out a highway through his own land; he had, with his brother-in-law William[3] Dodge, fenced in a piece of lowland shortly before October 31, 1709.

From the description of a piece of land which lay "between the brook that runs by Capt. HERRICK's tan-house and the brook that runs by Samuel Herrick's brickyard"[25] we are led to infer that at least one occupation of JOSEPH[3] was that of tanner.

It was doubtless JOSEPH[3] who became a freeman[5] on April 18, 1690.

The children* of JOSEPH[3] and MARY (DODGE) HERRICK, all born at Beverly, were[6, 8, 13, 14]

I. Mary[4], b. May 15, 1686; d. at Beverly, June 13, 1737, aged 51; m. there May 7, 1707, Andrew[3] Eliott (Andrew[2], ANDREW[1]).[15]
II. HENRY[4], see following.
III. Lydia[4], b. May 29, 1691; m.[13, 14, 15] April 29, 1708, Josiah[3] Woodbury (PETER[2], JOHN[1]).
IV. Joanna[4], b. May 29, 1695; perhaps she who d. in Beverly in 1757; m. there[8] (int. December 12, 1714), January 6, 1714–5, Ebenezer Raymond.†
V. Joshua[4], b. February 25, 1698–9; buried at Beverly, December 6, 1782, in his 84th year; m. 1st there, June 30, 1726, Lydia Cushing; m. 2nd there (int. May 22, 1737), Abigail[4] Jacob, of Hingham (Peter[3], John[2], Nicholas[1]).[8, 15]

HENRY[4] HERRICK (*Joseph*[3], *Henry*[2], *Henry*[1]) was born September 9, 1688, at Beverly,[8] and died August 10, 1755, aged about sixty-six, or August 24, 1755, aged about sixty-seven years.[8] He married first[13] at Beverly on December 1, 1709, JOANNA[4] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 837]; married

*The fact that JOSEPH[3], called "jr.," and his uncle Joseph[2], called "sr.," each had contemporaneously a wife Mary, has caused confusion as to the identity of the parents of certain children and even the insertion of the wrong maiden name in certain printed records.[26] For instance, Benjamin, Henry and Martin Herrick, baptized February 15, 1679–80, Tryphosa, baptized December 4, 1681, Henry, b. September 17, 1688, Ruth, baptized May 12, 1689, and Edith, baptized March 1, 1691, are called[26] either children of "Joseph, jr." or of MARY "(DODGE)" HERRICK, while in truth they were all children of Joseph[2], "sr." and Mary Endicott; for JOSEPH[3], "jr." was baptized in 1666 and would not have had children at the age of 15. Moreover Mary[4] Herrick, baptized[26] on July 3, 1687, was the daughter of JOSEPH[3], Jr., and MARY DODGE, rather[8] than of Mary Endicott as is stated.[26]

†Called by one of his descendants[16] "son" of our Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND; and since Ebenezer's first recorded son, born in 1718, was named "William" and Ebenezer himself received a grant of land as an heir[16] of Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND because of that man's war service, the statement is undoubtedly true.

secondly at Gloucester on November 11, 1739, Sarah (——) Davis who died[8] March 9, 1746; he married thirdly at Wenham, September 17, 1747, Joanna (Burnham) Dodge Kimball.*

He, as well as his father, was a captain in the French and Indian War, though his service was performed in 1745. His wife, JOANNA, was "admitted to the Lord's table" at Beverly Church on September 23, 1711. He was received into full communion on January 20, 1727–8, and his eldest daughter, Mary[5], was admitted on March 3, following.[11]

In 1727, a powder room was built on to the meeting-house of Beverly for the safe keeping of the ammunition of the town. Fires were not used in churches at that time; the congregation, however, is said to have left the house whenever a thunder storm occurred.[28]

It was undoubtedly HENRY[4], then with the title of "Lieutenant," who was appointed November 18, 1729, on a committee to address the several church societies relative to attendance at an ordination[11] and he, as captain, in September, 1747, who served on a town committee.[27]

He, with his brother Joshua[4], was on a committee in the fall of 1747 to expend for the Beverly Church certain legacies formerly left it, including one left by their father JOSEPH[3] HERRICK. On his behalf these brothers added to his gift a sufficient sum to cover half the cost of a silver tankard for the church.[26]

HENRY[4] appears to have had several negroes, for[8] "Cesar and Scipio, belonging to Captain HERRICK, died 1749 and 1752, respectively, as well as others in 1740 and 1744."

The children of HENRY[4] and JOANNA (WOODBURY) HERRICK, all born at Beverly, were[8, 13]

I. Mary[5], b. November 11, 1711; probably she who d. at Beverly, January 22, 1797, aged 85; m. (——) Larcum.
II. Joseph[5], b. July 18, 1714; d. at Jamaica, West Indies, November 8, 1747; m. at Marblehead, July 12, 1744, Anna Ivimy (Ivemay or Juimy).[18]
III. HENRY[5], see following.
IV. Eunice[5], b. May 21, 1719; d. at Beverly, December 20, 1799, aged 81 yrs. 6 mo.; m. there (int. November 23, 1747), Samuel Giles.
V. Andrew[5], bap. November 25, 1721.

The child assigned[13] to HENRY[4] HERRICK and his wife, Joanna (Burnham) Dodge Kimball, was

VI. Joanna.

*Joanna Burnham m. 1st, June 20, 1706, Daniel[3] Dodge (Richard[2], RICHARD[1]), who d. at Wenham, April 30, 1740; m. 2nd, as his third wife, on June 30, 1741, Samuel[4] Kimball, who d. there January 20, 1745–6; and m. 3rd at that town, on September 17, 1747, as his third wife, Captain HENRY[4] HERRICK, of Beverly.[17]

HENRY[5] HERRICK (*Henry*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Henry*[2], *Henry*[1]) was born October 25, 1716, at Beverly.[8] The record on his gravestone[8] gives his death as December 16, 1780, aged sixty-three, but the church record[8] says he was buried December 11, 1780, aged sixty-seven, showing that the stone is probably truer. He married (intention recorded March 18, 1737–8, at Salem[8]) at Beverly,[8] on May 11, 1738, ANNE[4] BATCHELDER [see Batchelder, p. 102].

In 1759 the second parish in Beverly, which he evidently sometimes visited, did him the honor of calling him a "generous benefactor" and of voting "that Lieut. HENRY HERRICK be desired when he attends divine worship with us, to take the second seat on the floor before the pulpit" and, in 1764, added the courtesy of voting that his wife "take a seat in the women's fore pew."[28] He was one of five men who superintended the construction of a new building for his own church organization in 1770.[28]

HENRY[5] is called a Captain[29] as early as 1766; he served his community as a Representative for twenty-four years and rendered notable service during the Revolution as well as during the anxious pre-Revolutionary period. Evidence[20] of the definite determination on the part of Beverly men not to be unfairly dominated by, nor yet to give needless offense to, England is found in their letter of instruction to HENRY[5] HERRICK, then a representative. The communication is dated October 21, 1765:

"We cannot, without criminal injustice to those glorious princes King William and Queen Mary, or to the memory of our venerable fathers, nor without the highest injustice to ourselves and to posterity, consent to yield obedience to any law whatsoever, which, by its natural constitution or just construction, deprives us of the liberty of trial by juries: or of our choosing meet persons to represent us in the assessing or taxing our estates for his Majesty's service. And we do accordingly advise and instruct you, our representative, to refuse your consent in any such case, and do all that in you lies, to prevent all unconstitutional drafts upon the public treasury."

On September 17, 1768, they chose HENRY[5] HERRICK a delegate to join with delegates from Boston and other towns in convention, to consult and advise on the state of the province, in which, however, he was to abstain from any act of disrespect to parliament or of disloyalty to the King. In further instructions[28] to him as representative, under date of May 22, 1769, they say:

"We apprehend that no power on earth can justly deprive us of our essential rights, and that no man can be safe, either as to his life, liberty or

property, if a contrary doctrine should prevail; therefore, we recommend to you a firm, but prudent opposition to all unconstitutional measures."

In 1773, with his brother-in-law, Josiah[4] Batchelder, Jr., HENRY[5] was a member of the Committee of Correspondence and Safety.[28]

In 1775, Beverly voted "that the town will raise fifty-four minute-men, including officers"; voted "to give the captain of the minute-men three shillings and four pence for each half day service in larning the art military; the lieutenants two and eight pence, the ensign two and six pence, and each private one shilling eight pence"; voted, "that the minute-men turn out two half days in a week, and four hours each half day be spent in larning the art military. Col. HENRY HERRICK was empowered to hire £80, with interest, to pay off the minute-men."[27] HENRY[5] also handled for the town that year, and shipped to Boston, the donation of supplies Beverly raised for those who suffered by the Boston Port Bill.

"These[27] excerpts from the records of the town, show that our people were ready, with money and musket, to resent the first invasion of their rights. Thus it was, the eventful nineteenth of April, 1775, found them not unprepared. Though every householder had gone forth to his daily occupation, and was peacefully following his duty for the day, yet the arrival of the breathless messenger, announcing the departure of a British detachment from Boston to seize the military stores at Concord, was a spark that kindled into flames their smouldering fires of patriotism. The business of the day was abandoned, each man seized his musket and hastened to the appointed place of rendezvous. . . . By three o'clock that afternoon a large proportion of the male inhabitants of Beverly capable of service were armed and ready for the conflict. No troops engaged in that memorable fight had so long a distance to march, yet they arrived in season to participate in the skirmishes that followed the battle of Lexington, and assisted in driving the British back to Boston. One of their number was killed, Reuben Kennison; and three wounded, Nathaniel Cleaves,* William Dodge (3rd) and Samuel Woodbury."

Nathaniel Cleaves "was wounded in the fight, having had his fingers† cut off and ramrod carried away by a bullet. . . . He seems soon to have recovered of his wound, for he was in the Bunker Hill fight of June 17th, and with the troops at Cambridge within a month of the Lexington engagement.

* Nathaniel Cleves, excerpts from whose diary follow, was[32] the husband of Mary[6] Herrick (HENRY[5]).

† One finger.[31]

"An extremely interesting relic of the times is the journal of this same soldier, which is now in the possession of one of our most estimable citizens. It commences:

'Thursday, May ye 25, 1775. Captain Low marched from Beverly to Cambridge; took up our quarters at mister bloggets; the 27, Saturday (forenoon), plesent; at night a scurmig (skirmish) came on between the regulars and our peopel on the island (?); burnt a house and barn, killed—horses, burnt one schooner and took sum plunder, and lost no lives on our side, but supposed that we killed a number of them. Sunday, 28, Some guns fired on our peopel that were getting sum guns out of the racks, but no damage. Monday, the 29, brought off the island 27 head of cattel, 20 od horses, 300 sheep and lams, and no damage. Tuesday, the 30, great movement made with the troops in Boston, by which means the country was alarmed, and no men to go out of the camp. Wens., 31, Capt. Cimbel's [Kimbal's ?] company came to Cambridge.

'Thursday, June 1, 1775. Cloudy morning; cleared of pleasant. Had Mister Willard, Mr. CUTLER* and Mr. Hichcock in the afternoon. [These were the ministers of First Parish, Beverly, Hamilton, and Second Parish, Beverly. These three also rode to Lexington immediately on receipt of the alarm.] A meeting concerning our field officers adjourned to next day. Cornelos Maurice hanged hisself with his hanchirchif. The next day, pleasant morning; guns were fired, supposed to be at Nodels island (East Boston), and so continued all day by spurts; sent a party of about 200, and 2 field peises, for Chelsea. The day ended with the meeting of the officers; had the manager before us and had a full hearing; so that day ended. The same night a scout went to Dear Island, took of 400 sheap, sum cattel, fore priseners.

'The 3d day, Saturday, a plesent morning; this day the whole army was mustered on the common to see 2 theives whipped, one 20 stripes, negro 10; one man drumed out of the army with 36 drums and 40 fifes, with the rogues march. Sunday, the 4th day, fair whether; went to meeting, heard 2 sermons. Monday, the 5 day, fair wether; nothing remarkibel. The 7th day set out for Beverly, reached it about 12 o'clock, and ret'd to Cambridge Saturday, the 10th.

'Monday, the 12 day, a number of the priseners under the main gard ris and abused the captain of the gard, and a gineral cort marshel was ordered to try the same; the common report for this day is that their is 3 rigement and 3 company of horse off in the Bay; this day ended without anything new.

*The Reverend MANASSEH[5] CUTLER [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

'15 day Monday, cool morning; cort marshel continued till Fryday; nothing new.

'the 16 Day, a pritty hot Fire, said to be at the effege of Hancock. This day the nuse came to Cambridge that Philadelphia had taken a ship with 750 stand fire-arms and quantity of ammunition. This is good nuse for which I am thankful. About 6 o'clock there was mustered about 1000 men to go and take possession of Bunker hill (!), which they did the same night without any disturbance.

BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL

'Till Saturday morning about sunrise the Lively fired on our men; killed Asa pollerd of Billerica; Orders for our rigement to parade at 5 o'clock with 3 other rigements to relieve those at Bunker hill, but was alarmed at 12 when the troops began to land, which caused a hot fire on both sides, which our side left the ground for want of field peices and powder (!). Soon after the engagement began they set Charlestown on fire; our rigement returned at night to Prospect hill and intrenched all night.

'The 18 day, Sunday, they fired upon our peopel but did no damage.'"

In this brief chronicle of the soldier's life in Cambridge is given his share in the important battle of Bunker Hill, which he treats merely as a skirmish of little consequence. His point of view was not sufficiently removed from the scene of conflict for him to appreciate its magnitude. He wastes no words in excuses for their retreat, nor stops for gratulation:

" 'The 24 day, Saturday, in the morning was alarmed by a great movement of the regulars on Bunkers hill, supposed to be a coming out, but did not. 25, Sunday, in the forenoon stayed at our camp at Cambridge; about 12 o'clock went down to the hill and begun our brestwork. There was a packet of letters came to gineral Putnam from our priseners in Boston and say that they are treated vary wel. Mister Cleveland preached on the hill, from John 20, 22; this day dug up the bones of a man buried about a foot under ground.

'Went up to see Capt. Francessis men Thursday; went to breakfast without butter or cheas; had Capt. Batchelder to dine with us, we had biled vittels and rost veal . . . the sargents went to supper on New England grog, and then went to our logings in peace.

'Fryda-this day chool and clowdey; gineral orders to be on the parade at 5 o'clock, and william Anderson to receive 29 stripes and one Russel 80, and one rid the wooden hors and then went down to Prospect hill to work on the

intrenchments. A whooman was drumed of the hill for playing the roge with a drummer, and bob Picket was as focksey as the Divel. . . .

'July the 3 Day, this morning cloudy. There was four cannon fired to Rocksbury and one hous sot on fire. General Washington came to Cambridge about twelve o'clock and was atended with a great number of gentlemen from nabering towns! Captain Low went to Beverly this morning; Ensign Henery Herrick* went with him.'"

"Leaves of absence to visit Beverly were frequently obtained, and in one of them Lieutenant Cleaves walked home on a Friday, stopping at Colonel HERRICK'S† to 'fix up,' and 'brought up' at Mister Chipmans.

'The next day, "Saturday," in the morning went down to Mister Joshua Herricks; in the afternoon to the Hamlet (Hamilton), from there over to Topsfield, to David Perkinses, from there to Beverly, down to the lower perrish (parish). Sunday the 9, went to meaten in the forenoon, Mister Hichcock preached; then sot of for Cambridge."

"The camp-life seems not to have been entirely without its relaxations, as witness the following:

'Friday the 14 Day, Cap.— and Capt. Low went to Watertown after bords to finish our barracks; had a very plesent time; they fel in company with a very butiful Lady and took her into the shay with them; the recompense she gave them is not yet none (known) for carying of her. . . . Tuesday the 18, this morning warm and clear. I went down to Chelsea with more ofisers and 130 men after a mast for a liberty-pole; had a fine prospect of the enemy, saw 83 horses paraded and near 40 more in the paster. I went into a house, got sum biled sider, and kissed the old whomans Daughter to pay for it, had a fine frolick; at the tavern drove a dog out of the windo, and sum other things worthy of note. Coming back met the chief general aidecamp from Cambridge, who said that there was a great movement with the troops at Rocksbery and had struck a number of tents, supposed to be going somewhere. Arrived a little after sunset very much fatigued, went to bed at ten o'clock, and was under arms by half-past two the next morning. Wensday the 19, Captain Low and Lieut. Herrick went to Watertown for bagonets, and this afternoon I secured some powder and ball."

"This excerpt gives a fair picture, probably of the soldier's life at that period, before the hardships of war had begun. The brave fellow, whose diary

*Henry[6] Herrick (HENRY[5]) who later became brother-in-law of the diarist.

†Quite natural that he should stop first at the house of Mary[6] Herrick, whom he married on May 7, 1776.

we have been permitted to glance at, was lost at sea in 1780, so he must have resigned his commission in the army before the war was over."[27]

The official[31] record of Cleves' service shows, however, that he was taken prisoner at Fort Washington on November 10, 1776, and held as such on Long Island at least as late as February 24, 1778, when an order for his exchange was dated, though efforts to obtain his release had long been under way. It is a thrilling but sad picture drawn by this story of his experiences, with the added facts of his marriage to Mary[6] Herrick, evidently while on leave or between enlistments; of his imprisonment six months later for a period of nearly two years; and of his death at sea two years after his exchange. When he died, his brother-in-law Ebenezer Meacham also lost his life, thus bringing widowhood simultaneously to two young daughters of HENRY[5] HERRICK. Nathaniel Cleaves left, beside his widow, an infant son named for himself, who in turn was lost at sea in 1823 at the age of forty-two. Letters are still treasured, which passed between these two widowed women and their sister JOANNA (HERRICK) BARTLETT and her family, after the removal of the Bartletts to Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania.

On October 22, 1775, "Col. HENRY HERRICK, Capt. Benjamin Lovett and Capt. WM. BARTLETT chosen to be a committee in behalf of this town to confer with the committees of the several seaport towns of this county what steps shall be most expedient for them to take at this difficult time. . . ." and Colonel HENRY[5], with six others, was then or shortly after "chosen as a committee of safety for this town, for to act in that affair in the best manner they can for the Publick good."[27]

In that same year the selectmen of Watertown delivered two and one-half barrels of powder to Colonel HENRY[5] for the use of the town.[28]

Beverly has the honor of having sent out the first commissioned privateer of the Revolution. This vessel was the "Hannah," the papers for which were issued September 3, 1775, and signed by George Washington. An interesting description of this event is given in Rantoul's Oration at Concord, April 19, 1850:

"After the collision, which extinguished the last lingering hope of reconciliation, the County of Essex, essentially maritime in her habits, launched her thunderbolts on the deep, and trailed the flag, that for a thousand years had braved the battle and the breeze, ignominiously on many a conquered deck, whence went up the pine-tree flag of the rebels in token of victory. *The first flag, under the Continental authority, that ever floated at an American*

masthead in defiance of British supremacy, was hoisted on board the 'Hannah' from Beverly! The first commander who, under Washington's commission, threw down the gauntlet of maritime warfare, was Capt. Manly of Marblehead. . . . The harbors of Salem, Marblehead and Beverly swarmed with prizes. The same hardy fishermen of the seaports of Essex, driven from the theatre of their adventurous industry by the breaking out of hostilities, trod the decks of these little wanderers of the sea. . . ."[27]

In the fall of 1775 a schooner-rigged privateer sailed from Beverly on a cruise. "She had not been long out when she was discovered by a British sloop-of-war, the 'Nautilus,' of twenty guns, which immediately bore down upon her. The superior force of the enemy induced the captain of the privateer to put back; but in the confusion of the chase he grounded on the flats." The "Nautilus" anchored outside the bar and opened fire on the town, striking two buildings. Soon men were hurrying with firearms from every quarter to the defence of the landing. "Among the earliest on the ground was Colonel HENRY HERRICK, an active member of the committee of correspondence, and whose patriotic spirit greatly contributed to the energetic action of the town in furnishing men and supplies for the army. The confusion of the moment did not make him forgetful of the dignity of his official character; and with characteristic regard for effect, and disregard of danger, he appeared on the beach in full military costume, a conspicuous mark for the enemy's aim." "The receding tide soon left the 'Nautilus' in an awkward position aground, so that she careened and could not use her guns. In this condition she lay till dark, the target for the cannon of Hospital point, on Salem side, and of the small arms of the Beverly patriots. The tide rising, after dark, the baffled commander weighed anchor and stood for Boston."

The importance of fortifying the town was now apparent. Breastworks were thrown up on Woodbury's Point* [see map on p. 830] and on Paul's Head. It was later voted to place one nine-pounder and one four at Woodbury's Point, the other nine-pounder and one four at Paul's Head, and two field pieces wherever the committee should judge best for public safety. The amusing statement is of record that the "town paid for 47 gallons of rum used in building the breastwork at Woodberry's head."[28]

The official record shows[30] that HENRY[5], then called a lieutenant-colonel, marched on the alarm of April 19, 1775, serving two days and having forty-eight miles' travel allowance; that his appointment to that position in Colonel

*So named because it was the location of the early home of WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY and his descendants.

Isaac Smith's Essex County militia was concurred in on January 23, 1776; and that he was commissioned February 8, 1776, as colonel of the Eighth Essex County Regiment. He addressed his resignation* to the Council on August 18, 1777, stating that, owing to old age and infirmity, he was no longer able to fulfill the duties of his office, but offering to continue for a short time if necessary. He was relieved[30] on September 26, 1777.

His son, Henry[6], who was a graduate of Harvard in 1767, was commander of an independent company of grenadiers composed of the tallest men in the town.[28] Two of the daughters of the family, Anna[6] and Mary[6], lost their husbands at sea[8, 13] in 1780. Since fishing and all usual maritime interests had given way to the demands of war, it is highly probable that the loss of these young husbands was due to a marine battle.

HENRY[5] HERRICK did not live to see the end of the war. His will[13] dated December 9, 1780, and proved January 1, 1781, gave to his wife ANNE, for her lifetime, a portion of the family home and one-third of his whole estate. The inventory totaled over £1427 and included a tan-yard and buildings; the business, in all probability, was inherited from his grandfather, JOSEPH[3].

There is a suggestion, in the listing of his goods, of the comfortable circumstances in which he lived. It showed, among many other items, a silver watch, two pairs of pistols, silver spurs, a silver-mounted small sword, one coat armour, an old chaise, a pillion, silver plate of eighteen pounds' valuation, ninety-five pounds of pewter, books of various kinds, seventy shillings, nineteen good chairs and twenty-seven old ones, etc. The occupation and manner of life of the family at that period is suggested by the possession of sole leather, upper leather and calfskins for shoe-making, a bread-trough, a cheese-tub and press, a churn, two large [spinning] wheels and one small one, etc.[13]

The will specified that "in consideration of what my Daughter JOANNA BARTLETT hath heretofore received, that her share of what shall remain of my estate after my debts and funeral charges are paid be £13–6–8 less than an equal share. . . ."[13]

The children of HENRY[5] and ANNE (BATCHELDER) HERRICK, all born at Beverly, were[8, 13]

1. Joseph[6], b. February 15, 1738–9; d. September 23, 1810; m. there, March 31, 1761, Anna Jackson, removed to Greenfield or Lyndeboro, N. H.

*In "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution" the date of this resignation is erroneously given as 1776. Correction of typographical error is made in a letter from F. W. Cook, Secretary of State, Boston, Mass., under date of April 10, 1926. The original resignation reads: "Beverly ye 18th of August, 1777," and is endorsed "In Council Sept. 26, 1777."

II. Pyam[6], b. January 17, 1740–1; d. May 2, 1758–9, at West Indies.[8]

III. JOANNA[6], b. April 26, 1745; d. January 21, 1810, at Greensburg, Ky.; m. 1st, at Beverly, August 16, 1761, WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT [see Bartlett, p. 78]; m. 2nd, in western Pennsylvania, in December, 1797, John Garden. [See plates XI p. 80, XXVI p. 865, XXIX p. 868.]

IV. Henry[6], b. May 26, 1748; d. June 5, 1800, aged 52, at Beverly; m. there, March 15, 1772, Hannah Jones.

V. Elizabeth[6], b. September 14, 1751; d. unm. at Beverly, March 26, 1814.

VI. Anna[6], b. December 29, 1753; d. August 11, 1840, at Beverly; m. there, July 2, 1778, Ebenezer Meacham.

VII. Mary[6], b. November 10, 1756; m. at Beverly, May 7, 1776, Nathaniel Cleaves.

VIII. Ruth[6], b. March 4, 1759; d.s.p. May 19, 1789; m. (——) Hugh Smith.

REFERENCES

1. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 15–21, 27, 134, 210, 258, 306.
1a. Ibid., pp. 8, 11, 15–7; Essex Institute Historical Collections, IV, 266–7; Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, I, 153–4; Bi-Centennial Address First Parish Beverly, C. T. Thayer, 1868, p. 22.
1b. Savage, II, 405–6, 412; Pope's Pioneers, p. 227.
1c. Seats of the Nobility and Gentry in Leicestershire, J. Throesby, 1789, I, 227 et seq.; 1790, II, 449–50.
2. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 151–2, 157–64; II, 9–10, 216, 402.
2a. History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, T. Hutchinson, 1764, I, 423–4, 431–3.
3. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 132, 244; II, 60, 101, 150, 164–6, 265, 315, 433, 439; III, 270, 296.
4. Salem, Massachusetts, Town Records, I, 13, 133, 154, 193, 207–9, 212, 223, 226–7; II, 2–3, 5–6.
4a. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, IV, pt. 1, 366; pt. 2, 212.
5. New England Register, III, 90–1, 345, 348.
6. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 117–8, 305–6.
7. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 153, 181, 204, 228, 270, 283, 309, 372, 390; II, 101, 157, 266, 281, 323; III, 5, 73, 203, 296.
8. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 174–81, 183, 276, 394; II, 155–60, 257, 428, 450, 469–71, 486, 506, 540, 623, 625–6; Vital Records of Salem Mass., I, 425–6; III, 491–2; V, 63, 324. Early Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, pp. 3, 75.
9. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 20–3; Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 17, 20, 24–5.
10. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 238, 280–1, 264; III, 127–8.
10a. Ibid., II, 219–22; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 329.
11. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 3, 7, 21, 26, 30, 35, 49, 60, 63, 87, 89, 90.
12. Family of Morgan, A. Morgan (about 1901), p. 137; Conant Family, F. O. Conant, 1887, pp. 151, 175; Porter Genealogy, J. W. Porter, 1878, pp. 236–7; Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass., II, 216, 506; Vital Records of Wenham, Mass., p. 217; Vital Records of Concord, Mass., p. 110.
13. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 134, 151–6, 160–1, 174, 198–9.
14. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 32–3.
15. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 268; Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 147–8; Eliot Genealogy, W. G. Eliot, 1887, p. 24; History of Hingham, Mass., 1893, II, 152, 373.
16. Colonial Families of the United States, G. N. Mackenzie, 1915, V, 350; Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 275–8; II, 256, 539; Early Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 44; Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 420, 423; History of Amherst, N. H., D. F. Secomb, 1883, p. 30.
17. Vital Records of Wenham, Mass., pp. 129, 138, 190, 209; Kimball Family, L. A. Morrison and S. P. Sharples, 1897, I, 67; Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 39–41.
18. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., II, 236.
19. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 186, 212, 222–3, 265, 315–6; III, 226, 269; IV, 165, 323, 331; VI, 401.
20. Ibid., II, 190, 219–22, 342, 433; III, 461; VI, 102, 207, 261, 345; VII, 21–3, 227.
21. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 127–8, 198–9, 349.

22. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 363–7; Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, II, pt. 2, pp. 474–5.
23. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 221; V, 24, 417, 436; VI, 31, 400; VII, 420; VIII, 6.
24. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 260.
25. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 10, 20, 32.
26. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. C. Upham, 1905, pp. 96–7, 100, 103, 105, 107, 114, 119, 259.
27. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, pp. 681, 683–4, 694, 696, 699–702, 704.
28. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 55–7, 64–5, 171, 193, 247–8, 251–3, 266–7, 319.
29. Register of the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Dames of America, 1917, pp. 475, 590.
30. Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War, VII, 759.
31. Ibid., III, 613–4.
32. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, p. 155; Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 76; II, 63; Vital Records of Salem, Mass., V, 159; History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 702.
33. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, pp. 59, 62.

HOPKINS

* [298] Stephen Hopkins –1644	m 2nd 1618	Elizabeth Fisher –bef.1644
* [148] Jacob Cooke c.1618–1675	m 1st 1646–7	Damaris Hopkins aft.1627–1666–9
* † [74] Caleb Cooke 1651–1722	m c.1682	Jane . . . . –1736
* ‡ [36] James Johnson prob.abt.1685–1743	m 1717	Anne Cooke 1686–aft.Apr.1752
‡ § [18] Caleb Johnson c.1724–prob.aft.1800	m 1745	# Mary Cooke prob.1728–prob.aft.1800
‖ ¶ [8] Aaron Gates 1753–1821	m 1776	Elizabeth Johnson c.1756–1816
¶ ♣ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
♣ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

*Plymouth, Mass.
†Kingston, Mass.
‡Middletown, Chatham, East Hampton, Conn.
§Burlington, Otsego Co., N. Y.
‖East Haddam, Conn.
¶East Hartland, Conn.
♣Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦Marietta, Ohio.
#See Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–5.

HOPKINS

STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS* was an interesting character with a strong personality. He was one of "the Londoners"[1, 2, 4] who joined the Mayflower group, very possibly having been chosen to accompany them by Robert Cushman (who was the London agent for the Pilgrims) because of a probable previous knowledge of the new world acquired,[3] as it seems, on a colonization trip to Virginia in 1609–10 [see Addendum, p. 449]. As the result of intensive research[1] in England it is fairly well established that the London home of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS was just outside of London Wall on the highroad entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House (in, or near which, lived John Carver and William Bradford, fellow voyagers, also, Robert Cushman their London agent, and Edward Southworth who later came to New England). The identity of the first wife of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS is unknown, but his second wife was ELIZABETH, and the record on the register[1] of St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) undoubtedly pertains to him and identifies this wife in the item stating that STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS married there February 19, 1617–8, ELIZABETH FISHER. She came with him on the Mayflower, as did also his children, Giles[2] and Constance[2] (by his first wife), a daughter Damaris[2] by the second wife, and two men servants.† He and his family shared with the other Mayflower passengers the experience of repeated

* Evidence is found[1] which points to the probability that our STEPHEN[1] was related (perhaps a son) to a Stephen Hopkins who with several sons lived in the hamlet of Wortley, parish of Wotton Under Edge, Gloucester (sixteen miles from Bristol). He may have been the child who was baptized there October 29, 1581. The possibility also exists that it was our STEPHEN[1] who remained there till an adult, and who had a son William baptized at Wotton on July 19, 1607. Then the name disappeared from that place in suitable time to appear in London as did that of our STEPHEN[1] [see above, and Addendum, p. 449].

† In June, 1621, these servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister, imbued, perhaps, with the spirit of their master, established a precedent in the new world by fighting a duel with sword and dagger. Doty was wounded in the right hand and Lister in the thigh, but the punishment meted out to them by the authorities must have been more painful than these injuries for it was decreed that they should spend twenty-four hours, without food or drink, each with his head and feet tied together [see Freeman, p. 359]. The cruelty of this punishment caused STEPHEN[1] to intercede for them, for we are told that " . . . within an hour, because of their great pains, at their own and their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage . . . " they were released by the governor.[12, 23]

and distressing delays and many fierce storms during their sixty-five-day voyage [see Brewster, p. 152, and Cooke, p. 239]. During the voyage his family was increased by the arrival of a son whom they named Oceanus[2]. Upon the arrival of the Pilgrims at Cape Cod, November 11, 1620, after their sixty-five-day ocean voyage, STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, with the other men, signed the Compact [see text, p. 853] in the cabin of the vessel.[5] From the very first he attained a place among the leaders of the colony, and in spite of the fact that his impulsiveness frequently laid him open to criticism, he never lost the confidence of his contemporaries.[23]

We are told[2,4,5,12] that after arrival some of the people were impatient at the delay incident upon the repair of their shallop, "Wherupon a few of them tendered them selves to goe . . ." on a tour of discovery on foot. Sixteen men "well armed with musket, sword and corselet"* set out, Wednesday, November 15, "in the order of a single File . . ." under the command of Myles Standish "unto whom was adioyned for counsell and advise William Bradford, STEPHEN HOPKINS and Edward Tilley."[5] To search out a site for their new world home in the face of unknown dangers must have been a thrilling adventure to them. It is surely no less thrilling to us today when we weigh the events which have followed that courageous undertaking.

The presence of STEPHEN[1] on this first search served them well for during their third day out, when they saw and marveled at an Indian deer trap he was able to tell them its purpose and to warn them away from it [see Addendum, p. 449]. He was also one of the ten men under Standish who set out, December 6, on the third tour of discovery which lasted five days. On the third day they experienced their first, though bloodless, Indian attack, and discovered the site upon which they soon settled.[5,9,12]

As a result[9] of the appalling mortality from scurvy and exposure during that first winter on the New England coast they buried fourteen of the eighteen wives who had come over; four of the twenty-four households were wiped out; and only four households escaped loss, among which were those of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS (consisting of eight persons) and of FRANCIS[1] COOKE (consisting then of but himself and son). The oft repeated service of STEPHEN[1] in Indian relations[9,12] was evidenced in February, 1620–1, when two natives appeared on a neighboring hill top and made signs of friendliness, beckoning the colonists to them, whereupon Standish and STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS advanced to parley.[9] In March of that year an Indian named Samoset appeared among

*A piece of armor covering the breast from neck to girdle. When a back piece was buckled on, it was called a cuirass.[12]

them and at first caused some distrust. But he was presented with gifts and entertained for the night at the home of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS who was always deputized to meet the Indians and to act as interpreter in such cases. Samoset became a frequent visitor and a faithful friend of the colonists.[6] In July, 1621, STEPHEN[1] served successfully with Edward Winslow as an envoy to the friendly Indian chief, Massasoit, who lived near what is now Warren, Rhode Island; and in December, 1621, assisted Captain Standish in dealing with the Indian messenger who brought from Canonicus of the Narragansett tribe "a bundle of arrows tyed aboute with a great sneak-skine . . ." which constituted a threat and a challenge.[6,9] STEPHEN[1] acquired[14] various tracts of land by grant as well as by purchase. In the so-called "division of land" in 1623 he received for garden purposes a six-acre plot, being one acre for each member of his family. In the division of cattle in 1627 he and his family had a share in the seventh lot. In 1633 he had already become a freeman. That year the tax list showed that only four men paid more than STEPHEN[1], and but seven equaled him. Various records are found of debts owing to him, but not of his owing others[14] excepting a modest amount at the time of his death. It is stated that he retained,[12] for his home, throughout his life the lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden streets which was assigned to him on arrival in 1620. At the time of the Pequot war in 1637, the "Voluntaries" included[7] STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, his sons, Giles[2] and Caleb[2] (then not over fifteen or sixteen years of age), and his son-in-law, JACOB[2] COOKE. In June of the same year STEPHEN[1] and EDWARD[1] FOSTER of Scituate [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I, Foster chapter] were appointed, with four others, to aid the governor and his assistants to "assesse men towards the Charges of the souldiers that are to be sent for the ayde of the Mattachusetts Bay and Connectacutt."[7] STEPHEN[1] served[8] as an assistant to the governor from 1663 to 1636, being then closely associated with THOMAS[1] PRENCE and JOHN[1] DOANE. In the financial difficulties faced by the colony[11] [see Prence, p. 687] it became necessary for certain leaders called "the partners" to bind themselves individually for the public debt which they hoped to pay off by means of the fur trade carried on with the Indians on the Kennebec River. In connection with the agreement between these partners and the officials of the colony STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS and JOHN[1] DOANE were repeatedly called upon for advice. The mutual agreement entered into bore the signatures of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, THOMAS[1] PRENCE, STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, STEPHEN[1] TRACY, FRANCIS[1] COOKE, and EDWARD[1] BANGS.

STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS was associated,[8] in 1633, with JOHN[1] DOANE and EDWARD[1] BANGS in a proportional division of meadow land; with these two men and Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER in 1637 in an apportionment of five hundred acres; with Kenelm Winslow in 1635–6 in holding goods in escrow; and with these men, and others, in the handling of various estates. In October, 1643, an especial Indian menace was impending,[11] so a brick watch-house was built and a constant watch was kept by six men and a corporal. A council of war was appointed which included STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS and THOMAS[1] PRENCE.

STEPHEN[1] was enterprising and progressive. He built and owned, near Eel River, the first wharf of which any record is found; and when he sold it and the adjacent property for £60 in July, 1637, it was called "Broken Wharf," suggesting that it was already old. In this deal he is called "gentleman." Plans were going forward, by contributions from the colonists, in January, 1641–2, to build a vessel[11] of forty or fifty tons costing £200. The expense and consequent ownership were divided into sixteenths, one of which was taken by STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, one by FRANCIS[1] COOKE and his son John[2], and one by EDWARD[1] BANGS. The second horse mentioned in the colony records[12] was a mare, valued at £6 and owned by STEPHEN[1]. In April, 1642, the court[14] placed Jonathan Hatch in the home of STEPHEN[1] who was "to haue a speciall care of him."

It is no exaggeration to say that STEPHEN[1] was a useful and much respected citizen. This is evidenced by the title of "master" granted him; by his having brought over two servants; by the very frequent calls cited as having been made upon him for public service of a delicate and important sort; and by his business capacity. It is probably true that he was also stubborn, argumentative, and inclined to construe the rather vaguely worded laws of the colony to suit himself. This frequently brought him into conflict with the authorities who, even though they were his personal friends, dealt out punishment with stern justice, . . . indeed in one instance they were more severe with him than with others who offended similarly on the theory that because of his official position in the community he should most carefully uphold the law. This case[13] occurred in June, 1636, when "John Tisdale, yeoman, entreth an accon of battery against STEVEN HOPKINS, Assistant to the go^{u}m^{t}, by whom the said John was dangerously wounded, as he affirmeth. . . ." The court fined STEPHEN[1] £2 for the plaintiff and £5 for breaking the King's peace "wch he ought after a speciall manner to haue kept. . . ." Also[10, 12] in

October, 1637, and again in January, 1637–8, he was brought before the grand jury for allowing men, servants and others, to drink* in his house "more than for ordinary refreshment" as well as on the Lord's day both before and after the meeting and even during it. STEPHEN[1] TRACY was one of the witnesses in this case and on these counts HOPKINS was acquitted, but he was fined £2 for allowing these frequenters "to play at shouell board, & such like misdemeamors. . . ." Evidently he possessed a superior grade of beer and wine or perhaps he excelled as a salesman, for in June, 1638, he was presented again "for selling beere for ij^{d} [two pence] the quart, not worth j^{d} [one penny] the quart" and "for selling wine at such excessiue rates, to the oppressing & impouishing of the colony" on both of which counts he was fined. Again in September of that year reference was made before the jury to the last two complaints and three new ones were added "for selling wine, beere, strong waters, and nutmeggs at excessiue rates . . ." for this[10] he was fined £5. In 1639 he evidently neglected to renew his license for when he was charged with selling "strong waters" without it he frankly admitted the fact and was fined £3; though the next year the same fault in a neighbor brought a fine[12] of £1 only. In December, 1639, he was brought before the court "for selling a lookeing glasse for 16^{d}, the like whereof was bought in the [Massachusetts] Bay for ix^{d}. . . ." This is the first recorded mention[12] of a mirror in the colony. STEPHEN[1] found it hard to profit by experience and to humble his will, for in February, 1638–9, he was held in custody for four days[12, 13] for contempt of court. It appears that he had in his home an indentured servant, Dorothy Temple, who owed him two more years of service. She had unwisely trusted her sweetheart, and, with the same hard justice to her that had been meted out to him, STEPHEN[1] refused to shelter or provide for her or her infant son. His impartial friends, the members of the court, ordered him to clothe and board her and the child either in his own family or elsewhere. On his refusal he was committed to ward, though it probably[12] was confinement only to the house of the officer. After four days of this discipline he gave in and paid £3 to John Holmes who took over the responsibility and the remainder of term of service.[12, 13] In spite of this stubbornness and severity there was a tenderness in STEPHEN[1], for in his will[15] dated June 6, 1644, he directed that his body be "buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased,"

*In the colonial days licenses to serve drink were granted only to the most dependable and reputable citizens. Further evidence of the control of the sale and consumption of liquor is in the record, 1633, of one who was "Disfranchised for being drunke."

whose death had occurred[13, 23] subsequent to 1640. His will made bequests to his two sons and five daughters of whom four were unmarried, including our DAMARIS[2] HOPKINS who received "the Cowe called DAMARIS' heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley . . ." and one fourth of "all the moveable goods the wch do belong to my house, as linnen wollen beds bedclothes pott kettles pewter or whatsoev^r^ . . ." including one of his "foure silver spoones." These four spoons were inventoried on July 17, 1644, at £1–8. The list of the property of STEPHEN[1], totaling about £130, and prepared by JOHN[1] DOANE, shows that he was comfortably well to do. He possessed fifteen neat cattle, a horse, and other stock, as well as many household comforts.[15]

The children* of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS and his first wife, both born in England, were[15, 16, 23]

I. Constance[2], d. at Eastham, about the middle of October, 1677; m. at Plymouth, after 1623 and before May 22, 1627, Nicholas[1] Snow.[17]
II. Giles[2], d.[18] at Eastham, after March 15, 1689, and before April 26, 1690; m. at Plymouth, October 9, 1639, Catherine Wheldon.

The children of STEPHEN[1] and ELIZABETH (FISHER) HOPKINS, the last five of whom were born in Plymouth, were[15, 16, 23]

III. Damaris[2], b. in England, 1618–9; emigrated with her parents, and was living[20] in 1627 at the division of cattle, but undoubtedly died soon after, being perhaps the "one daughter [who] dyed here" as Bradford says. She was memorialized by having one of the ".4. daughters borne here" named after her[19] [see following].
IV. Oceanus[2], b. at sea, between September 16 and November 11, 1620; d.[18] before June 1, 1627, and undoubtedly before 1623 when his father's family consisted of but six.
V. Caleb[2], b. doubtless before 1623, since he was[7] a "voluntary" with his father and older brother in 1637, and could then have been but about fifteen. In his father's will he was, unaccountably, called "heire apparent" though his older brother Giles[2] was living. With Myles Standish he was executor of his father's will.[15] He died at the Barbados, without issue, after June 6, 1644, and before 1651.
VI. Deborah[2], d.[21] after 1666; m. at Plymouth April, 23, 1646, Andrew Ring.
VII. DAMARIS[2], b. [undoubtedly][19] after 1627, named for her deceased sister. She is repeatedly listed in this chronological sequence in her father's will and elsewhere.[15] She died after January 1665–6, and before November 18, 1669; m. at Plymouth, as his first wife,[22] after June 10, 1646 (i.e., late in 1646 or early in 1647), JACOB[2] COOKE [see Cooke, p. 244].
VIII. Ruth[2], d. after October 8, 1644.

* If MARY COOKE, the wife of CALEB[2] JOHNSON, proves to have been the daughter of *John[4] Cooke* (*Josiah[3]*, *Josiah[2]*, *Josiah[1]*) and his wife *Desire* (——), as is believed [see Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–5], it will incorporate in this ancestry a second line of descent from STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS through his granddaughter *Deborah[3]* (*Giles[2]*), who married *Josiah[2] Cooke*.

IX. Elizabeth[2], given as a child, November 30, 1644, after the death of her father, to RICHARD[1] SPARROW. She was frail or in some way incapacitated, and was to remain in the care of RICHARD[1] "as his owne child until the tyme of her marryage or untill shee be nineteene yeares of age."[15] She died unmarried, after October, 1657, and undoubtedly before October 6, 1659.

ADDENDUM

On June 2, 1609, nine vessels sailed[3,4] from London, England, carrying five hundred passengers for Virginia. One of these vessels called the "Sea Venture" carried among others Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somers, and other officials who were to govern the colony, and about one hundred and fifty passengers including William Strachey who recorded the succeeding events, and Stephen Hopkins (probably our own STEPHEN[1]), " . . . a fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures and could reason well therein whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to read the Psalmes and Chapters upon Sondayes, at the assembly of the Congregation under him. . . ."

Throughout the voyage the vessels kept well together until the latter part of July, when a hurricane caught the "Sea Venture." For three days and nights, though the men bailed water constantly, it seemed that they must sink. At last when they were utterly exhausted and fully expected to die, they were saved, on July 28, 1609, by being washed onto the rocky shore of one of the Bermudas [see map on p. 146], known as the "Ile of Divels." Strachey's tale of this awful storm furnished Shakespeare with the groundwork of his play, "The Tempest."

The survivors lived for nine months on these islands during which time they built two vessels which, ultimately took them to their destination in Virginia. But during that nine-month period dissension arose among them, which resulted in several attempts at mutiny against the commands of the Governor. In the first case that official showed great leniency; but in the second, he evidently thought it necessary to discourage repetitions by severity. This second offence was the least serious since, apparently, it concerned only one man, Stephen Hopkins, who had been expounding the theory that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and to the government in Virginia, and that they, therefore, might consider it null on this island, " . . . without breach of honesty, conscience nor Religion. . . ." Hopkins was brought, manacled, before a court-martial and sentenced to death on a charge of mutiny and rebellion. "But so penitent hee was and

made so much moane alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the Company . . ." who entreated the Governor and procured his pardon as his fault was not a moral one, but rather one of wilfulness and poor judgment. No evidence is found of further disaffection on his part, though others later made much worse trouble, nor of his continued residence in Virginia after the arrival of the company at their journey's end. It is presumed that he presently returned to his wife and children in England.

The two vessels in which the two weeks' trip from the Bermudas to Virginia was made (arriving on May 24, 1610) were suggestively named the "Patience" and the "Deliverance."

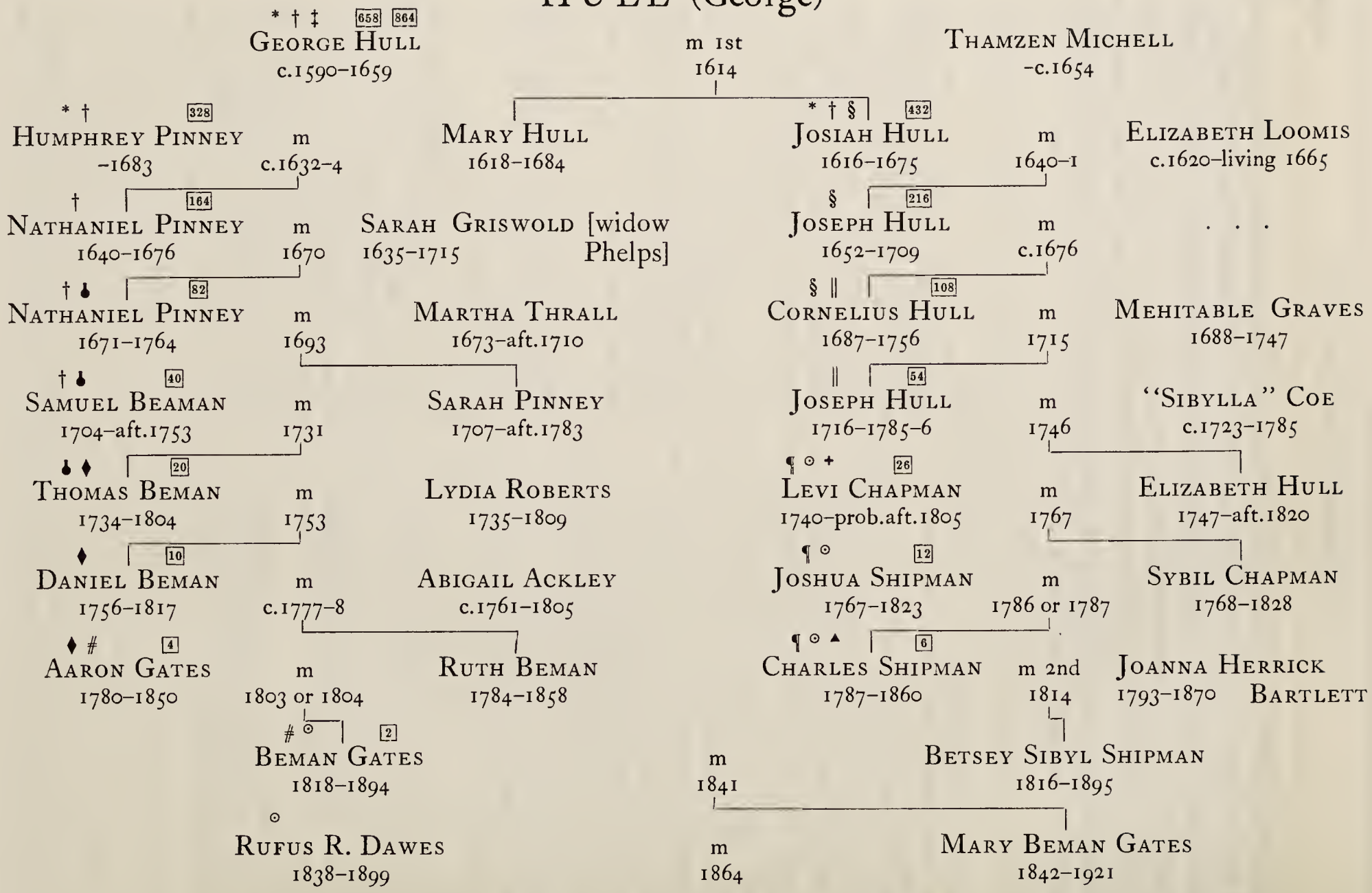
A marked likeness is seen between the character and actions of Stephen of Bermuda and those of our STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS who sailed for the new world on the "Mayflower." The first Stephen sailed from London and is presumed to have lived there, our STEPHEN[1] did live there, being one of the group called[4] by contemporary writers "men of London" and "strangers amongst them" [i. e., not Leyden men but of the number who had joined them in England]. Both men were adventurous, aggressive, intolerant of restraint, religiously inclined, and made much of "conscience." Each had a wife and children, each was a man of unusual ability, the man of Bermuda being clerk and assistant to the minister, while our STEPHEN[1] of Plymouth was called repeatedly to serve in positions of trust and diplomacy in dealings with the Indians. When their respective vessels reached the new world at points other than where they had expected to land, or for which patents were held, the action of these men was identical. When the "Mayflower" passengers faced the necessity of landing at Massachusetts Bay, Bradford tells us of "ye discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in ye ship. . . . That when they came a shore they would use their own libertie; for none had power to comand them, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to another government, with which ye Virginia Company had nothing to doe." And finally, when the first exploring party was sent out from the "Mayflower" to search out a suitable place for settlement, STEPHEN[1], who was a member of it, was instantly able to inform them that a bent sapling they saw and wondered at was an Indian trap to catch deer, . . . a fact which he certainly never learned in London. Mourt describes the incident thus: ". . . as we wandred we came to a tree, where a yong Spritt was bowed downe over a bow, and

some Acornes strewed vnder-neath; STEPHEN HOPKINS sayd, it had beene to catch some Deere, so, as we were looking at it, William Bradford being in the Reare, when he came looked also vpon it, and as he went about, it gaue a sodaine jerk vp, and he was immediately caught by the leg; It was a very pretie divise, made with a Rope of their owne making, and having a noose as artificially made as any Roper in England can make, and as like ours as can be, which we brought away with vs."[3, 4]

REFERENCES

1. The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers, C. E. Banks, 1929, pp. 11, 14, 61–4.
2. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 8, 14, 25, 44, 81, 98–111.
3. Ibid., pp. 24–5; "Purchas His Pilgrimes," 1625, IV, 1742–4; Dictionary of National Biography, VII, 943; XX, 1255–6; History of Virginia, W. Stith, 1865, pp. 101–2, 113–5; John Smith's Travels, 1907, I, 188, 205–9, 341–5, 350; New England Register, XXXIII, 300–5; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; Mayflower Descendant, III, 46.
4. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 24–5, 44; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; New England Register, XXXIII, 303–5; Mayflower Descendant, IV, 114–9; V, 47–53; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 76, 119, 185–6, 433–5; Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 370, 427.
5. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 152, 162–77, 189; Mayflower Descendant, I, 79; V, 226; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5–8, 13–5, 28–9, 43–60.
6. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 199, 219, 241; Mayflower Descendant, I, 89; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 157–62.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 60–1; Pequot War, J. Mason, 1897, p. xiv; Mayflower Descendant, XXVI, 100–1; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 457.
8. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 5, 7, 14, 19–21, 26, 32–3, 36–7, 67; Mayflower Descendant, I, 154, 160; II, 8, 87, 151; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 151, 174, 196.
9. Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 360, 370–1, 383, 411, 416, 427, 449, 452, 462–73.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 68, 75, 87, 97.
11. Ibid., I, 31, 54, 62; II, 31; XI, 25; Mayflower Descendant, VI, 146; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 205, 270, 285, 363.
12. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 70, 76, 83, 119, 160–1, 185–6, 189, 258, 294, 407–8, 433–5, 438.
13. Ibid., 407–8, 433–5; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 41–2, 111–3, 137.
14. Mayflower Descendant, I, 160; II, 151; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 9; II, 38; XII, 11, 21, 83; and reference Nos. 1 and 12.
15. Mayflower Descendant, II, 12–17; IV, 114–9; V, 47–51.
16. Ibid., I, 10; II, 12–4, 117–8; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 41–2; Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, pp. 132, 142.
17. Mayflower Descendant, III, 167.
18. Ibid., I, 110–2; II, 117–8; XIII, 85.
19. Ibid., I, 13–4; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 42; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 400, 406.
20. Mayflower Descendant, I, 151–2.
21. Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, p. 183.
22. Register of the California Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1917, pp. 88, 163; Mayflower Descendant, II, 27–8; V, 47–53.
23. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, 1915, No. 37, pp. 1–16; Mayflower Descendant, II, 117.

HULL (George)



* Dorchester, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Fairfield, Conn.
§ Killingworth, Conn.
‖ Durham, Conn.
¶ Saybrook, Conn.
♦ Simsbury, Conn.
♦ East Hartland, Conn.
\# Montague and Amherst, Mass.
⊙ Marietta, Ohio.
▲ Athens, Ohio.
\+ Salem, Ohio.

HULL (George)

GEORGE[1] HULL, said[1, 1a] to have been the son of THOMAS and JOANE (PESON) HULL,* of Crewkerne, co. Somerset, England, and to have been born about 1590, married[2a] first, on September 27, 1614, THAMZEN MICHELL† of Stockland, as shown by the parish records of Crewkerne.

When GEORGE[1] HULL was about forty years old he came to New England probably bringing part of his family with him, but certainly leaving some of them to come later for seven and one-half months after his departure, his youngest son Joshua[2] was baptized at Crewkerne.

Although a full list of the passengers who came in the "Mary and John" in the spring of 1630 [see Grant, p. 371] has not been found, it is definitely stated[3] that GEORGE[1] was numbered therein, as well[4] as ROGER[1] CLAPP, THOMAS[1] FORD [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I], MATTHEW[1]

*THOMAS and JOAN (PESON) HULL were married[2a] at Crewkerne on January 11, 1572, and the children assigned them are[1, 1a, 11]

I. William, bap. there November 6, 1574; died without issue in 1627, leaving a will in which he mentioned brothers GEORGE[1], John and Joseph, MARY[2] daughter of GEORGE[1] and Johane daughter of Joseph[1]. He was rector of Colyton in the adjoining county of Devon, his brother Joseph[1] being curate under him from 1614–15 for five years.

II. GEORGE[1] [vide supra] whose marriage date is also given[1] as August 17, 1614, but that may have referred to the banns.

III. John, b. probably abt. 1593.

IV. Joseph[1], b. abt. 1595, probably in Crewkerne; d. November 19, 1665, in New England; m. first, abt. 1618, in England, Joane (——), who d. after 1632; he m. secondly, in England, Agnes (——) [1610–after 1665]. After his graduation from Oxford in 1614, he served five years as curate under his brother William at Colyton, co. Devon, and eleven years as rector of North Leigh, co. Devon. In 1632 he voluntarily resigned his post in the English church, returned to the vicinity of Crewkerne for two or three years and gathered together a company of twenty-one families consisting of over one hundred individuals, to emigrate to New England. This group included our JOHN[1] BALCH and his family [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I], and set sail March 20, 1635–6, from Weymouth, England. They settled in that part of Dorchester called Wessaguscus, now Weymouth.[1, 1a, 11, 27]

†She is called[1] "daughter of Robert Michell, a well-to-do yeoman of Stockland . . ." [probably co. Devon, for a town of that name lies over the county line about eight miles from Crewkerne].

Reference is also found[2] to an English will which gave to GEORGE[1] HULL a reversionary interest in an annuity issuing out of certain premises in Broad-Windsor, co. Dorset [which lay four miles south of Crewkerne], and gave to his daughter MARIE[2] HULL a legacy of £10.

GRANT, Roger Ludlow [q.v.], and HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY who later married into the Hull family. These people settled together on a neck of land in Massachusetts Bay Colony called Mattapan by the Indians but named Dorchester by the colonists.

In 1633 it was agreed that there should be built in the marsh near by a "doble rayle fence, with morteses in the posts of 10 foote distance one from the other," the work being done "by the owners of Cowes vndernamed p'portionally, 20 foote to every cowe" under which ruling GEORGE[1] had to construct sixty feet of fence.[11, 15]

In the report of his arrival[3] on the "Mary and John" and almost invariably in colonial and town records,[9] he was called "Mr. HULL" [see note, p. 299]. He became a freeman [see Appendix, p. 852] on March 4, 1632–3, and a member of the first board of selectmen of Dorchester in 1633, continuing in that service[1, 5, 15] in 1634–6. He was a Representative from Dorchester to the first General Court held in the colony, at Boston, on May 14, 1634. This was a notable assembly for it marked the maiden effort in representative government and lawmaking in the Bay Colony.

GEORGE[1] rendered various other public services in that community during his residence there which, however, terminated in the latter half of 1636 or early 1637 [he was still resident there[15] in July, 1636], when he accompanied the group of Dorchester people who removed to the valley of the Connecticut River where they founded Windsor.

It seems advisable to digress here from the direct consideration of GEORGE[1] HULL, to discuss his intimate friend Roger Ludlow, with whom he came to New England, whom he later followed to Windsor, Connecticut, and—still later—to Fairfield and with whom he was most intimately associated throughout their many years in New England. Ludlow was[28, 29, 30] a lawyer and gentleman from co. Wilts, England, and was so intimately related to the early history of New England that he cannot suitably be disassociated from it. He married a sister of John Endicott.

He and Edward Rossiter were chosen by the English stockholders of the so-called "Dorchester Company" [which fostered colonization and consequent trading] as being "men of character and education whose counsel and judgement might aid [the Colony] in preserving order and founding the social structure upon the surest basis." The Massachusetts Charter had been drafted for a trading company rather than as the basis of an independent government. Its provisions applied only to the stockholders of the Dorchester

[England] Company to which class only three of the Dorchester [Massachusetts] group are definitely known to have belonged, viz.: Roger Ludlow, Edward Rossiter and John Glover. This meant that the majority of the first settlers had no political rights under the instrument, so the court immediately made arrangements to extend the privilege of freemanship to all persons whom they deemed suitable.

Roger Ludlow was a very capable man, ambitious, exceedingly useful, and highly respected, but perhaps hot-headed and domineering in the earlier years. He was one of the eighteen Assistants named under the patent granted to the "Colony of Massachusetts Bay in New England." From his first arrival he had ranked high among the officials of that colony and, in 1634–5, became their Deputy Governor, in which position he served admirably. He doubtless aspired to the governorship in the ensuing year and was consequently disappointed when John Haynes was elected to that position, while Ludlow even failed of re-election to the body of Assistants. "In a moment of outspoken indignation he went so far as to declare the election void and accused the deputies of having agreed upon whom they would elect before they assembled . . . which was undoubtedly true. . . . Perhaps others equally ambitious were jealous of his rising popularity; but there were also those who plainly saw that his political views were more aristocratic than democratic, that he was therefore unsuited to the task of serving them acceptably at the helm of government, and that his church views were more liberal than the majority could approve of. The liberality of his religious ideas is shown in the influence he had upon the formation of the Connecticut Constitution of 1638–9 in which civil franchise did not depend upon church membership. The Reverend Thomas Hooker also had a prime influence on the scope and terms of that document.

Ludlow was not alone in his chagrin at the treatment accorded by the Massachusetts Bay Colony, for Governor Winthrop had been deposed from office and subjected to the mortification of a financial investigation; John Endicott was under the censure of the Court for having cut the red cross out of the English flag; Roger Williams was under the ban of church discipline, and Israel Stoughton [afterwards famous in the Pequot War] was prohibited from holding any office in the colony for three years because he affirmed, during a warm debate before the General Court as to the advantages of settling a colony on the Connecticut, "that the Assistants were no magistrates."

Upon being thus dropped from office Ludlow evidently resolved to leave the colony, gradually resigned from all committees and, though he had previously opposed the movement, now turned all his thought toward settling a colony on the Connecticut River. The influence of Ludlow and others in drawing many to join them in emigrating to the Connecticut was so alarming to the Massachusetts Bay Company that, on September 18, 1634, the General Court appointed a public fast; but protest was of no avail with Ludlow who had the co-operation of his minister the Reverend Mr. Warham, of his friend the Reverend Samuel Maverick, of John Winslow, Israel Stoughton and many others.

Finding that the colonists were resolved upon planting a settlement on the Connecticut, the General Court reluctantly, on May 6, 1635, had granted some Watertown men liberty to remove "to any place they shall thinke meete to make choise of pvided they continue still vndr this goum^{t}." On June 3, following, the Court gave the inhabitants of Dorchester liberty also to remove to the Connecticut and granted these groups three pieces of artillery "to fortify themselves withall." During the latter part of June, Ludlow and others of Dorchester [see Grant, p. 372, and Olmstead, p. 612] set out to locate a site for their new home, which ultimately became Windsor. The General Court of Massachusetts Bay, on March 3, 1635–6, granted a commission to Roger Ludlow [named first] and to seven other men to govern the people on the Connecticut in a "iudiciall way" for the period of one year and, in April, following, Ludlow and about half the population of Dorchester set out to make their permanent homes on the Connecticut.

"Roger had thus been learning the lesson of political experience, and the very discipline which had angered and humiliated him served to enlarge his views and to prepare him for a more liberal and enlightened mode of building up a republican form of government. From this time he became the leader of the Connecticut jurisprudence. His name heads the lists of the first nine courts held in the colony and he was, to all intents and purposes, its first governor. On April 26, 1636, he and four associates met to open the first court held in Connecticut. The first law passed was that "from hencefforth none y^{t} are wth in the Jurisdic[tion] of this Cort shall trade wth the natives or Indians any piece or pistoll or gunn or powder of shott. . . ."[29]

On May 1, 1637, with GEORGE^{I} HULL and Matthew^{I} Mitchell added as members of the governing body, a momentous subject came up for decision, namely, that of war against the Pequots, and the courage of these

men is shown in the declaration in favor of it, "a step which can never be regarded as other than the salvation of all the New England colonies." Left to preside over and protect the inhabitants of Windsor, with the few men who remained to assist him after the expedition had embarked [May 10] on its perilous undertaking, Ludlow must have endured that strong tension of nerve which requires an iron will to control. His feelings at this moment are expressed in a letter written from within the palisadoe of Windsor. He gave an Indian a new coat to carry the letter to Mr. William Pynchon of Springfield. He wrote: "I have received your letter wherein you express that you are well fortified but few hands. For my part my spirit is ready to sink within me when, upon alarms, which are daily, I think of your condition, that if the case be never so dangerous, we can neither help you, nor you us. But I must confess, both you and ourselves do stand merely in the power of God. . . . Our plantations are so gleaned by that small fleet we sent out . . . that those that remain are not able to supply our watches, which are day and night; that our people are scarce able to stand upon their legs; and for planting, we are in a like condition with you: what we plant is before our doors—little anywhere else."

Great indeed must have been the joy of all who remained in the settlements at the triumphant return of Captain Mason with his band of, originally, ninety men of which only five had been killed. On June 26, Ludlow assembled a court which decided that this initial success should be aggressively followed up and the fleeing remnant of Pequots pursued. Mason and his men, accompanied this time by Roger Ludlow, set out a second time from the river settlements, traveling to the south and west "through the forests of Quinnipiac [New Haven], Cupheag [Stratford], Pequonock [Bridgeport] and Uncoa [Fairfield] to a swamp lying in the Sasqua fields about twenty-five miles southwest of New Haven [see map on p. 677] where, before another day had passed, Ludlow witnessed the complete overthrow of the most powerful enemy of the English [as well as of the other Indian tribes] in the colonies." During this trip he first saw the beautiful country to which he later returned to make a home.

It had undoubtedly been the aim of both Ludlow and his associates, since leaving the Bay Colony, to eventually separate Connecticut from it. To that end all their plans were bent, and each move seems to have been planned to construct, for the future, a workable government. In 1636 trial before jury was instituted; in 1637 he and his associates voluntarily arranged

a plan of taxation for the maintenance of a "public state or commonwealth"; and during the winter of 1637–8, following the Pequot War, they were engaged on the preparation of a frame of government for the colony. Here Ludlow had an opportunity to show his ability as a lawyer and statesman as well as "to triumph over those who had so grievously wounded him in Massachusetts, in opening a wide and conciliatory policy, by allowing the civil franchise to rest, not upon church membership, but upon good moral character. This instrument was[31] the first Constitution of Connecticut and is the first example in history of a written constitution . . . a distinct organic law, constituting a government and defining its power."

This document has received the highest praise. Judge Hollister says: . . . "Ludlow views the concrete and the abstract at once. He is a man of system —such systems as can alone be placed in the hands of frail men to protect them against their own worst enemies—their own passions." Dr. Palfrey said: "The whole constitution was that of an independent state. It continued in force with very little alteration, a hundred and eighty years, securing throughout that period, a degree of social order and happiness such as is rarely the fruit of civil institutions."

On April 11, 1639, the freemen of Connecticut assembled at Hartford under the constitution and proceeded to elect their officers "according to the orders." John Haynes was chosen governor and Roger Ludlow deputy governor. The election of Haynes who had superseded Ludlow in Massachusetts as well as in Connecticut, must have been a severe disappointment to the latter man, but experience had taught him the value of silence and self-mastery. It may have been this hurt (perhaps more keenly felt than the earlier one in Massachusetts) which caused him to leave Windsor; or it may have been the memory of the beautiful land through which he followed the Pequots in 1637, which tempted him.

In 1639 he petitioned the court for permission to make a settlement on or near Long Island Sound, and that body selected Pequonock, now Bridgeport, as the most suitable place. On his arrival at the Sound, for various reasons which he later explained to the court, he went farther west than the point they had specified, settling at Uncoa or Uncoway, now Fairfield [see map on p. 677]. In spite of his explanation and an apology, the court censured him for exceeding his instructions, and fined him five shillings for absence from the court held in September, which was during his trip to the Sound, though it is the opinion of many that they might better have

rewarded him for securing to the Connecticut Colony by settlement one of the most valuable tracts along the Sound.

From the people of this new home of his at Fairfield he received some criticism, but he continued to serve notably and helpfully in various public offices. Here "he compiled in 1649 a code of laws which many years afterwards was destined to rank him among the leading statesmen of the age in which he lived."[28, 29, 30] To this town his friend, GEORGE[1] HULL, eventually followed him.

GEORGE[1] was accounted an original settler of Windsor. In 1637 he received a house lot [see map on p. 569] thirty rods wide lying near those granted to his son JOSIAH[2] HULL and son-in-law HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY.

Every man in the early days was, perforce, a farmer, and GEORGE[1] was no exception to that rule; but he evidently had special capacity for surveying, for he is said to have helped to lay out Windsor, and shortly after his arrival there he surveyed the neighboring town of Wethersfield. In 1637 he received from Plymouth Colony,[7] in which he had never lived, a grant of ten acres "lying crosse to Green Harbor Path"; it is possible that this consideration may have been as compensation for professional services as surveyor to that colony. However, the grant was later cancelled.

On April 5, 1638, GEORGE[1], in company with his friend Ludlow, was granted by the General Court exclusive permission to trade for beaver with the Indians at Windsor.[9]

GEORGE[1] was a deputy[4, 6, 9, 10] to the General Court from Windsor from 1637 to 1646, attending at least thirty-one sessions, including the one of May 1, 1637, at which the far-reaching decision was made to prosecute war against the Pequots [see p. 456].

It will thus be seen that he was associated with the establishment of the governmental machinery in two of the colonies of New England. Indeed it has been well said[2] of him that "He was public-spirited, active and intelligent, and as legislator and magistrate was instrumental in establishing two of the free and enlightened commonwealths of New England—Massachusetts and Connecticut."

In 1647 he followed Ludlow to Fairfield, having sold his Windsor home some time previously to Governor John Haynes. In 1648 and 1649 he was a Representative from Fairfield and, in 1649, he was Ludlow's assistant or Lieutenant in military operations; in 1651, 1653 and 1654 he was assistant magistrate for the towns "by the sea-side," including Fairfield.[8, 9] In this

last capacity he was authorized to hold Particular Court, "to marry persons and to press horses for the public welfare."[8, 9] In 1656 he witnessed an Indian deed which was then executed to cover lands which included the site of Fairfield and which had been acquired[8] by Ludlow in 1639–40.

A summary of their common interests shows that while Ludlow was serving virtually as governor, as deputy governor, or as assistant or magistrate, during a period of about eighteen years, and while resident in both Windsor and Fairfield, that GEORGE[1] HULL was associated with him almost constantly as Representative and otherwise.[2, 11]

In October, 1653, the General Court directed[30] Roger Ludlow, GEORGE[1] HULL and two other magistrates to "keepe a perticuler Courte at Farfield, before winter, to execute Justice there as cause shall require" and that fall, before a Jury and "several godly magistrates" (doubtless those just named) goodwife Knapp was tried as a witch and sentenced to death. After her trial she was persecuted constantly by demands that she should clear her conscience by betraying presumed accomplices, and in her extremity she finally burst into tears, saying, "Never, never poor creature was tempted as I am; pray, pray for me!" Adding that if she had anything to say before she died that she would whisper it to Roger Ludlow at the gallows.[30] Evidently GEORGE[1] HULL sat upon her case.

On November 29, 1653, ten days after the marriage of his son Cornelius[2], GEORGE[1] deeded to him[11] nine "parcels" of land; he doubtless provided as well or better for JOSIAH[2], his elder son.

The time of the death of THAMZEN (MICHELL) HULL is not known. GEORGE[1] married secondly, probably after 1654, Sarah, the widow of David Phippen of Boston; GEORGE[1] died at Fairfield, aged about seventy, before August 25, 1659, on which date both his inventory and that of his widow were presented from which we may assume that she did not long survive him. His will, which was admitted to probate on October 20, 1659, mentioned* six of his children, including JOSIAH[2] and MARY[2].

The children of GEORGE[1] and THAMZEN (MICHELL) HULL, all born in England, most of whom were baptized at Crewkerne, co.[1, 4] Somerset, and through two of whom we descend, were[6, 8, 11]

1. JOSIAS[2] or JOSIAH, see following.

* It mentioned also "cousin" [niece] Jane Pinckney, and the will of his wife made bequests to "cousins" Philip Pinckney and Jane Pinckney, probably husband and wife. These individuals may likely have been related to GEORGE[1] HULL himself.

II. MARIE[2] or MARY, bap. July 27, 1618; d. August 20, 1684; m., abt. 1632–4, HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY [see Pinney, p. 661].
III. Martha[2], b. (or bap.) October 24, 1620.
IV. Elizabeth[2], bap. October 16, 1625; d. May 2, 1680; m. Samuel Gaylord.
V. Cornelius[2], b. (or bap.) April 9, 1628; d. between September 16 and October 7, 1695; m. November 19, 1653, Rebecca Jones. Removed with his father to Fairfield.
VI. Naomi[2].
VII. Joshua[2], bap. November 5, 1630; probably d. before 1658.

JOSIAH[2] HULL (*George*[1]) was baptized at Crewkerne, co. Somerset, England,[1] on November 10 or 16, 1616; died November 16, 1675, at Killingworth, Connecticut. On May 20, 1640, he was married[12] at Windsor, Connecticut, to ELIZABETH[2] LOOMIS [see Loomis, p. 571]. He was with his father at Dorchester, Massachusetts, and moved with him in 1636–7 to Windsor where in 1640 a house lot was granted to him located near those of his father and his brother-in-law, HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY [see map on p. 569].

In June, 1645, he and one other were co-defendants in a damage suit for £30 brought by THOMAS[1] FORD of Windsor. He paid six shillings in June, 1659, for a seat in the meeting house, was on the grand jury in July, 1660, served four sessions in 1659–60 as a Representative to the General Court from Windsor and either he or his son of the same name was one of the dragoons who received a powder pouch from Thomas Dibble[1, 6, 8, 10, 13] in July, 1667.

JOSIAH[2] HULL and EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD were among the founders of Killingworth, Connecticut [earlier Hamonoscett], removing to that place to begin a settlement[12, 14] in 1662–3. At first there were but twenty-one families in the group and the General Court had ruled that no group of less than thirty families should be formally created into a town. The settlement slowly increased until, in 1685, it met that requirement, was incorporated and received a patent from the General Court. The residents had received two separate Indian deeds in 1663 and 1669 and had made a payment to the town of Saybrook* in 1684 to settle a claim it made to a part of their territory; but so anxious were they to perfect the titles to their holdings that they acquired a new patent in 1703 and added to that a title deed from the Secretary of State.[14]

After his removal from Windsor, JOSIAH[2] sold his seat in the meeting house there to Nathaniel Bissell, on March 7, 1664. In Killingworth, he and

*In this matter JOHN[2] CHAPMAN signed the document for Saybrook, ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN acknowledged the signatures[14] and JOSEPH[3] HULL of Killingworth subscribed six shillings toward the settlement.

EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD were directed to lay out lands in 1663; he was chosen the first town recorder[1] on October 2, 1665, was confirmed Lieutenant of the train band in October, 1666, was elected Representative to the General Court[1, 11, 13, 14] in 1662, 1667, 1671, 1674 and many other years; he was appointed, with EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD, to be commissioner for Killingworth in May, 1671, and was a freeman of that place by or before 1669 as well as a townsman or selectman in that year.[13] Before September, 1675, he had sold certain land[13] to Captain Samuel Marshall.*

The children of JOSIAH[2] and ELIZABETH (LOOMIS) HULL, the first nine born at Windsor and the last two at Killingworth, were[1, 4, 6, 8, 12]

i. Josiah[3], b. September 6, 1642; d. September, 1670; m. Elizabeth (——).
ii. John[3], b. December 17, 1644; d. July 24, 1728; m. December 3, 1668, Abigail Kelsey.
iii. Elizabeth[3], b. February 18, 1647; m. 1661, Israel Dibble.
iv. Mary[3], b. October 2, 1648; d. June 29, 1720; m. 1st, August 2, 1666, John[2] Grant (MATTHEW[1]); m. 2nd, November 3, 1686, probably as his second wife, John Cross.[16]
v. Martha[3], b. June 10, 1650; d. after 1677; m. May 29, 1669, John Nettleton.[19]†
vi. JOSEPH[3], see following.
vii. Sarah[3], b. April 9, 1654.
viii. Naomi[3], b. February 17, 1656–7; d. March 15, 1726; m. January 4, 1676–7,[20] Thomas[2] Burnham (Thomas[1]).
ix. Rebecca[3], b. August 10, 1659.
x. George[3], b. April [or August?] 28, 1662; d. September, 1670.
xi. Thomas[3], b. March 21 or May 29, 1665; d. 1720; m. December 10, 1685, Hannah Sheather.

JOSEPH[3] HULL (*Josiah*[2], *George*[1]) was born August 10, 1652, at Windsor, died‡ in[12] 1709 and married‡ about 1676 (——). His home was at Killingworth, Connecticut. He and his brother John[3] were granted six acres apiece on May 21, 1688, by that town for their services in the Indian war.[14] However, the recipients of these grants did not take them up at once and the lands were re-confirmed to them on December 1, 1696. JOSEPH[3] contributed six shillings toward the sum paid to Saybrook to release their claim on the Killingworth lands.[14] It is said[11] that his widow married John Mentor, who

* Capt. Samuel Marshall willed this land to his daughter, Lydia Marshall, who married Joseph[2] Hawley, son of our JOSEPH[1] HAWLEY.

† John[2] Nettleton (Samuel[1]) and his wife, Martha[2] Hull, had a son Joseph[3] Nettleton who married first, on February 18, 1712–3, Hannah[4] Bushnell, daughter of our JOSHUA[3] and MARY (SEYMOUR) BUSHNELL.[19]

‡ The counter statement is made[1] that JOSEPH[3] died in June, 1694, but the fact that his estate was settled on January 4, 1710, makes the later date seem more reasonable. He is also said[1] to have "probably married Mary Merwin, daughter of Miles and Sarah (Platt Beach) Merwin" but that individual was born[17] in 1666 and could not have married JOSEPH[3] HULL by 1676–7 and have borne him a child in 1678. However, Mary Merwin did marry some member of the Hull family for in her father's will she is called "Mary Hull."

was probably the person of that name who, with JOSEPH[3], received these lands for Indian war service.[14]

The children of JOSEPH[3] HULL and (——), his wife, all born at Killingworth, were[1, 12]

I. George[4], b. October 18, 1678; d. December 5, 1755; m. 1st, December 2, 1708, Phebe Rutty; m. 2nd, December 21, 1733, Hannah Kelsey.
II. Josiah[4], b. April 3, 1681; d. December 13, 1749.
III. Joseph[4], b. March 26, 1685, d. October 13, 1753.
IV. CORNELIUS[4], see following.
V. Peter[4], b. March 15, 1689–90.
VI. Elizabeth[4], b. August 14, 1692; d. 1752; m. September 15, 1713, Michael Griswold.

CORNELIUS[4] HULL (*Joseph*[3], *Josiah*[2], *George*[1]) was born September 26, 1687, at Killingworth and died March 24, 1756, at Durham. On February 1, 1714–5, he was married there by Abraham Fowler, Esq., Assistant, to MEHITABLE[4] GRAVES [see Graves, p. 395]. He removed to Durham before 1714 and spent the remainder of his life there. His wife died in 1747 at that place.

He left a large estate, willing to his daughters Elizabeth[5] and Mehitable[5] £150 and £250 respectively, and to his son JOSEPH[5] a new dwelling house with adjoining land as well as one-third of the residue of the estate which included, beside much land, stock and equipment, two other homes and a cider mill.[1]

The children of CORNELIUS[4] and MEHITABLE (GRAVES) HULL, all born at Durham, were[1, 18]

I. JOSEPH[5], see following.
II. John[5], b. January 14, bap. March 2, 1718; settled in New Jersey.
III. Cornelius[5], b. October 5, bap. November 8, 1719; d. June 30, 1722.
IV. Elizabeth[5], b. April 25, 1721. It is stated[23] that she m. 1st, (——) Chipman, m. 2nd, January 21, 1746, Lt. Samuel[4] Parsons (Moses[3], Joseph[2], JOSEPH[1]), and died at Durham, July 6, 1785.
V. Cornelius[5], b. October 31, bap. November 3, 1723; m. January 1, 1746, at Durham, Abigail Chipman.
VI. Mehitable[5], b. September 30, bap. October 3, 1725.
VII. Jehiel[5], b. February 28, bap. March 2, 1728–9; m. November 8, 1750, at Durham, Ruth[4] Phelps (Josiah[3], John[2], George[1]).[20]

JOSEPH[5] HULL (*Cornelius*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Josiah*[2], *George*[1]) was born at Durham on April 29, 1716, was baptized May 6, following, died there July 14, 1785 or 1786, and was married at that place[18, 21] January 1, 1745–6, to "SIBYLLA[5]"

COE [see Coe, p. 219]. Though he was fifty-nine years old, he was one of the Durham men who marched as a private to serve at the Lexington Alarm under Captain Stephen Norton, rendering a service of twenty days' duration.[22, 24] At least two of his sons, John[6] and Josiah[6], were also in the service.[25]

The family of JOSEPH[5] scattered far and wide—ELIZABETH[6] to Ohio, John[6], Josiah[6], Silas[6] and Phebe[6], and perhaps others, to New York State.[25, 26] His will dated May 11, 1778, conveyed to his wife a third interest in his estate during her life; to his daughters ELIZABETH[6] and Mehitable[6] seven and nine pounds, respectively, since he had given them sums before, probably at their marriage; to his daughters Sybil[6] and Phebe[6] fifty pounds each; to his eldest son Joseph[6] the lower room on the east side of the house; and to his sons Joseph[6], John[6], Josiah[6] and Silas[6] equal parts of the rest of his estate. His widow died[21] March 18, 1785.

The children of JOSEPH[5] and "SIBYLLA" (COE) HULL, all born at Durham, were[1, 18, 21]

I. ELIZABETH[6], b. July 1, bap. July 5, 1747; m. at Durham,[18] September 15, 1767, LEVI[5] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 194]. They resided in Marietta, Ohio. She was dismissed by letter from the Marietta church to Charleston, W. Va., April 9, 1820. Since the Marietta records are silent as to her death, it is presumed that she died at Charleston.*

II. Joseph[6], b. December 24, 1749; d. October 11, 1818; m. 1785, Diana Chalker.

III. Sybil[6], b. April 6, bap. April 12, 1752; d. April 14, 1812.

IV. Mehitable[6], bap. June 7, 1754; d. April 6, 1793,[23] or January 22, 1812,[1] at Durham; m. there,[18] May 21, 1772, Ithamar[4] Parsons (Ithamar[3], SAMUEL[2], JOSEPH[1]).[23]

V. John[6], b. November 18 or 20, bap. November 28, 1756; d. October 29, 1832; m. February 4, 1781, Sarah Baldwin, and removed to Durham, Greene Co., N. Y.[20, 26]

VI. Josiah[6], b. April 4, bap. April 8, 1759; d. May 27, 1826, prob. at Paris, N. Y.;[1] m. October, 1785, Mehitable[6] Chalker, daughter of Jabez[5] Chalker† (Stephen[4], STEPHEN[3], SAMUEL[2], ALEXANDER[1]).

VII. Hannah[6], b. June 5, bap. June 7, 1761.

VIII. Silas[6], b. May 26, bap. May 27, 1764.

*Accompanying her were some friends, Samuel Beaumont and his wife Thankful, who had brought church letters from Saybrook to Marietta when LEVI[5] and ELIZABETH (HULL) CHAPMAN brought theirs.

†This man, Jabez[5] Chalker, was the grandson of our STEPHEN[3] and ELIZABETH (CHAPMAN) CHALKER [through Stephen[4] and Mehitable (Chapman) Chalker], and nephew of our LYDIA (CHALKER) CHAPMAN [wife of LEVI[4] CHAPMAN]. Therefore, Jabez[5] Chalker, himself, was first cousin to our LEVI[5] CHAPMAN, and uncle by marriage to that man's wife, ELIZABETH[6] HULL [daughter of JOSEPH[5] and SIBYLLA (COE) HULL and niece of Sarah (Coe) Chalker, wife of this Jabez[5] under discussion]. But he became father-in-law to the brother of ELIZABETH[6] HULL [also his nephew by marriage] through the marriage of his own daughter Mehitable[6] Chalker with Josiah[6] Hull [son of JOSEPH[5] and SIBYLLA (COE) HULL]. It may be that Diana Chalker who married Joseph[6] Hull was daughter or niece of Jabez[5] Chalker.

IX. Phebe[6], b. January 21, bap. January 29, 1769; d. 1809; m., as his first wife, Noah Baldwin, brother of Sarah above.[20, 26]

REFERENCES

1. Hull Family in America, Col. Weygant, 1913, pp. 9–21, 23, 28, 38, 56–7.
1a. Descendants of John Scott of Roxbury, M. L. Holman, 1919, pp. 236–7.
2. History of Fairfield County, Conn., D. H. Hurd, 1881, pp. 334–5.
2a. Somerset Parish Register, 1904, V, 6, 19.
3. Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester, Mass., T. M. Harris, 1804, pp. 4–6; Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society Collections, No. 2, 1846, Annals of Dorchester, J. Blake, p. 10.
4. Savage, I, 390; II, 183, 292, 492–4; III, 129, 439.
5. New England Register, XXI, 166, et seq.
6. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 141, 143, 152, 158, 160, 184; II, 416.
7. Plymouth, Mass., Colony Records, I, 66.
8. History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schlenck, 1889, I, 59, 69, 88, 94, 302–17, 381–2.
9. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 9, 13, 20, 34, 41, 44, 46, 50, 58, 64, 67, 69–71, 73, 82, 84, 93, 96, 99, 103, 111, 114, 116–7, 130, 133, 138, 185, 198, 207, 218, 226, 249, 257, 278, 281.
10. History of Connecticut, G. H. Hollister, 1857, I, 535.
11. Prospectus of GEORGE HULL and some of his Descendants, C. T. Hull, 1902, pp. 66–71; Hull Family Association (pamphlet), 1905, pp. 7–8; Hull Family in America, Col. Weygant, 1913, pp. 9–21, 23, 28, 38, 56–7.
12. Loomis Family, E. Loomis, 1880, I, 59–61; Loomis Genealogy, E. Loomis, 1875, revised, p. 26; Loomis Genealogy, E. S. Loomis, 1908, pp. 126–7.
13. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 127, 334, 337, 340, 347, 349, 419; II, 50, 59, 152, 525; III, 4; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 418–21, 425, 427.
14. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 445; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 421.
15. Early Records of Dorchester, Mass., W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 6, 8, 21, 23–6.
16. Grant Genealogy, A. H. Grant, 1898, p. 2.
17. Savage, III, 201.
18. History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, pp. 220, 254–7, 260, 263, 287, 290, 294–5, 305, 308, 311, 314, 318, 330, 332, 345–7, 364, 366, 368, 370–1, 373, 375, 382–3, 390–1.
19. Connecticut Magazine, XII, 1908, pp. 146–8; New England Register, LIII, 210.
20. Burnham Genealogy, R. H. Burnham, 1869, p. 60; Phelps Genealogy, O. S. Phelps, 1899, II, 1290; Baldwin Genealogy, C. C. Baldwin ,1881, pp. 503, 533.
21. ROBERT COE, Puritan, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 100.
22. Connecticut Military Record, 1889, p. 8.
23. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, 1912, I, 94–5; 1920, II, 34–5.
24. D.A.R. Lineage Books, XXVI, 277.
25. Ibid., IV, 203; XI, 256; XXII, 275; XXVI, 277; XXXVIII, 284; XL, 310.
26. History of Greene County, N. Y., 1884, pp. 261, 270, 278, 533.
27. Descendants of JOHN UPHAM, F. K. Upham, 1892, pp. 19–30, 37–9; Sketch of the Rev. Joseph Hull, R. B. Hull, 1898, pp. 1–33.
28. History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, 1–3, 9–16, 19–21, 59, 84–7, 303–28.
29. History of Stratford, Conn., S. Orcutt, 1886, I, 76–7, 139, 142–3, 148–9, 256–8; Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 249.
30. History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, I, 32, 35, 41, 51, 54, 68–73, 77, 91, 136, 450, 477; II, 456–464.
31. Ibid., I, 73, 91; History of Connecticut, G. H. Hollister, 1857, I, 82–90; II, 510–1, 537–8; History of New England, G. H. Palfrey, 1882, II, 235; Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 127–8.

HULL (Isaac)

* [478] Isaac Hull –1703–6	m	. . . . . –bef.–1703
* † [238] William Raymond c.1637–9–1708–9	m 2nd c.1681	Ruth Hull –prob.1738
* † [118] Josiah Batchelder 1679–80–1749	m 1700	Mary Raymond 1682–1763
* [58] Henry Herrick 1716–1780	m 1738	Anne Batchelder 1717–1815
* ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
* ‡ § ‖ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ¶ ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Beverly, Mass.
† Salem, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

HULL (Isaac)

ISAAC[1] HULL came from Topsham, co. Devon, England,[1] to New England in the "John of Weymouth" in 1663 and became an inhabitant of Essex County, Massachusetts.[2,3] In 1664 and 1670 he bought land,[2] in the latter year was a witness[4] to the will of RICHARD[1] DODGE, on March 15, 1670–1, helped JOHN[1] RAYMOND take an inventory of the estate of HENRY[1] HERRICK, in 1673 he witnessed several documents relative to the settlement of the estate of Jacob Barney and, on January 28, 1677, helped JOHN[1] RAYMOND to take an inventory of the estate[4] of widow EDITH (——) DODGE, relict of RICHARD[1] DODGE.

ISAAC[1] HULL was a cooper and, in 1673, took James Bette to live with him as an apprentice to learn that trade.[4] He took the oath of fidelity at Beverly[5] on December 3, 1677. That same year his daughter Edith[2] deposed that she was about seventeen years old.[5] The name of the wife of ISAAC[1] has not yet been established and the failure to mention her in his will suggests her demise prior to its date of March 18, 1703, between which time and June 3, 1706, its date of probate, his own death occurred. This document made his own son George[2] and his grandson Isaac[3] (Isaac[2]), his executors and included bequests to son George[2], daughter RUTH (HULL) RAYMOND, daughter Edith[2] and her son Isaac and to "my daughter Sarah Hull my own daughter"[2] which suggests that he may have married, secondly, a widow with one or more children.*

RUTH (HULL) RAYMOND on March 28, 1709, acquitted her brother George[2] Hull of her share of the estate of her "Honored Father, ISAAC HULL, dec[d]. Before Edmund Rayment, Sarah Hull."[2]

The children of ISAAC[1] HULL and (——) his wife, born in unknown order, were

I. Isaac[2], b. (—); prob. he who d. February 26, 1707–8, at Wenham;[7] m. at Topsham, England,[1] September 1, 1675, Sarah (Cocke) Solart.

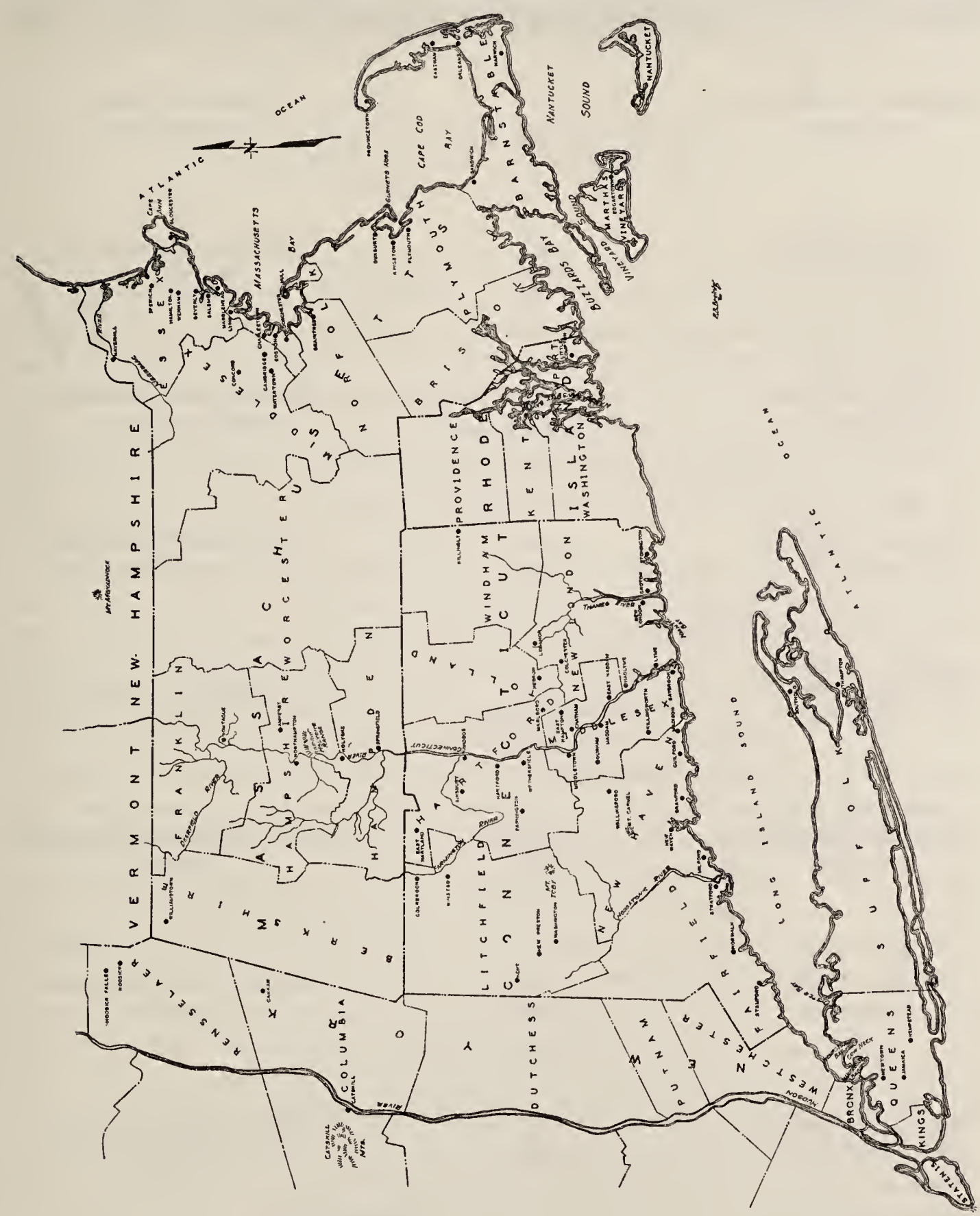
II. George[2], b. abt. 1650; d. between March 6 and May 17, 1742, aged abt. 92, at Beverly; m. there, August 20, 1674, Elizabeth Wellman (Thomas).[6,8]

* A widow Sarah Hull died[6] at Beverly on September 10, 1726, but if she had been wife to ISAAC[1] it seems fair to assume that they were married after the date of his will which failed to mention her.

III. RUTH[2], b. (—); d. [doubtless] at Beverly as "wid. of Capt. WM. RAYMOND 1738";[6] m., probably about 1681, as his second wife, WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND [see Raymond, p. 708].
IV. Edith[2], b. about 1660.[5]
V. Sarah[2], living in 1703 and possibly on May 28, 1709.[2]

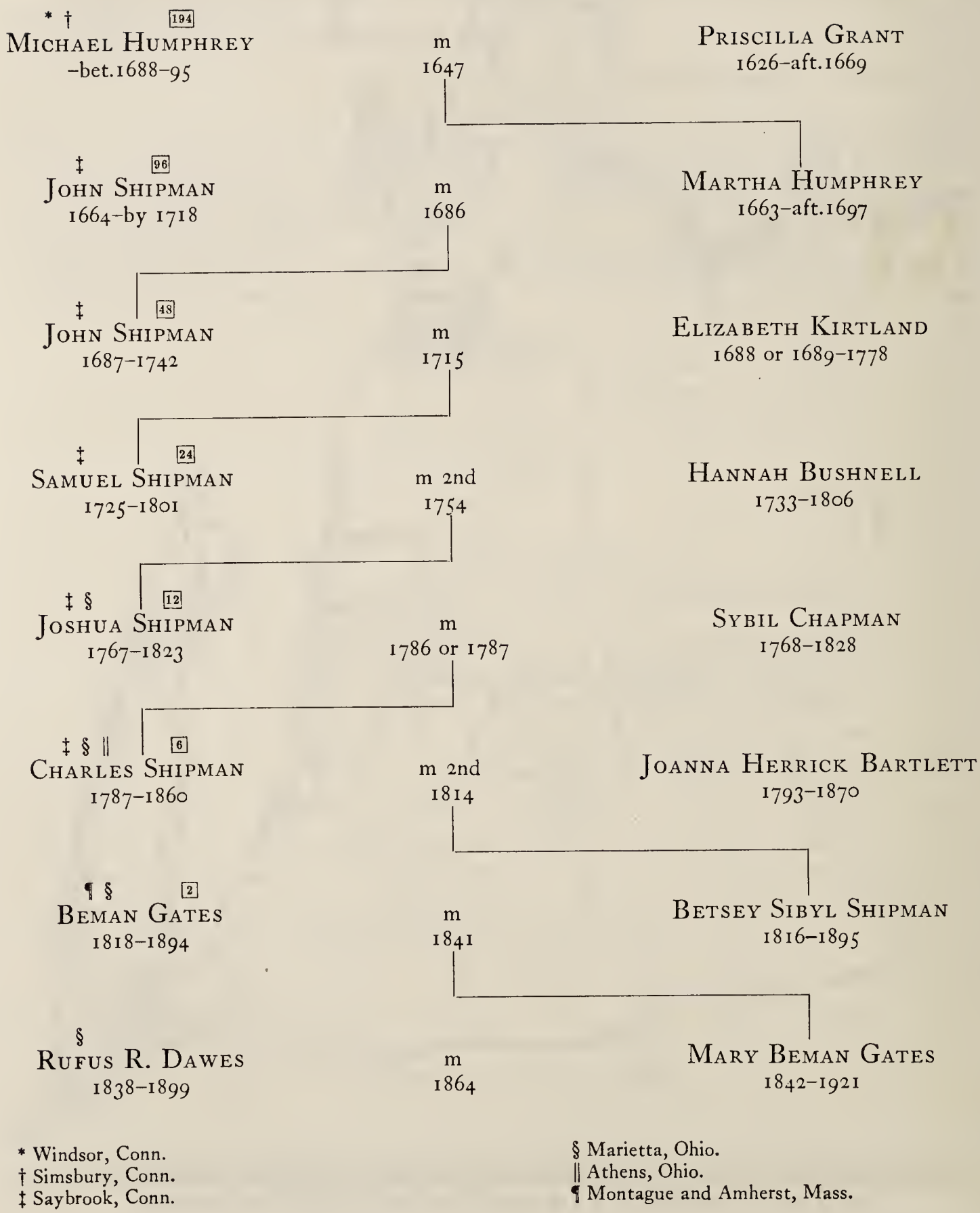
REFERENCES

1. Records and Files of Quarterly Court, Essex County, Mass., VIII, 25–7.
2. Essex Institute Historical Collections, VIII, 73.
3. Records and Files of Quarterly Court, Essex County, Mass., III, 79.
4. Ibid., IV, 405; Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, II, 221, 232, 361; III, 199.
5. Records and Files of Quarterly Court, Essex County, Mass., V, 211–2; VI, 281, 401.
6. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 170, 477–8, 541.
7. Vital Records of Wenham, Mass., p. 204.
8. Wellman Genealogy, J. W. Wellman, 1918, p. 78.



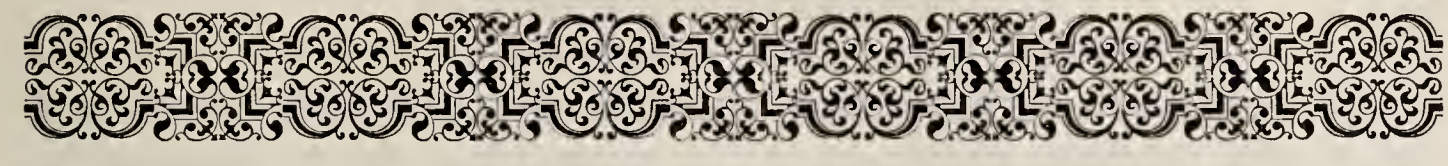
A GENERAL MAP WHICH BINDS TOGETHER VARIOUS OTHERS, HEREIN SHOWING PLACES OF RESIDENCE OF MANY OF OUR EARLY ANCESTORS

HUMPHREY



* Windsor, Conn.
† Simsbury, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.

§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.



HUMPHREY

MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY* was an early resident at Windsor, Connecticut,[1] where, on March 8, 1643, he purchased land from ROBERT[1] HAYWARD, but of his previous residence or of his emigration nothing has yet been learned. He was married[2] at Windsor, October 14, 1647, to PRISCILLA[2] GRANT [see Grant, p. 378], but no record has been found concerning the death of either, although his occurred probably at Simsbury, after June 25, 1688, on which date he signed a deed, and before March 19, 1695, when his sons settled his estate.[2]

Many different land grants are on record in the name of MICHAEL[1] between 1643 and 1660. In May, 1657, he became a freeman,[3] being probably more than thirty years of age at the time.[2] He was evidently one who did not hesitate to express his opinion of others for he was sued[1] in 1659 by George Phillips for "defaming [him] by many iniurious Expressions." His only known public service at Windsor was that of fence-viewer[1] in 1660.

He associated himself, as early as 1643, with John Griffin, then of Windsor, who had become a pioneer in the manufacture of pitch, tar and turpentine, which products found a ready market in Europe and, in addition to furs, were about the only legalized articles of export from the colonies.[2,6] They carried on this business for some years at Massaco, now Simsbury, as well as at Windsor. This latter place was, at that time, an important commercial center and port of entry, thus affording him unusual facilities in the exportation of his tar products and the importation of dry goods from St. Malo, France, where his brother, Samuel Humphrey, was in partnership with Henry Rose, of that place.[2] There are, in the Connecticut State Library, eleven documents[1,4] which are the original bills of lading, accounts and other papers regarding merchandise sent from France by Samuel Humphrey to his brother, MICHAEL[1], in Connecticut.[2] One of these is an agreement between

*There is extant a letter, preserved by one of his descendants, purporting to have been addressed to MICHAEL[1] in 1648, from his [supposed] parents, Samuel and Susanna Humphrey, then, apparently, resident in Lyme, England.[2]

Samuel and his partner, Henry Rose, dated November 30, 1662, in which the former acknowledged receipt of 2,227 livres, and assigned to the latter his interest in the accounts against MICHAEL[1], making Rose his attorney to collect. This document was written in French and was translated at Hartford March 5, 1666–7, in which month a suit for the collection of this assignment was tried and judgment was awarded to the plaintiff for £155–09–00, instead of £405–06–06 which was claimed. Prior to this, on January 26 of that year, Henry Rose had entered a caveat[1] on the Windsor records to prevent MICHAEL[1] from selling any of his land until this debt should be satisfied. The latter, accordingly, received a summons, dated April 16, 1668, to appear in court and answer to a second suit[2] by the same plaintiff, in this instance for £235–05–07. This second trial took place May 8, following, when the defendant submitted an account of expenses* amounting to more than £32 and, in settlement of all claims against him,[1] signed over to Rose, the next month, his property at Windsor and Simsbury, including the dwelling-house at the former place with its plot of eight and a quarter acres, as well as several other tracts, which transfer apparently left him without a home. On June 20, 1668, MICHAEL[1] received a release† from Henry Rose of all claims[1] held against him. Shortly thereafter, a new grant of twenty acres, and subsequently others, were laid out to him at Simsbury where he made his home. On October 11, 1669, he was listed as one of the thirteen freemen "stated inhabitants of Masaco [who] haue been free men for Windsor."[2, 3, 6, 8]

At a session of the Council held March 3, 1675–6, action was taken recognizing the danger of Indian attack and ordering the people of Simsbury to remove themselves, and such of their property as was possible, to near-by plantations for safety. In compliance with this order they chose Windsor as their place of refuge and carried away as many of their possessions as time and strength allowed, for there was neither bridge nor ferry where wagons might cross the river and such roads as existed were almost impassable. They did this none too soon for in the latter part of the month the Indians burned the entire town, consisting of forty homes and outbuildings. When the

* This expense account included[2] "dyet and other unavoidable charges in Bristoll having my abode there almost 4 months," "dyet in Barbadoes 1 month," "Passage to Barbadoes," "Passage to New England" and "15 months dyet at 6s per weeke New England."

MICHAEL[1] evidently acted as agent for Rose and traveled more extensively than many men of his day.

† In spite of this legal termination, his seven children, including MARTHA[2] and her husband, JOHN[2] SHIPMAN, evidently felt that an injustice had been done to MICHAEL[1], for, on April 4, 1697, they joined in a suit against Joseph Wells and Benjamin Newberry, both of Windsor, in the hope of recovering some of the land transferred in 1668 by their father to Rose and sold by Newberry as his agent.[1]

trouble subsided, most of the settlers, including the Humphrey family, returned, dug up such of the pewter and kettles as they had left behind, and courageously began to rebuild.[1,6]

Although so long a resident of Windsor, MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY had not, up to 1664, united with the church there, but styled himself "a member of the Church of England."[2] In the twenty-one or more years spent there, he had become identified with the business and social life of the town and had been taxed for the support of the church but had not been allowed the privilege of its ordinances.[5,10] Having now a family of five children who needed Christian training, none of whom had been baptized, he evidently felt justified in protesting against this discrimination in religious matters. While he took this view of the case, the church authorities felt that, since he had not come early enough to bear the brunt of first settlement, and since he was admittedly of the Episcopal belief, which they considered lacking in piety, it was rather his place, as a small minority, to conform to the rules of the majority than theirs to make exceptions in his behalf.

It appears that he and James Eno "by virtue of their having been, in England, members of the National [Episcopal] Church, demanded from the (nonconforming) Church of Windsor, baptism for their children and admission to full church privilege."[5] The records show that on March 10, 1663–4, the Windsor Church complained to the General Court of these two men "for seuerall things contayned in a paper presented to the Court" and "for a misdameanor in offering violence to an establisht law of this Colony."[5] Though this charge was withdrawn by the Church, yet at the same session the Court saw fit to pass censure upon these agitators by declaring that they "doe declare such practises to be of offensiue, and may proue prejudiciall to the wellfare of this Collony, and this Court expects they will readily come to the acknowledgment of their error in the paper by them presented to the Church, whereupon, the Court respitts and remits the sensure due for their offence, prouided answerable reformation doth followe, expecting that their lenity therein will winne upon the spiritts of those concerned in this case."[3]

Yet the matter did not end here,[5] for in October, 1664, there was presented to the Court a lengthy petition, evidently directed particularly against the Windsor Church, signed by seven men—of whom MICHAEL[1] was one, and undoubtedly a leading spirit—asking, with what seemed to the church like cool effrontery, that the signers be relieved from paying toward the support of the church if they were to be denied the privileges of it. The matter was

long under consideration and the General Court took a conciliatory stand, urging each church in the colony to consider whether or not it would be better to grant the rite of baptism and certain other privileges to those who were of honest and Godly conversation, even though they were not fully in sympathy with the local church doctrines. The ultimate result was that various churches, including Windsor (some of them reluctantly), voted to grant what was called the "Half-way Covenant" which brought varying degrees[2, 5] of satisfaction or discontent.

The direct result of the measure was the actual disruption of many of the churches. The majority of the people undoubtedly felt that these agitators should not have come among them, knowing as they did, before they came, what the laws were. In the long run, however, the adoption of the Half-way Covenant was a move which operated for tolerance. New England was destined to experience many such upheavals before she was finally to bring about her emancipation.

Regardless of the fact that the Puritans desired religious freedom for themselves, they were not yet ready to grant it to those who favored the Church of England from which they had separated at such cost, nor, indeed, to any others whose opinions differed from theirs. The law in Massachusetts, from 1631 until about 1660, and in New Haven Colony from 1638 until about 1665, that "no man shall be admitted to the freedom of this body politic but such as are members of some of the churches within the limits of the same," was rigidly enforced. Even the more tolerant Connecticut Colony, which allowed freemanship to those who were not church members, at first withheld such privileges as baptism of children in cases where neither parents nor other relatives were members. It was against this last restriction, particularly for the sake of the children, that the various controversies had arisen and, in demanding rights or "representation,"—since he was taxed for the church—MICHAEL[1] HUMPHREY was only voicing the general principle which eventually brought about the freedom of the Colonies.

MICHAEL[1] evidently saw military service for on July 3, 1667, he was one of "Those of the Dragones that haue reseiued pouches of Thomas Deble, which he got made, and it is to be payed by ye towne."[1] During his later life, in Simsbury, he appears to have had more interest in public affairs, and especially in the church. He served as Deputy[2, 3, 6] to the General Court in October, 1670; petitioned the same body in 1677 to tax only for a certain period the lands at Simsbury because of the town's loss by fire. Again, in

1682, he petitioned concerning the choice of a minister; the following year, regarding the placing of the meeting-house; and, in 1686, he served on a committee to decide finally upon a pastor.[1,2]

The children of MICHAEL[1] and PRISCILLA (GRANT) HUMPHREY, the first six born at Windsor, and the seventh probably at Simsbury, all of whom were living in 1697, were[1,2,7]

I. John[2], b. June 7, 1650; d. January 14, 1697–8, at Simsbury; m. Hannah Griffin.
II. Mary[2], b. October 24, 1653; m. at Hartford, June 16, 1675, John Lewis, of Windsor.
III. Samuel[2], b. May 15, 1656; d. June 15, 1736; m. Mary Mills.
IV. Sarah[2], b. March 6, 1658–9; m. June 11, 1680, Richard Burnham, of Hartford.
V. MARTHA[2], b. October 5, 1663; d. after 1697 and before[11] June 18, 1741; m.[9] May, 1686, JOHN[2] SHIPMAN, of Saybrook [see Shipman, p. 734].
VI. Abigail[2], b. March 23–4, 1665–6; d. June 27, 1697; m. February 12, 1684, Benjamin Graham, of Hartford.
VII. Hannah[2], b. October 21, 1669; m. before April 14, 1697, as his second wife, Joseph Bull, of Hartford.

REFERENCES

1. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 77–89.
2. Humphreys Family in America, F. F. Humphreys, 1883, I, pp. 97–8, 102–12.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 297, 420; II, 136, 520.
4. Connecticut Particular Court Records, II, 129; III, 57, 60, 77.
5. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn. H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 160, 184, 192–8, 478.
6. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 341–5.
7. Savage, II, 497.
8. History of Simsbury, Granby and Canton, Conn., N. A. Phelps, 1845, pp. 13, 16.
9. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, II, 5.
10. The Beginnings of New England, J. Fisk, 1889, pp. 250, 252.
11. Saybrook, Conn., Records, VI, 72.

HUNGERFORD

* † [260] Thomas Hungerford -c.1663	m 1st	. . . . . -1654-7
† ‡ [130] Thomas Hungerford c.1648-1714	m c.1670-1	Mary [Green?] -1714 or later
‡ [64] Joseph Gates 1662-1712	m c.1694	Elizabeth Hungerford c.1670-1759
‡ [32] Joseph Gates 1695-6-1770	m 1719	Hannah Brainerd 1694-1744
‡ [16] Bezaleel Gates 1726-1802	m 1750	Mary Brainerd 1727-1796
‡ § [8] Aaron Gates 1753-1821	m 1776	Elizabeth Johnson c.1756-1816
§ ‖ [4] Aaron Gates 1780-1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784-1858
‖ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818-1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816-1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838-1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842-1921

* Hartford, Conn.
† New London, Conn.
‡ Haddam and East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

HUNGERFORD

THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD, or Hungerfoot, as his name was sometimes spelled, was the first* of this family to come to New England. He settled at Hartford where he was among the "first settlers" on January 1, 1639–40, although he was not an "original proprietor"; he was, however, one of the "Proprietors by courtesie of the town" and one "with liberty to fetch woode and keepe swine or cowes on the Common." He owned[1] lot number 74 which lay on the west side of "the road to the cow pasture,"[2] afterwards Burr Street and Albany Pike, and north from Trumbull Street.[1] It was said also that he was one of several who had been owners[1] of lots previous to 1639 and had forfeited them to the town through failure to settle according to the conditions of their grants or for some similar reason. If so, THOMAS[1] evidently made good his neglect before 1640.[1, 1a]

In September, 1644, he and Matthew Beckwith were plaintiffs against William Edwards in a case for damages in which the verdict was rendered in their favor with twenty shillings fine and costs of court.[3]

He sold his home lot and other property at Hartford in May, 1650, to Nicholas Jennings[1a, 4] which act probably just preceded his removal to New London. He was still listed among the "Original and Early Members (1633–1639)" of the first Church at Hartford and as having made this change of residence.[26] Before the end of the fiscal year, February 25, 1650–1, he had applied for a house lot at New London and the one assigned to him was "on the Bank next above Thomas Stanton's" "which locality might now be designated as fronting on Bank Street [along the river] north of Tilley, and extending back to Methodist Street"[5] though it is quite certain that he lived later at Niantic, about four miles west of town [see map on p. 677].

In July, 1651, he was one of the inhabitants "y^t wrought at the Mill Dam."[5] A meeting had been held on November 10, previously, with regard to this dam and it was then arranged with Mr. John Winthrop that he should

*He is said[2a] to have owned property in Norwich, Connecticut, in 1630.

establish a mill to grind corn, that "The inhabitants were to make 'the dam and heavy work belonging to the milne' " and that "no other persons should set up any other milne to grind corn . . . within the limits of the town, either for the present nor for the future so long as Mr. John Winthrop or his heirs do uphold a milne to grind the towne corn."[6]

The state of public opinion in the early days is shown by various odd personal regulations existing in Connecticut. One such regulation passed in 1647 provides that "No person under twenty shall take tobacco, unless he is already used to it, or can bring certificate of a physician that it is useful to him. . . . No man shall take tobacco publically in the street, or in the fields or woods, unless on a journey of ten miles; or at the ordinary time of repast called dinner, or if it be not then taken, yet not above once in the day at most, and then not in company with any other. Nor shall any one take any tobacco in any house in the same town where he liveth, with and in the company of any man than one who useth and drinketh the same weed, with him at that time, under penalty of six pence for each offence." In that same year, one Will Colfaxe was fined five pounds for "laboring to invegle the affections of Write his daughter,"[2] meaning Mr. Wright's daughter. In 1664 there was prohibition of the use of "cardes and shuffleboards" and a warning to the inhabitants "not to entertain strange young men."[6]

On the road leading from New London to the Nahantic Bar there lay a large granite rock mentioned in the records of the early proprietors as "the great rock called Hungerfort's Fort." It long retained this name, was there for at least two hundred years and may still remain. A tradition accounts for the naming of this boulder from the action of a young daughter of the Hungerford family, though whether of the first or second generation is not quite certain, who, when walking alone on her way to school, found herself watched and pursued by a wolf which made its approach so cautiously that she had time to secure a cudgel and to climb upon the rock before the beast attacked her. Here she succeeded in beating it off until assistance came.[5]

In 1652, THOMAS[1] was constable of New London[7] and in December, 1653, he and John Picket were assigned a certain lot on "Lower Mamacock" from which to cut firewood. This gives evidence that this rugged promontory "now almost treeless, smoothed down and crowned with a fortress," was once heavily wooded.[5]

THOMAS[1] had land at Stonington, as will later be shown, but it was probably only as an investment for there is no evidence that either he or his son, THOMAS[2], lived there.

The name of the first wife of THOMAS[1] has not yet been found, but she died in or after 1654, evidently before November 2, 1657, when he wrote a letter, showing remarkably good penmanship, to his "Loving Sister" Anne, who had perhaps come to New England with him and who had surely married John Leigh, of Ipswich.[8] The text of this epistle shows that Anne had twice written to her brother suggesting that he send his little daughter, Sarah[2], to her for care; that he thanked her for this suggestion and that he felt inclined to do so but had awaited an opportunity to bring her himself, anticipating that he might have been able to make the trip before that winter, but was finally convinced that he must wait until the following spring. This plan was evidently carried out, for John Leigh, in his will of June 12, 1671, gave to Sarah[2] Hungerford, besides what she had already received, £20 to be paid to her at marriage if she continued to live with her aunt until that time "in ye same way as hitherto she hath done."[8, 9]

THOMAS[1] married[5] secondly,[21] at New London, about 1658, Hannah[2] Willey, the daughter of Isaac[1] Willey, and after his death she married, secondly, about 1664–6, Peter Blatchford, and thirdly,[12] in 1672–3, Samuel[2] Spencer (GERRARD[1]). THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD died[26] at New London before May 1, 1663, on which date the inventory of his estate, amounting to about £100, was taken and the ages of all of his children were mentioned. On July 9, following, this inventory was exhibited[11] and on May 10, 1664, by order of the Court, the whole estate was turned over to the widow, who was required to pay £7 to THOMAS[2] at the age of twenty-one and £4 to each of the daughters at the age of eighteen.[11]

The children of THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD and (——) his first wife, were[10, 11, 12]

I. THOMAS[2], see following.
II. Sarah[2], b. about 1654, probably at New London; m. Lewis Hughes, of Lyme, Conn.

The only child of THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD and his second wife, Hannah Willey,[12] was

III. Hannah[2], b. May 1, 1659, at New London; d. after 1712; m. William Ross of Rhode Island.[30]

THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD (*Thomas*[1]) was born about 1648, undoubtedly at Hartford, and died between January 11 and February 5, 1713–4, at East

Haddam. He married,[25] at New London, before June 6, 1671, MARY [Green?]* He was brought to New London in infancy by his father and is said to have learned the blacksmith's trade as he grew up. In 1673 he had a grant of land[5, 10] "four miles from town" at Niantic, where his father had probably resided and the son lived for perhaps ten years subsequently, then moving[10, 16] to Lyme about 1680–5. In 1687–8, during Governor Andros' usurpation, a special plan of taxation required a listing of property owners, and the one for Lyme in 1688 shows the appraisal of the property of THOMAS[2] to have been £379–10 and much the largest in the town. He doubtless located at the western border of that town and his holdings were near to, if not actually overlapping, the East Haddam boundary [see map on p. 195], for he was thereafter interchangeably called of both places and, in 1692, he was living in the parish later called Hadlyme, about two-thirds of which was in East Haddam and the remainder in Lyme. His homestead was in the south part of the present town of East Haddam one-fourth of a mile north of Lyme boundary and one-half mile east of the Connecticut River.[25]

In the summer of 1691 arrangements were pending relative to the engagement of the Reverend Jeremiah Hobart as minister to this neighborhood and the contract provided that a house, eighteen by forty feet, should be built for him. In order to raise money to buy nails for this building, twenty acres of common land at Modus was sold to THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD, the blacksmith, who bound himself to "provyde and deliver so many nailes of such syses as shal be needfull to the compleit finishing"[20] of the house. In December of that year seven men of the community "ingage to cutt, hew and frame a dwelling hows for mr hubert according to the townes a Grement, and to have the frame ready to raise by the middle of march next."[20] In the early days nails were hand wrought at the forge and thus the smith, always one of the most necessary citizens, became quite essential to the building industry, as well as many others. The community was dependent upon him for the manufacturing and repairing of all metal goods such as wheel tires, ploughs

*She is variously, and probably erroneously, called "Gray" and "Graves" but the fact of giving a son, as well as later descendants, the name "Green" is strong circumstantial evidence in favor of that as her surname.[13, 16, 19, 27] Another possible clue to her identity is the frequent recurrence of the name "Jonah" or "Jonas" in the families of four of her children. In one of these cases, in 1762, the child was named "Jonah Green Gates," and in another "Jonas G. Cone," thus adding weight to the evidence in favor of "Green." An Elizabeth[3] Green (Samuel[2], Bartholomew[1]) married John Plumbe and named a son "Green Plumbe." Some branches of this same Green family removed to New London [where the Hungerfords lived] and frequently used the name "Jonas." A fuller knowledge of that Green family may show the origin of our MARY. Any statement of evidence, pro or con, is invited.

and other tools, door hinges, fireplace equipment, including andirons, cranes and pots, as well as nails and horseshoes.

THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD served in King Philip's war in the campaign through the Narragansett country and received a grant of land from the government for this service.[29] He is said to have also been granted a section of land as an inducement to settle in Lyme vicinity and to practice his trade there;[10] to have been one of the early selectmen, if indeed not the first to hold this office, in East Haddam and, with two others, "who were also townsmen," to have bought in 1704 for the town the book in which its early records are written, as shown by an inscription in that volume.[10, 10a]

The land records of Lyme contain a transfer dated March 4, 1735, showing that Sarah (Hungerford) Cone was the third daughter of THOMAS[2] HUNGERFORD, "late of Lyme—deceased," but his will dated January 11, 1713–4, states that he was "of Haddam." This latter document, besides providing for his wife, MARY, made bequests to each of his three sons and five daughters, mentioning among other items certain "lands at Stonington which desended to me from my father."[14] The inventory of his estate was taken on February 5, 1713–4, and showed a valuation of £278. His will was proved on April 5, 1714, and administration[14] was granted to his eldest son, Thomas[3].

It seems probable that THOMAS[2] and his wife were not church members since no church records have been found showing the births of their children nor any baptisms until they were adults. THOMAS[2] was buried at Grave Yard Point[10] [see Gates, p. 13].

The children of THOMAS[2] and MARY (Green?) HUNGERFORD, probably all born at New London, and given in the order shown by his will, quite surely not in chronological sequence, were[23, 25]

I. Thomas[3], b. 1672; bap. August 7, 1709, when he and his wife joined the church;[10] d. January, 1743 or 1750, at New London; m. Elizabeth[4] Smith (Matthew[3], Matthew[2], Matthew[1]).[17, 23]

II. John[3], b. 1673; bap. August 7, 1709, when he and his wife joined the church;[10] d. 1748; buried at Hadlyme; m. August 23, 1695,[12] or December 3, 1702, Deborah[3] Spencer[15] (TIMOTHY[2], GERRARD[1]).

III. Green[3], b. about 1675; d. before 1741; m. March 3, 1709, Jemima Richardson.[15] She m. 2nd, Matthias Fuller.

IV. ELIZABETH[3], b. about 1670, bap. October 8, 1704, at East Haddam;[18] d. November 17, 1759,[18] at that place, in her eighty-ninth year; m. undoubtedly there, about 1694, JOSEPH[2] GATES [see Gates, p. 15].

V. Susanna[3], m. probably about 1697, Samuel[3] Church[22] (Edward[2], Richard[1]).

VI. Sarah[3], b. about 1679, bap. 1704; d. September 25, 1753, at East Haddam;[19] m.[10, 13, 16, 19] probably there, about 1697, Nathaniel[2] Cone (DANIEL[1]).

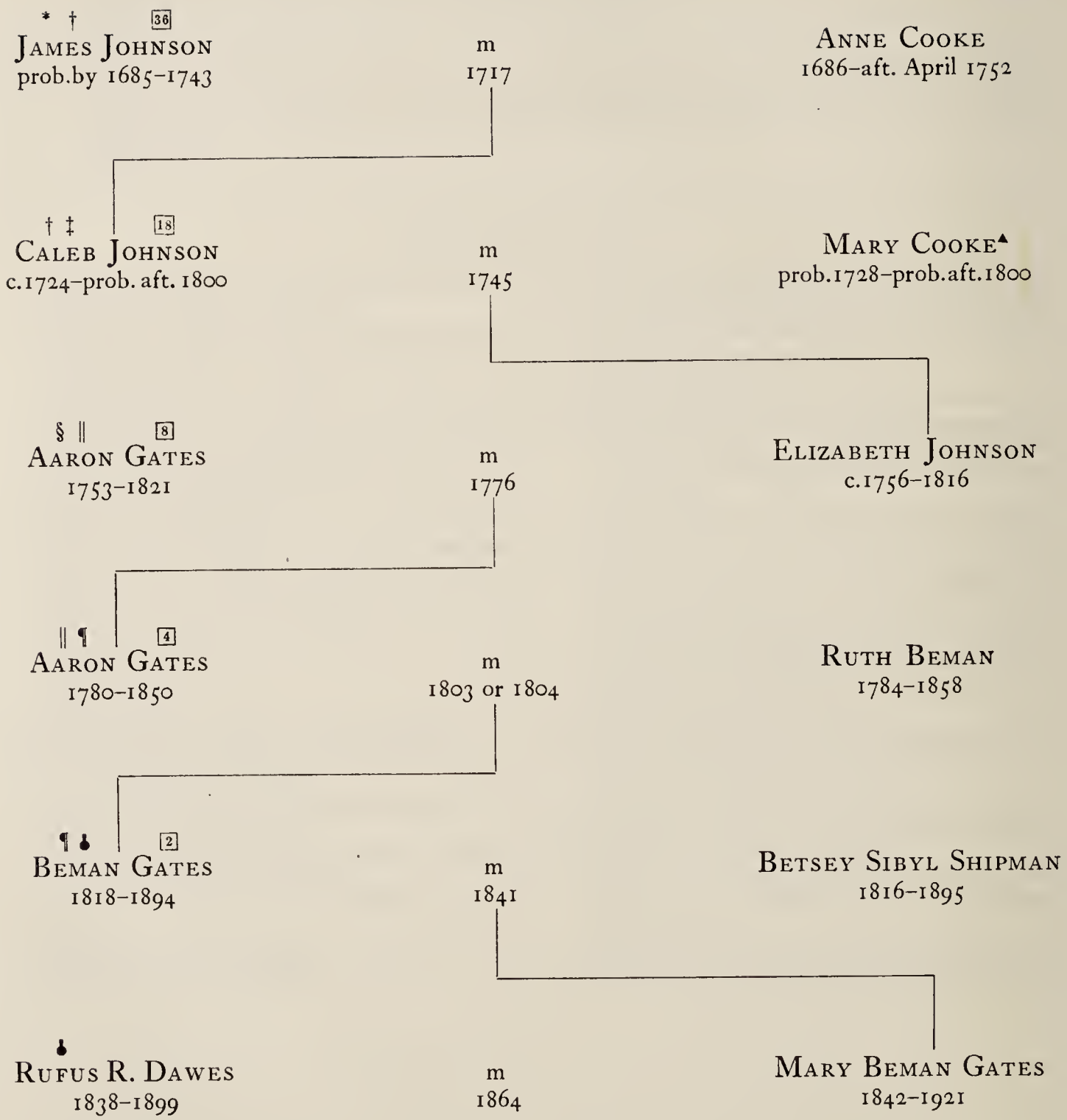
VII. Mary[3], b. 1681; d. March 16, 1763, at East Haddam; m. there,[16, 19] February 5, 1702, Stephen[2] Cone (DANIEL[1]).

VIII. Esther[3], probably she who received a bequest[24] by the will of Nathaniel[2] Ackley (NICHOLAS[1]). She is said to have married [probably about 1710–1] Samuel[2] Gates (GEORGE[1]).[28] If so, she was born about 1687 for his wife d. May 15, 1749, in her 62nd year.[15]

REFERENCES

1. Historical Notices of Hartford, Conn., W. S. Porter, No. 1, pp. 10, 19, 21, 24.
1a. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 86, 194, 378, 400.
2. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 247, 351.
2a. THOMAS HUNGERFORD and Some of His Descendants, F. P. Leach, 1924, pp. 4–8.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 110.
4. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, p. 46 and map opposite.
5. History of New London, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1852, pp. 68–9, 75, 86, 152, 157, 281.
6. History of New London County, Conn., D. H. Hurd, 1882, pp. 139, 145, 149, 153.
7. Savage, II, 498.
8. John Leigh and His Descendants, W. Lee, 1888, pp. 75–6, 83–5.
9. Pope's Pioneers, p. 282.
10. Hall Family, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 213–6.
10a. The Old Chimney Stacks of East Haddam, Conn., H. B. Niles, 1887, pp. 58–9.
11. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 211.
12. First Settlers of Connecticut and Massachusetts, N. Goodwin, 1856, pp. 201–2, 204.
13. Sterling Genealogy, A. M. Sterling, 1909, I, 361.
14. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 238.
15. New England Register, XI, 274, 277; LXXX, 417.
16. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 13, 161, 276.
17. Descendants of Matthew Smith, of East Haddam, S. S. Martin, 1890, pp. 6–7.
18. Family Records.
19. Hall Family, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, p. 200.
20. Historical Sketch of the First Congregational Church in Haddam, Conn., E. E. Lewis, 1879, p. 15; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 318, 374.
21. Isaac Willey and His Descendants, H. Willey, 1888, p. 3.
22. Church Genealogy, E. A. Emens, 1920, p. 20; Simeon Church and his Descendants, C. W. Church, 1914, p. 13.
23. Commemorative Biographical Record of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Beers & Co., 1901, p. 175.
24. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 144.
25. Harvey Book, O. J. Harvey, 1899, pp. 63–4.
26. Historical Catalogue of the First Church in Hartford, Conn., 1885, p. 14.
27. Connecticut Magazine, X, 1906, p. 184.
28. Genealogical History of the County of Jefferson, N. Y., R. A. Oakes, 1905, I, 24.
29. Narragansett Historical Register, 1882–3, I, 146; Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 444, 446.
30. New York Record, LII, 89; Austin's Rhode Island Dictionary, p. 168; Goodwin's Notes, 1856, p. 201.

JOHNSON



* Plymouth, Mass.
† Middletown, Chatham, East Hampton, Conn.
‡ Burlington, Otsego Co., N. Y.
§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ East Hartland, Conn.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.
▲ See Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–6.

JOHNSON*

JAMES[1] JOHNSON,† born probably in England about 1685, was married[1a, 5] in Plymouth, on February 6, 1716–7, to ANNE[4] COOKE [see Cooke, p. 255]. The only land in Plymouth to which he laid any claim was that which came to him through his wife, thus arguing his late arrival. The family doubtless resided for some time in Plymouth, but before January 18, 1723–4, they removed to the Connecticut Valley, as did a number of others at various times from that section[11] and from Cape Cod. In this new locality JAMES[1] must have settled first at Lebanon, for a deed of the last-named date, by which he acquired land[4c] in Middletown, called him "of Lebanon"; but his residence there must have been of short duration, since neither vital nor land records show his name[6] and by September 3, 1726, he was already a resident of Middletown,[4c, 6] where the rest of his life was spent, though in the portion later called both Chatham township and East Hampton parish [see map on p. 195]. In September, 1726, he and his wife, in whose right certain other land had been acquired, deeded[6, 17] to John[4] Cooke, her brother, all their right in the estate of Caleb[4] Cooke, a deceased brother, which property had earlier belonged to CALEB[3] COOKE, their father. The new

*This chapter will present a summary of the evidence which has been assembled from many remote sources to establish the parentage of ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES and to correct an error of long standing. The loss by fire of the birth and baptismal records which would have shown her identity has necessitated the reconstruction of this family by an exhaustive search for indirect, or secondary evidence. It is obvious in this connection that in some cases a casual reference to a name or fact is more weighty than a direct statement for it implies familiar knowledge on the part of the writer and often suggests familiarity also on the part of the person addressed.

Study by the compiler over a period of years, covering many different Johnson families in New England, especially in Connecticut, has eliminated most of these, and has, in direct ratio, developed a theory, and following that a conviction of its truth which has continuously and consistently grown stronger without negative indication. Since it is possible to include in a brief review, such as this must be, only a mere fraction of the evidence contributing to this conclusion it has seemed best to submit a vastly fuller summary with its verifying documents to a number of the foremost genealogists in the country. This has resulted in every case, in an unqualified approval and an acceptance of the conclusions as having been proved beyond reasonable doubt. Moreover, the Mayflower Society has accepted this line of descent as correct. Therefore, it is herein stated as a proved fact.

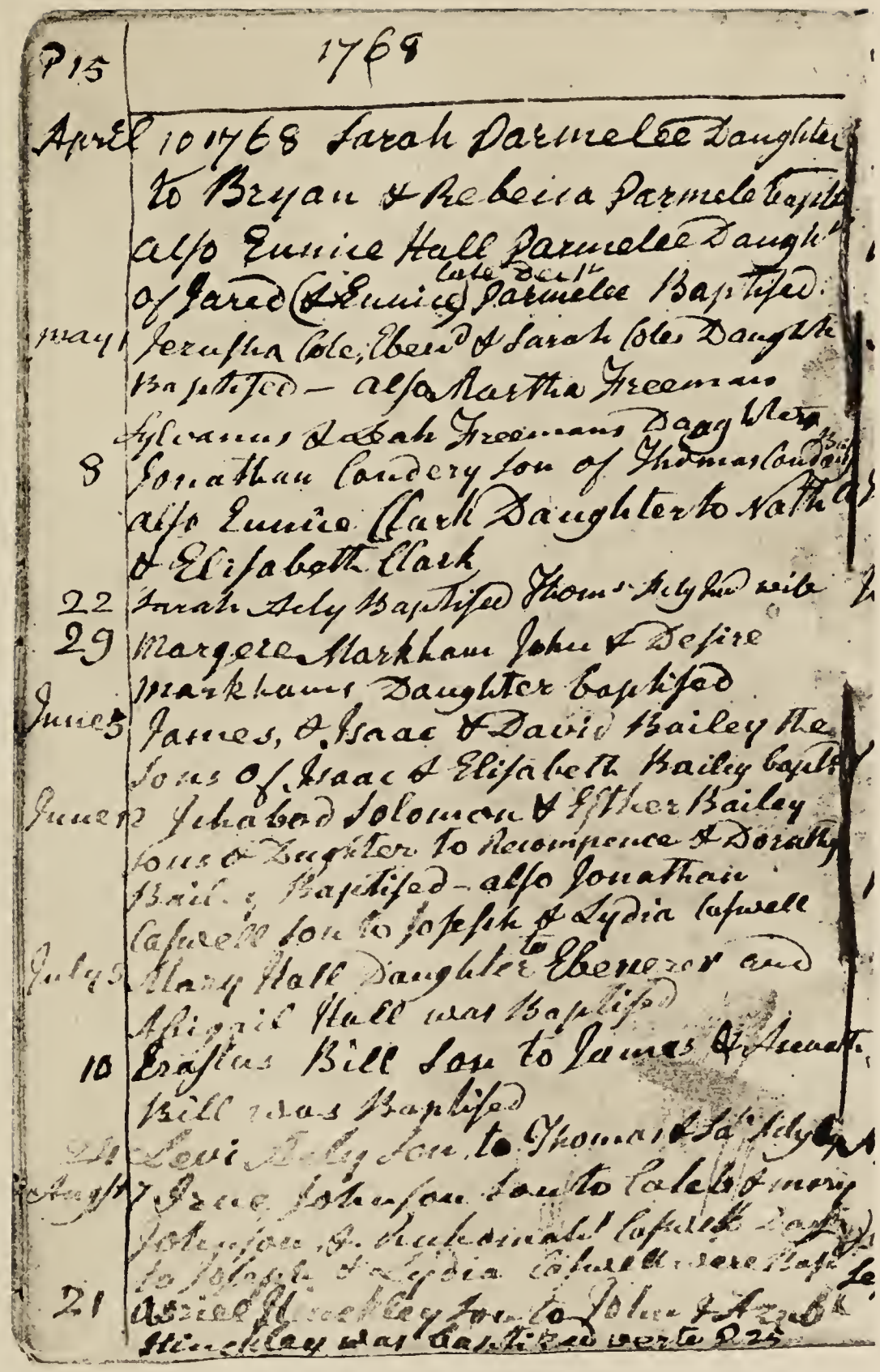
†A question seems pertinent as to whether there may not have been a relationship between Robert Johnson a tailor, [probably also an emigrant] who married[5, 12] at Plymouth, on October 27, 1715, Elizabeth[4] Cooke (CALEB[3], JACOB[2], FRANCIS[1]), and this JAMES[1] JOHNSON who about a year later married that girl's sister ANNE[4] COOKE. Robert and his wife removed permanently to North Yarmouth, Maine.[13]

owner willed this tract, in 1741, to his daughter Mercy (Cooke) Hodges. JAMES[1] JOHNSON bought and sold a number of pieces of land on the east side of the river and in some of these transactions Benjamin Harris* was associated with him.[4d] On December 6, 1726, the court appointed[14] Joseph Frary, Comfort Davis and JAMES[1] JOHNSON of Middletown, or any two of them, to distribute the land of the long-deceased William[1] Cornwell of that place to his three sons or their heirs, and the first two named men performed this service. Anne[2] Johnson, daughter of JAMES[1], later married Elisha[4] Cornwell.

An interesting item relative to conditions of long ago refers to local mineral deposits and to the easy acquirement of control thereof. There was a "Great Hill" about two miles back from the Connecticut River, lying partly in Chatham and partly in Portland, and therefore very near to the Johnson home. For more than a century it was a mystery to the inhabitants and was referred to as "The Governor's Ring." The story is that Gov. John Winthrop used to go to this "Great Hill" with a servant and remain for two or three weeks at a time. When he returned to New London he would bring back one and sometimes several gold rings made, as everyone supposed, from gold obtained from the hill. Color is given to this story by the fact that on May 25, 1661, Middletown granted to him "for ye encouragement of ye designs" and "for the discovery of mines & mineralls & for ye setting up of such works as shall be needfull for ye improvement of them . . . any profitable mines or mineralls yt he shall finde or discover . . . to ye value of 500 or 1000 acres," under condition that he announce acceptance thereof within two years and begin operations within five years.[9] At a later period lead was mined there in considerable quantities and was largely exported to England, but during the Revolution this industry was taken over by the state and the output was delivered violently to the British soldiers in the form of bullets.[9]

In the early days shad and salmon were plentiful in the Connecticut River. "It hardly seems possible now, that there was a time when salmon were so common that it was customary in one or another of the river towns, especially

*Benjamin Harris [1700–1775], of Bridgewater, Massachusetts, and of Middletown, Connecticut, was[14] uncle to Jane (Harris) Johnson [daughter-in-law of JAMES[1] JOHNSON]; was a member of the family into which Jane[4] Cooke [sister-in-law of JAMES[1] JOHNSON] married; in 1743 was witness[7] to the will, and took the inventory, of JAMES[1] JOHNSON; and was appointed at town-meeting on August 13, 1753, by the selectmen of Middletown to act for the succeeding two years as overseer to Hamlin John Hall [aged 31, but injudicious in business], who is by some students believed[15] to have married Elizabeth[2] Johnson, youngest daughter of JAMES[1] JOHNSON. Other evidence suggesting a close relationship between the said Hall and this Johnson family is the fact that, after the close of Benjamin Harris' term as overseer [or financial adviser whose signature was necessary to validate a deed by Hall as grantor], he was succeeded by Elisha Cornwell, who had married another daughter in this Johnson family [see p. 491].

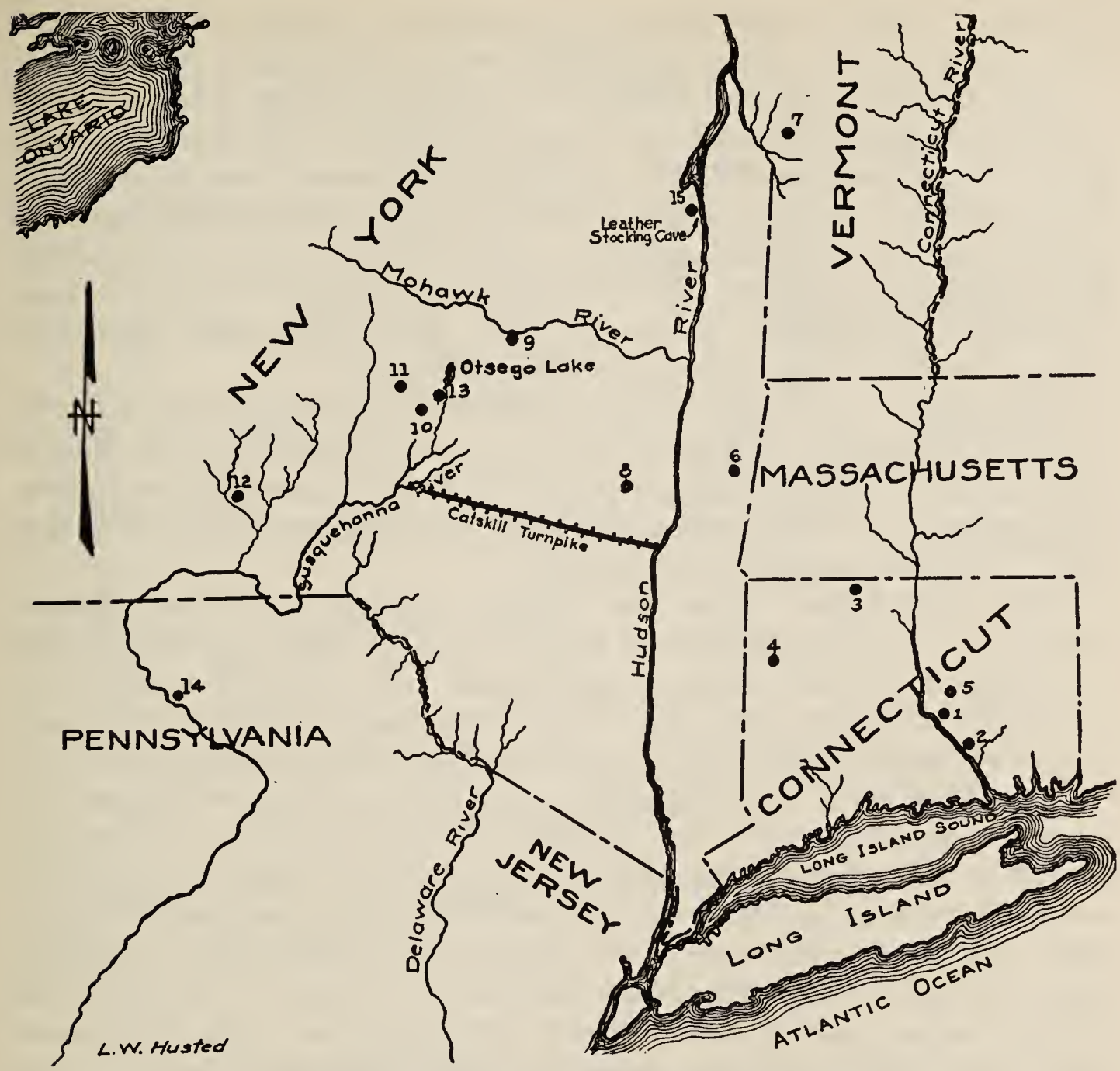


P15 1768

April 10 1768 Sarah Parmelee Daughter
to Bryan & Rebecca Parmele Baptis
also Eunice Hall Parmelee Daught
of Jared (late Decd) & Eunice Parmelee Baptised.
may 1 Jerusha Cole, Ebenezer & Sarah Coles Daughters
Baptised — also Martha Freeman
Sylvanus & Sarah Freemans Daughter
8 Jonathan Condery son of Thomas Condery Bap
also Eunice Clark Daughter to Nath
& Elisabeth Clark
22 Sarah Ely Baptised Thomas Ely Jun wife
29 Margere Markham John & Desire
Markhams Daughter baptised
June 5 James, & Isaac & David Bailey the
sons of Isaac & Elisabeth Bailey bapti
June 12 Jehabod Solomon & Esther Bailey
sons & Daughter to Recompence & Dorothy
Bailey Baptised — also Jonathan
Caswell son to Joseph & Lydia Caswell
July 3 Mary Hall Daughter to Ebenezer and
Abigail Hall was Baptised
10 Erastus Bill son to James & Hannah
Bill was Baptised
24 Levi Ely son to Thomas & Sarah Ely
Augst 7 Irue Johnson son to Caleb & mary
Johnson & Cuhedinah Caswell Daughter
to Joseph & Lydia Caswell were Bapti
21 Asiel Huntley son to John & Azubah
Huntley was Baptised vere 25

FACSIMILE OF PAGE 15 OF THE EAST HAMPTON, CONN., CHURCH BAPTISMAL RECORD, DEPOSITED WITH THE CONNECTICUT HISTORICAL SOCIETY

The published copy thereof erroneously reproduces the first word in the fifth line from the bottom changing "*Irue* Johnson, son to Caleb & Mary Johnson" to "*Isaac*." The occurrence of "Isaac" twice in the middle of the page makes differentiation certain [see page 498].



MIGRATIONS OF THE ACKLEY AND JOHNSON FAMILIES FROM CONNECTICUT WEST AND NORTH

[See also map on p. 489]

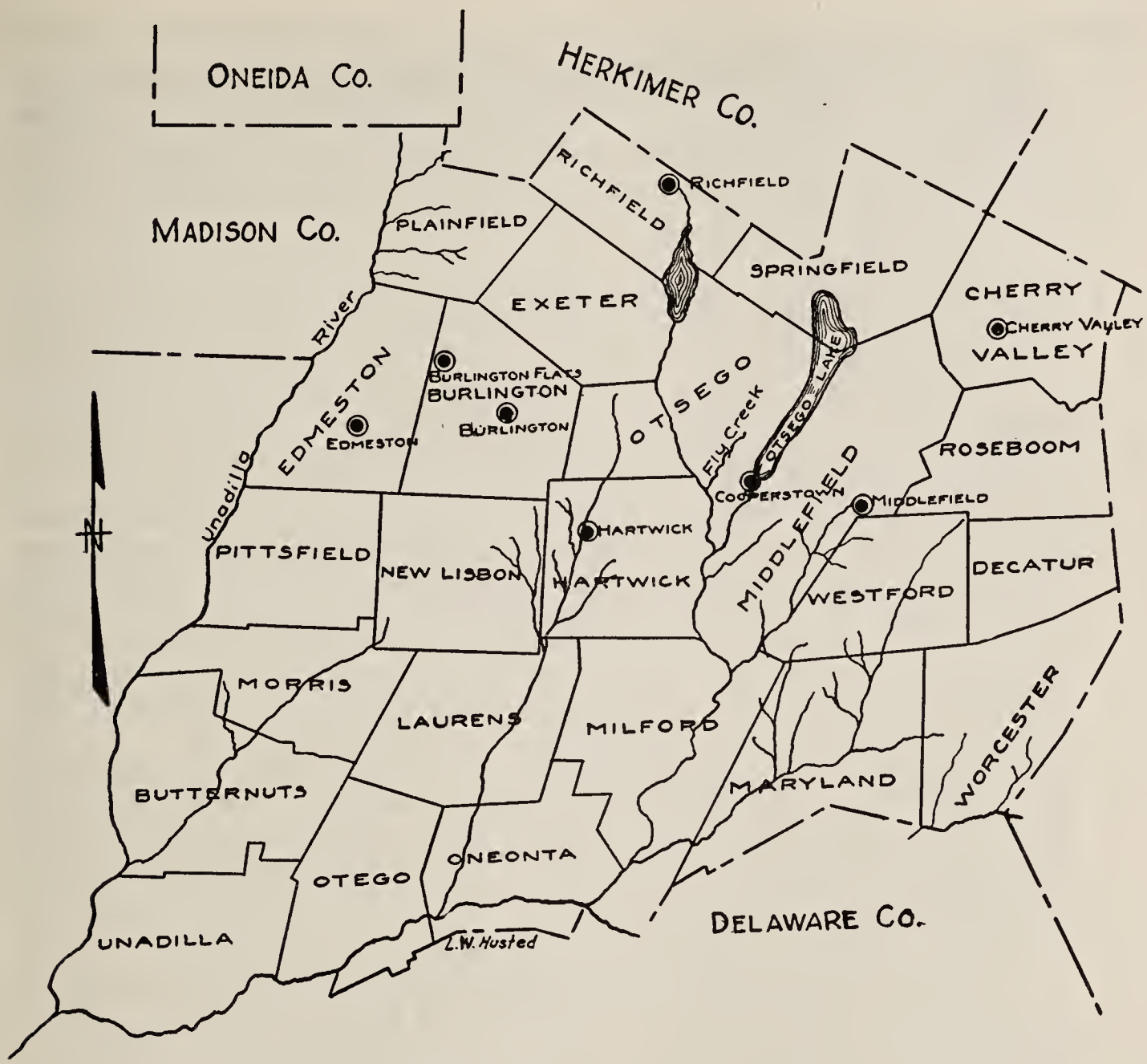
1. East Hampton, Conn.
2. East Haddam, Conn.
3. East Hartland, Conn.
4. Kent and Washington, Conn.
5. Marlborough, Conn.
6. Canaan, N. Y.
7. Castleton, Vt.
8. Freehold, N. Y.
9. Canajoharie, N. Y.
10. Hartwick, N. Y.
11. Burlington, N. Y.
12. Lisle and Triangle, N. Y.
13. Cooperstown, N. Y.
14. Wyalusing, Pa.
15. Glens Falls, N. Y., and Leather Stocking Cave

in Hartford, when an apprentice was indentured, to demand that he should not be given salmon oftener than a specified number of times a week."[9]

ANNE (COOKE) JOHNSON received[12] a bequest of thirty pounds by her father's will, dated February 10, 1721, while the will of her mother, widow JANE (——) COOKE, dated April 8, 1736, gave five pounds "unto my daughter ANNE JOHNSON the wife of JAMES JOHNSON late of Midleton in the Colony of Connecticut in new england, husbandman." The phrase "late of Midleton" was evidently used because the family resided in the portion which had been set off from Middletown and named East Middletown, later designated variously as Chatham, Portland and East Hampton.

In September, 1733, ANNE (COOKE) JOHNSON owned the covenant[6] at the Portland Congregational Church [which had been formed[16] as East Middletown Parish in 1714 and organized as a church in 1721], probably as a necessary preliminary to the baptism of her five older children, who received that rite[4, 6, 18] there on September 26, 1733.

A tract called the "Three Mile Division" was granted by the General Court[2] in 1683 to the Middletown proprietors. Lots 146, 147 and 148 of that tract, containing 148 acres, were purchased[4a, 4d] by JAMES[1] JOHNSON, who, by deed of November 3, 1741, gave[4a] to his married son John[2] Johnson, as a part of the grantee's portion of the grantor's estate, the major part of lot 148. This son John[2] died[6] at Chatham [evidently[4] without issue] on February 18, 1743, and presumably from an epidemic, for exactly one month later, on March 18, his father and youngest brother died also. JAMES[1] had made his will on March 14, four days before his death, and in it he provided for his wife who, with the eldest living son, was designated as executor. He divided his lands among his three sons, though the death of Joseph[2], on the day of his father's demise, caused his share to revert to the two surviving sons, James[2] and CALEB[2]. JAMES[1] gave £40 apiece to his two daughters and specified that all the movable estate of his deceased son John[2] should go to that man's widow. This kindly intention was carried out and supplemented over a period of years by the sons James[2] and CALEB[2], as well as by their brother-in-law, Elisha[4] Cornwell, who in various land transfers[4b] preserved a life estate for this widowed sister-in-law. The inventory of the estate of JAMES[1] JOHNSON showed a valuation of £332–15–00 and was taken by Philip Goff, Benjamin Harris [see note, p. 486] and Benjamin Smith, who was called "cousin" by Mercy (Maker) Johnson [abovesaid daughter-in-law of JAMES[1] JOHNSON. Smith and other members of his family were chief beneficiaries[4] of Mercy's



L.W. Husted
DETAIL OF OTSEGO COUNTY, NEW YORK,
ILLUSTRATING ACKLEY AND JOHNSON

[See also map on p. 487]

will dated February 16, 1770]. On October 4, 1743, the will of JAMES[1] was proved, and the eldest son, James[2], was then chosen as their guardian by the three other children, CALEB[2], aged nineteen, Anne[2], aged seventeen, and Elizabeth[2], aged thirteen.[7] Widow ANNE (COOKE) JOHNSON was still living on April 28, 1752, when she, with her daughter Anne[2] and son-in-law Elisha Cornwell, sold[2, 4d] to the Reverend John Norton for £800 [doubtless

depreciated currency] a part of lot 147 [in the Three Mile Division] earlier held by her husband, JAMES[1], deceased.

The children* of JAMES[1] and ANNE (COOKE) JOHNSON, of whom the first two were born probably in Plymouth and the others in Connecticut, and of whom the first five were baptized September 26, 1733, in East Middletown Parish, now Portland Church, were[4, 6, 7, 18]

I. John[2], b. about 1717–8; d. February 18, 1743, doubtless without issue;[4] m. at Cromwell,[10] November 19, 1739, Mercy Maker [probably[4] sister of James Maker, whose daughter Mercy or Mary m. Benjamin Smith and with him became chief beneficiary of the will[8] of widow Mercy (Maker) Johnson in 1770 (see p. 488)]. She joined East Hampton Church and was baptized December 3, 1769.

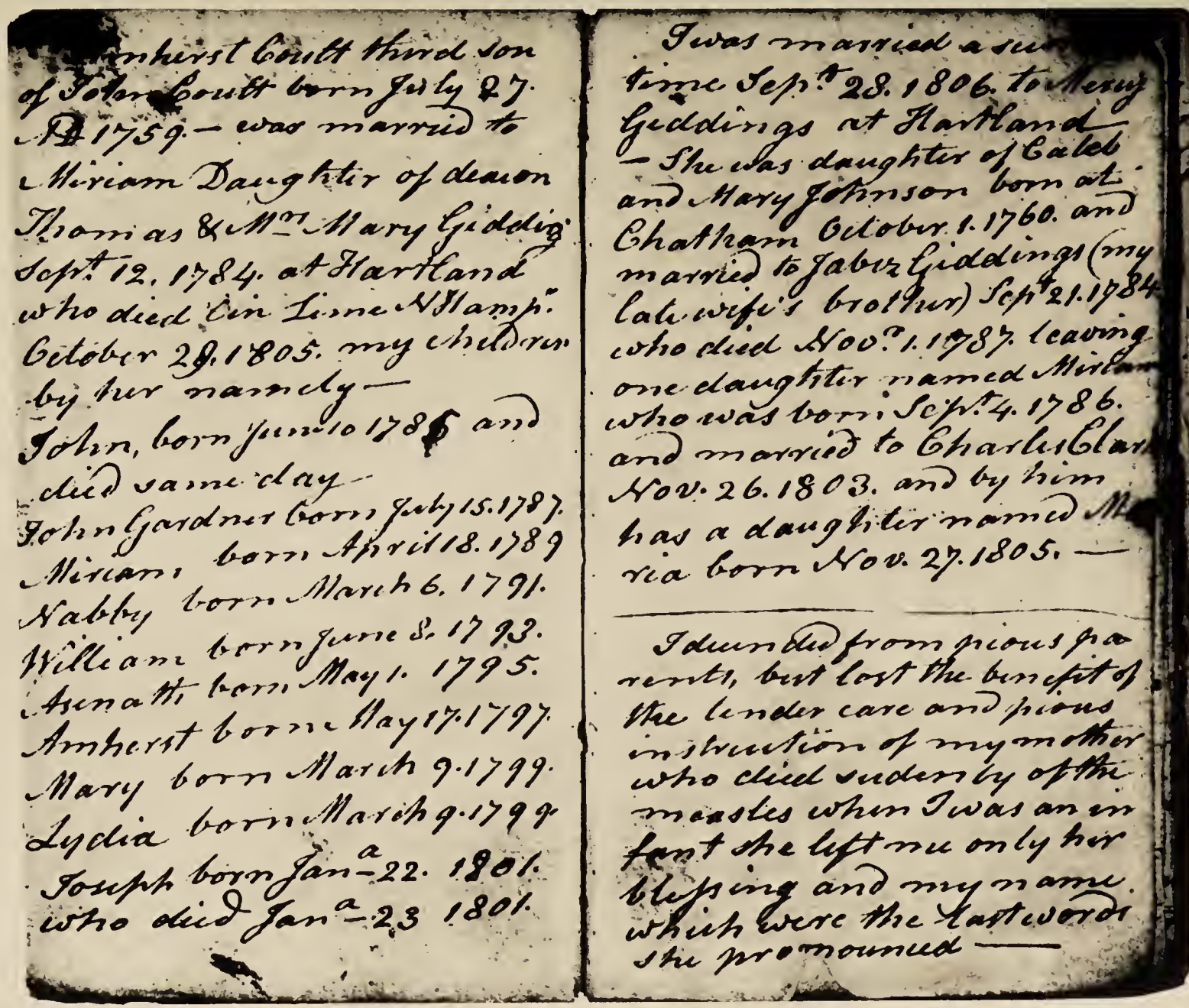
II. James[2], b. about 1718–20; d. probably between 1768 and 1771, at which times are seen, respectively, the use and the omission[2b] of the term "junior" in regard to his son James[3]. James[2] m. in Middletown April 7 or 17, 1740, his first cousin on his mother's side, Jane[4] Harris (Isaac[3], Isaac[2], Arthur[1]), who was born[21] at Bridgewater, Massachusetts, January 10, 1716, and was descended from Mary Chilton. With his mother he was executor of his father's will and was chosen as their guardian by his brother CALEB[2] and his two sisters. He was a member of the Middletown Church and, with others, signed a petition in 1743 for church services nearer his home. He was commissioned[21] an ensign in 1748. It may have been his wife who, as "widow Jane," died at East Hampton April 22, 1790. There is an unverified tradition found among various groups of his descendants to the effect that James[2] and a son of his named Isaac[3] were Tories and watched with disdain the departure of his sons John[3] and Benjamin[3] to enlist, and it is a fact that the two last named were in service during the Revolution and received pensions therefor.[41, 42] The children of James[2] and Jane (Harris) Johnson, four known and three probable, born at East Hampton, were[2b, 22]

(1) Josiah[3], b. January 16, bap. June 20, 1741.

(2) James[3], b. April 1, bap. July 28, 1743; d. December 27, 1777; m. November 18, 1767, Sarah[5] Clarke (John[4], John[3], John[2], WILLIAM[1]) and had[2b] Amasa[4], b. September 19, 1768, d. April 2, 1795; Josiah[4]; Joseph[4], bap. March 31, 1771; and Sarah[4], b. May 5, 1773.

(3) John[3], b. March 26, bap. July 20, 1746; d. May 1 or 2, 1834, at Lisle, N. Y.; m. 1st, at Chatham, Conn., November 18, 1767, Hannah Clark [daughter of Jabez and Sarah (Judd) Clark of Chatham]; m. 2nd, in New York, the widow Carter; m. 3rd at Lisle, N. Y., July 26, 1815, Clarissa (Parker) Miner Rock.

*It must be understood that the individuals hereinafter listed as descendants of JAMES[1] JOHNSON [and consequently as sharing the Mayflower descent furnished by his wife] are documentarily proved, except in the case of the two granddaughters, ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES and Ruhama (Johnson) Moses, and the preponderance of established evidence, summarized here, justifies their inclusion also. It has seemed advisable to include, in this chapter, data on collateral groups to a degree which is rarely done in this work, because so little material has hitherto been assembled relative to this particular Johnson family, and because much of that which is summarized here has been gathered by a long correspondence with aged people (resulting in sworn depositions by them, incorporating their personal knowledge); by a personal search of Otsego County graveyards and original records; and by the loan of various unrecorded (1928) deeds and contracts which, for lack of other record, have been photostated by the compiler.



Amherst Coult third son
of John Coult born July 27.
A.D. 1759. — was married to
Miriam Daughter of deacon
Thomas & Mrs Mary Gidding
Sept. 12. 1784. at Hartland
who died in Lime N Hamp.
October 29. 1805. my children
by her namely —
John, born June 10 1785 and
died same day —
John Gardner born July 15. 1787.
Miriam, born April 18. 1789
Nabby born March 6. 1791.
William born June 8. 1793.
Asenath, born May 1. 1795.
Amherst born May 17. 1797.
Mary born March 9. 1799.
Lydia born March 9. 1799
Joseph born Jan.a 22. 1801.
who died Jan.a 23 1801.

I was married a sec
time Sept. 28. 1806. to Mery
Geddings at Hartland
— She was daughter of Caleb
and Mary Johnson born at
Chatham October 1. 1760. and
married to Jabez Giddings (my
late wife's brother) Sept. 21. 1784
who died Nov. 1. 1787. leaving
one daughter named Mir
who was born Sept. 4. 1786.
and married to Charles Clar
Nov. 26. 1803. and by him
has a daughter named M
ria born Nov. 27. 1805. —

I dwindled from pious pa
rents, but lost the benefit of
the tender care and pious
instruction of my mother
who died suddenly of the
measles when I was an in
fant she left me only her
blessing and my name.
which were the last words
she pronounced —

FACSIMILE FROM THE JOURNAL KEPT BY DR. AMHERST COULT, WHICH IS NOW IN THE CUSTODY OF THE NEW HAMPSHIRE HISTORICAL SOCIETY [see page 497]

He received a pension[41] for service as captain in the Revolution. His children, ten by the first wife and two by the third, were[2b, 6] (a) Abner[4], b. May 24, 1769; m. (——) Carter; (b) John[4], b. March 30, 1771; m. Betsey Eldridge; (c) Hannah[4], b. 1772–3; d. December 18, 1796; m. 1st (——) Comstock; m. 2nd, 1791–2, Noah Dodge; (d) Isaac[4], b. August 11, 1781; d. April 6, 1868, at Lisle; m. 1806, Jerusha Frisbie; (e) Timothy[4], bap. October 16, 1781; d. 1787; (f) Jabez[4], bap. February 5, 1788; m. Betsey Thornton; (g) Cyrus[4], bap. February 5, 1788; m. 1814, Abigail Wheeler; (h) Salma or Salmon[4], bap. February 5, 1788; d. May 19, 1873; m. Daphne or Delphine Randall; (i) Charlotte[4], m. Thomas Johnson; (j) Jane[4], m. Bruce Conkling; (k) Franklin N.[4], b. 1820; m. 1848, Sophronia Rogers; (l) Clarissa[4], b. 1823; m. John Smith.

(4) perhaps an Isaac[3] (see above), who may have been[2b] the Isaac Johnson who married at East Hampton, October 16, 1783, Rebecca Cole, and had Alvah, b. 1786; Abiel, b. 1788, d. 1812; and Anna, b. 1790.

(5) Benjamin[3], b. April 16, 1755; d. September 11, 1836, at Lisle, N. Y. It may have been he who married[49] first, at Haddam, Conn., in April, 1788, "Else" Smith. He married surely a Mary or Polly Marks, b. at Stephentown, N. Y., and was married next at Triangle [then called Lisle] at the home of his brother[42] John[3], "in the early part" of February, 1832, to Clarissa Perryn [perhaps a widow], who was born about 1775 and survived him. It is a peculiar coincidence that on March 10, 1832, Benjamin[3] made a deposition relative to his brother's places of residence and his enlistment and service in the Revolution to assist that brother, John[3], in getting a pension; on November 26, 1832, John[3] made a similar deposition to assist Benjamin[3] to get a pension,[42] and on August 2, 1853, Clarissa (Parker) Miner Rock Johnson, widow of John[3], deposed to assist in getting a widow's pension for her sister-in-law, Clarissa (Perryn) Johnson, widow of Benjamin[3]. After the war Benjamin[3] left Chatham, living for a short time in Dutchess Co., N. Y., and for about ten years in Schoharie. He built a tavern at Cherry Valley in 1793 and ran it until after 1800, probably 1812, finally removing to Broome County for the remainder of his life.[25, 42] The children of Benjamin[3] by his wife Mary Marks, born in Cherry Valley and Broome County, were (a) Alvah[4], b. February 28, 1806; (b) Carlisle P.[4], b. November 20, 1808; (c) John Marks[4], b. January 7, 1811; (d) Salmon Coats[4], b. March 20, 1813; (e) Amy Ann[4], b. April 25, 1814; (f) Lucy[4], b. December 27, 1815; (g) Benjamin[4], b. March 7, 1818; (h) Sarah Ann[4], b. May 7, 1820.

(6) probably an Abner[3], for one of that name deposed[41] in 1832, with Benjamin[3], relative to the life and Revolutionary service of John[3] above, and said John[3] named his eldest son Abner. It is possible that this is the[50] Abner Johnson b. September 6, 1759; d. October 26, 1828, at Grantham, N. H.; m. February 20, 1783, at Tolland, Conn., Anna Delano; and served in the Revolution from that place. Among his children were a James, an Anna, and one named Ira, thus repeating names of the JAMES[1] JOHNSON family.

(7) probably a daughter Jane[3], who d.[2b] August 15, 1771.

III. CALEB[2], see following.

IV. Anne[2], b. about 1726 [aged seventeen[7] in October, 1743]; m. at Chatham[10] or at Middle Haddam[14] February 28, 1745, Elisha[4] Cornwell (Samuel[3], Samuel[2], William[1]) of East Hampton.[11]

v. Elizabeth[2], b. about 1730 [aged thirteen[7] in October, 1743]. By some students[1a, 15] she is believed to have married, about 1749, Hamlin John Hall, of Chatham,[11] who really did have[14] a wife Elizabeth; who named one of his sons "James"; and whose financial affairs were (1752–5), at the direction of the selectmen of Middletown, overseen first by Benjamin Harris, a man doubly related to these Johnsons [see note, p. 486], and later by Elisha[4] Cornwell, a son-in-law in that family.

vi. Joseph[2], b. after September 26, 1733, bap. September 11, 1734, at Portland Church; d. March 18, 1743, the same day as his father and just one month after his brother John[2].

CALEB[2] JOHNSON (*James*[1]) was born probably in Connecticut [see p. 485], about 1724, for on October 4, 1743, at the settlement of his father's estate he was called[7] nineteen years old. He died in old age[19, 20, 24, 28] at Burlington Flats, Otsego County, New York [see map on p. 489], probably after 1800, for an elderly man of that name, with his wife, was cited there in the census[26] of that year. He was married as of* Chatham, Connecticut,[10] on September 9, 1745, to MARY COOKE [see Addendum to this chapter, p. 505]. He received and resided upon[11] his share of his father's lands on Millers Hill[2] in Chatham [East Hampton]. With his brother James[2] he was a petitioner[16] to the General Court on April 29, 1743, for partial relief from taxation for the upkeep of the church in East Middletown Society [now Portland]. The reasons given for this request were that they lived from five to seven miles distant, that "the Rhoads we are to travel in are Rough and Bad . . ." and that, in spite of their ". . . poor circumstances . . . ," they desired to employ a minister in their own neighborhood a half of each year. This point having been gained, a second petition of October 8, 1744, and a third one of April, 1746, requested that they might be set off as an entirely separate society. In October, 1746, this was acceded to, the name "East Hampton" was chosen, and in November of 1748 the Reverend John Norton was settled over them. The records of his pastorate from 1748 to 1764 are lost, probably having been burned[2] in 1845 in the home of his daughter Eunice. This loss of baptismal records for the period covering the births of the older children of CALEB[2] JOHNSON has been the cause of a century of uncertainty as to the personnel of his family, has led to a certain misstatement [see note, p. 495], and has necessitated an unbelievable amount of research to reconstruct that family, at least in part. But little knowledge is now to be had of the details of the life of CALEB[2], other than that of his church relationship.

*This marriage was recorded at the Congregational Church of Middle Haddam,[10] for the church at Chatham (East Hampton) was not organized until 1748.

An interesting word picture of the first church building at East Hampton discloses[9] that it was very primitive. The doors opened directly into the room, without vestibule or hall, and at first square box pews were in use, with seats on all four sides, made by laying rough boards across wooden horses. The pulpit was placed on a narrow platform and was paneled and painted white. "A gallery was around three sides of the church and the choir occupied the front seats in that portion of the gallery opposite the pulpit. A pitch-pipe, used for giving the key, was the nearest approach to instrumental music. The two ends of the gallery, contained the seats for the slaves. Attached to the posts supporting the gallery which were painted blue, were sockets with drip-cups for holding the 'tallow dips,' or candles, by which the church was lighted at night. When extra light was needed the people brought candle sticks from their homes. Attending church in those days in the winter was a hardship as well as a duty, for there was no means of heating the building. Heat in a church was regarded as an un-Godly luxury for many years. The members of the congregation sat bundled up as for a sleigh ride. When the first talk of "improvements" was started, it called forth strong opposition, for anything like progress or improvements in the church savored of 'Popery' or even the works of Satan.

"But gradually changes were made. An entrance hall was partitioned off; the box pews in the middle of the church were removed and ordinary seats, with the sitters facing the minister, were substituted. And then, luxury of luxuries, two stoves were set up, one near the west and the other near the east door. In the center of the church, above the heads of the congregation, was a drum into which long lengths of stove pipe entered from the two stoves. The joints of these long pipes leaked and many a garment or head covering was ruined, till finally matters were a little improved by the placing of square pans under the leaking joints. Later still, a whale-oil chandelier was put in and then the members began to make their pews more comfortable with cushions on the seats and carpets on the floor.

"But it remained for the pretty, vivacious young wife of the Reverend Joel West to cause the sensation of East Hampton, for not only was she brought to her future home [in 1794] in a carriage, the first seen in East Hampton, but she had the first carpet ever seen in any home of the village. Tradition has it, from the memory of an old resident of the charming village, that when Deacon Bill had occasion to call at the parsonage, he walked around the edges of the carpet so as not to step upon so beautiful a thing."[9]

Of course, the life of CALEB[2] and his family was full of care and anxiety during the Revolutionary period. At least two of his sons, John[3] [called "junior" because his cousin John[3] (James[2], JAMES[1]), already in service, was a few years older] and Joseph[3], were in service, the first for seven years and the second for five or more years, as their pensions[43, 44] show. Middletown vicinity suffered[9] in a business way more heavily and at an earlier date than any other inland New England town. It was the principal shipping port between Boston and New York and its commerce was almost entirely foreign, or at least maritime, so that the news of the closing of the port of Boston by the English in 1774 especially stirred and alarmed the people of Middletown. This act really intensified their patriotism and they deliberately closed their port. After the Assembly at Hartford had passed resolutions condemning the "unrighteous" British act, there were more than five hundred of the citizens of Middletown who, on June 15, 1774, endorsed these resolutions and pledged their means and their lives for the defense of the rights of "the British Americans," the colonists. When word came of the Battle of Lexington, two companies were enlisted from Middletown, and one was enlisted from Chatham under Capt. Silas Dunham, and they immediately marched to Boston.[9]

After the Revolution the Johnson family, in common with many others, began to move gradually westward. The homestead in Connecticut was left, about 1790–2, in the possession of the eldest son,[19] John[3],* who spent his life on it. The older daughter ELIZABETH[3] had removed 1780–4 to East Hartland with her husband, AARON[5] GATES; the daughter Mercy[3], having probably visited ELIZABETH[3], married an East Hartland man and removed there, as did also the daughter Ruhama[3]; and in 1790–2 the four younger sons removed to Otsego County, New York [see map on p. 487], taking with them their parents, CALEB[2] and MARY. Testimony is given[19, 20, 27, 28] by four† descendants in as many different lines [and in two cases in the form of affidavits] to the effect that CALEB[2] and MARY died in old age at Burlington Flats, New York,‡ and were buried on the Johnson farm. The hilltop site of this early

* A peculiar interrelation existed between two of the daughters-in-law of CALEB[2], for this John[3], his eldest son, married first, Lois[5] Brainerd, a daughter of Othniel[4] Brainerd by his first wife, and the second son of CALEB[2], Joseph[3], married Jerusha Kilborn, a stepdaughter brought to Othniel by his second wife, the widow Jerusha (Shalor) Kilborn[29] [also spelled Kilbourn].

† These were, in addition to Mrs. Hinds,[27] [p. 495, born, reared and resident in Burlington Flats], Adelaide (Johnson) Plumstead[19] [born, brought up and resident in East Haddam, Conn.]; Julius[6] Johnson[20] [born, brought up and resident in Chenango County, N. Y.]; and Mary (Johnson) Ray[28] [born in Pitcher and resident in Norwich, N. Y.].

‡ A strange coincidence is found among the residents of Burlington, for, in addition to our group of Johnsons, including Elisha[3], Iru[3] and Eri[5], there was contemporaneously another Johnson family, said to have been entirely

family burying-ground is pointed out [1928] by Mrs. Medora M. (Johnson) Hinds,[27] to whom the old farm has come by inheritance, though no markers or gravestones now exist.

Among other relatives two and probably three nephews of CALEB[2] settled in New York, first in the vicinity of Sharon and Cherry Valley and later in what is now Broome County; they were John[3] and Benjamin[3], sons of James[2] (JAMES[1]) and a presumed brother Abner[3] of theirs.

The children of CALEB[2] and MARY (COOKE) JOHNSON, all born in East Hampton (Chatham) were[2a, 19, 20, 27, 28, 29, 30, 35]

I. John[3], b. 1746–50 [probably 1748]; d. June 28, 1842, aged eighty-four by his gravestone, but more correctly called ninety-four by a church record,[2a] by contemporaneous newspapers[29] and by various descendants.[19, 20, 35] He married[2a] first, Lois[5] Brainerd (Othniel[4], Abijah[3], James[2], DANIEL[1]); married secondly, June 16 or 26, 1836, Mary (Cole) Bailey. At the time of this marriage a bit of doggerel was printed, calling attention[29] to the combined ages of his wife and himself as one hundred sixty-three years, and this also verifies his age at death as ninety-four. He served in the Revolution and his widow drew a pension.[43] Two of his seven children[29] removed in adult life to Burlington Flats, whither their grandparents, uncles and cousins had preceded them. These two were the eldest,[40] Phebe[4], b. January 28, 1772; d. January 2, 1873; m., 1788, Elijah Hubbard; and the youngest, Enos[4], b. March 21, 1786; d. November 1, 1868; m. 1811, Anna Parmalee. Enos[4] had[20] a grandson Julius[6] and a great grandson Enos[7], who have contributed certain facts[20] toward this compilation.

II. Joseph[3], b. 1750; d. after November 23, 1833, as shown by his pension papers.[44] He married,[39] probably before[2a] 1780, Jerusha[5] Kilbourn (Samuel[4], Thomas[3], John[2], THOMAS[1]), and was listed in the census[26] as resident at Chatham, Connecticut, in 1790 and at Burlington, New York, in 1810, 1820 and 1830. His known children, born in East Hampton, Connecticut, were[2a] (1) Timothy Kilbourn[4], 1781; (2) Molly[4], 1783; (3) Martin[4], 1785.

III. Mary[3], m. (——) Cone;[19, 28, 35] doubtless she was the "Molly" who m.[2a] July 1, 1779, Jedediah Cone.

IV. ELIZABETH[3],* b. about 1756; d. of dropsy at East Hartland, August 2, 1816, aged

---

unrelated,[31] bearing the names Elisha, Ira and Eli. During their lives their identities and affairs were so frequently confused that Iru[5] (Dyar C.[4], Iru[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]) assumed a middle initial "C." But the will of Iru[3] has, unfortunately, even been recorded and indexed at Cooperstown under the name of "Ira" and only an examination[33] of the original document filed there disclosed the true spelling.

*The parentage of ELIZABETH[3] JOHNSON has been deeply hidden, first by the loss[2] of the church records of East Hampton prior to 1764 [covering the time of her birth and that of one or more other children of CALEB[2]], and secondly by a certain statement, undoubtedly erroneous but repeated often enough through the succeeding years to cause much misapprehension. This [now questioned] statement was incorporated by the truly excellent genealogist, Mr. D. Williams Patterson, in his manuscript records of East Haddam[3] [where Deacon AARON[5] GATES lived when he married ELIZABETH[3]] and was to the effect that our ELIZABETH[3] was the daughter of a couple called "John and Betty Johnson." It was Mr. Patterson's habit to write in red ink, material gathered from other sources than the East Haddam town or church records, in order to incorporate it with, yet differentiate it from, the public records. He thus indicated that the items relative to the marriage of ELIZABETH[3] JOHNSON and the

sixty years.[1, 3] She was called "of East Hampton" when she married,[1, 3, 3a] May 9, 1776, AARON[5] GATES [see Gates, p. 22]. She shared the common sorrow of women in war time, for that same month her husband joined the company of East Haddam minute men[34] commanded by Eliphalet Holmes and left her a prey to anxiety for his safety. It seems probable that she lived in East Haddam with her husband's people during the absence in service of AARON[5] and of his two brothers. A few years after his return he and his family, with a number of other families of East Haddam vicinity, removed to East Hartland, Connecticut [see map on p. 487]. Deep significance is seen in the following facts linking this woman into this Johnson family: (a) ELIZABETH[3], called "of East Hampton," was, after her

parentage which he stated for her had come to him from outside [but unnamed] sources. Our reasons, both positive and negative, for disbelief in this statement will follow. Repeated search[4] by Mr. F. F. Starr, a most reliable genealogist, who has spent more than fifty years in study and accumulation of records in Middletown and contiguous territory [including East Hampton and Chatham], has developed no evidence that a couple called John and Betty Johnson *ever* lived at East Hampton, or that there was any John Johnson living in that general vicinity who by his age could have been the father of ELIZABETH. Of course it is *possible*, but it is not *probable*, that such a man could have lived there and yet have left absolutely no record. As to the source of Mr. Patterson's information which caused him to record this suggested parentage, it should be explained that there is in the hands of the compiler a voluminous correspondence[1] which was carried on between BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES and many relatives [both her's and her husband's], as well as with several contemporaneous eastern genealogists, including Mr. H. F. Waters and the above-named Mr. Patterson. Some of these letters, dated as early as 1858, and others as late as 1879, written in the hand of Mr. Patterson, show that he solicited and relied upon statements from various living members of the Gates family to supplement the facts which he had gleaned from East Haddam records relative to the earlier generations of that family. One of these descendants then living was John[6] Gates [uncle of BEMAN[7] GATES] who, even as late as 1878, at the age of eighty-three, dictated a letter to be sent to BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, in which this same general statement was incorporated, that a John Johnson was the father of our ELIZABETH[3]. It seems highly probable that this John[6] Gates was the authority also for Mr. Patterson's similar statement, since in their day none other than these two authorities voiced it. The several factors which, combined, make it permissible to ignore both Mr. Gates's and Mr. Patterson's statements include these: *no slightest* documentary evidence upholds Mr. Patterson; and, relative to Mr. Gates, (a) the possibility of forgetfulness in one of his age; (b) a younger hand [apparently that of a grandchild of his] wrote at least a part, and perhaps all, of the above-mentioned letter to his niece; (c) several statements found therein have been proved to be erroneous; (d) finally, D. N. Gaines[37] [born 1854], who from his youth has fairly haunted the elderly people of East Hartland,[37] including John[6] Gates (1795–1883) [questioning them about their ancestry and memories], received from John[6] no information as to the identity of (—) JOHNSON, father of his own mother, ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES. Neither has Mr. Gaines, in the course of his acquaintance of upwards of seventy years with the town of East Hartland and its people, learned of any early local Johnson families. This omission of any such mention by John[6] Gates throughout the many years of his acquaintance with Mr. Gaines, seems fully to offset in weight the more incidental statement made by John[6] at a time when he was aged and undoubtedly forcing his memory to activity, to the effect that a John Johnson was the father of his mother, ELIZABETH[3]. But more direct and compelling evidence is a penciled note lately discovered, written in the hand of the above BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES under the heading of "Things I want to remember" which reads "Uncle Henry Gates says the Johnsons lived in Chatham & East Haddam. Mollie Johnson married Noadiah Cone. There was an Ira Johnson." This "Uncle Henry" was Henry[6] Gates (1777–1860), uncle to BEMAN[7] GATES, husband of the scribe; was eldest brother of the quoted John[6] Gates and eldest child of ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES. And his identification of "the Johnsons," (which phrase would naturally refer to his mother's near kin), as including Mollie Johnson who married a Cone [actually Jedidiah rather than Noadiah] and an "Ira" [as "Iru" was so frequently written] merely adds weight to the identity of ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES as previously established by the compiler. It may be said, negatively, that, aside from this unprovable[4] suggestion by Mr. Patterson [who doubtless acquired it from John[6]], there has been found *no iota* of evidence against the origin herewith claimed for ELIZABETH[3] JOHNSON. This slight negative evidence is many times outweighed by the cumulative positive evidence, upholding by a preponderance of far-reaching circumstances [and by documentary proof of most of the relationships] this accepted parentage of our ELIZABETH[3].

removal to East Hartland about 1780–4, followed to that town by two other Johnson girls, [Mercy[3] and Ruhama[3]], her sisters and also "of East Hampton," who had married at the latter place two men resident in East Hartland [halfway across the state from their home], thus suggesting that they had met their future husbands while visiting ELIZABETH[3]; (b) following the death in 1787 of one of these two husbands [namely, "Jabez Giddings," husband of Mercy[3] Johnson], ELIZABETH[3] named her next child, born in 1789, "Jabez Giddings" Gates, though none of her other children had a middle name, and neither of these particular names had appeared previously in the Johnson or Gates families. Similarly, at a later date, Harris[3] Johnson, proved brother to Mercy[3], though resident then in Central New York, named a son of his "Jabez Giddings" Johnson. Moreover, this Harris[3] exemplified a second time the family tendency to repeat names of deceased relatives when he named a daughter Ruhama[4] [see p. 498]. Another bit of evidence is seen in the statement of D. N. Gaines,[37] of East Hartland, that "The Giddings and Gates families always claimed relationship."

v. Ruhama[3] [sometimes printed[10] "Anna" and even[10a] "Amy"], who married[2a] at East Hampton, May 15, 1787, Abner[6] Moses (Abel[5], Caleb[4], John[3], John[2], John[1]) of East Hartland,[38] to which town ELIZABETH[3], had previously removed. After a few years' residence in that place they started in May, 1800, for Ohio, but Ruhama[3] died on the way.[38] Harris[3] [certainly a brother in this family] gave to a daughter born to him in October, 1800, this unusual name "Ruhama," as shown by old family records,[24] as though wishing to memorialize a loved and deceased sister [see p. 498, note on p. 504].

vi. Mercy[3], b.[30, 37] October 1, 1760; m. first at East Hampton,[2a, 30, 37] September 20, 1784, Jabez[5] Giddings (Thomas[4], Thomas[3], John[2], George[1]) of East Hartland, whither ELIZABETH[3], her sister, had earlier removed. Jabez died there November 1, 1787, leaving his widow and an only child, Miriam, b. 1786. On September 28, 1806, at East Hartland, widow Mercy married secondly,[30] Dr. Amherst[5] Coult (John[4], Benjamin[3], John[2], John[1]), the widower of Miriam[5] Giddings, her first husband's sister. They removed to Auburn (Chester), New Hampshire, and it is by means of a manuscript journal or diary [see plate xx p. 490] kept by Dr. Coult, and now deposited in the vaults of the Historical Society of that state, that the parentage of Mercy[3] Johnson, his second wife, is proved.

vii. Elisha[3], b. December 13, 1764, bap.[2a] May 19, 1765; d. intestate[33] before December 5, 1820, at Burlington Flats, New York, to which place he had removed about 1790–2 with his parents and three brothers. He was listed in the census[26] of that place in 1800, 1810 and 1820. He married[40] Olive Hubbard, daughter of John and Anna Hubbard of Chatham, Connecticut, and of Burlington, New York. Olive's brother Elijah became the husband[29, 40] of her niece (by marriage) Phebe[4] Johnson (John[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]). The inventory of the estate of Elisha[3] was filed[23] in June, 1820, by Iru Johnson, undoubtedly his son, and one of the appraisers was Enos[4] Johnson (John[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]), nephew of the deceased. The inventory included[33] notes against Harris[3] Johnson and *Jabez G.*[4] Johnson, brother and nephew respectively to the deceased. The children of Elisha[3] and Olive (Hubbard) Johnson, born probably in New York and in unknown order, were[27] (1) Alfred[4], living 1828, m. Sally (——); (2) Irene[4], b. April 23, 1797; d. November 22, 1866; m. April 18, 1816, Silas Huntington;[45] (3) Caleb[4], living 1822; m. Olive (——); (4)

Danford[4], living 1828; m. Polly (——); (5) Anna[4], d. between 1822 and 1828; m. Stephen Rogers; (6) John[4], living 1822; (7) Delana[4], b. after 1800, living 1835; m. between April, 1821, and October, 1822, Cyrus C. Elster; undoubtedly (8) Iru[4], who married Mary (——). The widow Olive died after June 2, 1828.

VIII. Iru[3], Doubtless he was the "son" born[2a] April 9, 1767, and certainly he was baptized[2a] as "Irue" at East Hampton, August 7, 1768, as is shown by an examination[6] of the original record [filed with the Connecticut Historical Society—see plate XIX p. 486] though his odd name has apparently been misread as "Isa." This is presumed to have been interpreted as an abbreviation, since in the published record[2a] it was lengthened into "Isaac." Iru[3] died February 20, 1859, and his gravestone[27, 33] in Burlington Flats Cemetery calls him ninety-three years old, though his will, dated April 5, 1855 [and erroneously[33] recorded and indexed in Otsego County under the spelling "Ira"], called him eighty-eight. He married[10, 24] February 23, 1791, Mary Rollo, who died January 17, 1842, in her seventy-third year. In 1790–2 he removed[19, 25, 27, 28] to New York, as did also his parents, brothers and cousins, and he was listed in the census[26] of Burlington in 1800, 1810, 1820 and 1830. In 1833 he ran a carding mill, as an old account-book shows.[27] His children were[27, 32, 33, 36] (1) Dyar C.[4], b. November 12, 1798 or 1799; d. July 10, 1857; m. December 9, 1820, Jerusha Day [they were grandparents of Medora M. (Johnson) Hinds, who has furnished[27] many New York records]; (2) Florinda[4], b. June 28, 1803; d. January 23, 1890; m. March 7, 1827, as his second wife,[46] David B. Hollister; (3) Phila[4], m. Philip Dyer; (4) Fatha[4], m. Gideon Elster; (5) Elisha[4], b. about 1805; d. April 1, 1822; m. 1st, Daphne Dennison; m. 2nd, Phila Talbot.

IX. Harris[3], b. June 12, bap.[2a] June 18, 1769; d. intestate at Burlington Flats, New York, [24, 33] January 30, 1818, in his forty-eighth year; he married[24] November 20, 1794, Martha[7] Perkins (John[6], Ebenezer[5], Ebenezer[4], Samuel[3], JOHN[2], JOHN[1]),[48*] b.[24] March 8, 1779; d. September 10, 1856. He was the head of a family[26] at Burlington in 1810, as his widow was in 1830. Their children were[24, 27] (1) Patience[4], b. August 12, 1795; m. February 15, 1821, Abram Parker. (2) Clark[4], b. October 25, 1796; d. May 1, 1872; m. February 5, 1818, (——). (3) "Jabez Giddins"[4],† b. November 18, 1798; d. February 11, 1873; m. December 25, 1849, (——); (4) Ruhama[4], b. October 27, 1800; d. December 3, 1872 or 1892; m. January 6, 1822, Harry Fitch; (5) Harris[4], b. December 6, 1802; m. December 1, 1824, Emeline Dauchy [sister to Daniel below]; (6) Sarah[4], b. December 1, 1804; m.[24, 47] September 9, 1828, Alonzo[6] Hubbell (Lemuel[5], Lemuel[4], Elnathan[3], James[2], Richard[1]); (7) John[4], b. November 2, 1806; m. October, 1829, (——); (8) Chester[4], b. April 19, 1808; (9) Elizabeth[4], b. August 6, 1811; d. July 21, 1888; m. February 25, 1835, Daniel Dauchy [brother of Emeline above and father of Harris Dauchy[24]]; (10) Abigail[4], b. August 20, 1812; d. February 28, 1871 or 1881; m. May 4, 1837, (——) Morse; (11) Seba[4], b. January 6, 1818.

*For data on the Perkins family, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.

†The son "Jabez Giddins"[4] Johnson was significantly thus named in memory of the deceased husband of his father's sister,[37] Mercy[3] Johnson. The name "Ruhama" which Harris[3] gave to his daughter who was born in October, 1800, was also significant of an earlier relationship, for his sister of that name [q. v.] had in the previous May started for the West and had died on the way.[38] Undoubtedly a similar interest and relationship [that of sister to Mercy[3]] had caused our ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES to give this name "Jabez Giddings" to her son as a memorial in 1789 [see pp. 23, 497].

REFERENCES

1. Family Records assembled by BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES, both by travel to various localities, earlier inhabited by ancestors of her own or her husband's, and by a voluminous correspondence [covering at least the period 1857–1890] carried on with many people having a common ancestry. ELIZABETH (JOHNSON) GATES, herewith discussed, was her husband's grandmother, most of whose children lived to old age and were interviewed relative to family records and facts.

1a. Register of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, p. 316.

2. One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the Congregational Church of East Hampton (Chatham), Conn., 1898, pp. 41, 44.

2a. Ibid., pp. 77, 79, 83, 86, 88, 92, 94–6, 104–6, 124.

2b. Ibid., pp. 80, 85–9, 92, 97–8, 105, 107, 110, 114, 116, 119.

3. D. Williams Patterson's MSS of East Haddam, Conn., Records filed in Hartford, Conn.

3a. D. A. R. Lineage Book, XX, 323; Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, 49.

4. Search by F. F. Starr, Middletown, Conn., of many local records, including Probate, Church, Land and Vital Records of Middletown, Chatham, East Hampton, Colchester, East Haddam and Lebanon, Conn., with deductions therefrom.

4a. Middletown, Conn., Land Records, X, 141.

4b. Ibid., XII, 170; XIV, 35; XVIII, 555.

4c. Ibid., IV, 52; V, 124.

4d. Ibid., XV, 93; XVIII, 554.

5. Mayflower Descendant, XIV, 37–8; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, 1914, II, 25.

6. Search by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn., of Probate, Church, Land and Vital Records pertaining to Lebanon, Colchester, East Haddam, Middletown, East Hampton and Chatham, Conn., with deductions therefrom.

7. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1906, III, 422–3.

8. Middletown, Conn., Probate Record, II, 497.

9. Centennial Address, D. D. Field, 1853, pp. 267, 273–6; Historic Towns of the Connecticut River Valley, G. S. Roberts, 1906, 95–8, 129–33, 139–41; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 67; Connecticut Magazine, 1906, X, 233.

10. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, II, 87; III, 74; VI, 129.

10a. New England Register, LXI, 32.

11. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 192–3, 206–9, 213.

12. Mayflower Descendant, XV, 136–9.

13. Ibid., XIV, 37; XVII, 136; York Deeds, XIII, folio 278 [pp. 834–5]; Old Times in North Yarmouth, Me., A. W. Corliss, 1877–84, pp. 681, 913–4, 1157, 1198–9; Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1883, part 2, pp. 162–3, 188.

14. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 207–8, 214; Strong Genealogy, B. W. Dwight, 1871, I, 174; Cornwall Genealogy, E. E. Cornwall, 1901, pp. 19, 27–8; Andrew Ward Genealogy, G. K. Ward, 1910, p. 43; Hamlin Family, H. F. Andrews, 1900, p. 79; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, II, 492.

15. Alvord Genealogy, S. M. Alvord, 1908, p. 94; Hamlin Family, H. F. Andrews, 1900, p. 79; Claim of Alvord Descendants; Items from Town Records of Middletown, Conn., under date of August 13, 1753, furnished by F. F. Starr.

16. One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of East Hampton (Chatham), Conn., Church, 1898, pp. 11–13, 28, 41, 44, 69, 72–4; Centennial Address, D. D. Field, 1853, pp. 42–5, 253, 269; Colonial Records of Connecticut, VIII, 541.

17. Plymouth, Mass., Deeds, XXI, 108; Mayflower Descendant, XVII, 56–7; Hodges' Genealogy, A. D. Hodges, 1896, p. 91.

18. Copy of Portland, Conn., Church Records made by Mr. Stearns of Middletown, Conn., and filed at Hartford.

19. Letters written and documents lent in 1903 and in 1926 by Adelaide (Johnson) Plumstead [wife of Dr. M. W. Plumstead] of East Haddam, Conn. She is the daughter of E. Emory[6] Johnson (Emory[5], Jared[4], John[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]); D. A. R., LII, 334; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 209, 328.

20. Material gathered during his life by Julius[6] Johnson (1842–1888) (John J.[5], Enos[4], John[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]) and published in Central New York Genealogies, III, 1531–2—though warning is hereby given that the origin there stated for JAMES[1] is erroneous. Enos[7] Johnson (Julius[6]), of Cortland, N. Y., has also furnished family records.

21. Vital Records of Bridgewater, Mass., I, 133; History of Bridgewater, E. C. Mitchell, 1897, pp. 176, 211; Colonial Records of Connecticut, IX, 385.

22. Search of Connecticut records by Mrs. F. P. Moulton, Hartford, Conn.

23. Otsego County, N. Y., Book of Administrations, I, 91; Deeds "D," 296, 397.

24. Testimony by, and family records in the hands of, Mr. and Mrs. Harris Dauchy of Burlington Flats, N. Y. This man, aged eighty-two in 1927, is a grandson of Harris[3] Johnson through his daughter Elizabeth.[4]

25. History of Otsego County, N. Y., E. F. Bacon, 1902, pp. 29; Gazetteer and Directory of Otsego County, N. Y., Hamilton Child, 1872, pp. 75, 122; History of Cherry Valley, N. Y., J. Sawyer, 1898, pp. 51–2; Gazetteer of New York, J. H. French, 1860, pp. 532, 534; Otsego County, N. Y. Land Records, II, 248; M, 156; Testimoney in 1927 by Harriet B. Johnson, Berkshire, N. Y., granddaughter of Benjamin[3] (James[2], JAMES[1]).
26. Search of unpublished census records in Washington, D. C., by the Misses Curry.
27. Evidence furnished in 1927–8 by Mrs. Medora M. (Johnson) Hinds, of Burlington Flats, N. Y. She is the daughter of Iru C.[5] Johnson (Dyer[4], Iru[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]) and now owns the farm on which CALEB[2] was buried. She assembled and furnished various family records and sworn affidavits, and lent a number of unrecorded deeds.
28. Family records and a sworn affidavit by Mary (Johnson) Ray (1844–1921), late of Norwich, N. Y., daughter of John J.[5] Johnson (Enos[4], John[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]); D. A. R., LXXXV, 375.
29. Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, part 2, 93–4.
30. Kindness of Mr. Edward P. Jones, Winsted, Conn., in establishing the existence in the vaults of the New Hampshire Historical Society of the original diary of Dr. Amherst Coult, his ancestor, which gave the parentage of Mercy[3] Johnson (CALEB[2], JAMES[1]); History of Chester, N. H., J. C. Chase, 1926, pp. 296–7.
31. Kindness of Mr. Elbert I. Johnson, Edmeston, N. Y., in differentiating between the Iru and the Ira Johnson families of Burlington, N. Y., to the latter of which he himself belongs.
32. Testimony in 1927 of Mrs. Mary (Johnson) Heustis of Burlington, N. Y. She was aged seventy-nine in 1926 and is the daughter of Elisha[4] Johnson (Iru[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]).
33. Search of Otsego County, N. Y., documents, graveyards, etc., carried on in 1926 by Mrs. E. L. Watts of Chicago, Ill.
34. Connecticut men in the Revolution, 1889, p. 611.
35. Courtesy of William E. Johnson, West Hartford, Conn., in lending data furnished by a granddaughter of Nancy (Johnson) Wyllys (John[3] Johnson, CALEB[2], JAMES[1]), which is verified by reference 19.
36. Family records furnished by Willard D.[6] Johnson (Lyman D[5]., Dyar C[4]., Iru[3], CALEB[2], JAMES[1]).
37. Diary [see reference 30]; Giddings Family, M. S. Giddings, 1882, pp. 180–3; East Hartland, Conn., town records furnished by D. N. Gaines, former town clerk.
38. Moses Genealogy, Z. Moses, 1890, pp. 160–1; Twentieth Century History of Trumbull County, Ohio, H. T. Upton, 1909, I, 577, 581; East Hartland, Conn., town records furnished by D. N. Gaines, former town clerk.
39. Kilbourn Genealogy, P. K. Kilbourne, 1856, p. 97.
40. One Thousand Years of Hubbard History, E. W. Day, 1895, p. 430.
41. Revolutionary Pension Record W 27621; D. A. R. XXXIX, 324; XL, 238.
42. Revolutionary Pension Record W. 1435.
43. Revolutionary Pension Record W. 7933.
44. Revolutionary Pension Record S. 13550.
45. Huntington Family, by Huntington Family Association, 1915, p. 825.
46. Hollister Family, L. W. Case, 1886, pp. 722–4.
47. Hubbell Family, W. Hubbell, 1881, pp. 70, 241, 243–4, 248, 261, 286, 330.
48. Perkins Genealogy, G. A. Perkins, 1889, part 1, pp. 1–11, 29–30, 46–7; Central New York Genealogies, I, 112–3, 410–1; Bible record in possession of Harris Dauchy, Burlington Flats, N. Y. (see reference 24).
49. Two Hundredth Anniversary of the First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, p. 308.
50. Revolutionary War Pension, W. 21481, at Washington, D. C.

COOKE (Josiah)

[Tentative]

* † [304] *Josiah Cooke* c.1610–1673 — m 1635 — *Elizabeth Ring [widow Deane]* –c.1687

† [152] *Josiah Cooke* c.1645–1732 — m 1668 — *Deborah Hopkins (Giles², Stephen¹)* –aft.1684

† ‡ ‖ [76] *Josiah Cooke* 1670–prob.aft.1730 — m bef.1694 — *Mary . . .* –aft.1708

§ ‖ [38] *John Cooke* 1698–aft.1746 — m bef.1728 — *Desire . . .* –aft.1746

[?]

‖ ¶ [18] Caleb Johnson c.1724–prob.aft.1800 — m 1745 — Mary Cooke prob.1728–prob.aft.1800

[For continuance see Johnson chart facing p. 485]

* Plymouth, Mass.
† Eastham, Mass.
‡ Truro, Mass.
§ Provincetown, Mass.
‖ Middletown, Conn.
¶ Burlington, Otsego Co., N. Y.

ADDENDUM TO JOHNSON

COOKE (Josiah)

All evidence found goes to show that the descent given below is the ancestry of MARY COOKE, wife of CALEB[2] JOHNSON. Since positive proof is lacking, differentiation between this presumed (and really *believed*) ancestry and the actually proved lines will be signified in this case by the use in both text and chart of italic rather than capitals.

JOSIAH[1] *COOKE*, who is sometimes erroneously called[4] a relative of FRANCIS[1] COOKE, was[1] born about 1610 in England and died[2] in Eastham, Massachusetts, October 17, 1673, aged about sixty-three. He married[1,2] September 16, 1635, at Plymouth, *Elizabeth* (*Ring*) Deane [daughter of widow *Mercy* (——) *Ring* and widow of Stephen[1] Deane], who survived him. He was first recorded[1] in Plymouth in January, 1633–4, and removed to Eastham about 1645. In that place he was called an original proprietor, as was also THOMAS[1] PRENCE, JOHN[1] DOANE and EDWARD[1] BANGS. He was constable there in 1646, a voter in 1655, and in 1658, with JOHN[1] DOANE, RICHARD[1] SPARROW and others, received a grant of outlying lands between Bridgewater and Weymouth. His will was dated September 22, 1673, and mentioned, among others, his wife, his son *Josiah*[2] and grandson *Josiah*[3]. The settlement of his widow's estate in May, 1687, gave a share[3] to *Josiah*[2] *Cooke*.

The known children [one authority[1] says they had seven others] of *Josiah*[1] and *Elizabeth* (*Ring*) *Cooke*, born at Plymouth or Eastham, were[1,2]

I. Ann[2], b. (—); d. July 24, 1656, at Plymouth; m. at Eastham, January 18, 1654, as his first wife, Mark[2] Snow (Nicholas[1]).
II. *Josiah*[2], see following.
III. Bethia[2], b. (—); d. (—); m. April 4, 1660, Joseph Harding, ward and presumed nephew of JOHN[1] DOANE.

Josiah[2] *Cooke* (*Josiah*[1]) was born probably about 1645 at Plymouth or Eastham. His will, naming his children, was dated December 7, 1727, sworn to by the witnesses on July 5, and proved August 30, 1732, and it was undoubtedly he who died[5,6] there January 31, 1731–2. He married there on[1,5] July 27, 1668, *Deborah*[3] *Hopkins* (*Giles*[2], STEPHEN[1]) and resided in that

town. Following the habit of that early day he, with others, had land laid out to him in 1675 at Little Compton, then claimed by the Plymouth Colony but now in Rhode Island; and this was certified to him[14] in 1698. He was a voter in 1695. His descendants scattered considerably, the families of at least two of his sons, *Josiah*[3] and Joshua[3], settling in the vicinity of Middletown, Connecticut.[10] All of his descendants inherit Mayflower descent through their mother.

The children of *Josiah*[2] and *Deborah* (*Hopkins*) *Cooke*, all born at Eastham, were[5, 6]

I. Elizabeth[3], b. October 12, 1669; d. 1670.
II. *Josiah*[3], see following.
III. Richard[3], b. September 1 or 4, 1672; d. April 25, 1754; m. Hannah (——), and had nine children.
IV. Elizabeth[3], b. June 16, 1674; d. after December 7, 1727; m. October, 1693, Thomas[3] Newcomb (Andrew[2], Andrew[1]).[15]
V. Caleb[3], b. November 15, 1676; d. after December 7, 1727; doubtless he who m. Deliverance (——), resided at Truro, and had six children.
VI. Deborah[3], b. February 15, 1678; m. before December 7, 1727, Moses[2] Godfrey (GEORGE[1]).
VII. Joshua[3], b. February 4, 1683–4; d. probably after July 31, 1737, and certainly before September 28, 1746, when his widow joined the Middle Haddam [Connecticut] Church. He m. February 7, 1705–6, at Eastham,[7] Patience[3] Doane* (Ephraim[2], JOHN[1]).[16]
VIII. Benjamin[3], b. April 28, 1686 or 1687; d. after December 7, 1727; m. November 30, 1710, at Eastham, Mercy[3] Paine (Samuel[2], Thomas[1]).[17]

Josiah[3] *Cooke* (*Josiah*[2], *Josiah*[1]) was[1, 7] born November 12, 1670, at Eastham, died certainly after December 7, 1727 [the date of his father's will by which he received a bequest] and probably after February 11, 1730–1, when his nephew Josiah[4] [son of Joshua[3]], then called "Jr.," was married.[8] In 1673, at the age of three years, he had received a bequest of land by the will of *Josiah*[1], his grandfather.

Josiah[3] married,[1, 6, 7] before 1694, *Mary* (——). After his marriage they lived for a number of years at Eastham, where at least four and probably more children were born; but before 1710 they had removed to Truro,[1, 9] where they remained for several years. He had left that town before 1730 and probably before 1726, for one of his name [undoubtedly he] was resident in

*Patience (Doane) Cooke, who removed from Plymouth Colony to Middletown, Connecticut [as did also the JAMES[1] JOHNSON family], had a sister and a daughter both named "Ruhama," and that odd name previously unknown in the families of JAMES[1] JOHNSON or that of his wife was chosen for a daughter of theirs by CALEB[2] JOHNSON and his wife MARY COOKE, herself hereby asserted to have been a daughter of *John*[4] *Cooke* (*Josiah*[3], *Josiah*[2], *Josiah*[1]). This *John* [4], nephew to Patience (Doane) Cooke and own cousin to her daughter Ruhama, was a partner with these relatives and the Johnsons in the removal to Middletown, where several of his children were born.

Middletown, Connecticut,[10] before December 26, 1726, when he made a purchase of land there from Robert Hubbard. One of the children of *Josiah*[3], and probably two, as well as a number of his grandchildren, were certainly residents of Middletown.

The known children of *Josiah*[3] and *Mary* (——) *Cooke* were[1, 6]

I. Desire[4], b. June 14, 1694, at Eastham. It was probably[10] she who m. Beriah[4] Higgins (Joseph[3], Jonathan[2], Richard[1]),[18] who was resident in Truro 1712–24, in Provincetown 1725–36, and perhaps later in Connecticut. At least two of his children went to Connecticut, one being of Middletown.
II. Deborah[4], b. April 12, 1696, at Eastham.
III. *John*[4], see following.
IV. Mary[4], b. February 8, 1699–1700, at Eastham.
V. Hannah[4] ["often erroneously claimed as daughter of William[4] Cooke" (Jacob[3], JACOB[2], FRANCIS[1])],[11] m. November 12, 1724, at Truro, Isaiah Atkins.
VI. Solomon[4], b. about 1708; bap. November 18, 1711, at Truro; d. November 21, 1781; m. June 4, 1733, Rebecca Cowell, daughter of Edward and Rebecca (Broughton) Cowell, of Boston. They lived at Provincetown.

John[4] *Cooke* (*Josiah*[3], *Josiah*[2], *Josiah*[1]) was born[1, 7] April 9, 1698, in Eastham; died after 1746, perhaps at Middletown; married[12] before 1728, *Desire* (——). They resided for a time at Provincetown, where three children were born to them, but they had removed[10] by or before 1740, to Middletown, Connecticut, where four and perhaps more children were born. *John*[4] owned no land in Middletown and the absence of other record than the birth of his children suggests that he may have been a mariner.[10]

The children of *John*[4] and *Desire* (——) *Cooke* were[6, 10, 12]

I. *Mary*[5], b. April 27, 1728, at Provincetown. As a result of exhaustive study by the compiler, supplemented by a search of original records in Plymouth and in Connecticut by H. W. Brainard, they have come to believe that this girl was the MARY COOKE who m.[13] September 19, 1745 [as of Chatham, Conn., but recorded at the Middle Haddam Church], CALEB[2] JOHNSON [see Johnson, p. 492]. All Cooke families of Middletown, Middle Haddam, Lebanon, East Hampton, and even as far away as Durham and New Haven, and Plymouth in Massachusetts, have been traced; and no other eligible Mary Cooke has been found than this one, who was of the right age, in the right place, at the right time, and is not recorded as marrying otherwise. One added item which might be considered significant toward her identification as the wife of CALEB[2] JOHNSON is the fact that a daughter of his was given the unusual name of "Ruhama"; and this *Mary*[5] *Cooke* had a cousin once removed who bore that odd name and resided in Middletown. It is regretted that more positive evidence has not yet been found, and on account of such lack of evidence this presumed line of Cooke descent will be signified in both text and chart by the use of italics.

II. John[5], b. August 23, 1730, at Provincetown.
III. Jabez[5], b. June 17, 1732, at Provincetown; d. before November, 1764; m. May 23, 1754, Abigail[4] Blake (Richard[3], John[2], John[1]).[19] She m. 2nd, November, 1764, Ezra Turner.
IV. George[5], b. September 5, 1740, at Middletown.
V. Hannah[5], b. September 5, 1742, at Middletown; it was probably she who m. September 20, 1758, David Butler.
VI. Desire[5], b. March 8, 1744, at Middletown; probably she[13] who m. June 9, 1763, Jedediah Pryor.
VII. Sarah[5], b. December 30, 1746, at Middletown; perhaps she who m. April 27, 1764, John Ufford.
VIII. perhaps[10] Jacob Cooke, who m. by 1743, Mercy, and had, at Middletown, Elizabeth, 1743; Mary, 1745; Josiah, 1747; Rebecca, 1749; and Elisha.
IX. perhaps Asenath Cooke, m. May 22, 1746, at Middletown, Moses Lucas.
X. perhaps Jonathan Cooke. One of this name m. by 1751, Deborah (——), and on December 1, 1751, they joined Middle Haddam (Conn.) Church, where they had several children baptized.

REFERENCES

1. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, C. W. Swift, pub., No. 33, pp. 15–7; No. 40, pp. 2–4.
2. Mayflower Descendant, VI, 203; XIII, 83; XV, 34–8.
3. Ibid., IV, 179–81.
4. Ibid., III, 97; V, 185.
5. Ibid., V, 185–6; VIII, 88.
6. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1862, II, 348, 356, 359, 374, 389, 634.
7. Mayflower Descendant, VI, 15; VII, 238; VIII, 88; XIX, 111.
8. Ibid., VIII, 63; XI, 1–5; XVII, 31.
9. Ibid., IX, 55.
10. Research by H. W. Brainard, of Hartford, Conn., in Plymouth, Mass., Middletown, East Hampton, Lebanon and Middle Haddam as well as in Hartford, Conn.
11. Mayflower Descendant, XVIII, 256.
12. Ibid., VII, 238; IX, 100–2.
13. Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, III, 74, 77.
14. Pilgrim Notes and Queries, II, 100.
15. Newcomb Family. J. B. Newcomb, 1874, p. 30. [*Josiah*[1] was erroneously called "Joseph" here.]
16. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, p. 33.
17. Paine Family Record, H. D. Paine, 1883, II, 45.
18. Higgins Genealogy, K. C. Higgins, 1918, pp. 99, 142–3; Supp. 1924, p. 13.
19. "Our Folks, John Blake and his Descendants," G. M. Blake, 1895, p. 6.

KILBOURN

* [718] Thomas Kilbourn 1578–bef.1639	m c.1605	Frances . . . c.1585–1650
# † ‡ [358] Robert Hayward c.1613–1684	m c.1640	Lydia Kilbourn c.1616–aft.1684
‡ § [178] John Spencer c.1638–1682	m c.1663–5	Rebecca Hayward 1648–aft.1682
§ ‖ [88] John Ackley c.1662–1736	m 1699	Rebecca Spencer 1666–bef. 1736
‖ [44] Benjamin Ackley c.1708–12–aft.1767	m c.1730–3	Experience . . . –aft.1753
‖ ¶ [22] Hezekiah Ackley c.1733–5–aft.1783	m 1756	Abigail Doane 1732–aft.1777
¶ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
¶ ♣ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
♣ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Wethersfield, Conn.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Hartford, Conn.
§ Haddam, Conn.
‖ East Haddam, Conn.
¶ East Hartland, Conn.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.
\# Dorchester, Mass.

KILBOURN

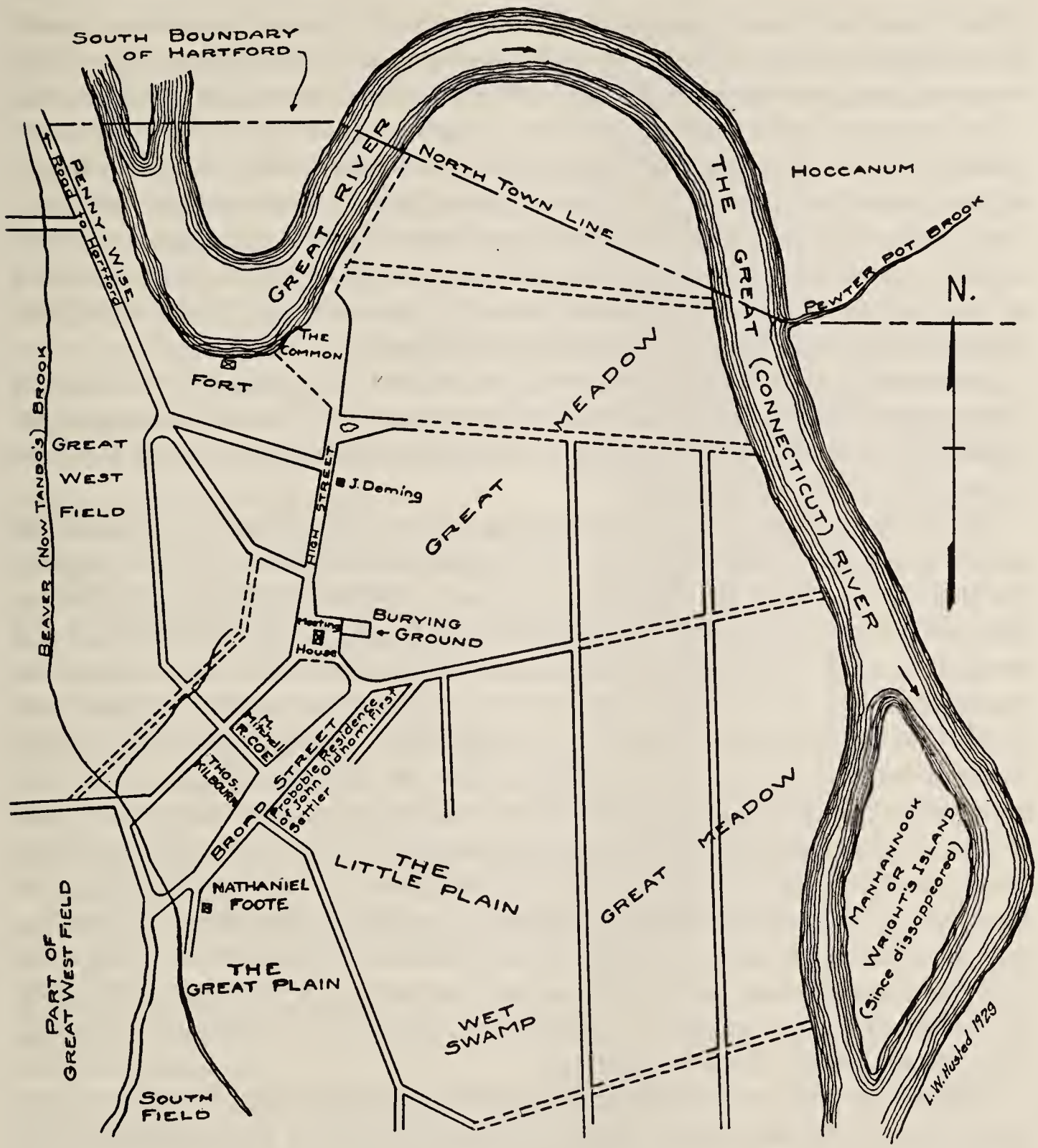
THOMAS[1] KILBOURN, the emigrant of this family, son of JOHN KILBOURN, of the Parish of Wood Ditton, co. Cambridge, England was baptized[1] there May 8, 1578. He grew to manhood, married and reared his family in that parish, having had his children baptized there and having served as churchwarden[1] in 1632. In 1613 he and two of his sons, with seven others, were made custodians of a property which was to constitute a perpetual trust, the income of which was to be used for the ministry and for the poor of several near-by parishes. These trustees were required to lease and re-lease this holding for periods of not more than seven years and, at the end of each term, "everie [one] of them . . . shall have for their paines a ringe of goulde of the price of thirty shillings . . . and over that for their paynes and travell."[1]

On April 15, 1635, THOMAS[1], aged fifty-five years, with his wife, FRANCES, aged fifty, and their five children, aged respectively twenty-three, twenty-two, sixteen, twelve and ten years, embarked[2, 4] on the ship "Increase," Robert Lee, master, bound for New England. The family settled[3] at Wethersfield, Connecticut, and THOMAS[1] was the first white man to build and dwell in the town. Besides his three-acre home lot, on the southwest side of Broad Street, he had five acres of land by the river just about where[3a] the Indian massacre of April, 1637, must have occurred.[3] He died at an unknown date but before 1639, when record of the distribution of town lands was made[2] in the name of "FRANCES KILBORNE, widow." It has, therefore, been suggested[3a] that he may have been one of the victims of that massacre, of whom but two have been definitely identified, namely,[3] a daughter of William Swayne, and Abraham Finch, Jr. The latter lived on Broad Street and had additional land by the river, as did also THOMAS[1] KILBOURN. It is quite possible that THOMAS[1] went to his meadow by the river to work in the early morning of that fateful day, just as Abraham Finch did, and thus met the same fate. There has been found neither will nor settlement of the estate of THOMAS[1], but from the

inventory of his widow's estate [vide infra] after her death it seems apparent that she had been awarded for her lifetime the entire property left by her husband, thus suggesting that he died intestate and perhaps suddenly. These facts lend color to the theory[3a] that he was one of the victims of April 23, 1637.

The original cause of this particular Indian outbreak was the mistreatment of a native by the English. This Indian, called[8] both "Sowheag" and "Sequin," had given certain land at Wethersfield to the English[5] "upon contract that he might sit down by them, and be protected, etc. When he came to Weathersfield, and had set down his wigwam, they drave him away by force. Whereupon, he not being of strength to repair this injury by open force, he secretly draws in the Pequods"[5] to help him avenge his wrongs. On April 23, 1637, presumably before daybreak, about two hundred of the Indians came up the Connecticut River as far as "The Island" [no longer extant—see map on p. 511], opposite the settlement. There they lay in ambush until they saw some of the inhabitants go to the meadows to work. They then made an attack and killed at least six men, probably three women and twenty cows, and also carried two girls into captivity.[3] As the Indians passed the Saybrook Fort on their way south, they insolently attracted the attention of the garrison there by displaying the clothing of their slain victims on poles in imitation of the sails of the white men's boats.[3] The Saybrook men fired two shots at them but desisted when they realized that they were endangering the lives of the captives by so doing. These girls were well treated and were later released, partly through the intervention of the squaw of Mononotto and partly, perhaps, because the natives hoped to learn from them the art of making gunpowder. In a later Pequot campaign this kindly Indian woman and her children were among those who survived and, though taken captive, they were well treated. It is said that "her behavior and demeanor were such as to win the respect of even the most violent Indian haters"[6] and even John Winthrop, Governor of Connecticut Colony, in his letter to the Plymouth Colony authorities, admitted that "Amonge the prisoners we have ye wife & children of Mononotto, a woman of very modest countenance and behaviour. It was by her mediation that the 2 English maids were spared from death, and were kindly used by her; so that I have taken charge of her. One of her first requests was, that the English would not abuse her body, and that her children might not be taken from her."[7]

This massacre at Wethersfield (taken with other similar occurrences) stirred the whole Connecticut colony and the officials wrote to the officers of



WETHERSFIELD, CONNECTICUT, IN 1634–44
THE HOME OF AT LEAST THREE ANCESTRAL FAMILIES

Massachusetts Colony, asking advice in the settlement of the affair.[5] "Such of the magistrates and elders [of Massachusetts] as could meet on the sudden returned this answer, viz.: 'That, if the cause were thus [that he had been driven away in spite of the agreement], Sequin might, upon this injury first offered by them [the English], right himself either by force or fraud, and that by the law of nations; and though the damage he had done them had been one hundred times more than what he sustained from them, that is not considerable [not to be considered] in point of a just war; neither was he bound to seek satisfaction first in a peaceable way; it was enough, that he had complained of it as an injury and breach of covenant.'"[5]

After receipt of this opinion[3] the Connecticut "Corte," at its session of April 5, 1638, reviewed the case and declared that all "former wronges whatsoeuer are remitted on both sides and the saide Soheage is again receiued in Amytie to the saide English."[8]

It is to be presumed that there was no evidence connecting Soheage himself with the actual killing of any of the English, both because of his complete vindication and because of the fact that only two Indians were identified as murderers and one of these, Nepaupuck by name, was later apprehended and brought to trial. The hearing was held, not in the district where the crime was committed, but in the neighboring colony of New Haven. This culprit was accused of killing one or more of the English and of mutilating their bodies. Various Indians, one a relative, tried at first to clear him by lies, but later tremblingly testified against him. "Wattoone [son of a councilor of this tribe] affirmed to his face thatt he, the said Nepaupuck, did not onely kill Abraham Finch, butt was one of them thatt killed the 3 men in the boate or shallop on Connectecutt riuer, and That there was but one Nepaupuck and this was he, and the same thatt tooke a childe of Mr. Swaines att Weathersfield. Then the said Nepaupuck being asked if he would nott confess y^{t} he deserved to dye, he answered, "it is weregin" (probably a variant of "wunnegin" meaning fate, an admission of the inevitable).

"The Court haue had such pregnant proofe, proceeded to pass sentence vpon him according to the nature of the fact and the rule in thatt case, he thatt sheds mans blood, by man shall his blood be shed, accordingly his head was cutt off the next day and pittched vpon a pole in the markett place."[9]

FRANCES, wife of THOMAS[1], seems to have been a capable woman and to have handled, for herself, various business affairs which many widows would have assigned to some relative or friend. Thus, she was granted, in her own

name, a cattle ear mark,[10] she had an account owing from Abraham Finch, Sr., in 1640 at his death,[11] and on September 2, 1647, "In the ac. of Wyddowe KILBURNE, pl. ag^t Peter Blachfield deft, the jury find for the pl. 40s. & cost of Court."[11]

Her will was dated November 13, 1650, and gave, among other bequests, to her "daughter LIDIA, ye wife of ROBERT HOWARD, ffive pounds as ye ffull of hir portion I promise vppon marriage with my daughter, to be payed wthin a yeare or 2 after my disseace . . . al ye Rest of my parrell to my three daughters to be divided amongst them, LYDIA, Mary & ffrances . . . & ye rest of my linning To my 3 daughters equelly to be divided to LIDIA, Mary & ffrances."[13] She died before December 3, 1650, on which date the inventory of her estate was taken,[12] showing property to the value[10] of nearly £350, itemized as follows, and picturing suggestively the surroundings of her daily life:

Imprimis. Her purse and apparel	£20	0	0
Item: Two beds in the parlor, with their furniture	8	0	0
Item: The tables, chests, boxes, forms and stools and benches, with many other small things in the parlor	3	0	0
Item: A bed and chests and some other things in the leantoo or liney	2	0	0
Ite: Sheets, pillow-beers, napkins, and other linens	3	0	0
Ite: Tables, forms, chairs, stools, benches in the halls	1	0	0
Ite: Brass and pewter, and iron kettle	6	0	0
Ite: Four silver spoons, one silver beaker	3	10	0
Ite: Spitts, cab-irons, trammels, and other fire irons	2	5	0
Ite: Fire-arms and ammunition	2	15	0
Item: Two wooden vessels, barrels, tub, and keeler, pails and dishes, and such like	2	0	0
Ite: One copper	2	5	0
Ite: In husbandry tools, such as scythes, forks, shovels, beetles, wedges, axes, and useful tools	3	0	0
Ite: Carts, plows, harrows, yokes, chains, with horse furniture for the carts	7	3	4
Item: Bees and bee-hives, and some old iron	2	0	0
Item: Books	2	0	0
Ite: Provisions for house-keeping	3	0	0
Ite: In Indian corn	5	0	0
Ite: In English grain	27	10	0
Ite: Three acres of wheat and rye, on the ground	5	0	0
Ite: Hay, at	8	0	0
Ite: In horse flesh	50	0	0
Ite: Two oxen, two cows, four young cattle	37	0	0
Ite: The house and home lot and, twelve acres in the great meadow	105	0	0
Ite: Four acres in the west field, two in beaver meadow, and four in mile meadow	20	0	0
Ite: Her land beyond the river, at	10	0	0
Ite: Six hogs	9	0	0

Responsibility for property of this extent, and the business affairs consequent upon it, suggest in a woman around seventy years of age an unusual capability.

The children of THOMAS[1] and FRANCES (——) KILBOURN all baptized in St. Mary's Church, Wood Ditton, co. Cambridge, England, were[1, 4]

I. Margaret[2], bap. September 23, 1607; m. Richard Law.
II. Thomas[2], bap. November 30, 1609; m. Elizabeth (——). He emigrated with her in April, 1634, but probably returned to England.
III. George[2], bap. February 12, 1611–2; m. Elizabeth [probably[14] Barker, sister of James]. He emigrated to Rowley as early as 1638 and d. there October 14, 1685.
IV. Elizabeth[2], bap. May 12, 1614. She did not emigrate.
V. LYDIA[2], bap. July 14, 1616; d. after[13] September 3, 1684; m. probably about 1640, ROBERT[1] HAYWARD or HOWARD [see Hayward, p. 419]. She was called twenty-two years old at embarkation in April, 1635, and in 1684 deposed that she was about seventy.
VI. Mary[2], b. 1619; d.[15] 1697, age 78; m. about 1640, John[1] Root, of Farmington.
VII. Frances[2], bap. September 4, 1621; d. 1682; m. Thomas Uffoot or Oviatt. She died a widow without children and her estate was distributed among her relatives, of whom "LYDIA HOWARD, wife of ROBERT HOWARD, and sister of the deceased [received] one-fourth part."[12]
VIII. John[2], bap. September 29, 1624; d. April 9, 1703; m. 1st, 1650, Naomi (——); m. 2nd, after 1659, Sarah Bronson (John of Farmington).

REFERENCES

1. Kilbourn Family, P. K. Kilbourne, 1856, pp. *47–52.
2. Ibid., pp. 33–44; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, p. 261; Hotten's Emigrant Lists, I, 66.
3. History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, iv, xxiii; History of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 62–70, 282, 578.

3a. Ibid, I, 67.

4. Savage, III, 20; Warren-Clarke Genealogy, C. W. Huntington, 1894, pp. 206–7.
5. History of New England, J. Winthrop, ed. J. Savage, 1853, I, 312–3.
6. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 19.
7. History of "Plimoth Plantation," W. Bradford, 1901 edition, pp. 429–30.
8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 5, 19, 20, 31, 58, 73–4, 434, 603.
9. New Haven Colonial Records, ed. C. J. Hoadly, 1857, I, 22–4.
10. History of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 467.
11. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 156, 445.
12. Kilbourn Family, P. K. Kilbourne, 1856, pp. 33–44, 49.
13. A Digest of Early Connecticut Probate, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 133, 319–20.
14. Early Settlers of Rowley, Mass., G. B. Blodgette, 1887, p. 131; Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, III, 246.
15. Root Genealogy, J. P. Root, 1870, pp. 314–5.

KIRTLAND

* [392] Philip Kirtland c.1580–aft.1652	m	. . . . .
* † [196] Nathaniel Kirtland c.1616–7–1686	m prob.1640–5	Parnell . . . –1694
* ‡ [98] John Kirtland 1659–1716	m 1679	Lydia Pratt 1660–aft.1704
‡ [48] John Shipman 1687–1742	m 1715	Elizabeth Kirtland 1688 or 1689–1778
‡ [24] Samuel Shipman 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733–1806
‡ § [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‡ § ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
¶ § [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
§ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Lynn, Mass.
† Southampton, L. I.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

KIRTLAND

PHILIP[1] KIRTLAND* and his three sons, John[2], Philip[2] and NATHANIEL[2], of co. Bucks, England, emigrated to New England and became early residents of Lynn, Massachusetts. PHILIP[1] may have arrived somewhat later than Philip[2] and NATHANIEL[2], who embarked[1] in the "Hopewell," of London, William Bundock, master, on April 1, 1635, but he is definitely of record in 1638, receiving in that year, with his son Philip[2], ten acre lots at Lynn where PHILIP[1] became[1a] the first "cordwainer."†

PHILIP[1] and his children are mentioned in the will[2] of his brother John Kirtland of Tickford Parish of Newport Pagnall, co. Bucks, England, the instrument being dated December 12, 1616, and proved August 1, following. In later years Philip[2] and NATHANIEL[2] testified that they came[3] from

* Born probably about 1580.

† This term meant "ladies' shoemaker" and was derived from the name of "Cordova," a city in southern Spain which specialized in the tanning and dressing of goatskins into "Cordovan" leather, suitable for use in the manufacture of fine shoes.

New England limited by law the use of fancy dress shoes as well as other so-called excessive ornament. As early as 1641 a law was passed, and in 1651 it was re-enacted, discouraging over-adornment in the dress of all persons and forbidding it altogether for those whose estates did not exceed £200. The law went on to "declare our utter detestation and dislike, that men or women of mean condition [small means] should take unto them the garb of Gentlemen by wearing gold or silver lace, or buttons, or points at their knees, or to walk in great boots, (leather being so scarce a commoditie in this Country), or women of the same ranke, to wear silk or tyffany hoods, or scarfes . . . " though the use of such was allowed to "persons of greater estates, or more liberal education. . . . "

The law forbade also the use of bone lace [point lace made with bone bobbins] costing over two shillings per yard, or of ribbons; it set a penalty of ten shillings for every such offense, with an attendant grand jury hearing; and it required the selectmen of each town to watch for infringements and to tax offenders in the same amount as though their estates had been valued at £200. Exception was made for magistrates and public officers with their families; for any "settled Military Officer or Souldier in the time of Millitary Service, or any whose education and employment have been above the ordinary degree, or whose estate have been considerable, though now decayed."[1, 1a]

The Indians taught the colonists to tan deerskin by the use, among other things, of a mixture of the brain, liver and fat of the animal; this method left the skin very soft and suitable for use in garments and such leather was much used for clothing as well as for shoes. The establishment of a tannery, therefore, was one of the first requisites in any community and the presence of a cordwainer was encouraged.

In 1676 the price of shoes was regulated by law; and depended upon their dimensions, as "Five pence, half penny a size for all pleyne and wooden heel'd shoes, and above seven pence half penny for well wrought 'French falls' " [dress boots with their high, spreading tops folded back toward the ankle, forming a deep cuff, which were similar to the "great boots" mentioned above]. Wooden heels were worn throughout the seventeeth century and, even at that early period, Lynn was the center for the manufacture of shoes, and PHILIP[1] was that town's first shoemaker [unless his son of the same name filled that position].

Sherington, co. Bucks, England, this place being about two miles distant[2] from Tickford.

In the early records it is somewhat difficult to differentiate between the activities of PHILIP[1] and his son of the same name. One of them, presumably the elder, sued Francis Dent in 1639 for a debt of £10; he won a suit against George Keyser for "four acres of land due by ye bounds [for] trespass[5] and for trees felled" in that year; in 1643, he signed a petition that Goody Armitage might continue to run the ordinary; was on a trial jury in 1645; on the grand jury from 1649 to 1652; took the inventory of Joseph How in 1651 and that of William Knight in 1654–5; was a witness against Matthew Farrington in 1648; witnessed against several neighbors who wore silver lace in 1652; and in that same year testified that "the way near the mill at Lin" was "dangerous for cattle and carriages."[5]

On October 1, 1652, PHILIP[1], "shoe maker," bought from Nathaniel Tyler and his wife, Jane, all their "lands and houses with their appurtenances, in Lynn."

In that year he was a witness against Jonas Fairbanks who had been presented to the court for wearing "great boots" but who was discharged when it was found that he did not wear them after the law regarding them was published.[1, 6]

Neither the date of the death of PHILIP[1] nor the name or death of his wife has been found. She died probably in England.

The only known children of PHILIP[1] KIRTLAND and his wife (——), all born in England, were[3, 11, 18, 22]

I. John[2],* b. about[6] 1606–7; d. after[11] 1683; m. Barbara (——).
II. Philip[2], b. about 1614 in county Bucks,[3, 4] England; d. in or before[6] July, 1659, probably at sea; m. Alice (——) who[6] m. 2nd, before June, 1661, Evan Thomas, of Boston.
III. NATHANIEL[2], see following.
IV. Susanna[2], b. (—); d.[10, 18] March 18, 1683–4, at Saybrook; m. John Westall.

NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND (*Philip*[1]) was born[3, 4] about 1616–7, in county Bucks, England, perhaps at Sherrington from whence he emigrated; and was

*This man is sometimes confused with his nephew, JOHN[3], a son of NATHANIEL[2], and is frequently referred to as unmarried, merely because his sister, Susanna (Kirtland) Westall, called him her "childless brother" in 1683 when she willed him a small property at Saybrook, Connecticut. Since, however, there seems to have been at the time no other John Kirtland [with the exception of his young nephew] it is presumed that the two daughters,[12] both named Sara, born to a man of that name in 1665 and 1666 at Lynn, were his, and that he must have lost both of them before the date of his sister's will. It is probable that he lived near his sister at Saybrook where both he and her husband were employed in town affairs.[11a] His widow, Barbara, was allowed a life tenure in a home which was to be kept in repair[19a] by JOHN[3] KIRTLAND.

buried[12] December 27, 1686, aged seventy, at Lynn, Massachusetts. He married,[11] doubtless on Long Island and probably about 1642–5, PARNELL (——).*

For about five years after his emigration in 1635, NATHANIEL[2] lived at Lynn,[1a] but in 1640 he, with his brother Philip[2] and about thirty or forty families of Lynn, arranged to remove to Long Island.[8] Those who bound themselves to make this move were called "undertakers" and the approval of the group was necessary before others could be admitted to the company. Before their departure the group entered into a church covenant. Eight members of the party purchased a sloop for £80 to transport their families and their goods to their new home but, on March 10, 1639–40, they sold it to Daniel How on terms which required him to take them to Long Island and, thereafter, to make three trips a year between Lynn and the place of their new settlement.[7] On this same date a contract was signed by the various prospective emigrants,[7, 8] including Philip[2] and NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND.

Lord Sterling at this time held a grant covering Long Island and on April 17, 1640, his agent, James Farret, with the approval of Governor Winthrop of Connecticut, entered into an agreement with the leaders of this group. By the terms of this contract[7, 8, 9a] the Lynn party was authorized to occupy a tract of land eight miles square at any place they chose on the Island "with as full and free liberty in both church order and civil government, as the plantations in Massachusetts enjoyed." Daniel How then bought from the Indians their rights to the land extending "from the eastern part of Oyster-bay, to the western part of a bay called after him, How's bay [also called Schouts or Cow's Bay and now Manhasset], to the middle of the plains being half the breadth of the Island."[9a] Assuming that all necessary preliminaries were then arranged, the party embarked and arrived on May 10, 1640, at Cow [Schouts] Bay at the western end of the Island [see map on p. 533]. Upon landing, they discovered, to their surprise, the coat of arms of the Prince of Orange fastened to a tree—the explanation being that certain Indians had just assigned their rights in that vicinity to the Dutch who then gave evidence of their claim to ownership, by defying the authority of Farret's power of attorney over the west end of the Island and repudiating the Indian sale to the Lynn men.[8] Ignorant of these facts, however, and confident in the possession of Lord Sterling's contract, How, or perhaps Farret,

* It was undoubtedly she who died September 20, 1694, at Lynn, as "PARNELL Laughton," having married, secondly, there,[12] on October 31, 1687, John Laiton.

removed this insignia and the party proceeded to fell trees and build houses.[9] One of the Indians notified the Dutch authorities of this action by the "foreign strollers" and they, after investigation, sent two officers and twenty men, on May 13, 1640, to arrest the "strollers and vagabonds." This squad arrived two days later, seized six men, including Philip[2] and NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND,* and took them before the Dutch Council at New Amsterdam where, after examination, they were confined in prison for four days while the Governor wrote a letter in Latin to Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts and received a reply in the same language.[9] The verbatim testimony of these prisoners is extant and gives their ages, places of birth and intention as emigrants.[9] They were exonerated from the charge of tearing down the arms of the Prince and were released without penalty upon "condition that they do promise to depart forthwith from our territory, and never to return to it without the Director's express consent."[8, 9, 9a] The Lynn party then journeyed about eighty miles to the eastern end of Long Island, arriving there evidently by June, for they received a deed from Lord Sterling dated June 12, and confirmed August 20, which, with another from the Indians, secured to them the locality which was later named Southampton[9] [see map on p. 645].

Philip[2] soon returned to his old home at Lynn and a document dated December 23, 1641, shows that his holdings on Long Island were then in possession[4a] of his brother NATHANIEL[2], who is said likewise to have returned to Lynn before[4] 1644 and certainly was there before July, 1647, when he took the oath of freeman.[13] After his return he served[13] on trial juries in 1647, 1651–2, 1657 and 1675; on grand juries in 1658–9, 1663, 1666, 1668–70 and 1675 and on inquest juries in 1665 and 1669.

In 1649, suit for trespass and for appropriating two cows was instituted against NATHANIEL[2] and George Burrill but the verdict favored the defendants, granting them[14] the animals in question or £12. He was a soldier in King Philip's War[28] under Capt. Nicholas Manning of Ipswich and in February, 1675–6, was credited with service to the amount of £1–16–00 and on December 24, 1676, with additional pay due of thirteen shillings eight pence.

NATHANIEL[2] was a selectman, or one of "the Seven Prudential men," in 1673 and 1678. He frequently[14] acted as overseer of wills, witnessed both wills and bonds, helped to take inventories and testified in lawsuits. In 1673

*The carelessness as to spelling which obtained in that early day is seen in the fact that the signatures of these two brothers, in this case, show four variations in the spelling of the last name—Cartelyn, Cartelant, Carelant and Kartelant.[9a]

he was one of a committee appointed to grant permission, on occasion, to the inhabitants to fell trees in the town common[15] and, in 1677, was one of eight men chosen by the selectmen "to have inspection into houses unlicensed, to prevent excessive drinking and tippling."[15] He was called Sergeant in 1677, 1680 and 1681, and was fined for not appearing for grand jury duty in 1680, but this fine was remitted[15] "on account of weakness and inability" in 1681. He was taxed[15] for the "country rates" six shillings eleven pence, in 1681.

The children of NATHANIEL[2] and PARNELL (——) KIRTLAND, several of them born undoubtedly on Long Island and in unknown order, were[3, 11, 12, 19a, 19b, 22, 24]

I. Nathaniel[3], b. about[16] 1647, probably on Long Island; d. before[12] 1690; inventory taken June 24, 1690; m. at Lynn, June 20, 1675, Mary[3] Rand (Robert[2], Robert[1])[19a] who m. 2nd, Dr. Burchsted, of Lynn.

II. Hannah[3], b. April 15, 1652, at Lynn; d. after May 19, 1691; m.[18] February 20, 1678–9, William[2] Pratt (WILLIAM[1]).

III. Philip[3], b. (—); buried at Lynn, June 28, 1688; m. there October 14, 1679, Ruth Pierce. He is sometimes considered son of Philip[2], but his will[22a] dated June 4, 1688, and proved November 25, 1690, gave his clothes to his brothers Nathaniel[3] Kirtland, John Bread and Samuel Bass, thus identifying him with this family.

IV. Ann[3],* b. April 16, 1658, at Lynn.

V. JOHN[3], see following.

VI. Elizabeth[3],* b. March 20, 1664, at Lynn.

VII. Mary[3], twin, b. May 15, 1667, at Lynn; d. before 1690; m. at Lynn, April 28, 1686, John[3] Bread (Allen[2], Allen[1]).[19]

VIII. Martha[3],† twin, b. May 15, 1667, at Lynn; will dated June 13, 1729, was probated in Taunton, Mass., d.[19a] February 7, 1737–8; m. 1st at Saybrook, February 10, 1685, Joseph Blague;[19a, 23] m., 2nd, November 14, 1705, at Saybrook, as his second wife, William[2] Southworth (Constant[1]).[19a, 19b]

IX. Priscilla[3],‡ [undoubtedly] b. probably 1645–50, perhaps on Long Island; d. at Lynn, October 28, 1676. In June, 1670, she confessed[17] to the Quarterly Court at Salem that she had traveled on the Lord's day; in November, 1672, she was granted by the court a £10 bequest from the estate of her deceased fiancé, Daniel Knight, who died[17a] intestate; on September 25, 1673, she married Benjamin Collins, of Lynn, and had two children, one a daughter, Susanna.

X. Sarah[3],† b. probably on Long Island; probably she who d. May 21, 1676, having perhaps[12] m. 1st, October 5, 1664, at Lynn, John Davis; and having m. 2nd, about 1669, as his first wife, Thomas[2] Lee (Thomas[1]).[19b, 22] The probate record of the will of NATHANIEL[2] mentions daughter "Sarah Lee."

* Since the will[22a] of Philip[3] gave his clothes to his brothers Nathaniel[3] Kirtland, John Bread and Samuel Bass, there is a suggestion that one of his sisters may have been the wife of Samuel Bass (as one certainly was the wife of John Bread). It may have been Ann[3] or Elizabeth[3].

† Concerning Martha[3] and Sarah[3] there is some discrepancy of statement in the references quoted under[19b], but evidence goes to show that the dates given are correct.

‡ The name Priscilla is not found earlier, nor elsewhere contemporaneously, in the Kirtland family, and is seen subsequently only in the families of Nathaniel[3] and JOHN[3].

JOHN[3] KIRTLAND (*Nathaniel*[2], *Philip*[1]) was born in August, 1659, at Lynn, Massachusetts, and died January 20, 1716, at Saybrook, Connecticut. He married[18, 19a] at Saybrook, on November 8 or 18, 1679, LYDIA[2] PRATT [see Pratt, p. 681].

When JOHN[3] was but thirteen years old his father entered into a formal agreement with his childless sister, the boy's aunt, Susanna (Kirtland) Westall, and her husband, John Westall, whereby the boy was "resigned" to them.

"The will of John Wastall as to JOHN[3] CORTLAND being his ayr, Jully the 15, 1676," included an agreement between the testator "of Saybrook in the Collony of Conanicut and Mr. NATHANIELL CORTLAND of lin in the Collony of the Massachusetts," whereby the latter "doth resighn up his son JOHN CORTLAND to the dispose of the said Wastall, that is to say, the said Wastall doth promise to take the said JOHN as his own, to bring him up under good edication, in the nurtor and admonition of the lord and to do his best indevor to instruct hime in all things pertaining to life and godlyness as also at the decease of the said Wastall that then the said JOHN CORTLAND shall suksead in the estate of the said Wastall as his own proper ayr, . . ."[19a] This document was witnessed by ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN.

Though JOHN[3] left his home to grow to manhood in new surroundings, it is interesting to note that four of his sisters, Hannah[3], Mary[3], Martha[3] and Sarah[3], married into Saybrook families, thus suggesting that they had visited considerably in their aunt's home. When JOHN[3] was only twenty-three years old, his uncle, John Westall, died, leaving him his entire estate according to the earlier contract, excepting £500 which was reserved for the widow,[3] who died about a year later, leaving her portion also to her nephew.[10, 11, 18]

In 1702 JOHN[3] was appointed Lieutenant of the fort at Saybrook and, in 1708, was appointed to a similar rank in the second company or train-band of that town.[20] Since Saybrook was then a college town, it is safe to assume that some of the families took into their homes the students from other towns. Evidently this was true regarding JOHN[3] KIRTLAND,* for an old family account[26] shows that David Harriman, doubtless attending Yale College, owed him four shillings sixpence per week from October 17, 1711, to June 12, 1712, making a total of £7–08–06 for board and room, three shillings sixpence,

* The standing in which this family was held is suggested in these words relative to William Lord of Saybrook, of whom it is said he "must have been a man of unusual character, and has been classed with Gardiner, Winthrop, Higginson, Whittlesey, Griswold and Kirtland."

for candles and eight shillings eight pence, for firewood, of which £8–00–06 is shown as having been paid to the wife of JOHN[3]. Of his own children, at least one, Daniel[4], was educated at Yale.*

The children of JOHN[3] and LYDIA (PRATT) KIRTLAND, all born at Saybrook, were[3, 11, 18, 21, 24]

I. John[4], b. (July 11)[11] or (January 11),[18, 24] 1681; d. after 1735; m.[22] 1st, March 3, 1703, Temperance Buckingham; m.[18, 24] 2nd, March or August 29, 1716, Lydia Belden.
II. Priscilla[4], b. February 1, 1682–3; m. Thomas Jones.
III. Lydia[4], b. October 11, 1685; d. January 29, 1743; m. 1st, about 1708, Robert[2] Griffing (Jasper[1]); m.[24] 2nd, April 25, 1732, Joseph Conklin.[27]
IV. ELIZABETH[4], b.[18, 24] June 27, 1688, or[25] 1689; d.[25] April 27, 1778, at Saybrook. She married there January 11, 1715, JOHN[3] SHIPMAN [see Shipman, p. 735 and plates XXX p. 869, XXXII p. 871, XXXIII p. 872].
V. Nathaniel[4], b. October 24, 1690; d.[21] February 27, 1750; m. 1st, November 26, 1713, Sarah[4] Chapman (Samuel[3], Robert[2], ROBERT[1]); m. 2nd, August 22, 1716, Phebe (Marvin) De Wolf [daughter of Reinold[3] Marvin (Reinold[2], Reinold[1])];[21] m. 3rd, Elizabeth (——).
VI. Philip[4], b. May 28, 1693; d. September 23, 1764 , at Saybrook;[21] m. June 16, 1726, Lydia Marvin, sister of Phebe, above.
VII. Martha[4], b. August 11, 1695; d. after May 19, 1738; m. October 27, 1718, Rev. Henry Wills.
VIII. Samuel[4], b. January 19, 1699; d. February, 1760; m. March 31, 1731, Martha[3] Whittlesey[22] (John[2], John[1]).
IX. Daniel[4] (Rev.), b. June 17, 1701; d. May 17, 1763 or 1773, at Norwich; m. there July 15, 1723, Mary[4] Perkins (Joseph[3], Jacob[2], JOHN[1]).[21] [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]
X. Parnell[4],† b. October 16, 1704; d.[22] July 26, 1748; m. February 17, 1731, John[3] Tully (William[2], John[1]).

*Through his son Daniel[4], JOHN[3] had a grandson, the Rev. Samuel[5], who became the well-known missionary to the Oneida Indians, and a great grandson, John Thornton Kirtland, President of Harvard College.[11]

†This woman's daughter, Parnell Tully, with her father John Tully and with Elias Tully [husband of Azubah[6] Kirtland (Samuel[5], Samuel[4], JOHN[3] KIRTLAND)], witnessed in 1771 the will of JOSHUA[4] BUSHNELL, Azubah being granddaughter to the testator.

REFERENCES

1. Encyclopedia Brittanica; Historic Dress in America, E. McClellan, 1904, pp. 49, 64, 94–6; Colonial Laws of Massachusetts, reprinted from edition of 1660, with sup. to 1672, containing also the Body of Liberties of 1641, 1889, p. 123. Handbook of American Indians, F. W. Hodge, 1910, pt. 2, pp. 591–2.

1a. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 270; History of Lynn, Mass., A. Lewis and J. R. Newhall, 1865, pp. 88–9, 154–5, 172.

2. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, I, 203–4; New England Register, XLI, 60.

3. Savage, III, 31–2.

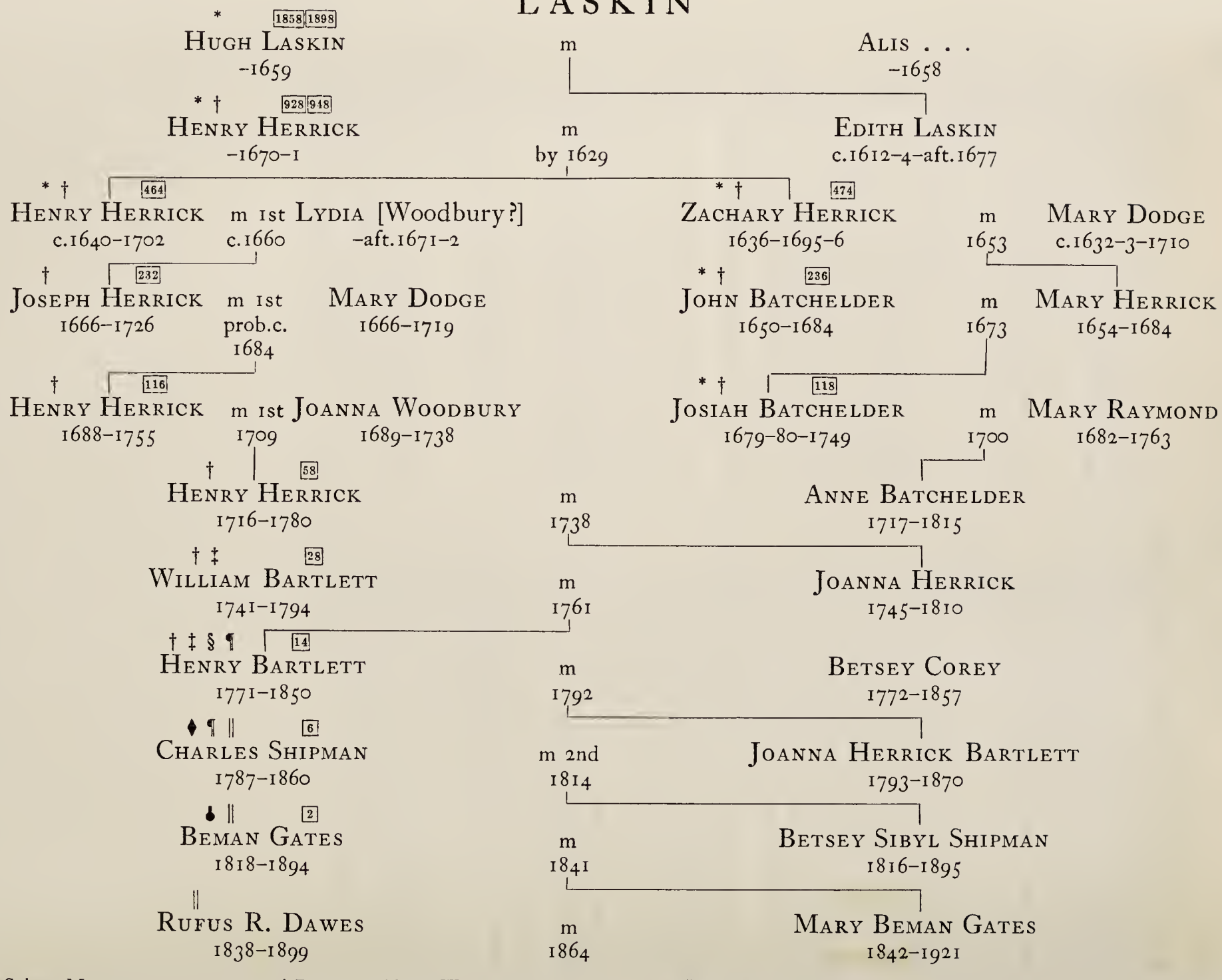
4. History of Southampton, Long Island, N. Y., G. R. Howell, 1887, pp. 18, 430.

4a. Town Records of Southampton, Long Island, N. Y., 1874, I, 25.

5. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 10, 14, 89, 156, 180, 191, 231, 238, 253, 271, 274, 395.

6. Ibid., I, 32, 274; II, 302–4; Probates of Essex County, Mass., I, 343–5.
7. Town Records of Southampton, Long Island, N. Y., 1874, I, 1–11, 25. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Ser. I, Vol. I, No. 11, p. 9.
8. History of Southampton, Long Island, N. Y., G. R. Howell, 1887, pp. 14–8, 20–4, 449–51; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1882, I, 604–5, 625.
9. History of Lynn, Mass., A. Lewis and J. R. Newhall, 1865, pp. 192–4, 266.
9a. First Settlement of Long Island Towns, S. Wood, 1865, pp. 10–1, 199–200; New York Colonial Manuscripts, II, 144–50; History of Long Island, B. F. Thompson, 1843, II, 54–5; Calendar of Historical Mss. of New York, pt. 1, Dutch Mss., 1865, pp. 71–2; Colonial History of New York, 1883, XIV, Documents of Long Island, pp. 28–31.
10. History of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, 752.
11. New England Register, XXXIII, 61; XLVIII, 66–70.
11a. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 473.
12. Vital Records of Lynn, Mass., I, 228–9; II, 217, 520, 523.
13. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 114, 129, 229, 270; II, 59, 123, 157; III, 102, 297, 367; IV, 66, 143, 212, 292; VI, 73, 111.
14. Ibid., I, 170; II, 32, 34; IV, 182, 193, 271, 327; V, 198, 252; VI, 112; VII, 124, 151.
15. Ibid., V, 192; VI, 289, 400; VIII, 24, 106, 122.
16. Ibid., VIII, 124.
17. Ibid., III, 422, 461.
17a. Ibid., IV, 274; V, 117; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., II, 305; Savage, I, 433; Vital Records of Lynn, Mass., II, 217, 462.
18. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 169, 260–3, 373–4; Savage, IV, 488–9.
19. Breed Genealogy, J. H. Breed, 1892, No. 51.
19a. Early Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1852, p. 597; Rand Genealogy, F. O. Rand, 1898, p. 14; New England Register, XXIX, 112; XLVIII, 347; Savage, I, 191; Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine, 1897, pp. 82–4; Southworth Genealogy [descent of Cora Southworth (Rountree) Hathaway], pp. 17, 17a; Southworth Genealogy, S. G. Webber, 1905, pp. 193–4, 198–200.
19b. Salisbury Genealogies, E. E. and E. M. Salisbury, 1892, I, pt. 1, p. 267; II, 134–148; III, 26, 28; Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Connecticut, F. G. Mather, 1913, p. 445; Hamlin Family, H. F. Andrews, 1900, p. 43; S. M. Fox, Manhattan, Kansas, in Boston Transcript, April 7, 1924.
20. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IV, 401; V, 69.
21. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 56, 61; Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 71–2; John Perkins Family, G. A. Perkins, 1889, pt. 3, p. 17–8.
22. Whittlesey Family, C. B. Whittlesey, 1898, pp. 41–2, 61, 89–91; History of Wallingford, Conn., C. H. S. Davis, 1870, p. 839; Buckingham Family, F. W. Chapman, 1872, pp. 145, 151–2; Ancestry of Joseph Smith and Emma Hale, M.A.S. Anderson, 1929, p. 193.
22a. Notes of V. C. Sanborn, deceased, of Chicago, Ill.; Essex County, Mass., Records, Old Series, III, 16.
23. Savage, I, 191; New England Register, XXIX, 112.
24. Ibid., XIV, 241–3; New York Record, XLIX, 70.
25. Shipman Family Bible in possession of Mrs. Mary Biscoe, Marietta, O., in 1926.
26. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, p. 292.
27. Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Connecticut, F. G. Mather, 1913, p. 366; Jasper Griffing Genealogy, C. J. Stone, 1881, pp. 7–8.
28. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 278, 450.

LASKIN



* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♠ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

LASKIN

HUGH[1] LASKIN, his wife ALICE ("ALIS") and their daughter EDITH[2] came to America[12] in the "Abigail," Henry Gaudens, Master, sailing from Weymouth, co. Dorset, on June 20, and arriving at Salem, September 6, 1628, with John Endicott, the new governor, and various colonists who all settled at Salem. This vessel is the one which brought, in Endicott and his government, such sad disappointment for ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] WOODBURY, JOHN[1] BALCH and their friends. It is said that the vessel grounded on the shallows in the bay and that in order to save the dignity and clothing of John Endicott, he was carried to shore on the shoulders of JOHN[1] WOODBURY and another.

HUGH[1] LASKIN became a proprietor of Salem at least as early as 1635, was a church member in 1636 and a freeman[4, 5] on May 22, 1639. Various grants of land were made to him including a farm of about sixty acres, a tract of seventy acres "next to JOHN WOODBURY," "about ten pole to the water side, by that place where the old planters do move for," and other parcels.[6] In a list written by the hand of ROGER[1] CONANT and probably pertaining to the year 1637, it is seen that the family of HUGH[1] then consisted of three persons[1, 3] which would have been his wife, himself and son Timothy[2]. His residence was on what is now Front Street.[1] His name was sometimes spelled[3] "Larkin."

In 1644 evidence is seen of a penurious disposition on the part of HUGH[1] and his wife, for at that time they were fined "40s for hard usage of his late servant in victuals and clothes." The witnesses included WILLIAM[1] DODGE and JOHN[1] BALCH, of whom the latter admitted to the court that he "had dealt" "with him [LASKIN] about clothing and proposed to deal further" but also "acknowledged the sin of not having dealt brotherly with him." Another witness testified that "he heard [that] the greater part of his [the servant's] diet was coarse bread and whey: but Goodman LASKIN denied it, . . . that the bed and clothing were not as should be and [the witness]

showed the piece of coarse bread and Goodman LASKIN did chide his wife for it. One time the boy did not eat till 11 o'clock . . . and the boy was growing thin. . . ."[7]

The question arises as to whether HUGH[1] may not have made a trip to England about 1647 for, in November, 1672, his daughter EDITH (LASKIN) HERRICK, then aged about sixty, deposed[8] relative to a farm which her father "before he went away which is about twenty-five years," had sold jointly to WILLIAM[1] HASKELL and his brother Roger Haskell.[8] [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]

No evidence is seen that HUGH[1] lived in any other town in New England than Salem. His wife ALICE died[11] there on July 23, 1658, and he died there the following winter,[1] so it seems as though the absence his daughter referred to might have been caused by a visit rather than an actual removal. His son Timothy[2] had died[1] before 1658 and his own death occurred before March 29, 1659, when administration of his estate[9, 10] was granted to his son-in-law HENRY[1] HERRICK. On June 28, following, the latter man brought suit against Elias Stileman, Sr., for taking this estate into his own possession so that the plaintiff was unable to bring in an inventory as the court had ordered, though one had been taken by others a week before his appointment as administrator and then showed a valuation[9, 10] of over £58.

A petition was filed by Damaris (——) Laskin Mansfield, widow of the son Timothy[2] Laskin asking settlement for the expense of the funeral of HUGH[1] to the amount of 6 pounds 10 shillings and also asking a portion of the estate for the care of the two Laskin children whom she had by Timothy[2]. The court directed that she should have two-thirds of the estate of HUGH[1] for these children and that the other third should go to his daughter EDITH (LASKIN) HERRICK.[9, 10] Suit was filed against the administrator in June, 1659, by Paul Mansfield, then husband of the widow of Timothy[2] Laskin, claiming that HENRY[1] HERRICK as administrator was illegally breaking up "housen" and taking away goods and cattle.[10]

The children of HUGH[1] and ALICE (——) LASKIN, both born in England, were

I. EDITH[2], born about 1612[8] or perhaps[2] 1614; d. after 1672; married, probably in England or Salem, Mass., before 1629, HENRY[1] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 421].

II. Timothy[2], b. (—); d. before 1658; m. Damaris (——).

REFERENCES

1. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, pp. 305–6, 314, 316, 341, 428, 454, 458, 464.
2. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 18–9.
3. Dodge Genealogy, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 14.
4. Pope's Pioneers, p. 278.
5. New England Register, III, 187, VI, 342, 346.
6. Town Records of Salem, Mass., I, 15, 20, 26, 43, 103, 143.
7. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 69.
8. Ibid., V, 112.
9. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 280–2.
10. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 59, 150, 157, 160, 164–6.
11. Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, II, 257.
12. Planters of the Commonwealth, C. E. Banks, 1930, p. 59.

LITTLE

* [248]
John Little
perhaps c.1646–1713

m
1680

Mary White
prob.1660–2–1715

* [124]
Anthony Little
prob.1685–7–1731–4

m 2nd
prob.by 1709

Mary [?Ladner?]
–aft.1733–4

* # † ‡ [62]
Absalom Little
by 1710–aft.1781,prob.1785

m
prob.1740–5,bef.1749

Esther Pettyjohn
prob.abt.1720–prob.1804–5

§ † ‡ [30]
John Corey
prob.c.1740–bet.1775 and 1785

m 2nd
bet.1765–1770

Betsey Little
prob.1745–6–prob.bet.1790 and 1800

‖ ⊙ ◇ ♦ [14]
Henry Bartlett
1771–1850

m
1792

Betsey Corey
1772–1857

¶ ♥ ♦ [6]
Charles Shipman
1787–1860

m 2nd
1814

Joanna Herrick Bartlett
1793–1870

▲ ♥ [2]
Beman Gates
1818–1894

m
1841

Betsey Sibyl Shipman
1816–1895

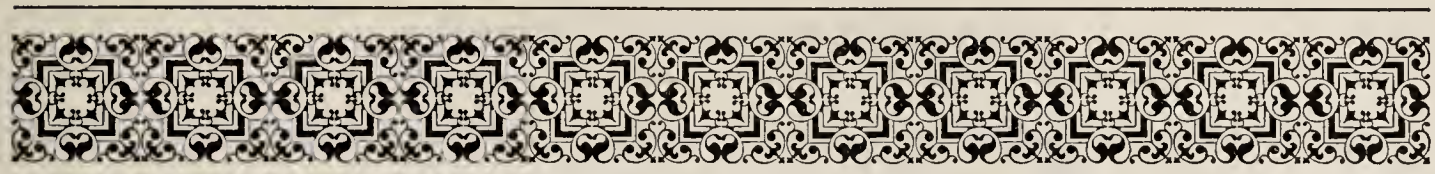
♥
Rufus R. Dawes
1838–1899

m
1864

Mary Beman Gates
1842–1921

* Elizabeth, N. J.
† Sussex Co., Del.
‡ Bedford Co., Pa., a part of which became Fayette Co., Pa.
§ Cape May Co., N. J.
‖ Beverly, Mass.
¶ Saybrook, Conn.

♥ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
\# Westfield, N. J.
⊙ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
◇ Merrittstown, Pa.
▲ Montague and Amherst, Mass.



LITTLE–LITTELL*

JOHN[1] LITTLE† is first definitely found recorded at Elizabeth, New Jersey, in November, 1667, when he purchased[1] from Christopher[2] Young (Rev. John[1])‡ of Southold, Long Island, his Elizabethtown property, including a "first-lot-right" and a house lot of four acres, which was bounded on the west "by the highway that goeth to Woodbridge."

JOHN[1] may have had[2a] an unrecorded first marriage, since he had a house lot in 1667, though the only marriage of record[2] concerning him is that at Elizabeth on April 26, 1680, to MARY[2] WHITE [see White, p. 822]. He was a carpenter and seems to have been a very successful business man, for, in addition to the realty already mentioned [which he bought thirteen years before this marriage], he purchased[6] three years later, on December 26, 1670, for £65, from Evan Salsbury, of Elizabeth, that man's own house lot as well

*In the earlier generations these two forms of spelling were used more or less interchangeably, but at later periods given branches of the family have used one form or the other exclusively. In this work, however, the form "Little" will be arbitrarily used for the four earlier generations.

†Weighty evidence of relationship is furnished[2a] by the facts that George Ross [whose land in Elizabeth, New Jersey, later abutted[2] on that of our JOHN[1] LITTLE] married[3] on December 7, 1658, in New Haven, Connecticut, a Constance Little; that the Ross' eldest son was named "John"; and that a daughter [as well as later descendants, at least to the fourth generation] of JOHN[1] LITTLE was named "Constance," which was then, as it is now, a very unusual name. Moreover, an unidentified John Little was resident in New Haven before 1659, as a servant to Isaac Allerton, Sr., of that town [who had come to Plymouth in the Mayflower]. After the death of Allerton the conservators of his estate reported to the Court in December, 1659, that for £3 they had sold to Richard Hull the remaining time of service due from John Little, with the latter's consent, and that Hull had engaged to pay Little ten bushels of Indian corn "or the vallew of it & a hatchet & a how at the end of his time, & then to furnish him wth cloathes fit for a servant."[4] This man Little was not further recorded in New Haven and may easily have been our JOHN[1] and have removed to Elizabeth, as did certainly George and Constance (Little) Ross.

In some quarters the opinion [probably erroneous] prevails[2] that JOHN[1] LITTLE was first at Newbury, Massachusetts, and was "near kin, perhaps brother" [though by some called even a son] of George[1] Little, who was resident there at least most of the time from 1640 until his death in 1693–4. This George[1] Little purchased one hundred acres of land in Woodbridge, New Jersey, in March, 1669–70, which was sold[5] in February, 1701–2, by his son Joseph[2] and grandson John[3] Little [heir of Moses[2] deceased], but if George[1] Little himself ever lived in New Jersey it must have been for a short time only. He must have been much older than our JOHN[1], for he had a child born in 1652 [and a son John[2] born in 1655, who is said to have died in 1672], while our JOHN[1] was not married until 1680 and, if related at all to George[1], might more likely have been a nephew than a brother.

‡Step-father to our ANNA (PALGRAVE) WOODBURY.

as the house lot and entire "second-lot-right"* formerly owned by William Cramer. JOHN[1], in his own right as an inhabitant and because of his investment in the town's holdings, received a "second-lot-right," though whether or not it was in addition to the above purchase is not evident.

In reluctant obedience to the demands of the Lords Proprietors [see White, p. 818] JOHN[1] applied to them for a warrant for lands [which had been his own for many years], and on March 14, 1676, he received a warrant for one hundred eighty acres in the right of himself and of Evan Salsbury, whom he had bought out six years earlier. On December 1, 1676, he received a patent for one hundred thirty-two acres. Some of the various tracts held by him were described [see map on p. 533] by the phrases: "near the Ash Swamp," "in the plain," "north west of Woodbridge road," "between the Great River [i. e., the Sound or Arthur Kol] and Thomson's Creek" [often called also Morse's Creek], and "in the Rahawack [or Rawack, meaning Rahway] meadows."[6, 7]

On June 11, 1686, JOHN[1] and his wife, MARY, sold to Governor Gawen Lawrie one hundred thirty-two acres of land in nine parcels, including a ten-acre home lot bounded on the west by Woodbridge road.[7] The home place of JOHN[1] adjoined that of his father-in-law, ROBERT[1] WHITE.

Many men of Elizabeth were occupied in the early years in getting out oak pipe staves† and in carrying on the whaling industry, which they found profitable. In 1668–9 a group of Elizabethtown men obtained a charter from Governor Carteret for "the exclusive right, for three years, of taking whales along the coast from Barnegat to the Eastern part of the Province, one twentieth part of the oil in casks to be given to the Lords Proprietors."[13] The interests of the people of New Jersey were mostly agricultural or marine. "Few or no Trading Men being here in this Province," which implies that there was little money in circulation. We are told[6] that "As for the Temperature of the Air, it is wonderfully scituated to the Humours of Mankind, . . ." that "We are well supplied with salt [water] fish at our doors, or within half a tyde's passage and fresh [water] fish in abundance in every little brook . . ."; "We have one thing more, . . . which is vast Oyster banks, which is Constant fresh victuals during the winter, to English, as well as Indians";

* The extent of a man's "right" in the common holdings of the Associates was decided by the sum he invested toward the purchase of land for the settlement at Elizabethtown. A second-lot-right was double, and a third-lot-right was treble, what was called for by a first-lot-right.

† Pipe staves were cut in large quantities for making pipes, which were casks containing as much as two hogsheads, or half a tun. It is said[19] that the Statutes of the Realm required, at least in the early days, that as many staves of timber as were taken out of England, to be used as containers for some commodity, must be brought back into it, and certain it is that, even to this day, one who cuts down a tree in England must plant another.

DETAIL OF ELIZABETH, NEW JERSEY, VICINITY ILLUSTRATING LITTLE AND WHITE AND OF LONG ISLAND ILLUSTRATING COE AND KIRTLAND

[See map on p. 645]

the "Oysters I think would serve all England"; "We have store of clams esteemed much better than Oysters"; "Provisions here are very plentiful"; "There is not a poor [hungry?] body in all the province, nor that wants" [for food, doubtless]. "In all probability there is not an industrious man, but by God's blessing may not only have a comfortable, but plentiful supplie of all things necessary for this life."

An illustration[13] of the restraint exercised against careless conduct is seen in the enactment in 1668 of a law "For the better preventing disorders and misdemeanors in young persons and others . . . that if any person shall be abroad from the usual place of their abode, and found in night-walking, Drinking in any tapp-house, or any other house or place at unreasonable times, after nine of the clock at night," without giving an acceptable reason therefor, they were to be bound over to the next court and punished. An

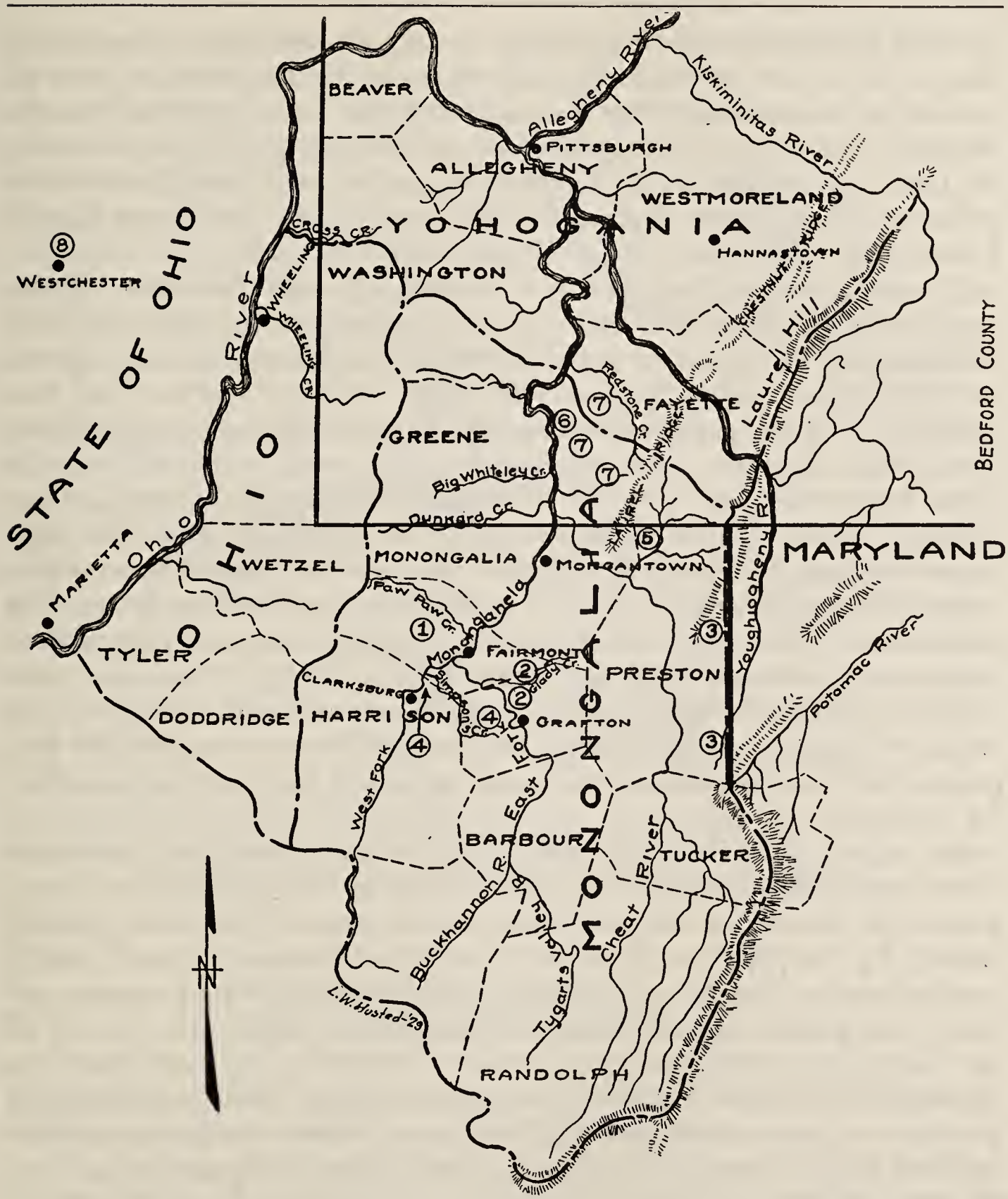
interesting document[6] showing similar thoughtful care is the indenture of March 25, 1669, whereby Nicholas Carter, of Elizabeth, bound out his son, Nicholas Jr. [born 1658], to Richard Painter, "Taylor." It specified that "Unlawfull Sports and Games he shall not use, Taverns or Tipling houses hee shall not haunt or frequent, his masters Goods he shall not Imbezle purloin or by any unlawfull means diminish or Impair, his Masters Secrets he shall not disclose."

The occupation of JOHN[1] LITTLE as carpenter evidently rendered the employment of apprentices desirable, and on June 21, 1680, he received from Edmund Loftis, of Chester River, Maryland, the assignment of three years' service of William Madox, but by September 14 of that year William had run away and JOHN[1] solicited of Secretary Niccols, of New York, a "hue and cry"* to recover him.[6a]

In reference to the long controversy[13] over land titles in Elizabeth, as discussed in the ROBERT[1] WHITE chapter, pages 809–21, the settlers will be placed in a fairer light if certain other points be covered. Soon after the arrival in August, 1692, of Governor Andrew Hamilton, the Proprietors, once more in control, determined to bring the matter of the disputed land titles into the courts [over which, through both judges and juries, they had a strong control]. They felt confident that the case would be decided in their favor and

*The "Hue and Cry" was a service obligatory upon a constable, and covered a search for an offender as well as the advertising of a loss of property of any sort. In some cases, at least, a fee was required from him whose interests were served. The original scope of such power, described as follows,[18] would pertain as fully to New York and New Jersey as to New England:

"Perhaps the most remarkable feature of ancient constabulary power as perpetuated in New England down to the present day, is the power to 'speede away all hues & crys' against thieves, robbers, murderers, and breakers of the public peace. This power connects New England Towns most intimately, not only with Old English Parishes but with Saxon Village Communities. In the early middle ages the Hue and Cry was a terrible means of executing justice. It let loose an entire village, like a pack of wolves, in pursuit of an outlaw or fugitive. Every man called upon by the Reeve or Tithingman was obliged to leave work or repose and join the human hunt. When the Hue and Cry reached the next village, the head man of that place was obliged by the law of the Saxons to summon his villagers and *speed away*. The whole Hundred and the whole Shire were thus quickly aroused, and woe then to the wretched outlaw. The country was filled with human hounds thirsting for his blood. It is fearfully significant of the immense power invested in the early New England Constable that he too could raise the old Saxon Hue and Cry, 'by foote, & if need be, by horse,' in hot pursuit of all capital offenders. . . . The familiar cry of 'Stop Thief!' if raised by a Petty Constable [in England?], converts all persons who hear it into a constabulary band, or regular Hue and Cry to chase the offender."[18] As an example, a Hue sent out for a runaway servant in 1666 shows[13] the form employed, as well as the type of clothing then in use: "His name Robert graij an Englishman bornd about 20 yeares of age, a lustij bodied portely fellow, light brownish haire, very little haire on his face, a little demij Castor, a gray broad cloth sute, the breeches tyed att the knees, and a red coate, besides a light graij coulored Serge breeches, and a Snap hansminskell that hee hath stollen awaije wth many other things. It is Supposed that hee is in Company wth one Ruderic Powell, a pittiful fellow, who hath also absented himselfe and runn awaij." Another instance in 1672–3 in Newark described[13] a recalcitrant servant's clothing as " . . . a Dunnish Jackett of Home-spunn Cloath, under wch a red Westcoat, & under that an old Leather Jackett, of a whitish Colour, a paire of reddish leather Breeches, a paire of Leather Drawers under them, wth a paire of white Stockings, & a Hatt lyned wth Cloath of Blackish Colour &c:".



THE DISTRICT OF WEST AUGUSTA, VIRGINIA, IN 1776, AS IT OVERLAPPED SOUTHWESTERN PENNSYLVANIA ILLUSTRATING COREY, LITTLE AND PETTYJOHN

[See also maps on pp. 263, 537, 539]

1. ADONIJAH[3] LITTLE. 2. ABSALOM[3] LITTLE, and PETTYJOHN. 3. JOHN and WM. PETTYJOHN. 4. WM. PETTYJOHN. 5. WM. LITTLE and JOSEPH COREY. 6. ABSALOM[3] LITTLE Home. 7. JOHN[a] COREY. 8. JOSHUA[b] COREY.

that the planters would be compelled to pay the arrearages of quit-rents from 1670 to date or would be dispossessed of their plantations with all accrued improvements. A test case against Jeffry Jones, an Elizabethtown Associate, was tried in 1693 and the jury unexpectedly gave a general verdict for Jones, but on May 14 the Court [being under better control] arbitrarily pronounced a judgment against him. He appealed the case to the King in Council, and His Majesty, King William, on February 25, 1696–7, reversed and repealed the said judgment and declared all issues thereupon null and void, thus confirming the validity of the titles acquired in 1664, for which the Associates had for thirty years contended. This decision naturally served to kindle anew the old animosity between Elizabethtown and the Proprietors, but it also gave renewed courage to the Associates to express more openly their long-repressed dissatisfaction and to oppose still further the rule of the Proprietors, which was by this time held in utter contempt and was definitely doomed. This reversal in 1697 by King William caused the Associates to aspire to a cessation of Proprietary rule and inspired them with a trustfulness in the King's justice and with a desire to come directly under his government. "This relaxation after years of restraint operated, especially on the second generation [who added the intolerance and fire of their own youth to their knowledge of the injustices done their elders], as do spring rains on the ice of winter, to cause a perfect flood of demonstration against the Proprietors and their representatives in the persons of the Court and sheriffs." By the spring and summer of 1700 the townsmen of Elizabeth openly revolted against the existing anomalous government, denied the jurisdiction of the courts, and questioned the authority of even the governor. As a consequence the leaders of the townsmen were imprisoned but were speedily rescued by the populace. A period of strife and violence followed; courts were broken up, sheriffs and others were obstructed in serving processes, and there were mutual recriminations and retaliations which often ignored all law. Amid this terrible confusion it was determined by the cooler heads, including the Elizabeth Associates, to make an appeal direct to the King. A petition was prepared which recited the history of their title from its acquirement in 1664; referred to the fact that they had with "great Labour and Expence, built, planted, and improved . . ." during that time "and they humbly conceive they ought according to Law, Reason and Justice, still to enjoy the same." They rehearsed their past trouble in defending their title and requested an impartial tribunal, asking that the Proprietors should be

COUNTIES OF SOUTHWESTERN PENNSYLVANIA
ILLUSTRATING BARTLETT, COREY, LITTLE, AND PARKER

[See also maps on pp. 263, 535, 539]

1. WILLIAM[4] BARTLETT
2. REDSTONE OLD FORT, now Brownsville
3. ABSALOM[3] LITTLE near present Heistersburg
4. WILLIAM[5] PARKER [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I]

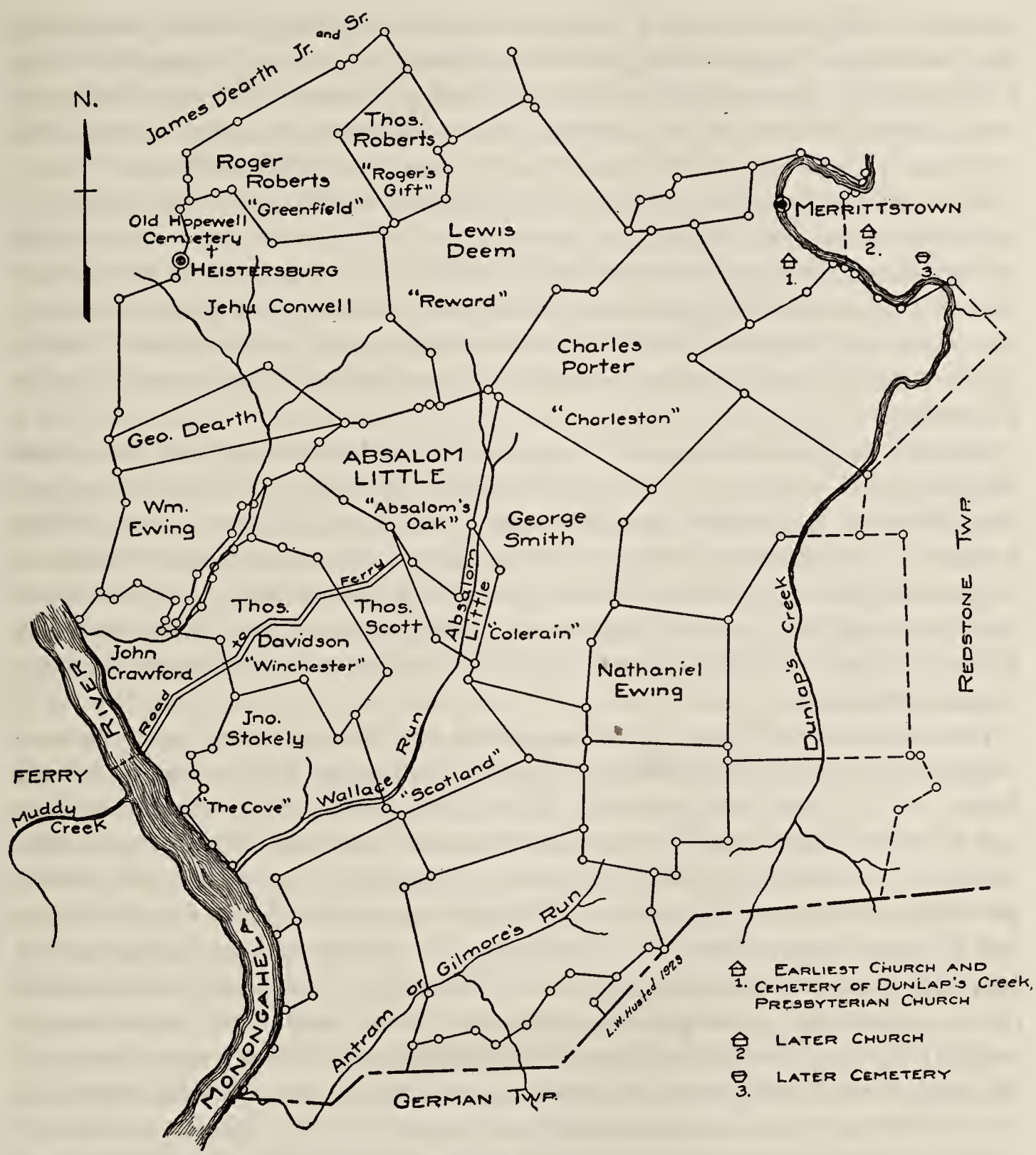
admonished against further usurpation. The signers of this document, one of whom was JOHN[1] LITTLE, were called "Memorialists."

Their anticipation of justice under the rule of William and Mary was[15] cut short by the death of the King in March, 1701–2. Almost coincident with the accession of Queen Anne occurred the final and unconditional surrender to her in April, 1702 by the Proprietors of all their claim to jurisdiction over [but not of land rights in] New Jersey, which then for the first time "became

a Royal Province, governed no longer by a Company of Land Speculators, but directly by the Crown." Queen Anne sent her cousin, the bigoted Lord Cornbury, to be governor of New York and New Jersey, and at his arrival in May, 1703, the Proprietary government in East Jersey ended forever. The Associates were still fated to deep trouble, for their hopeful trust in King William and his justice was sadly disappointed by developments under his successor.

This surrender of jurisdiction by the Proprietors, while it greatly simplified matters of government, made no change with respect to conflicting land titles. Rather, it intensified the hostility between the parties, for "by an implied compromise, it was understood, that the royal government would confirm the Proprietors in their claims to the possession of the soil, as a compensation for their surrender of sovereignty." Lord Cornbury had neither sympathy for nor interest in those whom he was to rule and he managed to dominate by foul means if not by fair. For instance, in the Assembly of 1704 Elizabeth had no Representatives, the county members being from Newark. By questioning the qualifications of three of the members, Lord Cornbury obtained a majority and carried his measures, including a militia law which proved to be a serious grievance to the Quakers, who constituted a large proportion of the population, and he further antagonized the settlers by a decision to entrust the laying-out of highways to several of the most inveterate partisans of his group. The following report as to the activities of this highway committee, made by Col. Morris, one of the [late] Proprietors' party, suggests the type of some of the later trials of the settlers: "They [the surveyors] pull'd down their enemies inclosures laid waies through their orchards, gardens & improvem^{ts}; there was one gentleman at whom they had an extraordinary pique, and they laid a way over a mill pond, to necessitate him to pull down dam & mills that could not be erected for 1000 pounds, or to pull it down themselves, though the gentleman offered to build a bridge over the streame, at his own charge, 1-4 of a mile distant wch would have been 3-4 nearer and better way. To be short they never omitted an ill turn they could do, and alwaies went out of their way to do it."

Moreover, the inhabitants were impoverished by the excessive taxation necessary to support this government. To quote Col. Morris again [though admitting him to be against Cornbury and, strangely enough, at this time solicitous for the Associates]: "The whole Province was filled with murmurs and complaints; but neither that nor y^{e} hearty curses they liberaly bestow'd



EARLY LAND GRANTS (1770–85) IN LUZERNE TOWNSHIP, FAYETTE COUNTY, PENNSYLVANIA, ILLUSTRATING LITTLE

[See also maps on pp. 263 and 537]

upon the vilains that were ye authors of their sufferings, avail'd anything; they were forced to get money, some by takeing it up at 10, 20, 30, & more p^r^ Cent interest, those whose credit would not go, even on ye most desperate terms, were forc't to sell w^t^ they had was vendible, to raise the money, and very many there was y^t^ sold good milch cowes to raise six shillings."

By 1707 the Representatives openly rebuked Cornbury in the Assembly, and complaints against him from every part of both provinces were forwarded to the Queen. His removal resulted in 1708 and he was later imprisoned in New York for debt. His place was filled for a short time by Governor Lovelace, who soon died, and by 1710 he was superseded by Governor Hunter, whose administration was acceptable and contrasted happily with that of Cornbury.

A series of prosecutions in the interest of the [one-time] Proprietors was commenced in 1714–5 . . . the first year of the reign of George I, to test once more the validity of the Associates' titles [dating back to 1664]. This became a long-drawn-out action which subjected the Associates or their heirs to great expense and anxiety. The litigation included various ejectment cases [mostly instigated by the Proprietors], including the noted Vaughan case, which ran from 1714 until about 1730, when it died a natural death without actual settlement.

One more form of outrage is suggested by the significant statement of August 2, 1720, that "The Books of Record, Belonging To The said Elizabeth Town, . . . have been privately Taken Away from him unto whose Care and Custody They were Committed; And Are not Likely To be Again Obtained. . . ." The town clerk in later years deposed that these books "were priviately Stollin and taken away, Wherein was Contained a certain Grant and License to purchase . . . ," meaning the Associates' original grant. A carefully prepared document, signed on November 18, 1729, by one hundred eleven Associates, more plainly states that these books "by Some One or more Designing Person or persons were Craftily and Maliciously Stole and (as there is no Small reason to believe) were Burnt or otherwise destroy'd. . . ." At the above town-meeting on August 2, 1720, the Associates decided to make common cause in any future lawsuits attacking their land titles, and to that end appointed a committee of seven men to represent the town in all matters pertaining to their lands. This concerted action had immediate good results and was continued for many years. In 1731 and 1739 other distressing periods of litigation were entered, making practically a

continuous lawsuit, which was so costly that in July, 1734, in March, 1734–5, and in September, 1735, the townsmen authorized the sale of large tracts of their common land to provide funds to carry on these cases. The one-time Proprietors "were astounded by this vigorous action of the irrepressible yeomanry of Elizabeth Town."

In 1738, after an existence of thirty-five years "as an appendage of the Province of New York, under a succession of Royal Governors residing in the City of New York, . . ." New Jersey at last obtained an independent position as a separate province under the governorship of Lewis Morris, one of her own citizens. This paved the way for Elizabeth to petition Governor Morris to request from the King a charter of incorporation for Elizabeth as a free borough. This charter was granted by George II [who succeeded his father in 1727] on February 8, 1739–40, and thenceforth Elizabeth enjoyed comparative freedom. Though the Associates had won a moral victory in their contest over land titles, a definite legal settlement was never accomplished. It was persistently delayed by means of re-trials; by requests for endless continuances; by the death or removal of various principals; by the excitement intervening because of the Stamp Act, the Boston Tea Party and Port Bill and similar broad issues; and finally by the opening of the Revolutionary War, which in itself, settled such issues forever. "Such was the end of this famous struggle, continued for a whole century, and resulting in the vindication of the original purchasers of the soil, and the defeat of their opponents."[15]

The unprecedented trials endured by these people, which alone could justify their occasional outbreaks, and which certainly must have bred traits of character in them which would carry down the ages, demand that this recital should not be closed without thus carrying the tale to completion, even though the participation of JOHN[1] LITTLE ended in 1713, that of his son ANTHONY[2] ended about 1734, and that of his grandson ABSALOM[3] around 1740–5, when he, with at least two brothers, removed to Delaware.

In the meanwhile, following King William's confirmation of their titles, and with firm expectation of his continued fairness, they had decided in December, 1699, to divide proportionately among the townsmen the outlying lands of their purchase; and by March 5, 1699–1700, the section from the Newark line on the north to the Woodbridge line on the south, and from the Sound west to the foot of the mountain [about seventeen thousand acres, see map on p. 533], had been apportioned. The settlement of these outlying sections, including Westfield, dates from this division and, as in the case of

the Little family, it was made by the children or grandchildren of the first settlers, whose rights brought them the land.[13]

These men[13] of New Jersey were not particularly well educated and not well supplied with this world's goods, yet their characters and conduct made an indelible mark upon New Jersey and indirectly upon the country at large. The first church in Elizabeth and the only one for nearly half a century was formed probably about 1666–7. These settlers had the energy and ambition to create homes and to rear families under godly conditions. "They entered the forest and placed the rude cabin by the side of the wigwam and made the woods vocal at once with the sounds of civilized industry." On an occasion when a New Jersey church was seeking a pastor, it was said of them that "they insist very much on a man's being a good speaker, and they hate the New England tone (as they call it); they insist likewise upon one that is apt to be familiar [friendly?]. But most of all, 'tis necessary that he be a man of religion and good principles, in order to be useful among them. They seem to be a kind, curtious people, and willing to support the ministry."[13]

In contradistinction to settlers in other parts of the country they fortunately had little or no trouble with the Indians,* whom they treated with uniform justice and respect. The Council of Proprietors at a later period recorded: "We are well assured that, since the first settlement of New Jersey, there is not one instance can be assigned of any breach of peace with the Indians thereof (though very few of the other provinces can say so as to their Indians); nor that any proprietor ever presumed to dispossess one of them or disturb him in his possession; but have always amicably paid them for their claims . . . nor was the Crown, nor the Legislature . . . of this province ever put to one penny of charge or expense for keeping the Indians thereof in peace, in bounties, presents, or otherwise. . . ." Thus are pictured the interests and experiences which helped to form the character of the Little family.

On September 11, 1673, JOHN[1] LITTLE was one of seventy-six men who took the oath of allegiance; on January 25, 1689–90, with George Ross, he took an inventory of the estate of the widow Lydia (Morse) Tew, deceased;

*An interesting version of the method of counting in use by the Indians of New Jersey, as recounted by Samuel Harrison, born in 1719, shows[15] a similarity to the decimal system.

1. een	6. latter	11. een dick	16. een bumsack
2. teen	7. satter	12. teen dick	17. teen bumsack
3. tether	8. po	13. tether dick	18. tether bumsack
4. fether	9. debbety	14. fether dick	19. fether bumsack
5. fimp	10. dick	15. bumsack	20. enock

on January 9, 1694–5, JOHN[1] witnessed the will of his brother-in-law and neighbor, Thomas Lee, receiving letters for its administration on July 1, 1695; and on September 11, 1702, he witnessed the will of John Baker of Elizabeth.[6, 7, 8]

The will[9] of JOHN[1] himself, dated April 8, 1713, and proved May 2, following, named only his wife and his four sons, two of them minors; it made his wife and son Robert[2] his executors and disposed of more than two hundred thirty acres of land besides his personal property. His wife, MARY, survived him only two years and her will, which was dated April 9, 1715, and proved August 20, following, named only her three daughters and disposed of personal estate including a Bible.[9]

The known* children of JOHN[1] and MARY (WHITE) LITTLE, all born at Elizabeth in unknown order, were[2, 9]

I. Robert[2], b. probably 1682–5; d.[10] after June, 1753, when his wife died; with his mother he was executor[9] of his father's will in 1713; in 1715 he and his wife witnessed his mother's will; in February 1739–40 he was made a petit constable; [see also p. 544]; m. Mehitable (——), who died, as his wife, June 22, 1753, in her fifty-eighth year.[10]

II. ANTHONY[2], see following.

III. Jonathan[2], b. not later than 1702; chose David Morehouse as his guardian, November 12, 1716.

IV. John[2], b. not later than 1703; chose his brother ANTHONY[2] as his guardian on August 15, 1717.

V. Martha[2], named in mother's will April 9, 1715.

VI. Comfort[2], named in mother's will. Probably she who witnessed[10] the will of Jacob Winans of Elizabeth on December 18, 1722.

VII. Constance[2], named in mother's will.

ANTHONY[2] LITTLE (*John*[1]) was born probably about 1685–7 at Elizabeth and died in that vicinity between[11] October 9, 1731, and January 5, 1733–4. He married, first, probably by 1706–7, Elizabeth (——), and married, secondly,[11] probably by 1709, MARY [perhaps Ladner].† As he approached

*A contemporaneous Samuel Little is recorded in Elizabeth, who was frequently associated with Robert[2] [q.v.].

† Diligent effort has failed to establish the identity of MARY (——), wife of ANTHONY[2] LITTLE, but the facts that her eldest son bore the unusual name of "ABSALOM" and that an Absalom Ladner, with Nathaniel Mitchell, took the inventory[11] of the estate of her deceased husband, suggest the strong probability that he was a relative, possibly father but probably brother to the widow MARY.

Obtainable items relative to the Ladner name show[30] that a Robert Ladner, who died between June 29 and August 25, 1718, left a widow Sarah, "sole heiress"; a Daniel Ladner, who married, before 1716, Abigail Trotter (Benjamin, William) of Elizabeth; and the above Absalom Ladner, who witnessed on March 2, 1724–5, the will of Mary (Morse) Broadwell Mitchell, wife of Jacob Mitchell; witnessed the will of Thomas Donnington in June, 1731, and that of Timothy Halsey in May, 1734, and took the inventory of George Jewell in April, 1735. Absalom Ladner's wife, whom he married before 1711, was Elizabeth Jouet, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Coursier) Jouet, of Elizabeth, and her sister Mary married the William Dixon whose will ANTHONY[2] LITTLE witnessed.[9] The Jouets were Huguenots.[30]

maturity, the unsettled and unjust conditions which had harassed his parents for thirty-five years were nearing their climax. No evidence has been found linking his name with the group which asserted its defiance of further usurpation, even to the extent of unruly, violent and sometimes unlawful action, but intimate knowledge of it all was a part of his life. His brother Robert[2] Little and an unidentified Samuel Little were prominent actors in the thick of the fray. These two men were among the "rabbell" composed of about sixty mounted men of Elizabeth who, on September 10, 1700, and again on September 12, took part in riots at courts held at Newark. Viewed from this remote date their conduct may seem inexcusable, but, to offset that impression, one should remember not only that their fathers' long endurance had left the sons without patience but also that the record below is in the words of their antagonists and therefore probably exaggerated. During the riot[14] of September 10 "The P'sident [of the court was] pulled of the bench . . . & his hatt & wigg halled of his head . . . the Clerk of the Courte [was] struck . . . with great violence with [a] fist [and] a stick & . . . his wigg tore from of his head, The P'sident allsoe having had his Sword Taken from him . . . & broak in peices. . . . The rest of the Justices grosely abused, some their clothes torn of their backs with many other abusefull words & actions Received from the Rabbell of Elizabeth Towne . . . the Constable alsoe grosely abused pulled by the haire & his staff Taken from him & Thrown out of doore, the P'sident allsoe being struck Three blows Two of which ponches [were] in the brest & one in the face. . . ." Two days after this demonstration, on September 12, a "rabble," whose personnel was in great measure identical, rode again from Elizabeth to Newark to demand the release of several of their townsmen who were held in jail. They are said to have asked "where these pittifull Rasskalls were that put this man in Prisson, & demanded him out of prisson & they was askt by what power they demanded him out of prisson, and they held up their Clubbs and said that was their power. They demanded where the Sheriffe was and said they would have him if he was above ground." They evidently located that official, for he later complained "That he was satt upon by severall men of Elizabeth Towne & forceably Robbed of ye Keys of the Prisson, & the prissoner thereupon Imediatly Taken out of his Cusstody." For this latest offense* thirty-

* In another instance where a citizen had been committed to jail at Newark, a number of his friends came "and let him out; and he afterwards made his boast that a strong north-west wind blew the door off the hinges, and he walked out of prison as Paul and Silas did."[13]

six men, including Robert[2] and Samuel Little, were indicted.[14] This pictures what was probably the chief subject of interest at that time to ANTHONY[2] and his contemporaries.

He shared in the land which accrued to his father's right by the succeeding[15] divisions, including one division in 1699–1700 which covered territory west of Elizabeth and ran north as far as the Newark line and west as far as the First and Second Mountains; and another in 1736–7, when two hundred eighty, one hundred-acre lots were surveyed. This section was variously called the "Clinker-Lot-Division," the "west fields," and eventually Westfield. It was 1720 before the settlers there were numerous enough to be considered as a separate community, and no religious society was organized among them until 1726–7. Prior to that date they went to Elizabethtown to worship. Four of the sons of ANTHONY[2], namely, ABSALOM[3], Abraham[3], Andrew[3] and Anthony[3] are said to have resided,[16, 17] at least for a time, at the Willow Grove [see map on p. 533], as did Moses and John Little, who were probably relatives; Andrew[3] is said[16] to have lived also in Stony Hill Valley, and Anthony[3] on the head waters of Green Brook in that valley. One of the Little homesteads was situated "beyond Willow Grove on the Raritan road," and the story is told[17] that during an early Indian raid the family took refuge in the near-by Ash Swamp.*

ANTHONY[2] bought on May 20, 1708 [being then at least twenty-one years old], from Henry Norris and wife Joanna, a first lot right which had earlier belonged to Benjamin Homan. On September 16, 1715, he witnessed[9] the will of William Dixon. On August 15, 1717, he was chosen guardian[9] by his young brother John[2], who must then have reached the age of fourteen. The trend of public opinion is shown by the fact that on August 19, 1712, three men were indicted "for suffering the game of cards to be played in their houses," though at the next term of Court the indictment was quashed on their payment of the fees.[15]

The will of ANTHONY[2], calling him of Elizabeth, was dated[11] October 9, 1731, and proved January 5, 1733–4. It named as executors his wife and son ABSALOM[3], with friend Matthias Hatfield; and among other bequests it devised certain land to sons Abraham[3] and Anthony[3], a part of which they later conveyed to Robert[2] Little, and on April 2, 1743, they quitclaimed the

* It is said that during the Revolution, at the approach of the British, the Littles then resident in this home again hid in this swamp, carrying a child on the grandfather's shoulders, but that occurrence was long after our Littles had moved elsewhere.

balance to ABSALOM[3] [though of these two grantors only Abraham[3] executed the deed]. On February 19, 1750, after his removal to Delaware, ABSALOM[3] canceled this instrument. The inventory of the estate of ANTHONY[2] which was taken by Absalom Ladner [surmised to have been brother or father of MARY, widow of the deceased], and by Nathaniel Mitchell, showed[11] personal estate to the amount of £64–17–06. One can but wonder what impelled ANTHONY[2] and his wife MARY to give names beginning with the letter "A" to seven out of nine of their children.

The child of ANTHONY[2] LITTLE and his first wife, Elizabeth, was[11]

i. Elizabeth[3], living in October, 1731.

The children of ANTHONY[2] and MARY (Ladner?) LITTLE, born in Elizabethtown in uncertain order, were[11]

ii. ABSALOM[3], see following.

iii. Abraham[3], b. perhaps about 1712–6; a carpenter; named[11] in his father's will; resident at Willow Grove; with his brother Andrew[3] he quitclaimed April 2, 1743, to their brother ABSALOM[3], land earlier owned by their father.[16] It was doubtless he whose will[12] dated June 21, 1759, and proved July 30, following, named wife Mary and sons Abraham[4], Amasa[4] and Amos[4], all under age. He had[20] at least one daughter, Constance[4] [b. August 24, 1752; d. in Ohio October 17, 1835, aged 83, m. before 1784, William[5] Pettijohn (William[4], WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1])], by the word[20] of that woman's grandson, Jonas[7] Pettijohn [born 1813], who was grandson also of Deborah[4] Little, daughter of our ABSALOM[3]. Mary Little, wife of Abraham[3], may have been the daughter of Thomas Acken of Elizabeth, whose will[12] of July 21, 1741, mentioned a daughter Mary Little.

iv. Andrew[3], weaver; named[11] in his father's will; lived at Willow Grove[16, 17] and in Stony Hill Valley[16] on the head waters of the west branch of Green Brook, which would be south and east of the present Berkeley Heights [see map on p. 533] and is in New Providence township,[13] the present Union County. He and his brother Abraham[3] conveyed lands, acquired from their father, to Robert[2] Little and, on April 2, 1743–4, to their brother ABSALOM[3], who in turn deeded on February 1, 1743–4, to Andrew[3] one-half of the one hundred-acre lot No. 88 which lay at the head of the west branch of Green Brook. It was doubtless this Andrew[3] who[16] was b. December 15, 1718; d. 1784; m. about 1743, Molly (——) [b. January 5, 1725, and "died very old"], and had (a) William[4], b. April 12, 1745; (b) Sophia[4], b. March 27, 1747; (c) Mary[4], b. March 4, 1749; m. October 30, 1763, Zachariah Van Sickle, and removed to western Pennsylvania; (d) Rachel[4], b. January 6, 1751; (e) Ephraim[4], b. December 13, 1760; went to Ohio; (f) Hannah[4], b. October 5, 1762, and (g) Temperance[4], b. May 30, 1769; m. Joseph Valentine and went to Ohio.

v. Anthony[3], named[11] in his father's will; lived at Willow Grove[16, 17] and at the head spring of the west branch of Green Brook in Stony Hill Valley in New Providence township.[13] A debt[21] was due from him to John Morris in 1734–5 and one was due to him from David Watkins in 1736. He was probably the father of Dr. Anthony

Little, who d.[16] in May, 1798. It seems pertinent to question whether he may not have removed to Sussex County, Delaware, as did three of his brothers, and have m. there Temperance Stockley, daughter of Benjamin, whose will,[22] dated November 30, 1762, made a bequest "to my well beloved daughter Temperance Little." If Anthony[3] m. this girl they were probably parents of a Stokely Little, sometimes called "P.* Stokely Little," who removed with various members of this family to western Pennsylvania and northern West Virginia,[23] where he had property in Monongalia County in 1786, though he was called a resident of Springhill Township, Fayette Co., in 1790. One of this name was later a resident of Warren County, Ohio.[49]

VI. †Adonijah[3], cordwainer; named[11] in his father's will; removed to Sussex County Delaware, as did also his brothers ABSALOM[3] and Amos[3]. He d.[24] surely before June 9, 1796, and probably before December 27, 1795, on the west side of Pawpaw Creek, in what was then Monongalia County but is now Marion County, West Virginia [see map on p. 535]. He had m. before 1765 and probably around 1750, Keziah [believed to have been the daughter of Hugh and the sister of John Stevenson of Sussex County, Delaware].

VII. Amos[3], mentioned[11] in his father's will; removed to Sussex County, Delaware, where he m.[25] between January 15, 1749, and February 29, 1752, Levina[4] Pettyjohn (WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]), sister of the wife of his brother ABSALOM[3]. Amos[3] d.[25] probably without issue, between February 29, 1752, the date of his will, and April 1, following, when it was probated. That document named his wife and his brother Adonijah[3], who was to be executor with the testator's brother-in-law, William[4] Pettyjohn (WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]). The widow removed to southwestern Pennsylvania with her sister ESTHER and her double-brother-in-law, ABSALOM[3]

* May not this initial "P" have stood for "Pettyjohn"?

† Adonijah[3] Little purchased from John Stephenson, for £30, one hundred fifty acres of land in Sussex County, Delaware, on December 12, 1748; and purchased from Benedict Townsend, for £30, two hundred acres there on May 2, 1750. This second tract was called "Millfield" and lay on a branch of Broadkill Creek. In April, 1752, he was executor, with William[4] Pettyjohn, of the will of Amos[3] Little, his deceased brother. On February 5, 1768, he and his wife, Keziah, sold one hundred acres for £66 to David Rankin. [A man of that name[24] was called "brother" by a Jean Little, who named also in her will, about 1756, her brother John Little, her uncle John Mustard, and her mother, who was to be executrix.] Adonijah[3] Little, with John Stevenson, deeded land to John Hall on April 15, 1773, which had been originally granted to Hugh Stevenson [perhaps his father-in-law], who had laid off one half of it to the said Adonijah[3] Little.

An Adonijah, either this man or his nephew, was a landowner in Menallen township, Fayette County, Pennsylvania, in 1780–3, abutting[37] on property owned by ABSALOM[3]. In 1790 this same uncle or nephew, with a family consisting of a wife and a son under sixteen, lived so near the boundary line of German and Luzerne townships, of that county, as did also our ESTHER (LITTLE) PETTYJOHN [see map on p. 263], that they were both listed in each township.

Adonijah[3] had a patent dated May 15, 1789, for four hundred acres of land in Virginia on the west or upper side, at the mouth, of Pawpaw Creek. This land adjoined Sand Creek and the Monongahela River, and on this farm he died before June 9, 1796, on which date, with Calder Haymond as a witness, an agreement was entered into among his heirs, namely: Keziah Little [widow]; Keziah Verdin [wife of Hugh]; Elizabeth Battin [wife of Henry]; Mary Longwell [wife of either Isaac or James]; and with Charles Snodgrass as attorney for John[4] [or Jehu[4]] Little [of Bourbon County, Kentucky, in November, 1795, and of Jefferson County, that state, in September, 1796].[24] Adonijah[3] [unless he had a son or nephew of that name to whom these items pertain] was[24] resident of Menallen Township in February, 1783, when it was a part of Westmoreland County and extended west to the Monongahela; was taxed from 1785 to 1789 as of German township and as having from fifty acres up to one hundred acres of cleared land, cattle, a ferry, a still, and, for a period of several years, a tan-yard, which latter possession accords with the occupation of cordwainer assigned the Adonijah[3] forty years earlier.[24]

LITTLE. She was[29] a resident in 1785 of what was then Springhill Township, Fayette County [see p. 652] and paid a state tax that year. In 1790 the census called her head of a family [in that township], which may have been composed of two nephews or other relatives, for, besides herself, it was made up of two males over sixteen.

VIII. Abigail[3], named[11] in her father's will.

IX. Mary[3], named[11] in her father's will. Perhaps she was the girl[28] who m. November 19, 1761, Isaac Woodruff.

X. Ruth[3], named[11] in her father's will. From the numerous known intermarriages between this Little family and the Pettyjohn family, the query arises as to whether this girl may not have been the Ruth who m. William[4] Pettyjohn (WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]) of Sussex County, Delaware and of Monongalia County, West Virginia. If she did this, it would mean that her husband was a brother to the two women whom her two brothers married. If she married thus, she was also married secondly, in Monongalia County, West Virginia, on March 2, 1803, to a James Little. [See Pettyjohn, p. 654].

ABSALOM[3] LITTLE (*Anthony*[2], *John*[1]) was born at Elizabeth by or before October, 1710, since his father's will dated October 9, 1731 named him as an executor.[11] He died in Fayette County, Pennsylvania, after April 13, 1781, when his son signed[37] himself as "junior" and probably about 1785 [for his widow was taxed[31] in 1786], and married, about 1745, ESTHER[4] PETTYJOHN of Sussex County, Delaware [see Pettyjohn, p. 653]. He was[16] a millwright and is said to have lived in his young manhood at the Willow Grove, in the west fields of Elizabeth [see map on p. 533]. One vivid experience[13] of his younger days was a period of insurrection of the servile population. A rising of the slaves was attempted in the neighborhood of the Raritan as early as 1734, in consequence of which one or more negroes were hung; but in 1741 there occurred also a veritable panic [to which a slaveholding community is ever liable] because of the report of a negro conspiracy to burn the city of New York and to murder all the whites. Shame to say, during the progress of this affair one hundred fifty-four negroes were imprisoned, of whom fourteen were burned at the stake, eighteen were hanged, seventy-one transported, and the rest discharged. At this same time twenty whites were imprisoned, of whom four were executed.

ABSALOM[3] received[16] on April 2, 1743, from his brothers Abraham[3] and Andrew[3] a quitclaim to land previously owned by their father; he transferred on February 1, 1743–4, to his brother Andrew[3] one-half of the hundred-acre lot No. 88 which was first taken upon the right of Joseph Thompson (Aaron) and which lay at the head of the west branch of Green Brook; and on February 19, 1750, he canceled the first-named instrument. ABSALOM[3] removed

probably about 1744 to Sussex County, Delaware, to which place also removed his brothers Adonijah[3] and Amos[3] and possibly his brother Anthony[3] and his sister Ruth[3]. The earliest record of him found there is in the will[26] of his father-in-law, WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN, dated January 15, 1749, wherein ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER, his wife, received but one shilling, suggesting that they had received her full portion at their marriage. Their [presumed] two children "BETTY and Esther" were bequeathed a slave apiece by their said grandfather's will.

On January 8, 1752, ABSALOM[3] bought[26] from Gershom Mott, for £400, a tract of four hundred thirty acres which was called "Swan Hill" and was situated on "Kimbol's Neck." In 1756 and 1758 he was[27] ensign of a Sussex County regiment of militia from the southern district of Broadkill Hundred. On[26] May 6, 1759, he witnessed a deed by Samuel[4] Pettyjohn (James[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]); and on August 2, 1765, ABSALOM[3] and his wife, ESTHER, then resident in Delaware, sold a part of "Swan Hill" to William Burton for £660. A change of residence of this family, and the beginning of a new adventure, is shown by a deed[26] dated September 12, 1772, calling ABSALOM[3] "of Bedford county, Pennsylvania," whereby he sold land in Delaware to William Blizzard.[26]

Their removal occurred doubtless after April 2, 1768 [when a committee sent to warn away early but interloping settlers* took[50] a sort of census of the Redstone country, but mentioned none of this family], and probably occurred in 1770–1, for ABSALOM[3] was recorded[37] as an abutter there in April, 1772. The Indian title to the Pennsylvania lands composing Bedford County of that day and contiguous territory [including the present Fayette County] was acquired by the Proprietaries of Pennsylvania at Fort Stanwix in the autumn of 1768, and "Pursuant to this purchase they advertised on February 23, 1769, that on April 3 following at 10 A. M. in Philadelphia they would open the land office to receive applications from all persons inclined to take up lands in the new purchase upon the terms of £5 sterling per hundred acres

*Prior to 1769 the whites west of the Alleghanies were squatters on Indian lands and held them solely by occupation and by what were then known as "tomahawk improvement" claims. To record such, a settler would deaden a few trees near a spring and would cut his initials in other trees. This conduct was in violation of existing Indian treaties, and the Assembly of Pennsylvania enacted a law on February 3, 1768, which was so extreme that it was actually inoperative. It threatened that, if settlers west of the Alleghanies [except those having military grants on the main road to Fort Pitt or near that post] did not remove within thirty days, or if having removed they should return, or if after this notice any should settle there, they should "suffer death without benefit of clergy"; or that any who should enter thereon, to survey or to mark trees, should pay £50 for every such offense and "suffer three months imprisonment, without bail or mainprize"[50] [that is, "with no permission to obtain release by finding sureties"].

and one penny per acre per annum quit rent." In 1784 this sum was reduced to £3–10–0 and no quit rent, but with interest from the date of improvement. The land office in the first three months issued daily an average of one hundred warrants for land west of the mountains and below Kittaning, and surveys of what is now Fayette County were begun August 12, 1769. During the remainder of that year they completed seventy official surveys of Fayette County territory and in 1770 they made eighty more. "In present Fayette but twelve surveys were made in 1771, but fourteen in 1772, but eleven in 1773, but seven in 1774, but two in 1775, and from 1775 to 1783 none were made." During this Revolutionary period, while the Land Office was closed, Virginia pursued an opposite course in the issuance of "certificates" [corresponding to the Pennsylvania warrants] for land in this same section, for she claimed the part of present Pennsylvania which lies west of Laurel Hill and south of the Ohio River [see map on p. 535]. On this territory, which was included within her "District of West Augusta," Virginia in 1776 had laid out her counties of Ohio, Monongalia and Yohogania [of which the last became extinct in 1783 when the state boundary was finally settled]. It was on the lands of these three counties that Virginia issued her certificates in great numbers, principally in 1779–80. A board of Virginia commissioners granted to each bona fide settler, who would build a cabin and raise a crop, a certificate for four hundred acres of land of which the purchase price was ten shillings per hundred acres, with the privilege of preëmption of one thousand acres more. The cost of the certificate was 2s. 6d. which was all the settler had to pay down. Thus the purchaser of land from Virginia paid an original price of less than one-tenth the amount he would have had to pay to Pennsylvania for the same lands. Both ABSALOM[3] LITTLE and the Pettyjohn families first acquired lands in present Pennsylvania by grant from that state, though later Adonijah[3] and ABSALOM[3] LITTLE and the Pettyjohns all acquired land in present Marion, Taylor and Harrison counties, West Virginia, by grant from Virginia.

The hardships endured in that new country were innumerable and heavy. Only the barest necessities could be brought on this long trip over the mountains. In the new country the Indian menace was ever present [see Corey, p. 265]. Suggestion of the wearying apprehension which must often have been theirs is seen[48] in such petitions as that of October 15, 1776, reciting that in the course of fifty miles along the Tygart's River, including the Buckhannon, there were one hundred fifty families, but an allowance of only three companies to garrison the forts; that relief was eighty miles distant and the

Indians were threatening. Another petition of May 25, 1779, requested that Monongalia be separately incorporated so that its inhabitants need not go to Staunton to attend court, since they lived one hundred fifty miles distant; and the residents of Tygart's Valley petitioned on November 7, 1780, to be joined to Monongalia, stating that they lived one hundred twenty miles distant from Staunton, with eight mountains intervening, while they were but ninety miles from Monongalia Court House, with but one mountain to cross.[48] The matter of taxation in this new country was of deep moment. Until the settlement of the boundary controversy in 1783, the people of present southwest Pennsylvania were taxed both by that state and by Virginia. The assessors and collectors appointed by the former state were thrown into jail by the officers of the latter. Actual money was almost unknown. As in every other new country, business was by barter, and taxes also were paid in this manner. Thus as early as December 1, 1749, Virginia:

"Ordered that the sheriff collect of every tithable person in this county 6 pounds of tobacco that have not delivered in their crows heads or squirrels scalps according to law." Relative to one result of the final settlement of the state boundary controversy, the sheriff for the District of Augusta [under Virginia] stated on May 27, 1783, in regard to the collection of the tobacco tax from the three counties [see map on p. 535], that only Monongalia had failed to pay their tax, which was probably because of the pending change of citizenship to the other state, for, of fourteen hundred tithables formerly in the county, not more than one hundred fifty then remained.[48]

A time of great excitement followed after the Revolution and culminated in the so-called "Whiskey Insurrection" of 1794 [see Corey, p. 270]. The heart of this difficulty rested on the matter of taxation, for a state and national excise tax had been imposed upon distilled spirits and upon the stills used for their manufacture. This seemed to the people of southwestern Pennsylvania to be particularly discriminating against them, because their inaccessibility to a market necessitated that the bulky productions of their soil be reduced to the smallest possible volume for transportation. Their principal crop was rye or corn, which[44] "could not be transported across the mountains at a profit except in the form of whiskey. 'A horse could carry out four bushels, but he could take the product of twenty-four bushels in the shape of alcohol.' Whiskey, therefore, was the most important item of remittance to pay for their salt, sugar and iron [which on their first arrival had been purchased with furs and pelts]. At this time freight in wagons to Philadelphia cost from

five to ten dollars per hundred pounds. Salt* sold at five dollars a bushel, while iron and steel cost from fifteen to twenty cents per pound. In this fertile region grain was abundantly produced but there was no market, while farmers east of the mountains were growing rich by means of the general war in Europe. . . . The freight on a barrel of flour to Philadelphia was as much as it would bring in that market. . . . As a result of these peculiar circumstances, there was in this section a greater number of stills than in any other region of the same population in any part of the country. In some neighborhoods every fifth farmer was a distiller, who during the winter season manufactured, from his own grain and that of his neighbors, a portable and salable article."[44]

"The law was such that, if they complied with it and opened their stills, the revenue tax on the product almost eliminated the profit; while, on the other hand, the opposition to the onerous and unjust tax by a certain class of the people was so formidable and hostile that compliance with the law was tantamount to the destruction of their stills for there were strikers in those days led by a famous and ill-omened character named 'Tom the Tinker'[40, 50] who would not have hesitated to destroy the property of one who acceded to the law."

James Veech, their own historian, says: ". . . it must not be inferred because of the wild excitements into which they were thrown in 1774 and again in '94, that they were lawless and turbulent. Their resistance to . . . questionable taxation sprang less from criminal propensities than from their antecedents and present privations. Their very simplicity and hardy virtues made them an easy prey to interested partizans and designing demagogues. And, while thus wrought upon, like the placid ocean by the unseen wind, they were enacting the stormy resistance of those periods, they, when the appliances which aroused them were removed, yielded as submissively and heartily to the gravitating influences of law and order, as if nothing had ever occurred to disturb them." Indeed, one historian[50] "devotes a chapter to exhibit this peculiarity of character among the early yeomanry of Southwestern Pennsylvania—ready and entire acquiescence after impassioned and well grounded, though unlawful resistance; in which respects they compare most favorably with the Connecticut claimants in our own State,

*Evidence of the apportionment of a common stock of salt is seen in August, 1777, when it was "Ordered:—That the Majestrates appointed to make the Tour of the County and Tender the oath of allegience and Fidelity, Shall also Take in the Numbers in Each Family within their Respective districts, In order to enable the justices to make an Equal distribution of the salt, and make return to October Court."[46]

[the Wyoming Massacre], the Massachusetts rebellion, and other similar troubles in our early national history."

These people were remarkably hospitable. The stranger "was always welcomed to their home and to their assistance, for they had themselves been strangers in a strange land. A remarkable instance of kindness . . . occurred on Coxe's Run in what is now Luzerne Township . . . at a very early day when a stranger from the vicinity of Hagerstown . . . got his leg badly broken in the woods. He was found by an old settler who at once bore him to his cabin and gave him every possible care" but the injured man, knowing his recovery would be very slow, desired to convalesce in his home. There was but a pack-horse path across the mountains, so use of a conveyance was impossible, and eight neighbors [including William Roberts, probably stepson of BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY Roberts, see p. 561] offered to and did carry him on a sort of hammock swung from two poles to Hagerstown, Maryland, a distance of one hundred twenty-five miles as the crow flies. On arrival they engaged a surgeon to care for him at their expense.[59]

A summary of the captivities and of lives taken, and a recital of the unmentionable tortures frequently perpetrated by the Indians would fill a volume, though Luzerne Township where our families lived, fortunately escaped most of those atrocities.[52]

The trend of public opinion in Pennsylvania at that time is seen by the following:[51]

In April, 1777, a man was fined "twenty-five Shellings for swearing four Blasfemous Oaths before John Cannon, [and] one before John Johnston. . . ." and was to "give Security for his better Behavior For one year and one day."

In June, 1777, James Johnston lost his temper and, by one witness, "did swear two profane oaths and two profane Cusses," though a second witness testified that it was "three profane Oaths and one profane Curse," and for this fault he was fined twenty shillings; but a third witness asserted that the offender "did swear four profane oaths" and his fine was made "one pound Currant money." In March, 1779, fines were still assessed for "prophane swearing." On June 25, 1777, the court ordered the sheriff to have erected a pair of stocks and a whipping-post in the court-yard. Whether that equipment was built and worn out, or the order was neglected, is not evident; but on April 27, 1778, an order was again recorded that Isaac Cox should "contract with some Proper Person or Persons to build a pair of Stocks, whipping Post and pillory. . . ."

As to morals in Virginia [and Pennsylvania?]:

"For lying, any dishonesty, idleness, or ill-fame, the punishment was what we might term 'hating the offender out,' as the earlier settlers expressed it. This savors somewhat of the old-time custom of the Greeks. The first settlers, so far as we have any light upon the subject, mortally detested anything in the nature of theft and said peremptorily: 'A thief must be whipped.' They carried out their ultimatum in this respect and inflicted this summary punishment upon the offender, as Moses directed, by giving him forty lashes less one. This punishment was followed by exile of the guilty party. When magistrates came into power in the west they kept up this punishment always for petty thieving. . . . Ladies who were given to evil speaking, lying, and slandering were accorded the same right they have to this day—to speak as much as they desired, and the punishment was the same as now—nobody believed one word they said."[51]

In December, 1774, it was ordered that the sheriff "Imploy a Workman to build a Ducking Stool at the Confluence of the OHio with the Monongohale and that the person Imployed bring in his Charge at the Laying of the Levy" and at the court held February 23, 1775, a man who had deserted the militia received a sentence of "500 Lashes with a Cat-o'nine tails on his bare back, well laid on, and it is said to the Sheriff that execution thereof be done at such times and in such manner as not to endanger life or member."[51]

To revert to the Fayette County situation, genealogical search there, more than in most localities, necessitates careful study of its geography[44] and of the sequence of erection of counties [see maps on pp. 535 and 537], for, not only are records almost non-existent* because of the hard and sadly-harassed lives the pioneers lived, but such as there are must be searched under both Pennsylvania and Virginia, and in the latter case under the "District of West Augusta" and the counties of both "Monongalia" and [the now extinct] "Yohogania." In Pennsylvania, when ABSALOM[3] LITTLE came to it, his place of settlement was in Springhill Township, Bedford County which county then covered the southwestern quarter of Pennsylvania, as now constituted. In February, 1773, Westmoreland County was created from Bedford and contained this Springhill Township, though Menallen Township was formed from it, being the portion of former Springhill lying north of a line east and

*Such records as were made in Westmoreland County were largely destroyed in July, 1782, when the Indians burned Hannastown, and the records of Monongalia County previous to 1796 were lost when the courthouse at Morgantown burned in that year.

west from the mouth of Brown's Run. The home of ABSALOM[3] was for ten years thereafter located within Menallen Township, Westmoreland County, until Fayette County was formed in September, 1783 [to take effect in December, 1784], when it, in turn, included his residence within its limits. At the erection of Fayette County nine townships were created within it by dividing the former Springhill and Menallen, though both of these names continued, as pertaining to lessened areas. Of these nine, two were German and Luzerne, and under the latter name the home of ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE finally rested. The farm where they lived lay near the present Heistersburg [see maps on pp. 263, 539], pronounced locally "Eastersburg."

Consistent with the summary above, ABSALOM[3] was taxed in 1773 as of Bedford County.[31] Following that date it is extremely hard to differentiate between him and his son of the same name, partly because it was the custom of that day and locality to have laid claim to and resided upon a certain piece of land for many years before a warrant was requested or a survey made. As a consequence, the places of residence of older settlers are often hard to identify. This delay in acquiring legal rights was occasioned by scarcity of money; uncertainty as to Virginia or Pennsylvania jurisdiction and also by the fact that during the Revolution neither grants nor surveys were made. Some tracts in Fayette County settled[50] as early as 1800–20 were still unpatented in 1892. The life of the pioneers of southwestern Pennsylvania was so bitterly hard [see p. 273] that the payment of taxes was often an almost unbearable burden. One warrant, therefore [of several found recorded], dated November 13, 1784, with a consequent survey on January 11, 1785, and a patent dated November 3, 1787, covering a tract of one hundred ninety-seven and a half acres, called "Absalom's Oak," situated in the present Luzerne Township of Fayette County [see map on p. 539], shows what was undoubtedly the home of ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE and their family. During their long tenure of residence and possession, previous to legal ownership, transfers occurred from time to time, some of them unrecorded, which created a slight variation in the land descriptions, but it seems quite certain that "Absalom's Oak" with its buildings was a part of the three-hundred-acre tract which ABSALOM[3] and his wife ESTHER deeded[37] on March 1, 1776, for £50, to their son Absalom[4], called Junior, on his promise to maintain and support them, his parents, throughout their natural lives [see NOTE "A," p. 560]. This deed was witnessed by John Pettyjohn,

who was either cousin or nephew to ESTHER, and, if nephew, it was he who married[20] her daughter Deborah[4] Little.

In 1776, after the above disposal of his property in Pennsylvania, ABSALOM[3] appears to have made a settlement in Virginia [at least, one of his name did so] on both sides of Glady Creek, which is a tributary of Tyger River [the "Valley River"] and which drains the southern portion of present Marion County near the Taylor County line [see map on p. 535]. For this tract of four hundred acres his son Absalom[4] received a grant[41] from Richmond, dated December 4, 1785, and on April 8, 1799, the younger man disposed of the same land for £200 to Henry Tucker. Adonijah[3], brother of ABSALOM[3], also acquired land in Virginia, in what is now Marion County, West Virginia.

Referring back to the home farm of the Little family in Pennsylvania, which was deeded in 1776 to Absalom[4], it is found that on February 8, 1780, for £50, he transferred[37] two hundred eleven acres of it to Thomas Scott [who was probably a relative]; that its improvements then included "the big house and still house"; and that it adjoined Adonijah Little [see NOTE "A," p. 560]. Presumably, the land taxes assessed[32] in 1782 and 1783 as of Menallen Township, Westmoreland County, and in 1784 and 1785 as of Luzerne Township, Fayette County [see p. 555], were against Absalom[4] rather than his father. One of this name witnessed[45] on February 19, 1781, the deed whereby William Pettyjohn bought for £75 from Thomas and Sarah Provence a tract of land on the west side of the Monongahela River above and adjoining Big Whitely Creek. The father, ABSALOM[3], must have died by, and probably in, 1785, for his widow, ESTHER, was taxed[31] in 1786, 1788 and 1789, as of German Township, Fayette County, on one and two head of cattle, and in the 1790 census was shown as the head of a family consisting of one boy under sixteen [Abraham[4]], and of three females, including herself, being listed thus in both German and Luzerne Townships because the property lay across or near to the boundary line of these two townships.

In 1788, when ESTHER must have been upwards of sixty, an unusual thing occurred. She purchased on June 24 of that year from Thomas Scott a tract[38] of three hundred seven acres of land called "Scotland," which lay next west of "Absalom's Oak" [see map on p. 539]. This evidently included the portion of her original home farm, which had been [above] deeded in 1776 to her son Absalom[4], and redeeded in 1780 by him to the said Scott, to whom it was warranted, surveyed and patented during 1785–8. The trivial purchase-

price of five shillings [which she paid[38] on November 21, 1791, thus completing the bargain] for this large tract, as compared with its valuation of £122–10–0 in the tax record of 1791, argues that Thomas Scott was a near relative and that the transfer was in the nature of a gift. The deed itself incorporated the stipulation that after the death of ESTHER one-half of this land should go to her daughter Fanny[4] Little and her heirs, and the other half to her son Abraham[4] Little and his heirs [see NOTE "B," p. 561]. A number of subsequent land transfers pertaining to this tract, some of them bearing dates as late as 1866, rehearse this deed of 1791 whereby ESTHER obtained it, and state the relationship of the grantors. She was taxed in German Township, on both land and cattle as early[31] as 1786 and every year from 1796 to 1804, after which no further record is seen of her, so her death doubtless occurred[34] about 1804–5. On July 11, 1814, when Absalom[4] and his wife, Mary, were transferring their right to a lot in Uniontown, they authorized[39] Alexander McLean of that town, whom they called executor of the estate of ABSALOM[3], to make complete conveyance and confirmation of their rights. No record is now to be found of the settlement of this estate.

The Little family attended Dunlap's Creek [Presbyterian] Church, the first building of which, with its contiguous cemetery, stood on a hillside slightly southwest of the present Merrittstown, and the present building of which [dating back to 1882] stands about one-half mile east of that town, with its graveyard a half-mile southeast of the edifice.[34]

This church was organized in September, 1774, in a sugar grove on Philip Tanner's farm, with the Reverend James Power as pastor, with eight elders and sixty-one constituent members doubtless including our ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER. Shortly after its organization, a log structure was built on Tanner's farm, which was used until 1814. In 1787 Absalom[4] and his wife were recorded members. In 1812 the Reverend William Johnston was called to serve them, and the list of men who subscribed in September, 1812, toward his support included[40] Abraham[4] Little, son of ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER, and Joshua[b] Corey, son of our JOHN[a] and BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY. Its attendants were drawn from as far distant as Brownsville, New Salem and McClellandtown.[40]

In 1784 there was a petition filed for a road[44] from Oliver Crawford's ferry to Uniontown, and, as laid out, it passed the homes of Thomas Davidson, ABSALOM[3] LITTLE and Charles Porter and intersected, and followed thence, the road leading from James Crawford's ferry to Uniontown.

The known children* of ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE, born in uncertain order, were[20, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 37, 38]

I. BETSEY[4], b. probably 1745–6 in Sussex County, Delaware. Documentary proof of her placing in this family has been found only through the word of her daughter BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT (1772–1857), which was carefully and repeatedly recorded by the hand of that woman's granddaughter, BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES (1816–95). By this evidence the mother of BETSEY[4] was a Pettyjohn and related to the families of that name who resided at Morgantown and Clarksburg, West Virginia. These Pettyjohns would have been uncles and cousins to any child in this Little family, and an intensive study over a period of years, covering these Little and Pettyjohn families in Delaware, Pennsylvania and West Virginia, has shown no other placing where this would have been true. The compiler, therefore, in view of this fact, and of many other significant and compelling facts in the mass of evidence gathered, takes the responsibility of asserting that BETSEY[4] was the daughter of ABSALOM[3]. She was doubtless the "BETTY" who received the bequest of a slave by the will[26] of her maternal grandfather in January, 1749. She m. first, about 1765–70, and probably in Sussex County, Delaware, as his second wife, JOHN[a] COREY [see Corey, p. 259]. She m. secondly, by 1785, as his second wife, Roger Roberts, who lived in Luzerne Township on a tract which he called "Greenfield" about two miles north of her father's home [see map on p. 539]. By him she had a son[34] Samuel, b. 1786, so her death occurred after that date and probably after 1790 [see census on Roger Roberts' family] but before December 20, 1800, when Roger Roberts made his will.[53] Though no stone is found to prove it, BETSEY[4] may likely have been buried in the old Hopewell Cemetery at Heistersburg where her son Samuel Roberts and his family lie, as well as her daughter Hetty (Corey) Roberts and husband. [See Roberts family, NOTE "C," pp. 561–2.]

II. probably Esther[4], b. about 1746–8, who received the bequest of a slave by her maternal grandfather's will[26] in 1749.

III. †Absalom[4], b.[33] 1752; d. 1825 in Clark County, Indiana; m.[39] about 1780, Mary Norris.

* Two young children, unidentified, who were relatives, and perhaps descendants of ABSALOM[3], are recorded in Monongalia County, West Virginia, October 8, 1810, as "Absalom Little, aged two years five months, and Ann Little, aged five months the 28th of this month," when they were bound out to Hezekiah Wade.[42]

† Absalom[4], who was taxed in Menallen Township from 1783 to 1801, was born[33] in 1752, in Delaware; married [33, 39] Mary Norris, b. April 20, 1763, d. 1844, daughter of William and Ann Norris, of Uniontown, Pennsylvania. By the 1790 census he had five sons under sixteen, so he must have been married about 1780, and he and his wife were members of Dunlap's Creek Church in 1787. The statement that he also had two daughters suggests that they were younger than the sons. He[33, 39] served in the Revolution as a private in Capt. James Knox's Company, Morgan's Rifle Regiment, of Continental Troops. He was called "Junior" while in Pennsylvania during his father's life but later, and especially after his removal to Indiana, was always "Senior." He is said to have removed in the latter part of 1799 and to have settled on the west side of Silver Creek in Clark's Grant, Northwest Territory, which is the present Clark County, Indiana. A deed dated March 4, 1800, shows him and his wife to have been residents of that locality. By this instrument they disposed of a tract of land called "Situate," near to "Absalom's Oak" in Luzerne Township, Fayette County, Pennsylvania, which Absalom[4] had received by patent of November 3, 1780.

The known children of Absalom[4] and Mary (Norris) Little most and perhaps all born in Fayette County were (1) Amos[5] "eldest son," served in war of 1812; (2) Absalom[5], (minister of Sellersburg, Indiana), b. 1788, d. May 11, 1862, served in 1812, m. 1st. April, 1815, (——), who d. April 21, 1817; m. 2nd, November 18, 1818, (——) Martin (John) and had Norris[6], and Tilsy Ann[6]; (3) John Thompson[5], b. 1790, d. February 11, 1848, is said to have had several wives of whom one was Mary Neeld, m. January 7, 1812. His children were

iv. Deborah[4], b. in Delaware, perhaps 1750–60; d. 1829–30 in Highland County, Ohio, at the home of her son Thomas. She m.[20, 33] about 1770–5, in Monongalia County, West Virginia, John[5] Pettyjohn, called "Junior" in 1780 but "Senior" in 1798 and in 1806, when he [still of Monongalia] transferred land. With many relatives they removed about 1807–10 to Ohio and there she joined the church at Sardinia, Brown County, on September 19, 1812. Her husband appears to have been the son of either John[4] Pettyjohn (John[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]) or of John[4] (Richard[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]). Their children (Pettyjohn) were: i. James, m. November 24, 1795, in Monongalia, Frances Wisbey, who d. about 1853, aged about 75. ii. Richard, m. March 12, 1802, his cousin Mary[6] Pettyjohn (William[5], William[4], WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]). iii. Thomas, b. December 14, 1780; d. August 12, 1824, in Highland County, Ohio; m. August 30, 1802, his cousin Ruth[6] Pettyjohn (William[5], William[4], WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]). iv. John, d. 1851; m. a widow with a young son David, who took the name of Pettyjohn and m. Hannah Pettyjohn, daughter of Thomas (iii.) just above. v. Hester. vi. Comfort. vii. Edward.

v. Fanny[4], b. probably in Pennsylvania; d. before[36] July 17, 1835; m. 1st, David Norris [son of William and Ann, of Uniontown], brother of her own brother's wife, by whom she had Linda and David Norris; m. 2nd, John Harper [d. after May 14, 1838], by whom she had Derastus and Theron Harper.[34, 38] [See NOTE "B," p. 561].

vi. Abraham[4], b. March 22 or 28, 1779, in Pennsylvania; d. s. p. July 19, 1835, at Merrittstown, Pennsylvania [gr. st., Dunlap's Creek Cemetery], age 56 years 24 days (sic). He m. Hope (——),* b. October, 1782, d. June 10, 1851, age 69, who m. 2nd, (——) Porter [gr. st.]. The will[36] of Abraham[4], dated July 17, 1835, and proved July 30, following, left his property to his wife and to the named children of his deceased sister Fanny[4] and made [his nephew] Samuel Roberts [son of our BETSEY by her 2nd husband] one of his executors.

In 1800 he would have been of age and, beginning[34] with 1801, he was named in the yearly tax-lists of Luzerne Township, though up through 1804 he was listed as single and was taxed in that township only on his occupation. In 1805, however, when the name of ESTHER, his mother, ceased to appear, his assessment showed one hundred fifty acres of land [his half of the tract which she acquired in 1788–9—see NOTE "B," p. 561], as well as horses and cattle in amounts similar to what she had earlier been taxed on. There was, however, an Abraham Little, who was probably identical, who was taxed on land just over the line in German Township, from 1801–4. He was one[40] who, in September, 1812, called the Reverend William Johnston to be pastor at Dunlap's Creek.

vii. probably Josiah[4], who was a single man in 1773. One called "Josh'a" Little owned property in Menallen Township in 1783; a Josiah Little, single, freeman, was taxed

(a) Paulina[6], m. Franklin Kelly, (b) Milburn[6], m. four times, (c) Jemima[6], d. young, (d) Mary[6], m. Nelson Cunningham, (e) Abram[6], d. unm., (f) Elvira[6], m. Reuben Robertson, (g) Maxwell[6], b. January 28, 1817, d. April 2, 1890, m. August 19, 1843, Louisa Smith Bellows, (h) Elizabeth[6], m. Arthur Hodges, (i) Margaret[6], m. James Baker, (j) Thompson[6], m. Elizabeth Whalen, (k) William[6], m. Mary Johnson, (l) Ellen[6], m. Samuel McNeff.

(4) Abraham[5]; (5) Josiah[5]; and probably (6), (7) two daughters.

*The will[36] of Hope, widow of Abraham[4], directed that after her death a gravestone should be erected at her grave and one at the grave of Abraham[4]. This provision was apparently superfluous in part, for in 1926 two headstones inscribed to him stood at his grave. The inscriptions were identical except in the date of his birth, one giving March 22 and one March 28.

in Springhill Township, Bedford County, 1772–3.[43, 50] A Josiah Little, presumed brother of BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY above, called of Menallen Township, on March 18, 1774, deeded to her husband JOHN[a] COREY two hundred acres on Middle Run.[46] [See map on p. 263.] The consideration named was £7–10, but COREY redeeded it to Michael Cresap on September 1, 1775, for £50. This discrepancy in the valuation argues a personal interest and probably a relationship between the grantor and the grantee. Absalom[4] Little named a son "Josiah"[5]. One of the name was a sergeant in 1812 as of Preston County, West Virginia.

VIII. possibly[49] also Andrew[4], b. November 15, 1766; d. 1830, age 64; m. in Pennsylvania, and removed 1796 to Warren County, Ohio, with his wife and his sons Robert and William, as did also[23] Stokely Little [see p. 547] and Edward and Elizabeth (Roberts) Dearth [see NOTE "C," p. 562].

IX. possibly also an Anthony[4], or Adonijah[4].

X. perhaps[61] a William[4] who settled on Big Sandy Creek [northern West Virginia] near some of the Pettyjohn families—as did also a Joseph Corey, who may be related.

NOTE "A"

A deed[37] dated March 1, 1776, and witnessed by "John Petteiohn," cousin or nephew of our ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE [see p. 548], shows that "ABSALOM[3] LITTLE, Sen[r], of the County of Westmoreland in the Provence of Pennsylvania, yeoman, in consideration of the sum of fifty pounds to me in hand paid by Absalom Little, Jun[r], of the County aforesaid, yeoman, in consideration of agreement hereinafter mentioned, have granted to said Absolom Littell, Jun[r], a parcel of land now in my tenure lying in the county of Westmoreland, bounded by lands of Robert Smith, John Craig, [alias Charles Porter, see below], Lewis Deam, John [Jehu?] Conwell, Thomas Davidson and others, containing 300 acres with buildings, field, fences etc., and the said Absolom Littell, Jun[r], doth promise with said ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], and ESTHER, his wife, that he, the said Absolom Littell, Jun[r], will pay to said ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], and to the said ESTHER, his wife, as a further consideration for the premises above mentioned granted out of the issues and profits thereof, reasonable and sufficient maintainance and support from time to time and all times hereafter for and during the natural life of him the said ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], and for and during the natural life of the said ESTHER, his wife—and the said ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], agrees that said Absolom Little, Jun[r], may have hold use occupy and enjoy all and singular the premises above granted without any suit, molestation, eviction, ejection, interruption or denial of him the sd ABSOLOM LITTLE, Sen[r] . . .

ABSOLOM LITTELL"

This document was "Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of ESTHER LITTELL"; on the date of its signing "ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], receipted for the £50 from Absolom Littell Jun[r]" and on February 14, 1780, John Pettyjohn made oath that he had seen the signing and delivery of the deed. A week earlier, on February 8, 1780, occurred the following transfer[37] of the same land [see above] which was witnessed by Samuel Douglas and Arthur Scott:

"Absolom Littell, Jun[r], greetings to all Christian People—There is a certain parcel of land lying situate in the County of Westmoreland bounded by land of Robert Smith, John Craig alias Charles Porter, Lewis Deam, Jehu Conwell, Thomas Davidson and others containing 300 acres whereof ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], was lately seized in his demesne as of fee and which the said ABSOLOM LITTELL, Sen[r], on the first day of March, 1776, did convey to said Absolom Littell, Jun[r]. Now know ye that I, Absolom Little Jun. for fifty pounds paid by Thomas Scott, Esq., of the county aforesaid, do grant one equal moiety of the premises aforesaid as well improved as unimproved, to be equally divided according to quantity and quality and held by the said Thomas Scott and his heirs in severalty.

Absolom Littell"

Continuing and appended to the above deed was the following agreement of division[37] of the property, dated March 17, 1781. This document was acknowledged on April 13, 1781, by Absalom[4] Littell, who then called himself "Junior," so his father's demise evidently occurred later.

"This present writing is to testify that the contracting parties in the above deed poll named Absolom Littell, Junior, and Thomas Scott, Esq., have made full and clear division as follows: Thomas Scott and his heirs to have, hold and enjoy all the part lying southward and westward of a line drawn from a black oak tree near the falls run, being a corner of John [Jehu?] Conwell's land.....thence between the big house and still house.....to a white oak in the yard, thence by a run, etc., to a post on Robert Smith's line, abutting in the other parts on lands of sd Robert Smith.....Adonija Littel, Thomas Davidson and the said Jehu Conwell, containing 211 acres and for as much

as the other part of the said premises by this division allotted. To Absolom Littell is the best part in point of improvement the said Absolom Little hath given sureties to Thomas Scott for "rents and services."

Sealed and delivered in the presence of } Andrew Robb (sic) Absolom Littell Thomas Scott"

NOTE "B"

Under date of June 24, 1788, Thomas Scott, then of Washington Township, Washington County, Pennsylvania, sold for five shillings[38] the above tract of land, which he had named "Scotland," and which contained three hundred seven and a half acres, to ESTHER LITTLE of Fayette County, with the proviso that after the decease of said ESTHER "One half or entire moiety of the said tract of land . . . [was] . . . to remain to Fanny[4] Little (natural daughter of the said ESTHER) and the heirs of her body begotten, the other half or entire moiety thereof to Abraham[4] Little (natural son of the said ESTHER) and the heirs of his body begotten to the only proper use benefit and behoof of the said Fanny[4] and Abraham[4] and the heirs of their bodies respectively begotten as above granted in equal moieties as aforesaid Provided always that if either the said Fanny[4] or Abraham[4] should in the lifetime or after the decease of said ESTHER die without issue then the entire moiety or half part granted to the child so dying shall be and remain to the survivor and the heirs of the survivors body And if either the said Fanny[4] or Abraham[4] should die in the lifetime of the said ESTHER leaving lawful issue such issue to inherit after the decease of the said ESTHER as fully and effectually as by this deed they might or could have done Had the said Fanny[4] and Abraham[4] survived their said mother the estate here by granted and conveyed subject nevertheless to revert to my own Right heirs forever If both the said Fanny[4] and Abraham[4] should die without Issue. . . .

Tho Scott"

Sealed & Delivered in presence of James Ross

This transfer was completed by the receipt in full, on November 21, 1791, from ESTHER LITTLE of the above-mentioned sum of five shillings.

Various subsequent deeds[38] referring to the above purchase of 1791 by ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE, and stating the relationship existing between her and the grantors, include: (1) one in 1838 by Derastus Harper, of Athens Ohio [grandson of ESTHER, through her daughter Fanny[4] Little], to Samuel Roberts [another grandson of ESTHER and son of our BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY by her second marriage; see p. 562]; (2) one in 1847 from Aaron Norris, then of Belmont County, Ohio [great-grandson of ESTHER, through her daughter, Fanny[4] Little,] to James B. Davidson, of Fayette County, Pennsylvania; (3) one in 1850 from said Aaron Norris to his great-aunt, Hope (——) Little Porter, daughter-in-law of ESTHER and once the wife of her son Abraham[4] Little, deceased; (4) one in 1854 from the above-mentioned Aaron Norris, then of Van Buren County, Iowa, to the above-mentioned Samuel Roberts; (5) one in 1857, quitclaiming title in the above lands to and between said Samuel Roberts and James B. Davidson; (6) one in 1866, wherein said Samuel Roberts disposed of his rights therein.

NOTE "C" [on the Roberts Family, see p. 558]

As early as April 24, 1772, Roger Roberts and ABSALOM[3] LITTLE owned[54] adjoining land in what was then Springhill Township, of Westmoreland County. In 1783 Roger was taxed[34] along with the Littles, Pettyjohns and Thomas Scott in the same vicinity, which had by then become Menallen Township. Roger Roberts received from the State of Pennsylvania by warrant of February 25, 1785, by survey of March 10, following, and by patent of March 9, 1790, a tract of land which he called "Greenfield." He had probably already lived for years on this land [see Little, p. 555] and presumably his first wife had died before the fall of 1784, for on September 28 of that year he deeded[55] to his son Isaac and, similarly, on October 28, he deeded to his sons Thomas and James, fifty acres each from his home farm, with the requirement that during his own life they might sell or exchange it only among themselves.

He was undoubtedly the man who married secondly, as her second husband, by about 1785, our BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY and who had by her a son Samuel Roberts, born about 1786, who lived at Heistersburg, Pennsylvania as testified to by Rachel (Findley) Bartlett [see Corey, p. 259] who spent her youth and early married life in Fayette County, Pennsylvania, where she would have been well acquainted with her sister-in-law BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT and would doubtless also have known that woman's mother, BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY Roberts, as well as the former's half-brother, this Samuel Roberts.

Moreover, William Roberts [son of Roger Roberts by his first wife] married Hetty Ann[b] Corey, daughter of our BETSEY by her first husband [see Corey, p. 273], and the will of Roger Roberts, dated[53] December 20, 1800, probated April 25, 1801 and settled by December, 1803, made bequests to these sons William and Samuel Roberts. The marriage of Roger Roberts and BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY occurred probably about 1784–5, since their son Samuel was born about 1786. The personnel of this combined Roberts and Corey family in 1790 showed, besides Roger Roberts himself, one male over sixteen, one male under sixteen, and five females, probably including wife BETSEY,

but the will[53] of Roger Roberts in December, 1800, failed to mention a wife, so it is inferred that BETSEY died prior to that date. Roger himself died between December 20, 1800, and April 17, 1801.

The known children of Roger Roberts and his first wife (but in uncertain order) were[53, 55]

I. Thomas Roberts, probably adult October 28, 1784, when he received land from his father.[53] It was doubtless this land which he called "Roger's Gift" [see map on p. 539] and which was warranted to him February 4, and surveyed March 3, 1785, but he died intestate before January 5, 1786, and the land was patented on May 21, 1789, to his brother James, who administered his estate.[53]

II. James Roberts, adult[55] October 28, 1784; living December 20, 1800.

III. Isaac Roberts, adult[55] September 28, 1784; living December 20, 1800.

IV. Elizabeth Roberts, living December 20, 1800; married, by 1778, Edward Dearth and removed 1797–8 to Warren County, Ohio[49] [as did also a Stockley Little and an Andrew Lytle with sons Robert, William and David who may have been relatives].

V. Cassandra Roberts, living December 20, 1800; married (——) "Houghkins" [probably Hawkins and perhaps Richard of Luzerne].

VI. Rachel Roberts, living December 20, 1800; married (——) "Goodin" [perhaps Thomas Goodin].

VII. William Roberts, b. about 1769; d. near Heistersburg July 19, 1853, aged 84 [gravestone in old Hopewell Cemetery]; named in father's will[53] December 20, 1800. He m. [before August 25, 1795 when they had a daughter Hetty Jane b.[60]] Hetty Ann[b] Corey [see Corey, p. 273], to whom in his will,[56] dated November 30, 1849, he bequeathed all his personal and real estate, referring to her as ". . . my beloved wife Hetty, in consideration of a long life of affection and kindness to meward. . . ." He made codicils to this document on December 20 and December 30, 1850, and in each of these three instances Samuel Roberts, his half-brother, was a witness. This will was proved August 6, 1853. He was a member of Hopewell Church and, after its dissolution, of the Methodist Episcopal class in the West Bend of the River. A William Roberts, probably this man, was one of the volunteers who carried a man with a broken leg, on a rude stretcher, from Coxe's Run in Luzerne Township, over the mountains to Hagerstown, Maryland, a distance of one hundred twenty-five miles as the crow flies.[59]

The child of Roger Roberts and his second wife, BETSEY (LITTLE) COREY, was

VIII. Samuel Roberts, b. about 1786, d. near Heistersburg in 1866, after[57] March 19 and before April 3, in his eighty-first year [gravestone in old Hopewell Cemetery]. He m. first, Polly (——), who d. in 1831, aged 43 (gravestone). He married secondly, between 1831 and December, 1845, widow Eliza (——), who survived him. He was a constituent member, as well as an elder, of Hopewell Church, near Heistersburg. He was appointed to succeed Judge Adeson in the fifth district in 1803; was Judge of the Orphans Court in 1804, and was a very extensive landowner. He was a witness to many wills and administrator of many estates, including those of his uncle,[36] Abraham[4] Little (ABSALOM[3], ANTHONY[2], JOHN[1]), and of that man's widow, Hope (——) Little Porter. In 1827 he built, in Heistersburg, a brick house which ten years later was converted into a tavern. His executor accounted[57] to the Court for $12,735.38. Samuel acquired[58] from some of the heirs of his uncle and aunt, Abraham[4] Little and Fanny (Little) Norris Harper, their rights to the tract once called "Scotland," purchased in 1791 by ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE [see Little, p. 556], and retained this property throughout his life.[57]

The only known child of Samuel Roberts and his wife, Polly, was

1. James Barclay, "only son," d. August 26, 1834, in his ninth year (gravestone). The heirs [probably grandchildren and probably also descended from his second wife, Eliza] who inherited the property of Samuel Roberts were[57] (1) James Brookhart [probably son of a daughter, (——) (Roberts) Brookhart]; (2) E. F. Grabill, (3) A. F. Grabill and (4) E. H. Grabill, probably sons of a daughter [Susan?] (Roberts) Grabill; (5) Francis M. Bower and (6) Tirzah V. (Bower) Jennings, probably son and daughter of a daughter (——) (Roberts) Bower.

REFERENCES

1. Youngs Family, S. Youngs, 1907, p. 54; History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, p. 108.
2. Ibid., p. 163; New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXI, 135; History of Newbury, Mass., J. Coffin, 1845, p. 308.

2a. Opinion of D. L. Jacobus, New Haven, Conn.

3. New Haven, Conn., Vital Records, I, 16–7.
4. New Haven Historical Society Record, Ancient Series, I, 425; New Haven Colonial Records, II, 355; Allerton Family, W. S. Allerton, 1900, pp. 29–31.

5. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXI, 149; Passaic Valley Genealogies, J. Littell, 1852, 213–7, 382; Descendants of George Little, G. T. Little, 1882, pp. 1–5.
6. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, pp. 36, 72–3, 86, 88, 91, 99, 101, 115, 159–60, 162–3, 167, 183, 222, 243, 264, 268, 273.
6a. Calendar of Historical Manuscripts at Albany, N. Y., E. B. O'Callaghan, 1866, pt. 2, pp. 89, 92.
7. New Jersey Archives, Ser. I, XXI, 25, 80, 91, 136, 151, 222, 245.
8. Ibid., XXX, 555, 562.
9. Ibid., XXIII, 139, 294–5.
10. Ibid., XXIII, 465, 516; Inscriptions from First Presbyterian Church, Elizabeth, N. J., 1892, p. 256; History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, p. 321.
11. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXX, 302.
12. Ibid., Ser. 1, XXX, 9–10, XXXII, 203.
13. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, pp. 115–7, 120, 126, 128–9, 132–3, 239–49, 323–5, 571; "The Mountain Society," J. Hoyt, 1860, pp. 36–9, 65, 89–90, 112; New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, II, 129, 326; New Jersey Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 3, VI, 107.
14. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, II, 333–9; III, 495–6.
15. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, pp. 279, 302–20, 364, 372, 403–10, 580; "The Mountain Society," J. Hoyt, 1860, pp. 24, 51–2; The Woodruffs of New Jersey, F. E. Woodruff, 1909, pp. 31–6.
16. Passaic Valley Genealogies, J. Littell, 1852, 214–6, 382.
17. History of Union County, N. J., A. V. Honeyman, 1923, II, 484–7, 490–3, 521, 527; History of ditto, F. W. Ricord, 1897, p. 526.
18. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Ser. 1, I, 1883, Chap. 8, pp. 32–3; Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, II, 182; IV, pt. 1, 324.
19. Story of the Pilgrims and Puritans, J. D. Sawyer, 1925, I, 264.
20. Autobiography, Family History and Various Reminiscences, Jonas Pettijohn, 1890, pub. Clay Center, Kan., pp. 5, 100–1.
21. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXX, 347, 517–8.
22. Sussex County, Del., Wills, Vol. B-2, 299.
23. 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, pp. 108–9; History of Warren County, O., Beers, 1882, p. 683; History of Monongalia County, W. Va., S. T. Wiley, 1883, pp. 82–3; Statutes at Large of Virginia, XIV, 408.
24. Sussex County, Del., Wills, B-2, 27, 116; Deeds, H-8, 248, 260; K-10, 149; L-11, 403; 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, 107–8; Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, XXII, 571; Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds I, 34, 190, 195; V, 563; Monongalia County Order Book, I, 100; Fayette County, Pa., Deeds, I, pt. 1, 303–4; Dyers' Index of Virginia Land Grants, p. 482, referring to Book III, 208.
25. Sussex County, Del., Wills, A-1, 403; B-2, 27.
26. Ibid., Wills, A-1, 403; Deeds, H-8, 319; I-9, 233; K-10, 179; L-11, 284.
27. Delaware Archives, Military, I, 13, 15.
28. The Woodruffs of New Jersey, F. E. Woodruff, 1909, p. 59.
29. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, XXII, 566; 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, p. 109.
30. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXI, 173, 183; XXIII, 269, 278, 322, 330–1, 472; XXX, 147, 212, 265, 273–4; New Jersey Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 3, V, 163.
31. 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, pp. 107–8; Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, XXII, 42, 625; Manuscript Records in Westmoreland and Fayette Counties, Pa.
32. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 1, XXII, 450, 621.
33. D. A. R. Lineage Book, XXXV, 214; Family Records furnished by various descendants including Lyle Pettijohn, Blue Earth, Minn., Dr. U. G. Littell, Santa Ana, Calif., Mrs. Mary Littell Burns, South Pasadena, Calif., Mrs. Cleatus Le Duc, New Albany, Ind. Much of the material furnished by these descendants has been verified and amplified by deeds, wills, etc.
34. Personal search of deeds, wills, court records, church records, cemeteries, etc., in southwestern Pennsylvania by the compiler.
35. Family records, including the results of search made and correspondence carried on from 1860 to 1890 by BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES.
36. Fayette County, Pa., Wills II, 42–3, 308, 515–6; Orphans Court Docket III, 361.
37. Westmoreland County, Pa., Deeds, A, pt. 1, pp. 166, 254, 273–4.
38. Fayette County, Pa., Deeds C-II, 592–4; IV, 128–9; V, 486, 496; VIII, 576; XI, 135–6; XX, 536–7, M, 67–8; Vol. 170, p. 399; K, 238; Deeds and Mortgages, B, 138.
39. Ibid., Deeds K, 238; M, 67–8; Vol. 170, p. 399; Wills, 1, 70; Deeds and Mortgages, B, 138; Ohio Falls Cities, pub. L. A. Williams & Co., 1882, II, 93, 211, 349, 383, 387–94, 423, 426, 429; Indiana and Indianans, J. P. Dunn, 1919, I, 254; 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, p. 108; Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds, I, 494; Biographical Sketches of Pioneer Preachers of Indiana, Madison Evans, pp. 42–56.
40. Early History of the Dunlap's Creek Presbyterian Church, J. G. Johnston, 1914, pp. 5–19.
41. Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds, I, 494; Dyers' Index of Virginia Land Grants, p. 482, referring to Book III, 136.
42. Monongalia County, W. Va., Court Order Book No. 4, Oct. 8, 1810.

43. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, XXII, 49, 450; History of Preston County, W. Va., O. F. Morton, 1914, I, 486.
44. History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 63, 642; Boundary Controversy between Pennsylvania and Virginia in Annals of Carnegie Museum, I, 505–24, 526–30, 541; History of Washington County, Pa., A. Creigh, 1870, pp. 15, 18–9, et seq.; History of Monongalia County, W. Va., S. T. Wiley, 1883, p. 38 et seq.; Statutes at Large of Pennsylvania, X, 462-3; VIII, 314; XI, 197, 383–4; Old Westmoreland, E. W. Hassler, 1900, pp. 5–9; The Monongahela of Old, James Veech, 1892, pp. 21–108, 199–202.
45. Washington County, Pa., Deeds, 1-A, 48–50.
46. Minute Book of the Virginia Court held for Yohogania County, 1776–80, in Annals of Carnegie Museum, II, 83, 89–90, 101, 206, 305; Records of Deeds for the District of West Augusta, Va., for the Court held at Fort Dunmore, 1775–6, in Annals of Carnegie Museum, III, 311–3; Minute or Order Book for the Virginia Court held for Ohio County, Va., 1777–80, in Annals of Carnegie Museum, III, 5.
47. Biographical Dictionary of Fayette County, Pa., Nelson, 1900.
48. Virginia State Library Report, 1907–8, V, 135–41.
49. History of Warren County, Ohio, W. H. Beers & Co., 1882, pp. 683, 899–900, 1059–60.
50. The Monongahela of Old, James Veech, 1892, pp. 37, 75–108, 199–202; History of the Insurrection in the Four West Counties of Pennsylvania, W. Findley, p. 29 et seq.; History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 61, 641; History of the Insurrection in Western Pennsylvania, H. M. Brackenridge, 1859, pp. 28–9, 41–2; History of Western Pennsylvania, I. D. Rupp, 1846, pp. 129, 179–81, App., 258–67.
51. Annals of Carnegie Museum, I, 530–1; II, 90; Southwestern Virginia and the Shenandoah Valley, T. Bruce, 1891, pp. 19–22.
52. The Monongahela of Old, James Veech, 1892, pp. 121–5; Old Westmoreland, E. W. Hassler, 1900, pp. 104–5, 111–2.
53. Fayette County, Pa., Wills, I, 53; 1790 Census of Pennsylvania, p. 108; Orphans Court Docket, I, 6, 49; Bond Book, I, 44.
54. Westmoreland County, Pa., Deeds, A, 254.
55. Fayette County, Pa., Deeds, A, 62.
56. Fayette County, Pa., Wills, III, 93–4.
57. Ibid., Wills, II, 42–3, 308, 515–6; IV, 134–5; Deeds, IV, 40–1; VIII, 190; "X," 139–40; XIII, 498–9; XIV, 86–7; XX, 536–7; XXI, 98, 475; XXVIII, 409–10; Vol. 168, p. 66; Vol. 173, p. 272; N, 143; O, 226–7; History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 645–7.
58. Fayette County, Pa., Deeds, V, 42–3; VIII, 576; XI, 135–6.
59. History of Fayette County, Pa., F. Ellis, 1882, pp. 640–1; The Monongahela of Old, James Veech, 1892, p. 107.
60. Biographical and Portrait Cyclopedia of Fayette County, Pa., J. M. Gresham & S. T. Wiley, 1889, p. 147.
61. Monongalia County, W. Va., Entry Book, I, 351; Deeds, V, 262; Deeds, O. S., I, 14.

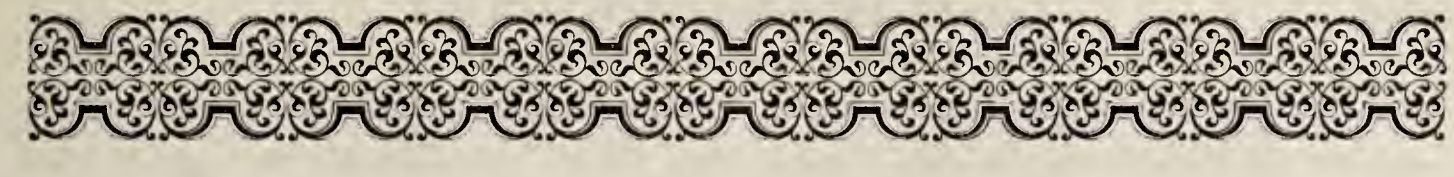
LOOMIS

* [518] [866] **Joseph Loomis** –1658 — m 1614 — **Mary White** 1590–1652

- † [258] **Nicholas Olmstead** 1612–1684 — m 1st 1640 — **Sarah Loomis** c.1617–8–1667
  - † ‡ § [128] **George Gates** c.1634–1724 — m c.1660–1 — **Sarah Olmstead** 1641–1709
    - ‡ § [64] **Joseph Gates** 1662–1712 — m c.1694 — **Elizabeth Hungerford** c.1670–1759
      - § [32] **Joseph Gates** 1695–6–1770 — m 1719 — **Hannah Brainerd** 1694–1744
        - § [16] **Bezaleel Gates** 1726–1802 — m 1750 — **Mary Brainerd** 1727–1796
          - § # [8] **Aaron Gates** 1753–1821 — m 1776 — **Elizabeth Johnson** c.1756–1816
            - # ⊙ [4] **Aaron Gates** 1780–1850 — m 1803 or 1804 — **Ruth Beman** 1784–1858
              - ⊙ ◇ [2] **Beman Gates** 1818–1894 — m 1841 — **Betsey Sibyl Shipman** 1816–1895
                - ◇ **Rufus R. Dawes** 1838–1899 — m 1864 — **Mary Beman Gates** 1842–1921

- * ‖ [432] **Josiah Hull** 1616–1675 — m 1640–1 — **Elizabeth Loomis** c.1620–living 1665
  - ‖ [216] **Joseph Hull** 1652–1709 — m c.1676 — . . .
    - ‖ ¶ [108] **Cornelius Hull** 1687–1756 — m 1715 — **Mehitable Graves** 1688–1747
      - ¶ [54] **Joseph Hull** 1716–1785–6 — m 1746 — **"Sibylla" Coe** c.1723–1785
        - ♁ ◇ ♦ [26] **Levi Chapman** 1740–prob.aft.1805 — m 1767 — **Elizabeth Hull** 1747–aft.1820
          - ♁ ◇ [12] **Joshua Shipman** 1767–1823 — m 1786 or 1787 — **Sybil Chapman** 1768–1828
            - ♁ ◇ ▲ [6] **Charles Shipman** 1787–1860 — m 2nd 1814 — **Joanna Herrick Bartlett** 1793–1870
              - **Betsey Sibyl Shipman** 1816–1895

* Windsor, Conn.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Haddam, Conn.
§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ Killingworth, Conn.
¶ Durham, Conn.
♁ Saybrook, Conn.
♦ Salem, Ohio.
\# East Hartland, Conn.
⊙ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
◇ Marietta, Ohio.
▲ Athens, Ohio.



LOOMIS

THE parents of JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS, of New England, were probably John and Agnes Loomis, of Braintree, co. Essex, England. If so, he was their only son and the executor[1a, 6, 6a] of the father's will in May and June, 1619. The fact that JOSEPH[1] came from that town is proved by the following deposition dated July 30, 1639, the original of which is extant:[1]

"Joseph Hills of Charlestowne, in New England, Woollen Draper, aged about 36 yeares, sworne, saith upon his oath that he came to New England undertaker in the ship called Susan & Ellen of London whereof was master Mr. Edward Payne, in the yeare of our Lord one thousand six hundred thirty and eight, the fourteenth yeare of the raigne of our Sou^r^aigne Lord the King that now is, and this d^pt^ knowes that divers goods and chattells, victualls & commodities of JOSEPH LOOMIS late of Brayntree in the County of Essex, Woolendraper, wch were put up in three butts, two hogsheds, one halfe hogshed, one barrell, one tubb & three firkins, transported from Malden in the County of Essex to London in an Ipsw^ch^ Hye,* were shipped in the said ship upon the eleventh day of Aprill in the yere abovesayd, and this deponent cleared the said goods wth divers other goods of the said JOSEPH LOOMIS and other mens, in the Customes at London, as may appeare by the Customers bookes, and this dep^t^ saith that the said goods were transported into New England in the said ship where she arrived on the seaventeeth day of July in the yeare aforesayd."

JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS married at Shalford, co. Essex,[5, 6] England, on June 30, 1614, MARY WHITE.† They remained in England until the spring of 1638 when,

*Hoy, a small one-masted vessel rigged fore-and-aft as a sloop is. Maldon, co. Essex, is the port nearest to Braintree.

† The parents of MARY WHITE were[5, 10] ROBERT and BRIDGET (ALLGAR) WHITE, of Shalford and of Messing, co. Essex, England. ROBERT WHITE was a wealthy man as shown by his will dated May 27, 1617, and probated the following month. In this document there was a bequest to "my daughter MARIE the wife of JOSEPH LUMMIS of Branectree [of] one pewter platter"; it provided for certain bequests to his three children, Bridget, Ann and John, on condition that when they married they should obtain the approval of their mother and brothers-in-law JOSEPH

on April 11, with their eight children, they embarked at Maldon [the nearest seaport to Braintree] on the "Susan and Ellen" on which their goods also came and arrived in Boston on July 17, following. It is theorized that they spent their first year in this country at Dorchester though proof of that opinion has not yet been found, but in the summer and fall of 1639 the family removed overland* to Windsor, Connecticut, probably[6] in the company with the Reverend Ephraim Huet who arrived there August 17, 1639. The Loomis home lot† of twenty-one acres which JOSEPH[1] received by grant on February 2, 1640, was situated[4a, 6] on the south side of the Farmington River near its mouth, on "The Island" [see map on p. 569] which was so named because at every freshet it became temporarily cut off from the rest of the town by the overflow of the Connecticut River. He acquired considerable land by grant and by purchase[4a] and made a gift in 1643 of a portion to his son Joseph[2] as well as other gifts later to his other sons including that of the homestead to John[2].

The records kept by MATTHEW[1] GRANT show that[4a] "(——) Loomys" joined the Windsor church on October 11, 1640, which item has sometimes been completed by the insertion of the name "John" probably erroneously, for John[2] Loomis at that time was only about eighteen years old so the membership probably pertained to his father.

JOSEPH[1] served[14] on a jury on March 2, 1642, and on another in company with NATHANIEL[1] FOOTE in September, 1644. On January 6, 1650, he was sued[4a] by William Buell for trespass and for damage to the extent of seven bushels of corn; one may infer that his stock got away from him.

The habit of neighborly exchange of labor and produce is shown forth by the following excerpt from an ancient account-book[15] kept by Henry[2] Wolcott, of Windsor:

LOOMIS and William Goodwin; it made these two sons-in-law its supervisors and gave them each forty shillings for that service.[10]

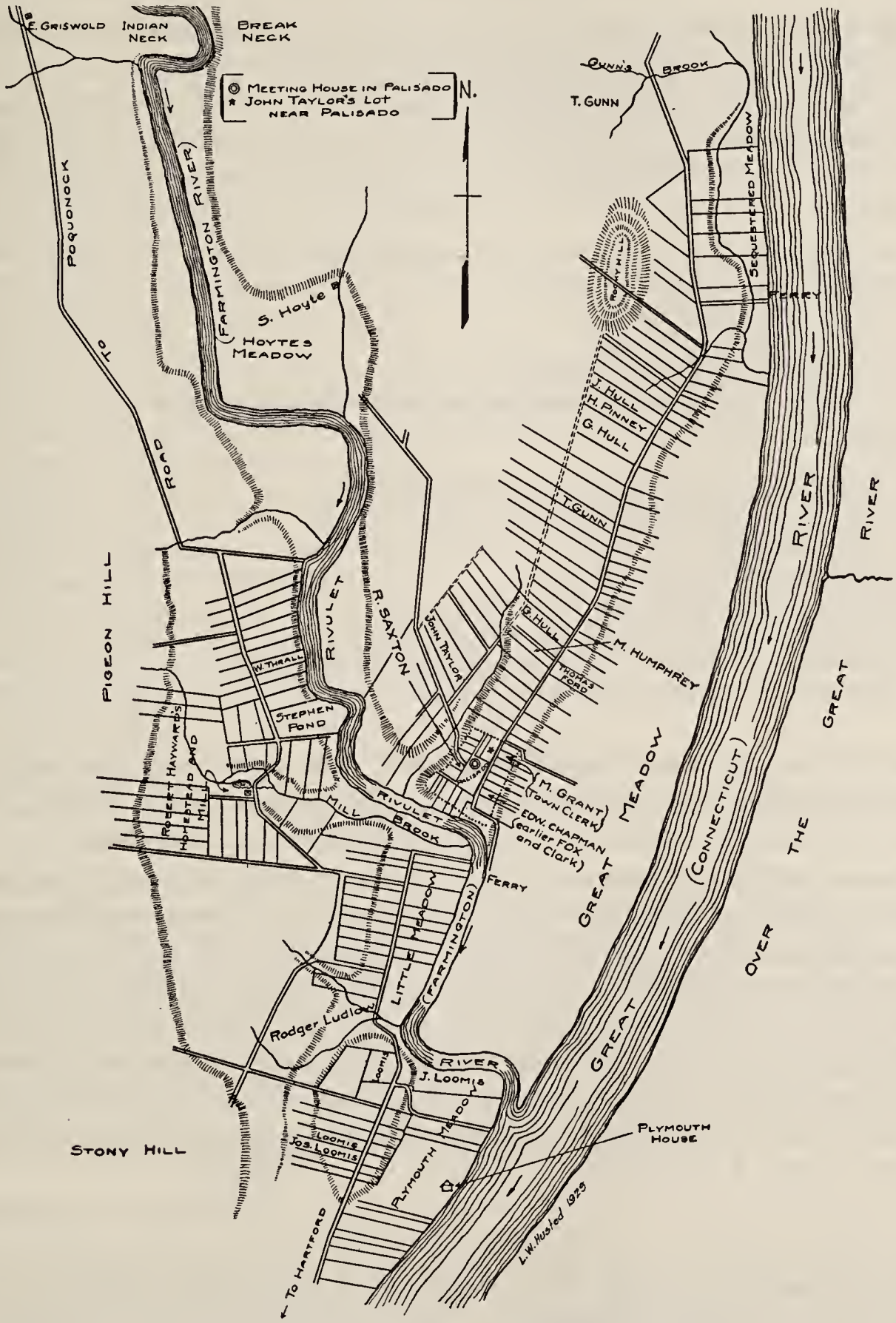
At Shalford had occurred the marriage of ROBERT WHITE, the birth of most of his children including that of our MARY on August 24, 1590, as well as her subsequent marriage, and the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth on November 7, 1616, to William Goodwin.

The White family removed about twelve miles to Messing, shortly before the death of ROBERT; it is believed to have been his daughter Ann who married there on October 18, 1620, John Porter, of Felsted, and who removed about 1639 to New England and settled in Windsor, Connecticut, on the lot adjoining that of JOSEPH[1] and MARY (WHITE) LOOMIS.

Excellent evidence is found tending to show that their sister Elizabeth and her husband, William Goodwin, settled at Hartford and, in all probability, other near relatives also emigrated.[5, 6, 10, 11, 13]

*The route followed by these courageous pioneers was west from their Massachusetts homes to Springfield and then down the Connecticut River. This trip which can now be accomplished in three or four hours then required about two weeks, as they laboriously traveled by foot the narrow Indian trails, driving their stock before them and sleeping under the stars.

† It was bounded on the south by the "Plymouth Meadow" [see Grant, p. 374, and Olmstead, p. 612].



WINDSOR, CONNECTICUT, IN 1633–50, THE HOME THEN OF FIFTEEN ANCESTRAL FAMILIES

"JOSEPH LOOMIS owes	£0–14– 5
It March 20, 1647 he had of me for many trees as come to	1– 0– 0
to be payed in wheate and pease the next winter	0– 0–11
of which he payed to Edward Falkwell for me	0– 9– 0
It to francis Browne	0– 0– 6
It to John Moses for Falkwells pumpeons	0– 3–0"

DEBITS:

It. for perrysigns	0– 1– 4
It. for 7 hundred of hay	0– 9– 2
It. for the cannooe one day	0– 1– 0
It. for a bushell of pearemains	0– 6– 0
It. for a peck of apples July 22, 1651	0– 0– 9
It. November the 4th 1651 he had 3 bushells of pearemains at 4s 6d	0–13– 6

CREDITS:

It. received 6½ bushells of pease & 3 pecks of pease	£1– 1– 9
It. 1650 he paid to Mr. Coggins man	0–11– 5
It. ½ a dayes work	0– 1– 0
It. he paid to John Bissell for me	0– 4– 8
It. half a bushell of pease August 10, 1651	0– 1– 6
It. I had June the 16, 1652 a peece of venison	0– 1– 3
It. for one dayes work with his oxen June 1652	0– 4– 0
It. August 4 '52 I had of him a brest of veale	0– 1–2"

JOSEPH[1] and his sons, Joseph[2] and John[2], took up certain land which was not recorded until 1663 and which was in legal dispute as late as 1675. At the later time, MATTHEW[1] GRANT, the town clerk, testified[7] as follows:

"Now after this there was entred upon liberty granted them by exchang to resigne up these aboue exprest parcels agayne to ye Town, and thus exprest in ye margent against ye pcell of JOSEPH LOOMYS, sn[r] this prcell of land of 40 acers of land was resigned up to ye Town upon exchang and JOSEPH LOOMYS ye elder toke up twenty acers towards or in part of ye forty acers resigned up, with his sonn Joseph and sonn John at pip staue swamp* so that ye father and two sonnes toke up eyghty acers there together not deuiding. But this was not put one record till may. 1663. when they had me out a second time to renew ye bounds, for this I doe testify to be truth MATHEW GRANT recorder"

The wife of JOSEPH[1] died at Windsor on August 23, 1652, and he died[6, 12] there November 25, 1658. The inventory of his estate, showing property valued at £178–10–00, mentioned[1] a "debt in England" of £12–14–08 against

* Pipe stave swamp, southwest of the present town of Windsor.

the estate. He evidently left no will for the court record shows that on December 2, 1658, an agreement[12] was entered into by the heirs who signed the document, probably in the order of their age; this instrument shows that at that date all of his sons were living, as indeed also were his three daughters, though the two through whom we descend were represented by their husbands NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD and JOSIAH[2] HULL.

The children of JOSEPH[1] and MARY (WHITE) LOOMIS,* all born in England, probably in Braintree, and perhaps in the order given, through two of whom we descend, were[1, 1a, 2, 3, 4, 6, 15]

I. Joseph[2], b. prob. 1615–6; d. June 26, 1687, at Windsor; m. 1st, September 17, 1646, Sarah Hill; m. 2nd, June 28, 1659, Mary Chauncy.
II. SARAH[2], b. prob. 1617–8; d.[8] 1667; m.[2] before[12] September 28, 1640, NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD [see Olmstead, p. 615].
III. ELIZABETH[2], b. prob. 1620; living at Killingworth, 1665; m.[9] at Windsor, May 20, 1640 or 1641,[2, 3] JOSIAH[2] HULL [see Hull, p. 461].
IV. John[2], b. prob. 1622; d. September 2, 1688, at Windsor; m. February 3, 1648–9, Elizabeth Scott (Thomas).
V. Thomas[2], b. prob. 1624; d. August 28, 1689; m. 1st, November 1, 1653, Hannah Fox, doubtless sister of our ELIZABETH (FOX) CHAPMAN [see Fox, p. 346]; m. 2nd, January 1, 1663, Mary Judd (Thomas).
VI. Nathaniel[2], b. prob. abt. 1626; d. August 19, 1688; m. November 24, 1654, Elizabeth Moore (John).
VII. Mary[2], b. (—); d.[6] August 19, 1680; m. 1st, John Skinner; m. 2nd, November 13, 1651, Owen Tudor.
VIII. Samuel[2], b. (—); d.[4, 6] October 1, 1689; m. December 27, 1653, Elizabeth Judd (Thomas); removed to Westfield, Mass.

*Notable distinction is seen in several particulars in connection with the Loomis homestead for it has remained from 1640 until the present day in the continual possession of descendants of JOSEPH[1], showing thus one of the longest, if not the longest, known term of perpetual ownership by an American family.[6b] Moreover, the house thereon, a portion of which was built by JOSEPH[1] himself probably before 1652, is still standing, is in good repair and is furnished with antique articles used by members of this family of the various generations. Finally, in 1871–4 a plan was conceived and undertaken by several descendants[6b] of JOSEPH[1], who themselves had no children or had lost them by death, whereby "Loomis Institute" was incorporated under the laws of the State of Connecticut and was endowed by the incorporators, who transferred also to this body the ownership of the old Loomis homestead on "The Island," with the definite purpose that there should be built and maintained thereon an institute of learning which should be free to those who were accepted as students. This stands as a fine memorial[13] to the memory of JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS, our common ancestor, who with his family braved the trials and dangers of the early pioneer for the sake of freedom. The endowment of the Institute amounts[15] to $3,000,000.00.

REFERENCES

1. Loomis Family, E. Loomis, 2nd ed., 1875, pp. 9–11, 23, 25–6.
1a. Boddie and Allied Families, J. T. and J. B. Boddie, 1918, pp. 202–4.
2. Loomis Family, E. Loomis, 1880, I, 15, 59, 108, 129.
3. Savage, III, 112–4, 312.
4. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 432–4.

4a. Ibid., I, 90, 160, 547–9, 873, 884, 878; Memorial History of Hartford Co., Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 554.
5. New England Register, LV, 22–30.
6. Ancestry of J. B. White, A. L. White, 1913, pp. 231–3; Descendants of JOSEPH LOOMIS, E. S. Loomis, 1908, pp. 115–26; Bassett Genealogy, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 508–13.
6a. Ibid., 95–8, 102–8.
6b. Ibid., 35–48.
7. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 104.
8. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 12.
9. Hull Family in America, Col. Weygant, 1913, pp. 14–9.
10. Goodwins of Hartford, F. F. Starr, 1891, pp. 26–7, 42, 68–71.
11. Ancestry of W. F. J. Boardman by himself, 1916, pp. 306–7.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 28–9, 135–6.
13. Old Houses of Connecticut, Conn. Soc. of Colonial Dames in America, 1923, pp. 27–34; Connecticut Magazine, X, 361–71; Journal of American History, 1910, IV, 282–98; Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 517.
14. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 81, 110.
15. Bassett Genealogy, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 508–12; Births, Marriages and Deaths of Hartford &c., E. S. Welles, 1898, pp. 29, 41–2.

MARVIN

* † [406] Matthew Marvin c.1600–c.1680	m 1st	Elizabeth . . . c.1604–c.1640
† [202] Thomas Seymour 1632–1712	m 1st 1654	Hannah Marvin 1634–living 1680
‡ [100] Joshua Bushnell 1644–1710	m 1682	Mary Seymour 1658–aft.1710
‡ [50] Joshua Bushnell 1690–1778	m 2nd 1717	Elizabeth Han[d]ly c.1696–1777
‡ [24] Samuel Shipman 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733–1806
‡ § [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‡ § ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
¶ § [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
§ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Hartford, Conn.
† Norwalk, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

MARVIN

MATTHEW[1] MARVIN, aged thirty-five, his wife, ELIZABETH, aged thirty-one and their five oldest children came to New England in the "Increase," Robert Lea, Master, in April, 1635.[1] His brother, Reynold, also emigrated by or before 1639.[2] They were the sons of EDWARD and MARGARET MARVIN, of Great Bentley,* co. Essex, England, where MATTHEW[1] was baptized on March 26, 1600.[3] His father's will gave him the "Mentchon house called Edons alles [alias] Dreybrockes,† and ij Croftes of land called Harttes and Brocken Heddes"[16] on condition that he should pay his mother yearly throughout her life "the fulle sume of Sexe Poundes"[3] and MATTHEW[1] probably resided at that place with his mother until her death in 1633. He held the position of "sydeman" in St. Mary's Church in 1621, of overseer there in 1627 and of senior warden in 1628.[3] That he should have held such positions at his age shows him to have been a good type of man for, according to a statute of 1536, church wardens were classed "co-equally with Mayors, Governors, and head officers of every city borough and town corporate."[3]

It is probable that MATTHEW[1] and his family spent the first few months after their arrival in New England at or near "Newtowne," Massachusetts,[3a] but he was one of the original settlers in Hartford,[4] Connecticut, in 1635–6 and his name is on the monument to such in that city.[3, 4a] His home in that town was on what was in 1886 the corner of Front and Pleasant streets[4] and he held the position of surveyor of highways there in 1639 and 1647.[9] In February, 1639, ten different "parcells" of land are shown under his ownership and others were later acquired, for even as late as 1665, he retained his right in the undivided lands in Hartford and in 1666 received an additional ninety acres there in that way.[5] Seven of these different plots were sold to Richard Fellows.[5]

On November 9, 1640, MATTHEW[1] and another were fined five shillings "for puting ouer of ther hoges ouer the greate riuer [Connecticut] without order

* Several generations of this family in England are traced and published.[3]

† "This house in which EDWARD died is [1904] still standing."[3]

. . . & [were] to pay such damages as wer done by thos sayd hoges."[9] In March, 1641, in an agreement about fencing certain land he was to maintain a "Common gate" to the North Meadow and "if any children shal be taken swinging upon the gate by the said MATHEW MERUILL he shal complayn to ther parents or masters & if they doe not restraine them the second time it shall be lawful for him to [illegible] them & if they brake the gate ther parents or masters shall make it good."[3, 9] In 1648–9 he was voted ten shillings for "killing a wolfe."[3, 9] Evidently these beasts had been a real menace for in September of 1640 it had been voted that one of the inhabitants "shall spend his Time abowght killing of wolfes & for his Incoragmentt he shall haue 4s.6d. a weeke for his bord in casse he kill not a wolfe or a deare in ye weake: but iff he kill a wolfe or a deare he is To pay for his bord himselfe & if he kill a deare we are To have it for 2d. a pound."[1, 9]

MATTHEW[1] had a lawsuit in 1644 against Peter Bassaker, and another in 1649 against Matthew Beckwith. The latter was for defamation and the plaintiff received a verdict of £50 damages[7] but this amount was remitted when Beckwith made a public retraction of the slander.[3]

With his brother Reynold, MATTHEW[1] evidently considered removing to Farmington for they are listed as having home lots assigned to them in that settlement and, though Reynold completed that plan, MATTHEW[1] sold his rights there to Nathaniel Kellogg[3] and on June 1, 1650, signed instead, the agreement relative to the proposed removal to and settlement of Norwalk.[3, 4] He was one of the planters of that new town who was named in the Indian deed of February 15, 1651, wherein the transfer of lands was made to the settlers on account of the payment of "Thirtie Fathum of Wampum, Tenn Kettles, Fifteen Coates, Tenn pay^r Stockings, Tenn Knifes, Tenn Hookes, Twenty Pipes, Tenn Muckes, Tenn needles."[6] The actual exodus to this settlement occurred between June, 1650, and September, 1651, and both he and his son, Matthew[2], drew land there totaling about four hundred twenty-five acres.[6]

MATTHEW[1] is called "one of the most distinguished of the Norwalk fathers" and "one of the Colonial 'Roll of Honor' men, concerning whom it has been justly said:

> "They had no model, but they left us one;
> On their strong lines we base our social health;
> The man, the home, the town, the commonwealth.' "[6]

This statement of his standing in the community is justified by the fact of his receiving "the home lot of honor," being that next to the meeting house and near the parade ground.[6] His location is said to have been historic in an added way, as marking the "Hollow" where newcomers camped until permanent quarters could be provided them.[3, 6] This tradition suggests many opportunities for neighborly helpfulness and hospitality.

The frequent use of the prefix "Mr." in connection with his name in the early records, as well as the fact that his estate was the second largest in the town, and included lands in nearby towns, verifies his stated position of prominence. He was a Deputy to the General Court for Norwalk in 1654;[8] on May 19, of that year, was "freed from Watch and training";[3] is said to have been a Magistrate in 1659, and in a deed in 1674 to his "sonne" Samuel Smith, he called himself[16] "wheeilwright of Norwake." When the original meeting house was to be enlarged, MATTHEW[1] was one of a committee to call on inhabitants to assist, to oversee the work, and finally "to provide a luncheon and a barrel of good beans for the help."[3, 6] On October 13, 1664, he, with others, was accepted as a freeman and directed to take the oath the following May and on October 11, 1669, both he and his son were reported as freemen of Norwalk.[15]

MATTHEW[1] married first, in England, ELIZABETH (——), who died in Hartford, probably about 1640, and not later than 1647. He married secondly, about 1647, Alice (——) Bouton,[3] widow of John Bouton, Sr. whose [maiden name[10, 16] is said to have been Kellogg][6, 11] who brought with her to his home three children of her own,[10, 11] one of whom married into his family.

Toward the close of his life MATTHEW[1] made provision for his daughters, all of whom had married, and his will dated December 20, 1678, added to his earlier gifts considerably, including a portion for his daughter HANNAH (MARVIN) SEYMOUR.[11] The exact date of his death is not known but it was before July 12, 1680, when the inventory of his estate was taken showing a net valuation of £356-2-8. His wife survived him and left a will in favor of her three Bouton children and her living[11] daughter by MATTHEW[1].

The children of MATTHEW[1] and ELIZABETH (——) MARVIN, the first five baptized at St. Mary's Church, Great Bentley, England, and the others at Hartford, Connecticut, were[1, 2, 14, 16]

I. Elizabeth[2], bap. September 15, 1622; d. 1708; m. bef. 1650, John Olmstead, probably a nephew of JAMES[1].
II. Matthew[2], bap. November 8, 1626; d. 1712 at Norwalk; m., about 1650, Mary (——).

iii. Marie[2], bap. December 16, 1628; d. March 29, 1713, at Norwich; m. 1st, at Hartford, October 11, 1648, Richard Bushnell[3a, 12, 14] [doubtless son of FRANCIS[1]]; m. 2nd, about 1660, Thomas Adgate.

iv. Sarah[2], bap. December 27, 1631; d. about 1701 at Stratford; m. 1st, at Hartford, October 4, 1648, William Goodrich;[12] m. 2nd, abt. 1680, William Curtis.

v. HANNAH[2], b. abt. October, 1634, in England for she was "½ year" old in April, 1635, at emigration;[1] living in November, 1680, when an agreement withdrawing exceptions to her father's will was signed;[14] married at Norwalk, January 5, 1653–4, as his first wife,[2, 14] THOMAS[2] SEYMOUR [see Seymour, p. 728].

vi. Abigail[2], b. abt. 1637–8, Hartford; living December, 1680; m. at Norwalk, January 1, 1657, John Bouton, Jr., her stepbrother.

vii. Rebecca[2], b. abt. 1639, Hartford; prob. m. John Clark, of Farmington.

The children of MATTHEW[1] MARVIN and Alice (——) Bouton, born in Hartford, were[2, 12, 14]

viii. Lydia[2], b. perhaps 1647–8.[16]

ix. Samuel[2], bap. February 6 or 16, 1647–8; prob. d. young.

x. Rachel[2], bap. December 30, 1649; d. abt. 1687; m., prob. abt. 1670–1, Samuel Smith of Norwalk.

REFERENCES

1. Hotten's Emigrant Lists, I, 65.
2. Savage, III, 164–5, 312; IV, 693.
3. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 10, 12, 22–6, 30, 287–91.

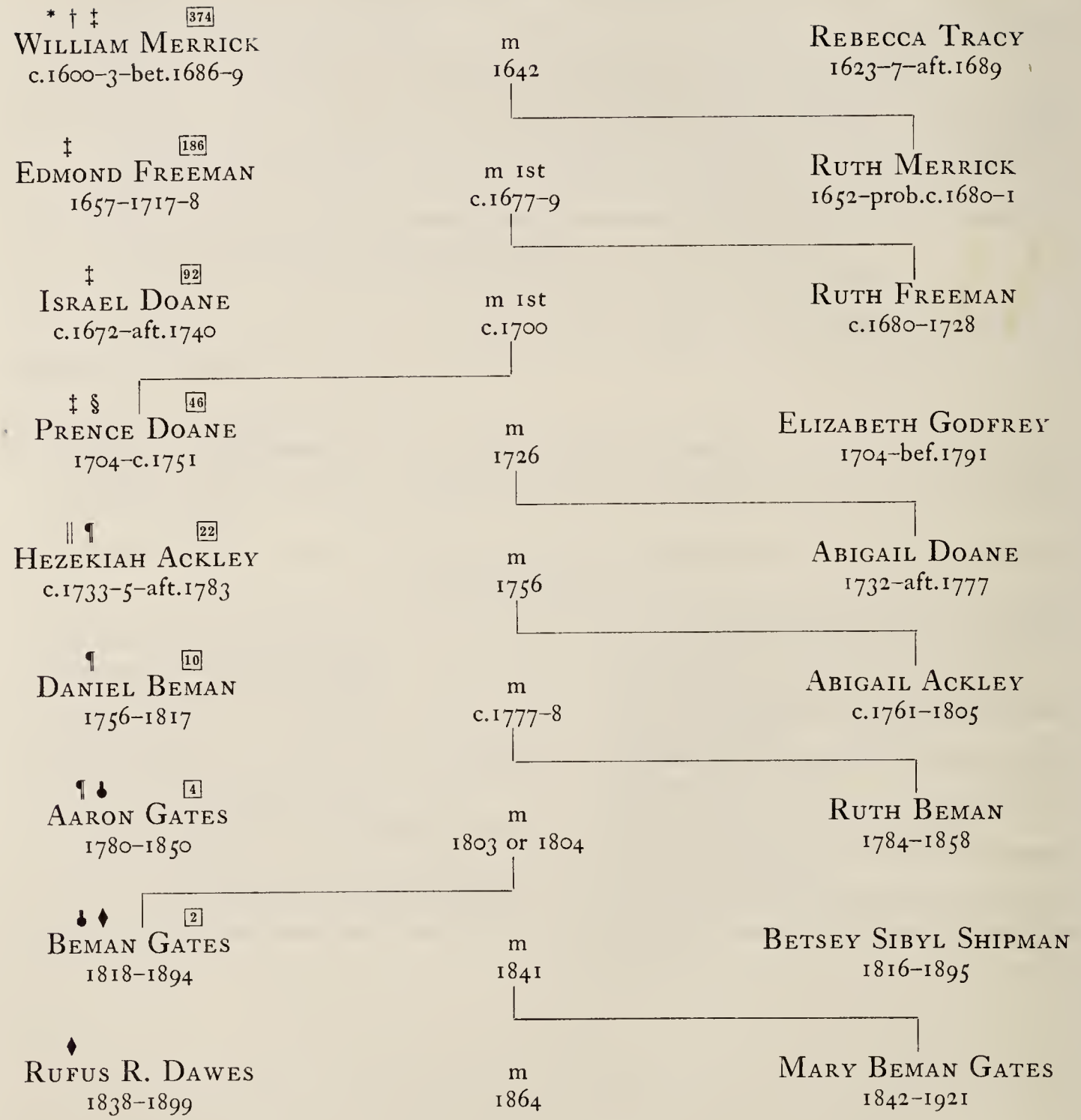
3a. Ibid., p. 581.

4. Memorial History of Hartford, J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 251; II, 165–6.

4a. Olmstead Family, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.

5. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 89, 412–3, 493, 500.
6. History of Norwalk, Conn., C. M. Selleck, 1896, pp. 11–2, 14–5, 31, 39, 78, 97, 150–1, 185, 226.
7. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 111, 181.
8. Ibid., I, 256.
9. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, VI, 38, 61–2, 84, 88.
10. Kellogg Genealogy, T. Hopkins, 1903, I, 31.
11. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 291–6.
12. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 579, 581, 607.
13. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 343.
14. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 289, 297–314.
15. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 433; II, 522.
16. Bassett Genealogy, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 529–36.

MERRICK



* Plymouth, Mass.
† Duxbury, Mass.
‡ Eastham, Mass.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ East Haddam, Conn.
¶ East Hartland, Conn.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.

MERRICK

WILLIAM[1] MERRICK, born[1] about 1600–3, perhaps in Wales, is said to have come to New England[2] with the usual "three brothers" in the "James" in the spring of 1636. While proof of this statement has not been found, he was certainly here before October of that year, at which time he received a grant of land in Plymouth and answered an action in Court there.[3] Comment has been occasioned by the fact that he did not marry until 1642, after which date he had ten children, to whom his age made him seem more like a grandfather than a father[4] and there has been voiced a suggestion that he may have been bound for six years of military service and not free to marry until it was completed,[2] but no law or ruling justifying such a theory has been seen. It seems much more probable that he came as a servant to some more prosperous colonist and was bound, therefore, to work for a term of years in return for the cost of his voyage, in which case he would have to wipe out this debt by "working out his freedom" before he would be able to marry. Strong color is given to this theory, as well as evidence of the patience sometimes required before promises of grants of land were finally fulfilled, by certain interlocking facts shown in a series of actions by the Plymouth Court, as (a), on June 4, 1661, when "Libertie is granted vnto some whoe were formerly servants whoe haue land due vnto them by couenant, to nominate some psons to the Court or to some of the majestrates, to bee deputed in theire behalfe to purchase a p̃cell of land for theire accom̃odations att Saconett"[5] [then in Massachusetts but later Little Compton, Rhode Island]; (b), on June 3, 1662, when Captain Willett was appointed "to purchase the land of the Indians which is graunted vnto such that were servants and others that were ancient freemen . . . that the abouesaid servants and ancient freemen shall haue liberty, incase they cannot procure Saconett Necke according to the graunt, to looke out some other place, vndisposed of, for theire accom̃odation. Theire names are as followeth: . . . WILLAM MERRICK . . .;"[5]

(c), on June 7, 1665, when discussion occurred "conserning the land att Saconett, in reference vnto the petitioners for it called ancient seruants . . . ;"[5] (d), on June 5, 1666, when "the ancient servants . . . shall either bee accomodated att Saconett, according to a former graunt, or on the south-side of Weymouth . . . [see map on p. 373] and incase they haue it att the latter place, thet they shall haue fifty acrees apeece . . . betwixt this date and Nouember next;"[5] (e), on October 31, 1661, when WILLIAM[1] MERRICK and another who had apparently been tentatively assigned to the Weymouth vicinity, "incase they be not accomodated with land amongst them with whom they are listed neare the Bay line that they may looke out for accomodation elswher; or incase that Saconett can be purchased of the Indians, that then the said pties may have there portions of land there, if they please;"[5] and finally, (f), on July 4, 1673, when bounds were named at Saconett for the grant to the "old servants," a committee was appointed to locate these limits and a requirement was made that the "old servants . . . shall make theire appeerance att Plymouth on the twenty second of this psent July, then and theire to make out theire right, and also pay such disbursements as shall nessesarily be required, or otherwise loose theire right."[5]

Twenty-nine men, including WILLIAM[1] MERRICK, complied with this order on this date and thus became the original proprietors of what is now Little Compton, Rhode Island,[5a] although at this time no one had settled there, but few did so for some years to come and it is quite certain that neither WILLIAM[1] nor his immediate family ever did so. He owned lot number twelve and until 1681 or perhaps 1687 the proprietors' meetings were held at Duxbury because the majority of them still lived in that vicinity.[5a]

A group of conflicting statements which are hard to harmonize and yet, from their source, quite as hard to contradict, relate to the delayed acquisition of freemanship by "WILLIAM MERRICK" of which name there is no other adult than our WILLIAM[1] seen at that period. His name was included in a list of those "Ppounded to take vp theire Freedom"[7] [see Appendix, p. 853] on June 5, 1651; was still so listed[7] on June 3, 1652, yet he was not admitted and sworn[7] a freeman until June 1, 1658, although in the meanwhile he was counted among the legal voters[7a] of Eastham on May 22, 1655, and had taken the oath of fidelity[7] at Duxbury in 1657. Since he had so lately become a freeman, the term "ancient freeman" [see (b)] could hardly have pertained to him, in reference to the personnel of the grantees

of Saconett, and the logical deduction then is that he was one of the "old servants," meaning one who came over early. Nor need the term "servant" cause any great uneasiness in the minds of those who carry descent from such a one, for in those days any man of means who came to New England brought with him a group of young men or young women, or both, to aid in clearing the land and in providing and keeping a home, and these were often young relatives or neighbors' children and frequently of the same or similar social standing as their employer.

While seeming discrepancy of statement is found as to the place of residence of WILLIAM[1], the matter is clarified by recognition of the fact that while he first appeared as a resident of Plymouth, received from that town a grant of five acres "next to the glade on Powder Point" in October, 1636, and another of twenty acres on "Greenes Harbor Payth" in October, 1637[8a] [see map on p. 685], this placed him without removal on his part, in what became Duxbury in the latter year.[11] In 1646 he was using two acres of meadow rented for two years from Abraham Pearse of Duxbury; on July 26, 1649, he and John Vobes paid four pounds sterling to George Partridge for five acres at "poulder point" and on that date he, called Sergeant, having "formerly been in partnership with John Vobes abouesaid in a house and parcell of vpland Containing about fifteene acars bee it more or les," sold his portion to Vobes[8a] for £12 sterling. As an inhabitant of Duxbury he automatically became a proprietor in 1645 in an extended grant made to that town,[12] which by later subdivision became Bridgewater, but no evidence is found of his removal thereto.

On October 5, 1636, William Bradford entered action of trespass against WILLIAM[1] MERRICK and three others, asking £10 damages and receiving a verdict of £5 and costs. WILLIAM[1] started action against John Atwood for whom he had worked and together they agreed to submit their differences to arbitration with the result that Atwood was ordered to pay him £5 in full for "moweing, makeing, and stacking his hey this yeare at Greenes Harbour Marsh, saue that the said Mr Atwood is to pay those that helped him to loade it into the leighter what their wages shall come too."[8]

The public service of WILLIAM[1] MERRICK was not notable but it was sufficient to show that he had the confidence of his townsmen for he served on petit juries in 1643–5, 1648–9, 1652 and 1658; on grand juries[6] in 1644, 1658 and 1684; as a surveyor of highways at Duxbury in 1646; probably as a constable there in 1647 and as receiver of excise[6] in Eastham in 1668. He

and JOHN[1] DOANE took an inventory of the estate of Nathaniel Mayo in 1661 and he and JOHN[2] FREEMAN witnessed the will of *Josiah[1] Cooke*, Sr., and testified[9] to it in Court in 1673. Probably his greatest public service was rendered in a military way for he was a private under Captain Standish in and probably before 1643, a sergeant in 1649, an ensign for a considerable period before 1663 and, as such, he was raised to the rank of lieutenant of the Eastham military company in that year,[10] though replaced the following year because of age disqualification.[10a]

The date of removal of WILLIAM[1] and his family to Eastham has not been proved. The registration of the births of his entire family at Eastham would ordinarily suggest that as the native town of even the eldest, but his public service in Duxbury in 1646 and probably in 1647 makes it seem more probable that one or two of his children were born at the latter place. The identity of his wife REBECCA, whom he married about 1642, has long been unknown but late developments show her, beyond reasonable doubt, to have been the daughter of STEPHEN[1] TRACY [see Tracy, p. 801].

His will, dated December 3, 1688, and changed to 1686, gave his age as about eighty-six, made his wife REBECCA executrix and left his estate for her use during her life. It also provided that what was "left at my wife's decease my will is that it be equally divided amongst all my children my Grand child RUTH FFREEMAN to have an equal share amongst the Rest of my children."[2, 13] There has been an uncertainty felt in some quarters as to the parentage of this RUTH FREEMAN but this document shows her mother to have been a deceased daughter of WILLIAM[1] MERRICK, since RUTH herself received what would have been her mother's share of the estate. Of his daughters, Sarah[2] had married John[3] Freeman (JOHN[2], EDMOND[1]) but she had no child named Ruth and moreover she was still living at the date of his will;[14] no evidence is found of the marriage or even survival to maturity of Rebecca[2]; Mary[2] had married Stephen[3] Hopkins, leaving only the daughter Ruth[2], who is positively stated by some, and believed by others,[2, 14, 19] to have been the first wife of EDMOND[3] FREEMAN and the mother of this child RUTH[4] FREEMAN. The record of this marriage has not been found nor that of the death of RUTH[2] MERRICK, but the granddaughter RUTH FREEMAN is found in the family of EDMOND[3] FREEMAN (JOHN[2], EDMOND[1]) and is the only person of that name in that generation.[14] She is sometimes erroneously assigned[15] to the second wife of EDMOND[3] but exhaustive study of these families justifies but the one conclusion as to the

marriage of, birth of an only daughter to, and early death of RUTH (MERRICK) FREEMAN.

REBECCA, the widow of WILLIAM[1] MERRICK, survived him and swore to the accuracy of the inventory of his property[13] on March 6, 1688–9.

The children of WILLIAM[1] and REBECCA (TRACY) MERRICK, all recorded at Eastham, were[2, 16]

I. William[2], b. September 15, 1643; d. October 30, 1732; m. 1st, at Eastham, May 23, 1667, Abigail[3] Hopkins[16] (Giles[2], STEPHEN[1]); m. 2nd, after 1690, Elizabeth (——) Snow, widow of Jabez.[17]

II. Stephen[2], b. May 12, 1646; d. 1705 at Taunton;[2] m. 1st, at Eastham, December 28, 1670, Mercy[2] Bangs[16] (EDWARD[1]); m. 2nd, at Taunton, Anna Wilbore.[2]

III. Rebecca[2], b. July 28, 1648.

IV. Mary[2], b. November 4, 1650; m. at Eastham, May 23, 1667, Stephen[3] Hopkins (Giles[2], STEPHEN[1]).

V. RUTH[2], b. May 15, 1652; d. about 1680–1;[2, 14] m. January, 1677,[2] EDMOND[3] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 361].

VI. Sarah[2], b. August 1, 1654; m. at Eastham, December 18, 1672, John[3] Freeman (JOHN[2], EDMOND[1]).

VII. John[2], b. January 15, 1656.

VIII. Isaac[2], b. January 6, 1660.

IX. Joseph[2], b. June 1, 1662; d. June 15, 1737;[17] m. 1st, May 1, 1684,[2, 10a, 17] Elizabeth Hawes; m. 2nd, at Eastham, July 1, 1712, Elizabeth (Freeman) Remick (Samuel[2], Samuel[1] Freeman).[18]

X. Benjamin[2], b. February 1, 1664; m. 1st, Rebecca[3] Doane (DANIEL[2], JOHN[1]);[2, 15] m. 2nd, at Harwich, July 19, 1740,[17] Rachel (——) Lincoln.[2, 14]

REFERENCES

1. Mayflower Descendant, X, 7–8.
2. Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, pp. 13–8.
3. Plymouth Colony Records, I, pp. 44–5.
4. History of Hardwick, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1883, p. 421.
5. Plymouth Colony Records, III, 216; IV, 18, 97, 128, 136; V, 125–6.

5a. History of Newport County, R. I., R. M. Bayless, 1888, pp. 974–84.

6. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 71, 102, 116, 126–7, 134; III, 135; IV, 183; VI, 128; VII, 37, 41, 43, 46, 62, 88; Colonial Lists, E. W. Pierce, 1881, pp. 18, 22, 42, 53–4.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, II, 167; III, 7, 137; VIII, 182.

7a. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, II, 359.

8. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 44; VII, 24.

8a. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 45, 66; XII, 136, 178–9.

9. Mayflower Descendant, XV, 35–7; XVII, 215.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, IV, 41; VIII, 190; XII, 178–9; Colonial Lists, E. W. Pierce, 1881, p. 75.

10a. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, No. 32, Josiah Paine, pp. 12–4.

11. History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Windsor, 1849, p. 11.
12. Historical Memoir of New Plymouth, Mass., F. Baylies, 1866, I, pt. 2, p. 254.
13. Mayflower Descendant, X, 7–8.
14. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 28, 34–5, 38–40.
15. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 30, 52–3.
16. Mayflower Descendant, V, 23, 198; VII, 19; XVII, 201; XVIII, 55; Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 28, 30, 56–8.

17. Mayflower Descendant, VII, 12; XXII, 165.
18. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 354, 356–7.
19. Foster Record, F. M. Hawes, 1889, pp. 53, 60.
20. Plymouth Colony Record of Deeds, V, pt. 2, p. 517 [unpublished]; Partridge Genealogy, G. H. Partridge, 1915, pp. 4–5; Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, pp. 13–8; Opinion of Mr. E. L. Smith, deceased, of Brookline, Mass.; Courtesy of Mr. S. W. Tracy of Chicago, Ill.

MITCHELL

‖ [7 882] Thomas Mitchell –1659–60 — m 1st . . . . . –by 1650

OR

*♦§‡ [7 882] Matthew Mitchell c.1590–c.1645 — m 1616 — Susan Butterfield –bef.1645

§ ‡ † [440] Robert Coe 1626–1659 — m c.1650 — Hannah Mitchell 1631–1702

‖ † [220] John Coe 1658–1741 — m 1682 — Mary Hawley 1663–1731

† ◇ ¶ [110] John Coe 1693–1751 — m 1715 — Hannah Parsons 1699–1760

¶ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6 — m 1746 — "Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785

♦♦▲ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805 — m 1767 — Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820

♦♦ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823 — m 1786 or 1787 — Sybil Chapman 1768–1828

♦♦# [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860 — m 2nd 1814 — Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870

⊙♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894 — m 1841 — Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895

♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899 — m 1864 — Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Charlestown and Concord, Mass.
† Stratford, Conn.
‡ Stamford, Conn.
§ Wethersfield, Conn.
‖ New Haven, Conn.
¶ Durham, Conn.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.
\# Athens, Ohio.
⊙ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
◇ Haddam, Conn.
▲ Salem, Ohio.

MITCHELL

THE parentage of HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE, wife of ROBERT[2] COE, has been the subject of much study, but proof is still lacking. The only reasonable course, therefore, seems to be to state briefly here the evidence accumulated which bears on two separate probabilities and to hope that it may reach the eye of someone who is able to furnish conclusive proof in the matter.

One theory * is[1, 2] that HANNAH was the daughter of Matthew[1] Mitchell, born about 1590 in South Owram, Parish of Halifax, Yorkshire, England; died about 1645, aged about fifty-five, at Stamford, Connecticut; married at Ovendon, near the Parish of Halifax, on April 16, 1616, Susan Butterfield, of that Parish. They had a daughter Hannah, baptized at North Owram on June 26, 1631, who may have been our ancestress. Matthew[1] Mitchell came to America with his family on the "James" in 1635, sailing on May 23, arriving August 17, and enduring en route the awful storm described by the Reverend Richard Mather [see Woodward, p. 842]. He and his family lived for short periods in 1635–6 at Charlestown and at Concord, Massachusetts, and removed in the summer of 1636 to Saybrook, Connecticut; in the spring of 1637 to Wethersfield, and in 1641 to Stamford. He was a man of considerable estate and of notable Christian faith and patience, for at every town wherein he resided he suffered either by serious illness of his family; by death of relatives or employees; by heavy loss of property on account of fire or Indian depredations, or by human animosity, and in spite of all these misfortunes he inspired respect by his patience and forgiveness. Indeed, Cotton Mather stated[3] that "the Pequot scourge fell more on this family than on any other in the land" [see Pratt, p. 676]. Matthew[1] was honored with various offices,

*The Matthew[1] Mitchell theory is given in "ROBERT COE, Puritan," having been included in the records gathered by Mr. David Coe and by him turned over to Mr. J. G. Bartlett when the latter undertook the compilation of the volume. Mr. Bartlett himself called the attention of the writer to the fact that a question had been raised on this point, which even now (1930) lacks definite proof.

including membership in the General Court of Connecticut when the far-reaching vote was taken, May 1, 1637, to wage war upon the Pequots.

The fact that this family resided contemporaneously, at both Wethersfield and Stamford, with the family of ROBERT[1] COE argues acquaintanceship between them, and the facts that Hannah[2], daughter of Matthew[1], survived at least until 1645, when his will was made, and that at least two of the children of Matthew[1] [viz.: David[2] and Sarah[2], who married Samuel Sherman] settled in Stratford, as did also ROBERT[2] COE, make it seem highly probable that the HANNAH[2] MITCHELL whom the said ROBERT[2] COE married about 1650 was this daughter of Matthew[1].

There is, however, another series of facts[4, 8] and a resultant theory* too significant to be ignored: A Thomas[1] Mitchell, miller, was an original settler at New Haven, having signed the fundamental agreement on June 4, 1639. He was assigned a small lot on Mill River in March, 1641; signed the oath of fidelity on July 1, 1644; was "fyned" in 1646 for "wating [lacking] a gun sticke"; was fence-viewer in 1648 and 1650; had various grants of land; brought to court two trivial cases which were arbitrated; and was ordered in February, 1652, to "watch" but was released from training.[8] His first wife is unknown but he married secondly, by[5] 1650, Elizabeth (——), and by her had a daughter Elizabeth, born on February 6, 1651, who married on December 5, 1672, Philip Alcock.

In his nuncupative will dated October 1, 1659, he gave to Hannah[2], his daughter by his first wife, "his house on the other side of the way, with ye home Lot thereunto belonging when the Cropp is taken off, also half his meadow by the mill River, & half his land both in ye plaines, & in ye quarter also 2 calves the best, & the worst, & his best hogg." The remainder of his property he gave to his (second) wife, Elizabeth, and to her daughter Elizabeth. He died before March 2, 1660, when the inventory of his estate was taken. Because of the approaching re-marriage of his widow, Elizabeth, the Court apportioned his estate on December 29, 1662, giving a share to "brother Mitchell's daughter at Stratford." The assumption is reasonable that his daughter's removal to Stratford from New Haven and the home property his will gave her was because of her marriage to a Stratford man,

*The compiler, even after having had an especial search made in her behalf, has been quite unable to decide whether or not HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE was the daughter of Thomas[1] Mitchell. Having learned from Mr. Bartlett that the parentage stated for her in the Coe Genealogy was not established by him but was accepted from other sources and assumed to be correct, it leaves the scale of probability of parentage untipped toward either theory until further evidence comes to light.

and no other Stratford man than ROBERT[2] COE is found who had a wife named Hannah Mitchell.

Other pertinent facts are (a) the second marriage of HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE to Nicholas Elsey, a New Haven man, after (1) the death[1] of ROBERT[2] COE in September, 1659, and after (2) the death of the first Mrs. Elsey, but by or before the early part of 1668 [the death of the first Mrs. Elsey being indefinitely assigned[7] to the period 1662–4 but having probably occurred after January 20, 1661–2, when "Sister Elsey" was assigned[9] to the "Shorte Seates at the vpper end" in the meeting-house]; (b) Hannah's residence in New Haven, where she continued to live even after the death of Nicholas in 1690, and where she had borne him a son, Samuel, on December 12, 1668, who died ten days later; also her own death there[5] on April 2, 1702; (c) the fact that land transferred[4] in February, 1699–1700, by HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE ELSEY was described as lying "in the Little Quarter," "by the mill highway" and "in the Suburbs Quarter," which descriptions are strongly reminiscent of similar ones used in the will of Thomas[1] Mitchell, miller. The early land descriptions, however, are not minute enough adequately to identify grants or holdings, and the fact that HANNAH inherited land from her second husband necessarily adds confusion to the subject.

If our HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE married Nicholas Elsey and removed from Stratford *after* 1662, it seems more likely that she was the daughter of Thomas[1] Mitchell, but if her marriage and removal to New Haven occurred *before* 1662 it increases the probability that Matthew[1] was her father.

The Coe children, including our JOHN[3] COE, lived at New Haven with their stepfather during their minority but JOHN[3], at the age of twenty-one, inherited his father's lands at Stratford and returned there. The will[4] of Nicholas Elsey, dated January 7, 1683, gave "20 shillings a peece" to "Ye 3 children of my wives viz: JOHN Susannah & Sarah." At his mother's death JOHN[3] accepted £18 as his share of her estate in New Haven and on March 4, 1702–3, he deeded his rights therein to his brother-in-law, Jeremiah Osborn.

REFERENCES

1. ROBERT COE, Puritan, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 81; Chronology and Ancestry of C. M. Depew, W. A. Eardeley, 1918, pp. 43–5; Savage, III, 221.
2. History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Conn., S. Orcutt, 1886, II, 1249; History of Stamford, Conn., E. B. Huntington, 1868, pp. 37–8, 278–82; History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 62; II, 504–5; History of Ancient Woodbury, Conn., W. Cothren, 1854, I, 633–4, II, 1519–23; History of Glastonbury, Conn., A. B. Chapin, 1853, p. 181.
3. Magnalia Christi Americana, Cotton Mather, 1853, II, 81–2.

4. Research among New Haven, Conn., manuscript documents by D. L. Jacobus, in 1927, quoting: New Haven Probate Records, I, pt. 1, p. 90; II, 82, 279; New Haven County Court Records [modern copy], II, 94, 128; New Haven Land Records, I, pt. 2, p. 830; II, 161; New Haven Town Records, 1649–62, pp. 378, 385; 1662–84, p. 65; I, 49.
5. Vital Records of New Haven, Conn., I, 1, 25, 28, 87.
6. New Haven Genealogical Magazine, D. L. Jacobus, 1925, III, 594.
7. "First Church, New Haven," Prof. F. B. Dexter, p. 10.
8. New Haven Colony Records, I, 18, 49–50, 138, 189, 232, 305, 321, 389, 428; II, 306, 357; Ancient Town Records of New Haven, Conn., 1917, I, 49, 57, 164–5, 272–3, 441, 513.
9. Ibid., 512.

NICHOLSON

* [454] Edmund Nicholson –1660	m c.1636–7	Elizabeth Simson c.1616–aft. June, 1673
* [226] Nicholas Andrews c.1642–1697–8	m bef. 1672	Elizabeth Nicholson c.1649–1727
* [112] William Bartlett c.1685–1749	m 1709	Mary Andrews c.1695–1748
* † [56] William Bartlett 1710–c.1759	m 1740	Anna Ober [widow Hale] 1715–1791
† ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
† ‡ § ‖ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ¶ ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Marblehead, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.

NICHOLSON

EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON is first recorded at Marblehead, Massachusetts, in 1646, when his eldest son, Christopher[2], received[1a, 1b] a bequest of five pounds by the will of George Pollard, though the family is said[1b] to have been there as early[1b] as 1644. For an understanding of the conditions under which EDMUND[1] lived, reference is made to the chapters on Bartlett and Devereaux, beyond which no apology for any of the Marblehead ers is attempted or needed; only by their roughness did they gain strength and capacity to endure and to serve mightily when such qualities were most needed.

An incident suggesting the thoroughness with which they threw themselves into their daily work furnishes somewhat of amusement along with the sense of apology due the reverend gentleman who was preaching[16] to a congregation of fishermen at Marblehead. "He was exhorting them to be a religious people, otherwise, he said, you will contradict the main end of planting this wilderness. 'Sir,' said one of the fishermen, 'you are mistaken. You think you are preaching to the people at the Bay. Our main end was to catch fish.'"

The life of EDMUND[1] must have been far from placid, for most of it was spent battling the ocean for a living for himself and family, and when on land he was frequently in court as plaintiff or defendant in lawsuits. He was a witness for his acquaintances in various cases; and he was himself twice accused[1] of being "disguised with drink."

The use of liquor was more strongly a habit with the people of early Marblehead than with many other communities. No vessel went from the harbor, whether for a long trip to the banks or for a few days' fishing in the bay, without a plentiful supply of strong drink. Not one returned from such a trip with a full "fare" of fish without arranging for a feast and a good store of "something to take" for "washing-out-day"[8] on shore.* The use of liquor

* "The first fair weather after reaching port was utilized by the fishermen for washing out. The schooner was brought as near the shore as possible and 'a pound'—a square box-like structure composed of joist placed several

was so general that even at town meetings it was customarily provided, and as a consequence these gatherings were frequently disorderly or disturbed.[1a]

In 1647 EDMUND[1] testified against a neighbor who had been fighting and who had called the constable "old Rogue"; in 1653 he brought suit against a

---

inches apart on the sides & bottom so as to allow the water free access—was lashed to the sides. Into this receptacle the fish, which had been salted and packed in the hold of the vessel, were first pitched by those on board. Two members of the crew, sometimes more, shod in leather boots reaching to the knees and with heavy woolen mittens on their hands stood in the pound and washed the salt from the fish. . . . The pound was more commonly used . . . where the shore was rocky and the men could not easily stand in the water on the beach to do the work. [Otherwise] the fish were pitched from the vessels into dories and taken to the beach, where the men stood in the water and performed the work of washing out the salt. After being washed the fish were placed in wagons on shore and carted to the fish fences where they were cured.

"The fish fences—'flakes' as they were sometimes called—covered [in the later years] every available hill and headland on the mainland, and a portion of the harbor side of the Neck in the days when the fishing industry was at the height of its prosperity. These fences consisted of large wooden frames, covered [crosswise] with long narrow strips of wood, [the frames] resting upon posts a few feet from the ground. In later days the frames were so arranged that they could be tilted so as to take the sun in any part of the day.

"The work of curing or Making fish as it was called required some skill & constant attention. After the fish had been spread out on the fences it was necessary to turn them over from time to time to dry them to the necessary degree of hardness. This work was usually done by men hired for the purpose under the supervision of the owners. . . . After the work of curing was completed, the fish were stored in ware houses of which their were many about the shore [in the later days] and were readily sold to merchants from Boston and elsewhere, who often bought the entire fare. At times, however, the sales were slow, and then it was necessary to ship them to foreign parts for a market.

"The vessels were somewhat clumsy in appearance . . . very high & bluff in the bow, while the stern was high, made so by a half deck which was built forward enough to take in the main mast. . . . The interior of these vessels was as crude as the exterior was unlovely to the eye. A large brick fire place occupied the after part of the forecastle and in a large iron pot, suspended by a crane over a fire of wood, the food for the crew was cooked. It did not require much culinary art to prepare the meals of the seven or eight men who made up a crew. . . . Each man, except the skipper, took his turn as cook, during the voyage, and as a result the difference in the quality of the cooking varied the monotony of life from day to day.

"They were not much troubled about table etiquette, those robust & hearty fishermen of long ago. When a meal was ready to serve, the large iron pot was taken from its place over the fire, and placed on the floor in the center of the forecastle. The food was dipped out into a large tin pan, and this was placed on the pot.

"Around the pan the crew gathered each helping himself and eating directly from the pan. Occasionally when the 'Mess' happened to be chowder or stewed beans, the most fastidious among them dipped a portion in a mug, but as a rule all hands were content with the facilities provided by the single pan.

"There were but few rules to be observed, but one was inflexible. Every man was expected to eat with a fork or a spoon, and putting the fingers or hand in the pan was strictly forbidden.

"An old Marblehead skipper, Capt. Thomas J. Peach, who sailed to the Banks for fifty years, making eighty-five voyages gave the following as the 'menu' for the several days in the week.

"Sunday—Breakfast, fat cakes, chocolate and baked halibut; dinner, stewed beans with tea; supper, baked halibut with tea & crackers.

"Monday—Breakfast, baked halibut; dinner, baked halibut; supper, baked halibut with tea & crackers.

"Tuesday—The same as Monday.

"Wednesday—Breakfast, muddled tongues; dinner, baked halibut; supper, baked halibut.

"Thursday—Breakfast, baked halibut; dinner, corned beef, flour pudding with molasses sauce, and baked potatoes; supper, cold corned beef, potatoes & tea.

"Friday—Breakfast, baked halibut; dinner, haddock chowder; supper, baked halibut.

"Saturday—Breakfast, baked halibut; dinner, corned fish and potatoes; supper, minced fish, a 'Stir' pudding and rice chocolate.

"A system of perfect equality prevailed on board the vessels. No one received wages. Each man was entitled to share in the profits of the voyage and all were equally interested in obtaining as large a "fair" as possible. Three-eighths of the profits after deducting the expenses of the 'great general' went to the owners of the vessel.

townsman for a debt and secured a favorable verdict; and that same year, as assignee, he successfully sued another man "for witholding 4 li. 1s. remaining due for fish lent him and for diet."[1]

The fact that "EDMUND NICHOLSON and Francis Simpson of Marblehead [were] fined for bloodshed"[2] in June, 1656, is an incident which leaves much to the imagination, but the affair was probably not of serious moment since they were brothers-in-law and frequently congenially associated. William Nick brought a civil case against EDMUND[1] in 1659 for "molestation in the closing of his land"[2] but he presently withdrew it.

In 1651 EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON and John Bartoll were assigned their turn at "keeping the cows" "on the Lord's day." The pasturage at Marblehead was insufficient for the needs of the inhabitants and the privilege of commonage had to be doled out with extreme care. Between 1648 and 1650 the "men Chosen by the plantation: being mett for stintinge . . . the commons . . . thus stinted [to] EDMOND NICOLSON and [Francis] Simson, 1½" cows.[1a, 4] Forage for one and one-half cows sounds rather incongruous but this animal was the unit on which they planned the apportionment of pasturage and four goats or sheep were considered the equivalent of one cow,[4] hence the fractions frequently quoted.

In 1653, according to a deposition of Simson in June, 1665, EDMUND[1] received for Francis Simson, from John Bartoll, Sr., of Marblehead, a consignment of merchantable codfish due on a debt.

The wife of EDMUND[1], ELIZABETH (SIMSON)* NICHOLSON, was sympathetically, if not actively, associated with the early Quakers of Massachusetts

"The 'great general' consisted of about one hundred & fifty hogsheads of salt, used in packing the fish; twelve barrels of mackerel used for bait; twenty-eight pounds of candles, and ten tons of ballast to be used in case the vessel shipped a sea & the salt became wet. The crew shared besides, in the expenses of the 'small general' of which there were three and one-half cords of wood, one barrel of flour, two barrels of pork, one-half barrel of beef, six bushels of potatoes, ten pounds of tea, twenty-five pounds of rice, and eighteen pounds of chocolate. In addition each man carried on his own account one hundred & twenty-five pounds of hard bread, twenty-one pounds of sugar, from two to three gallons of molasses, and the hooks and lines necessary for his share of the work. . . . The fish were hauled in on deck, beheaded, split, packed in the hold and covered with salt, when the vessel was loaded or as the fishermen expressed it 'the salt was wet'—sometimes before, if fish were scarce—Sail was set for the homeward run."[23]

* ELIZABETH SIMSON was born about 1616 and her older brother Francis was born about 1610 in England, as is shown by their respective depositions[7, 10] before the Essex County, Massachusetts, Quarterly Court in March, 1667, and March, 1672–3, and in June, 1665. They were both residents of Marblehead by or before 1646. It seems probable that they had acquaintances, and possibly also had their earlier home in co. Devon, England, for at the Essex County Quarterly Court held at Salem in November, 1657, "Mr. Edm. Batters of Salem, merchant, being indebted to Peter Hunt of Coffens-well, County Devon, for 18 li., Mr. Hunt appointed Francis Simpson of Marblehead to receive it in money or fish."[11]

Francis Simson was fairly prominent in the earlier years of his residence there for he was made constable[12] of Marblehead in December, 1649; but both he and his sister ELIZABETH lost favor by becoming Quakers, or at least

Bay Colony. There has been no evidence found that she attended their meetings but sympathy with them usually took the form of failure to attend the regular church meetings and for neglect of that sort ELIZABETH was admonished[2] by the court in November, 1659, and also in June, 1660, and was fined for the same offence in December, 1661, and in September, 1662.

EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON was drowned in 1660, some time between June 4, when he deposed in a case at court, and November 27, of that year, when his widow was appointed,[5] with her eldest son, to administer his estate. In connection with his death a most unhappy situation arose as a result of the conflict between the recognized church of the Bay Colony and the Quakers or their sympathizers of that vicinity. Only regret and apology can be felt for that dark page in Massachusetts Bay history as well as for its witchcraft period.

The story may best be told by quoting from a contemporaneous writer. The report first printed[14] in London in 1661, the year following the death of EDMUND[1], tells of a cruel "Tragedy of a Woman of Marblehead near Salem and her two sons (viz.) ELIZABETH NICHOLSON and Christopher and Joseph, whom you [Massachusetts Bay authorities] without ground charged with the Death of EDMUND NICHOLSON, her Husband, and their Father, who was found dead in the Sea; your Rage soon grew high against them, and into your Butchers Cub* at Boston you soon had them all three, from their House and Goods, which in the meantime was in danger to be robbed, spoiled and devoured, whilst you had them in prison; and from that Prison you had them to the Bar, to try them for their Lives, upon suspicion of having a hand in the Death of EDMOND, aforesaid; but notwithstanding all your cunning and

by favoring that sect, and in November, 1659, they were both before the court because of absenting themselves from religious meeting. On this score ELIZABETH was admonished by the Court, but Francis, who had gone so far as to frequent a Quaker meeting on the Lord's day, was fined.[4, 12] It is quite probable that he was unmarried and made his home with ELIZABETH and her family; he and her husband, EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON, owned cow commonage and land together and were associated in many business undertakings concerning their common occupation and source of income, the fishing trade. By or before 1666, Francis had removed to Rhode Island[1b] where he could continue in his Quaker faith without offense to his neighbors or persecution to himself. From there he wrote a letter[13] to Marblehead on March 1, 1666, relative to his earlier joint ownership with EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON of land in that town. In this letter he used "thee" and "thou" with noticeable care.

ELIZABETH SIMSON married first about 1636–7, and presumably in England EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON and married, secondly,[1b, 13] after[11] September 24, 1662, and before March 17, 1666, (——) Browne. She died after June, 1673, when she, as administratrix of her first husband's estate, with her two sons Joseph[2] and Samuel[2] Nicholson, sued[13] Captain James Smith in reference to land which her first husband, EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON, and her brother, Francis Simson, had bought[6] in or before 1651.

*Cub, (a) A stall or pen or shed for cattle; also a coop or hutch. (b) A crib for fodder; a chest, a bin or other receptacle. As a monk's cubbe; cub of a library. "You are pleased to put me in the Cubb with divers . . . malefactors."

subtle Malice, to destroy the Mother and her Children at once, yet ye were not able; notwithstanding you fined her in a great Sum (which, in behalf of the Court, your Secretary, Rawson, was willing to take in good Fish; and Salter [the jailor] for Dyet and Lodging in Barrels of Mackrel (so devouring the Widow's House) [vide infra]; and her two Sons, to stand under the Gallows certain Hours, with Ropes about their Necks, and to be whipp'd in your Market-place, which was performed with many bloody Lashes; at which the young Men being not appaled, old Wilson [the minister at Boston who was bitter against Quakers] standing by, said, "Ah! cursed Generation"; and at Salem to be whipp'd also, where Michelson, the Marshal, (a bloody spirited Man) came to see it executed, where it was so mercilesly done, that one of the young Men sunk down, or dyed away under the Torture of his cruel Suffering, whose Body they raised up again, and Life came to him."[14]

Another early account amplifies the story thus:[16a] "This Family did manifest a Respect to those called Quakers, and at length were much taken Notice of for so doing, and the Rage of the Persecutors was grown high against them; when a sudden and melancholy Accident ministered to those, who for that Cause only were their Enemies, an Opportunity of shewing the Heighth of their Malice and Revenge: The said EDMUND NICHOLSON was found dead in the Sea, by what Means was not known; the Magistrate being informed that his surviving Wife and Sons were Favourers of those called Quakers, caused them to be apprehended, and though there appeared not the least reasonable Cause of Suspicion, committed them all three to Prison, and some Time after brought them to Trial for a pretended Murder. Much Cunning and Malice did they make Use of to have convicted them, but all in vain, for as they were, so they appeared to be, altogether innocent. Nevertheless, the Court fined the Widow in a great sum of Money & c. . . . The cruelty exercised against these innocent People was arbitrary and illegal, the pure Effect of the Malice of the Court towards them only on the Score of Religion; for had they been guilty of the Crime charged, they must have been put to Death, but as they were innocent, they ought not to have been punished."[16a] The oppression of the fines alone was great in that day of small means.

In 1658 "At Salem twelve Persons were fined 40 li. 19s for not coming to Church, and of others much money was extorted for their Wives Absence from thence. . . ."[16a]

Additional testimony bearing on the standing of these three persecuted individuals in their home town is seen in the facts that (a) ELIZABETH and her eldest son were made executors of the estate of her husband which was valued at £150 with debts to the amount of £54 which the Court allowed; (b) and it was ordered[5] that £10 be paid to each of the six children when they reached the age of twenty-one or married with their mother's consent. The estate included[5] among other things a "Dwelling house, with outhouses and land, 55 li; a boat fit to goe to Sea with her moreing and Cannoe and other Coardage, 56 li.15s; One Cow with the Hay, 5 li; one Bed with Bolster, Pillowes, Rug and Blanketts, 3 li; 9 yards of Ticking, 1 li.10s.; sheetts and pillovers, 1 li.3s.6d.; a piece of white kersie; wearing apparell; 2 Ruggs; 2 pr. of Blanketts; one Bolster and 2 Pillowes; one chest and Box; one fowling piece and 3 axes; one sword; one Iron pott; 2 Iron kettles; 3 Brasse Kettles and 2 Scilletts; pewter; earthen ware; wooden and Lattin ware; 3 wheeles; Lome, sleies, wheele, with Barrle and other Lumber; an old Road [sic] with two Bedsteeds."

The possession of the gun and sword suggests that EDMUND[1] did not affiliate with the Quakers.

In June, 1661, Christopher[2], eldest son of EDMUND[1] NICHOLSON, for himself[4] and as assignee of ELIZABETH, administratrix of the estate of EDMUND[1], instituted a lawsuit against JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX [see Devereaux, p. 290] for a settlement of business affairs pending since his father's death. The testimony showed that a fishing "trip" had been undertaken about March, 1660, by a company of which EDMUND[1] was the head. The group included his sons, Christopher[2] and Joseph[2], JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX as master of the boat and as sharesman, and several others in the latter capacity. The catch was all thrown together into the stage belonging to JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX. After being "culled" the refuse, or low grade fish, was sold and the money turned over to him. Mr. Fielder, the owner of the boat, receipted for eighty-five quintals or hundred weight of the first grade, and he, presumably, was to dispose of the lot, after which the men would get their share of the proceeds. Documents are extant showing that EDMUND[1] was to have received £36.16; after the expenses were paid the sum allotted to at least one sharesman, and probably to each of them, was £23.09. EDMUND[1] himself gave these men notes or statements by which they could claim their dues; he receipted for a part of his own share but the business was uncompleted when he died. Christopher[2] Nicholson won the suit and JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX was ordered to render a true account within twenty days.[4]

Another legal case following the death of EDMUND[1] concerned the ownership of a certain farm which he had bought in partnership with his brother-in-law, Francis Simson, by or before 1651, and had later sold to "Goodman Smith," who paid them in fish as was the frequent custom then. In 1665, 1666, and even as late as 1673, legal action recurred reciting the details of the changing ownership of this property.[6]

In connection with this matter ELIZABETH (SIMSON) NICHOLSON, aged about fifty-six, then the wife of (——) Browne, deposed that in March, 1672–3, she "had occasion to go to Capt. Smith's house to demand her right of some [the above mentioned] land, Richard Rowland [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I] and his son Samuel went as witnesses, they being her near neighbors. When the said Rowland went in, Smith 'broake out into a deadly pashone And saide geite you oute of my house or elce i will seate you oute,' and looked around for something to fling at said Rowland."[6] Evidence that other neighbors shared the habit of controversy is seen in the fact that these men, Captain Smith and Richard Rowland, though brothers-in-law, had found it so hard to get along together that the mediation of friends was brought to bear and in 1670 they were prevailed upon to bind themselves in the sum of £40 to live peaceably and quietly, with the provision that whosoever should be the occasion of future trouble must forfeit a like sum.[6] This makes it seem highly inconsiderate of ELIZABETH to bring them together.

The fine which had been laid upon ELIZABETH in connection with her husband's death by the unjust Boston court had its sequel about three months after that event in the attachment of her house[5, 12] and land in Marblehead by the marshal in February, 1660–1, under order of the judge of the county court. This property represented practically her entire earthly possession, as is evident from the record of the settlement of her husband's estate. The fact that she continued to live at Marblehead suggests that she either subdued or gave up her Quaker tendencies. In 1672 Joseph[2], Thomas[2] and their sister, ELIZABETH (NICHOLSON) ANDREWS, united in a deed[3] to their brother Samuel[2] covering land which undoubtedly had earlier belonged to their father.

It seems probable that the Quaker leanings of this family operated so strongly in their disfavor as to preclude the recording of their marriages or deaths, or of their children's births, among the vital records of the town. This omission could scarcely be accidental since it is true of the death of EDMUND[1], of that of his wife and of the marriage or death of each of their six

children as well as of the births of all possible grandchildren, except in the case of the last three children of his daughter, ELIZABETH (NICHOLSON) ANDREWS, who were baptized[17] in the First Congregational Church of Marblehead as children of "ELIZABETH ANDREWS sr." Evidently she conformed to the recognized church by or before 1695.

The children of EDMUND[1] and ELIZABETH (SIMSON) NICHOLSON, of whom at least the last two were born in New England, were[1b, 3, 5, 9]

I. Christopher[2], b. about 1638; d. after 1661; m. October 22, 1662, Hannah Redknap. A man of this name[18] and of Quaker faith was resident in North Carolina[1a] in 1677 and 1679, but his identity is not proven.

II. *Joseph[2], b. about 1640–1; deposed[19] in June, 1661, aged about 20; deposed in November, 1670, aged about 27 and joined his mother and brother Samuel[2] in a suit against Captain James Smith in June, 1673.

III. Samuel[2], b. about 1644; d. after June, 1673. One of this name[19, 20] and of the Quaker faith, but an older man than he, and having emigrated direct from England, was resident in Salem, N. J., in 1675.

IV. John[2], b. about 1646. One of this name testified[21] before the Court in December, 1664.

V. ELIZABETH[2], b. about 1649, undoubtedly at Marblehead; buried there December 5, 1727. She married, probably there, before[3] 1672, NICHOLAS[1] ANDREWS [see Andrews, p. 57].

VI. Thomas[2], b. about 1653–4; deposed[9] in June, 1669, aged 15; deposed[22] in September, 1678; witnessed a letter of attorney in March, 1679 and claimed ownership of a horse in April, 1682, when Humphrey[2] Devereaux (JOHN[1]) aged 24 and Elizabeth Devereaux, probably his wife, aged 18, testified[22] as to the truth of his ownership.

*There was a man in New England[15, 19] named Joseph Nicholson, a devoted Quaker, who is sometimes surmised[3] to have been Joseph[2] above, but although they may have been relatives, the latter man was doubtless the elder. A summary of the obtainable facts relative to this Quaker, Joseph Nicholson, shows that he was from Bootle, co. Cumberland, England, where his fourth child was born on April 22, 1658 (and perhaps also his earlier children in 1650, 1653 and 1656, respectively). In 1656 he requested a personal interview with Oliver Cromwell to offer his body, or his life if need be, as a proxy for the great Quaker leader, George Fox, who was then in prison. In June, 1657, he and his wife came to New England, their expenses having been paid by the English Society of Friends. They probably came in the "Woodhouse." Subsequently their lives were spectacular. They traveled extensively in their endeavor to spread the Quaker faith,—as far afield as Maryland and Virginia. In New England they suffered many periods of imprisonment; in Boston they were put in irons, and they were whipped at the cart's tail through Boston, Salem, Dedham and in New Hampshire and were finally and repeatedly sentenced to banishment under pain of death. During one period of imprisonment they were freed on condition that they would embark on a vessel about to sail for England, but on application to the master they were unable to secure passage; they returned to the Governor announcing their readiness to be imprisoned again until another boat should sail. The wife, Jane, anticipating immediate confinement, was taken by her husband to Salem or its vicinity to be cared for. This suggests the possibility of their having had acquaintances or relatives there. They had one child born at Salem in 1659–60; one in 1665 at Barbadoes; one in 1667 at Martinique and another in 1669 at Newport, Rhode Island, where Jane died[15, 19] in April, 1691, aged 52.

REFERENCES

1. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 106, 138, 284–5; II, 226.

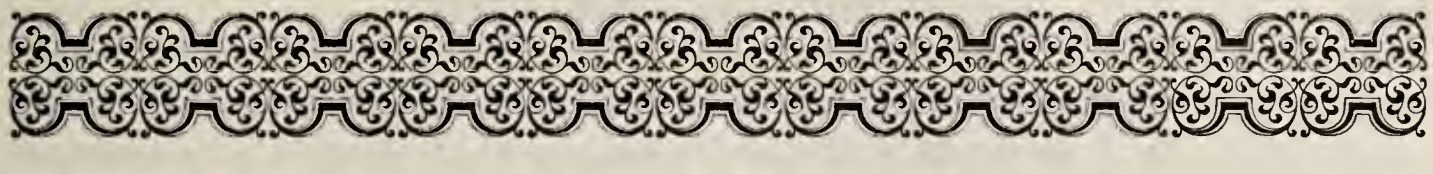
1a. History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, 1880, pp. 18–9, 26.

1b. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1926, II, 166, 196–7; Essex Probate Records, 1916, I, 59–60.
2. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 428; II, 183, 188, 190, 194, 221, 344, 433.
3. Savage, III, 283; Essex Antiquarian, III, 155.
4. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 207, 221, 290–1; V, 172, 279.
5. Ibid., II, 256; Essex Probate Records, 1916, I, 324.
6. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 257, 367–8; V, 172–3, 181.
7. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., II, 476; III, 33.
8. Nooks and Corners of the New England Coast, S. A. Drake, 1875, p. 309.
9. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., III, 38–9.
10. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 257; V, 181.
11. Ibid., II, 61, 445–6.
12. Ibid., I, 183; II, 194; IV, 169.
13. Ibid., III, 367–8; V, 172–3; Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., III, 33.
14. New England Judged, George Bishop, printed in London, 1661, and Reprinted 1702–3, pp. 401–2.
15. Ibid., 220–4, 226, 412, 423, 425, 430, 432; Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, IV, pt. I, 419, 433–4.
16. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, 1883, Ser. I, I, Chapter 9, p. 9.
16a. Sufferings of the Quakers, Joseph Besse, 1753, II, 188, 237.
17. Vital Records of Marblehead, Mass., I, 14–5.
18. Colonial Records of North Carolina, I, 250, 252.
19. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 291; IV, 297; V, 172; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1926, II, 262–4, 266; Vital Records of Rhode Island, VII, 69, 115; The Beginnings of Quakerism, W. C. Braithwaite, 1912, p. 236; Journal of Friends Historical Society, London, III, 12, 63; V, 78, 134; VI, 50; The Quakers in the American Colonies, R. M. Jones, 1911, pp. 49, 79.n.; 89.n., 90–1, 274, 339, 372.
20. History of the Fenwick Colony [N. J.], T. Shourds, 1876, pp. 52, 70, 98, 164.
21. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 297.
22. Ibid., VII, 199, 344; VIII, 357.
23. The Reade Record, Old State House, Boston, Mass., Number XIV, Oct., 1921, to Oct., 1922, pp. 6–8.

OBER

* [228] Richard Ober 1641–1716	m 1671	Abigail Woodbury 1655–1742
* [114] Benjamin Ober 1689–1723	m 1713	Rachel Raymond 1690–aft.1724
† * [56] William Bartlett 1710–c.1759	m 1740	Anna Ober [widow Hale] 1715–1791
* ‡ [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
* ‡ § ¶ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
♦ ‖ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ‖ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‖ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Beverly, Mass.
† Marblehead, Mass.
‡ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
§ Merrittstown, Pa.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.



OBER

RICHARD[1] OBER was, in all probability, the son of JOHN and ELIZABETH (BUTCHER) OBER, of Abbotsbury, co. Dorset, England, and baptized there on November 21, 1641,[1] for the record of his death at Beverly, Massachusetts, on March 4, 1715–6, includes the statement that he was about seventy-four years of age and was born in "Absbury."[2] He came to New England in or before 1664 for in that year he was a resident of Beverly and was defendant in a lawsuit for failure to go as a member of the crew on a fishing trip as well as plaintiff in another case against Samuel Walton who withheld his "chest and wearing clothes" and thus kept him from going on that trip.[3] He declared that "for want of my clous I ware not Able for to goe to seay by which meanes the Boat was foursed to Lay Ashore to thare great damag whiels Another boat in the mainetyme went to seaye and Cast twenty Cantells or thare about of fish whare of the quarter part is my damage."[3] This is his only recorded appearance in court.

In 1668–9 he signed the petition against imposts[12] and it is said of him that on November 13, 1670, he witnessed a deed from WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY to NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY; that in 1673–4 he owned land near Plum Island; that he, being called "shoresman" [see Bartlett, p. 73], bought for £172 from the heirs of Samuel Morgan, the latter's home property; that he was constable and collector of taxes in 1682–4; was on a committee to lay out highways in 1683–4 and was surveyor of such for several years. He was a selectman in 1693 and 1702; a grand juror in 1694; in 1698 he was guardian of Anna Morgan who later married his son and, by the will of his wife's mother, ANNA (PALGRAVE) WOODBURY, he received a house and land in Beverly.[4, 12]

Some items of the record of that early day help us to picture the life our forebears led, as when on December 5, 1676, "It is ordered by the selectmen that the hinder site of the olders galery in the meeten house is to be altered,

and the Boise ar to seete there and Robert Hibberd, senior, is to hafe an Eie out for them, and for the first ofense to acquaint thar parants or masters of it, and if they do ofend again to aquante the Selectmen with it, who shall dele with them according to lawe."[5] On June 25, 1677, "In obedians to a law of the honored Jenerall Corte they make choise of ten men to inspecte thar naibours to prevente as much as may be, privet tipling and Drunckenness whose names be as followeth: WM. DODGE . . . RICHARD OBER. . . ." Each of the ten members of this committee had the supervision of ten families and they were called tithing men.[7]

Another curious entry on the town records made in March, 1711–2, relates to burial customs and costs, as shown by an order "to pay into RICHARD OBER, senr. 9 shillings, money out of ye town rate, yt being for half a barrel of sider, for Laurence Davis his burial (6s) and for 50 feet of bords for sd Davis his coffin (3s)."[5]

On December 3, 1677, RICHARD[1] OBER, called "fisherman," took the oath of fidelity in Beverly.[7] He married there, December 26, 1671, ABIGAIL[3] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 836], who was doubtless the "ABIGAIL OVERS" who "did owne ye covenant" in Beverly Church on November 23, 1673.[8]

The children* of RICHARD[1] and ABIGAIL (WOODBURY) OBER, all born in Beverly, were[8, 9, 10]

I. John[2], probably b. June 1, 1673 [though recorded[9] as 1675], for one of the name was bap.[8] November 23, 1673, and d. May 29, 1744, aged "71 years wanting 2 days,"[9] having m. at Ipswich, July 5, 1694, Hannah[4] Woodbury (Thomas[3], Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]).

II. Anna[2], bap.[8, 9] September 26, 1675; m. July 4, 1692, Robert Morgan.

III. Elizabeth[2], bap.[8] December 9, 1677; m. [int. October 5, 1700] John[4] Balch (John[3], BENJAMIN[2], JOHN[1]).[10a] [See DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.]

IV. Abigail[2], bap. February 1, 1679–80.

V. Hezekiah[2], b.[9] November 9, bap. December 18, 1681;[8] d. November 26, 1739;[9] m. in Beverly, November 5, 1702, Anna Morgan.

VI. Richard[2], b. March 1, 1683–4;[9] d. August 2, 1725, at Canso; m. January 15, 1706,[9a] Priscilla[3] Woodbury (PETER[2], JOHN[1]).[11]

VII. Nicholas[2], b. September 17, 1686,[9] doubtless he who was bap.[8, 9] September 26, following, and erroneously called "son of John and Abigail" though properly born as son of RICHARD[1]; d. June 9, 1730; m. January 16, 1710–1, Abigail[4] Conant (Lot[3], Lot[2], ROGER[1]).[10a]

VIII. BENJAMIN[2], see following.

IX. Samuel[2], b. June 13, 1693; d. September 26, 1725; probably m. May 14, 1719, Elizabeth Stone.[9]

* The following record[16] suggests the possibility that there may have been another child in this family or that the names "John" and "Jonathan" may have been confused, in which case this might refer to a second marriage of John[2]:

"Jonathan Ober and Rebeckah ——, their
Intention of Marriage published December 28th day 1712."

BENJAMIN[2] OBER (*Richard*[1]) was born April 14, 1689, at Beverly,[9] was baptized there April 21, following,[8] and died November 17, 1723, aged thirty-four years, seven months and three days "att the house of Thomas Blashfield at Barwick in Nechewaneck,"[9] Maine. He married at Beverly on February 12, 1712–3, RACHEL[3] RAYMOND[9] [see Raymond, p. 700]. He built a home in Beverly before 1723. This house came into the possession[15] of his daughter ANNA[3] and was later purchased* by WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT before he became her second husband.[14]

Practically nothing has been found relative to the public life of BENJAMIN[2]. He may have been considering a removal to Maine, since he died at Berwick in that state. Much land in that vicinity was granted to Massachusetts men for earlier military service and he may have come into possession of some such right. The Thomas Blashfield at whose home he died was, undoubtedly, the man of that name who earlier lived at Beverly.

To RACHEL (RAYMOND) OBER the year 1723–4 brought great sorrow. Left a widow by her young husband's untimely death in November, 1723, the more tragic because he was away from his home, she was further called upon to bear the loss of three young children—two, unnamed, on the same day, June 1, 1724, and of her little daughter Rachel two days later. There is some evidence† to show that another child may have died soon after, leaving ANNA[3] the only surviving child.

The children of BENJAMIN[2] and RACHEL (RAYMOND) OBER, all either born or baptized at Beverly, were[13]

I. ANNA[3], b. November 12, 1715; buried September 27, 1791, aged 77, at Beverly;[13] m. 1st, at Beverly, August 21, 1735, Henry Hale, who d. September 30, 1736; m. 2nd [int. at Salem July 27, 1740], September 17, 1740, WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT [see Bartlett, p. 77].
II. Rachel[3], bap. November 3, 1717; d. June 3, 1724.
III. Benjamin[3], bap. March 20, 1719–20; probably he was one of the two children who d. June 1, 1724.
IV. Jonathan[3], bap. May 13, 1722; probably one of the "2 chn. [of] RACHEL, [who] died June 1, 1724. . . ."
V. Mary[3], bap. July 21, 1723; prob. d. young.

* As a part of the estate of Henry Hale, first husband of ANNA (OBER) Hale, it was sold to WILLIAM[3] BARTLETT.

† In 1876 BETSEY (SHIPMAN) GATES wrote[17] to Marietta, Ohio, from Beverly, Massachusetts, saying that she had seen a will dated or probated in 1725 showing that ANNA[3] OBER was an only child and mentioning the old Ober house built by her father.

REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Quarterly Magazine, Ed. by Eben Putnam, 1902, III, pp. 93–4.
2. Beverly, Mass., Vital Records, II, 226, 518.
3. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 209–10.
4. New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, II, 616.
5. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 689, 694–5.
6. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 179.
7. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VI, 289, 400.
8. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 17, 90, 92, 94, 96–7, 102, 105.
9. Beverly, Mass., Vital Records, I, 238, 240–1, 243–5; II, 223–6, 515–6.

9a. Ibid., II, 225; Essex Institute Historical Society Collections, XXXV, 263, 265.

10. Savage, III, 304.

10a. Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, p. 28; Conant Genealogy, F. O. Conant, 1887, p. 181.

11. New England Register, XLVI, 389; Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, p. 25.
12. New England Register, IX, 85.
13. Beverly, Mass., Vital Records, I, 238, 241–3; II, 145, 223, 373, 460, 518–9.
14. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, p. 311.
15. Essex Institute Historical Collections, VI, 46.
16. Early Records of the Town of Beverly, A. A. Galloupe, 1907, I, 43.
17. Family Records.

OLMSTEAD

* † [516] James Olmstead 1580–1640	m 1605	Joyce Cornish –1621
* † [258] Nicholas Olmstead 1612–1684	m 1st c.1640	Sarah Loomis 1617–8–1667
† ‡ § [128] George Gates c.1634–1724	m c.1660–1	Sarah Olmstead 1641–1709
‡ § [64] Joseph Gates 1662–1712	m c.1694	Elizabeth Hungerford c.1670–1759
§ [32] Joseph Gates 1695–6–1770	m 1719	Hannah Brainerd 1694–1744
§ [16] Bezaleel Gates 1726–1802	m 1750	Mary Brainerd 1727–1796
§ ‖ [8] Aaron Gates 1753–1821	m 1776	Elizabeth Johnson c.1756–1816
‖ ¶ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
¶ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Braintree and Cambridge, Mass.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Haddam, Conn.
§ East Haddam, Conn.
‖ East Hartland, Conn.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.

OLMSTEAD*

JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, the first of our line to come to New England, was the son of JAMES and JANE (BRISTOW) OLMSTEAD of Great Leighs, co. Essex, England, was baptized there December 4, 1580, and was married in the same place October 26, 1605, to JOYCE CORNISH, who was buried at Fairstead, co. Essex, April 21, 1621.[1,4]

In a large volume bound in vellum now in the Rolls Office, Chancery Lane, London, are recorded the names of some of the early emigrants and one list dated June 22, 1632, showed thirty-three men who were to be transported and who were certified by Captain Mason as having taken the oath of allegiance according to the statute.[5,6] Included among these was the name of JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, a Puritan who, with his two sons and probably a niece and two nephews, sailed in the "Lyon," Captain Pierce, Master, and arrived at Boston on September 16, 1632, after a voyage of twelve weeks.

The Olmstead family settled first at Mount Wollaston, later called Braintree and now Quincy, Massachusetts, but in the course of a year "by order of the Court they removed to New Towne, now Cambridge," where with their neighbors they were known as "The Braintree Colony." JAMES[1] had his house lot at Newtown on the northerly side of what is now Harvard Street upon or near the spot now occupied by the "Wadsworth house" which was formerly called the "Presidents' house."† He was made freeman there[14] on November 6, 1632, and chosen constable[2] by popular vote on November 3, 1634, being the first to receive that honor at the hands of his townspeople, since that official had formerly been appointed by the court. On February 3, 1634–5, he was one of seven men selected to transact the business of the town and one of five to survey the town lands and to record them.

The Braintree Colony after establishing themselves at Newtown wrote to the Reverend Hooker in Holland urging that he come over to be their pastor.

*Perhaps more frequently spelled Olmsted.

†Referring to the head of Harvard College. This was the second piece of land acquired by this institution.

He acquiesced and arrived in the fall of 1633. This group soon realized that their holdings and possible future grants would not be sufficient for their needs and, evidently, also felt an underlying dissatisfaction with the close relationship between church and civil affairs in the Massachusetts Bay Colony which at this time granted freemanship only to church members. Therefore they asked permission of the General Court to move again and, after much discussion, received it. On July 15, 1634, "Six of Newtowne went in the Blessing (bound to the Dutch plantation)* to discover the Connecticut river, intending to remove their town thither."[11, 12] These men, among whom, we are told,[1] was JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, were called "adventurers."

Upon the favorable reports to their home towns by the Newtown and Dorchester adventurers, it was decided to begin plantations there at once and, on October 15, 1635, about sixty men, women and children started toward Connecticut driving before them their cows, horses and swine. After two or three weeks' travel of about ten miles per day they arrived at the sites of their prospective homes, the Dorchester contingent stopping at the "Great Meadow," now Windsor, and the Newtown people settling at what is now Hartford on the "moyety" already agreed upon and later reserved for them formally.[12]

Our ancestors who moved from one part of the country to another had much of hardship to endure in that as in other phases of their life. It took a high degree of courage to travel through an unbroken wilderness with only an Indian trail and a compass as guide, with no shelter in case of storm, driving their stock before them with the constant menace of wild animals and treacherous Indians. They usually travelled in companies of considerable size to insure safety but, with all precautions, frequently had harrowing experiences.

This Newtown company arrived early in November. They had scarcely reached their destination before the winter was upon them. By the middle of the month the Connecticut River was frozen over, the snow was so deep and the season so tempestuous that a considerable number of the cattle brought

* The Dutch had since October, 1633, maintained a settlement on the Connecticut River near the present city of Hartford, and a group from Plymouth Colony had, since that time, lived near what is now the city of Windsor. About this time several parties, including the one above and one from Dorchester, Massachusetts, were also looking over the Connecticut lands with a view to the removal of their townspeople [see Grant, p. 372] and much dissatisfaction arose on the part of the Plymouth men who had previously settled there because of the encroachments, particularly of the Dorchester folk who disregarded their prior rights. In the ultimate settlement the Dorchester men monopolized the "Great Meadow," now Windsor, which was desired by each group but the Plymouth people reserved and assigned a "moyety" to those of Newtown. "Thus was ye controversie ended but the unkindnes not so soone forgotten. They of New-towne delt more fairly, desiring only what they [of Plymouth] could conveniently spare, from a competencie reserved for a plantation, for themselves; which made them [Plymouth] the more carfull to procure a moyety for them [Newtown] in this agreement and distribution."[12, 13]

HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT, IN 1640, THE HOME THEN OF TEN ANCESTRAL FAMILIES AND LATER OF THREE OTHERS

with them could not be taken across the stream. There had been so little time to prepare even rude homes and shelter for their stock that the sufferings of man and beast were extreme. To carry much provision or furniture through a trackless wilderness was impracticable so their supplies had been put on board several small vessels sailing from Massachusetts. These by reason of delays and stormy weather were either wrecked on the Massachusetts coast or frozen in at the mouth of the Connecticut River. By the last of November or the first of December the provisions were so low that famine and death threatened the people. Some of them, driven by hunger, attempted the return trip through the wilderness despite the severe weather. Indeed such was the distress in general that by December 3 or 4 a considerable number of the settlers were obliged to abandon their hastily constructed habitations and go down to the mouth of the river in the hope of meeting their provision ships as the only expedient to preserve their lives. Not finding the expected vessels, they embarked for Boston on a trading ship. The few who remained on the Connecticut River through the winter suffered severely; a great number of the cattle perished, the supplies steadily diminished and, even with the addition of game and loans of food from friendly Indians, they were obliged to subsist for a time on acorns, malt and grain.[8] Such was the beginning of Hartford but its permanence was assured by the addition in the middle of June following of about one hundred more settlers from Newtown, including JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, who had spent the winter in the old home. He was thus one of the original proprietors of Hartford and possessed a home lot on what is now Front Street [see map on p. 613]. He lived but a few years longer and, according to the Reverend Hooker, "slept sweetly in the Lord, having carried himself gratiously in his sickness."[8] His death occurred presumably on September 28, 1640, for on that day his will[1, 9, 10] was witnessed and the records show his inventory also was taken. He left property valued at £397 and his estate was to be equally divided between his two sons with the reservation that if JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS, whose daughter had married NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD, "doe make his word good, to make my sonne NICHOLIS wifes portion as good as any child he hath, for so I vnderstand his p^r^mise is, but if he shall refuse so to doe, I shall then refuse to giue my son any p^r^te of my moueable goods, cattell or debts, but my will is to leaue the thing wth Richard Webb and William Wodsworth* to see my Brother LUMUS doe p^r^forme his p^r^mise. . . ." After his death his sons

*This is the man, prominent in Hartford affairs, who by some accounts is said to have reared and employed DANIEL[1] BRAINERD and, perhaps, to have brought over and employed NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY also.

and overseer signed an agreement, which was recorded with the will, to the effect that they believed the father would have wished them to make gifts to each of two relatives and to the church which they therefore did in the sum of £5 to each kinsman and £20 to the church. The wording of this document shows that the illness of JAMES[1] was sudden and evidently of short duration. The subsequent settlement of the estate of JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS gave an equal share to his daughter[10] SARAH[2] so, undoubtedly, NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD received the full half of his father's estate.

JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD is believed to have been laid[1] in the ancient burying ground which is located back of the Centre Church in Hartford. This plot had less than a year before been the home lot of his nephew Richard Olmstead and had been purchased from him by the town for this purpose on January 11, 1640. In this graveyard there has been erected[1] the "Founder's Monument"* in memory of the first settlers of Hartford.

Of the seven children of JAMES[1] and JOYCE (CORNISH) OLMSTEAD but two came to New England. They were[1]

I. NICHOLAS[2], see following.
II. Nehemiah[2], bap. November 20, 1618, at Fairstead, co. Essex, England; d. before October 2, 1657, probably in Fairfield, Conn.; m. Elizabeth Burr (Jehu Burr, Sr.).

NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD (*James*[1]) was baptized February 15, 1612, at Fairstead, co. Essex, England, died August 31, 1684, at Hartford, Connecticut. He married, doubtless at Hartford or Windsor, Connecticut, SARAH[2] LOOMIS [see Loomis, p. 571]. The date of this marriage is given[1, 4] as September 28, 1640, but it seems more likely that it occurred at an earlier date, for his father's will witnessed on that day mentioned "my sonne NICHOLIS wife."[9, 10] He married secondly, after 1667, one who is said to have been Mary, widow of Dr. Thomas Lord.†

With his father he emigrated from England to Massachusetts, received land grants at Newtown[2] and later removed to Hartford, Connecticut, where he spent the rest of his life.‡

*The names on its east side include[1] those of JAMES[1] OLMSTEAD, GEORGE[1] GRAVES, JOHN[1] CLARKE, STEPHEN[1] POST and MATTHEW[1] MARVIN. Those on its north side include WILLIAM[1] PRATT, RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR and THOMAS[1] BLISS.

†The widow of Dr. Thomas[2] Lord (Thomas[1]) was named Hannah, rather than Mary, in his will[18] and is believed to have been of the Thurston family of Boston.

‡He is said to have sowed his wild oats in his youth[1c] and one instance is found where he laid himself open to official correction, but he early became a useful and honored citizen. In view of the very strict laws[19] of the early days, conduct which we should now consider quite normal would bring about the harshest criticism and punishment. For instance, a law required that "Whosoever shall inveigle or draw the affections of any maide or maide-servant, either for himself or others, without first gaining the consent of her parents, or guardians . . ." should

The settlement at Hartford was not many months old when the inhabitants realized that the Pequot Indians were determined upon its destruction. They had long troubled the colonies but the crowning act of audacity, which brought matters to a crisis, was perpetrated in April, 1637, when they attacked Wethersfield, killing nine men and carrying two girls away captive.[12, 13] The General Court convened at Hartford May 1, 1637, and the first entry in the record of that meeting was as follows:

> "It is ordered that there shalbe an offensiue warr ag^t the Pequoitt, and that there shalbe 90 men levied out of the 3 Plantacons, Harteford, Weathersfield, Windsor (vizt) out of Harteford 42, Windsor 30, Weathersfield 18: vnder the comande of Captaine Jo: Mason, & in Case of [his] death or sicknes vnder Comand of Rob'te Seely Leif^t & the'ldest S^rieant or military officer survivinge, if both these miscary."[9]

This was a momentous decision, notably brief, but far-reaching in its effect. In preparation for this expedition

> "It is ordered that Harteford shall send 14 Armour in this designe, Windsor 6.
>
> It is ordered that there shalbe 1^hh of good beare for the Captaine & M^r & sick men, if there be only 3 or 4 gallons of stronge water, 2 gallons of sacke.
>
> It is ordered that Windsor shall p^ruide 60 bushells of Corne, Hartford 84 bushells, Weathersfield 36 bushells; of this each plantacon to bake in biskett the on half if by any meanes they cann; the rest in grounde meale, Weathersfield tenn bushells to bee allowed vppon Accompt.
>
> Harteford is to p^rvide 3 firkins of suett, 2 firkins of Butter, wth y^t att Rivers mouth, 4 bushells of Oatemeale, 2 bushells of Pease, 500 of fish, 2 bushels of salt; Weathersfield 1 bushell of Indian Beanes; Windsor 50 peeces of Porke, 30^lb of Rice, 4 Cheeses.
>
> It is ordered that every souldier shall cary wt^th him 1^lb pouder, 4^lb of shott, 20 bulletts; 1 barell of Powder from the Rivers mouth, [a light] Gunn if they cann."[9]

Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies agreed to render aid in this war, the former in special court session ordering a levy of one hundred sixty men

pay damage to the parents and also to the state; and a repetition would carry the added penalty of corporal punishment or imprisonment. In March, 1653–4, NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD was before the court for aiding a man to make love to a servant-girl. Another case which illustrates the harsh terms then applied to a seemingly innocuous occurrence pertains to Jacobeth Murline and Sarah Tuttle, who were prosecuted "for setting down on a chest together, his arme about her waiste, and her arme upon his shoulder or about his neck, and continuing in yt. sinfull posture about half an hour, in which time he kyssed her and she kyssed him, or they kyssed one another, as ye witnesses testified. Mr. Tuttle pleaded yt. Jacob had endeavored to steal away his daughter's affections, but yt. Sarah denied, and it did not appear to ye courte," but notwithstanding, "as they had carried it in such a wanton, uncivil, and lascivious manner," they were sentenced to pay, each of them, 20s. to the treasurer. One unhappy instance of the strictness of the times is seen in the case of two young men of Milford, Lazarus and Isaiah Gunn, brothers, who took the liberty of visiting "their girls" on Saturday night and were severely whipped by their father on the following Monday, "which shamed them so much that they withdrew from all company, and lived and died in single blessedness."[19]

who marched to assist in the campaign, although they did not arrive until after the decisive battle. On May 10, 1637, the little army of Connecticut men, consisting of ninety colonists and seventy friendly Mohegan Indians under the command of Captain John Mason, embarked on three floats to go down the Connecticut River.[8] The colonists of Hartford who enlisted[17] included NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD and WILLIAM[1] PRATT who were in the midst of the battle at the Pequot Fort [see map on p. 677]. A low condition of the river caused the vessels to run aground, making progress so slow that the Indians grew impatient and asked to be set ashore, so they might finish the journey on foot. This was done and they arrived at Saybrook before the boats, but the doubt of the inhabitants there as to their loyalty caused Uncas, the Sachem, to send out a war party from among them to capture Pequots as proof of their allegiance to the colonists. This small band met and defeated six of the enemy and their return with the living captives allayed the earlier suspicion. Twenty of Captain Mason's men were sent back to guard the river towns and the others set sail, with the Mohegans, towards the Narragansett country. Arriving on Saturday evening, they "kept the Sabbath."

With the courtesy due non-hostile tribes, they made apology to Canonicus, chief of the Narragansetts, for having entered his country armed for warfare and asked permission to cross it to reach the Pequots. When he granted this privilege he warned the colonists that the enemy comprised many hundred strong and crafty warriors now securely entrenched in two great forts. Nothing daunted, they hurried to the attack and, within an hour after reaching the first stronghold, had burned it and killed between four hundred and seven hundred Indians.[17] This victory assured ultimate success although other less important engagements followed.

NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD received a grant of land for his services in this battle[15, 17] and another[3] in 1673 possibly as a bounty for other military activities in addition to regular pay, for the colonies frequently made such awards.

His public service included that of surveyor of highways in 1646 and 1647, townsman for the North side for nine years between 1653 and 1683, list and rate maker in 1669 and deputy to the General Court in 1672 and 1673. He became a freeman of Hartford before 1669 and served militarily as corporal of the Hartford Troop of Horse[9, 16, 17] in 1658. He was ensign of that body from 1662 to 1673 in which year he was confirmed a Lieutenant[17] with the instruction that if at any time it became necessary to send troops out of the county for the relief of another county he should serve in that rank.[3, 16, 17] After three

months' incumbency he resigned from that position but only temporarily for, on July 1, 1675, he was again assigned to that rank and sent in command of a troop of dragoons to the assistance of Stonington and New London because of an Indian menace there. One requirement of this body of horsemen which was formed for both home protection and the help of neighboring counties was that they should hold themselves ready to move at an "hower's warning." In August, 1675, he was made Captain of these troopers.[3] While he was an ensign in 1662 he served on a jury which tried two people for witchcraft and decreed execution. This sentence was carried out but it was the last case of the hanging of so-called witches in Connecticut.[15] He was one of fifteen colonists who received in 1675 by the will of Joshua Uncas, son of the Mohegan Sachem,[7] equal rights to a considerable tract of land "in sight of Hartford, northward" to what is now Coventry, and east to the Willimantic River.[7]

The will[10] of NICHOLAS[2], signed August 20, 1683, and proved November 25, 1684, disposed of his property to his second wife and to his children, of whom his daughter, SARAH (OLMSTEAD) GATES, received forty shillings.

The children of NICHOLAS[2] and SARAH (LOOMIS) OLMSTEAD, all born at Hartford, were[1, 1a, 1b, 4]

I. SARAH[3], b. 1641; d. November 7, 1709, at East Haddam; m., doubtless at Hartford, about 1661, GEORGE[1] GATES [see Gates, p. 14].
II. Mary[3], b. November 20, 1646; said to have died 1646.*
III. Rebecca[3], b. March 12, 1647–8; d. after 1721; m. John[2] Bigelow (John[1]).[1b]
IV. John[3], bap. February 3, 1649–50; d. young.
V. Samuel[3], b. 1653; d. January 13, 1726; m. Mary[3] Lord (William[2], Thomas[1]).
VI. Joseph[3], b. 1654; d. October 5, 1726; m. Elizabeth Butler.
VII. Thomas[3], b. (—); d. before May 28, 1741; m. June 26, 1691, Hannah Mix.
VIII. Mabel[3], m. 1st, Daniel Butler; m. 2nd, Michael Taintor.
IX. Elizabeth[3], d. October 12, 1681; said to have m. Samuel Butler, the man who is also assigned by some to her sister Mary[3] above.*

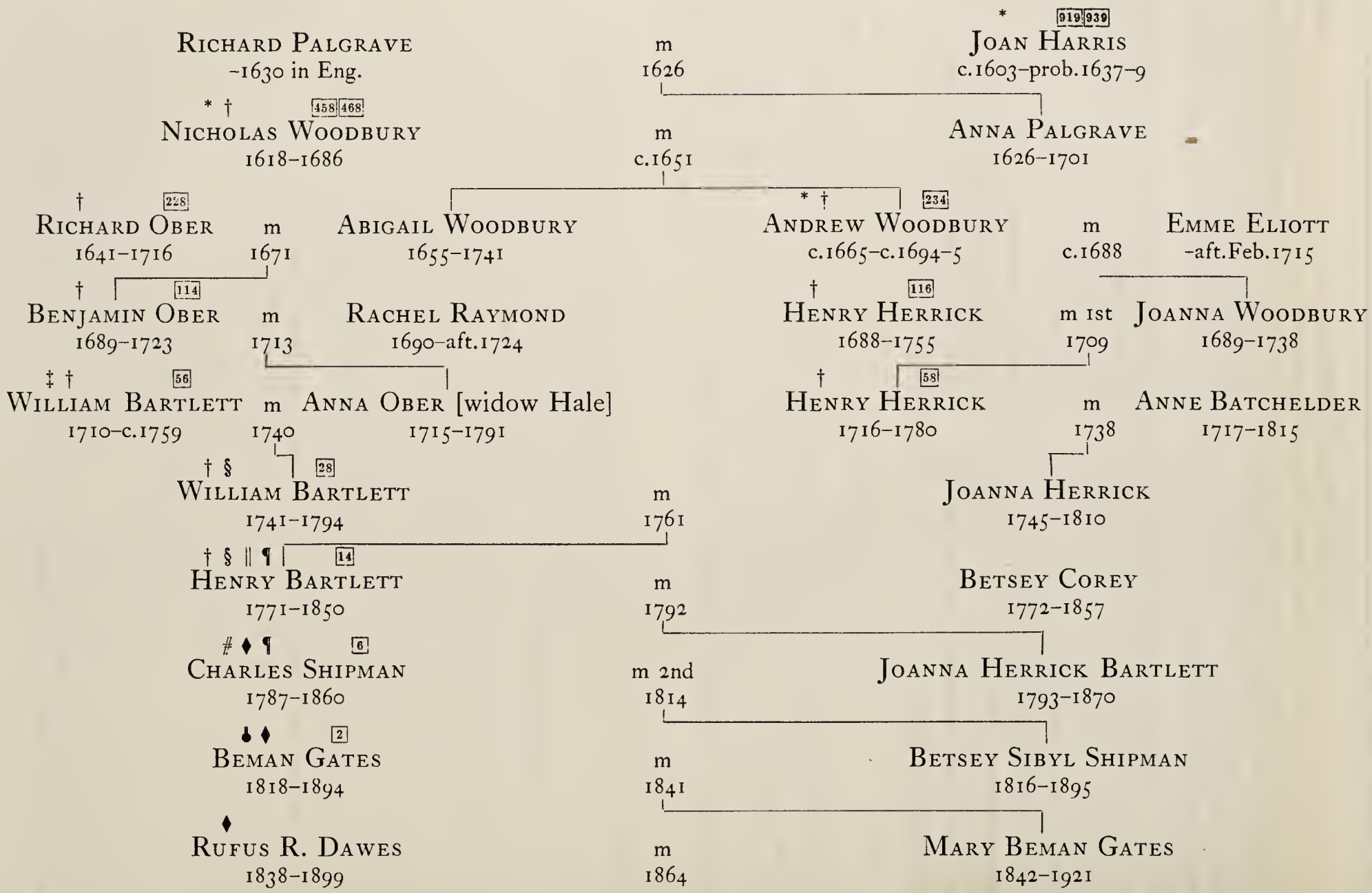
* Both this Mary[3] Olmstead and a younger sister, Elizabeth[3] Olmstead, are said to have married Samuel Butler, half brother to Elizabeth Butler and Daniel Butler above.[1, 1b, 4]

REFERENCES

1. Olmstead Family in America, H. K. Olmstead and G. K. Ward, 1912, pp. 5–15, 187.
1a. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 577, 579, 581; Savage, III, 312.
1b. Bigelow Family, G. B. Howe, 1890, pp. 22–3; Error in Bond's Watertown, 1860, p. 29.
1c. Savage, III, 312.
2. Proprietor's Records of Cambridge, Mass., 1896, pp. 8–9; Town and Selectmen's Records of Cambridge, Mass., 1901, pp. 5, 8, 10–3, 18.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 183, 199, 206, 210, 355.

4. Loomis Family, E. Loomis, 1875, 2nd ed., p. 26; Loomis Family, E. Loomis, I, 1880, p. 15; Loomis Family in America, E. S. Loomis, 1908, p. 126.
5. Hotten's Emigrants, I, 150.
6. New England Register, XIV, 300–1.
7. Ibid., XIII, 235–6.
8. History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1898, I, 19–36, 47–69, 71–3, 253.
9. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 9–10, 50, 226, 309, 446–9.
10. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 28–9, 135–6, 344.
11. Journal of John Winthrop, pub. 1790, p. 67.
12. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 24–39.
13. History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, pub. 1901, pp. 407–8.
14. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 433, 538.
15. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 12, 14, 147, 285–6.
16. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, p. 280.
17. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 13, 466–7.
18. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 137; Salisbury Genealogies, E. E. and E. M. Salisbury, 1892, I, pt. 1, p. 263.
19. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XXII, 10, 12–78, 84, 125, 214; History of the Colony of New Haven, E. R. Lambert, 1838, pp. 192–3; Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, I, 105.

PALGRAVE



* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Marblehead, Mass.
§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.
\# Saybrook, Conn.

PALGRAVE

RICHARD PALGRAVE* was married[1,2] (by special license, we are told) at Great Yarmouth, co. Norfolk, England, on January 24, 1625–6, to JOAN HARRIS, and they had a daughter ANNA[2] baptized[1,2,9] there on October 29, 1626. The father died[1,9,11] at Great Yarmouth, England, on March 30, 1630, and evidently was possessed of considerable property there, some of which remained in the ownership of his daughter ANNA[2] throughout her life and passed to her children.[2]

After the death of RICHARD PALGRAVE his widow JOAN married secondly, as his second wife, after 1630 and before May 11, 1637,[1,9] the Reverend John Young,† minister of St. Margrett's, co. Suffolk, England,[1] who later became an original proprietor of Southold, Long Island.

On May 11, 1637, "John Yonge, of St. Margrett's, Suffolk, minister, aged 35 yeares and JOAN his wife ageed 34 yeares, with 6 children, John,‡ Tho.,‡ ANNE|| Rachell, Marey and Josueph are desirous to passe to Salem in New England to

*It was undoubtedly our RICHARD PALGRAVE who was baptized at Pulham, St. Mary the Virgin, co. Norfolk, on January 29, 1597–8, who was the son of JOHN and AMY (——) PALGRAVE and grandson of THOMAS and CHRISTIAN (SAYER) PALGRAVE of Pulham. He received a bequest by the will of his father[2] in 1618, and it was undoubtedly he who became a freeman[14] of Great Yarmouth in the same county in 1624, after having served an apprenticeship (of probably six or seven years) under Robert Sayre, who about that time filled the offices of clerk and alderman of that town and who was probably also a relative of RICHARD and of his grandmother CHRISTIAN (SAYER) PALGRAVE.[2,14] For several generations members of this Palgrave family lived in two adjoining parishes called Pulham, St. Mary Magdalen (or Pulham Market) and Pulham, St. Mary the Virgin, commonly shortened to "Pulham Mary."

† John Young, bachelor, is shown to have procured a license on June 24, 1622, to marry Joan Herrington, spinster, both of Southwold, co. Suffolk, England.[14] By her he had sons John and Thomas, baptized in 1623 and 1625.[1,9] Her death is said to have occurred about 1630 and, following that event but before May 11, 1637, he married, as her second husband, JOAN (HARRIS) PALGRAVE.[1,9]

The people of Suffolk were strictly non-conformists. Following the restoration of Catholic forms and ceremonies bitter war was waged against Puritanism, and Archbishop Laud undertook through the High Commissioners to prevent the escape of all ministers of that belief and to subdue them by depriving them of their benefices,[9] so that such a one must have found the prospect of continuance there quite intolerable and these were undoubtedly the reasons impelling the Reverend Mr. Young to escape to the new world at any cost.

In addition to his two known children and his second wife's daughter ANNA PALGRAVE, three other children emigrated with them, of whom, presumably, one or more were by his second wife.

‡ His sons by an earlier marriage, baptized in 1623 and 1625 respectively.

|| Undoubtedly ANNA[2] PALGRAVE, his second wife's daughter, whose baptism in 1626 would place her chronologically in this relation to the other children.

inhabitt."[5, 6, 7] This application for permission to emigrate in the "Mary Anne" of Yarmouth which carried sixty-two passengers for Salem was refused in these words, "This man was forbydden passage by the Commission[rs] and went not from Yarmouth," to which statement one American authority adds that he finally succeeded in emigrating three years later;[7] this last statement is obviously untrue for three months later, on August 4, 1637, he was received as an inhabitant of Salem and given a piece of land there,[8] so he must, in some manner, have evaded the ruling of the authorities. This might have been accomplished by hurried overland travel to a port touched later by the "Mary Anne" for it seems highly probable that he came in that vessel since, on the very day that he was admitted as a resident of Salem, Samuel Greenfield and Thomas Oliver were similarly accommodated there and they had applied for and received permission to embark on the "Mary Anne" at the time that such permission was refused the Reverend Young.[7, 8]

This presupposes that JOAN (HARRIS) PALGRAVE Young and her daughter ANNA[2] PALGRAVE, as well as the Reverend John Young and his children, by some means succeeded in carrying out their hope and plan. JOAN evidently did not live long after arrival in the new country for the Reverend Young married, thirdly, Mary (Warren) Gardiner [daughter of Thomas Warren of England],[5] probably about 1639.[1, 5, 9]

On December 25, 1637, when an allotment of land was made in Salem it was shown that this family consisted of eight persons which was probably the exact number which emigrated, so that JOAN was doubtless still living then. The Reverend Mr. Young remained in Salem until 1640 and then removed permanently to Southold, Long Island.[9]

A suggestion of possible relationship is seen in the fact that in 1646 John Thorn of Beverly made a nuncupative will in the presence of three witnesses by which he gave to ANNA[2] PALGRAVE all his estate except his best hat and one other small item.[2, 10] His inventory showed a valuation of over £27.

The inventory of the estate of NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY would naturally have included the valuation of property which came into the family with his wife, ANNA[2] PALGRAVE, and that appraisal showed him to be possessed of property to the extent of £2573 including real estate in Great Yarmouth, England; his will left to his wife the English holdings which were, undoubtedly, her inheritance from her father. Toward the close of her life she conveyed this property by deed of May 8, 1700, to her Woodbury children: Joseph[3], Isaac[3], Joanna[3], who had married Samuel Plummer, and ABIGAIL[3], who was wife of RICHARD[1]

OBER.[2] Her will drawn in October, 1699, and proved in 1701 or 1702, confirmed to her son-in-law RICHARD[1] OBER her earlier deed of gift of "my little house, and small pieces of land, nigh Mr. Hale's house in Beverly." At the settlement of her estate, which inventoried about £114, the funeral charges included the items: Gloves, 5 pounds, 7 shillings, 5 pence; a barrel of cider, 14 shillings; ¼ cask of wine, 2 shillings, 5 pence; and nursing, 21 shillings.[2]

In 1710 after the death of ANNA (PALGRAVE) WOODBURY three aged people of Salem and Beverly deposed that she came from Great Yarmouth, England, "being brought over by her father-in-law Mr John Young."[1, 9, 12, 13]

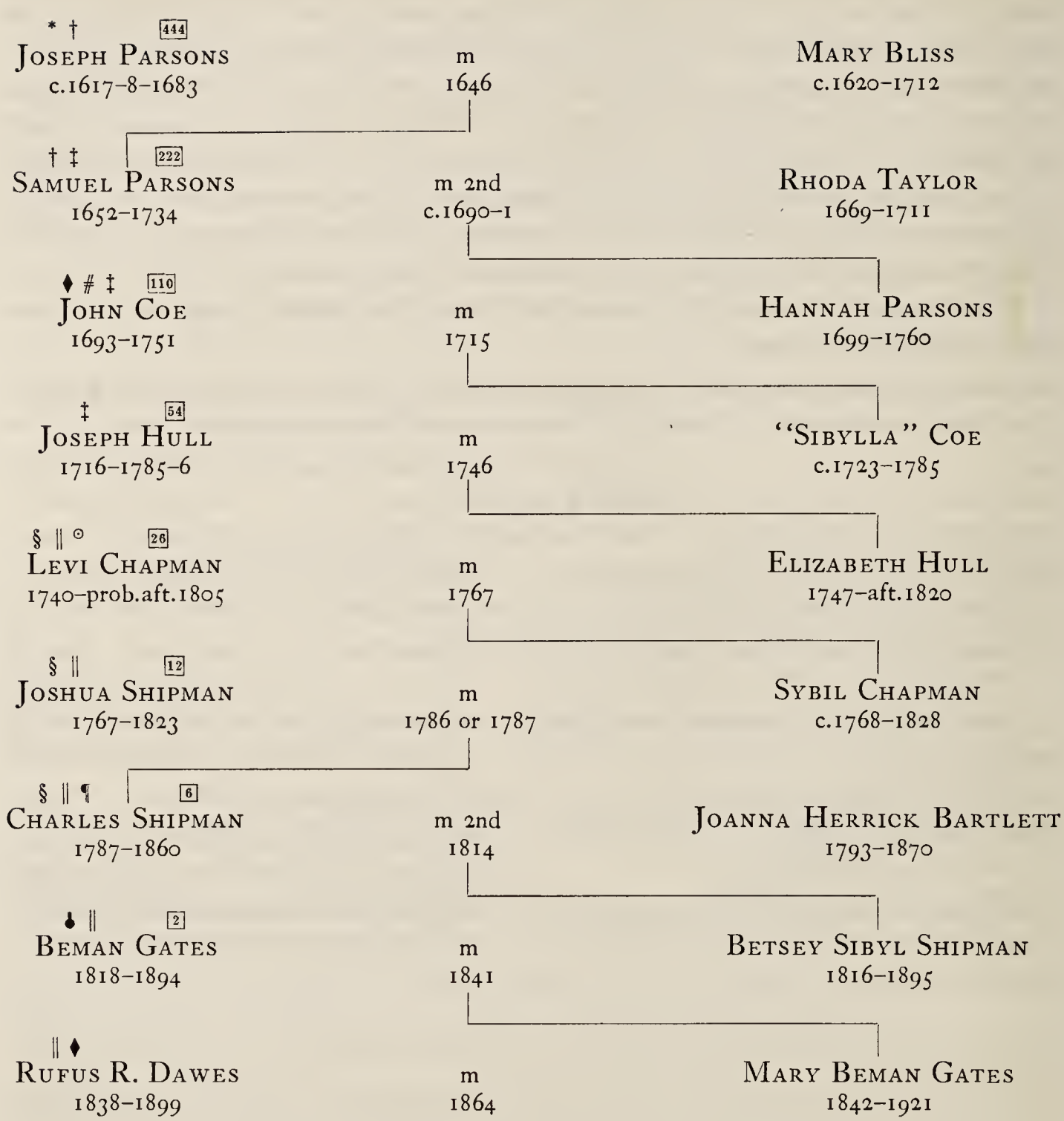
The child of RICHARD PALGRAVE of Great Yarmouth, England, and his wife, JOAN HARRIS, was[1, 2, 5]

1. ANNA[2], bap. October 29, 1626, at that place; d. June 10, 1701, aged about 75, at Beverly, Mass.; m., about 1651, NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 834].

REFERENCES

1. New York Record, XXXV, 96–9.
2. Palgrave Family Memorial, C. J. Palmer and S. Tucker, 1878 (in Library of Congress), pp. 52, 60, 172–3; Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 64, 156–61; History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 402; Warren, Jackson and Allied Families, B. W. Davis, 1903, pp. 114–5; Essex County, Mass. Deeds, XIV, 258; Probates, Docket 30349, Probate Book, 307, pp. 199–200, 247–8; Book 308, pp. 37–9.
3. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 616.
4. Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Mass., T. B. Wyman, 1879, II, 724.
5. New England Register, LII, 245–6.
6. New York Record, XXXIX, 193.
7. Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. IV, Vol. I, p. 101.
8. Town Records of Salem, Mass., I, 54. Essex Institute Historical Collections, IX, 54.
9. Youngs Family, S. Youngs, 1907, pp. 15–7, 38–43.
10. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 50–1.
11. A supplement to Notes on Joseph Kellogg of Hadley, containing notes on the families of Terry, White and Woodbury, J. P. Kellogg, 1899, pp. 13–4.
12. New England Register, XXIX, 319.
13. New York Record, XLV, 114.
14. Calendar of Freemen of Great Yarmouth, Eng., pub. by the Norfolk and Norwich Archaeological Society, 1910, pp. 61, 65, 95; Norfolk Families, W. Rye, 1913, p. 775; Harleian Society Publication, XXXII, Visitation of Norfolk, Eng., pp. 240–1.

PARSONS



* Springfield, Mass.
† Northampton, Mass.
‡ Durham, Conn.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Stratford, Conn.
\# Haddam, Conn.
⊙ Salem, Ohio.

PARSONS

TRADITION says that JOSEPH[1] PARSONS, "a Puritan and dissenter in politics" and the first of the name in New England, was born about 1617–8, probably in co. Devon, England, and perhaps at Great Torrington,* near Exeter, and that he embarked for the new world[1, 8] on July 4, 1635, at Gravesend, in the "Transport," Edward Walker, Master. It is also said that his family was related in England to the Pynchon family, some members of which preceded him to New England and became founders of Springfield, Massachusetts, where JOSEPH[1] PARSONS also became a proprietor.[1] There was, definitely, at least one Parsons-Pynchon marriage in England and the close and continued business relations between JOSEPH[1] PARSONS and the New England Pynchons easily lends color to this possibility.†

The earliest known reference to JOSEPH[1] PARSONS in this country was on July 15, 1636, when he witnessed, at the age of seventeen or eighteen [as he testified in March, 1661–2],[1, 8] an Indian deed transferring a large tract of land around the present site of Springfield [see map on p. 627] to William Pynchon and two other men.[3] No definite evidence is seen of the whereabouts or conduct of JOSEPH[1] for the next ten years, though his failure to receive much land in Springfield by early grants suggests a temporary absence, but if such occurred it evidently caused him to forfeit nothing in the way of a sure footing for his subsequent success there.[8]

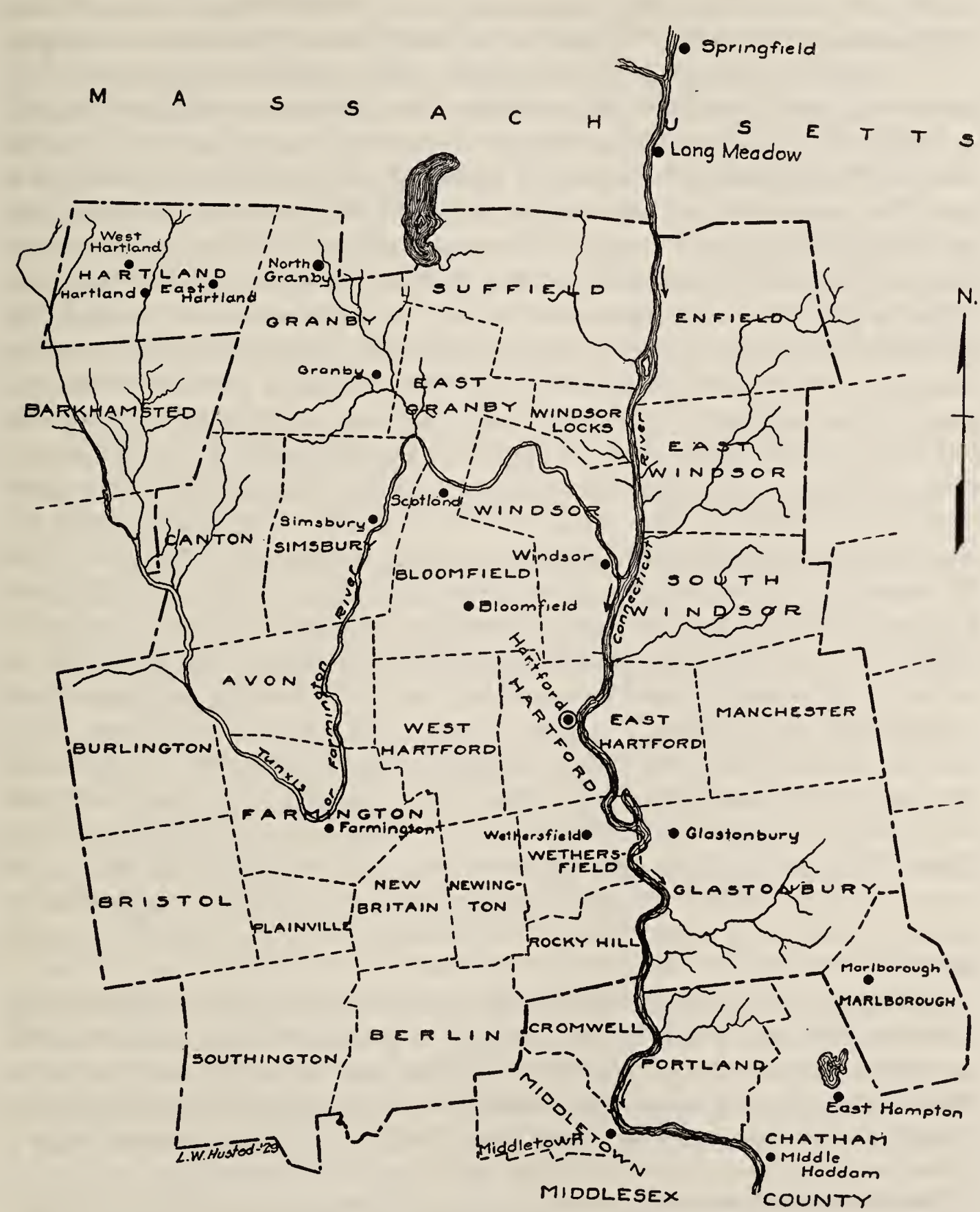
* A letter written in 1769 by Jonathan[3] Parsons, then aged 64 years, relative to the place of birth of his grandfather, Benjamin[1] Parsons, brother of our JOSEPH[1], names Great Torrington or near-by Tiverton as the birthplace of Benjamin[1] and adds that the latter's father, who would be also father to JOSEPH[1] PARSONS, followed the last-named man, shortly, to this country on a visit, bringing some of his younger children with him.[1, 2] The father, whose name is not known, presumably returned to England but one or more of the children remained as colonists.

† "It is well known that in the shadow of the Pynchons no one in early Springfield prospered greatly save JOSEPH PARSONS who, as a mere lad, was invited to sign, as witness, the Indian deed of lands . . . it would seem to follow either that . . . JOSEPH PARSONS was, next to the Pynchons, the ablest business man in Springfield or else that, for some sufficient reason, the Pynchons who dominated and literally outstripped every one else in the town must have highly favored young JOSEPH PARSONS in permitting him so to benefit by his own undoubted abilities that he became and 'for half a century remained the richest man in the Connecticut Valley,' Col. John Pynchon himself perhaps not excepted."[8]

He married at Hartford, Connecticut, on November 26, 1646, MARY[2] BLISS [see Bliss, p. 126],[9] and must have been resident at Springfield at least as early as 1645 when he held office there and 1646 when he was taxed 11 shillings 9 pence on land in the proportion of a forty-two and one-half-acre share.[10, 11] This land and undoubtedly also his home were where Long Meadow now lies, a short distance down the river from Springfield.[8] In that town he was chosen[1, 8, 11] overseer or surveyor of highways in 1645, 1646, 1653 and 1654; was a fence viewer in 1650, sold land in 1664, was given permission to buy land and build thereon in 1669 and was a selectman at least in 1651 and 1652. The town paid him 1 shilling 3 pence in that year for an hourglass[11] [suggesting to the modern mind the earlier lack of clocks], and for many years he paid the Pynchons varying sums for a monopoly of trade with the Indians in certain sections. This fee amounted to £12 sterling[1] about 1655, £12 in furs[8] in 1657 and later ranged as low as £3 per annum when another shared the privilege with him, for it carried with it the stipulation that all merchandise used in this trade should be bought from the Pynchons and paid for with beaver skins so the latter men got a double profit in any event. The territory in which JOSEPH[1] traded stretched up the Connecticut River and centered at what became Northampton,[8, 10] to which place he removed[12] about 1652–3, even though he appears to have retained indefinitely some of his holdings at Springfield and he surely returned to that town in later life.

After his arrival at Northampton he had a home lot of four acres situated at the corner of present Bridge and Market streets and bounded on the south by the former street.[12] In the latter part of 1654 he was on a committee there to build a Town House for public and religious meetings; in 1655 he paid 20 shillings to "be freed from any offis in the towne of Northampton for this yeare" but immediately after the expiration of this period he was chosen selectman and appears to have served thus[12] at least until 1659. He complained, in 1658, of a neighbor who owed him £4 and had engaged to deliver a cow and a calf in payment of the debt but failed to keep this agreement. Discussion disclosed that the calf was lost so JOSEPH[1] agreed to accept the cow and 5 shillings in settlement.[12] The house he built here in 1657–8 and occupied until his return to Springfield, is still standing, in good repair, and occupied by a descendant of his.[1]

The train band of the town was so small that no commissioned officers were assigned to it and, in the absence of these, the entire duties which they



HARTFORD COUNTY, CONNECTICUT

would have assumed devolved upon a clerk and JOSEPH[1] PARSONS was chosen in September, 1658, to be "Clarke of the Band & took his oath accordingly. . . ." In this position he kept muster rolls, inspected equipment, collected fines and performed other services.[12] At this time he evidently had as an apprentice a workman from Ireland for JOSEPH[1] was given three acres of meadow "for the estate* hee had in his Irishman." In 1659 he served on a jury;† on a committee to sell certain land to Hartford and was appointed to receive the £30 paid for it and to disburse that sum; in January, 1658–9, he made a voluntary subscription to the ministry of eight acres of land and signed a petition for abatement of taxes.[12] About a year later he was appointed to set off forty acres of town land for the ministry in addition to the amounts earlier given individually; and when in 1663 a portion of this was about to be assigned to Mr. Eliot who had been brought in to assist the minister, JOSEPH[1] signed a protest against that disposal of it.[12] In February, 1660–1, he was on a committee to arrange for the transcribing of the early town records and was part owner of the first mill in the town which for several years had been operated for the owners, by ROBERT[1] HAYWARD[3a] [see Hayward, p. 418] and, in 1661, was sold by them to him.[12] That year JOSEPH[1] PARSONS was "lycensed to keep an ordinary or house of Comon entertayment . . . for the yeere ensueing and he hath liberty graunted him to sell wines or strong liquors as need shall require. Provided he keepe good rule & order in his house."[12] He continued in this service until June, 1663, when he was definitely required to maintain the establishment "tel theTowne can better feet them selfs with another that can doe it commendable and comfortable and then he haue promised to leave it to the pleashuer of the Towne." So evidently in this instance the court designated its choice for tavern keeper instead of receiving applications. JOSEPH[1] maintained a hostelry until 1665 when HENRY[1] WOODWARD was appointed to succeed him.[12]

In March, 1661, JOSEPH[1] with a man from New Town [later Hadley] was instructed to make a survey for a bridge, to oversee its construction and to report the cost at the next court; during that year he bought land for £10 in Westfield; in June, 1661, at the formation of a church in Northampton he signed the covenant and the next month, when it was decided to build a

* Amount invested in passage money.

† Jurors received two shillings a day and, at least in 1660, had their expenses at the Ordinary [tavern] paid by the county.[1]

new meeting house forty-two feet square at a cost of £150, he was on the committee to "Cary on and finish this worke."[8, 12] Apparently this building was not completed before 1665, though it was probably used earlier, for in January of that year JOSEPH[1] with others was appointed to "seat the meeting house." In 1664 he was chosen selectman and that year, between March 10 and April 30, had charge of the annual burning of the woods on the easterly and northerly sides of Mill River for a distance of several miles. This was to clear the land of underbrush so as to permit the growth of grass for pasturage[8, 12] and to facilitate the pursuit of game for food. That year the Indians made an appeal to the town for a gift of land on which to build a fort. Their request was granted on certain conditions and JOSEPH[1] was on the committee "to deliver ther minde to the Indians" thus,

"1. ffirst they shall not break the Saboath by workeing or gameing or caring burdens or ye like.
2. They shall not pawway [powwow] on that place or any wher els amongst vs.
3. They shall not gett liquoer or Sider and drinke themselues drunk and soe kill one an other as they haue donn.
4. They shall not take in other Indians of other places to seat amongst them, wee alow only Nowutague Indians y^t were the Inhabytants of the place.
5. They shall not breake downe o^r fences and let in Cattle and Swine but shall goe over a stile at one place.
6. The Murd^rers Callawane and Wurtowhan and Pacquallunt shall not seate Amongst them.
7. They shall not hunt nor kill o^r Cattle or Sheepe or Swine wth ther doggs if they doe they shall pay for them."

In 1667 the Indians were required to make certain restitution for damage done to some of the settlers and of this amount JOSEPH[1] received one payment of £1–10 and a portion of forty shillings beside.[12] In 1668 he was a member of a committee to consider certain proposed customs duties and in the following month was one of 108 men to sign a petition against the plan.

For sixteen years Northampton had been without a sawmill and, about 1667, the establishment of one was finally attempted but the promoters failed to fulfill their agreement and in 1670 a grant of twenty acres was made to JOSEPH[1] if he would complete the project and promise was made

him that it should be tax free to him and his heirs as long as they "keepe the mill goeing for the Townes vse"[12] which he did[1] successfully for years. That year he was on a committee to arrange for a new minister at Northampton.

JOSEPH[1] PARSONS had occasional lawsuits, as might any man with such wide business interests, but only two such affairs seem worthy of mention. In 1664 he was "complayned of" at court for "opposing & resisting the Constable who was violently taking away his [PARSON's] oxen & his sack" and JOSEPH[1] was "fyned" £5 for "high contempt of Authority," and since it was shown that he and the officer "had some Scuffling in the busyness whereby blood was drawn between them they are each of them fyned . . . ten shillings apeace: . . . JOSEPH PARSONS . . . did immediately before the court acknowledge his offence in Affrunting Authority & intreated . . . for abatm[t] of his fyne. The Corte well accepting of submission remitted twenty shillings of his fyne."[8] In 1665 he had a difference with Peter Hendricks about accounts and the verdict favored Hendricks. In view of succeeding events the question arises as to whether resentment at this outcome may not have influenced JOSEPH[1], for that ordinarily upright and law-abiding man was shortly presented at Court for "breach of the Law in suffering Hendricks y[e] Dutchman to spend his tyme & estate in his, the said JOSEPH's house, y[e] Ordinary." For this offense PARSONS was fined forty shillings.[8]

In any dealings with the Indians, the experience and assistance of JOSEPH[1] PARSONS was most valuable because of his wide acquaintance with them as a fur trader and also because of his knowledge of the country itself. He was one of the prime movers in 1670 toward a petition to the General Court resulting in a purchase from the Indians in 1671 of land where Northfield now stands and the deed for it was made out to him as agent. He was a continuous landowner and taxpayer at Northfield though never a resident there. In the re-settlement of that town in 1685–90 after the Indian attack his estate possessed holdings half as large again as those of any other man.[13] In 1672–3 he made a donation[12] to Harvard College of five hundred and twenty pounds of "flower at 12 per lb . . . 02.14.06." On "May 15, 1675, he purchased a warehouse and dock with privileges in Boston where he had a dwelling-house and lot in Marlborough Street," thus becoming a merchant of that city. He still owned this property at his death except that the warehouse had burned down.[8] He has been called a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company but the man of this name who held that membership was a different person with a wife Bethia.[8, 14]

For many years the town gave a bounty of ten shillings for killing wolves. The ears and sometimes the head were brought to the constable as evidence and that man gave a certificate which would be presented to the town treasurer, and in one year JOSEPH[1] PARSONS had six wolves to his credit.[8] In 1678 he was appointed to fill the position of cornet in the Troop of Horse of which HENRY[1] WOODWARD had for years been Quarter Master. In October, 1679, JOSEPH[1] and his son of the same name contracted for an interest in a lead mining venture six miles west of Northampton, but the older man soon disposed of his rights. He had bought during that year for £150 the home and land formerly belonging to Timothy Cooper* in Springfield, his own earlier home, and he soon after returned there.[8, 12]

JOSEPH[1] PARSONS continued his public usefulness in various ways in Springfield including service as selectman in 1681 and 1682, balancing of the "Townes debts & credits" in those years, membership on committees in the former year to examine the accounts of the selectmen "of al the yeers past & to bring to ballance al y^r accounts," to endeavor to collect back taxes "in ye severall yeares past since ye vnhappy Indean war . . ."[11] and to examine the accounts of a committee which built a new meeting house in 1683.[8] The cost of this structure was largely covered by contributions of labor and material and in one instance JOSEPH[1] is credited with "350 nailes 5s.4d., 25 foot 4 Inch plankes 3s.—8s.6d." toward this building. In 1681 the county treasurer reported having paid "To Cornet JOSEPH[1] PARSONS for a debt the County owed him for going after the Indians, &c, 5s.9d.,"[8] though whether this was for military or police service is not evident.

"The following incident[4, 5, 6] in the life of the first ancestral mother of the Parsons family in America, as illustrative of the times, will be of interest to her descendants.

* This homestead extended west from what is now Main Street to the Connecticut River and JOSEPH[1] bought also twenty-seven acres on the east side[8] of Main Street for £130. After the death of Timothy Cooper this property, which had earlier belonged to his father Thomas Cooper, had been taken over by John Pynchon for debts owed him by the younger man, but his ownership of it and sale to JOSEPH[1] PARSONS did not include the dower rights of the widows of these two Coopers, though the deed to PARSONS guaranteed a perfect title. The following year Pynchon acquired from the younger widow the release of her rights to one-third of it, but he refused to accept the £20 offered by PARSONS for this release, holding it for £25 in spite of the wording of the deed he had given. After the death of JOSEPH[1] PARSONS his widow MARY and her two oldest sons as administrators sued Pynchon in September, 1685, to have the title made good, for by this time the elder widow Cooper had sued them for her dower rights. At this suit against John Pynchon, who was himself sitting as one of the two judges at that term of court, he, in his dual character of defendant and judge, defiantly "told Widdow PARSONS in open Corte that he would take his tyme to Sue for it, or Recover it if she did not Comply with him, & desired this to be recorded." At the next term of court in March, 1686, the matter was again brought up by the PARSONS family, and again they lost when a jury found for Pynchon, leaving the widow MARY without redress.[8]

"In 1656, and soon after the removal of the Parsons family from Springfield to Northampton, JOSEPH[1] PARSONS brought an action for slander against Sarah Bridgman, the wife of James Bridgman, charging that Sarah had accused MARY, his wife, of being a witch.

"Several Springfield families, including the Bridgmans, had settled in Northampton. It seems that MARY PARSONS' strong personality had aroused enmity in Springfield, which followed her to Northampton, and neighborhood gossip did the rest and she was accused of being a witch. MARGARET BLISS, the mother of MARY PARSONS, hearing these stories, lost no time in interviewing the author of them.

"'Goodwife Bridgman was equal to the occasion and told her to her face that she did hear that her daughter was suspected to be a witch.' Exasperated by this slanderous gossip, JOSEPH PARSONS brought this action to defend the reputation of his wife. The belief in witchcraft was common at the time and the charge involved an unholy partnership with the devil. We, of the 20th Century, find it difficult to appreciate the situation as it existed 250 years ago, but the trials, persecutions and punishments for witchcraft which took place in Massachusetts a few years later are the darkest blots upon its otherwise glorious history. The record of the testimony at the trial which followed arouses mingled feelings of mirth and sadness and can be summarized somewhat as follows:

"Following hard upon the heels of any disagreement, or quarrel, between MARY PARSONS and any member of the Bridgman family, a fatal disease would seize upon some horse, cow or pig belonging to the Bridgman family and, as the disease could not be accounted for in any other way, it must be the result of MARY's uncanny influence exercised by way of revenge. Mrs. Bridgman's child died and she said she thought MARY PARSONS had bewitched it.

"Her eleven-year-old son fractured his knee, which seems to have been bunglingly set by the 'Chirugeon,' and the little fellow in his agony cried out that MARY PARSONS was pulling his leg off, and that he saw her on the shelf. When she went away he said that a black mouse followed her.

"William Hannum testified that he had a 'falling out' with MARY PARSONS about the use of her brother John's [John Bliss] oxen. After that he lost, by disease, a 'lusty cow' and a 'lusty swine' that had before been well and healthy. In a day or two after, while on his way to Windsor, with his cart and oxen, one of the cattle was bitten by a rattlesnake and died there.

'These things,' he said, 'doe something run in my mind that I cannot have my mind from this woman.'

"A Mrs. Hannum was also a witness. She lived a short distance from Mrs. Parsons on Market Street. She testified that she had 'been warned by some of the Windsor and some of Norwattack [Northampton] to beware how I had to do with MARY, the wife of JOSEPH PARSONS.' Notwithstanding this warning, she spun yarn for Mrs. PARSONS and there were disputes between them as to the quantity. Then Mrs. PARSONS had asked that one of Mrs. Hannum's daughters might go to live with her, which had been refused. Then her daughter, 'though formerly healthy, yet this summer hath been sickly and unhelpful to me which, though I know it may be by God's own immediate hand, yet it causes some jealousyes in me against MARY because it fell out within three or four days after I had given her a full denyal of my daughter's service.'"

A writer adds: "Here is the covert insinuation of uncanny dealings by Mrs. PARSONS. The daughter, charmed with the idea of living with one of the richest families in town was disappointed at the refusal of her mother and sulked and wouldn't help about the house work."

"The decision of the court was in favor of the plaintiff and against Mrs. Bridgman, and she was ordered to make public acknowledgment of her fault at Northampton and Springfield, and that her husband, James Bridgman, pay to plaintiff £10, and £7–1s., cost of court."

An historian makes the following comment: "MARY PARSONS was apparently a proud and nervous woman, haughty in demeanor and inclined to carry things with a high hand; she belonged to the aristocracy and evidently considered herself a dame of considerable importance. A woman of forcible speech and domineering ways she was not unwilling that her neighbors should have the benefit of her opinions on any subject touching herself and her family. A case so flimsy and frivolous and founded on jealousy, prejudice and superstition, conducted before honorable and sensible men, could not well have reached any other decision.

"To that community, however, in those days of belief in the supernatural, it was serious and significant.

"Such gossip was an affront that Esq. PARSONS could not overlook in a town in which he ranked as one of the first in worldly possessions."

"But the charge of witchcraft against this MARY PARSONS did not end with the judgment in the slander suit. Eighteen years later the charge was renewed

and at about the time of the Salem witchcraft trials. The occasion was the death of Mary, a daughter of the same James Bridgman, who had become the wife of Samuel Bartlett. The trial occurred in Boston and 'the fact that Mrs. PARSONS voluntarily appeared before the court "desiring to clear herself of such an execrable crime" and that subsequently she argued her own case before the court must not be overlooked. On both these occasions she met her accusers boldly, protesting her innocence, and showing "how clear she was of such a crime." In this trial Mrs. PARSONS was 'called to speak for herself' and from the meagre report upon record, undoubtedly did so most effectively.'"

Another writer states: . . ."Two years after the birth of her youngest child MARY (BLISS) PARSONS was charged with witchcraft [and] sent to Boston for trial where the jury gave her a full acquittal of the crime and she returned home to Northampton. . . ." During her trial effort was made to implicate her son John[2] and just after her acquittal, "her son, Ebenezer, was killed by the Indians, and those who had been instrumental in bringing her to trial said, 'Behold, though human judges may be bought off, God's vengeance neither turns aside nor slumbers.' It is said that she possessed great beauty and talents but was not very amiable."

Her second trial is recorded as follows: "Mrs. Mary Bartlett, wife of Samuel Bartlett, of Northampton, having died in July of this year [1674] and as her complaint was not understood by such 'Cherurgeons' as the neighborhood afforded, a ready solution of the case was found by attributing it to witchcraft. The next step was to fix upon the witch; and, strange to say, in this instance, one of the most, if not the most accomplished and of the highest standing in the place, was fixed upon. This was Mrs. MARY PARSONS, whose husband, Mr. JOSEPH PARSONS, was one of the wealthiest men of Northampton.

"It is conjectured that the standing of Mrs. PARSONS had much to do with the accusation. She may have been somewhat exclusive in the choice of her associates, and even of haughty manners towards the parties by whom she was singled out for persecution, but as to this nothing is positively known.

"On the 26th of September, about two months after the death of Mrs. Bartlett, a court met at Springfield. Mr. Bartlett in the meantime had bestirred himself to procure evidence against Mrs. PARSONS in the shape of depositions. This lady, knowing what was going on, did not wait to be summoned, but appeared before the court in person. The substance of her

speech was that 'she did assert her own innocency, often maintaining how clear she was of such a crime, and that the righteous God knew her innocency, and she left her cause in His hands.' But her protestations had little or no effect upon the court of Springfield, and that court at once proceeded to do all which lay in its jurisdiction. It 'appointed a jury of soberdized, chaste women to make diligent search of the body of MARY PARSONS, whether any marks of witchcraft appear, who gave in their account to the court on oath of what they found.'

"Whether they found anything extraordinary in this search is not known, although it is said that the report which they made, together with the evidence was forwarded to the Governor and Magistrates at Boston. The accused also was ordered to appear before them [at Boston], and was bound over for her future appearance in the sum of Fifty Pounds, her husband becoming bound in that sum.

"On the 2nd March, 1675, she was indicted by the grand jury and sent to prison to await trial. On the 13th of May following she was tried on the charge of witchcraft, 'in that she had, not having the fear of God before her eyes, entered into familiarity with the Devil and committed sundry acts of witchcraft on the person or persons of one or more.'

"She, of course, pleaded 'not guilty' and she was cleared by the jury.

"It may be worthy of notice that at this time the Hon. John Leverett was Governor and Generals Gookin and Denison were assistants. These were three of the most enlightened men of the time and they doubtless exerted a benign influence on the jury. Hence witch finders were discouraged and the country was relieved for a time.

"An attempt was, however, made against John Parsons, son of JOSEPH and MARY PARSONS, and a quantity of evidence was made to prove his 'familiarity with the Devil,' but the county court did not think the evidence strong enough, or they had not faith enough in the weakness of the Governor and his assistants to send the accused to Boston and the case was abandoned."

"No wonder JOSEPH PARSONS after this endeavor to make witches of two members of his family became disgusted with Northampton and, within a few years, left the town."[4, 5, 6]

JOSEPH[1] PARSONS died intestate at Springfield on October 9, 1683, aged about sixty-six.[1, 8] His inventory showed property to the amount of £2088–09. His widow MARY and two older sons were made administrators and on January 5, 1683–4, his heirs signed an agreement relative to the division of

his property which was accepted by the court on March 25 following.[8] He had been a large landholder, possessing property in Springfield, Northampton, Hadley, Northfield and Boston[1, 8] and he owned much of this at his death. His inventory also showed part ownership in a sawmill in Haddam, Connecticut, as well as "Hats in Hadley" valued[8] at £4, thus suggesting the wide scope of his business interests even up to his death.

His third (living) son SAMUEL[2] received from his estate, property valued at £160 including six pieces of land.[8]

There are some points of uncertainty relative to the birthplaces of the children of JOSEPH[1], for though the five eldest were undoubtedly born at Springfield, no record is found of the first three of these and indeed the eldest, John[2], is sometimes omitted entirely. The others were all born at Northampton and Ebenezer[2] was the first white child born in that town.[1, 7, 8]

The children of JOSEPH[1] and MARY (BLISS) PARSONS were[1, 7, 8]

i. Joseph[2], b. November 1, 1647; d. November 29, 1729, at Northampton; m. there, March 17, 1669, Elizabeth Strong (Elder John).
ii. Benjamin[2], b., it is said, January 22, 1649; d. June 22, 1649, at Springfield.
iii. John[2], b. January 22, 1649; d. soon.
iv. John[2], b. August 14, 1650; d. April 15 or 19, 1728, at Northampton; m. there, December 3, 1675, Sarah Clarke (William).
v. SAMUEL[2], see following.
vi. Ebenezer[2], b. May 1, 1655, at Northampton; killed by Indians September 2, 1675, at Hadley.[8, 12, 15]
vii. Jonathan[2], b. June 6, 1657; d. December, 1694; m. April 5, 1682, Mary Clark.
viii. David[2], b. April 30, 1659; d. young.
ix. Mary[2], b. June 27, 1661; d. August 23, 1711; m. 1st, October 16, 1685, Joseph Ashley; m., 2nd, Joseph Williston.
x. Hannah[2], b. August 1, 1663; d. April 1, 1739; m. January 7, 1687, Pelatiah Glover.
xi. Abigail[2], b. September 3, 1666; d. June 27, 1689; m. February 19, 1685, John Cotton.
xii. & xiii. Esther[2] and Benjamin[2], b. and d. September 11, 1668.
xiv. Hester[2], b. December 24, 1672; d. 1760; m. September 15, 1689, Joseph Smith.

SAMUEL[2] PARSONS (*Joseph*[1]) was born on January 23, 1652, in Springfield, Massachusetts,[7] died November 12, 1734, in Durham, Connecticut [see map on p. 195]. He married first at Northampton, Massachusetts, about 1677, Elizabeth Cooke (Major Aaron), who died September 2, 1690, and married secondly there,[7] about 1691, RHODA[3] TAYLOR [see Taylor, p. 790]. She died very soon after September 3, 1711, when her last child was born and SAMUEL[2], evidently needing a nurse and mother for the child, married thirdly at Durham, on December 15 following, Mary Wheeler.[7, 16]

A part of his share of the paternal estate was a home in Northampton where he continued to live after the return of his father JOSEPH[1] to Springfield.

In 1681 the need for a sawmill in Northampton was again under discussion and a site for one was granted to SAMUEL[2] PARSONS and three other men who were to set up a mill within a year.[17]

For a number of years the Indian depredations harassed Northampton and its sister towns and in 1708 the Parsons family suffered sadly for on July 9 two sons of John[2] Parsons were killed while searching the woods for cattle, and on July 26 Aaron[3] Parsons,* a soldier, called "son of SAMUEL of Northampton," was slain.[17]

SAMUEL[2] PARSONS with his family, a nephew Moses[3] Parsons and other relatives removed to Durham, Connecticut, about 1709, and it appears that SAMUEL[2] must have planned this removal as early as 1707 for that year the town of Durham granted to "Lieut. PARSONS" and four other men the privilege of damming a near-by stream and the use of adjacent land on which to build a sawmill† which was to be completed by the last of March, 1709.[16]

On June 8, 1710, the Northampton Church addressed a letter of dismissal and recommendation to the Durham Church in these words:

"God having fixed the habitation of Captain‡ SAMUEL[2] PARSONS among you, he hath desired letters of dismission for himselfe and his wife unto yourselves, and accordingly we commend them both unto you as persons qualified for your holy communion. They have been in fellowship with us for many years and are without offence. . . ."[16]

The members of the church in Durham prepared and signed a pledge which shows well the mental attitude of that day. After a preamble reciting their shortcomings it says:

"1st. We will constantly attend the dutys of God's worship in Publick,

* It seems probable that this was a hitherto unrecorded son of SAMUEL[2] and his first wife Elizabeth Cooke and named so for her father, Major Aaron Cooke. This Aaron[3] Parsons might easily have been born in or about 1682 between their children Samuel[3] and Elizabeth[3] and thus have been old enough to be a soldier in 1708. His death occurred at Springfield to which place he may have followed his grandfather JOSEPH[1] PARSONS. The next son born in 1711 at Durham by the second wife RHODA TAYLOR would, in that case, have been named in memory of this dead elder brother.

† The fact that he had such interests in both of these towns is suggestive of his occupation.

‡ The use of the title "Captain" is found only in this connection but the rank of lieutenant was definitely his in both towns where he resided, for in October, 1709, he was confirmed as such by the General Assembly of Connecticut for the train band of Durham.[19]

Private, and secret, not allowing ourselves in ye neglect of any of his Holy Ordinances, through Carelessness, Contempt or any sinful excuse.

"2nd. We will carefully watch against all Irreverence in ye worship of God, and all profanations of his glorious and fearful name by Causeless Imprecations, Rash swearing, or any other way in wch it is, or may be taken in vain.

"3rd. We will strictly observe the Christian Sabbath, viz: One whole Day in seven seasonably beginning and duly continuing ye same and Carefully watching against worldly thoughts, words and work on that day.

"4th. We will carefully endeavor to discharge the several Dutys of our several Places, and Relations, as our Superiours, Inferiors and Equals. Particularly we will Honour, Submit to, and obey those whom God hath set over us; whether in family, Church or Common-wealth. We will look well to our Household, and keep our Children and servants in subjection, Instruct them in the principles of our Holy Religion, and Endeavr to Restrain them from all Profaneness and Immorality.

"5th. Wee will as much as in us lye, live peaceably with all men.

"6th. Wee will be careful to maintain a Chaste Conversation watching agst all ye Occasions and preventives to uncleaness, especially.

"7th. Wee will mind our own Business, and strictly observe ye Rule of Righteousness, in our Commerce, and dealing one wth another, watching agst all violations of it by Deceit, Oppression, and all unjust and dishonest dealing wsoever.

"8th. Wee will Carefully take heed to speak ye truth in our Converse one wth Another, Carefully avoiding all Lying, Slandering, backbiting, Reviling and Promise breaking.

"9th. Wee will mutually watch over one another, giving and receiving Reproof as becomes Christians.

"10th. Wee will in our sevl Capacity bare due testimony or witness agst all Profaneness and Immorality, and not withold our Testimony when it shall be necessary for ye Convicting and Punishing Offender unless some Religious Tye or Conscience founded on ye word of God do require Secrecy.

"11th. Wee will watch agst the prevailing of a worldly Covetous Spirit.

"12th. Wee will watch agst all Intemperance in ye use of Lawful things, and in particular agst excessive drinking.

"13th. Wee will not allow ourselves in unnecessary frequenting Public or Private drinking houses; and,

"In order to our faithful and more acceptable performance of ye above expressed, we will set ourselves seriously and Diligently to seek all needful Grace and help from God.

Nathaniel and Sarah Chauncey
SAMUEL and RHODA PARSONS
Thomas and Ruth Lyman
Henry Crane
Richard Beech
Timothy Walton
Joseph Norton."

SAMUEL[2] PARSONS was a Representative[19] of Durham at the General Court of Connecticut in 1720 and from 1722 to 1724 and was included in a list of the proprietors of that town in the latter year.[16]

The children of SAMUEL[2] PARSONS and his first wife, Elizabeth Cooke, all born at Northampton, were[7]

I. Samuel[3], b. November 24, 1678; d. 1683.
II. Samuel[3], b. July 6, 1680.
III. probably Aaron[3], b. abt. 1682; killed July 26, 1708, at Springfield; called "son of SAMUEL of Northampton."[17]
IV. Elizabeth[3], b. April, 1684; m. December 25, 1706, Thomas Lyman.

The children of SAMUEL[2] and RHODA (TAYLOR) PARSONS, the first seven born in Northampton and the last one in Durham, Connecticut, were[7]

V. Jemima[3], b. November 24, 1691; d. February 2, 1757; m. Hezekiah Talcott (John).
VI. Rhoda[3], b. February 4, 1694.
VII. Timothy[3], b. January 23, 1695; d. January 28, 1772, doubtless at Durham; m. November 30, 1719, Mary Robinson.
VIII. HANNAH[3], b. July 18, 1699; d. October 14, 1760, at Durham [gravestone]; m. there, December 22, 1715, JOHN[4] COE[18] [see Coe, p. 218].
IX. Simeon[3], b. September 16, 1701; d. May 6, 1781; m. 1st, at Northampton, October 12, 1731,* Mehitable Clapp;[16] m. 2nd, November 30, 1772, widow Abigail Bates of Haddam.
X. Phineas[3], b. March 31, 1704; d. May 6, 1724.
XI. Ithamar[3], b. June 9, 1707; d. June 21, 1786, at Durham; m., as early as 1731–2, Sarah (——).
XII. Aaron[3], b. September 3, 1711, at Durham;[16] d. 1791; m. February 6, 1732–3, Abigail Sanford of Milford.[20]

* Great-granddaughter of ROGER[1] CLAPP [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

The child of SAMUEL[2] PARSONS and his third wife, Mary Wheeler, born at Durham, was[7, 16]

XIII. John[3], b. June 12, bap. June 28, 1713.

REFERENCES

1. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, I, 1912, 29–44; II, 1920, 3–5, 17.
2. Worcester Society of Antiquity Proceedings, XX, 46–8; New England Register, XII, 175–6; Powers-Banks Ancestry, W. H. Powers, 1921, pp. 70–2.
3. New England Register, XV, 140–1.

3a. Savage, II, 393.

4. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, I, 1912, 44–9.
5. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 43–52, 228–34.
6. Annals of Witchcraft, S. G. Drake, 1869, pp. 134–6.
7. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, I, 1912, 49–61, 76–8; II, 1920, 21–2, 25–6.
8. Parsons Genealogy, H. M. Burt & A. R. Parsons, 1898, pp. 5–18, 43–74, 92–4, 104, 107–11.
9. Bliss Family, J. H. Bliss, 1881, pp. 30–1; Historical Catalogue of the First Church in Hartford, Conn., 1885, p. 235.
10. History of Springfield, Mass., M. A. Greene, 1888, pp. 96, 202.
11. History of Springfield, Mass., H. M. Burt, 1898, I, 18, 25–8, 40, 183–4, 191, 217, 225, 227–8, 382, 414, 440; II, 80, 146, 148–9, 161, 163.
12. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 19, 25, 30–1, 34, 53, 56, 63–5, 66–8, 70, 72, 76–8, 81, 95–6, 98–9, 107, 120, 122, 133, 140–1, 143, 146, 161, 166, 176, 179, 195, 197, 211, 221, 223, 360, 466–7, 572.
13. History of Northfield, Mass., J. H. Temple & G. Sheldon, 1875, pp. 38, 51–3, 95, 103.
14. History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, 1895, I, 256.
15. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 130.
16. History of Durham, Conn., W. C. Fowler, 1866, pp. 21, 26, 41, 44–5, 187, 234, 253, 267, 341–2, 352, 356, 445.
17. History of Northampton, Mass., J. K. Trumbull, 1898, I, 378, 508.
18. Coe Genealogy, J. G. Bartlett, 1911, p. 100.
19. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 116; VI, 206, 328, 366, 440.
20. Sanford Genealogy, C. E. Sanford, 1911, I, 137.

PETTYJOHN

* [504] JAMES PETTYJOHN –aft.1660	m bef.1660	ISABEL . . . –aft.1660
undoubtedly		
+ † [252] JOHN PETTYJOHN prob.1658–62–1733	m prob.by 1685	. . . . .
† [126] WILLIAM PETTYJOHN c.1691–1749–50	m	[possibly Elizabeth Claypoole?]
‡ † ‖ [62] ABSALOM LITTLE by 1710–aft.1781, prob.1785	m prob.1740–5,bef.1749	ESTHER PETTYJOHN prob.c.1720–prob.1804–5
§ † ‖ [30] JOHN COREY prob.c.1740–bet.1775 and 1785	m 2nd bet.1765–1770	BETSEY LITTLE prob.1745–6–prob.bet.1790 and 1800
◇ ¶ ♣ ♦ [14] HENRY BARTLETT 1771–1850	m 1792	BETSEY COREY 1772–1857
▲ # ♦ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
⊙ # [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
# RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Hungar's Parish, Northampton Co., Va.
† Sussex Co., Del.
‡ Westfield and Elizabeth, N. J.
§ Cape May Co., N. J.
‖ Bedford Co., Pa., now Fayette Co. and vicinity of Old Redstone, now Brownsville.
¶ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.

♣ Merrittstown, Pa.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
\# Marietta, Ohio.
⊙ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
◇ Beverly, Mass.
▲ Saybrook, Conn.
\+ Virginia.

PETTYJOHN*

THE earliest known man of the name in America is JAMES[1] PETTYJOHN, of Hungar's Parish,† Northampton County, Virginia [on the peninsula], whom we will treat as our emigrant ancestor, giving the reasons therefor but also making the definite statement that the fact is not directly proved. The early records of that locality are very meager but scattering items have been found, among which is

"Issabel petty John daughter of JAS. & ISSABEL PETTYJOHN [baptized] May 16th, 1660."[1]

The belief that JAMES[1] is our ancestor is arrived at by indirection for (a) JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN of Sussex County, Delaware [see map on p. 645], in his will of October 26, 1733, names among others sons John[3], WILLIAM[3] and Richard[3] and [it is printed][2] "daughter Isabel Pettyjohn," but a personal examination of that document[3b] makes this read "grand daughter Isabel," daughter of deceased son Thomas[3]. This shows, in any event, the recurrence of the unusual name "Isabel" in the third generation, if not in the second, and certainly also in the fourth by mention of a daughter of Richard[3] (John[2]), as well as a repetition of "James" among both the children and the grand-

* In the later generations the name has been almost universally spelled "Pettijohn."

† Seven miles north of Eastville, at the head of Hungar's Creek, stands Hungar's Episcopal Church. On the north side of the creek and near by is the old village of Bridgetown [see map on p. 645]. The parish was created in the fall of 1635. It was divided into two in 1642 with King's Creek as a boundary, the southern portion retaining the original name. In 1691 they petitioned to be joined together again since both were small in extent and in tithables and were unable to erect suitable church buildings or to maintain separate rectors. This request was granted, with the name Hungar's Parish continuing. The present church building is said to have been erected[13, 14a] about 1690–5. The plate presented to Old Hungar's Church by Gov. Francis Nicholson [and so inscribed] is now in use in Christ's Church, Eastville, and the heavy silver communion service presented to Hungar's Church in 1741 by Maj. John Custis, of Williamsburg and Arlington [whose home was near the church], is also in use at Eastville.[14a] The Major promised to give a hogshead of tobacco or its equivalent and 30 gallons of cider to the man who built for him a pew in that church.

It is interesting to remember that the Rev. David Mossom, who served the Church of St. Michael's in Marblehead, Massachusetts, during the membership there of our WILLIAM[2] BARTLETT, subsequently removed to Virginia, to St. Peter's Church, New Kent County, where he later performed the marriage ceremony[14a] between Gen. Washington and Mrs. Custis.

children of JOHN[2]. This theory is strengthened by (b) a certain deposition made at Lewes, Delaware, on May 16, 1759, by "John Pettyjon, sen." [son of deceased JOHN[2]], of Sussex County, "aged 70 years or thereabouts," relative to a boundary line between that county and Somerset [now Worcester] County, Maryland. In this document he states:

" . . . that he was born in the Colony of Virginia but brought into Sussex County by his parents when about two years of age and that he had lived in the said County of Sussex ever since, to wit at Broadkill Hundred in the said County for upwards of Forty years of the same time. . . ."[4] This testator, whose birth occurred in Virginia about 1689, was John[3], son of JOHN[2], whose will is quoted above, and undoubtedly a grandson of JAMES[1].

JAMES[1] PETTYJOHN was an inconspicuous member of the community, of whom no records are found extant other than the baptism of his daughter Isabel[2]. It was a common practice[14a] for an immigrant to Virginia to bring at his own expense[21] a number of other persons in order to secure for himself their head rights of fifty acres each [and perhaps other perquisites]. Frequently, therefore, when a man would appear, by the ship list, to have a large number of servants, some of them might in reality be friends or acquaintances, although they might also work for him for a time. The lack of prominence of JAMES[1] PETTYJOHN makes it seem probable that he came over in some such way. In 1683 one group of fifty-five persons who came over[14a] cost only £70 outlay for the passage. In the majority of, and perhaps all, cases passengers provided their own food. Except for raising supplies for home consumption, the only crop attempted in the early days was tobacco; it was the money of the colony and was supposed to represent about one penny per pound.[21]

The management of affairs in Virginia differed greatly from that in New England. In Old Virginia there were no town-meetings. The distance between plantations coöperated with the distinction between the classes to prevent the growth of such an institution. The English parish, with its churchwardens, vestry and clerk, was reproduced in Virginia under the same name, though with some variations. The vestry exercised the chief authority in the parish and was composed of twelve men. This was representative government. At first the twelve vestrymen were elected by the people of the parish and thus resembled the selectmen of New England, but in 1662 "they obtained the power of filling vacancies in their own number," so that they became what is called a "close corporation" and the people had nothing to

PORTRAYING ANCESTRAL LOCATIONS OF PETTYJOHNS ON THE VIRGINIA COAST AND IN SUSSEX COUNTY, DEL.; OF THE LITTLES NEAR ELIZABETH, N. J., AND IN SUSSEX COUNTY, DEL.; OF COREY IN CAPE MAY, N. J., AND SUSSEX COUNTY, DEL.; AND OF COE IN CONNECTICUT AND LONG ISLAND

[See also maps on pp. 533, 647]

do with choosing them.[21] These facts operated to prevent the names of men of the middle class from appearing on the records.

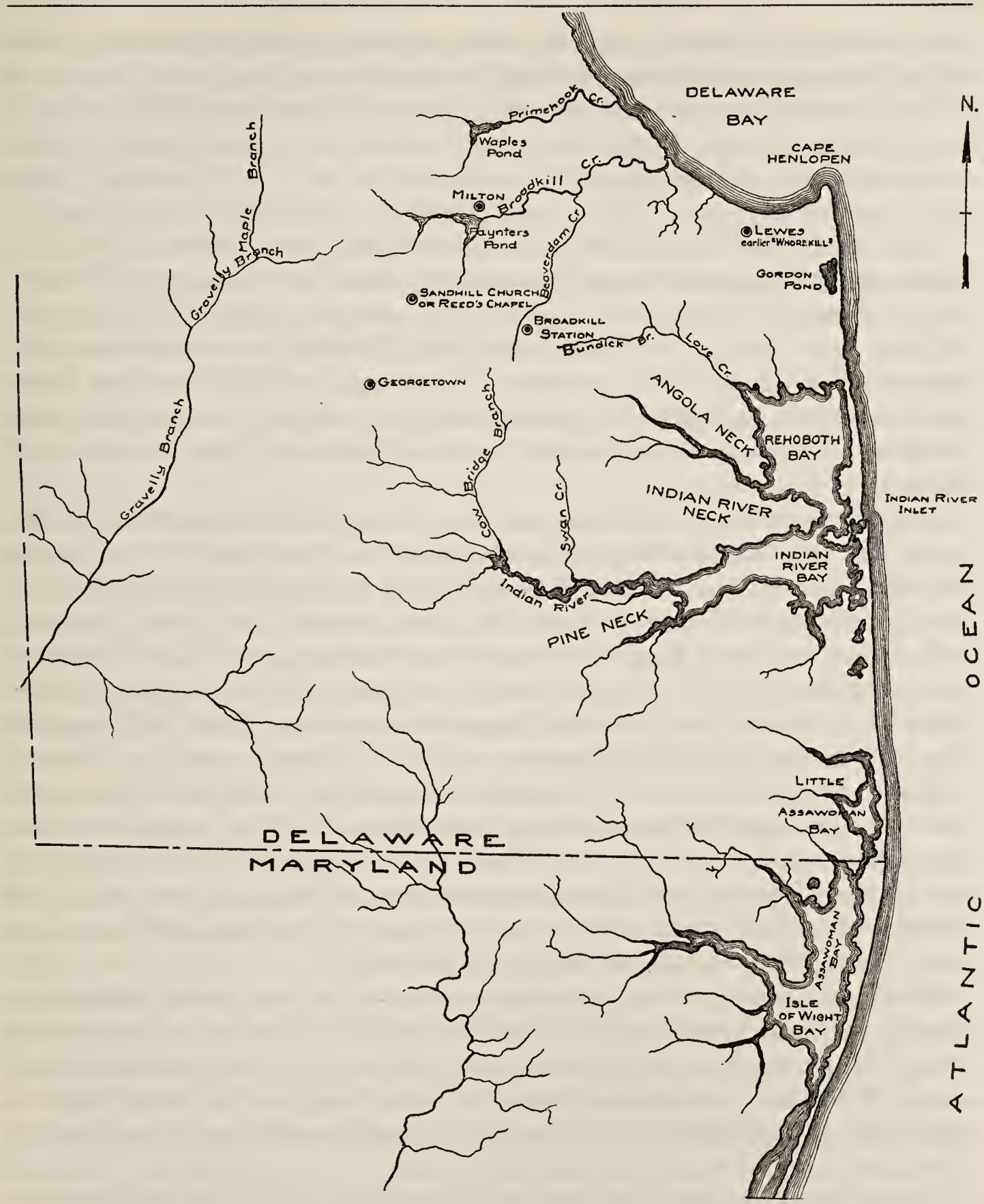
The children of JAMES[1] and "ISSABEL" (——) PETTYJOHN were[1]

I. Isabel[2], bap. May 16, 1660.
II. probably JOHN[2], see following.

JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN (*James*[1]) was born probably about 1658–62 in Hungar's Parish, Virginia, and died between October 26, 1733, and November 15, following,[2] in Sussex County, Delaware. He married in Virginia, probably about 1685, but his wife's name is thus far unknown. He evidently retained his residence in Virginia until about 1691, after the birth of at least two sons, James[3] and John[3] [mentioned above, born about 1689], and then removed with his family to Sussex County, Delaware,[4] where he spent the remainder of his life.

Until the establishment of Delaware as a state its territory was called the "Three Lower Counties" of Pennsylvania and sent representatives to the Assembly of that state. The story of its early settlement is full of interest and tragedy and would well repay study. One instance[15a] deals with the very early emigration of a group from Holland, headed by David De Vries, to a tract somewhat equivalent to the present Kent and Sussex counties of Delaware. They landed in April, 1631, and gave the name of "Hoornkill" to what was later called Lewes Creek, because De Vries' Holland home was in Hoorn. This name in time became Whorekill, and was later changed to Deale, and finally to Lewes, and it was in this general locality that the Pettijohn families lived for a number of generations. The thirty men of the De Vries expedition were charmed with the beauty of the place and named it "Zwaanendael" or "Valley of Swans" because of the great numbers of those beautiful birds found there. They purchased land from the Indians and built a cabin, surrounded by a palisade, near the landing-place. There occurred shortly thereafter an unintentional misdeed by an Indian chief, followed by a complete misunderstanding on the part of the colonists of an attempted compensation on his part for his act, and the situation soon became so strained that certain members of the tribe killed the entire group of whites, as they later told friends who came to reinforce the Hollanders.[15a]

This tragedy in itself had no immediate significance for the Pettyjohn family, but it later had an important bearing on their future, for this actual occupancy of Delaware soil by the Dutch was vital in the subsequent history



DETAIL OF SUSSEX COUNTY, DELAWARE, ILLUSTRATING LITTLE AND PETTYJOHN

[See also map on p. 645]

of the state, as it determined that the royal patent, given the following year to Lord Baltimore for lands inhabited by savages, could not cover the site of this prior settlement; consequently its inclusion in the state of Maryland was eventually prevented, though nearly one hundred thirty years passed before the state boundaries were finally agreed upon in 1760, and it was eight years later that the consequent Mason and Dixon line was entirely completed.

The reason[26] here, as in New Jersey [see White, p. 809], for the conflicting claims was the frequent changes in ownership, from the Indians to the Dutch, to the Swedes, to the Dutch again, to the Duke of York, and finally to William Penn, with a continuous overlying claim by Lord Baltimore, proprietor of Maryland. There is evidence that, even as the White and Little families suffered in New Jersey, so also, though perhaps in lesser degree, were the Pettyjohns harassed and imposed upon in Delaware by Baltimore and his agents.

As early as July 7, 1665, land grants were being made along the Delaware coast, and on that date Alexander Molestine* received land[15a] "lying upon Whorekill neare unto the mouth of the kill." By about 1690 a number of families, estimated at from six to ten, including that of JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN [see p. 646], removed from Virginia (mostly from Northampton County) to what is now Sussex County, Delaware, where they received land south of Indian River and between that river and Assawoman [see map on p. 647] by grant from the Pennsylvania Proprietors, to whom they agreed to pay quit-rents.

Almost from the first, Lord Baltimore's hirelings claimed this territory for him and demanded that quit-rents or taxes be paid to him on pain of arrest, heavy fines, ejection, confiscation of lands or distraint of cattle. For long the settlers defied them, but these penalties were all exacted until finally in despair "the Inhabitants, residing on the South-side of Indian River aforesaid, submitted to the Government of Maryland."[26]

Before this acquiescence, however, and soon after the sheriff of Somerset County, Maryland, had come with about half-a-dozen men and had taken Peter Waples to their jail by force, Col. Whittington, then sheriff of that county,[27] "came to one JOHN PETIJOHNS,† who lived on the South Bank of Indian River, and demanded Taxes of him, which he refusing to pay, the said

*This man's descendants doubtless intermarried with the Pettyjohns, for one Molleston Pettyjohn is later found with others of that family and with the Littles in West Virginia and southwestern Pennsylvania.

†The word "Petijohns" is spelled[27] "Petijolius" in the published record, an error easily explained by a careless longhand rendition.

Whittington distrained some of his Cattle for them, which Things, and some others of the like Nature, so frightened the People to the Southward of Indian River, (which were about 8 Families) that they were obliged to submit to the Government of Maryland, and that most of the Lands which were held by them, under Grants from the Proprietors of Pennsylvania, were, after taken up under the Government of Maryland . . . whereupon those People . . . refused to pay any Quit Rents to the Proprietors of Pennsylvania. . . ."

JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN was executor in 1721 of the estate of his son Thomas[3], whose will[3b] left all his property [except a bay mare to his brother Richard[3]] to his wife and an only child, Isabel[4] Pettyjohn.

Among the early warrants of land granted in Broadkill Hundred were those issued in 1715 to the Pettyjohn family, including one for 540 acres to JOHN[2], which was part of the 1200-acre "Bundick Tract."[7] This Pettyjohn family was early and long associated with the Church of St. John the Baptist which "stood about the center of the county in the forest of Sussex," being in Broadkill Hundred "at the fording place of Long Bridge Branch." This was fourteen miles directly west of Lewes, was under the care of St. Peter's Church of that place, and was served by the Reverend William Becket, who preached at these two churches and two others, which were so scattered that he could hold service only about once a month in each. The roads were good and people habitually came seven or eight and some even ten or twelve miles to worship. The people of St. John's raised, on March 27, 1728, a frame of white oak, about thirty by forty feet, for a church home, which was finished with cypress and built gradually by voluntary contributions of work. This building was used for religious purposes until 1800 when it became a schoolhouse. The congregation became defunct, was later revived and finally erected a new building about 1877 in Milton near the location of the old structure and succeeded to the name held by the earlier organization.[5, 6]

The land holdings of JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN were considerable for, besides those already mentioned, the few records which have come down to us show him to have bought 450 acres near Long Love Cove on August 3, 1715, and to have deeded for £20, 340 acres on "Love Long Branch" to his son, John[3], on August 4, 1715. He also deeded 100 acres near the head of Long Bridge Branch to his son Richard[3] in May, 1724, bought 100 acres on the south side of Bright Beaver Dam in that year, made a gift of 100 acres at the head of Long Bridge Branch to his granddaughter Isabel[4] [daughter of Thomas[3], deceased] "for natural affection and fatherly love" on May 7, 1724, and

gave a similar amount at the same place to his son Richard[3] for the same consideration at the same time.[3r]

In his will dated October 26, 1733, and proved November 15, following,[3b] JOHN[2] called himself "yeoman" and spoke of being "sick in body." Presumably his wife died previously for she was not mentioned in that document. He left one shilling each to three grandchildren, viz.: Rachel Reed, George Dodd and Isabel[4] Pettyjohn [each of whom had at least one parent deceased], and divided the residue of his estate equally among his sons James[3], John[3], WILLIAM[3] and Richard[3], of whom the last two mentioned were made executors.[3b]

The children of JOHN[2] PETTYJOHN and (——), his wife, were

I. James[3],* b. doubtless in Virginia, prob. about 1687; d. between November 11, 1748, date of will, and January 4, 1752, when it was probated;[3d] m. Hannah (——), who survived him and was executor of his estate. His children were[3d] (1) *James[4], d. between May 3, 1794, and December 3, 1801; m.[3e] Esther (——); (2*†) Samuel[4], m. before May, 1759, Anne, probably daughter or widow of John Wright;[3x] (3)† Thomas[4]; (4) Jacob[4]; (5) Abraham[4], d. before February 2, 1761; m. before November 5, 1754, Elizabeth, granddaughter and heir of John Marsh, deceased;[3y] (6) Naomi[4]; (7) Major[4] (Marjorie?), daughter; (8) Lydia[4]; (9) Sarah[4], m. before 1748, (——) Nixon; (10) Elizabeth[4], m. before 1748, (——) Abel; (11) Abigail[4], m. before 1748, (——) Bignall.

II. John[3], b. about 1689 in Virginia;[4] d. after[4] May 16, 1759; m. in Sussex County, Delaware, May 15, 1712, Sarah Dod,[3z] prob. daughter of George and Sarah. He likely had John[4]‡ and[3u] Thomas[4], who were certainly brothers, and either this John[4] or his cousin John[4] (Richard[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]) must have been the John senior who went to Pennsylvania and West Virginia.

III. WILLIAM[3], see following.

* James[3] Pettyjohn (JOHN[2]) gave to his two sons, James[4] and Samuel[4], in his will of 1748, "the land I live on, equally"[3d] and James[4], apparently the elder, would likely have received the house itself. Transfers are extant showing that James[4] on January 10, 1794, deeded to his son Ebenezer[5] land which had been taken up by James[3], their father and grandfather respectively, on September 15, 1718.[3e] This all lends color to the probability that it was Ebenezer[4] to whom reference was made as follows:

"In the old Ebenezer Pettyjohn house, east from Georgetown, which was taken down in 1878, were found some rare and curious coins bearing date from 1698 to 1723, the latter being probably the time when the building was erected, as the money was securely fastened in a mortise in the frame of the building."[7] If this surmise be true, this house was undoubtedly built by James[3] Pettyjohn in the time and neighborhood and doubtless with the help of our WILLIAM[3], his brother.

† In July, 1764, a business combination was formed between Benjamin Mifflin, of Philadelphia, and John Jones to purchase marsh lands in Sussex County, Delaware, and to create a drainage system thereon. The following November they bought[7] of Samuel Pettyjohn [doubtless Samuel[4], James[3], JOHN[2]] "Ye Great Savannah" which had been warranted to him in 1760, and another large tract which lay on both sides of the "Great Drain," and purchased also 300 acres adjoining it from Thomas Pettyjohn, who was doubtless Thomas[4], brother of this Samuel[4]. The latter executed a deed May 6, 1759, which was witnessed by ABSALOM[3] LITTLE.[3x]

‡ See note under children of WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN, page 653.

iv. Richard[3], b. doubtless in Delaware, perhaps 1693, d. 1750–1; m. Hannah (——) and had[3c] (1) John[4], living November 6, 1764[3u] [either this man or his cousin John[4] above must have gone to the west]; (2) Margaret[4]; (3) Isabel[4]; (4) Sarah[4], wife of David Firman; (5) Elizabeth[4]; (6) Ann[4].

v. Thomas[3], b. doubtless in Delaware; d. between April 9, 1721, date of will, and July 21, following. Left[3a] wife [unnamed] and daughter Isabel[4], who was named in the will of her grandfather JOHN[2].

vi. daughter, d. prob. before father; m. (——) Reed, and had daughter Rachel,[3b] named in grandfather's will.

vii. daughter, d. prob. before father; m. (——) Dodd, and had son George,[3b] named in grandfather's will.

WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN (*John*[2], *James*[1]), born probably about 1691 either in Virginia or in Sussex County, Delaware, died at the latter place between[3f] January 15, 1749, the date of his will, and February 2, following, when it was probated. There is a tradition in the family that he married into the Claypoole family, which in turn was related to Oliver Cromwell through the marriage of the latter's favorite daughter Elizabeth to John Claypoole of England, brother of James[1] and Norton[1] Claypoole, who were emigrants to America. The story is that it was because of this relationship that the name "Betty" or "Betsey" recurs so frequently among the descendants. Norton[1] Claypoole settled in Sussex County, Delaware, as a neighbor to the Pettyjohn family and by his second wife, Rachel, had three children, including Elizabeth[2] born[9] May 16, 1687, who would have been the right age to marry WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN but evidence that she did so has not been obtained. Perhaps some reader can give competent testimony either proving or disproving this tale.

Various land transfers show that WILLIAM[3] and his brothers, as well as their father before them, dealt heavily in land. WILLIAM[3] and his brother James[3] bought on August 5, 1712, 400 acres "on the south side of Long Love Branch" "at the head of Angola Neck" and the latter deeded on August 5, 1718, his share of this land to the former.[3v] These brothers held in common another tract of 150 acres which their father had given them and James[3], in this case also, made over his portion to WILLIAM[3] who sold the tract on November 9, 1721, to Robert Butcher for £50.[3v]

WILLIAM[3] bought, on February 1, 1717–8, 100 acres from Richard Paynter which he sold on August 7, 1735, to Robert and John Homes for £70.[3v] He bought 500 acres "in Sussex Co.," in May, 1724, of which he sold one half in August, 1748, for £85.[3s] He and his brother Richard[3], as executors of the estate of their father, JOHN[2], sold to Hugh Virdin 100 acres on February 1, 1745, for £40.[3v]

The large land holdings of WILLIAM[3] are further evidenced by a sale made by his son William[4] on May 7, 1755, for £35, of a 110-acre portion of a tract in Broadkill forest known as "Billeys Savannah,"* which had been willed to him by his father;[3w] by another sale on May 14, 1756, for £35, of a 60-acre tract received from his father,[3w] and still another on May 5, 1761, of land in Broadkill Hundred which was part of 400 acres granted[3w] to his father, WILLIAM[3]. A surprising comparison between the values of land and stock at this early period is seen in the fact that John[3], in August, 1718, traded 340 acres of land to George Dodd for two cows and calves.[3t]

Both WILLIAM[3] and his brother James[3] were overseers of highways in 1735, the former being assigned the road "from Bracey's Branch to the 2 mile post on Souther's run."[7]

WILLIAM[3], in his will dated January 15, 1749, called himself "yeoman," and "sick and weak," gave to his son William[4] "the plantation I live on called 'Whatsons' containing 200 acres, a tract called 'Gum's Land' of 145 acres, another in Broadkill Hundred of 300 acres, as well as his negro 'Paris'". He gave to daughters Sarah[4] and †Levinah[4] [evidently unmarried] each a cow, a mare and thirty pounds of feathers. To ABSALOM[3] LITTLE and ESTHER his wife, one shilling; to the testator's three grandchildren, Mary, Betty and William Light, children of daughter Agatha Light, eighteen months' schooling, with board, which was to be furnished by his son William[4]; to Agatha Light, one shilling; to daughter Mary Donavan "the use of my negro 'Nan' until the said negro shall have three children, which said three children when born shall be given to my three grandchildren, William Pettyjohn, BETTY and Esther" [the last two undoubtedly the daughters of ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE]; residue to son William[4] who was made executor.[3f] Presumably his wife's death preceded his, since his will fails to mention her.

*A treeless plain.

†Levinah (Pettyjohn) Little who was left a widow is undoubtedly the "Vina" and "Levinia" Little who was taxed in Springhill Township, Fayette County, Pennsylvania, in 1785, and was the head of a family[8] there in 1790. The accumulated evidence that her sister ESTHER[4] and family, her brother William[4] Pettyjohn and family, with various cousins, and a goodly number of the Littles and Coreys, are found near together in Pennsylvania and West Virginia, shows a heavy migration of friends and relatives. [See p. 655.]

Other students of the Pettyjohn and intermarrying families may be interested in the fact that the Stockley or Stokely family were resident in both Virginia and Delaware in the vicinities where the Pettyjohns lived, that in the latter state the Little and Stockley families intermarried; and that even in southwestern Pennsylvania and northern West Virginia there was living near our Littles and Pettyjohns a man named Stockley Little, sometimes called P. Stockley Little, who very likely had common origin with them and even may have borne the name Pettyjohn, which would explain the initial "P." He may have been the son of Temperance Stockley, daughter of Benjamin Stockley, of Sussex County, Delaware, who was mentioned in her father's will, dated November 30, 1762, as "my well beloved daughter, Temperance Little."[14]

The children* of WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN and his wife [perhaps Elizabeth Claypoole?], all born in Sussex County, but in unknown order, were

I. William[4],* only [living] son and executor of his father's will. He deeded in 1755, 1756 and 1761, land which came to him from his father.[3w] He m. and had[3f] before 1749 a son William[5] who was named in the will of WILLIAM[3].

II. ESTHER[4], b. prob. about 1720; d. doubtless after 1790 in German or Luzerne Township, Fayette County, Pennsylvania [see maps on pp. 263, 539], since one of the name was[8] taxed there in 1786 and was the head of a family in 1790. She m.,[3f] doubtless in Sussex County, Delaware, before January 15, 1749, and prob. as early as 1740–5,

* The descendants in West Virginia of WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN displayed quite uniformly, as the many years passed, two strongly-marked traits, viz.: very firm religious principles and equally firm intolerance of slavery. These men stood, of course, in the relation of brother, cousin and nephews of varying degrees, to our ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE, and the tendency they developed would doubtless have shown similarly in her own character and teachings. Their abolitionist principles, as a family group, were so strong that published histories of the localities in which these men lived comment upon it. The religious phase is stressed by the recorded affiliation of the adults with established churches shortly after their removal to Ohio, the baptism of their various children, and especially by the published autobiography[24] of Jonas[5] Pettyjohn and the story of his service as a missionary among the Indians of Minnesota. Incidentally he tells[24] a vivid tale of the escape of himself and family from the Sioux massacre in 1862. Study covering a period of years, fortified by the purchase of abstracts of hundreds of documents, has shown conclusively that it must have been this William[4] and his son William[5] who removed to the west with their sister and aunt, respectively, our ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE and her family; who acquired large tracts of land in southwestern Pennsylvania and West Virginia, adjacent to that acquired by members of the Little family; who were the progenitors of a group of Pettyjohn [later spelled Pettijohn] families resident in the territory now called Monongalia, Preston, Harrison, Taylor, Marion and Barbour counties of West Virginia [see map on p. 535]; and who, in their own day and in records now extant, were identified as "William Senior" and "William Junior." There were also in that locality at that early date "John Senior" and "John Junior," of whom tradition, which has come down to living descendants,[22] says that "John Senior" was a cousin of some degree to William[4] Senior and that John Junior was son to the former man. The compiler has not identified this John Senior, who is wholly collateral to our interests, but has found two men, both first cousins of William[4] above, either one of whom could have been the John Senior of Pennsylvania and West Virginia. These two are [x] John[4], only son of Richard[3] (JOHN[2], JAMES[1]) and Hannah, who was named in the will[23] of Richard[3], dated March 14, 1751, and who on November 6, 1764, as the "son of Hannah," deeded land[23] which had been granted to his father; and [y] John[4], who was in all probability son of John[3] and Sarah (Dod) Pettyjohn [married May 15, 1712, in Sussex County, Delaware].[23] This last named John[4] was in 1765, in Delaware, called "John Junior," when he deeded land which he had obtained by barter from his brother Thomas[4]. The reasons for insertion here of these details are that when a John[4] Junior of Delaware went west he would automatically become "Senior" in the new locality and, in turn, would call his son John[5] "Junior" [of West Virginia]; and that this John[5] married[22] his second cousin, Deborah[4] Little, a daughter of our ABSALOM[3] and ESTHER (PETTYJOHN) LITTLE [see Little, p. 559].

The names of the children of John[5] and Deborah (Little) Pettyjohn were[22, 24]

(1). James[6], who d. about 1825, aged about 64; m., November 24, 1795, Frances Wisbey.

(2). Richard[6], who m. March 12, 1802, Mary[6] Pettyjohn (William[5], William[4], WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]), his third cousin on the Pettyjohn side and his second cousin on the Little side.

(3). Thomas[6], b. December 14, 1780; d. August 12, 1824; m. August 30, 1802, Ruth[6] Pettyjohn [sister of Mary[6] above and of the same relation to her husband as was Mary[6] to Richard[6]].

(4). John[6], who d. 1851; m. a widow with one son, David, who took the name "Pettijohn" and later m. Hannah[7], youngest daughter of Thomas[6] and Ruth (Pettyjohn) Pettyjohn above.

(5). Hester[6].

(6). Comfort[6].

(7). Edward[6].

These two families, Pettyjohn and Little, present more frequent intermarriages and a more complicated variety of relationship than is often found even in the early days. A John[4 or 5] Pettyjohn witnessed the deed[15] dated March 1, 1776, whereby ABSALOM[3] LITTLE and his wife, ESTHER, transferred their home property near Heistersburg, Pennsylvania [see maps on pp. 263, 539], to their son, Absalom[4] Little. Other miscellaneous items pertaining to the name John Pettyjohn include the accrediting of Big Whitely District [Pennsylvania] in 1782

ABSALOM[3] LITTLE, who was resident there until after[10a] August 2, 1765, but had removed before September, 1772, to what was then Bedford County,[10b] now Fayette County, Pennsylvania [see Little, p. 548].

III. Agatha[4], m. (——) Light, and had[3f] Mary, Betty and William before 1749.

IV. Mary[4], m. before 1749, (——) Donavan.[3f]

---

with a John, as private in the Revolution; as paying taxes[19, 20] in Springhill township, now Fayette County, Pennsylvania, in 1773 [then evidently married]; as paying taxes in 1783 on a fourteen-acre clearing, one horse and two cows; and as paying taxes again in 1785 and 1786. One of the name was authorized in 1785 and 1792 to run a ferry across Tygart's Valley River from his own land on one side to his land on the other bank.[20] John[5] and Deborah (Little) Pettyjohn had five sons and two daughters, of whom the sons all married and removed to Ohio about 1805–10, settling in Adams, Brown and Highland counties. Their father and mother went with them.[22, 24, 25]

To revert to William[4] "Senior," brother of our ESTHER[4], no direct documentary evidence has been obtained showing his removal to the west, but by exhaustive study, by exclusion and by a preponderance of circumstantial evidence, the compiler feels justified in stating that he did so, and without further argument will discuss him from that basis of belief. He married,[3f] before 1749, Ruth (——), who survived him. His father, WILLIAM[3], in his will[3f] of January 15, 1749, made bequests to his son William[4] and [a] a grandson William[5], who may have died soon, for family records gathered from various sources[22, 24] supply the later birth-date of November 3, 1751, for [b] William[5], who died April 27, 1796 [before his father], and who married, about 1780, Constance[4] Little (Abraham[3], ANTHONY[2], JOHN[1]); Constance married, secondly,[24, 25] on July 28, 1800, Daniel Jobes and removed to Ohio, as did most of her children. The children of William[5] and Constance (Little) Pettyjohn were[20, 22, 24, 25]

(1). Amos[6], m., October 10, 1801, Susanna Tucker.

(2). Mary[6], m., March 12, 1802, Richard[6] Pettyjohn (John[5], John[4]) [vide supra].

(3). Ruth[6], b. June 24, 1784, Monongalia County, W. Va.; d. April 11, 1848, Schuyler County, Ill.; m., August 30, 1802, Thomas[6] Pettyjohn (John[5], John[4]) [vide supra].

(4). John[6].

(5). William[6].

(6). Abraham[6] Pettyjohn, b. February 11, 1788; d. October 20, 1852; m., May 2, 1811, Jane Sloan.

(7). Isaac[6], who served in the War of 1812 as a substitute for John Moore and received a wound from which he died.

The other children of William[4], as shown by his will, were [c] John[5], died between November, 1814, and April 25, 1815, in Adams County, Ohio, leaving his wife, Sarah, surviving him; [d] a daughter (——) who married [probably William] Poor and had at least a son, John Poor; she died probably before August, 1799; and [e] Mary[5], born about 1757-8; died March 20, 1830, in her 73rd year; married first (——) Powers, and married secondly December 29, 1789, Maj. William Haymond. This William[4] Pettyjohn made his will on[11] August 16, 1799, and it was probated in October of that year. It was witnessed by a Thomas Little, and made a bequest to a David Little, both of whom were probably relatives. He left a widow, Ruth [vide supra] who has been reported[25] as having married secondly on March 22, 1803 in Monongalia County, a James Little, but the lately published marriage bonds of that county, under date of March 21, 1803, record the impending marriage of James Little to Ruth Pettyjohn who is there called "widow of John W. Pettyjohn."[28]

Miscellaneous items pertaining to the name "William Pettyjohn" include [a] the survey, on July 1, 1772, of a sixty-five-acre land grant[17] then in Bedford County, Pennsylvania; (b) the payment of £75 for three hundred acres of land on the west side of the Monongahela River, south of and adjoining Big Whitely Creek [see map on p. 537]. ABSALOM[3] LITTLE or his son of the same name witnessed this deed. William Pettyjohn still lived on this tract in April, 1782, when he sold a part of it, the deed[16] showing his name spelled in three different ways,—Pettyjohn, Petigone and Pedigone; [c] the purchase[18] on October 23, 1782, by a William Pettyjohn, "of Monongahela county, Virginia," for £35, from Greenberry Cheney of Prince George County, Maryland, of a tract called "Grassy Run," lying on the Cheat River just north of the present Pennsylvania-West Virginia line [see map on p. 263]. One of this name, though spelled "Pettygam," was taxed[19] in Menallen township, Fayette County, in 1783, and another of the name[20] was a member of the House of Delegates of Virginia in 1785–6. A William and an Amos Pettyjohn were privates in Captain William Haymond's Monongalia Revolutionary Company[12, 20] and various other items are found pertaining to this name.[20]

Settlements in the early days followed the water courses for ease of transportation. Ownership of land in West Virginia by various members of the Pettyjohn family is found,[25] in addition to localities named above, on or near the Monongahela River, Tygart's Valley River, Glady Creek [near the southern boundary of present Marion County], Prickett's Creek, Simpson's Creek, Laurel Run and on the head waters of the Youghiogheny River [see map on p. 535].

v. Sarah[4].

vi. Levinah[4], [see note, p. 652] b. (—); d. undoubtedly in Fayette County, Pennsylvania, and after[8] 1790; m. after[3f] January 15, 1749, and before February 29, 1752, Amos[3] Little[10c] (ANTHONY[2], JOHN[1]), who d. between the latter date and April 1 following [see Little, p. 547].

REFERENCES

1. Northampton County, Va., "Deeds & Wills" No. 7, 1657–66, folio 92; William and Mary Quarterly, 1909–10, XVIII, 179.
2. Rodney's Diary and Other Delaware Records, C. H. B. Turner, 1911, p. 54.
3. Consultation of Wills, Deeds and Vital Records in Sussex County, Del., by Rev. J. B. Turner, 1923, incorporating abstracts of: (a) Wills, Liber A, No. 1, p. 152; (b) Wills, Liber A, No. 1, p. 263; (c) Wills, Liber A, No. 1, p. 429; (d) Wills, Liber B, No. 2, p. 23; (e) Wills, Liber F, No. 6, p. 55; Deeds, Liber X, No. 22, p. 159; (f) Wills, Liber A, No. 1, p. 403; (r) Deeds, Liber A, No. 1, pp. 274, 276, 299; Deeds, Liber B, No. 2, p. 224; Deeds, Liber F, No. 6, p. 96; (s) Deeds, Liber A, No. 1, p. 275; Deeds, Liber H, No. 8, p. 190; (t) Deeds, Liber F, No. 6, p. 197; Deeds, Liber H, No. 8, pp. 189, 235; (u) Deeds, Liber K, No. 10, p. 140; (v) Deeds, Liber A, No. 1, pp. 233, 290; Deeds, Liber F, No. 6, p. 4; Deeds, Liber G, No. 7, p. 132; Deeds, Liber H, No. 8, p. 105; (w) Deeds, Liber K, No. 10, p. 152; (x) Deeds, Liber I, No. 9, pp. 233, 348; (y) Deeds, Liber I, No. 9, p. 303; Deeds, Liber J, No. 9, p. 63; (z) Deeds, Liber D, No. 4, p. 101.
4. Maryland Archives, XXXI, pp. 366–7.
5. History of Delaware, H. C. Conrad, 1908, II, 714–5, 729.
6. Some Records of Sussex County, Del., C. H. B. Turner, 1909, pp. 193, 202, 225–6.
7. History of Delaware, J. F. Scharf, 1888, II, 1204, 1207, 1237–40, 1268.
8. Pennsylvania Census for 1790, pp. 107–9; Pennsylvania Archives, Series 3, XXII, 566, 625.
9. Some Records of Sussex County, Del., C. H. B. Turner, 1909, pp. 100, 111, 115, 122–3, 133, 137, 147.
10. (a) Sussex County, Del., Deeds, K, 10, p. 179; (b) Ibid., L, 11, p. 284; (c) Ibid., Wills, B, 2, p. 27.
11. Monongalia County, W. Va., Will Book, No. 1, 313.
12. Virginia Militia in the Revolution, p. 216.
13. Colonial Churches in the Original Colony of Virginia, Southern Churchman Co., 1908, pp. 98–111; Virginia Magazine, XIII, pp. 315–7.
14. Sussex County, Del., Wills, Liber B, 2, 299.

14a. Old Churches of Virginia, Bishop Meade, 1889, I, 252–8, 261–4; Eastern Shore of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century, J. C. Wise, 1911, pp. 84, 263–4, 276–8, 356–9; History of the Huguenot Emigration to America, C. W. Baird, 1885, II, 175–6; History of Marblehead, Mass., S. Roads, 1880, p. 368.

15. Westmoreland County, Pa., Deeds, Book A, pt. 2, p. 166.

15a. History of Lewes, Del., P. Pusey, 1903, pp. 10–20.

16. Washington County, Pa., Deeds, I, Book A., pp. 48–50.
17. Fayette County, Pa., Index to Plans; Ibid., Original Warrant, File W, 352; Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, XXV, 595.
18. Westmoreland County, Pa., Deeds, Book A, pt. 1, p. 294.
19. Original Tax Lists in Greensburg, Pa.
20. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 3, I, 649; XXII, 47, 426, 451, 567, 631; Ser. 6, II, 19, 271; Census of 1790 for Virginia, p. 35, 110; Monongalia County, W. Va., Deeds; History of Monongalia County, W. Va., S. T. Wiley, 1883, pp. 82-3, 352; History of Preston County, W. Va., O. F. Morton, 1914, I, 57, 536–8; Genealogical and Personal History of the Upper Monongahela Valley, B. L. Butcher, 1912, II, 528; III, 1256; History of Harrison County, W. Va., H. Haymond, 1910, pp. 26, 39, 45, 155–6; History of Brown County, O., W. H. Beers, 1883, pp. 666, 676; pt. 5, p. 81; Hening's Statutes at Large of Virginia, XII, 83; XIV, 157; Abstracts from the Records of Augusta County, Va., 1912, II, 236; III, 157; Virginia State Library Report, VIII, 349; XIV, 417; Annals of Carnegie Museum, 1902, I, 532; National Genealogical Society Quarterly, XIII, 62, 65–7; XIV, 26–7; Virginia General Assembly Register, p. 330; Statutes at Large of Virginia, XII, 83; XIV, 157.
21. Old Virginia and her Neighbors, John Fiske, 1899, II, 35; Sterling Genealogy, A. M. Sterling, 1909, I, 228–40.
22. Family Records furnished by various descendants, including: Lyle Pettijohn, Blue Earth, Minn., who also lent the book listed as reference No. 24; Mrs. Cleatus Le Duc; William Grant Pettijohn; Mrs. Laura (Pettijohn) McMurtry; Lewis J. Pettijohn; Charles C. Pettijohn; Simeon A. Pettijohn; Orlando P. Pettijohn.

23. Sussex County, Del., Deeds, K, 10–140, 152; D, 4–101; Ibid., Wills, A, 1–429.
24. Autobiography, Family History and Various Reminiscences of the Life of Jonas Pettijohn, written by himself and published in Clay Center, Kans., by the Dispatch Printing House, 1890, pp. 1–8, 100–4. Jonas[5] Pettijohn, born in 1813, was the son of Thomas[4] and Ruth (Pettijohn) Pettijohn and therefore was descended from William[4] Pettijohn (WILLIAM[3], JOHN[2], JAMES[1]) and from John Pettijohn, both called "Senior," of West Virginia.
25. Consultation in 1927 of local records at Morgantown, W. Va., by Mrs. G. R. Vosburgh, incorporating abstracts and copies of: Index of Marriages, A, 1, 5, 6, 8; Will Book I, 313; Circuit Court Order Book I, 108; County Court Order Book II, 8; District Court Book I, 460; Deed Book A, 155, 157, 159–60; B, 289; D, 321–2, 380, 388; II, 332; III, 252, 330, 422, 452; V, 305, 556–7, 562; VI, 249; VII, 418.
26. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 2, XVI, 574–5, 663–675; History of Delaware, J. T. Scharf, 1888, I, 108–124; Maryland Archives, XXXI, 362–90.
27. Pennsylvania Archives, Ser. 2, XVI, 669, 674.
28. D. A. R. Magazine, LXII, 311.

PINNEY

* † [328] Humphrey Pinney –1683	m c.1632–4	Mary Hull 1618–1684
† [164] Nathaniel Pinney 1640–1676	m 1670	Sarah Griswold [widow Phelps] 1635–1715
† ‡ [82] Nathaniel Pinney 1671–1764	m 1693	Martha Thrall 1673–aft.1710
† ‡ [40] Samuel Beaman 1704–aft.1753	m 1731	Sarah Pinney 1707–aft.1783
‡ § [20] Thomas Beman 1734–1804	m 1753	Lydia Roberts 1735–1809
§ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
§ ‖ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
‖ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Dorchester, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Simsbury, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

PINNEY

HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY,* doubtless born at Broadway,† co. Somerset, England, was the son of JOHN PINNEY,‡ "the elder," and his wife JOHANNA of that place. These parents had at least seven sons and four daughters and, in his father's will,[1] HUMPHREY[1] was mentioned last among his brothers, being, presumably, the youngest of them. This theory is borne out by the fact that at least eight of his brothers and sisters had families at the time these quoted documents were executed, but he himself was not then married.

Good authority[1a, 3] states that he embarked for New England on the "Mary and John" which sailed from Plymouth, England, on March 20, 1629–30, and arrived at Nantasket, May 30, following[4] [see Grant, p. 371]. However, he evidently returned temporarily to England since he was executor there of his uncle Edmond Pinney's will in February, 1632; presumably he was in New England again before August, 1633, for on that day he received the grant of a four acre lot at Dorchester "In the necke southward of the plantation."[6]

At the New Hospital in Plymouth, England, the organization [soon to become the First Church of Dorchester in Massachusetts Bay Colony] had

* This family name was spelled variously.

† Ancient letters and documents are quoted[2] to show that on February 20, 1658, HUMPHREY[1] was lessor of lands in England to Roger Dunster of Broadway, co. Somerset. This property was probably a part of what came to him from his uncle Edmond's estate. A suggestion[2] in the report of these letters that HUMPHREY[1] himself was in 1658 resident in England is doubtless an error unless it refers to a temporary change of residence.

‡ The will[1] of JOHN PYNNEY of Broadway, dated April 5, 1632, and proved December 28, 1632, requested that he "be buried in the churchyard of Broadway near the cross where my father, mother and brother lie" [doubtless brother Edmond, q. v.]. It gave £20 to his wife, 20 shillings apiece to his sons, including HUMPHREY[1], and made bequests to two sisters, three daughters and to many nieces, nephews and grandchildren.

Previously, the will[1] of JOHN PYNNEY's brother, Edmond Pynney, of the same place, dated December 7, 1631, and proved by the testator's nephew, HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY, on February 7, 1631–2, requested that the testator be buried near his own father. Edmond left a considerable estate and the context of his will shows conclusively that he left neither wife nor children and that he made his nephew HUMPHREY[1] his executor and chief beneficiary. In spite of the evident fact that Edmond left no immediate family, by clerical error the original record of administration calls HUMPHREY[1] his "son" and that error is repeated in the published Year Book of Probates,[1] thus confusing the actual relationships as shown by careful consultation of the original documents.

been formed when the group of people, anticipating emigration, met with its previously chosen magistrates, "resolved to live together," chose its ministers and finally embarked[4] in the ship "Mary and John."

> "The first inhabitants of Dorchester came chiefly from ye S^d Countys of Devon, Dorset & Somerset, and I think from some other places. They were a very Godly & Religious people; which but few in those days were. Their Ministers or Pastors were ye S^d Revd. John Maverick and ye Revd. Mr. John Warham; others of Note were . . . Mr. HULL [GEORGE[1]] . . . Mr. PINNEY [HUMPHREY[1]]. . . . And among them came Capt. ROGER CLAP a very worthy Religious Gentleman who was then a young man."[3] They promptly "took up every one his spot to set down upon."[3]

On May 14, 1634, HUMPHREY[1] applied for freemanship[5] in Massachusetts Bay Colony [see Appendix, p. 855]; on January 4, following, he was granted twenty acres of land between Dorchester and Roxbury[6] and, at an unknown date, he received also ten acres of meadow beyond the Neponset River.[7] Few details are found relative to his life in Dorchester. One incident, however, concerned his interest in the ownership or operation of a vessel called "Thunder." On June 2, 1635, "a very important suit"[9] between HUMPHREY[1], John Cogan, et al,[8] was referred to arbitrators. The court order gave these referees power to "end all differences & accompts betwixte the said ptyes, concerning the shipp Thunder . . . & in the meane tyme all execucons concerneing the shipp Thunder to be respeted."[8]

HUMPHREY[1] early removed from Dorchester, Massachusetts, and became an original settler of Windsor, Connecticut,[10] other statements to the contrary, notwithstanding. He is listed among the inhabitants of Windsor as fourth of "those who came with Mr. Warham & were in full communion with the church"[11] and, on December 21, 1677, he was recorded as "one yet living" of that same group.[10] Since there is no record of his having joined the church at Dorchester [though he possessed membership as just shown] it is fair to suppose that he was one who helped to form the organization prior to emigration and who removed with the founders to this country.

His early residence at Windsor [see map on p. 569] was on the west side of the main street about one mile north of the present Congregational Church[2, 13] and his old well was still in existence[12] in 1859. He early owned land on the east side of the Connecticut River where the settlers had probably intended to live but, with them, he selected for residence the high lands

on the west side of the stream to avoid the menace of floods.[14] He had a house lot seventeen rods wide to which he added twelve rods more with the house thereon by purchase[15] from JOSIAH[2] HULL. His home property is described as being above or north of "Ancient" [Ensign][10] Thomas Stoughton's "Old Stone Fort" and between the homes of GEORGE[1] HULL and JOSIAH[2] HULL, his father-in-law and brother-in-law, respectively. In about 1675 he, with THOMAS[1] FORD [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I], GEORGE[1] HULL and one other, purchased from the Indians for the inhabitants of Windsor a very large tract of land running from the Connecticut River westward.[16]

HUMPHREY[1] paid six shillings on January 18, 1659–60, for space in the "long seats" in the meeting house for himself and his wife,[18] was entered on the church account for four shillings, probably for current expenses, and was mentioned as giving two shillings in 1676 to the voluntary contribution for the poor in other colonies.[2, 19]

He served on trial juries[20] in June, 1645, October, 1646 and June, 1647, as well as on later occasions; he was on a coroner's jury held at Hartford on December, 1651, which was called the "Grand Inquest" into the accidental shooting[21] of Henry Stiles. He was shown to have been one of the freemen of Connecticut Colony who lived within the limits of Windsor[22] on October 7, 1669, and was listed as having a horse and two oxen[17] in 1675. He, together with other proprietors and inhabitants of the east side of the river, signed a petition to the General Assembly on May 13, 1680, requesting that they be made a separate township,[23] for many of them had by that date built homes on that side of the stream.

HUMPHREY[1] PINNEY married[1a, 12, 25, 25a] at Dorchester, about 1632–4, MARY[2] HULL [see Hull, p. 461]. He died August 20, 1683, at Windsor.[2, 24] His will was dated June 3, 1682, and proved December 10, 1683, and the inventory of his estate showed a valuation of £780–05–00. The former document made his wife his executrix and gave her the houses and lands during her life, after which his sons were to receive them jointly, with the provision that they should "not sell, alienate or mortgage all or any of the abovesd Lands until they are of the age of 50 years, except it be to their own brothers." It also divided the estate he had in "Old England" equally between his wife and youngest son, Isaac[2], and left, among other legacies, one of ten pounds to his grandson NATHANIEL[3], child of NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY, deceased.[24] The document was witnessed by one called "Cornelius Hall," probably meaning Cornelius[2] Hull, his wife's brother.

MARY (HULL) PINNEY had become a member of the church in Windsor in February, 1639, and died[2] at that place on August 18, 1684. She made a will[24] on September 12, 1683. It also referred to "Estate both in New England and Old England" and showed property valued[24] at £356–02–06. Probably these references to holdings in England pertained to lands received by HUMPHREY[1] from the will of Edmond Pinney in 1632, for the real estate holdings were in the form of leaseholds of a tenure of from twenty-one to ninety-nine years rather than an outright ownership.[1]

The children of HUMPHREY[1] and MARY (HULL) PINNEY, the first born in Dorchester and the others in Windsor, were[1a, 25, 25a, 26, 30, 46]

I. Samuel[2], b. (—); m. at Windsor, November 17, 1665, Joyce Bissell.
II. NATHANIEL[2], see following.
III. Mary[2], b. June 16, 1644; d. July 2, 1725; m. 1st, at Windsor, July 6, 1663, Abraham[2] Phelps (George[1]); perhaps m. 2nd, Daniel Adams.
IV. Sarah[2], b. November 19 or December 3, 1648; m. at Windsor, December 20, 1676, William[2] Phelps (William[1]).
V. John[2], b. October 19, 1650–1; d. s. p. at Windsor[1a] in 1697.
VI. Abigail[2], b. November 26, 1654; m. December 6, 1667, John Adams.[27, 29]
VII. Isaac[2], b. February 24, 1663; m. at Windsor, Sarah Clark.[27]

NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY (*Humphrey*[1]) was born in December, 1640; was baptized[24a] January 2, 1641, at Windsor; died at that place[1a, 28, 32] August 7, 1676, and married there[22, 25a, 26] on July 21, 1670, SARAH[2] GRISWOLD, the widow of Samuel[2] Phelps (William[1]) [see Griswold, p. 403]. From the few records obtainable about NATHANIEL[2] the following Windsor item,[33] dated February 15, 1668–9, and its explanation has interest:

"Accounts taken of town debts that have to be paid s d
Ephraim Strong, for 2 years setting in the yard..... 2 0
NATHANIEL PINNEY, the like..... 2 0"

This "setting in the yard" meant doing guard or sentinel duty in the meeting house yard during divine services.

"The Townesmen meet, and Ephraim Strong and NATHANIEL PINNE demanded paye for setting in ye yard and they were allowed to be payed 2s. a piece out of ye townes rate, and so likewise others that stand in like account with them as have set in ye yard without their ½ lb. of pudor [powder] a man payed to them, but was promised 12 pence a man to each man in liew of pudor."[33]

Two items which undoubtedly pertain to him are the presentation of the name "NATH. PINNEY" on May 9, 1667, for freemanship, the administration

of the freeman's oath of "NATHAN PINNEY" on October 10, 1667, as well as the final listing of "NATHANELL PINNE" among those possessed of freemanship in Windsor on October 11, 1669.[34] In 1675 the tax list showed that he had a family and a horse.[35] NATHANIEL[2] died at the age of thirty-six, leaving a widow and two children. His estate was valued at £221–18–10 on September 4, 1676, and the administration of it was granted to his widow one week later. In connection with the inventory was a statement giving the exact age of his children.[28] On March 1, 1677, the court ordered that the estate be distributed in the proportion of forty-five pounds to the widow, sixty pounds to the son NATHANIEL[3] and thirty pounds to the daughter.

The children of NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY and his wife, SARAH GRISWOLD, the widow of Samuel Phelps, born at Windsor, were[2, 28, 31]

I. NATHANIEL[3], see following.
II. Sarah[3], b. October 11, 1672, or 1673.[2, 31]

NATHANIEL[3] PINNEY (*Nathaniel*[2], *Humphrey*[1]) was born[2, 31] May 11, 1671,* at Windsor, "dyed Jan. 1st: A.D. 1764, an Aged Gentleman, aged about 90"[37] at Simsbury and married at Windsor on September 21, 1693, MARTHA[3] THRALL [see Thrall, p. 797].

He was a sergeant as early as 1711 for, at a meeting of the Governor and Council at New Haven on May 22, 1712, Roger Wolcott, as commissary for Connecticut Colony, reported certain amounts due to various individuals for service in the military expedition of the previous year and the treasurer was ordered[39] by this body to pay "To the persons that were impro'd on the out guard, January 17, $\frac{12}{11}$ viz: To Sergt. NATHANIEL PINNY, 09–00–01." This service, or another of the same year, was in the company of Captain Moses Diamond.[40]

On May 8, 1712, the General Assembly gave Hannah Phelps, widow of William[3] Phelps† of Windsor, "Liberty and full power" to transfer to NATHANIEL[3] PINNEY the six acres of land for which he had paid her husband but had failed to receive the deed before Phelps' death.[41]

It is not known just when the Pinney family removed from Windsor proper to the outlying district called Poquonock [see map on p. 569]. They resided at that place in January, 1723–4, for at that time the "Old Society"

* This event is also given[28] as May 11, 1670, but that would have antedated his parents' marriage, so 1671 must have been right.

† This man was the son by her first husband [Samuel[2] Phelps (William[1])] of SARAH (GRISWOLD) Phelps, who married secondly, our NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY, and he was, therefore, half-brother to the grantee.

or First Church of Windsor voted that the inhabitants of Poquonock should be freed from paying for ministerial support to that body for the time during which they should hire a minister among themselves. Many were released by name at that time, including Lt. NATHANIEL[3] PINNEY, who lived on the south side of the rivulet or Farmington River. In 1724 this latter group was incorporated as a separate church under the name of the Poquonock, Third or Northwest Society in Windsor.[44] On May 9, 1728, the General Assembly confirmed NATHANIEL[3] as lieutenant of the "company or train band at the Northwest society in the Town of Windsor" and ordered him commissioned accordingly.[42] This locates his home as being in that part of Windsor township nearest to Simsbury township whose southeastern part was called Wintonbury* parish[43] and was the home of the Beaman family into which his daughter SARAH[4] PINNEY married.

The children of NATHANIEL[3] and MARTHA (THRALL) PINNEY, all born in Windsor, were[2]

I. Martha[4], b. February 24, 1694; d. April 25, 1715.
II. Nathaniel[4], b. August 18, 1695; d. after 1725; m. Elizabeth [probably[38] Carrier].
III. Azariah[4], b. June 18, 1700; d. unmarried.
IV. Joseph[4], b. March 10, 1702; m. Jerusha Griswold [perhaps daughter of Matthew[3] (Joseph[2], EDWARD[1])].
V. Amy[4], b. October 6, 1704; m. William[4] Pratt (John[3], John[2], John[1]).
VI. SARAH[4], b. February 24, 1706–7; d. after 1783; m.[36, 45] either at Windsor or Simsbury on November 30, 1731, SAMUEL[3] BEAMAN [see Beaman, p. 111].
VII. John[4], b. November 18, 1707; d. June 20, 1715.
VIII. Abraham[4], b. February 1709–10; d. September 12, 1780; m. 1st, Elizabeth Butler; m. 2nd, Sarah (Clark) Moore.

* The establishment of township or civil units was quite separate from parishes or religious units and sometimes differing early names of these two divisions for a single locality are quite confusing for the student of the present day. Wintonbury parish was originally created from parts of Windsor, Farmington and Simsbury townships and its name was formed from the first syllable of the one and the two last syllables of the others. It is now called Bloomfield.[30, 43]

REFERENCES

1. Abstract of Wills, Prerogative Court of Canterbury, England, Audley, 16, 120; Year Book of Probates, J. and G. F. Matthews, I, 1902, p. 170–1. Being an index of Probate Acts in P.C.C.

1a. Pope's Pioneers, p. 362; History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian & Historical Society, 1859, pp. 73–4.

2. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 608–10, 842.

3. Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester, Mass., T. M. Harris, 1804, pp. 4–6; Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society Collections, No. 2, 1846, Annals of Dorchester, J. Blake, 1846, p. 10; History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, 1889, I, 303–4.

4. Record of the First Church of Dorchester, Mass., 1891, pp. iii, iv; Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society Collections, No. 1, 1844, Memoirs of ROGER CLAPP, pp. 19, 39–40.

5. New England Register, III, 92.
6. Ibid., XXI, 335; Early Records of Dorchester, Mass., W. B. Trask, 1867, pp. 7, 22.
7. New England Register, XXXV, 73; Good Old Dorchester, W. D. Orcutt, 1893, p. 46.
8. Records of the Court of Assistants of Massachusetts Bay, II, 54; Massachusetts Bay Records, I, 151.
9. History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian & Historical Society, 1859, p. 47.
10. History of Ancient Windsor, H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 725, 883; History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian & Historical Society, 1859, p. 73; MATHEW GRANT's Church Record, p. 10; New England Register, V, 365.
11. Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester, Mass., T. M. Harris, 1804, p. 10; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 883.
12. History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian & Historical Society, 1859, p. 73.
13. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, maps facing pp. 149, 164.
14. Ibid., I, 535, 546.
15. Ibid., I, 141, 143, 160, 164.
16. Ibid., I, 124.
17. Ibid., I, 88.
18. Ibid., I, 178, 885.
19. Ibid., I, 229.
20. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 126, 143, 154, 164, 172, 182.
21. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 448; Records of the Particular Court of Connecticut, II, 29.
22. New England Register, V, 230, 247, 359; Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 71, 519.
23. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 917.
24. Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records, C. W. Manwaring, 1902, I, 349–50; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, 884.
24a. Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly, VI, p. 186.
25. New England Register, V, 359.
25a. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 556.
26. New England Register, V, 230, 359.
27. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 357, 564, 610.
28. Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 226.
29. New England Register, XXXIII, 107; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 842.
30. Ibid., 1891, I, 292–3, 882.
31. Savage, III, 439.
32. Vital Records of Windsor, Conn., trans. by E. S. Welles, 1898, pp. 12, 28.
33. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 185.
34. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 60, 71, 519.
35. Pinney Family in America, L. Y. Pinney, 1924, pp. 5–17, 25, 26.
36. Vital Records of Simsbury, Conn., trans. by A. C. Bates, 1898, p. 126.
37. Ibid., p. 187.
38. New England Register, XLII, 155.
39. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 340.
40. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 241; Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 511.
41. Colonial Records of Connecticut, V, 321.
42. Ibid., VII, 171.
43. New England Register, LXXI, p. 74.
44. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 281–2.
45. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 153.
46. Hull Family, Col. Weygant, 1913, pp. 14–5.

POST

* † ‡ [850] Stephen Post –1659	m	Elinor . . . –1670
§ ‡ [424] Alexander Chalker –c.1673 or 1675	m 1649	Katherine Post –aft.1666
‡ [212] Samuel Chalker 1650–2–1711	m 1676	Phebe Bull 1655-prob.aft.1695
‡ [106] Stephen Chalker 1677–1727	m 1703	Elizabeth Chapman 1679–c.1738
‡ [52] Levi Chapman 1708–by 1771	m 1735	Lydia Chalker 1713–aft.1752
‡ ‖ ♦ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
‡ ‖ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‡ ‖ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♣ ‖ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‖ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Cambridge, Mass.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Guilford, Conn.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Salem, Ohio.

POST

STEPHEN[1] POST came from England, with his wife and children, probably in the ship "Griffin," arriving at Boston on September 4, 1633. He settled first at Cambridge, Massachusetts, where he had a house and twelve acres of land on the south side of the river. He retained this property[8] at least until October 10, 1635. The following spring he joined* the Reverend Thomas Hooker and his company in removing to Hartford, Connecticut, and became one of the original proprietors there.[1, 5] His name is inscribed on the Founders Monument.[13] His home lot in Hartford [see map on p. 613] was number thirty-four, lying on the south side of old Buckingham Street, between Main and Washington; his land grants in the first and second divisions were for thirty and twenty-four acres, respectively.[2] He had a twenty-four-acre right in the undivided lands listed January 3, 1639–40. On October 28, 1640, the town agreed[5] to pay him five shillings, six pence, per hundred, to hew, plane and lay the clapboards for the meeting house. He was constable[4, 7, 8, 9, 14] in 1641–2. On October 10, 1649, the General Court of Connecticut appointed a committee of five men to complete the "Forte and dwelling howse to bee erected for the use of the Country" at Saybrook and, on March 20, 1649–50, the name of STEPHEN[1] POST was added to that committee.[15]

In or before 1649 he sold his house in Hartford to Thomas Gridley and removed to Saybrook.[3] The records show that the "lands that lye remote" in Saybrook were divided January 4, 1648, and he was one of the forty-three proprietors.[12] Probably the earliest record extant, of a municipal character, of this place, is a notice of a town meeting on January 7, 1655–6, in which, included in a list[6] of those present, appears the name of STEPHEN[1] POST.

He died[6, 10] in Saybrook, August 16, 1659, his inventory[4] showing an

* The statement is also made, though unsupported, that he was a member of that man's congregation in England and came to America with him. Since he undoubtedly had church membership, it is probable that he became a freeman as his three sons certainly did.[17]

estate of £442–3–6. The probability is that "Ellener" Post, who died November 13, 1670, at Saybrook, was his wife.[6, 10]

The children of STEPHEN[1] and [undoubtedly] ELINOR (——) POST, of whom three and perhaps the fourth also, were born in England, were[1, 7, 7a]

I. John[2], b. abt. 1626–7; d. February 10, 1710–11, aged 83 or 84; m. March, 1652, Hester Hyde, daughter of William[1].

II. Thomas[2], b. abt. 1628; d. September 5, 1701; m. 1st, 1656, Mary Andrews; m. 2nd, 1663, Rebecca Bruen.

III. Abraham[2], b. abt. 1629; d. 1690; m. Mary[2] Jordan (John[1]) and had[16] among other children, a daughter Elinor.

IV. KATHERINE[2], born (——); m. first, at Saybrook, September 29, 1649, ALEXANDER[1] CHALKER[10, 11] [see Chalker, p. 176]. She is said to have m. secondly, September 23, 1673, John Hill, of Guilford, but it is possible[16] that he married her daughter Katherine[2] Chalker instead.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, III, 465, Pope's Pioneers, p. 369.
2. Historical Notices of Hartford, Conn., No. 1, W. S. Porter, 1842, pp. 9, 23.
3. Ibid., No. 2, p. 16.
4. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 255.
5. The Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 32, 125, 201.
6. History of Norwich, Conn., F. M. Caulkins, 1874, pp. 53, 194–6.
7. Post Family, M. C de T. Post, 1905, pp. 53–7.

7a. Hyde Genealogy, R. H. Walworth, 1864, I, 4.

8. History of Cambridge, Mass., L. R. Paige, 1877, pp. 2, 32–3, 628.
9. Register Book of Lands and Houses of New Towne, Mass., 1896, p. 30.
10. New England Register, IV, 22, 140.
11. Ibid., LIX, 133.
12. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 537, 539–40.
13. Olmstead Family in America, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.
14. Hartford in the Olden Time, edited by W. M. B. Hartley, 1853, p. 179.
15. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 187–8, 200, 206.
16. New England Register, LVII, 88, 250–1; LIX, 133; LXII, 333–4; LXIII, 196.
17. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 412; II, 523.

POTTER

. . . Potter	m	* [1757] Hannah . . . –1657–9
* [878] William Potter c.1608–c.1662–3	m c.1633–4	Frances . . . 1609–aft.1663
† ‡ * [438] Robert Foote c.1627–1681	m 1659	Sarah Potter c.1641–aft.1706
§ ‖ [218] John Graves 1658–1726	m 1685	Elizabeth Foote 1664–1730
¶ ♣ [108] Cornelius Hull 1687–1756	m 1715	Mehitable Graves 1688–1747
♣ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785
♦ # ▲ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob.aft.1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
♦ # [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
♦ ⊙ # [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
◇ # [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
# Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* New Haven, Conn.
† Wethersfield, Conn.
‡ Branford, Conn.
§ Guilford, Conn.
‖ Madison, Conn.
¶ Killingworth, Conn.

♣ Durham, Conn.
♦ Saybrook, Conn.
\# Marietta, Ohio.
⊙ Athens, Ohio.
◇ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
▲ Salem, Ohio.

POTTER

OF THIS family the earliest generation in this country is represented by the Widow HANNAH[1], whose first husband, (——) POTTER, died in England, after which she married, secondly, there (——) Beecher, and by the latter man had a son Isaac who, as well as her two sons by the first husband, came to New England. The date of emigration of HANNAH[1] POTTER Beecher or of her son John[2] Potter has not been found, but WILLIAM[2] POTTER, aged twenty-seven, his wife FRANCES, aged twenty-six, and their only child, aged twenty weeks, came on the "Abigail" in 1635, sailing in June.[1] They are said to have settled first at Watertown, Massachusetts,[1] but that seems improbable, since the man of that name who did so, remained at that place until 1642 and probably even until[2] 1645 while our WILLIAM[2] was made a freeman of New Haven Colony in 1639, though it is not known where he spent the intervening time.

The widow HANNAH[1] is first recorded in New Haven in March, 1650–1, as "Widdow Beecher ye midwife," when the General Court ordered the Treasurer to pay from the public funds for the making of five or six rods of fence for her.[4] In those days of few physicians, and comparatively scanty training for the best of them, a midwife was one of the most useful members of any community and, in this case, the service rendered to HANNAH[1] at town expense is evidence of the regard in which she was held. Her son John[2] was also made a freeman of New Haven Colony in 1639 but he died in or before[4] 1643 leaving several children and a widow Elizabeth, who also took up care of the sick and was similarly favored when the Treasurer was ordered to "take care and see the widdow Potter the midwife's house be mended, and paid for out of the Treasury."[4]

In November, 1651, HANNAH[1] POTTER Beecher testified as to the mental state of John Bishop when he made his will and, in February, 1655, as "Goodwife Beecher ye elder" she was one of five old ladies who were allowed to sit in the aisle in church, or as it was then worded, "Permitted to sitt in ye Ally

(vpon their desire) for convenience of Hearing."[4] HANNAH[1] made her will on June 13, 1657, and died at New Haven before March 2, 1658–9, the date of the inventory.[4, 5] She made WILLIAM[2] her "eldest son" her executor, made small bequests to the children of John[2], one-third of the balance to her son Isaac Beecher and the other two-thirds to WILLIAM[2] POTTER whom she desired "to be as a father to his younger brother [Beecher] and his children."[5] Her property inventoried at over £55.[4]

The known children of (——) POTTER and his wife HANNAH (——), both born in England and in unknown order, were[1, 5]

I. John[2], b. (—); d. about 1643; m., probably about 1635, Elizabeth (——), who m. 2nd, June or July, 1646, Edward Parker, and m. 3rd, about 1663, Robert Rose.[6]
II. WILLIAM[2], see following.

WILLIAM[2] POTTER was born about 1608 in England, died between May, 1662, and March following, in New Haven. He married in England,[1] as early as 1634, FRANCES (——), who survived him.

In 1640 the court decreed that he and a fellow creditor should bear equally the loss of a twenty-four-shilling debt owed them by George Spencer; in 1643 he had four in his family and was taxed on a £40 valuation, having received twelve acres in the first division of land. He, with many others, showed his loyalty by taking the oath of fidelity in July, 1644, and he made[3] a public offer in December, 1645, "to carry every man's grist from their howses to the mill & bring it home againe to their howses for 2[d] p. bushell."

In those days one's standing in the community was invariably shown by the prominence, or lack of such, of the seat assigned him in the church and in 1646 WILLIAM[2] was placed in the third seat "on the aisle for men" while in 1655 he was placed in the sixth of the "Long seats in y[e] middle for men" and in 1661 he was advanced to the fifth of these "long seates" for men.[3, 4] A man of this name called "of Stamford" in May, 1656, who may have been WILLIAM[2], informed the court that he was "a weake infirme man and not fitt to trayne and desires he might be freed, of whom the court now took notice and so judg him to be, and therefore declared that while this weaknes continewes he shall be free from trayning, but if God recouer him to abillitie he is to attend that seruice againe."

In October, 1647, he bought about sixty acres of land of Mr. Evance and in March, 1651–2, he deeded a small piece to James Clark.[3, 4] He attested in 1654 to the will of Richard Mansfield of New Haven and acted as witness

in 1658 for Thomas Wheadon, who was suing John Meigs relative to damage done in connection with Wheadon's apprenticeship to the latter.[4] The will of WILLIAM[2] made[1,5] on May 19, 1662, and proved[7] March 3, 1662–3, provided for his wife who survived him and made bequests to four children but omitted mention of daughters Mary[3] and SARAH[3] of whom probably both, but certainly the latter, were still living, for "SARAH Blakesley, alias FOOTE, alias POTTER, daughter of WILLIAM POTTER" acknowledged receipt of her full share in her father's estate[5,8,11] on August 23, 1706. His estate was valued[5] at over £190, as shown by the inventory taken August 2, 1662. The family home was on the west side of Quinipiac River near the present Cedar Hill station. The descendants of this early American include the names of many who have distinguished themselves as scholars, as ministers and in other professions. We omit any reference to incidents in connection with the close of his life for the reason that he appears to have been the victim of a mental disorder rather than an enemy of society.

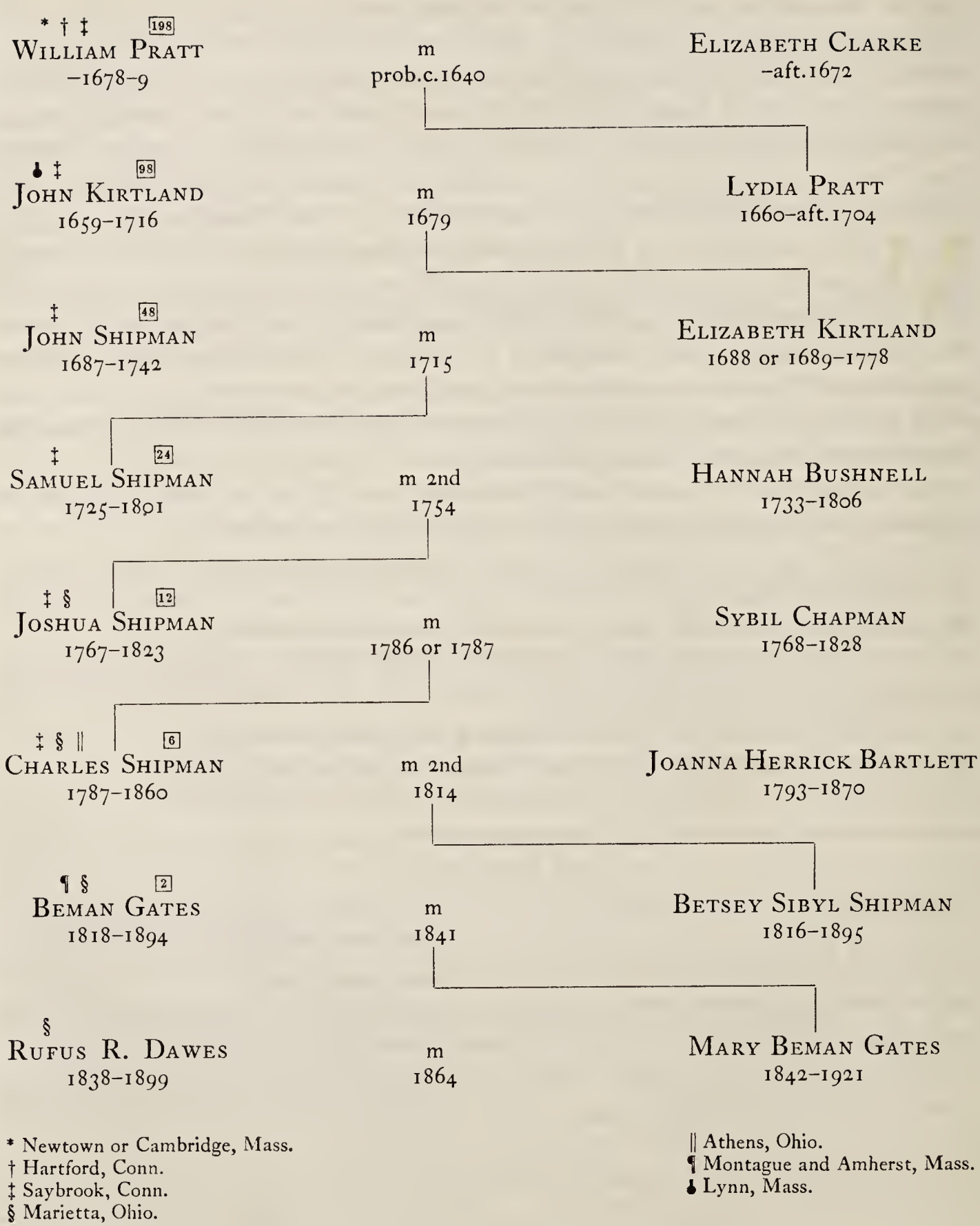
The children of WILLIAM[2] and FRANCES (——) POTTER, the first born in England, and the rest undoubtedly at New Haven, were[1,5,9]

I. Joseph[3], b. 1635; d. bef. August, 1670; m., by 1660, Phebe Ives, who m. 2nd, August, 1670, John Rose, Jr.
II. Mary[3], bap. August 22, 1641; m., about 1657, Joseph Mansfield.
III. SARAH[3], bap. August 22, 1641 [but not a twin with Mary]; d. after[5] August, 1706; m. 1st, 1659, ROBERT[2] FOOTE[10] [see Foote, p. 340]; m. 2nd, 1686, Aaron Blachley of Branford and removed to Guilford.
IV. Hope[3], bap. October 3, 1641; m., February 3, 1663, Daniel Robinson.
V. Rebecca[3], bap. January, 1643; m., November 27, 1667, Thomas Adams.
VI. Nathaniel[3], bap. December 22, 1644; m., April, 1675, Elizabeth Hawes.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, III, 466–8; Hotten's Emigrant Lists, I, 98.
2. History of Watertown, Mass., H. Bond, 1860, pp. 407, 910.
3. New Haven, Conn., Colonial Records, I, 17, 32, 92, 109, 122, 138, 183, 303, 314, 325; II, 158, 180, 250–3, 484.
4. New Haven, Conn., Town Records, Ancient Series, I, 67, 80, 96, 110, 270, 274, 399, 511.
5. The New Haven [Conn.] Potters, J. Shepard, 1902, pp. 3–9; New England Register, LXXXI, 122, 130; New Haven Genealogical Magazine, VI, 1459.
6. History of New Haven Colony, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1902, pp. 609–10.
7. New Haven, Conn., Colonial Records, II, 466, 484.
8. New Haven, Conn., Land Records, V, 130.
9. New England Register, IX, 362.
10. Foote Genealogy, A. W. Foote, 1907, p. 28.
11. History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, II, p. 327.

PRATT



* Newtown or Cambridge, Mass.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Lynn, Mass.

PRATT

WILLIAM[1] PRATT* emigrated to New England in or before 1632, being of the Reverend Mr. Hooker's following, probably in Newtowne, Massachusetts, and certainly in Hartford, Connecticut. WILLIAM[1] was not mentioned in the records of Newtowne, probably because he had not yet attained his majority, but in Hartford he received lots of six and eight acres, one of which was on the east side of Burr Street, now North Main Street.[3, 6, 7] He was one of the original proprietors of Hartford and is named on the Founders' Monument there.[17]

Although his daily interests and occupations, as nearly as we can learn of them directly, suggest rather a drab, dull life, the probabilities are that existence then was more filled with danger and excitement than is the average life of today. The daily menace of an Indian raid which threatened death or capture would cause life to be anything but monotonous or carefree, and to have taken part in the Indian wars, especially the Pequot War, must have required an almost unbelievable degree of courage. The Pequots had frequently shown as great cruelty to other Indian tribes as they did to the colonists. In 1634 they signed a peace with Massachusetts Bay which included the privilege to the whites of settling on the Connecticut, but in spite of that the Indians committed frequent depredations. The following excerpts are pertinent:[23]

"It may be truthfully said that no event in the very early history of New England had a greater influence on its destiny than that known as the Pequot War. It turned the tide which threatened to overwhelm the colonies, and established a peace that continued unbroken for nearly forty years.

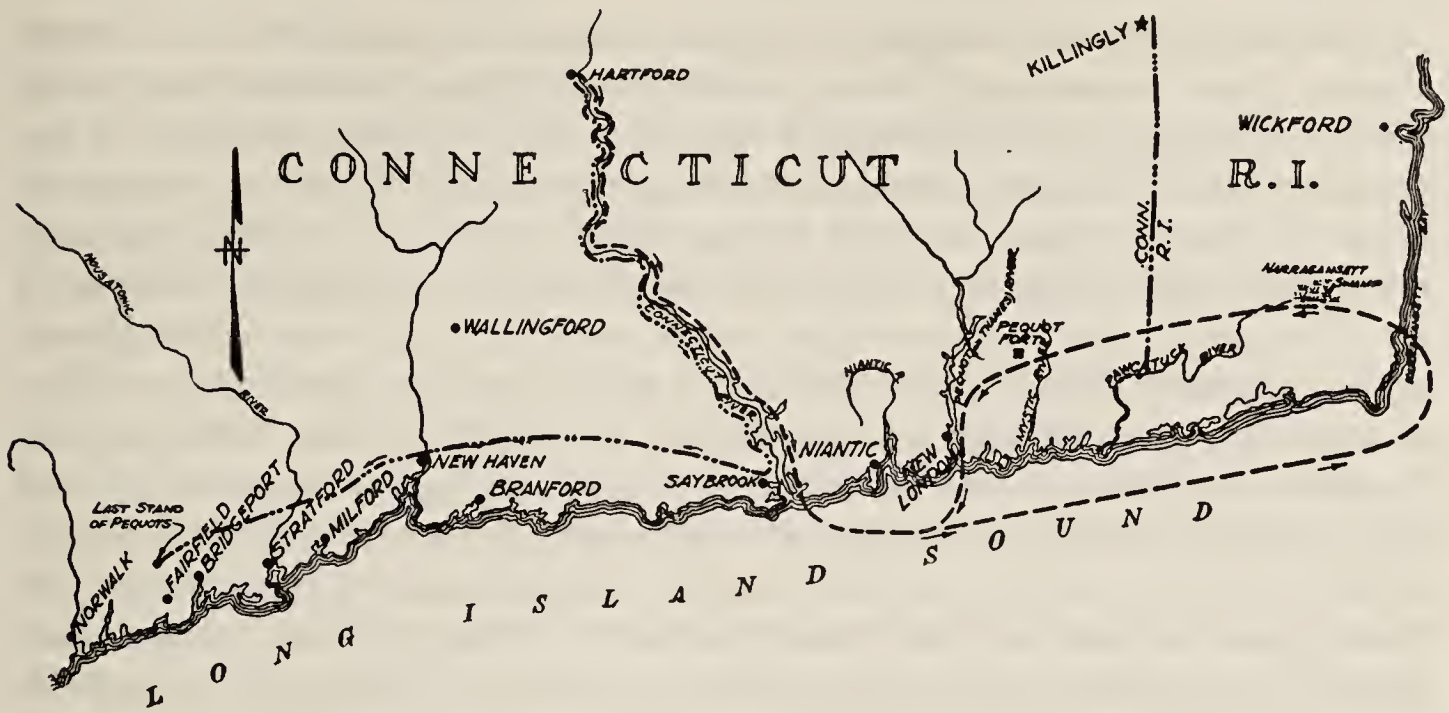
* WILLIAM[1] PRATT and John Pratt, of Hartford, probably brothers,[1, 8] are said[2, 20, 22] to have been sons of the Reverend William Pratt who was for thirty years the rector of Stevenage, co. Herts, England. The parish records there show the baptism of four of that man's six children, and all six, including a William and a John [undoubtedly the emigrants], are named on a tablet in the church in memory of the father's service there. The will of the Reverend William Pratt, dated November, 1629, mentions his wife Elizabeth and but three of his children. Presumably the others had already made plans for their removal to New England and had received their portion of the estate.[2] It is possible that Elizabeth Pratt accompanied her brothers to New England.

"So long as the settlements of New England clustered around Massachusetts Bay, and occupied territory from which the Indians had been swept by the terrible plague of 1616–7, the conflict for the possession of the more fertile country to the west was deferred; but when in 1636 the emigrants from Watertown, Dorchester and Newtown, Massachusetts, had pushed their way through the dense forests, and occupied the Connecticut Valley, a struggle for existence became inevitable. For these settlers found the country dominated by the Pequots, the most dreaded of all the tribes of New England, who had driven away the weaker tribes or held them under subjection.

"The earliest known territory of the Pequots was a narrow strip of coast extending from Niantic River to the Rhode Island boundary [see map on p. 677]. They controlled, however, all the tribes east of the Connecticut River, and westward to near New Haven, and nearly all of Long Island. They originally formed one tribe with the Mohegans," ["They had originally been allied also with the Mohegans,"] "who later seceded under Uncas, and remained the faithful allies of the colonists. Their total strength at that time is estimated to have been about three thousand; their chief sagamore was the wily Sassacus, and their principal stronghold was at the mouth of the Thames.

"The colonists had no doubt given good cause for the hostility of this savage tribe, whose real [original] grievance dated from the seizure, by Thomas Hunt, of twenty-seven inoffensive Indians who had trusted in his honor. For, though this occurred in 1614, it still slumbered in the breasts of Sassacus and the Pequots, who were unable to discriminate between the act of this unprincipaled adventurer and the more peaceably disposed settlers of the later period." The Pequots "entered on a Resolution to Destroy the English out of the Country. In 1634, they killed Capt. Stone and all his Company, being seven besides Himself, in and near his Bark on Connecticut River. In 1635, they killed Capt. Oldham in his Bark at Block-Island; and at Long-Island they killed two more cast away there. In 1636, and the following Winter and March, they killed six and took seven more at Connecticut River: Those they took alive they tortured to Death in a most barbarous Manner. And on April 23, 1637, they killed nine more and carried two young Women Captive at Weathersfield."

These later atrocities touch closely our own interests, for one of these raids in the fall of 1636 resulted in the killing of several employees of Matthew[1] Mitchell [perhaps father of HANNAH (MITCHELL) COE, see Mitchell, p. 589]



ILLUSTRATING THE PEQUOT WAR AND
THE GEORGE[1] HULL AND THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD CHAPTERS

[though one who escaped and recovered had five arrows in his body] and the roasting alive of Mitchell's brother-in-law, Samuel (or Daniel) Butterfield. The raid of April, 1637, which probably cost the life of THOMAS[1] KILBOURN, is discussed on page 509. With these things in mind, the Connecticut people had written to the Massachusetts Bay Colony on February 21, 1637, asking for aid and making known their expectation that it would become necessary to wage an aggressive war upon the Pequots in order to avoid their own extermination. There were then in Connecticut some two hundred fifty Englishmen with their families, and they must have realized that failure in an aggressive expedition would mean complete annihilation. Nevertheless, at a special session of the General Court of Connecticut on May 1, 1636, the following solemn vote was taken, with Roger Ludlow presiding and GEORGE[1] HULL [see Hull, p. 456] and Matthew[1] Mitchell casting their ballots:

"It is ordered that there shalbe an offensiue warr ag[t] the Pequoitt, and that there shalbe 90 men levied out of the 3 Plantacons, Harteford, Weathersfield and Windsor (vizt) out of Harteford 42, Windsor 30, Weathersfield 18 vnder the Comands of Captaine Jo: Mason . . ." [see Olmstead, pp. 616–7 for various details].

Massachusetts Bay promised to send one hundred sixty and Plymouth to send forty men, but none of these arrived in time to take a part in the conflict.

This little army of invasion, composed of more than one-third of the male adults, "rendezvoued at Hartford and after religious exercises their hearts were reinforced by an exhortation from the Rev. Thomas Hooker, in the course of which he said to them, 'although gold and silver be wanting to either of you, yet have you that to maintaine which is farre more precious, the lives, liberties and new purchased freedoms of the endeared servants of our Lord Jesus, and of your second selves, even your affectionated bosome-mates, together with the chief pledges of your love, the comforting contents of harmless prating and smiling babes.' So, leaving their 'affectionated bosome-mates' these 'endeared servants of the Lord,' girt in battle array, and duly provided with 'one hogshead of good beare for the Captaine & Mr. [Minister] & sick men,' and with 'three or four gallons of stronge water' and 'two gallons of sack,' set sail from Hartford in a fleet, of 'pink, pinnace and shallop, accompanied with many Indian canoes' on their errand of retribution."

The party, accompanied by about seventy friendly Mohegan Indians, started on May 10 down the Connecticut to Saybrook, from which Capt. Mason was instructed to proceed to the River Pequot [now Thames] and attack the fort from the west; but due consideration convinced him that such a course would be anticipated and frustrated and that his only hope of a successful issue was in making a surprise attack. So he decided to disobey his orders and sail to Narragansett Bay [see map on p. 677]. They arrived there on Saturday evening and "kept the Sabbath." They were prevented by northwest winds from landing until Tuesday evening, when they asked the chief of the local Indian tribe for permission to cross his territory. This was granted, and on Wednesday they reached Niantic [Nyanticke], the eastern border of the Pequots' lands. On Friday morning, May 26, they accomplished a surprise attack and won a decisive victory but at a shocking loss of life to the Pequots. Those who survived decided to leave that section and started westward, and presently an expedition from the Connecticut River towns was sent to follow along the Sound to speed their departure and to assure their removal to a safe distance. While the Pequots subsequently attempted to return to their old location to live, they were promptly and effectually discouraged. They became a prey to all the other Indian tribes which they formerly had dominated, and finally, in 1638, they appealed to the General Court of Connecticut for protection. On September 21 a treaty was signed between the Pequots and Connecticut Colony, whereby they admitted

complete subjection and were distributed among the other tribes. Thenceforth, as a tribe, they ceased to exist.[23]

The temporary effect of the campaign was great privation to the colonists during the remainder of that year, because of the scarcity of crops resulting from the absence of so many men during the spring and summer, but the permanent effect was joy unspeakable at freedom from constant fear of the Pequots.

WILLIAM[1] PRATT was one of the band that went from Hartford* to fight the Pequots,[14] and he received a land grant in Soldiers' Field [see map on p. 613] in recognition of this service.[5, 6] His home lot lay on the east side of the road which ran from Sentinel Hill to the cow pasture[4, 5, 6, 8] and this he sold in 1645 to Matthew Beckwith.

He removed to Saybrook[3, 8] probably soon after this date; in 1648 he and his father-in-law, JOHN[1] CLARKE, were on a committee to make a division of the "lands that lye remote" in Saybrook.[19] He was a freeman[16] of that town before October 4, 1669, and his home lot there was in the part now included in the borough of Essex in the region occupied by the board walk. He was appointed lieutenant[15] of the train-band on October 3, 1661, and was a representative for Saybrook in 1666 and for eleven years (or twenty-three sessions) thereafter.[1, 3] He served frequently as a commissioner and on various committees. At the General Court in 1671 he was nominated for assistant and, at the same session, was granted one hundred acres of land.[3, 15] In 1672 he was appointed to take an account of the ammunition and artillery of Connecticut Colony. In March, 1675–6, he and his neighbors petitioned the council for permission to fortify his house and one other, and to maintain garrisons in them for protection against the Indians. The request was soon granted.[16]

WILLIAM[1] became possessed of considerable land,[9] more than two hundred fifty acres being found on record which were acquired by grant or purchase, besides a tract of five thousand acres left to him by the will[21] of the Indian Attawanhood, called Joshua Uncas. This document transferred enormous tracts of land to various colonists of Hartford, Saybrook and other places. Whole townships, as, for instance, those of Windham, Mansfield and Canterbury, were included. The entire tract extended about eighteen miles north and south and, in some places, as far east and west. Joshua Uncas directed

*Both WILLIAM[1] PRATT and NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD served thus from Hartford, as well as WILLIAM[1] THRALL from Windsor.

that the Indians who then resided on this territory should leave it and attach themselves to his father, Uncas. He desired that his sons should live near Saybrook and that their mother should have them instructed in English and, at the end of four years, have them placed in an English school. The sum of thirty-five pounds was due him from certain white men and this amount, together with the rentals from his remaining lands, was to be expended in the support and education of his children. He earnestly commended his children to all his legatees but more particularly to three whom he mentioned by name, ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN, WILLIAM[1] PRATT and the Reverend Thomas Buckingham. For himself, he directed that he should be buried at Saybrook, in a coffin after the manner of the English.[3, 12, 13] The land received by WILLIAM[1] from this Indian will, which afterwards passed to his sons, lay in the vicinity of Hebron.[3] He received also by the will of James Ellis, of Saybrook, who died June 22, 1665, all of his estate, amounting to £52–13–08, given "in consideration of the good will that I bore to him above all others, and in Consideration of his great care and cost that he was at with me in my sickness."[18]

WILLIAM[1] PRATT married,[1, 11] probably about 1640, at Hartford, ELIZABETH[2] CLARKE [see Clarke, p. 204]. The precise date of his death is not known but it was between May, 1678, when he attended the General Court as Deputy for the last time, and February 20, 1679, when his son, William[2], was married and called[10] "son of Lieut. WM. PRATT, deceased." His widow, ELIZABETH, married secondly,[24] before 1682, as his second wife, William[1] Parker of Saybrook. Her son Joseph[2] Pratt married his stepsister, Margaret[2] Parker.

The will of JOHN[1] CLARK, dated February 17, 1672, gave to his daughter, ELIZABETH PRATT, "my round table, diaper table cloth, napkins, one silver spoon, and my great trunk," as well as a share to his son-in-law, WILLIAM[1] PRATT, who was made one of his executors.[11]

The children of WILLIAM[1] and ELIZABETH (CLARKE) PRATT,[1, 10] the first two born in Hartford and the others in Saybrook, were

I. Elizabeth[2], b. February 1, 1641–2; d. after 1669; m. May 11, 1660, Lieut. William Backus, of Norwich.
II. John[2], b. February 20, 1644–5; d. about 1726; m. June 8, 1665, Sarah Jones, daughter of Thomas Jones, of Guilford.
III. Joseph[2], b. August 1, 1648; d. August 12, 1703; m. 1st, 1671, Margaret[2] Parker (William[1], of Saybrook), his stepsister;[24] m. 2nd, September, 1686, Sarah[2] Chapman (ROBERT[1]).
IV. Sarah[2], b. April 1, 1651; m. April 20, 1671, Isaac Watrous.

v. William[2], b. May 14, 1653; d. March 4, 1718; m. February 20, 1678–9, Hannah[3] Kirtland (NATHANIEL[2], PHILIP[1]).

vi. Samuel[2], b. October 6, 1655; d. 1705; m. 1st, about 1681, Ruth Huntington; m. 2nd, December, 1686, Elizabeth Peck.

vii. LYDIA[2], b. January 1, 1659–60, at Saybrook; d. after 1704; m.[10] November 8 or 18, 1679, JOHN[3] KIRTLAND [see Kirtland, p. 522].

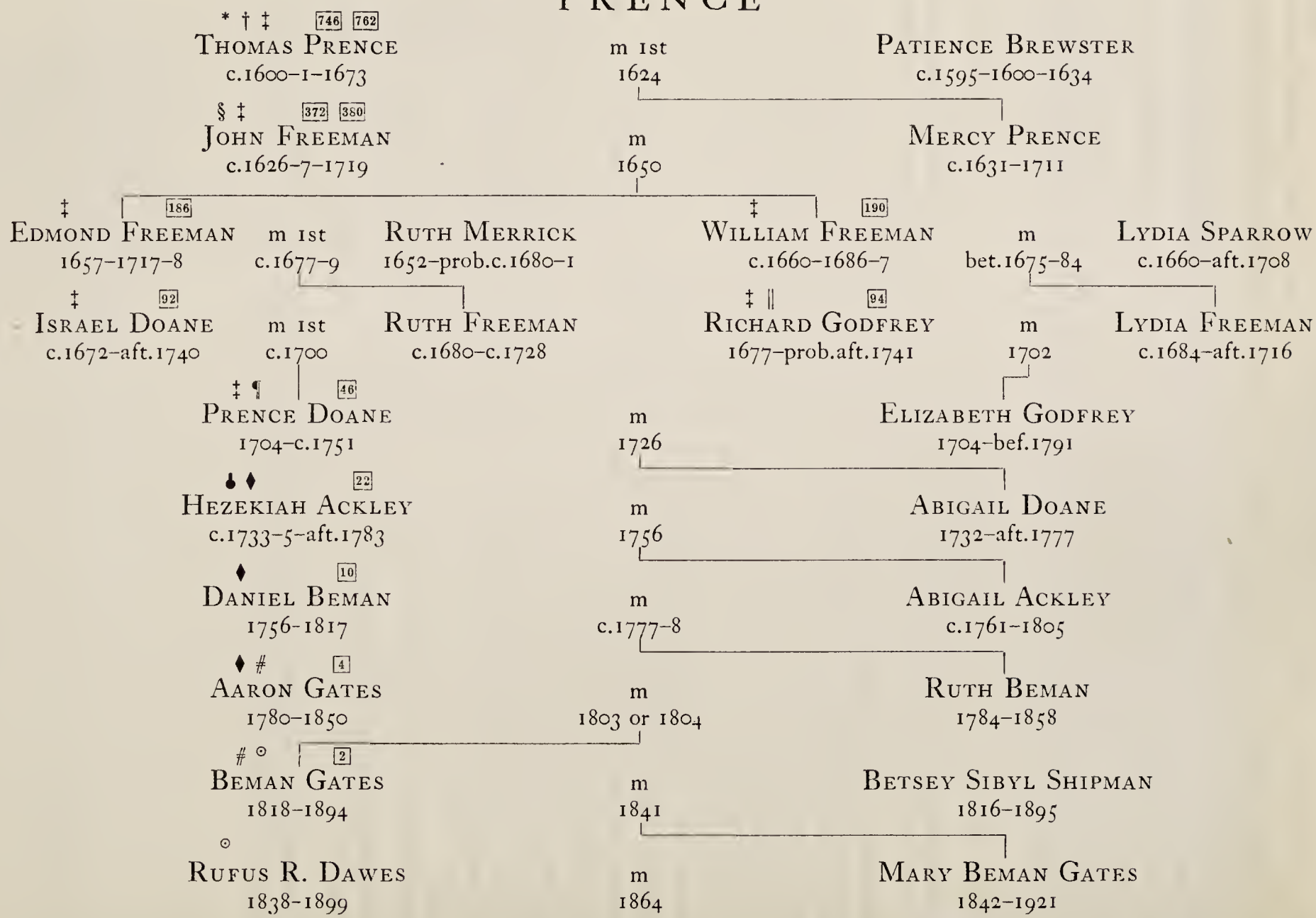
viii. Nathaniel[2], b. 1660–1; d. before September 10, 1744; m. 1st, May 2, 1688, Sarah Beamont*; m. 2nd, January 21, 1718, Sarah Willard; m. 3rd, after January, 1723, Rebecca (——).

REFERENCES

1. Savage, III, 476; New England Register, IV, 139–40.
2. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 43–6; Descendants of John Pratt, C. B. Whittlesey, 1900, pp. 7–9.
3. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 47–51.
4. Historical Notices of Hartford, Conn., 1842, W. S. Porter, I, pp. 9, 24.
5. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, map bet. 46–7, 116–7.
6. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 125, 146, 148; Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 466, 468.
7. Historical Notices of Hartford, Conn., W. S. Porter, 1842, II, p. 19.
8. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 255–6.
9. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, pp. 339–40.
10. Ibid., pp. 53–4, 68, 138, 167, 169, 233, 260, 287.
11. Ibid., pp. 340–2.
12. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, pp. 28, 37, 263.
13. Buckingham Family, J. Buckingham, 1892, pp. 231–2.
14. General Register Society of Colonial Wars, 1899–1902, p. 737.
15. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, p. 375; ibid., II, pp. 32, 47, 144, 189.
16. Ibid., II, pp. 418, 522.
17. Olmstead Genealogy, H. K. Olmstead, 1912, p. 11.
18. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 194; Hall Family Ancestry, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, 170–3.
19. Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland, 1905, p. 94.
20. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 537, 539, 542.
21. New England Register, XIII, pp. 235–6.
22. Whittlesey Genealogy, C. B. Whittlesey, 1898, pp. 60–1.
23. History of the Pequot War, ed. C. Orr, 1897, pp. vii-xx, 5–7, 16–46; History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 62–4, 70–1; II, 504–5; History of Woodbury, Conn., W. Cothren, 1872, II, 1519–22; History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 444; History of Wethersfield, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1904, I, 65–70; History of Fairfield, Conn., E. H. Schenck, I, ix-xxiii; Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, 1–19.
24. Genealogy, Central New York, 1912, III, 1174–5.

* She died October 11, 1716, aged 55. She may have been an unrecorded daughter of our WILLIAM[1] BEAMON, of Saybrook, than whom there was none other of the name in that town at that date.

PRENCE



* Plymouth, Mass.
† Duxbury, Mass.
‡ Eastham, Mass.
§ Lynn and Sandwich, Mass.
‖ Harwich, Mass.
¶ Saybrook, Conn.
♠ East Haddam, Conn.
♦ East Hartland, Conn.
\# Montague and Amherst, Mass.
⊙ Marietta, Ohio.

PRENCE*

THOMAS[1] PRENCE, son of THOMAS† of Lechlade, co. Gloucester, England,[2] was born[1, 3, 11, 21] probably at that place[9] about 1600–1 and emigrated in 1621 to the New World in company with Jonathan[2] Brewster (Elder WILLIAM[1]) on the "Fortune," which sailed[16] from London in the early part of July, 1621, but was unable to clear the channel until the end of August and did not arrive at New Plymouth until November 9 of that year. This vessel[9] failed to bring a store of supplies for the use of its passengers until the next harvest and, since the colonists were already short, it became necessary to put the entire colony on half rations at once, in order that their food might last until the following July. Nor was this the only time that they looked famine in the face. THOMAS[1] PRENCE was a welcome addition to the Pilgrim colony, being highly moral, educated, dignified and well-to-do, though, as it developed, he was non-Pilgrim and indeed pro-Puritan and stricter in religious matters than the leaders themselves.[9] He was an unusual man; a man of great usefulness and ability; a man fearless in making stern decisions, yet prone to show mercy;[9] but, in the light of our day, a man of intolerance in matters of religion. That very intolerance, however, was motivated by a conscientious adherence to duty.

His residence was first at Plymouth,[9, 13, 18] but before the spring of 1632 he had followed his father-in-law, WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, to Duxbury, where PATIENCE[2] BREWSTER, the wife of THOMAS[1] PRENCE, died in 1634 and where the residences of these two families continued until 1644, at which time the beloved Elder WILLIAM[1] died and THOMAS[1] PRENCE removed with his family to Nauset on the Cape. In this change he was accompanied by six other

*This name was often spelled "Prince."

†THOMAS PRENCE, senior, removed from Lechlade at an unknown date to All Saints, Barking, London, where he carried on the trade of carriage-maker, and where on July 31, 1630, he made his will, which was probated on August 14, following. It made bequests to daughter Katherine Crayford, daughter Rebecca Diple, and "to son THOMAS PRENCE now remayninge in New England in the pts beyond the seas one beere bole of silver and alsoe my seale Ringe of gold to be del^d to him at his next return . . ."[10]

families, including those of JOHN[1] DOANE, *Josiah*[1] *Cooke** and EDWARD[1] BANGS, a total of forty-nine souls. There he was instrumental in forming the fourth church in the infant colony[18] and in 1651 the settlement was renamed Eastham. While THOMAS[1] was still resident in Duxbury, and aged only about thirty-four, he was elected governor in 1634, serving then for the term of one year. In 1638 he was again the recipient of the same honor, but five years previously a law had been passed requiring the governor to reside in Plymouth, so he declined the office. On the insistence of the court he agreed to accept the position if the residence clause were waived. That request was granted, and he served during the year 1638. For more than forty years after 1632 he continuously served as an assistant or magistrate, except while holding the chief office of governor.[19]

While resident in Eastham, and immediately following the death of Governor Bradford, THOMAS[1] PRENCE was unanimously chosen to succeed him, and thereafter for sixteen consecutive years, or until his own death in 1673, he held the office of governor.[19] On his election in 1657 the court again granted him the special concession of waiver of residence, permitting him to continue to live at Eastham,[14] where he had a farm of at least two hundred acres of the richest land in the vicinity. He was doubtless loath to exchange this for the more rocky land and poorer agricultural possibilities at Plymouth.

The court arranged for conveyance for him to travel between his home and the seat of government at Plymouth, about fifty miles distant, but the inconvenience to both finally operated to bring about his removal to Plymouth. This occurred[9] probably by June 1, 1663, for on that date the court ordered[25] "that a convenient, hansome rome bee aded to the Goūnors house [presumably in the officially approved town], and that the charge of the building thereof bee defrayed out of the pay for Kinebecke . . ." [see p. 688]. His return occurred certainly[25] before October, 1665, when they further compensated him for it by unanimously voting him an annual salary of £50 during his encumbency, in addition to the use of a home furnished by the colony which should be his while in this office; should be free to his family for at least a year following his decease if he died during such term; or should be his for at least a year following the completion of such service.[25] This home overlooked the sea at what was then called "Plain Dealing" but is now known as Seaside [see map on p. 685]. In June, 1668, he proposed to the court that

* Believed to have been the ancestor of MARY COOKE, wife of CALEB[2] JOHNSON [see Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–5].

DETAIL OF PLYMOUTH VICINITY, GIVING EARLY LOCAL PLACE NAMES AND ILLUSTRATING BREWSTER, COOKE, FREEMAN, HOPKINS, PRENCE, ET AL

1. Captain's Hill
2. Clark's Island
3. Gurnets Nose
4. Saquish Head
5. Brown's Island Shoals
6. Jones River
7. Powder Point
8. Eel River
9. Plain Dealing, now Seaside
10. Rocky Nook
11. Hobs Hole or Wellingsley

he should buy this place. They agreed, and set a price of £150 payable in instalments, with the privilege of its refusal if he later chose to sell, and with the stipulation of refund to him in such case for any improvements he had made.[25] In June and July, 1673, after his death, this agreement became effective and his home reverted to the colony on payment to the heirs of £50, the amount he had paid on the purchase price or for repairs. About 1658 there was an admitted intent, or at least a thought, on the part of an Indian named "Repent" to shoot THOMAS[1] PRENCE as he returned to his home. The culprit was whipped.[25]

The summary of his service[9, 19, 20] shows that he held the office of governor in 1634, 1638 and 1657–73; assistant or magistrate at least twenty-two years, in 1632, 1635–7, 1639–56; treasurer 1636–7; commissioner for Plymouth for the United Colonies for thirteen years, 1645, 1650, 1653–8, 1661–3 and 1670–2; that he was a member of the council for war in 1637 (against the Pequots), in 1642–3, 1646, 1657–8 and 1667, being president of that council during the last four terms;[19, 20] and he also held various special civil and military trusts.[9] In 1637 he was sole member of the council for war when Plymouth voted to assist Connecticut Colony against the Pequots. On June 7 Plymouth decided to raise a company of thirty land soldiers (besides those who would handle the vessel) and directed THOMAS[1] PRENCE to accompany them. Forty-two men, including JACOB[2] COOKE [see Cooke, p. 244], volunteered for this service, but before they were ready a decisive encounter had occurred in which the Connecticut men were victorious, so the Plymouth company was not sent.[19]

THOMAS[1] PRENCE, during his long encumbency as governor, faced[23, 24, 27] many difficult problems and made, or assisted in making, various decisions and plans which bore far-reaching results. Moreover, with a handful of others, he carried for about twenty years an almost unbelievable burden of personal financial responsibility in behalf of the colony. Against this fine record only one trait of THOMAS[1] PRENCE—that of intolerance—seems to call for apology. A summary of his extensive service to the colony shows that it covered a wide scope:

(1) His handling in 1661 of the first instance of witchcraft excitement in Plymouth was sane and peremptory and effectually discouraged a recurrence.

(2) The comparative infrequency of Indian troubles in Plymouth was brought about largely by the humane attitude of THOMAS[1] PRENCE and other leaders toward the natives. Thomas Mayhew, missionary to the

Indians, wrote of the "gentle and kind dealing" of PRENCE with them. His stern and impartial justice is shown in the case of the three white men who were tried before him and were hung in 1638 for the robbery and fatal beating of an Indian.

(3) The treatment by THOMAS[1] PRENCE of the unjust demands of certain Massachusetts men [see Grant, p. 374, and Olmstead, p. 612] to a tract of land on the Connecticut River [now Windsor] was tolerant and generous. This land had previously been purchased by Plymouth and settled upon in the fall of 1633 by a Plymouth group under Jonathan[2] Brewster (Elder WILLIAM[1]). In this matter PRENCE entered into an agreement in May, 1637, which practically closed all disputes and ended within a year, entirely without profit, all Plymouth's claim on the Connecticut. He also served helpfully in forming the confederation of the united colonies.

(4) The administration of THOMAS[1] PRENCE is noted for his vigorous stand in favor of education and is said to have been "rendered illustrious, by his zealous efforts to introduce a regular system of free schools into the colony." The colony had not lacked schools earlier but they had depended upon individual tuition-fees. During the PRENCE regime free schools were established by law and supported by rental of common lands, by a share of the fishery money, or by specified taxes.

(5) Probably the greatest service rendered by THOMAS[1] PRENCE, associated with WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER and six other leading Plymouth men, and one which cost each of these men an enormous amount of anxiety, responsibility and material outlay, was the personal assumption by them in 1626–7 of the entire debt of the colony and its ultimate payment [indeed, one should say its *over*payment], which was not entirely accomplished until about 1645. Letters and other documents are of record, showing[17, 24, 27] that these eight Plymouth men, in behalf of the colony, were the victims of many unavoidable misfortunes; of theft and piracy by enemies; of dishonesty and disloyalty by employees and friends; of poor judgment and poorer bookkeeping; and finally, in the ultimate settlement with their three English associates, of their submission to a manifest fraud, when they made the payment of £1200, and later of an additional £400, not really owed, for the sake of an acquittance in full and a clear record.

When the Pilgrims came to America in 1620 it was as members of a stock company which had two classes of stockholders: the men in England who had invested money and were called "adventurers" and the people who emigrated,

venturing their lives and labor and such funds as they had, who were called "planters." Everything was to be held in common for seven years, after which time the assets would be divided between these two classes; the planters having in the meantime had their living and the adventurers having profited by furs and produce exported from New Plymouth to England. Endless misfortunes [such as shipwreck of vessels with cargoes, or capture by pirates, etc.] befell the colonists, and the profits reaped by the adventurers in England were considerable but fell far short of what they had hoped for. In 1626, as the year of settlement and division approached, the colonists realizing that they could not meet their obligation anxiously studied the matter and decided that only through the acquisition of furs by an extensive trade with the Indians could they hope to liquidate their debt, for which in any event they must have an extension of time. To that end they[24, 27] sent Isaac Allerton to England in 1626, as well as on several later occasions, and through him acquired from the disappointed "adventurers" two concessions which the Plymouth leaders felt would save the life and integrity of the infant colony. These were (a) a patent for land on the Kennebec River, being a strip fifteen miles wide on each side of that stream, extending [apparently from its mouth] northward to the vicinity of the present Skowhegan, or a distance of about sixty miles in an air-line. Over this they were to have absolute control on land and water as to trade, fishing, settlement and government. This constituted the unique situation of a colony owning a colony, and from this possession the Plymouth men hoped to earn enough to pay their obligations in England and also to finance the emigration of various Leyden friends.[17] The other concession was (b) a contract whereby the "adventurers" turned over their entire interest and right in the colony for £2400, which covered a purchase price of £1800 and a standing debt of £600 for supplies. Since the "planters" as a company were unchartered, it was necessary that individuals should bind themselves in this amount if this solution of their difficulties was to be accepted. Consequently eight of the leading men of the colony—William Bradford, Myles Standish, Isaac Allerton, Edward Winslow, WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, John Howland, John Alden and THOMAS[1] PRENCE, obligated themselves in the sum of £2400 which was to be paid at the rate of £200 per annum, and thereby became owners of the colony as far as the liens and titles of the former "adventurers" went. They stipulated, however, and the colonists agreed, that individuals should refrain from trade with the Indians during the pendency of this obligation. These eight men, presently

joined by four men* of London [who had earlier been among the "adventurers"] were commonly called the "undertakers," though sometimes "partners." In order to protect the rights of the colonists the new owners decided to form an equal partnership in the colony, consisting of all heads of families and all self-supporting single men [including non- and even anti-church members]. These were to be called "purchasers" and were each to receive one share in the public belongings, with the right to acquire an additional share for a wife and for each child. These shares were bound for so much of the public debt as the trade (above) should not earn, and to them belonged everything pertaining to the colony except personal effects. The service rendered by these eight leaders was great indeed. Not only were they and their estates liable for the debt, but, while it remained unpaid and overdue, they would each have been menaced with imprisonment if they had ventured to visit England. The responsibility was wholly theirs, while coöperation was frequently lacking, and in the end they each gave up houses and lands in large amounts and quite beyond the contribution of the colonists as a whole. This personal obligation on the part of these eight men ran on actively for about fifteen years and was not wiped out until about twenty years had passed. Latterly much dissatisfaction arose on both sides and the Plymouth men declared that many credits due them from their London associates (now reduced to three) were omitted and goods were sent them which they had never ordered. Finally in October, 1641, with the assistance of EDMOND[1] FREEMAN, they inventoried every smallest asset and outstanding account, drew up new articles of agreement, and gave new bonds to the amount of £2400 for the payment of £1200 [unjustly said to be due the London partners] which would wipe out all earlier obligations. Not until June, 1642, was a release signed for this £1200 claim and then by only two of the three London men. The third man, Beauchamp, was expected to sign but later demanded[27] for himself £400 additional and made EDMOND[1] FREEMAN his attorney; "so no end was made with him till 4 years after . . ." In 1645 the final release by Beauchamp through FREEMAN was delivered and recorded. What relief it must have been to the responsible partners to be finally free from so great a burden, and that burden undertaken for the common cause rather than personal gain! In the final

*These were James Sherley, John Beauchamp [brother-in-law of EDMOND[1] FREEMAN], Richard Andrews and Timothy Hatherley, who later came to America, as did also his sister EGLIN, our ancestress [see Foster chapter, DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I]. Hatherley became a most valuable member of Plymouth Colony, and Sherley, Beauchamp and Andrews rendered invaluable service from London by their financial assistance; but their later conduct greatly lessened the appreciation in which they had been held.

settlement each of the partners [the heirs of WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER in behalf of his estate] transferred various tracts of land which they personally owned to clear the account.[17, 24, 27] In this instance THOMAS[1] PRENCE contributed a house and land at Plymouth and a farm at Jones River which presently sold at £32 and £75 respectively.

To offset this long and valuable service we must admit one unhappy trait in the character of THOMAS[1] PRENCE—his religious intolerance, and that mainly against the Quakers. He had no more than succeeded Bradford as governor when the forerunners of that faith began to appear, and some of them, unlike later members of their kind, seemed really to crave trouble and to thrive upon persecution. The conflict between Puritan (which THOMAS[1] PRENCE really was) and Quaker has been described as an attempt to subdue one kind of fanaticism with another, Reason soon controlling both when she became their guide.[9] Evidence that THOMAS[1] was wholly sincere in his belief that the Quaker influx was a menace to government and church is found in the fact of his complete and permanent break with two leading and most useful members of the colony, namely: Isaac[1] Robinson, son of the Leyden pastor, and James[1] Cudworth, whose standing in and service toward the colony was fully as excellent as that of PRENCE himself. In 1659 Robinson, John[2] Cooke (FRANCIS[1]) and others were constituted a committee to attend a Quaker meeting with the intent of showing the interlopers the error of their ways; but the result was entirely unforeseen, since Robinson himself became convinced of their righteousness and wrote to the court, urging against the existing anti-Quaker laws as unwise and unjust. James[1] Cudworth also wrote and spoke in similar strain. Effort was made to induce them to recant, but in vain, so they were both disfranchised—Robinson in 1659 and Cudworth in 1660. This deprived them of civil and military rights but did not interfere with church membership. This ban was never lifted while THOMAS[1] PRENCE lived, but it is gratifying to know that one of the first acts of his successor as governor, Josiah Winslow, was the reëstablishment of their rights as freemen.[9, 22] Perhaps it was the irony of fate which ruled that THOMAS[1] PRENCE should have in his immediate family an application of the Quaker problem. Arthur[2] Howland (Arthur[1] of Quaker sympathy and faith) had the temerity, yet good taste, to aspire to marriage[21] with Elizabeth[2] Prence, daughter of the governor, and won her personal approval. He learned her father's views plainly, however, when he was haled before the court on March 5, 1666, the governor himself presiding, and it is recorded that "Arthur

Howland, Juni^r, for inveigling of Mistris Elizabeth Prence and makeing motion of marriage to her, and procecuting the same contrary to her parrents likeing, and without theire consent, and directly contrary to theire mind and will, was centanced to pay a fine of fiue pounds and to find surties for his good behauior, and in speciall that hee desist from the vse of any meanes to obtaine or retaine her affections as aforesaid." On the same date the offending lover was bound over to the next term of court six months later, in the sum of £50, to "for the future refraine and desist from the vse of any meanes to obtaine or retaine her affections . . ." Presumably his word held good but his affections did not wane, for on July 2, 1667, it was again recorded that "Arthur Howland, Juni^r, did sollemly and seriously engage before this Court, that hee will wholly desist and neuer apply himselfe for the future, as formerly hee hath done, to Mistris Elizabeth Prence in reference vnto marriage." It would be interesting to know just how the young people won their point, for they were married the following December. Strangely enough, friendly feelings seem to have been established between the families and Arthur appears to have enjoyed greater tolerance than most Quakers, for in 1671 he held the office of constable, frequently served in juries, and named one son "Thomas" and another "Prince" in honor of their maternal grandfather; and in 1673 his wife, Elizabeth, was a beneficiary[5, 10] by the will of her father. It is evident, however, that Arthur retained his faith, for later (at least during the years 1679–84) he was sorely persecuted by the authorities and his wife suffered with him.[21]

Another situation annoying to THOMAS[1] PRENCE arose in connection with the marriage, about 1653, of Edward Perry to Mary [called Freeman] who was a close acquaintance of his own daughter MERCY (PRENCE) FREEMAN. Perry was a Quaker and persistently declined the proffered service of either clergyman or magistrate to legalize his marriage. Indeed, the court order that THOMAS[1] PRENCE should "see his [Perry's] marriage ratified as hee goeth home" [to Eastham] failed to impress or move Perry, so a fine of £5 was laid upon him, which was to be repeated at each succeeding general court[21] until the law was complied with. The public services of EDMOND[1] FREEMAN, himself, were curtailed for years because of his sympathy with the Quakers [see Freeman, p. 352].

Perhaps the truest summary of the life of THOMAS[1] may be found in these excerpts from the Plymouth Church, Colony and town records.[28]

"In 1673; was a very awfull frowne of God upon this chh & colony in the death of m^r THOMAS PRINCE the Governour in the 73d yeare of his Age: when

this colony was in a hazardous condition upon the death of Govr Bradford, the lott was cast upon m^r PRINC[E] to be his successour, God made him a repairer of breaches & a meanes to setle those shakings that were then threatning, he was excellently qualifyed for the office of a Governour, he had a countenance full of majesty & therein as well as otherwise was a Terrour to evill doers, he was very amiable & pleasant in his whole conversation & highly esteemed of the saints & acknowledged by all; In the time of his sicknesse the chh sought God by Fasting & Prayer, but God would not be intreated any longer to spare him, but he dyed on March, 29: & was honourably interred, April, 8:"

"Hee was a worthy gentleman, very pious, and very able for his office, and faithfull in the discharge thereof, studious of peace, a welwiller to all that feared God, and a terrour to the wicked. His death was much lamented, and his body honorably buryed att Plymouth . . ."

" . . . God made him a great blessing to his people . . ." "His integrity was proverbial . . ." " . . . had he been only a private Christian, there would yet have been seen upon him those ornaments of prayerfulness, and peaceableness . . . and a strict walk with God, which might justly have been made an example to a whole colony."[28] His last illness was not of long duration, for he presided at General Court on March 4, 1672–3, only twenty-five days before his death. A pear-tree[26] planted by THOMAS[1] PRENCE on his old Eastham farm lived and bore fruit through seven generations, certainly until after 1844 and, it is said, until nearly 1890.

THOMAS[1] PRENCE married[6] first at Plymouth[11, 18] [it being the ninth marriage in the colony] on August 5, 1624, PATIENCE[2] BREWSTER [see Brewster, p. 155]. He married secondly[6, 10] April 1, 1635, Mary Collier, called the daughter of William[1] Collier of Duxbury.[3, 4] He married thirdly[6] before December 8, 1662, Mrs. Apphia (Quicke[29]) Freeman, widow of Samuel Freeman, Sr., and married fourthly[6] after February, 1665–6, but before August 1, 1668, and probably before February 9, 1667–8, Mrs. Mary (——) Howes, widow of Thomas[1] Howes of Yarmouth. This wife became his widow and died[6] December 9, 1695. He made his will[5, 10] on March 13, 1672–3, and added a codicil March 28, 1673. The document was probated on June 5, 1673, and covered a large estate. It specified that his son JOHN[2] FREEMAN should receive "Speeds Cronicle and Wilsons Dictionary and the abridgment; and Simpsons history of the Church and Newmans Concordance."[5]

The children of THOMAS[1] and PATIENCE (BREWSTER) PRENCE, born in unknown order, were[5, 6, 7, 8, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14]

I. Rebecca[2], eldest child, b. before the division[7] of cattle June 1, 1627; d. before[15] July 18, 1651, when her husband married again; m. April 22, 1646, as his first wife, Edmond[2] Freeman (EDMOND[1]).

II. MERCY[2], b. at Plymouth about 1631; d. at Eastham[15] September 28, 1711, aged 80 years; m.[6] [recorded[7] at Eastham as February 13, and at Sandwich as February 14] February 13 or 14, 1649–50, JOHN[2] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 356]. Apparently she and her sister Hannah[2] had a double wedding.

III. Hannah[2], d. before November 23, 1698 when her husband married again; m. 1st, February 13, 1649–50, Nathaniel[2] Mayo (Rev. John[1]); m. 2nd, as his second wife, after June 5, 1667, and probably after February 12, 1667–8, but before September 11, 1671, JONATHAN[2] SPARROW (RICHARD[1]).

IV. Thomas[2], d. before March 13, 1672, in England;[5, 6] m. (——).

The children of THOMAS[1] PRENCE and his second wife, Mary Collier, were

V. Jane[2], b. November 1, 1637, at Duxbury;[11] m. at Eastham, as his second wife, January 9, 1660–1, Mark[2] Snow (Nicholas[1]).[6, 7, 8]

VI. Mary[2], m. John[2] Tracy (STEPHEN[1]) of Duxbury.[5]

VII. Sarah[2], b. about 1643–6; d. at North Dennis, March 3, 1706–7, in her sixtieth year; m. at Plymouth[11] her stepbrother, Jeremiah[2] Howes (Thomas[1]) of Yarmouth.[5, 6]

VIII. Elizabeth[2], m. December 9, 1667, Arthur[2] Howland[21] (Arthur[1])[5, 8] of Marshfield.

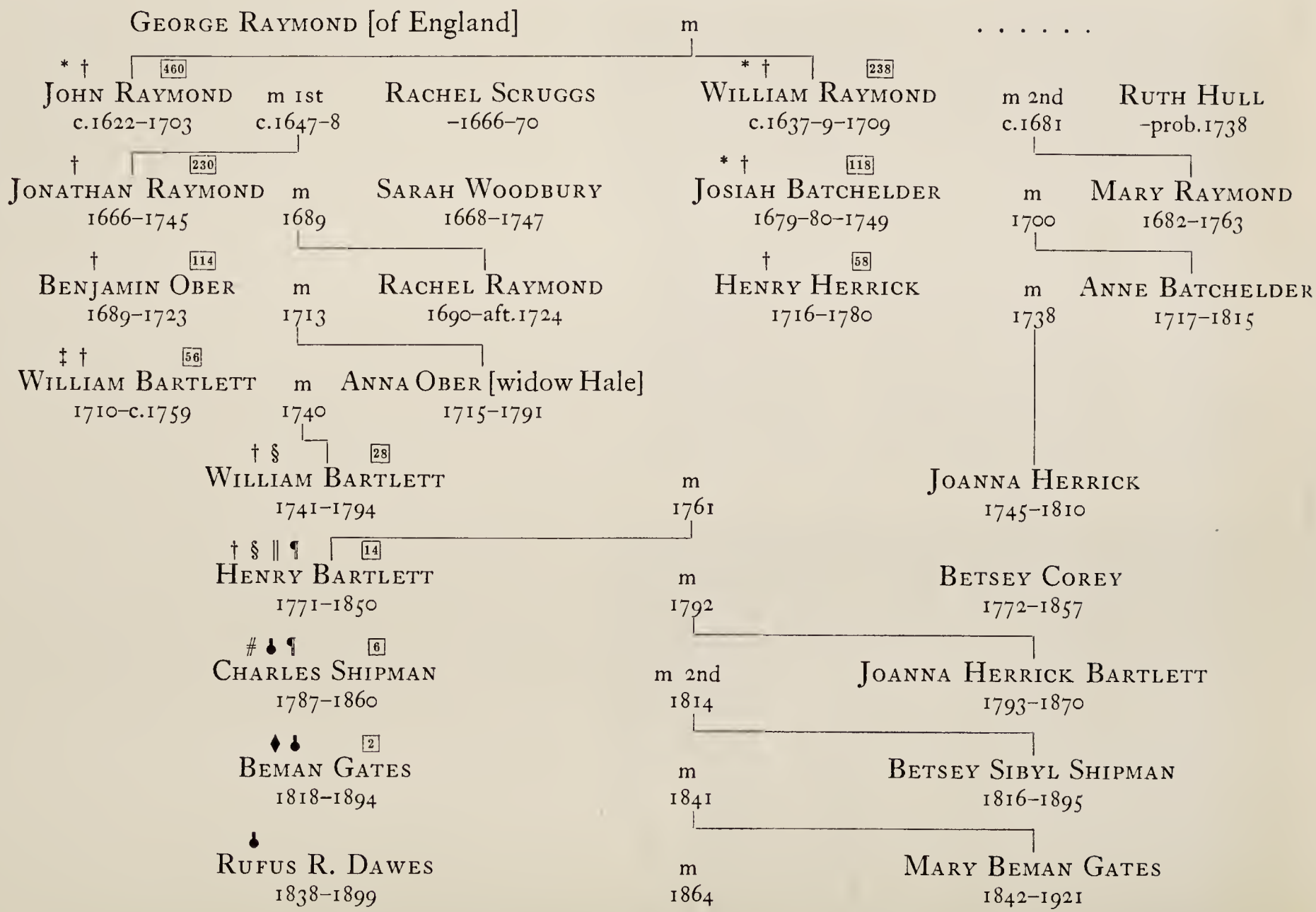
IX. Judith[2], m. 1st, December 28, 1665, Isaac Barker;[5, 7, 8] m. 2nd,[13, 14] 1691, William Tubbs.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, I, 245–6; III, 477–8.
2. Ancient Land Marks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1899, part 2, p. 209.
3. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1856, p. 362.
4. New England's Memorial, N. Morton, 1826, pp. 421–5.
5. Mayflower Descendant, III, 203–16.
6. Ibid., VI, 157–63, 230–5; XXIV, 129–30; New England Register, LIX, 217; LXVI, 357–8.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 9, 26, 28, 31, 34.
8. Mayflower Descendant, II, 182; VII, 14; XVII, 201; XVIII, 56, 193.
9. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1889, pp. 196, 292–9, 368–9, 477–8, 480, 490, 500, 506; Mourts' Relation, with notes by H. M. Dexter, 1865, p. 139.
10. Pope's Pioneers, pp. IX, XVI, 372; Gleanings of English Records, J. A. Emmerton and H. F. Waters in Essex Institute Historical Collections, XVII, 103–4.
11. Register of the Society of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, pp. 239, 315, 342, 424–5.
12. Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones, 1908, I, 21–4.
13. History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Winsor, 1849, pp. 9–10, 17, 64, 99–101, 293.
14. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 131, 219–20, 254, 276; II, 348, 362–4.
15. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 23, 26–30, 350–3; Plymouth Colony Records, II, 98.
16. Chronological History of New England, T. Prince, 1826, p. 198.
17. New England Family History, 1908–9, II, 289–306.
18. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 232, 347, 407; II, 152, 216–24, 263, 368, 402–3; Plymouth Colony Record, XII, 5.
19. King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 11, 455–64; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 21, 32, 36, 48, 60–1, 79–80, 116, 140; II, 8, 15, 33, 40, 47, 52, 56, 64, 71, 83, 100, 115, 123, 153, 166; III, 7, 26, 28, 30, 48, 67, 77, 99, 114–5, 117, 134–5, 138, 162, 187, 214; IV, 13–4, 36, 60, 90, 122, 142, 147, 179–80; V, 17, 34, 54–5, 89–90, 107; VII, 12–9, 21–4, 30–41, 43, 45, 54–5, 58, 63–4, 66, 68, 71, 73, 76, 78, 80; X, part 1, 31, 161, 187–8; part 2, 78, 113, 153, 178, 197, 254, 271, 290, 351–2; XI, 25.
20. Register of the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Dames, 1927, p. 447.

21. Howland Genealogy, F. Howland, 1885, pp. 38–42; The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 598–9; Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 22–30; Plymouth Colony Records, III, 124–6; IV, 140–2, 158–9; New England Quarterly, 1928, I, 331–2.
22. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 477–90, and see index; Plymouth Colony Records, III, 183, 189; V, 124, 126; XI, 124; History of Martha's Vineyard, Mass., C. E. Banks, 1911, II, West Tisbury Chapter, p. 61; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 233, 240, 302; II, 265–6; New England Judged, George Bishope, 1702–3, pp. 163, 168–77, 181, 185–204, 388; New Light on the Pilgrim Story, Rev. T. W. Mason, London, 1920, pp. 34–7; History of Scituate, S. Deane, 1831, pp. 245–8; Quakers in the American Colonies, R. M. Jones, 1911, pp. 58–64.
23. Winthrop's Journal, 1853, I, 134–5, 162, 182, 198, 201, 204; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 96–7; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 197, 392–6, 493–7, 546–7; History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 19, 24–56; History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 29–34; I, Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, VI, 196, 203–5; VIII, 220; History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 216–24, 232 et seq.
24. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 18, 28–31, 174, 182, 204–5, 212, 223, 269–71, 288–300, 314, 330–41; Mayflower Descendant, I, 215–9; Maine Historical Society Collections, 1847, II, 275–6; Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Ser. 4, IV, chapters XI-XII, 11–7; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 302–3, 477–8; Plymouth Colony Records, II, 144; III, 43–4, 95, 105, 170; VII, 257; XI, 35; XII, 127–8, 132.
25. Plymouth Colony Records, III, 138; IV, 44, 108, 184; V, 117, 124, 148–9; XI, 212, 239; Ancient Land Marks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1899, pp. 153, 347–8.
26. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 12–6; Story of the Pilgrims and Puritans, J. D. Sawyer, 1925, II, 161.
27. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 288–300; Plymouth Colony Records, XII, 90, 127–8, 132–3; Mayflower Descendant, I, 215–9.
28. Plymouth, Mass., Town Records, I, 198; Mather's Magnalia, I, Chapter II, 115–6; Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 34; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXII [Plymouth Church Records I], 147.
29. Mss. purchased from the late Mr. E. L. Smith ("Nauset") of Brookline, Mass.

RAYMOND (John and William)



* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Marblehead, Mass.

§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Athens, Ohio.

♦ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Saybrook, Conn.

RAYMOND (*John*)

JOHN[1] RAYMOND, born about[11] 1622, and his younger brother WILLIAM[1] [vide infra], from both of whom we descend, were early residents of Salem. The will of their father, GEORGE RAYMENT, of St. John's Parish, in Glaston, co. Somerset, England, was dated June 26, 1651, and proved October 30, following. Therein he gave one shilling to his son JOHN[1], in New England, £6 to his son WILLIAM[1], there, "if ever he doth come to Glaston to demand it" and twenty shillings to his daughter Elizabeth, also there, under the same conditions.[1]

It is not yet known when JOHN[1] came to America. He is first definitely found in Salem on March 2, 1653, when fifty acres of land were granted him,[2] yet he had been in New England before his father's will[1] was made in 1651, and, from the tone of that document, probably some time previous.*

He served many times in minor ways, such as on trial juries in 1657, 1661, 1662, 1664 and 1666, as a "surveyor of fences" to see that they were kept in repair in 1657–8 and 1662, as constable, collector of taxes and one of a committee to mend the highway and bridge between Frost Fish River and Wenham in 1659 and as grand juryman[9, 10] in 1668. In 1670 and 1676 he was a selectman,[11] in 1672 was chosen to estimate a highway and in 1679 to go in "perambulation" with his brother WILLIAM[1] and others on the bounds between Salem and Beverly.[10] About 1671 he and two others who

*He is said probably to have located first at Newichawannock,[3] now South Berwick, Maine [see map on p. 146], which was in Mason and Gorges' Grant on the Piscataqua River. If that be true he was likely with relatives for in 1631, or before, among the servants sent over by Captain Mason to his plantation, there was a William Raymond,[3a, 4, 5] and in 1631–3 on two or more trips made between England and this settlement the purser of the boat, "Pied Cow," was a John Raymond,[3a, 5, 6] both of these men, however, being so old that they are evidently other than our WILLIAM[1] and JOHN[1]. This exclusion is hereafter shown by depositions of the two latter men. It is possible also, that the Goodwife Raymond, "the widow" who was admitted into Beverly Church, September 12, 1669, and the "Alse Raymond" who died there July 7, 1675,[41] were the same person, and that person the wife of the earliest and unidentified William, who, in turn, may have been uncle to our emigrants.

The William Raymond of Newichawannock, formerly servant to Captain Mason, is believed to have been the man of the same name in Salem[7] in 1648, and he may have been there even earlier than that since one called "Mr. Raymond" and "brother Raymond" was an inhabitant[8] in 1636 and, if this person were related to our JOHN[1], it would account for that man's subsequent settlement at that place.

built a gallery in the meeting house were "to have each of them a seat in the fore-seat for their trouble."[38]

The wife of JOHN[1] was the object of language both strong and unladylike used by the wife of William Ellet, and the offender was presented at court in 1659 and required to pay a fine of ten shillings and costs or make acknowledgment at the next lecture at Salem. Presumably to avoid embarrassment she paid the fine.[12] JOHN[1] was frequently called upon throughout his life to take inventories of estates.[13]

In 1682 he deposed in regard to a lawsuit between BENJAMIN[2] BALCH and WILLIAM[2] DODGE over a sixteen-acre portion of the 200-acre farm granted to JOHN[1] BALCH in 1635 when[14] "1000 acres" were given to the five* "old planters" [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

During the course of the suit referred to, it was shown that the whole grant was originally held in common and, therefore, undivided. JOHN[1] RAYMOND, aged about sixty years, and PETER[2] WOODBURY, about forty, testified that they "were proprietors in part, of those farms which were equal in grant with old JOHN BALCH's farm and in common lump together, and they divided it, 261 acres to each farm"; and WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY, aged about forty-three, deposed that for twenty or thirty years BENJAMIN[2] BALCH had acted as owner in the division of the farms which were at first laid out in common.[14]

In 1654 JOHN[1] RAYMOND entered into an agreement with MARGERY (——) SCRUGGS, his wife's mother, whereby he became possessed of all the lands and goods of the late THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS, her husband, "in consideration of payment to her of £5 in hand to be given her directly and £5 at the hour of her death to be freely at her disposal; she was to have £20 a year paid quarterly as long as she lived and to have the use of necessary household effects."[16]

JOHN[1] married certainly before 1654,[16] and probably as early as 1647–8,[20, 21] RACHEL[2] SCRUGGS [see Scruggs, p. 724]. Three of the children died within two weeks. The baptism of the three youngest took place on November 13, 1670, at the Beverly Church after their mother's death,[18, 28] which occurred on May 2, 1666.[21] He married secondly, on August 20, 1668, Judith (——)

* It is an interesting fact that three of these five, ROGER[1] CONANT, JOHN[1] WOODBURY and JOHN[1] BALCH, of Beverly, were our direct ancestors and their portions long remained in the possession of our lineal ancestors, while of the other two grants, the one made to Peter Palfrey was sold to "Farmer" WILLIAM[1] DODGE and the one made to Captain Trask was transferred to THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS and, at his death, passed to JOHN[1] RAYMOND, who was the husband of that man's only child.[15] Thus the entire "1000 acres" was owned, and for many years was occupied, by men from whom we directly descend.

Woodbury,* widow[17] of William[2] Woodbury (WILLIAM[1]). Judith died at Beverly, October 31, 1702, aged 75 years.[22]

In 1697 JOHN[1] "came to the Lords supper"[17] so he was evidently then a church member. He deposed in 1657 that he was aged thirty-eight,[21, 23] and, in 1682, that he was aged sixty years,[14] and his death at Beverly, January 18, 1702–3, occurred when he was said to have been "about 87."[22]

The children of JOHN[1] and RACHEL (SCRUGGS) RAYMOND, all born probably at or near Beverly, although in unknown order, were[18, 21, 24a, 28, 37]

I. John[2], b. 1648 or 1650; d. July 5, 1725, at Middleborough, aged 77 years;[24] m., about 1675, Martha (——), and had seven children at Beverly.[24a] Removed to Middleborough between 1689 and 1704. He claimed to have been the first man to enter the Narragansett Fort during King Philip's War in 1675, aged 27 years at that time.[3a, 25] He received a grant of land in what is now Amherst, New Hampshire, for this military service.[26] It may have been he who was shot through both legs while in Quebec in 1690 under the command of Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, his uncle.[32]†

II. Thomas[2], b. 1652–3; d. at Salem before October 23, 1732,[3a, 20, 40] leaving a widow, Mary, who was in her second childhood.[21] It was doubtless his son, Thomas[3], rather than the father as sometimes claimed, who m. at Rochester, May 26, 1708, Mary Coombs.[27]

III. Bethia[2], b. June 14, 1655; d. December 10, 1662.

IV. Eliza[2], b. (—); d. December 25, 1662.

V. Abigail[2], b. (—); d. December 18, 1662.

VI. Rachel[2], b. February 14, 1659; undoubtedly the same as below, but see reference 19.

VII. Rachel[2], bap. November 13, 1670, at Beverly; d. before February 1, 1696–7; m. November 14, 1676, William Bradford.[42]

VIII. Abigail[2], bap. November 13, 1670, at Beverly.

IX. JONATHAN[2], see following.

The children of JOHN[1] RAYMOND and his second wife, Judith (——) Woodbury, born at Beverly, were[18, 22, 29, 30]

X. Nathaniel[2], b. March 15, 1670, bap. August 6, 1671; d. January 8, 1749; m.[43] before 1692, Rebecca[3] Conant (Lot[2], ROGER[1]).

XI. Benjamin[2], b. August 25, 1672; d. September 1, 1672.

JONATHAN[2] RAYMOND (*John*[1]) was born April 25 or 27, 1666, at Salem or Beverly,[18] baptized November 13, 1670,[28] and died January 14, 1745, at that place, in his "77th year."[30] He married,[30, 31] there, February 20, 1689, SARAH[3] WOODBURY [see Woodbury, p. 828].

* She is shown to have been still the widow Woodbury on April 26, 1668, when two of her children, by her first husband, were baptized.[17]

† A suggestion which may develop further relationship in this family is a reference in court in 1672 to Mary Cook, a cousin of John[2] Raymond.[23a]

He and his wife became members of the first church in Beverly on June 8, 1690, and were again listed as such about 1702.[28] In 1701 he held the position of ensign,[39] in that town, and in 1704 received by deed from his brother John[2] and wife, Martha, then of Middleborough, land in Beverly which had belonged to their uncle, WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, and his son,[3a, 21, 40] George[2].

The Second, or North, parish of Beverly was incorporated in October, 1713, and a meeting was held one month later at which a committee, including JONATHAN[2], was appointed to build a meeting house. This was presently erected at the "Horse Bridge"[33] and on December 28, 1715, a minister was ordained and the covenant signed by a group of men,[35] again including JONATHAN[2]. This number was augmented on April 26, following, by twenty members from the First Church,[38] among whom was SARAH (WOODBURY) RAYMOND, wife of JONATHAN[2]. At a meeting of this organization held April 26, 1722, he was made a deacon and continued in that office until his death.[35, 38]

JONATHAN[2] was a witness to a document asking a settlement of the estates of John Porter, senior, and his two sons, Joseph and Israel, and was appointed to assist in the division of their properties, for which service he received £5–2s.[36] In 1724 and 1725 he served as a representative from Beverly to the General Assembly[33, 35] and in 1724 was appointed guardian of his granddaughter, ANNA[3] OBER.

The children of JONATHAN[2] and SARAH (WOODBURY) RAYMOND, all born in Beverly, were[3, 30]

I. RACHEL[3], b. January 26, 1690; d. at Beverly after June 3, 1724, and perhaps on January 29, 1742, as[34] "wid. OBER." Married there February 12, 1712–3,[30] BENJAMIN[2] OBER [see Ober, p. 607].
II. Annah[3], b. March 6, 1691–2.
III. Jerusha[3], b. September 6 or 25, 1694.
IV. Benerges[3], b. May 14, 1695 or 6; d. February 19, 1746, at Beverly;[30] probably m. February 13, 1722–3, there, Jemima Meacham.[30]
V. Barnabas[3], b. March 30, 1701; d. February 14, 1734–5; probably m. April 2, 1724, there, Jane Lovett.[30]
VI. Lidia[3], b. May 24, 1706.
VII. Mary[3], b. August 3, 1710; d. April 8, 1723, at Beverly.[3]

REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 984; New England Register, XLIX, 136.
2. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 173.
3. Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 145–6 [helpful, but unfortunately quite erroneous in part].

3a. Hubbard Thompson Memorial, L. K. Stewart, 1914, pp. 227–31.
4. New England Register, II, 37–9.
5. Prince Society Publications, XVII, 60, 65, 344.
6. Provincial Papers of New Hampshire, I, 63–5, 72–3, 76.
7. Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 170; Farmer's Register, 1829, p. 240.
8. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 33, 40.
9. Ibid., I, 202; II, 15, 29, 48, 70.
10. Ibid., I, 214, 222, 228; II, 2, 26, 93, 156, 301–2.
11. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., II, 219–20; IV, 323; VI, 172.
12. Essex Antiquarian, XIII, 92.
13. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 238, 264, 306; II, 18, 88, 221, 232–3, 420; III, 42, 125, 199, 337, 349.
14. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VIII, 323–4.
15. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 681, 687, 694.
16. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 185–6.
17. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 28, 34, 86, 89; Baptisms of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1903, p. 18; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., II, 114–5.
18. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 274–5, 278; Vital Records of Salem, Mass., II, 224.
19. History of Mount Vernon, N. H., G. J. Smith, 1907, pt. II, p. 127.
20. Lineage Book of the Daughters of the Founders and Patriots, X, 21, No. 631.
21. Winchester Notes, Mrs. F. W. Hotchkiss, 1912, pp. 192–5; Essex Institute Historical Collections, III, 95.
22. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 539.
23. New England Register, VII, 360.
23a. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 25.
24. Catalogue of Members of the First Church of Middleborough, Mass., 1854, pp. 84, 94.
24a. Early Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 18.
25. General Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, pp. 391–2.
26. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 406–7; History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 689.
27. Vital Records of Rochester, Mass., II, 253.
28. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 28, 89, 264; Baptisms of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1903, p. 9.
29. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 89; Baptisms of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1903, p. 10.
30. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 256–7, 350, 539–41.
31. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 25.
32. Massachusetts Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1898, p. 141.
33. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 681, 745.
34. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 518–9.
35. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 696, 745.
36. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., III, 115–6, 118.
37. Early Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, pp. 18, 25–6, 32, 36.
38. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 246, 256–62.
39. Deed Book of Plymouth County, Mass., XVII, 24.
40. Probate Files of Essex County, Mass., No. 23283.
41. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 539; Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 14.
42. Essex Antiquarian, X, 180.
43. Conant Family, F. O. Conant, 1887, p. 161.

RAYMOND (John and William)

George Raymond [of England] m . . . . . .

- * † [460] John Raymond, c.1622–1703 — m 1st c.1647–8 Rachel Scruggs, –1666–70
  - † [230] Jonathan Raymond, 1666–1745 — m 1689 Sarah Woodbury, 1668–1747
    - † [114] Benjamin Ober, 1689–1723 — m 1713 Rachel Raymond, 1690–aft.1724
      - ‡ † [56] William Bartlett, 1710–c.1759 — m 1740 Anna Ober [widow Hale], 1715–1791
        - † § [28] William Bartlett, 1741–1794 — m 1761 Joanna Herrick, 1745–1810
          - † § ‖ ¶ [14] Henry Bartlett, 1771–1850 — m 1792 Betsey Corey, 1772–1857
            - # ♁ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman, 1787–1860 — m 2nd 1814 Joanna Herrick Bartlett, 1793–1870
              - ♦ ♁ [2] Beman Gates, 1818–1894 — m 1841 Betsey Sibyl Shipman, 1816–1895
                - ♁ Rufus R. Dawes, 1838–1899 — m 1864 Mary Beman Gates, 1842–1921
- * † [238] William Raymond, c.1637–9–1709 — m 2nd c.1681 Ruth Hull, –prob.1738
  - * † [118] Josiah Batchelder, 1679–80–1749 — m 1700 Mary Raymond, 1682–1763
    - † [58] Henry Herrick, 1716–1780 — m 1738 Anne Batchelder, 1717–1815
      - Joanna Herrick, 1745–1810

* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Marblehead, Mass.
§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♁ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Saybrook, Conn.

RAYMOND (William)

WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, younger brother of our JOHN[1] [vide supra], was the son of GEORGE RAYMOND,* or Rayment, of St. John's Parish, in Glaston, co. Somerset, England. The will of the latter man dated June 26, 1651, and proved October 30 following, speaks of WILLIAM[1] as being then in New England,[1] but he must have come over very lately for he deposed on December 28, 1697, that he had come to this country about[2] 1652. He was many years younger than his brother JOHN[1], for a number of depositions of his own place his birth[2, 3] about 1637–9.

WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND spent his life in Beverly and, as an inhabitant there, subscribed to the building of a meeting house[4] in 1663. He bought for £30 in 1662, the dwelling house, outhouse and four acres of land formerly belonging to William Ellet,† about 1668 he petitioned for another parcel[4] and he resided in the second parish.[14, 17] Though he was prominent in military affairs his civic duties were not neglected, as he did jury duty at "tryalls" in 1667, 1676 and 1681; served as one of the "Sur vei[rs]" [for] "Cape Ann side" in 1667–8;[4] as selectman[5, 5a] in 1670, 1683 and 1689; as constable, 1674 and 1675, and as a deputy to the General Court in 1685 and 1686. He was appointed an arbitrator in 1671 in a case where crops had been destroyed; he filed charges in 1678 against a notorious family of the neighborhood; was frequently a witness to deeds and agreements; was often appointed to take inventories and, occasionally, acted as a witness in lawsuits.[6] In one of the latter, in and about 1682, wherein two of our ancestors BENJAMIN[2] BALCH

* Various erroneous claims have been made in an attempt to show that the unidentified William Raymond, who was resident in Maine in 1631 and, apparently, in Beverly, Massachusetts, in 1648, was the father of JOHN[1] and WILLIAM[1] as well as of Richard Raymond of Salem and of Connecticut. Indeed, he has even been confused with WILLIAM[1] who was not born until years after the older man of the name came to Maine.[2a] This claim is disproved by the English will referred to above. However, a similarity of given names in the various families, as well as the common place of residence, suggests the probability that the early William may have been an uncle and the Richard perhaps a cousin of JOHN[1] and WILLIAM[1], and the evidence that there were other relatives in this country is proved by a reference in 1672 to a "Mary Cook cousin of John Raymond" Junior.[5]

† Whose wife had been fined for slander of RACHEL (SCRUGGS) the wife of JOHN[1] RAYMOND.

and WILLIAM[2] DODGE were carrying on a lengthy contest for a piece of land, WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND was an important witness and he, with another, was charged by the opposing attorney with having sworn falsely and, by common agreement, decision in the matter was left to the court,[6] but the verdict is not found of record [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

In 1679 the selectmen of Beverly appointed a committee of six to "goe in perambulation" of the bounds between their town and Salem with a similar committee from that town. It is interesting to note that four of the six Beverly men were ancestors of ours, namely, JOHN[1] RAYMOND, WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, PETER[2] WOODBURY and ANDREW[1] ELIOTT, and that their report carries the signatures of each and is still extant.[7]

WILLIAM[1] was in arrears in 1674 on the minister's rate and on the meeting house rate,[8] was among those of Beverly who took the oath of fidelity[8] on December 3, 1677, and he joined Beverly Church in full communion, in his later life on November 20, 1692.[9] He was indemnified in 1691 by the town for loss which he sustained as its commissioner during the incumbency of Governor Andros[14, 17] [see Chapman, p. 187].

However, the military record of WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, stretching over a long period of years, is the one which throws the greater brilliance on his name. He was a member of the company under Captain Lothrop at the capture of St. Johns and Port Royal [see map on p. 146] in 1654[8a] and, as late as November 25, 1679, was appointed as one to represent the town of Beverly at Salem Court in the controversy with Captain Moore over freight charges on a bell brought from the "New Friary" at Port Royal, Nova Scotia, in 1654, for the use of the church at Beverly.[8a] At the trial of this case it was brought out by testimony of men present at the fall of those Acadian towns that Captain Lothrop asked his commanding officer there to give him a bell from the spoils for use on his home church. He was granted permission to appropriate the one from the friary at Port Royal, which was, therefore, taken down and loaded on Captain Richard Moore's ketch for shipment. Apparently, Captain Moore refused to deliver it on arrival at Beverly on the technicality that no bill of lading was presented in claiming it and that his freight charges had not been paid, though it was shown that he had not required bills of lading in other cases. He kept the bell in his yard for a considerable time—probably for some years—when some of the Beverly men decided to employ drastic measures so went to his home, openly, though in his absence, took the bell and put it to its intended use in the church.[9a]

Among these men was WILLIAM[2] DODGE (WILLIAM[1])[9a] and tradition says that HENRY[2] HERRICK was also one of the number.

WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND was a participant from Beverly[8a] in the Great Swamp Fight,[25] in which Captain Joseph Gardner,* with his Salem Company, stormed and first entered the Narragansett Fort [see Cooke, p. 248]. This action cost the lives of Captain Gardner, with four of his men and the injury of ten others, and tradition says that John[2] Raymond (JOHN[1]), nephew of WILLIAM[1], was the first man to enter this fortified enclosure.

In 1683 the men of Beverly and Wenham desired to form a squadron of troopers among themselves and so petitioned the court, which first ordered the unit dismounted and formed as infantry but, upon protest of its men, allowed it to continue,[14] "so as they prejudice not the ffoote company there, and doe appoint WILLJAM RAYMOND, leift., Jn°. Dodg, Señ. cornet, & WM. DODGE, the son of Farmer DODGE, Señ., to be quarter m^r to the sajd troope."[10] In this capacity WILLIAM[1] was acting commander of the unit. Evidence is found that he served not only at the Swamp Fight but also under Captains Poole and Nicholas Manning during 1675–6 and had credits of £4–2–7 and £1–16–0 under them. The men had been promised, as they gathered on December 10, 1675, on Dedham Plain to march against the Narragansett Fort, that "if they played the man, took the fort and drove the enemy out of the Narragansett country, which is their great seat, they should have a gratuity of land beside their wages."[11] Consequently, in 1685, they made petition for such, and a tract eight miles square was granted them in the Nipmaug† country.[10] This was entirely inadequate to serve so many, and was so isolated that the majority did not care to claim it. The matter ran on until 1727, when a petition was presented to the General Court recounting these earlier facts and requesting that land might then be granted to the survivors or to the heirs of those who were deceased. This plea was acceded to in 1728 to the extent of two townships, one of which was called "Souhegan West," now Amherst, New Hampshire, and at this place land was assigned to settle the claim of Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, then deceased, through his heir,[11] Ebenezer Raymond, who settled there.[12] The matter of apportionment for many of these men was delayed for long, the two townships were seen to be insufficient[11] and it was finally decided that a township six miles square should serve 120 claimants and that a careful list of such should be

* Son of our THOMAS GARDNER [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

† The vicinity of Mendon in Worcester County, Massachusetts.

prepared. By 1733 this roster was completed and showed 840 claimants, necessitating assignment of additional territory, totaling seven townships, so that it was 1735, or sixty years after the service was rendered, before the claims were met in full.

The next notable service of WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND was as Captain of the Beverly Company in the expedition against Canada in 1690.[13] This was a most unfortunate affair showing criminally poor management by the Commander-in-Chief, combined with misfortunes of weather and disease. It was undertaken in the vain belief that the spoils would at least pay for the cost of the expedition,[17] and with the knowledge that if the New Englanders could subdue Canada it would give them, and more especially their commander, prestige with the powers of England.

A preliminary effort begun in March or April, 1690, against "Accady" involved 700 soldiers and seven or eight small ships and was successful.[13] After this victory they returned to their homes and a force of 2,300 men was gathered with thirty or more vessels to carry them to Quebec, for they believed that if that place were taken, all Canada would submit to their control.[13] Sir William Phipps was in charge of this, as well as of the earlier effort. The start was made early in August, with four months' provisions. Smallpox broke out among them before they reached open water and the bodies of four men were "thrown overboard at Cap An," three at Nantasket, and one more was buried at Weymouth. For various reasons, some unavoidable, and some not, they did not reach the vicinity of Quebec until October.[13] Though they had theoretically planned a surprise attack they unwisely lay for three weeks within three days' sail of their objective, so that their presence became known and, though there would normally have been about 600 men in the town, that number was augmented to 3,000 or more before the New Englanders finally attacked. Even then there was no concerted plan of action, no suitable head nor acceptable plan[13] of attack. The results were wholly disastrous, for men were landed in a swampy spot across the river from Quebec and left for days without sufficient rations or equipment, and without boats which were essential if the men were to be transported to any spot where their presence could be effective. Then the ships of war attacked the town prematurely, while the land forces were thus isolated, and their supply of ammunition was wasted so rapidly in this ineffectual way that very shortly further action was impossible.[13] These are only instances of the continued miscarriages which resulted from the intolerably poor manage-

ment of the whole affair. The season had by this time advanced so far that extremely bad weather set in and a decision was finally made that they had better return home where they arrived early in November, consoling themselves that a part of their number had survived.[13] They had suffered extremely from cold, hunger, discouragement and smallpox which continued among them, as well as from a devastating fever. The master of one of the vessels reported on his return that he had buried at sea from his vessel over sixty men.[13] Insubordination occurred, but small wonder when their superior showed himself so incapable. More men were drowned accidentally or died of disease after their return home, than were killed in action at Quebec; two vessels were cast away and one was burned, and the financial cost to the colony was estimated at £50,000 in addition to their loss of an "abundance of their young men,"[17] which was said to total 1,000.

The first issuance by the infant colony of paper money or bonds of indebtedness, was necessitated by this complete collapse of the bright hopes of gain and glory held out to the citizens by the vainglorious leaders.[13, 17] Petitions were made to the General Court about 1735 by the survivors of this expedition and the heirs of those who were deceased, that they might receive grants of land in view of the suffering endured by them, as well as of their loss through depreciation of the currency in which they were paid. It has been said that, under the guise of recognition of patriotism, these petitions were instigated and encouraged by the government itself, which was then in controversy with New Hampshire as to its boundary line, and theorized that the possession of and actual settlement by its inhabitants, of some of the territory in question, would be very convincing arguments in the ultimate decision.[14] There seems to be reason to believe this statement, for about this period many extensive grants were made by Massachusetts in what is now New Hampshire to soldiers of both the Swamp Fight in 1675 and the Canadian Expedition in 1690, as well as in the settlement of nine so-called "Towns for Defense" or border protection, in that locality.[14]

The petitioner for such grants who was most active in behalf of the Beverly company, of which WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND had been captain, was Colonel Robert Hale,* grandson of the Reverend John Hale who participated in the Canada Expedition as Chaplain, and the grant first made to this company was originally called "Beverly-Canada"† or "Hales-town." For some reason,

* Brother of the Henry Hale who was the first husband of our ANNE (OBER) Hale BARTLETT.

† Combining the name of the town from which the men came with that of the locality in which they fought.[13, 14, 16]

perhaps that of the boundary controversy between the two states, settlement was not made on this grant,[14] but in 1765 a new tract in Cumberland County, Maine, was given and in 1767 was confirmed, to these beneficiaries in lieu of the new New Hampshire site, and was named "Raymond"[15] in memory of Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND. Of the petitioners in 1735 who had paid a proportionate share of the expenses and who claimed the right of Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND as his heir and representative[16, 24] was JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER who had married the Captain's daughter, MARY[2] RAYMOND.

The first marriage of WILLIAM[1] is usually stated to have occurred about 1665 and the birth of his eldest son about 1666,[25] but the fact that "Wm Raiment jun." of Beverly was admitted a freeman[19] on May 16, 1683, makes it seem certain that he was born at least twenty-one years before, in which case the first marriage of WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND to Hannah Bishop, daughter[20] of Edward, must have been nearer to 1660. He married secondly, it is said, in 1681, RUTH[2] HULL [see Hull, p. 468], who survived him and administered his estate.[21] He died at Beverly,[22] January 29, 1708–9, aged about seventy-two, leaving a will dated December 8, 1705, and probated February 25, 1708–9, which made bequests[23] to his daughters, MARY[2] RAYMOND, wife of JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER and Ruth[2] Raymond, wife of Jonathan[3] Batchelder.

The children of WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND and his first wife, Hannah Bishop, doubtless all born in Beverly, were[22]

I. William[2], b. probably about 1662; d. in January before the 23rd,[26] 1701; m. Mary Kettle, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Allen)[18, 27] Kettle.
II. Edward[2], bap. July 12, 1668; d. November 6, 1727; m. May 1, 1695, Mary Herrick [probably daughter of Ephraim[2] and Mary (Cross) Herrick].
III. George[2], bap. October 30, 1670; probably he who married on March 28, 1698, Jerusha[3] Woodbury (PETER[2], JOHN[1]).
IV. Hannah[2], bap. July 23, 1676.
V. Abigail[2], bap. July 23, 1676; perhaps she who married, April 26, 1698, John Giles.

The known children of WILLIAM[1] and RUTH (HULL) RAYMOND, born undoubtedly in Beverly, but at unknown dates, were[23]

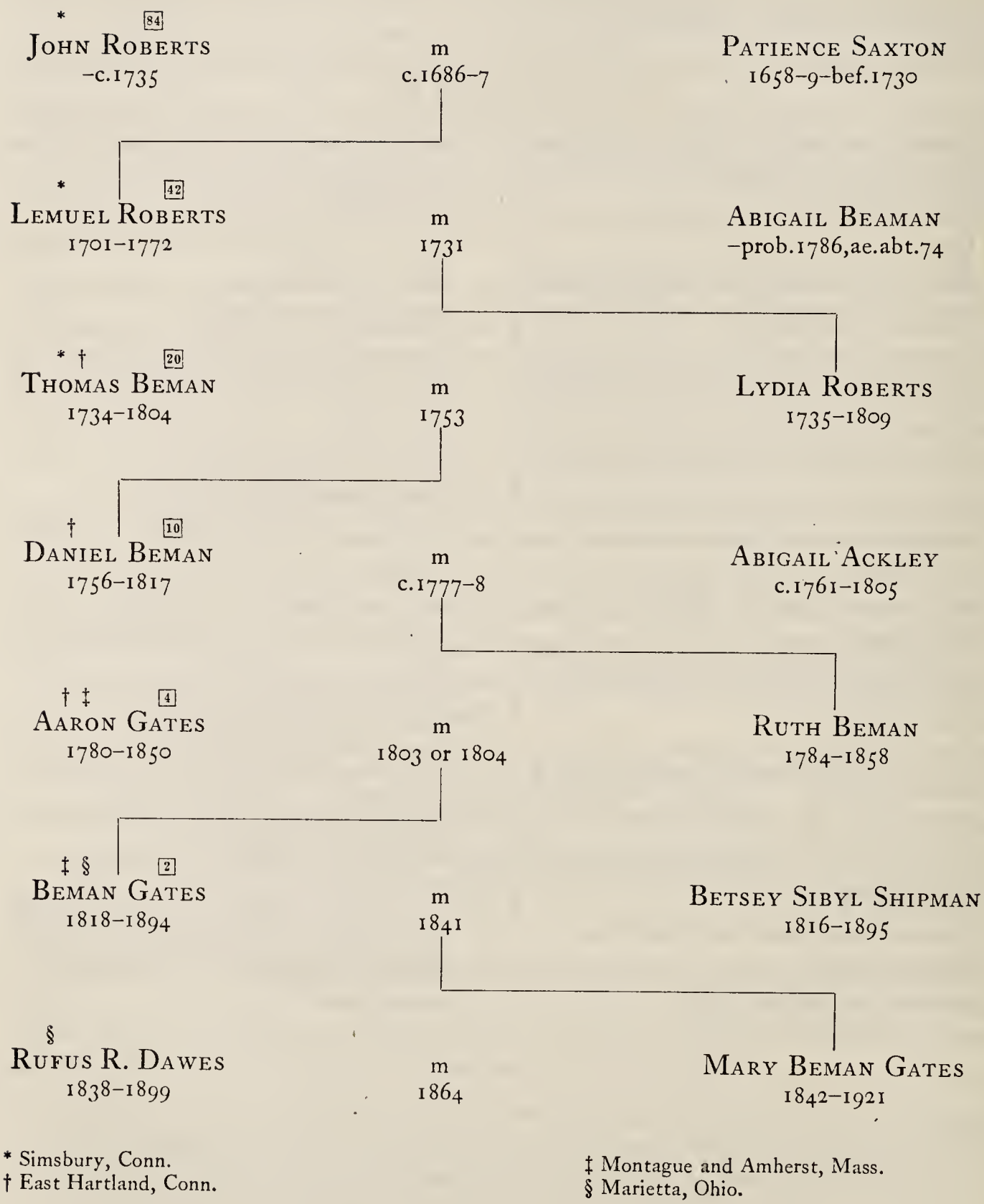
VI. Ruth[2], b. (—); d. after 1747;[18] m.[23, 28] at least as early as 1702–3, Jonathan[3] Batchelder (JOHN[2], JOHN[1]), brother of the husband of her sister MARY[2].
VII. MARY[2], b. May 3, 1682;[28] d. October 26, 1763, probably at Salem; married there[18, 23, 28] December 18, 1700, JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER [see Batchelder, p. 100].
VIII. Ebenezer[2], b. about 1689–90; d. May 21, 1747, in his 58th year, at Beverly;[29b] m. there (int. December 12, 1714[29d]), January 6, 1714–5, Joanna[4] Herrick (JOSEPH[3],

HENRY[2], HENRY[1]).[29b, 29c] As heir of Capt. WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND, Ebenezer[2] claimed rights in Narragansett Township No. 3, now Amherst,[12] N. H. His first recorded son was named "William."[29a, b, c, d, e, 30]

REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 984; New England Register, XLIX, 136.
2. Ibid., XXXIII, 161.
2a. History of Medford, Mass., C. Brooks, 1855, p. 535.
3. New England Register, VII, 360; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 103, 332; VIII, 7, 323; Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 539.
4. Town Records of Salem, Mass., II, 82, 89, 93; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 99, 375; VI, 215; VIII, 105, 187.
5. Ibid., IV, 323, 331; V, 25, 427; VI, 49; VII, 55; Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, V, 476, 514.
5a. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 745; Massachusetts Historical Collections, Ser. 3, IV, 290.
6. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VI, 242; VII, 322, 390; VIII, 190, 396.
7. Town Records of Salem, Mass., II, 301; Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VIII, 19.
8. Ibid., VI, 46, 401.
8a. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 683, 689; Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1849, II, 504.
9. Records of the First Church of Beverly, W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 30.
9a. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., VII, 310–2; Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 18.
10. Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, V, 409–10, 487.
11. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 164–7, 260, 278, 406–7, 423.
12. History of Amherst, New Hampshire, D. F. Secomb, 1883, pp. 22, 30.
13. Massachusetts Year Book of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1898, pp. 112–3, 119–41.
14. History of Weare, New Hampshire, W. Little, 1888, pp. 43–4, 61–9.
15. History of Cumberland Co., Maine, pub. by Everts & Peck, 1880, p. 354.
16. Massachusetts Year Book of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1898, pp. 141–50, 153, 203.
17. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 32–3; History of Essex Co., Mass., R. Crowell, 1868, p. 97.
18. Essex Antiquarian, II, 135; VII, 107–8.
19. New England Register, III, 345.
20. Essex Antiquarian, VIII, 122.
21. Essex Institute Historical Collections, VIII, 73.
22. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 273, 278; II, 255–6, 540.
23. Essex County, Mass., Probate Records [at Salem, Mass.], No. 23286.
24. Maine Historical and Genealogical Register, IV, 245–6.
25. District of Columbia Year Book, Society of Colonial Wars, 1904, pp. 115–6.
26. Essex Institute Historical Collections, VIII, 219.
27. Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 33–4.
28. Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, pp. 356, 364, 366–9.
29a. Colonial Families of the United States, G. N. Mackenzie, 1915, V, 350.
29b. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 256, 539.
29c. Ibid., I, 275–8.
29d. Early Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 44.
29e. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, p. 151.
30. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 420, 423.

ROBERTS



* Simsbury, Conn.
† East Hartland, Conn.
‡ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
§ Marietta, Ohio.

ROBERTS

JOHN[1] ROBERTS, our earliest known ancestor of the name, is first found at Simsbury, Connecticut, where, on May 21, 1688, he was granted ten acres, lying along the "Captains Brook," for a house lot; also twenty acres along Salmon Brook, with the requirement that he should live in the town for five years and improve the land.[1,2] These grants of land, which were located in the westerly portion of Simsbury, near the Granby line [see map on p. 627], he sold on March 3, 1693–4, to John Saxton* and received therefor twenty acres along Salmon Brook and two tracts of four and ten acres, respectively, along Captain Newbury's Brook.[2a] On February 5, 1696–7, he purchased from Samuel Allen, for £30, his homestead and two other tracts of land.[3,4] He probably moved, about this time, to this new home in the eastern part of the town, for the family is afterwards found there.[4]

JOHN[1] is listed as paying town rates in 1694 and minister's rates[3] in 1696 and 1701. He held various offices in Simsbury, being elected[5] fence viewer "for the West side of the River" in December, 1692, and March, 1693–4; inspector of the town list in January, 1702–3; fence viewer for the eastern part in December, 1707, 1714, 1716 and 1718; and hayward and poundkeeper in December, 1724, 1725, 1727 and 1729.

At different times he gave tracts of land[5] to his sons, Richard[2], John[2] and Nathaniel[2], and on May 13, 1730, signed a deed giving all of his remaining real estate to his son William[2], under the provisions of a bond made by the latter at the same time which admitted a debt of £300, owed in return, unless he allowed his father the use of all the new house, half of the cellar, half of the barn and half of the product of the land during the father's life. JOHN[1] had married, date and place unknown, PATIENCE[2] SAXTON [see Saxton, p. 719], but she evidently had died before this transaction for another clause of the agreement provided that if the father should marry and leave a widow she

* Supposed to be his brother-in-law.

should have one-third of the product of the land as long as she remained his relict.[6, 7] He died between the last-mentioned date and March 26, 1735, when administration on his estate was granted[8] to his son Nathaniel[2]. The inventory,[11] taken May 5, 1735, by SAMUEL[3] BEAMAN, Jr., and exhibited the next day, showed only personal property amounting to £34–16–00.

The children of JOHN[1] and PATIENCE (SAXTON) ROBERTS, all born at Simsbury, were[2, 8, 9, 10]

I. Penelope[2], b. January 24, 1688; d. 1697.
II. Ann[2], b. February 10, 1689.
III. Richard[2], b. April 2, 1692; d. 1751; m. Deborah Moses.*
IV. Sarah[2], b. April 27, 1694; m. Gillet Adams.
V. John[2], b. July 19, 1696, bap. July 3, 1698; m. Frances (——).
VI. William[2], bap. June 25, 1699; d. January 24, 1761; m. March 12, 1728, Sarah Mills.
VII. LEMUEL[2], see following.
VIII. Nathaniel[2], bap. March 24, 1704; d. March 4, 1776; m. 1st, November, 1743, Margaret Marsh; m. 2nd, November 7, 1748, Esther Loomis.

LEMUEL[2] ROBERTS was born in May or June, 1701, at Simsbury, baptized September 7, following, at that place,[9] and died[12, 16] there September 10, 1772. He married[13] at Simsbury, November 7, 1731, ABIGAIL[3] BEAMAN [see Beaman, p. 111].

He was chosen[14] to hold various offices, such as hayward and poundkeeper in December, 1730; fence viewer in December, 1738, 1749, 1751 and 1752; surveyor of highways in 1742 and 1765; and grand juror in 1735, 1743, 1747, 1750 and 1761.

LEMUEL[2], with several others of Simsbury, had been employed by Jonathan Ellsworth of Windsor to cart "iron oar." Legal action for trespass against each one of these employees was taken by William Thrall† of Windsor, the cases were tried before a justice of the peace and the resulting costs in each suit were charged to Ellsworth, the employer, who was thus adjudged to be wholly responsible. The trial of LEMUEL[2], in this matter, was held on April 4, 1733. On May 7, 1734, Ellsworth petitioned the General Court to reverse these decisions and their action not only granted this request but also

*Richard[2] Roberts' wife, Deborah[4] Moses, was the daughter of John[3] Moses and Deborah[3] Thrall (TIMOTHY[2], WILLIAM[1]); and another child in that family, namely, Caleb[4] Moses, married Hannah[3] Beaman (SAMUEL[2], SIMON[1]). Add to these facts the statement that our LEMUEL[2] ROBERTS married into the Beaman family as did also his daughter LYDIA[3] ROBERTS and the possible combinations of relationships seem varied and intricate enough to confuse a mental gymnast.

† Doubtless he was William[4], son of Timothy[3] Thrall, who in turn was son of our TIMOTHY[2] (WILLIAM[1]).

restored all he had lost, allowing his costs amounting to £14–02–02, and permitted execution of this award on July 20, following.[15a]

The town of Simsbury had evidently chosen LEMUEL[2] as the lieutenant of its first company or train band for, in October, 1743, the General Assembly confirmed him as such and ordered him to be so commissioned.[15]

It is worthy of note that this Roberts family, in the three generations of which we treat, lived as neighbors to the SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN family [although their places of residence were differently named at times], intermarried with it and mutually contributed to our ancestry. The former, without change of location, was first of Simsbury, but in that part of the eastern section which, by a resolution of the General Assembly on October 14, 1736, became Wintonbury parish; the latter family also resided in that township but in Scotland parish which two districts were incorporated to form Bloomfield at a later date.[15b] Wintonbury is interesting from the fact that it was made up from portions of Windsor, Farmington and Simsbury, a blend of name as well as of territory. It is definitely stated that this new parish was to include the houses of LEMUEL[2] ROBERTS and others.[15a]

He is listed as a sergeant[15] in a muster roll of the military company under Lieutenant Colonel David Whitney raised for the relief of Fort William Henry in August, 1757.

He was a principal in many real estate deals in Simsbury and vicinity. One deed, dated December 19, 1744, is still extant and shows that he and his wife, ABIGAIL, Caleb Moses and his wife, Hannah, and Jonathan Case and his wife, Mary, all of Simsbury, conveyed their interests in land formerly owned by their father, SAMUEL[2] BEAMAN, deceased, of that place.[14, 19]

The gravestone of LEMUEL[2], still standing in 1896, in Wintonbury parish, now Bloomfield, stated that his age was seventy-two years, but the church record gave it as seventy.[14] He left a will dated April 9, 1770, which divided[17, 21] his estate among his wife, two sons and four daughters, including LYDIA BEAMAN. The inventory showed property to the amount of £885–12–01 of which £790 was in real estate.[17] The date of death of his widow, ABIGAIL, has not yet been definitely determined although it may be inferred that it took place after the decease of her son, Lemuel[3], on December 19, 1789, for the account filed by the administrators of his estate in 1791 or 1797 included an item of "Moveables over charged belonging to Wid. Abigail Roberts."[17, 20] The Wintonbury Church records, however, show the death on

May 8, 1786, of "ye widow Robberts in ye 74th year of her age"[20a] and this probably referred to her.

The children of LEMUEL[2] and ABIGAIL (BEAMAN) ROBERTS, all born in Simsbury, were[2, 13, 17, 18]

I. Abigail[3], b. September 15, 1732; d. September 20, 1773, unmarried.
II. LYDIA[3], b. April 14, 1735; d. at Hartland, March 30, 1809; m. at Simsbury, January 18, 1753, THOMAS[4] BEMAN,[2, 13, 17] her first cousin [see Beaman, p. 112].
III. Phebe[3], b. December 6, 1738; m., September 29, 1768, John Waters.
IV. Lucy[3], b. September 11, 1740; m., December 29, 1766, John Fitch, the inventor of steam navigation.
V. Lemuel[3], b. October 2, bap. October 17, 1742; d. December 19, 1789; m., December 8, 1763, Ruth Woodford.
VI. Nathaniel[3], bap. March 24, 1745; d. July 31, 1800; m., February 27, 1763, Rhoda Woodford.
VII. Margaret[3], bap. May 28, 1749; d. January 8, 1752.

REFERENCES

1. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, p. 5.
2. New England Register, XLII, p. 242; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 641.
2a. Simsbury, Conn., Land Records, I, 217.
3. Ibid., I, 225; History of Simsbury, Granby and Canton, Conn., N. A. Phelps, 1845, pp. 152–3.
4. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, p. 6.
5. Ibid., p. 7.
6. Ibid., p. 8–9.
7. Simsbury, Conn., Land Records, V, 280–1.
8. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, p. 10.
9. Church Records of Simsbury, Conn., D. Woodbridge, 1894, pp. 15, 19, 21.
10. Vital Records of Simsbury, Conn., trans. A. C. Bates, 1898, pp. 21, 24.
11. Hartford, Conn., Probate Records, XII, 23; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1906, III, 191.
12. New England Register, LXXI, 304.
13. Simsbury, Conn., Town Acts, III, 233; Vital Records of Simsbury, Conn., trans. A. C. Bates, 1898, pp. 115, 125, 214, 218; Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 153.
14. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, p. 11.
15. Colonial Records of Connecticut, VIII, 577; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, IX. 208.
15a. Colonial Records of Connecticut, VII, 504; Ibid., VIII, 76–7.
15b. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 29.
16. Vital Records of Simsbury, Conn., trans. A. C. Bates, 1898, p. 214.
17. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, pp. 12–4.
18. New England Register, LXXI, 86–7, 155; Vital Records of Simsbury, Conn., trans. A. C. Bates, 1898, p. 115.
19. Simsbury, Conn., Land Records, VII, 135.
20. Simsbury, Conn., Probate Records, III, 196.
20a. New England Register, LXXI, 309.
21. Simsbury, Conn., Probate Records, I, 54–5.

SAXTON

* [170] Richard Saxton [c.1621?]–1662	m 1646 or 1647	Sarah Cook –1674
† [84] John Roberts –c.1735	m c.1686–7	Patience Saxton 1658–9–bef.1730
† [42] Lemuel Roberts 1701–1772	m 1731	Abigail Beaman –prob.1786 ae.abt.74
† ‡ [20] Thomas Beman 1734–1804	m 1753	Lydia Roberts 1735–1809
‡ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
‡ § [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
§ ‖ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‖ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Windsor, Conn.
† Simsbury, Conn.
‡ East Hartland, Conn.
§ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.

SAXTON

OUR ancestor, RICHARD[1] SAXTON,* of Windsor, Connecticut, is first found of record in connection with the settlement of the estate of the Reverend Ephraim Huit, of Windsor, who died[1] September 4, 1644. In the Reverend Mr. Huit's account book there is the following item:[4]

"RICHARD SEXTON oweth me 16 [li] and for the 2 yeeres to come."[1]

This suggests a term of service from which he would be free in or about 1646. It may have been an arrangement to defray the cost of his passage from England, the service of an apprentice or that of a bound boy during his minority. He married[1, 3] on April 16, 1647, at Windsor, SARAH COOK.†

Suggestion of little items which helped to make up the daily life of this family may be seen in the following excerpt[10] from the account-book of Henry[2] Wolcott, of Windsor, covering the period 1649–52:

"RICHARD SAXTON owes for an ox	£5	10	0
of which he hath paid in veale	0	1	8
It in beefe and suet	0	2	0
It he is to pay to James Innos	0	3	8
It he paid to Walter ffiler	0	8	0
It he payed me when I payed in the rivers mouth rate	0	10	4
It one quarter of veale	0	2	6
It a quarter of veale I fecht	0	2	0
It halfe halfe a kid	0	2	0
It 40 pound of cotton wooll at 10d	1	13	4
It one poun for there remaines due to me	2	4	6
RICHARD SAXTON had the cannooe 4 days	0	4	8
It 8 days	0	9	4
It he had the cannooe 4 dayes	0	4	8
It for one peck of apples	0	1	3
of which Elizabeth Whilly payed	0	5	0
It in vele	0	1	3
It he payd to henry Denslow for me aboute	0	7	0
It for a pound of suet	0	0	6

* A youth named Richard Saxton, aged fourteen years, came from London to New England on the "Blessing," John Lester, Master, in[2] July, 1635. This may have been our RICHARD[1] but no proof has been found, nor have we any knowledge of his whereabouts between the time of his arrival in 1635 and the above mentioned date. There was a George Saxton of Windsor and Westfield who may have been his brother.[3]

† Nathaniel Cook of Windsor assisted in the administration of the estate of SARAH (COOK) SAXTON and it has been theorized that he may have been her brother[3] but no proof of that has been found.[1]

It Thomas Parsons will pay for 4 dayes (shorthand)	0	4	8
Item for 15½ pound of pork at 4d p pound	0	5	2
It for my ferry rate	0	4	4
It for a quarter of veale	0	1	6
It for the cannooe to (shorthand) 1649	0	1	2
Soe he owes	1	16	3
It for my ferry rate to Malhens grante 1650	0	2	2"
"I made account with RICHARD SAXTON and he owes uppon the leafe	£1	14	0
It there is due of the red ox	0	7	6
It for the hire of the cannooe 1650	0	16	6
	£2	18	0
Soe January the 22, 1651 the £1–13s–6d in the other side take out there remaines due to me	1	4	6
It he had the cannooe 2 dayes 1652	0	1	6"

RICHARD[1] was the owner of sixteen or more tracts of land, of various sizes, in Windsor, the earliest record being the purchase of the homestead[1, 5] of Michael Try about 1646. This was probably his first home after his marriage. Later he sold it and, in July, 1655, bought the nearby home of Samuel Pond, deceased. This was evidently his last place of residence, as his widow, SARAH, sold the greater portion of this property[1] on April 4, 1664, to Thomas Barber.

The Town Records extant, show no evidence that RICHARD[1] SAXTON held any public office. The only way in which he appears of record is as owner of property and as plaintiff or defendant in six inconsequential lawsuits[1] involving small amounts between March, 1650, and March, 1661, one[10] against JOSEPH[1] LOOMIS and another against JOSEPH[1] PARSONS. His death called forth but the briefest mention, even as his life had done, namely:[9]

"RICHARD SAXSTON dyed—maye 3, 1662."

The inventory of his estate was presented to the Particular Court on September 11, 1662, and administration was granted[1] to his widow. His property was valued at £107–14–00 and to the original inventory there was added a list of his children with their ages at that date.[1] SARAH (COOK) SAXTON either[1] died or was buried on June 13, 1674. An inventory of her estate taken July 8, 1674, and sworn to on August 30, following, by two of her children, showed property for distribution to the amount of £65-11-00. This inventory also included a list of the heirs with their respective ages at that date.[7] The court ordered that the eldest son should have £25–01–00, the second son £13, the eldest daughter £10 and the two younger daughters, including PATIENCE[2], our ancestress, £8–15–00 each at marriage or when they became of age.[7]

The children of RICHARD[1] and SARAH (COOK) SAXTON, all born at Windsor, were[1, 3, 6, 10]

I. Sarah[2], b. March 23 or 26, 1647–8; prob. m., October, 1668, Robert Roath, of Norwich, and if so, she d.[9] March 20, 1687–8.
II. John[2], b. March 4, 1649–50; m. July 30, 1677, Mary Hill, dau. of Luke.
III. Mary[2], b. February 27, 1651–2; m. before July 8, 1674, George Sanders.
IV. Richard[2], b. March 1, 1654–5; d. December 19, 1675, in King Philip's War.
V. PATIENCE[2], b.[8] June 28, 1658 or January 28, 1658–9,[6] and d. before[8] May 13, 1730. She married, probably either at Windsor or Simsbury, by 1687, JOHN[1] ROBERTS[9] [see Roberts, p. 711].
VI Francis[2], b. January 1 or 17, 1661–2; d. May 6, 1662, three days after the father's death.

REFERENCES

1. Goodwin and Morgan Ancestral Lines, F. F. Starr, 1915, I, 133–9.
2. Hotten's Emigrants, I, 108; New England Register, XIV, 321; Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Ser. 3, VIII, 271.
3. Savage, IV, 32; New England Register, V, 362; History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1892, II, 677.
4. Colonial Records of Connecticut, Vol. I, pp. 548–61.
5. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 557.
6. MATHEW GRANT's Church Record, of Windsor, pp. 879–80, 883, in Stiles' History of Windsor, I, Appendix A.
7. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 232.
8. Roberts Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, p. 7; New England Register, XLII, 242–3.
9. Vital Records of Norwich, Conn., I, 2.
10. Bassett Genealogy, B. B. Bassette, 1926, pp. 652–6.

SCRUGGS

* [922] Thomas Scruggs –c.1654	m	Margery . . . –aft.1654
* † [460] John Raymond c.1622–1703	m 1st c.1647–8	Rachel Scruggs –1666–70
† [230] Jonathan Raymond 1666–1745	m 1689	Sarah Woodbury 1668–1747
† [114] Benjamin Ober 1689–1723	m 1713	Rachel Raymond 1690–aft.1724
‡ † [56] William Bartlett 1710–c.1759	m 1740	Anna Ober [widow Hale] 1715–1791
† § [28] William Bartlett 1741–1794	m 1761	Joanna Herrick 1745–1810
† § ‖ ¶ [14] Henry Bartlett 1771–1850	m 1792	Betsey Corey 1772–1857
# ♣ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♦ ♣ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♣ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Salem, Mass.
† Beverly, Mass.
‡ Marblehead, Mass.
§ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
‖ Merrittstown, Pa.
¶ Athens, Ohio.
♣ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Saybrook, Conn.

SCRUGGS

THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS is said to have come to New England in 1628 with Mr. Endicott,[1] and, though proof of his presence there at that date has not been found, he was evidently an early resident at Salem and quite uniformly shown the honor of the prefix "Mr." in the old records. He took the oath of a freeman on September 2, 1635,[2,3] and had probably been a resident there for some time previous, as he was sent to represent that town at the General Court "holden at Newe Towne" on March 3, 1635,[3] and at two sessions of the same body at Boston in September and December of 1636,[3] as well as at four sessions of the Essex Quarterly Court during 1636–7. The former tribunal deputized him to hold "particular court" in his home locality and the latter swore him in as a Commissioner in June, 1636.[4] With these positions, he served simultaneously as a selectman of Salem during 1636–7.[5]

In addition to whatever land he may have possessed earlier or have acquired later,[10] THOMAS[1] received by grant in 1635 "a farme conteyning three hundreth acres of land whereof thirty acres are fitt to be mowed," with the understanding that in case he desired to sell, the town should have the first chance to purchase it.[6] This property lay "beyond forest River" or southwest of the town.[7]

About that time there was a plan afoot to accomplish the establishment of what later became Harvard College in this town and the belief prevailed that if the above mentioned farm of THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS were offered as a site for this institution it might help to assure its location. To this end, one month after his receipt of it, he willingly exchanged his three-hundred-acre farm for one of two hundred acres which had earlier been granted to William Trask, one of the "five old planters," who, himself, received a compensatory grant. This generosity on the part of these two public-spirited men failed of its desired end, but if it had succeeded Harvard would have been "placed on Scruggs' land in Salem when it would have been named Scruggs College," according to the statement of President Robert Rantoul[8,9] of Essex Institute.

In 1636 it was ordered that no "sawen boards, clapboards or other Timber or wood be sold or transported by any psn" within Salem bounds unless they were first offered to the selectmen, on pain of fine. In this matter "It is agreed that M^r THO: SCRUGGS shall see to the execution of these orders aforesaid, and give notis vnto the Towen of what shall be done hearin, as also deliver a true account of w^t is bought, sould, rec^d. or delivered concerning the premises."[10] "Whereas we have found by experience that the transporting of boards and clapboards from our plantacon hath not only bared our woods verie much of the best tymber trees of all sorts but bereaved also our inhabitants of such boards and clapboards whereof they stand in need, We have therefore ordered that || henceforward || noe sawyer clapboard cleauer or any other pson whatsoever shall cutt downe saw or cleaue any boards or tymber within our lymits and transport them to other places, vpon the payne or penaltie of five shillings for every such hundred of board, clapboard or Tymber to be paid in to MR. SCRUGGS, who is appointed to be Treasurer (* for the Towne*) || in this behalf || this yeare ensuinge."[10]

Although THOMAS[1] is said to have been recognized "among the rulers of the town" and as "an intelligent and valuable citizen"[7] yet a situation arose in 1637 which brought him severe censure. During the bitter wrangle over Antinomianism, upwards of eighty of the more tolerant men of Massachusetts including THOMAS[1], most of whom were church members, signed and presented to the General Court a petition or remonstrance relative to its treatment of Anne Hutchinson and John Wheelwright. This document seems mild and fair enough to our present day judgment and far from deserving of the furore it created, but by the Court it was called seditious and dangerous and all who signed it were required to retract and admit their sin in subscribing to it or to be disarmed.[11] This penalty included the confiscation of "all such guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot, and match as they shalbee owners of" and further stipulated that they should neither buy nor borrow more such supplies for protection.[11] Although the order to disarm apparently did not include disfranchisement or banishment, such misfortunes were included in the punishment meted out to some of these offenders.[7, 12] A few of them retracted but THOMAS[1] not only disapproved and denounced the persecutions of Anne Hutchinson but "gave his whole influence earnestly and openly against such attempts to suppress freedom of inquiry and the rights of conscience. He, with others in Salem, was proscribed, disarmed and deprived of his public functions."[7] "The event that brought his career as a public man to a close proves that his

mind was enlightened, liberal and independent; that he was in advance of the times in which he lived." He evidently escaped banishment, as is proved by his appearance in several lawsuits in the interim,[13] but his many public services ceased abruptly and for a considerable period, giving color to the statement that he was restricted as to citizenship.[7] The disarmament order was rescinded in 1639[1] but not until 1642 was THOMAS[1] again recorded as serving in a public capacity, at which time he was on a trial jury.[13] Following that in 1644 he received appointment as one of the "Survayers of the highwayes" and as one of the "Gran Jurymen," as well as on "Jury of Tryalls" that year.[14]

In December, 1645, he and one other were discharged from training by paying the military company ten shillings and eight shillings respectively, and in 1649 he was sued by WILLIAM[1] DODGE for refusing to make good his part of a fence.[13] That same year THOMAS[1] brought suit against a neighbor for "breach of covenant in keeping cattle" but later withdrew it and, with ROGER[1] CONANT, WILLIAM[1] DODGE, BENJAMIN[2] BALCH and "widow WOODBURIE" [AGNES, widow of JOHN[1]], started action against a townsman for trespass whereby their meadow was damaged.[13]

THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS married at an unknown date MARGERY (——), who survived him and was granted the administration of his estate[15] on June 29, 1654 [when he was erroneously recorded as William instead of THOMAS].[15]

A part of the settlement of the estate, which was approved by the Court, included an agreement between widow "MARGERY and her son-in-law JOHN[1] RAYMENT" whereby she conveyed to him her dower rights in consideration of "5li in hand to be given to her directly and 5li at the hour of her death to be freely at her disposal beside £20 a year paid quarterly as long as she lived and the use of necessary household effects."[15] A writer says "This was an ample provision, in those times, for her comfort while she lived, and for her funeral charges. I do not remember to have found this last point arranged for in such a form of expression in any other instance."[7] Her husband died intestate before June 24, 1654, at Salem, for on that date ROGER[1] CONANT, WILLIAM[1] DODGE and Nicholas Patch [brother of ELIZABETH (PATCH), wife of WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY], took the inventory of his estate which totaled over £244. Some of the items mentioned therein were "six cows . . . 2 steers . . . 3 yong heifers and a calf . . . 2 oxen . . . 11 akers of corn on the ground, English and indian . . . the farm & housing . . . 2 potts, one of brasse and on of Iron . . . 2 ketles . . . a silver boule . . . a brasse warming pann . . . puter, 10 platters & dishes . . . 2 candelsticks, quart & a pint, a salt, all

puter, 2 brasse candelsticks . . . king pan and a smale kittell . . . an iron pott, a kettell & a posnet . . . a sheer cutter . . . a plow with ould iron . . . a great cleaver, a brasse skimer . . . a ladder . . . a great chest . . . a cupboard & table . . . a cloth sute with silver . . . 2 coats of cloth . . . a wast coat . . . a dublett and 5 dozen silver buttons . . . 3 bookes . . . Tubbs, barrels . . ." beside beds and bedding[15] and other things. This pictures quite vividly the home equipment of this family.

The only child of THOMAS[1] and MARGERY (——) SCRUGGS was

1. RACHEL[2], b. (—); d., it is said,[9] on May 2, 1666, and certainly before November 9, 1670, when three of her children were baptized.[17] She married,as his first wife,[7, 8, 9] probably as early as 1647–8, and positively before June, 1654,[15] JOHN[1] RAYMOND [see Raymond, p. 698]. Her name appeared[18] on the records of the First Church of Salem in August, 1663.

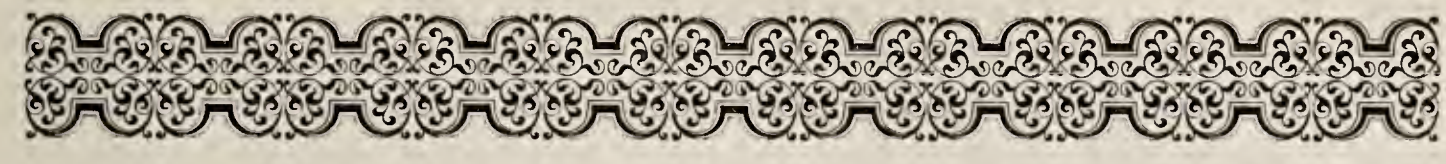
REFERENCES

1. Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 172, 427, 564, 575.
2. Savage, IV, 42.
3. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 164, 175, 371.
4. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 2–5.
5. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 34, 38, 45, 47, 50–4, 56, 59.
6. Ibid., I, 14, 16.
7. Salem Witchcraft, C. W. Upham, 1867, I, pt. 1, pp. 64–6, 130.
8. Scruggs Genealogy, E. H. S. Dunklin, 1912, p. 17–8.
9. Winchester Notes, Mrs. F. W. Hotchkiss, 1912, 193–4, 204–6.
10. Town Records of Salem, Mass., I, 20, 31, 42–3, 102.
11. Records of Massachusetts Bay, I, 211–2; History of New England, J. Winthrop, ed. J. Savage, 1853, pp. 481–3, 256–8; History of New England, Palfrey, I, 480, 485.
12. Wonder Working Providence in New England, E. Johnson, with introduction by W. F. Poole, 1867, pp. 121–2; Ibid., ed. by J. F. Jameson, 1910, p. 174.
13. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 8, 44, 91, 129, 170, 182–3.
14. Town Records of Salem, Mass., I, 130, 149–50.
15. Records and Files of Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 359; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 185–6.
16. Lineage Book of the Daughters of Founders and Patriots, X, p. 21, No. 631.
17. Records of the First Church in Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 89.
18. Notes and Extracts from the Records of the First Church in Salem, Mass., J. A. Emmerton, 1879, p. 18; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XVI, p. 8.

SEYMOUR

* † [404] Richard Seymour c.1605–1655	m 1631	Mercy Ruscoe –aft.1665
† [202] Thomas Seymour 1632–1712	m 1st 1654	Hannah Marvin 1634–living 1680
‡ [100] Joshua Bushnell 1644–1710	m 1682	Mary Seymour 1658–aft.1710
‡ [50] Joshua Bushnell 1690–1778	m 2nd 1717	Elizabeth Han[d]ly c.1696–1777
‡ [24] Samuel Shipman 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733–1806
‡ § [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‡ § ‖ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
¶ § [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
§ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Hartford, Conn.
† Norwalk, Conn.
‡ Saybrook, Conn.
§ Marietta, Ohio.
‖ Athens, Ohio.
¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass.



SEYMOUR

RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR was the eldest child of ROBERT and ELIZABETH (WALLER) SEYMOUR of Sawbridgeworth, co. Herts, England, and was baptized there on January 27, 1604–5.[1] He married at that place, on April 18, 1631, MERCY RUSCOE, daughter of ROGER and SARAH RUSCOE of the same town,* and had three children baptized and at least one buried[1] there but, after 1637, in which year his father died, no further evidence of him is seen in that parish, and he evidently emigrated to New England with his family in about 1638 for he is found as a resident of Hartford, Connecticut, in 1639. He was not an original proprietor of this town but received land, commonage, wood and pasture "by courtesy of the town"[2] and is seen to have been both grantor to and grantee from, William Ruscoe of that village who was doubtless his wife's near kinsman.[1]

RICHARD[1] is shown to have had eight or more pieces of land there[2] and his house is said to have been built without a leanto in which case, according to prevailing custom, the "out room," or large hall, would have been used as a kitchen and dining room, and the inner room as "chamber," whereas if a leanto had existed it would have contained the commissary and culinary department.[3] His home lot was on the east side of the road to the Cow Pasture or North Main Street.[8]

On February 8, 1646, he was appointed surveyor of chimneys for the coming year,[2] on June 19, 1650, he was a signer of the "Ludlow Agreement" relative to the projected settlement of Norwalk and in the Indian deed of 1651 he was named as one of the grantees of that town.[4, 5] He is said to have gone temporarily, in 1652, to Farmington[6] and from there to Norwalk but it seems more likely that the Richard of Farmington was his son and, therefore, resident there at a later date, and that he himself moved directly to Norwalk in about 1651 where his home lot was finely located directly across the street from the meeting

* Several generations of the Seymour, Waller and Ruscoe families in England have been definitely traced and published.[1]

house. In 1655 he was made a selectman but he did not live to finish his term.[1, 5] He made his will on July 29, 1655,[1] and it was proved October 25 following, the inventory, which showed a valuation of £225, having been taken on October 10.[4]

THOMAS[2], the eldest son, received by the terms of the will two steers and the "best cartt"[1] and his mother received the balance of the property in trust for the younger sons of whom she was made the guardian.[1] She married secondly, November 25, 1655, as his second wife, John Steele, of Farmington,[1] and took her younger sons with her to her new home, leaving only THOMAS[2] at Norwalk and giving him his father's lands at that place,[5] where he became the progenitor of those of the name in that section.[1, 5] Her second husband evidently acted with her in the care of the portion of the estate of RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR which would come to the three younger sons for, after the death of John Steele in 1665, John[2], Zachariah[2] and Richard[2] Seymour acknowledged receipt in October, 1668, from Steele's estate of £40 each, in full of the legacies due them by their father's will.[1]

MERCY (RUSCOE) SEYMOUR Steele appears to have survived her second husband. He died November 25, 1665, and by his will she was bountifully provided for, receiving for life the family home, three outhouses, a barn, and some pasture, three cows, a third part of all provisions and supplies on hand, "the small silver spoons" and "one half of all the linen cloth that she has made since I married to her" as well as permanent disposal of "the household goods that were hers at the time I married to her."[9]

The children of RICHARD[1] and MERCY (RUSCOE) SEYMOUR were[1, 6]

I. THOMAS[2], see following.
II. Mary[2], bap. January 9, 1634–5, at Sawbridgeworth; buried there April 3, 1635.
III. Mercy[2], bap. July 8, 1636, at Sawbridgeworth.
IV. John[2], b. prob. in New England, abt. 1639; d. 1713 at Hartford;[4, 5] m. there, about 1665, Mary Watson.
V. Zachariah[2], b. abt. 1642, at Hartford; d. August, 1702, Wethersfield;[4] m. there, February 9, 1687–8, Mary Gritt.
VI. Richard[2], b. prob. abt. 1645, at Hartford; d. 1710; m., about 1674, Hannah Woodruff.[4]

THOMAS[2] SEYMOUR (*Richard*[1]) was baptized July 15, 1632, at Sawbridgeworth, co. Herts, England, died between September 22 and November 7, 1712, at Norwalk, Connecticut, married first there, January 5, 1653–4, HANNAH[2] MARVIN [see Marvin, p. 578] and married secondly at that place, after 1680, Elizabeth (——), who survived him. He had been brought from England by his

parents when about six years of age and lived with them at Hartford and Norwalk. At the time of his father's death he was the only child who was of age and had then been married about a year. At his mother's re-marriage he became possessed of his late father's land holdings in that town, including the home which was across the street from the Marvin domicile.

THOMAS[2] was nominated for freemanship on October 10, 1667, and doubtless took the oath six months later, as was usual, for he was reported among the freemen of Norwalk on October 11, 1669.[10] He represented the town in the General Court in 1690.[10] With other heirs he signed an agreement on November 6, 1680, in behalf of his wife,[11] relative to the settlement of the estate of her father, MATTHEW[1] MARVIN, whose will had made special bequests, among many others, to her and to Francis Bushnell* of Norwalk who had recently married her oldest daughter, Hannah[3] Seymour.[11] The will of THOMAS[2],† dated September 22, 1712, and proved November 7 following, made kindly provision for his second wife who, during her widowhood, was to have the use of his home, barn, one half of the orchard, the west end of the home lot, meadow land and necessary household goods, his new Bible and "one paire of Curtains that she made since her Living with me"[8] as well as the estate that she brought with her. A clause provided for £4 "in provision pay" to several daughters including MARY[3] who had married JOSHUA[3] BUSHNELL.[8, 11]

The children of THOMAS[2] and HANNAH (MARVIN) SEYMOUR, all born at Norwalk, were[1, 6, 8]

I. Hannah[3], b. December 12, 1654; m. at Norwalk, October 12, 1675, Francis Bushnell,* doubtless son[7] of WILLIAM[2]. They removed 1685 to Danbury.
II. Abigail[3], b. January, 1655–6; m. November 16, 1676, Thomas Pickett.
III. MARY[3], a twin, b. September, 1658;[1] m. at Norwalk in May, 1682,[8, 12] JOSHUA[3] BUSHNELL [see Bushnell, p. 167].[7]
IV. Sarah[3], a twin, b. September, 1658.
V. Thomas[3], b. September, 1660;[6] died young.
VI. Elizabeth[3], b. December, 1663; prob. died young.

* This Francis Bushnell is sometimes erroneously called "son of Richard[2]," probably because of their both living at Norwalk, but the latter man is shown[7] to have had no son of that name, and this Francis was undoubtedly the son of WILLIAM[2] who is sometimes thoughtlessly stated to have "died young," but who would thus have been brother of JOSHUA[3] BUSHNELL, both of whom married sisters, they being daughters of THOMAS[2] SEYMOUR.[11, 12]

† It has been said that the will of THOMAS[2] was sealed with a coat of arms [illustrated] and that "a Bishop's Bible" printed in 1584, now in the possession of one of the descendants of RICHARD[1] SEYMOUR, has on one of the flyleaves a drawing of the arms of the Seymour family of Berry Pomeroy . . . with his name written below, "RICHARD SEYMOUR, Bery Pomery, Leytor hund., in ye com. Devon. his Book. Hartford ye Collony of Conecticot in New England. Annoque Domini, 1640."[4]

However, careful search in the English records by an eminent genealogist has failed to show justification of the above claim and has shown rather the English origin assigned herewith.[1]

vii. Mercy[3], b. November, 1666.
viii. Matthew[3], b. May, 1669; d. abt. 1735 at Norwalk; m. 1st, Sarah Hayes; m. 2nd, Catherine (——).
ix. John[3], b. 1671–2; d. 1745–6 at Norwalk; m. 1st, Sarah Gregory; m. 2nd, Hannah (——).
x. Elizabeth[3], b. December, 1673; d. June 17, 1713, at Greenwich; m. there, March 16, 1699, Timothy Knapp.
xi. Rebecca[3], b. January, 1675-6; m. April 13, 1704, Jonathan Renals.

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, LXXI, 105–12.
2. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, VI, 19, 24, 83; XIV, 160, 501.
3. Colonial History of Hartford, Conn., W. D. Love, 1914, pp. 126, 327.
4. Memorial History of Hartford, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 258.
5. History of Norwalk, Conn., C. M. Selleck, 1896, pp. 11, 14, 25, 31, 39–40, 78–9, 88, 153–5, 197.
6. Savage, IV, 58.
7. Vital Records of Norwich, Conn., I, 10; New England Register, LXXII, 210; Ibid., LIII, 209, 212; Hartford County, Conn., Court Records, II, 6 and reverse end pp. 146–7 at Office of Secy. of State, Hartford, Conn.
8. New England Register, LXXII, 209–14.
9. Steele Genealogy, D. S. Durrie, 1859, pp. 1–4; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 239–40.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 73, 176, 522; IV, 15.
11. Marvin Genealogy, G. F. and W. T. R. Marvin, 1904, pp. 308–9.
12. New England Register, LIII, 210.

SHIPMAN

* [192] Edward Shipman –1697	m 2nd 1663	Mary Andrews –aft.1697
* [96] John Shipman 1664–by 1718	m 1686	Martha Humphrey 1663–aft.1697
* [48] John Shipman 1687–1742	m 1715	Elizabeth Kirtland 1688 or 1689–1778
* [24] Samuel Shipman 1725–1801	m 2nd 1754	Hannah Bushnell 1733–1806
* † [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
* † ‡ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
§ † [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
† Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Saybrook, Conn.
† Marietta, Ohio.
‡ Athens, Ohio.
§ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

SHIPMAN

EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN,* sometimes called Shipton, was "propounded for freemanship" in Saybrook, Connecticut, in October, 1667, and, undoubtedly, so sworn at the next term of court, for a report dated October 4, 1669, of the freemen of Saybrook "already made" included his name.[3] In 1672 he and JOHN[1] CLARKE were townsmen† there.[7]

EDWARD[1] volunteered and served in the Narragansett War in recognition of which he received five acres of land in 1678 by vote of the town and, after his death, his estate received a grant at Voluntown, Connecticut, and a lot at Cedar Swamp.[4] Under the will‡ of Joshua Uncas, the Indian, which disposed, in 1676, of an aggregate of 83,000 acres of land in Connecticut, EDWARD[1] received a bequest of 3000 acres[2, 5] "within sight of Hartford." He lived in the part of Saybrook which was then called Pataconke, now the town of Chester.[4a]

EDWARD[1] married first, "in the beginning" of January, 1651, Elizabeth Comstock who died in the middle of July, 1659. He married, secondly, "this first of Jully 1663," MARY ANDREWS[2, 6] [or Anderson[1]] who survived him. On September 9, 1697, which was less than a week before his death, EDWARD[1] deeded to his son William[2] a piece of property which had been the gift of Joshua Uncas, and other land to make his share equal to that of Edward[2]; and on the same date he deeded to Samuel[2] half of his new house, barn and

*An Edward Shipman is said[27] to have been born in Nottingham, England, to have embarked from Hull with George Fenwick in 1639 for New England and to have settled at what is now Saybrook,[1] Connecticut. Proof of this has not been seen, although one of the name is sometimes called an "original colonist in the old parish of Saybrook"[7] which refers to the period in question, but is not a verification of the fact, as stated. Neither the marriage nor the death of that possible early Edward is found of record, but, if he was there, circumstances would suggest that he was probably the father of EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN who is *known* to have been our ancestor.

†Often called selectmen and now termed councilmen.

‡Of the twenty-eight beneficiaries of this will, seven were our ancestors, viz: ROBERT[1] CHAPMAN and WILLIAM[1] PRATT, each five thousand acres; EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN, three thousand acres; JOHN[2] CHAPMAN, WILLIAM[2] BUSHNELL and LYDIA BEAMONT [sometimes misspelled "Rayment"], wife of WILLIAM[1] BEAMON, each two thousand acres; an unstated amount to NICHOLAS[2] OLMSTEAD; besides a three-thousand-acre gift to John Wastall which would later have come to JOHN[3] KIRTLAND, his heir.[5]

home lot and, after the grantor's decease, his orchard and one-half of his yards and other lands.[4a] It is presumed that JOHN[2] and Jonathan[2] had previously received their portions. Reference to his will is found showing a bequest to and provision for his wife during her widowhood and, in October, 1697, she appealed to the court for definite assignment of a portion of the estate for her maintenance, which plea was responded to by an order to the executors to deliver to her for her use "eight bushels of wheat, seven bushells of 'rie,' seven bushels of indian corn and eight bushells of barley."[8] EDWARD[1] "dyed 15 September 1697."[6]

The children of EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN and his first wife, Elizabeth Comstock, all born at Saybrook, were[1, 2, 6]

I. Elizabeth[2], b. May, 1652; m. December 3, 1672, John Hobson.
II. Edward[2], b. February "about the middle," 1654; died at Chester in 1711; buried at Haddam.[9b] The settlement of his estate[1] shows that he left a wife, unnamed, and children Jonathan[3], Abigail[3], Deborah[3] [probably she who m. in May, 1714, John Buckley], Priscilla[3], Lydia[3], Joseph[3], Benjamin[3] and Parnell[3] (daughter). The unusual name of Parnell suggests a possible relationship with our ancestress PARNELL (——), wife of NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND who was, herself, undoubtedly a Long Island girl, as the wife of Edward[2] Shipman may also have been.
III. William[2], b. June, 1656; removed to Colchester and Hebron. The statement[9c] has been made that he reached Hebron about 1705 and died soon after as the result of a fall, but his inventory was taken December 24, 1725, and administration granted to his son Samuel[3]; he m. November 26, 1690, Alice Hand; they[1, 11] had, at Saybrook, Edward[3], b. 1691–2; and at Hebron, Daniel[3], b. October 27, 1698; Samuel[3], b. March 15, 1702; m. his cousin Martha[3] Shipman (JOHN[2]) [vide infra]; Mary[3], b. March 11, 1707, and Sarah[3], b. June 7, 1709.

The children of EDWARD[1] and MARY (ANDREWS) SHIPMAN, all born at Saybrook, were[1, 2, 6]

IV. JOHN[2], see following.
V. Hannah[2], † b. "about the middle" of February, 1666.
VI. Samuel[2], b. December 25, 1668; is said to have settled at Hebron.[11b]
VII. Abigail[2],* b. "in the beginning of" September, 1670.
VIII. Jonathan[2], b. "in the middle of" September, 1674. He received a bounty for service.

JOHN[2] SHIPMAN (*Edward*[1]) was born about April 6, 1664, in Saybrook[6] and died† before[2a, 4a] November 6, 1718. He married at Saybrook[9, 10] on May 5, 1686, MARTHA[2] HUMPHREY [see Humphrey, p. 475]. The title of

* Either Hannah[2] or Abigail[2] must have married John Large of Haddam for, on March 5, 1690, the court[5a] appointed the widow and EDWARD[1] SHIPMAN the "Father-in-law of sd. deceased" as administrators of the estate of John Large.

† One authority says[9a] probably, erroneously, that he died in 1705.

Joshua[5] Shipman

PLATE XXI

"Sergeant" applied[2a] to him in deeds and other documents was for service in the local military company and during Indian wars. There was a bounty due him of fourteen shillings two pence for service[2a] as sergeant in Capt. Williamson's Company, Col. William Whiting's Regiment, in the expedition against Canada in 1709. The family residence was at Pataconke, now Chester, as that of EDWARD[1] had been. Two deeds of November 6, 1718, and February 11, 1718–9, from David[3] Shipman to his brother Abraham[3] and to his eldest brother JOHN[3], respectively, conveyed to them a portion of his share of the estate of his father, JOHN[2], at Pataconke.[2a, 4a]

Apparently MARTHA, wife of JOHN[2], survived him many years, perhaps until about 1741, for in that year two deeds[4a] executed by her children transferred portions of her dower rights in their father's estate. One of June 18 from David[3] of Newark and from Abraham[3] and his sister Hannah (Shipman) Dunk, both of Saybrook, to JOHN[3], conveyed the entire rights of the grantors in their father's estate and especially in that part set out to their mother; and a deed of July 6 transferred to JOHN[3] the rights of his sister Martha[3] in that same property.

The children of JOHN[2] and MARTHA (HUMPHREY) SHIPMAN, all born in Saybrook, were[1, 10]

I. JOHN[3], see following.
II. Jonathan[3], b. "middle of January" 1688–9; removed with his brother David[3] to New Jersey. One of this name was witness, on May 8, 1727, to a bond given by Nathaniel and Samuel Wheeler of Newark for the careful administration of the estate of their father, Nathaniel Wheeler, deceased.
III. David[3], b. August 9, 1692; he removed to Newark, then "in ye Province of New York," but now in New Jersey, before November, 1718; called a saddler; d. after[4a] June 18, 1741, and undoubtedly after December, 1765, when one of that name deeded land which he had purchased in September, 1743, from Isaiah Shipman. Either David[3] or his brother Jonathan[3] left a line of descendants there through a son, Abraham[4] Shipman.
IV. Abraham[3], b. December 31, 1695; d. prob. April 26, 1750; m. at Saybrook May 9, 1721 or 1722, Ruth Butler.[10]
V. Martha[3], b. April 1, 1699; d. after May, 1769;[11] m. her first cousin, Samuel[3] Shipman (William[2], EDWARD[1]), at Hebron[6a, 11] on May 14, 1724.
VI. Hannah[3], b. April 25, 1702; d. after June 18, 1741; m. (——) Dunk, of Saybrook.[4a]

JOHN[3] SHIPMAN (*John*[2], *Edward*[1]) was born the middle of January, 1686–7, at Saybrook. He died there[12] or at Chester[9a] on July 7, 1742, and was married at Saybrook on January 11, 1715, to ELIZABETH[4] KIRTLAND [see Kirtland, p. 523]. On February 11, 1718–9, he acquired from his brother

David[3] a portion of his share of their father's estate;[4a] he acquired,[2a] on June 18, 1741, from David[3] then of Newark, New Jersey, from Abraham[3] and his sister Hannah (Shipman) Dunk, both of Saybrook, and, on July 6, following, from his sister Martha[3] and her husband, of Hebron, their respective rights to their father's property and especially to that portion of it which had been set off to their mother MARTHA deceased. On June 19, 1741, JOHN[3] and his wife ELIZABETH deeded to their son John[4] certain lands they had received from their respective fathers, Sergt. JOHN[2] SHIPMAN and Lt. JOHN[3] KIRTLAND.

It seems highly probable that the references[15] to John, Elias and Samuel Shipman as members of the Saybrook train-band in 1745 pertained to the sons of JOHN[3]. Perhaps it was his son John[4] who memorialized the General Assembly in 1774 showing "that for want of grist mills that will grind in the dry seasons of the year the inhabitants of said town and the towns adjacent have been distressed and put to great expense to procure their grain flowered, and that he has hit upon a plan to build a tide grist-mill of a new and peculiar construction . . . to be moved by salt water, that may be of public utility," for which he asked the exclusive privilege of erection and operation in Saybrook. This was granted to him for a term of forty years for that place and for "ten miles westward of Connecticut River" provided he or his heirs build such a mill within five years and keep it ready to serve the public.[10a]

The children of JOHN[3] and ELIZABETH (KIRTLAND) SHIPMAN, all born in Saybrook, were[6a, 10, 12] [see plates XXX p. 869, XXXII p. 871, XXXIII p. 872]

I. Elizabeth[4], b. December 3, 1715; d.[12] January 30, 1809; m. December 9, 1741, Jonathan[5] Bushnell (JOSHUA[4], JOSHUA[3], WILLIAM[2], FRANCIS[1]).
II. John[4], b. December 20, 1717; d. November 21, 1786; m. at Saybrook[22e] October 17, 1742, Margaret[5] Bushnell (JOSHUA[4], JOSHUA[3], WILLIAM[2], FRANCIS[1]).
III. Elias[4], b. April 30, 1720; d.[12] November 17, 1748; residence Killingworth;* m. Rebecca [called Leffingwell].[11b, 12]
IV. Nathaniel[4], b. May 25, 1723; d. September 7, 1805, having founded the Norwich branch; m.[11a] 1st, at Norwich, in 1747, Ruth[4] Reynolds (John[3], Joseph[2], John[1]); m. 2nd there, July 18, 1756, Elizabeth[5] Leffingwell (Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Thomas[2], Thomas[1]).
V. SAMUEL[4], see following.

* Elias[4] was a sea captain and is said to have been buried in Antigua, British West Indies. The identity of his wife as a Leffingwell is furnished by his descendants[11b] as is also the fact of her second marriage[11c] on December 7, 1752, to Theophilus Morgan. Elias[4] had[1, 6a] a son Joseph[5] born February 15, 1748–9, who perhaps died early, for the father is said to have left but one son Elias[5] who was born in 1747 and who removed to New Haven and became a leading merchant there.[11b]

Sybil (Chapman) Shipman

PLATE XXII

SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN (*John*[3], *John*[2], *Edward*[1]) was born on May 21, 1725, at Saybrook, and died[12] there September 4, 1801. He married first[13a] at Saybrook in June, 1745, Sarah Doty who died May 14, 1753. He married secondly, at the same place, January 10, 1754, HANNAH[5] BUSHNELL [see Bushnell, p. 170 and plates XXXII p. 871, XXXIII p. 872]. He and his first wife "owned the covenant" at Saybrook church in 1745.*

As JOHN[3] had done before him, so SAMUEL[4] bought out the heirs of his father's homestead which was described as a "dwelling-house and two acres eighty rods of ground, bounded west by Town street, north on land of Mr. Clark, east on Mr. Joseph Buckingham and south on the heirs of Elias[4] Shipman of Killingworth, deceased." He also acquired, on March 1, 1749–50, the right of Elias[4] of Killingworth from that man's widow; on July 6, 1750, the right of Nathaniel[4] of Norwich; on January 19, 1750–1, the right of Elizabeth[4] and her husband Jonathan[5] Bushnell; and on August 31, 1751, the right of John[4] Shipman.[2a, 4a] Thus we see that the homestead, presumably first owned by EDWARD[1], passed from JOHN[2] to his son JOHN[3] and to his grandson SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN.

He was a member of the first train-band of that town on March 26, 1745,[15] was a Representative to the General Assembly in 1776,[14] 1777–8,[16] 1782 and 1786–8, and was appointed by that body to be lieutenant of the Train-Band in October, 1766, and captain[14] of the 1st Company, 7th Regiment, in May, 1767.

It is quite evident that he was acting in an official capacity during the Revolution both in civic and in military matters for on June 18, 1776, at a meeting of the Council of Safety it was ordered that the sum of £400 be drawn and delivered to Captain SHIPMAN for Captain Uriah Haydon for the construction of the colony ship. The same body in September, following, voted "That the military companies in the first and third societies in Saybrook be excused from marching toward New York with the regiment they belong to at present, and that they remain at home to assist in erecting the fort there till further orders. Copy delivered to Capt. SAMUEL SHIPMAN,"[17] as though he were in command.

On January 8, 1778, as agent for the town, he stated to the General Assembly that from the beginning of the war with England to December 31, 1777, they had kept a guard at the harbor at a cost of £246–11–10 computing six shillings per day per man for provisions, ammunition, etc. This amount

* He and his second wife, HANNAH, are said to have "owned the covenant on April 24, 1774, when their daughter Hannah was baptized" but that probably applies to others of the same name or else the date is misquoted.[10]

the town had paid but they felt that, since this guard served the security of the State at large as well as that of the town, the expense should be borne by the former, but the suggestion was negatived.[15]

At a meeting of the Governor and Council of Safety held on May 23, 1781, it was

"RESOLVED, that Capt. SAMUEL SHIPMAN agent of the town of Saybrook, have and liberty is hereby granted to him, to receive one cast-iron cannon with a carriage for the same, belonging to this State and now lying at Norwich, to be improved by the said town of Saybrook for the defense thereof; to be returned when called for."[18]

This tribunal, at a similar meeting held on November 7, 1780,

"RESOLVED, That SAMUEL SHIPMAN, Bezalel Hilliard and Hiel Farnham, all of Saybrook, have liberty to transport by water fifty bushels of wheat they have purchased at Springfield for the use of their respective families, from said Springfield to Saybrook ferry—giving bond and clearing the same at the naval office at Middletown according to law."[18]

The foregoing suggests at least a partial government control of both commerce and transportation which was probably more necessary and more stringently asserted along the coast than in the interior of the country. When New York and Long Island were held by the British such restraint was especially imperative to the Connecticut seaboard towns to avoid depleting their own stores or aiding the enemy with supplies.[19] This statement of these conditions is borne out by the case of Nathaniel[5] Shipman, son of Captain SAMUEL[4], in his matrimonial affairs. He was engaged to Hannah Rogers of Southampton, Long Island, and, at a session[22] of the Council of Safety on November 3, 1779, was "permitted to go to Long Island for the purpose of marrying a wife, as also to bring away his wife with her effects under the direction of the Commandant of the fort at Saybrook."[20] The wedding evidently took place, but the bride must either have remained with her parents or have gone back shortly to visit them for, on July 13, 1780, the Committee of Safety records that "Cap. SAM^L SHIPMAN by letter applys for liberty for his son to go and fetch off his young wife from Long Island &c.: On consideration, negatived."[20] It would be interesting to know just why this harsh decision was deemed necessary, and it is equally so to note that, on November 7, following, the same body

"RESOLVED that Nathl Shipman of Saybrook be and is hereby permitted to go to Southampton on Long Island in a boat, to bring off his wife with her

household furniture and such other effects as her father shall give her as portion, and to go and come under the direction and inspection of Colo. William Ledyard."[20]

Capt. SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN, in partnership with LEVI[5] CHAPMAN, also of Saybrook, bought a share in the Ohio Company's land[21] which was later transferred, at least in part, to their children JOSHUA[5] SHIPMAN and SYBIL[6] CHAPMAN who had then married.[12, 13, 13a]

This company was directly instrumental in the opening up and the permanent settlement of the Northwest Territory [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I]. This purchase by SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN and LEVI[5] CHAPMAN was the immediate cause of the removal of their families to the west and the repetition there of the pioneering experiences endured one hundred fifty years before by their ancestors on their arrival at the Massachusetts coast.

Presumably SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN suffered severely from the financial depression following the Revolution [see Bartlett, pp. 84–5], for about 1795, at the age of seventy, he found it necessary to mortgage his property[2a] and later to let it go to the mortgagee. After his death the inventory of his estate, taken on November 2, 1801, showed a valuation[4a] of £106–11–02, which was all given to his widow, HANNAH, and administered by their son-in-law, Timothy Pratt. Some of the items of the inventory were:[2a] "Great Bible, Dycke's Dictionary, Echard's Gazeteer, Heraldry, 2 vols., 4/6, old law book, Boyle's Works, Winchester's Dialogues, Address of Congress, carpenter's tools, boards," etc. One reference[2a] speaks of him as a "joyner." His widow, HANNAH, had some property in her own right, for on February 10, 1802, she sold some "descended from my father's estate."

An interesting occurrence which justifies repetition has come to light, linking the Shipman name to James Fenimore Cooper's "Leatherstocking," but the identity of the prototype is in doubt. The generation in question was approximately contemporaneous with that of SAMUEL[4] [see Addendum, p. 749].

The children of SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN and his first wife, Sarah Doty, all born in Saybrook, were[12, 13a] [see plate xxx p. 869]

I. Esther[5], b. January 18, bap. March 2, 1746; d. January, 1825–6;[9a] m. March 6, 1765, Timothy[4] Bradley[22a] (Stephen[3], Stephen[2], Stephen[1]).

II. Sarah[5], b. January 3, bap. January 10, 1748; d. January 2, 1817; m. March 6, 1775, Timothy[5] Pratt[22b]* (Timothy[4], Isaac[3], John[2], WILLIAM[1]).

* In a letter dated May 23, 1835, their son Timothy[6] Pratt called CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN, then of Athens, O., "cousin" and in another letter, written in August, 1859, that man's sister Ethelinda (Pratt) Kirtland is called "kinswoman" to CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN, then of Marietta, O.

iii. Samuel[5], b. September 3, 1750; d. March 12, 1826, at New Britain; m., at Chatham, February 14, 1774, Sarah Stanclift.[22c]

iv. Benoni[5], b. March 20, 1753; d. May 22, 1820; was in the Revolution and received a pension.[22d] After his retirement from military service as captain of the armed boat "Success," in April, 1782, having reached the grade of captain lieutenant, he received a warrant as privateersman and in that month captured two sloops carrying cargoes of illicit goods.

The children of SAMUEL[4] and HANNAH (BUSHNELL) SHIPMAN, all born at Saybrook, were[12, 13a] [see plates XXX–XXXIII pp. 869–72]

v. Hannah[5], b. September 26,[12] 1755; d. March 15, 1826, at Granby, Conn.; m. November 3, 1773, William[5] Pratt (Humphrey[4], Isaac[3], John[2], WILLIAM[1]).[22b]

vi. Nathaniel[5], b. February 18, bap. April 8, 1759; m. on Long Island, between November 7, 1779, and July 13, 1780, Hannah[6] Rogers (Stephen[5], Obadiah[4], Obadiah[3], Obadiah[2], William[1]).[20, 22]

vii. Clarinda[5], b. November 23, 1762; d. March 7, 1814.

viii. Joshua[5], b. June 16, 1765; d. March 29, 1767.

ix. JOSHUA[5], see following.

x. Orphana[5], b. May 6, bap. June 17, 1770; d. in Saybrook, June 3, 1843.

JOSHUA[5] SHIPMAN (*Samuel[4], John[3], John[2], Edward[1]*) was born April 16, 1767,[12] baptized May 14, following,[13a] at Saybrook, died on October 3, 1823, at Marietta, Ohio, where both he and his wife are buried in the Mound Cemetery. He married at Saybrook either[12] December 1, 1786, or[13] January 17, 1787, SYBIL[6] CHAPMAN [see Chapman, p. 196].[12] They spent their first few years of married life in the old home town, but early planned to move to Ohio to occupy the land bought in common* by their respective fathers.[21] The Buel and Shipman families intended to go west together in May, 1789, but the plans of JOSHUA[5] were changed and, in the meantime, his infant daughter Harriet[6] died. Finally, in July of 1790, the trip over the mountains was made in a covered ox-wagon,[12] undoubtedly in company with other pioneers. They arrived "in harvest time" at "Robstown,"† Pennsylvania, where they rested a week[12] with the family of Ebenezer Nye which had left Connecticut a

*Part of the original apportionment by the Ohio Company to JOSHUA[5] SHIPMAN and Joseph[6] Chapman, his brother-in-law, of lands in outlying districts, on the rights[21] of their respective fathers, SAMUEL[4] SHIPMAN and LEVI[5] CHAPMAN, was in allotment No. 4 on Cats Creek which flows into the Muskingum at Lowell, Ohio.[26]

On December 5, 1795, the Agents for the Company decided to sell at auction certain miscellaneous articles. These brought a total of $14.67 and included

"A Smoke House to JOSHUA SHIPMAN for $5.55," and "The Pickets against the blockhouse to JOSHUA SHIPMAN" for $1.50. Evidently the Company was in some way indebted to him for at least as much as the total amount of his purchase, since the record is completed by the statement[26]

"JOSHUA SHIPMAN Cr. by discount with the Directors $7.05
Ballance paid Treasurer $7.62."

†Earlier called Sumrell's Ferry and now West Newton, Pennsylvania [see map on p. 537].

Betsey Sibyl Shipman

month earlier[23] and was occupying a log cabin fifteen feet square. The exigencies of pioneer life caused friendships to be quickly formed and hospitality became a matter of course. Melzar Nye, a son in this family, said in later life, "Mother was as glad to see them as if they had been old acquaintances and gave them an invitation to stop at our hotel where they spent a week." The friendship thus formed caused these families to buy a boat together in which to complete their journey via the river route. The oxen and dismantled wagons were placed in the bow of the boat and the stern was divided between the families by the placing of their respective cooking outfits in the center. They arrived at the mouth of the Muskingum River at the close of a day[12] in October, 1790, and waited[23] there until morning before tying up at the stockade at the foot of Washington Street, Marietta. The wagons were then reassembled and the household goods removed in them to temporary quarters, those of JOSHUA[5] being a tiny structure located on high ground near what is now Second Street between Washington and Wooster streets. He soon built and occupied a small log house near by but, in 1793, moved with his family into Campus Martius the stockade which had been constructed because of the Indian menace, buying there the building earlier owned by Abner Lord who had moved up to Wolf Creek. The deed for this dwelling, which consisted of but one room and a loft, was for many years in the possession of Dr. H. B. Shipman. JOSHUA[5] later built a house which was still standing in 1887 on the bank of the Muskingum, below the fort.

In 1794 his wife's parents, with their large family, came from Connecticut to make their home in this new land.

The occupation of JOSHUA[5] was that of a contractor and as such he had supervision of the building,[12] among other structures, of the Marietta Academy in 1798–9 and of the Congregational Church in 1807–8. He had the first log, one of black walnut, sawed in the first mill [which was probably a floating one] in the Northwest Territory. The lumber from it lay in his shop until 1798 when Alexander Hill, a cabinet-maker, stopped in Marietta, applied for work and was told by JOSHUA[5] that he might make a secretary for him from that walnut lumber. A really fine piece of work was done in the construction of a combined bookcase and desk with many shelves, pigeon holes and drawers, some of which were hidden and could be opened only by means of a secret spring. At a later period when the secretary was being refinished some well-intentioned but unimaginative workman did away with

the secret compartments by providing the ordinary means of opening them. This piece of furniture, in the one hundred twenty-eight years of its existence, has never been owned by any one outside of the family, having been consecutively the property of JOSHUA[5], of his granddaughter, Joanna F.[7] (Shipman) Bosworth, and of her niece, MARY B. (GATES) DAWES, and having been given by her before her death to her youngest son, Henry M. Dawes [fifth in descent from JOSHUA[5]], in whose home it now reposes.

The Shipmans were for generations noted as a family of deacons and that of JOSHUA[5] was no exception; for, though he himself did not hold the title, he had four sons who did, and one of these had two sons and a son-in-law, while another of them had a son and two sons-in-law who held such positions.[12] Silhouettes made of JOSHUA[5] and of his wife about the time of their marriage in 1787 are still treasured in the family [see plates XXI p. 734, XXII p. 736]. A letter written by JOSHUA[5] on November 29, 1816, to his son CHARLES[6] says "Your mother [SYBIL[6] CHAPMAN] wants to know about the Babe—whether it grows and how it looks"—referring to grandmother BETSEY[7] in her infancy.

The children of JOSHUA[5] and SYBIL (CHAPMAN) SHIPMAN, the first two or three born in Saybrook and the others in Ohio, were[12] [see plate XXXI p. 870]

I. possibly Samuel[6] who d. young[13] but, if so, he must have been a twin to Charles[6].
II. CHARLES[6], see following.
III. Harriet[6], b. March 6, 1790; d. June 27, 1790, in Saybrook.
IV. Harriet[6], b. July 16, 1791, in Ohio; d. April 3, 1792.
V. William Henry[6], b. April 14, 1793; d. April 8, 1829; m. February 15, 1821, Mary Ann Edgerton.
VI. Frederick[6], b. August 30, 1795; d. August 19 or 26, 1839; m. March 18, 1830, Maria Bailey.[25]
VII. Joshua[6], b. December 26, 1797; d. August 14, 1829; m. April 14, 1823 or 1825, Eunice Edgerton.
VIII. Elizabeth[6], b. March 8, 1800; d. unm., December 22, 1830.
IX. Julia[6], b. August 30, 1802; d. March 9, 1872; m. January 21, 1829, Nathaniel Holden.
X. Maria[6], b. April 17, 1804; d. November 30, 1865; m. August 6, 1835, Rev. Isaac Shook, of Tennessee.
XI. Samuel[6], b. October 15, 1807; d. May 9, 1880; m. January 22, 1833, Lucina Bingham.
XII. Joseph Chapman[6], b. April 27, 1810; d. unm. December 5, 1829.

CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN (*Joshua*[5], *Samuel*[4], *John*[3], *John*[2], *Edward*[1]) was born on August 28, 1787, at Saybrook, died July 7, 1860, at Marietta, Ohio, married[31] first at Belpre, Ohio, on November 12, 1811, Frances White Dana, married secondly at Athens, Ohio, on March 31, 1814, JOANNA HERRICK[6] BARTLETT [see Bartlett, p. 92; plates XXIV p. 748, XXV p. 752, XXXII p. 871].

As a child of three years he had come to Ohio with his parents and remembered stopping at farm houses along the way with his tin cup and pennies to buy milk. He attended Marietta Academy under David Putnam and later worked in the drug stores of Dr. True in Marietta and of Dr. Mathews in Putnam. For several years he assisted his father in his building operations, especially on the Congregational Church in Marietta. At the age of twenty-one he made a trip to the old Saybrook home, walking most of the way and spending a year with his relatives before returning to Ohio in the same manner. After his first marriage he removed to Gallipolis where his oldest son was born, but at the death of his wife he returned with her body to Marietta. In 1812 he went to a general muster* of militia at Athens and, being pleased with the town, presently opened a store and took up his residence there.† In early times he visited Philadelphia once, and sometimes twice, each year to purchase merchandise for his store, making the trip on horseback and, even as late as 1869, some of the older inhabitants remembered a fine sorrel horse owned by him on which he made nineteen of these trips.[24]

His cheerful disposition, "genial manner and fine social qualities," combined with business talent and uprightness, "gave him decided prominence and, ultimately, large success."[24] "He was the first, or one of the first, merchants in that part of the State to discard the sale of intoxicating drinks, to stop the practice of 'treating' customers and to engage actively in the temperance cause."[24]

He was made lieutenant of a Militia Company in 1812 by General Edward Tupper; was Adjutant of the 1st Regiment, 1st Brigade, 3rd Division, under Colonel Jesse Davis in 1810 and under Colonel James Mann in 1813; Adjutant of the 2nd Regiment, same Brigade, in 1817 under Colonel John Brown and Major of the same unit in 1818 by appointment of Governor Ethan A. Brown and was afterwards a full Colonel.[12, 24]

The Presbyterian Church of Athens was organized in 1809 and presently, if not at first, he became affiliated with it, for in 1815 he subscribed toward the completion of the court-house with the understanding that it might be used for church services [see Bartlett, p. 91], and during that and the following year he was appointed to assist in the superintendency of its construction, in 1827 he was one in whose name that church was incorporated and for more

* "General muster days were the delight of the children as well as of the parading militia who came from far and near."

† He was, at different times, in partnership with Col. Augustus Stone and with Col. Ichabod Nye, a brother of Ebenezer Nye with whom the Shipman family came down the Ohio River.

than twenty years he was a deacon thereof. In 1820, in company with several families, he removed to a farm but, finding it unsatisfactory, returned to Athens in about two years. In his home was a "prophet's chamber" which was never unoccupied for any length of time, for hospitality was a cardinal virtue in those days and ministers or agents were always entertained when they passed that way.

In 1815 and 1816 he was Town Treasurer, in 1827 was elected a councilman and, in 1828, was instrumental in the formation of the first Agricultural Society in Ohio.[24] In 1823 he was made an Honorary member of the Athenian Society at Ohio University.

The isolation of these early Ohio families is vividly brought to mind in these days of wireless communication and kindred modern advantages by the fact that, prior to 1794, mail to and from the east was carried only by private hand, though in that year a mail route was established which, from Wheeling, West Virginia, to the west, was by water and the time consumed from that town to Cincinnati, Ohio, was about six days, though the same distance, in return, required fully twice that time. Slow though this means was, it enabled the people of Marietta, and later those of Athens, to receive mail once every two or three weeks.

In 1834 CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN made a carriage trip with his two daughters, to Philadelphia, Baltimore and Washington, which is most interestingly recorded in a diary, still extant, which was kept by his eldest daughter,[12] Joanna[7]. He removed with his family, in 1837,[12, 24] to his old home in Marietta where he opened a store* in partnership with his brother Samuel[6] and continued in this relationship until his death. He and his wife are buried in the Mound Cemetery in that city.

The child of CHARLES[6] SHIPMAN and his first wife, Frances White Dana, was[12]

I. William Charles[7], b. December 23, 1812; m. April 16, 1836, Lucinda Scribner.

The children of CHARLES[6] and JOANNA HERRICK (BARTLETT) SHIPMAN, all born in Athens, Ohio, were[12] [see plate XXXI p. 870]

II. Joanna Frances[7], b. March 9, 1815; d. August 12, 1903; m. October 17, 1839, Sala Bosworth.

III. BETSEY SIBYL[7], b. November 9, 1816; d. July 25, 1895, at Marietta, Ohio; m. there on October 20, 1841, BEMAN[7] GATES [see Gates, p. 25, sketch p. 745 and plates VI p. 14, XXIII p. 740].

*He had spent twenty-five years in Athens as a merchant.

iv. Charlotte Orphana[7], b. November 24, 1818; d. September 22, 1827.
v. Henry Bartlett[7], b. October 27 or 30, 1821; d. October, 1902; m. 1st, September 10, 1851, Hannah Cotton; m. 2nd, May 5, 1863, Jane Butler Crawford.
vi. John Bartlett[7], b. December 20, 1823; d. 1906; m. 1st, 1846–7, Maria Barker, who d. July 15, 1868; m. 2nd, Frances Morris.

BETSEY SIBYL[7] SHIPMAN,* mother of MARY BEMAN[8] GATES whose ancestry is the subject of this volume, was born November 9, 1816, in Athens, Ohio. In this pioneer town, chosen as the site of the Ohio University which was designed to establish the intellectual standards of the Northwest Territory, BETSEY[7] had the best educational advantages obtainable for girls in those days. With her sister, she also attended school in Marietta and, for a time, studied music in Lancaster. They were the fortunate possessors of a piano, one of the first instruments brought across the Allegheny Mountains when transportation was by wagon.

When BETSEY[7] was twenty-one years old her father moved to Marietta to live and here she met BEMAN[7] GATES who had recently come from New England. They were married on October 20, 1841, and lived in Marietta the rest of their lives, building and occupying two homes, one on the corner of Fourth and Putnam streets and the other on a knoll near Oak Grove Cemetery. As editor, banker and railroad promoter, her husband was one of the leading men of the town. He was prominent in civic affairs, influential in politics and sought after in musical and literary circles. Her life lasted almost eighty years and stretched over a period of development from the simple customs of pioneer days to the complicated activities of a mid-west town in the closing years of the nineteenth century. She herself was pre-eminently a home maker, the list of her achievements beginning and ending in the home, but the influence of that home in moulding opinion, in stimulating good taste in the community and in developing character in her children and grandchildren was incalculable.

In her youth BETSEY[7] had no story-books, but she had no need of them, for the grown-ups of her own family told amazing stories of Indians and wild beasts, of enterprises involving desperate chances and true heroism and of highly romantic love between men and women who followed each other literally

"O'er the hills and far away
Beyond their utmost purple rim."

*This sketch was written by her granddaughter, Mary F. (Dawes) Beach.

BETSEY[7] had a vivid and sympathetic imagination and her ancestors, the principals in these romantic tales, became of absorbing interest to her. She lost no opportunity to increase her knowledge of them. Gradually she developed a taste for their genealogy as well as for their adventures and began to trace various lines of her ancestry. She was diligent in following every clue and all data were carefully preserved and added to year by year. She spent the time from 1869 to 1872 in Beverly, Massachusetts, where many of her ancestors had lived and where she could easily learn of them. She corresponded with genealogists, bought and studied their books and made journeys to places where information might be obtained. In 1875 she wrote:

> "I have hunted the Bartletts down and am after the Herricks."
>
> "We shall go to Boston tomorrow and in the afternoon to Warner, N. H., where my friend Bartlett lives. I have found my missing link in the Bartlett chain. I am so pleased."

In 1876 she visited the Genealogical Library in Boston, and wrote:

> "I am anticipating a great deal of pleasure in spending a week or more there."

It delighted her to place an ancestor with care, connect him fore and aft and then live his life over with him, weep when he sorrowed and laugh when he named his baby Orphana or Green Brown. She did it all in a most delightful way, combining fullness of detail with sympathetic and humorous interest.

Her interest reached out to other families as well as to her own. She wrote in 1875:

> "Do you remember the Clan gathering we attended in Charlottetown? Since then I have more than half wished I were a Scotchman."

Happening to be in Nantucket at the time of the gathering of the Coffins in 1881, she wrote:

> "There seemed so much bustle and excitement in Nantucket with the Clan Coffin that I could not help feeling the effects of it. I had to run around with them to hear their speeches and see the fun. . . . It was a mighty pretty sight to see so many people claiming kinship and I wish I could ever hope to be one of the links in such a company of kinsfolk."

Out of her genealogical studies there developed a taste for antiques and she became in a small way a collector of "relics" as she called them. She wrote from Nantucket when she had been visiting old-fashioned stores and auction rooms:

"I came home and found your father wondering where I could have gone but he knew the town crier would hunt me up if I was lost so he was waiting very patiently to see if I came home all right before he started him out on his round with his bell and the cry 'An old woman lost! An old woman lost! She dresses in black and goes about hunting up relics. An old woman lost!' "

In 1882 her husband wrote to their daughter:

"Your mother has a new attack of genealogy and I think that it is a bad one. One of her noted ancestors* in England was persecuted and imprisoned in 1646 for non-conformity.[30] He was the Vicar of Yetminster and somebody has sent her a copy of a letter in which he tells how he was deposed, robbed and imprisoned 'for conscience sake'. She is quite set up over it."

BETSEY[7] had this Vicar in mind when she wrote in 1890:

"I am going to write to Annie [Millikin] to write to me from Dorset County, England, so that I can preserve the letters with my family history of the Bartletts. I would like views from Frampton† and Sherbourne and Dorchester and see with my own eyes the places our old ancestors have seen, and have her [Annie] go to the prison of my[?] old rector or vicar or whatever he was. Now I will quit, for the minute anybody gets me started on the ancestor question I am all aglow."

It is her genealogical interest which differentiates grandmother BETSEY from her mother, her grandmother and most of the other ancestresses. She furnished the divine spark which lit the way of her grandson, at whose behest this volume has been compiled, and she kindled the fire of enthusiasm for the one who, as her proxy, has been employed at it. It was from clues found among the family records gathered by her during a period of nearly forty years that some of the more hidden lines have been reconstructed, including that to Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER. Whenever a new line of descent has been established, it has seemed as though her ambition and desire were being gratified.

Though apologetic over her devotion to this subject she nevertheless regarded it as valuable and worthy of respect. She left for her descendants a highly valued mass of genealogical information with the injunction to treasure her work and to add to it, and this material became the nucleus

* Theorized but not proved.

† The birthplace of JOHN[1] BARTLETT.

from which was elaborated the present volume, DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOLUME II, GATES AND ALLIED FAMILIES. She wrote in 1886:

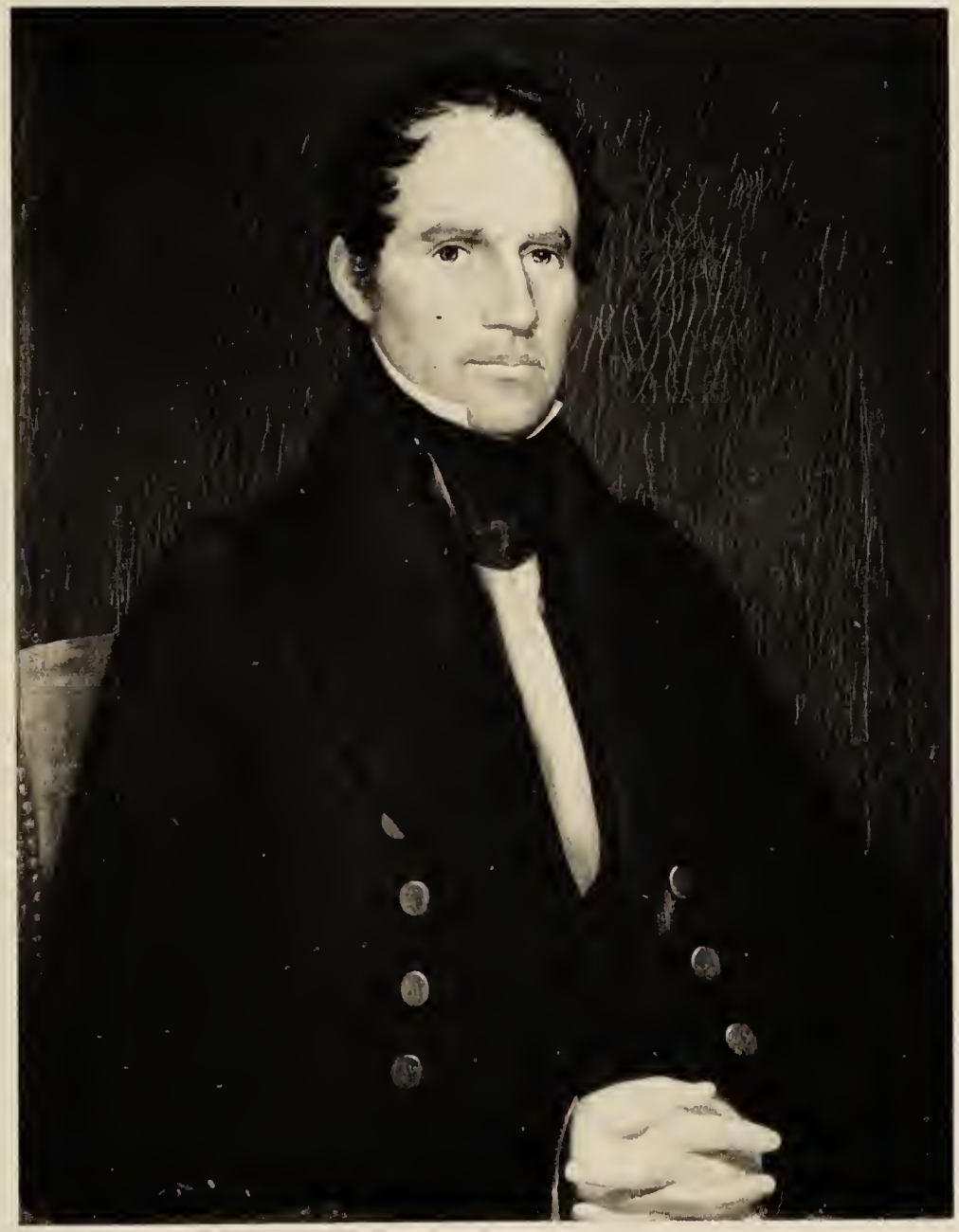
> "I think I deserve a good deal of credit for my perseverance in genealogy under difficulties, for I was the family laughing stock for a good many years,—for twenty years at least. It has been a great pleasure to me but I deserve the family thanks all the same for saving their history from oblivion."

In 1882 BETSEY[7] wrote to her daughter, MARY BEMAN[8] GATES, the wife of Congressman RUFUS R. DAWES, who was spending the winter in Washington, asking her to search the Naval Records for information about the Bartletts and to consult a gentleman who was writing a history of the Coreys. The daughter lacked her mother's interest in genealogy and, anticipating an indifferent attitude on the subject, BETSEY[7] said:

> "I cannot see as there is any harm in your doing this or that it will compromise your dignity or my character and I feel as if I should very much like to know. Old Grandmother BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT used to think the Coreys superior to the Bartletts but somehow we children did not see it in just that light. She was descended* in some way from General Claypoole who married Cromwell's daughter. You know that I have been very much interested in genealogy of late years and if I don't attend to it now 'wisdom will die with me'—in the language of old Job. I feel like making an apology for my interest when caught in it, and always feel inclined to attend to it on the sly for fear of being laughed at, and I must say I feel mean and all that, but I will do it little by little as I can, and maybe I will yet learn all I wish to know."

It was gratifying to BETSEY[7] that her friend and neighbor, SARAH (CUTLER) DAWES, mother of her son-in-law, RUFUS R. DAWES, shared her enthusiasm on the subject of family history. The two grandmothers, the one following the ancestral trails of the maternal side and the other equally diligent in

*Not "descended from," for General John and Elizabeth (Cromwell) Claypoole had no grandchildren, but probably "related to." The General's brother, Norton[1] Claypoole, came to America, lived in Sussex County, Delaware, near the grandparents and great grandparents of "Old Grandmother" BETSEY (COREY) BARTLETT, and by his second wife, Rachel (——), he had a daughter Elizabeth, born at Lewes, Sussex County,[30] Delaware, on May 16, 1687. This Elizabeth Claypoole lived in the right place at the right time to have married WILLIAM[3] PETTYJOHN and thus to have given the seal of proof to a persistent tradition in different branches of this family that the frequent recurrence of the name "Betsey" even to the present day has been in honor of the relationship to Cromwell's favorite daughter Elizabeth. Proof, however, of this presumed Claypoole-Pettyjohn marriage has not thus far been found.



Charles[6] Shipman

collecting data pertaining to the paternal side of their grandchildren's ancestry, used often to visit and compare notes. In 1875 BETSEY[7] wrote:

> "Mrs. DAWES and I are hunting up genealogies. We come across the Boardman family occasionally, and the Bartletts and Websters have intermarried."

According to the words of one of her grandsons, Grandmother BETSEY "was the most companionable person we have ever known. She never met with strangers on a trip without leaving them lifelong friends. Until her last sickness she never experienced the feeling of being bored. She was always keenly interested in something, alive every minute and enjoying life. I remember that the fall before she died she was planning for her garden the next spring. She said to me, 'All my life I have tried to live so that I would go to Heaven, and I expect to go there very soon, but I never expect to see anything in Heaven that I could enjoy more than I would enjoy seeing these flowers next spring.' Her quick humor and ready laugh and warm sympathy are things much easier to appreciate and enjoy than to describe." BETSEY had delicate features and sparkling eyes. Her bubbling spirit and keen wit were somewhat subdued by shyness and the result was a rare combination of refinement and vivacity. She retained her happy disposition and charm to the end of her life. Beneath her gaiety was a character of strength and purity. She discriminated clearly between right and wrong and adhered uncompromisingly to the right and required the same adherence of her family.

BETSEY SIBYL (SHIPMAN) GATES has become, in turn, a highly esteemed "ancestor" from whom coming generations may reasonably hope to inherit beauty of person, charm of manner, quick intelligence and perennial humor.

The children of BETSEY SYBIL[7] SHIPMAN and her husband BEMAN[7] GATES [see Gates, p. 25], all born at Marietta, Ohio, were

I. MARY BEMAN[8] GATES [see opening sketch, p. 3].

II. Charles Beman[8] Gates, b. October 3, 1844; d. May 31, 1864, at Harpers Ferry, W. Va. He joined the 148th Regiment, Ohio Volunteers, in May, 1864, and although only nineteen years old was commissioned a first lieutenant. He was injured in a railroad accident and died on his way to the front before his father and mother could reach him.

III. Betsey Shipman[8] Gates, b. February 26, 1853; d. April 22, 1920, at Marietta, Ohio; m. there October 12, 1875, William W. Mills.

ADDENDUM

An unusual situation has arisen in regard to the identity of the prototype of "Natty Bumppo," James Fenimore Cooper's "Leatherstocking." There is

no dispute over the fact that this original was a member of the Shipman family, but the controversy is, rather, as to which member of it so qualified. Cooperstown claims the honor for its David Shipman (born about 1740, died 1813), while Hoosick Falls contends that the unique distinction belongs to its one-time resident, Nathaniel Shipman (died 1809), who for many years also lived near Cooperstown.

It is unwise to take sides in such a controversy when absolute proof has not been found, so quotations will be made upholding the claims of each locality. We who are interested in the family as a whole and are not partisan can enjoy the story perhaps even more than they who disagree.

Among others, testimony[28] has been given by Mrs. Ann (Shipman) Pitts, aged 96 in 1924, and resident in Middlefield, a few miles from Cooperstown, whose line of descent is through William[7], Samuel[6], Samuel[5], SAMUEL[4], JOHN[3], JOHN[2], EDWARD[1]. She says that her grandfather, Samuel[6], was a cousin of the notable David Shipman. Other descendants in her line testify to the same relationship saying also that our SAMUEL[4] was an uncle to David, and these have all "heard that they were related to Leatherstocking," while the descendants of David himself, through his three children, Samuel, Patience and Delilah, admit of no question that he was Cooper's inspiration.

The Reverend Ralph Birdsall, a rector of Cooperstown, writing of the matter from the local viewpoint (which favored David), but generously recognizing also the claims of Hoosick Falls for their hero Nathaniel Shipman, said:[28]

"As to Leatherstocking, this is to be said: that in Cooper's boyhood there lived in Cooperstown a hunter named Shipman whom Cooper himself in the Chronicles of Cooperstown, published in 1838, described as 'the Leatherstocking of the region.'

"Strangely enough, the matter in dispute has not been the identity of Shipman with Leatherstocking, but the identity of Shipman himself. This is the question that has stirred controversy; and two ghosts have arisen from the past, each claiming to be the Shipman whom Cooper idealized, re-christened, and made immortal.

"Cooper gave to his hero the name of Nathaniel Bumppo. It has been claimed that Cooper borrowed not only the character but the Christian name of Nathaniel Shipman, a famous hunter and trapper who came to Otsego Lake at the time of the Revolutionary War, and made his home in a cave on the border of the lake until about 1805.

"According to the discoverers of *this* original of Leatherstocking, Nathaniel Shipman was a close friend of the Mohican Indians and fought with them against the French and the Canadian Indians. In the years immediately preceding the American Revolution, Shipman was a well-known settler of Hoosick, northeast of Albany and near the border of Vermont, where he had built him a cabin on the banks of the Walloomsac. He was well disposed toward the English, and one of his closest friends was an officer in the British Army. When the Revolutionary War began, while Shipman's heart was with the movement for independence, his friendship for the English was such that he determined to be strictly neutral, helping neither one side nor the other. There is nothing to show that he was not genuinely neutral. But his patriot neighbors were intolerant of such neutrality. They believed that anyone who was not for them was against them. Consequently Shipman was put down as a Tory, and his neighbors treated him to a coat of tar and feathers. Soon after this event Nathaniel Shipman disappeared from Hoosick leaving his wife and only child, Patience, who knew not whither he had gone.

"In process of time Shipman's daughter married a John Ryan of Hoosick. Ryan served in the Legislature from 1803 to 1806 and, at that time, became acquainted with Judge William Cooper, founder of Cooperstown, father of the novelist. In the course of their frequent meetings Judge Cooper told Ryan of an interesting character whom he knew in Cooperstown, and described the picturesque appearance and quaint sayings of the old hunter who lived on the border of Otsego Lake. At home Ryan told the story to his wife, who soon became convinced that the old white hunter whom Cooper had described was none other than her father, who had been missing for twenty-six years.

"Ryan went to Otsego Lake and, having found the hunter, learned that he was indeed Nathaniel Shipman who had disappeared from Hoosick at the time of the Revolutionary War. Ryan persuaded the old man to return with him, and brought him back to live in the home which then stood some two miles east of Hoosick Falls. In spite of the devotion of his daughter, however, the aged hunter never felt quite at home beneath her roof, or among the former neighbors. His heart was in the wilds, and it is said that he made frequent visits to the place where he had passed so many years in unrestricted freedom, where there was none to question his sincerity or to doubt his loyalty.

"Nathaniel Shipman died at the Ryan home in 1809, and his grave is in the old burying ground on Main Street in Hoosick Falls.

"The local tradition in Cooperstown does not recognize Nathaniel Shipman of Hoosick Falls. When a movement was made in 1915 to erect at Hoosick Falls a monument to Nathaniel Shipman as the original of Leatherstocking, the proposition was made the subject of scornful comment in Cooperstown, and Nathaniel Shipman of Hoosick was referred to as a 'spurious Natty Bumppo.'

"Cooperstown agrees that the original of Leatherstocking was named Shipman. But the given name of that hunter, according to them, was not Nathaniel. It was David Shipman, whose grave is not far from Cooperstown, in the Adams burying ground between the villages of Fly Creek and Toddsville, and at the beginning of the twentieth century was marked with a tombstone by Otsego chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution. David Shipman's descendants live in Cooperstown at the present time. When the Hoosick Falls claim to Leatherstocking was first published in 1915, it was accompanied with the statement that the facts had been known to the people of Hoosick for sixty years. To offset and contradict this, Cooperstown partisans announced that "for over a century David Shipman has held the undisputed honor of being the real Leatherstocking of Cooper's tales."

"David Shipman served in the American Army in the Revolutionary War, and was a member of the Fourteenth Regiment of Albany county militia under Col. John Knickerbocker and Lieut.-Col. John van Rensselaer. After the Revolution he lived just over the hills west of Cooperstown in a log cabin on the east bank of Oak's Creek, about equi-distant between Toddsville and Fly Creek village. In 1878 Aden Adams of Cooperstown, aged 81, stated that he well remembered David Shipman. As described by Adams, he was tall and slim, dressed in tanned deerskin, wore moccasins and long stockings of leather fastened at the knee, and carried a gun of great length. He was one of the most famous hunters of the whole country and, with his dogs, roamed the forest in search of deer, bear and foxes. He supplied the Cooper family at Otsego Hall with deer and bear meat, and also assisted Judge Cooper when he was surveying land about Cooperstown in the early days of the settlement. These items do not constitute proof, for the active life of that day kept most of frontiersmen slender and necessity caused most of them to dress in such fashion and also to become expert hunters. As against Adams' word is that of Calvin Graves, who came to Cooperstown in 1794, and lived in the place for 84 years, who is quoted as saying that he well knew

Joanna H. (Bartlett) Shipman

Shipman, the Leatherstocking of Cooper's novels, and that Shipman was never married. Graves said that he had often visited the old hunter's cave in company with him. This testimony seems to point to the Hoosick Shipman who, having deserted his family for twenty-six years, might easily pass for a bachelor in Otsego, and who is said to have lived in a cave, concerning which nothing is mentioned in the traditions of David Shipman.

"Cooper's most famous hero, carved in marble, rifle in hand, and with the dog Hector at his feet, stands at the top of the Leatherstocking monument in Lakewood cemetery, on a rise of ground near the entrance, overlooking Otsego Lake from the east side, about fifteen minutes' walk from the village of Cooperstown. It stands near the spot upon which the novelist, for the purpose of his romance, placed the hut of Natty Bumppo. The monument, of white Italian marble, with the statuette of Leatherstocking at the top, was sculptured by Robert E. Launitz, and erected in the spring of 1860.

"Natty Bumppo's cave, a not very remarkable freak of nature which Fenimore Cooper's pen has made one of the chief points of interest in the region of Cooperstown, is about a mile from the village, high up on the hill that rises from the eastern side of the lake. It is not much of a cave, being hardly more than a deep and curiously formed cleft between the rocks. In "The Pioneers" Cooper takes advantage of poetic license to enlarge the cave for the purpose of his story. In the summer of 1909 was discovered lower down on the hillside another and larger cave, the small entrance of which, in the woods beyond Kingfisher Tower, at Point Judith, had long remained unobserved. Here the name of Natty Bumppo came near being involved in another controversy, for some local archeologists maintained that the newly discovered cave was the one which Cooper meant to describe as Natty Bumppo's, being better adapted to the requirements of the narrative than the one tradition had fixed upon. It is quite possible that the cave near Judith Point is the one referred to in the tradition of Nathaniel Shipman of Hoosick Falls.

"Natty Bumppo will live forever as a symbolic figure, representative of certain indigenous qualities in American life. Lowell found in Leatherstocking 'the protagonist of our New World epic, a figure as poetic as that of Achilles, as ideally representative as that of Don Quixote, as romantic in his relation to our homespun and plebeian myths as Arthur in his to his mailed and plumed cycle of chivalry.' Americans themselves do not realize how widely, in other countries, Leatherstocking is still regarded as typical

of certain qualities in the American character. Among Americans who had half forgotten their Cooper, there was no little surprise at the exclamation of Gabriel Hanotaux, member of the French Academy, when, in the spring of 1917, on the entrance of the United States into the war against Germany, he expressed his joy in a message that was cabled round the world, 'Old Leatherstocking still slumbers in the depth of the American soul!'

"There is a point on Otsego Lake, opposite to Natty Bumppo's cave, from which passing boatmen awaken the famous Echo of the Glimmerglass. For more than half of the nineteenth century there lived in the village a negro whose lungs were renowned for their power to call forth the fullness of this strange echo. 'Joe Tom,' as he was named, was always called upon, as the guide of lake excursions, to perform this peculiar duty. Stationing his scow at the focal point, the negro would shout across the water, 'Natty Bumppo! Natty Bumppo!—Who's there?' And, after a moment, the cry would be flung back, as by the spirit of Leatherstocking, from the heights of the steep woods and rocky faces of the hill. On a still summer evening Joe Tom was sometimes able, by a single shout, to call forth three distinct echoes, which were heard in regular succession,—the first from the region of the cave, the second from Mount Vision, and the third from Hannah's Hill on the opposite side of the lake, until the margin of the Glimmerglass seemed to respond with cries of 'Natty Bumppo!—Natty Bumppo!' uttered by eerie voices.

"The years pass, but no other name retains such magic power to wake the sleeping echo of the Glimmerglass." To revert to the other theory:

"The Hoosick Falls version[29] was based on statements of men* who were residents of that place during the later years of Nathaniel Shipman's life. Dr. Walworth said of him 'I knew him in some of the last years of his life, that is, I knew him as youngsters know a facetious, jovial old man who prefers the company of young people to the company of old age. He was

* This version was recorded seventy or more years ago by Judge L. Chandler Ball, of Hoosick who made extensive research and was aided by the testimony of James E. Beckett of that place and by treasured letters written earlier by (a) Dr. Benj. Walworth (then of Fredonia, New York, younger brother of Chancellor Reuben Hyde Walworth whose family resided in Hoosick Falls for more than twenty years subsequent to 1795) and by (b) Azariah Eddy then of Lyons, Iowa, who had been a close personal friend of the Hon. John Ryan, son-in-law of Nathaniel Shipman, during the lifetime of the former, and had acted as his executor after his death. He was employed by Mr. Ryan to file and arrange his papers and letters both of a public and private nature and, in this confidential employment, learned much of Mr. Ryan's personal history, especially that part connected with Mr. Shipman and, being interested in the story and knowing something of Shipman, he purchased a copy of "The Pioneers" and, afterwards read portions of it to Mr. Ryan who listened with great interest to the description of Leatherstocking and his exploits until, at some point in the story, he started to his feet and exclaimed, "That is Father Shipman."

generally known as Grandfather Shipman and was always full of fun and frolic and the young people were always pleased to have him with them. He spent the last years of his life with his son-in-law, John Ryan, of Hoosick, until his death somewhere about the year 1809.'

"Nathaniel Shipman, a noted hunter and trapper, came to the Walloomsac Valley at the close of the last French and Indian War, or about the year 1760. It is said that in the interval before that war he was with a detachment of soldiers sent to build a stockade which was located near the mouth of the Walloomsac River for the protection of the few settlers on and near the old war trail of the French and Indians, whose atrocities in this section are a matter of history.

"Shipman married and made his home in the Walloomsac Valley, in what is now the northeastern part of the town of Hoosick. He was a friend of the Mohican Indians who remained in this district, and was treated by them with great respect and confidence. They hunted and lived together, and had fought side by side in the last French and Indian War. In this war, Shipman became noted as a scout and Indian fighter, and was the trusted servant and friend of a distinguished British Officer, for whom he always retained a most sincere affection.

"When the War of the Revolution broke out, his loyalty to his friend (the British officer) made him hesitate to join the American Army and his apparent indifference to the patriotic cause subjected him to the suspicion of being a Tory. Later, when the invasion of Burgoyne became imminent and the feeling against Tories ran high, Shipman was attacked by his neighbors, tarred and feathered, and driven out of the place where he then lived, and all trace of him was lost.

"Nothing is known of Nathaniel Shipman's family except that his daughter, Patience Shipman, born October 14, 1762, was married in 1796 to John Ryan, of the town of Hoosick. John Ryan, one of the most prominent and influential men of this section in his day, came to Hoosick as the agent of the heirs of Jacobus Van Courtland, one of the four original grantees of the Hoosick Patent, and served the community in many official ways. When in Albany in 1803, as a member of the Assembly, he became acquainted with Judge Cooper, of Cooperstown, who related to him many of his trials and adventures in settling his large landed estate in Otsego County. Judge Cooper also told Mr. Ryan about an aged white man who, in company with a Mohican Indian, lived in a hut or cave near Otsego Lake. This white man

was represented as a famous hunter and a warrior of some celebrity in the French and Indian Wars, a man of quaint speech and habits and, like his Indian companion, a true son of the forest. Judge Cooper constantly referred to the eccentric habits of the old hunter and made his sayings the subject of his daily conversation with his friends and acquaintances to such an extent that when Mr. Ryan returned to his home at the close of the Session he related to his family the stories which Judge Cooper had told him of the old hunter of Otsego Lake and his quaint sayings and doings.

"Mrs. Ryan [Patience Shipman] at once declared her belief that the old hunter whom he described to her was her father who had been missing for twenty-six years. At the earnest solicitation of his wife, Mr. Ryan went to Cooperstown, making the journey of several days on horseback, to see the old hunter, and thus relieve his wife's anxiety. On reaching the cabin of the hunter he found the confirmation of his wife's belief, for the white hunter described by Judge Cooper proved to be his wife's father, Nathaniel Shipman.

"When urged by Mr. Ryan, Shipman returned with him to Hoosick and was made known to their friends, and cared for as long as he could be induced to stay, but his old habits were strong and, the next spring, he wandered off and again made his home in the forest. On the approach of winter he was found in a cave on the east side of the Green Mountains and, being well supplied with food for the winter, he refused to return with the friends who discovered his camp, but promised to do so later. The next year he came back and lived with the Ryan family until his death in 1809. He was buried in the Ryan lot in the village burying ground by the side of an uncle of Mr. Ryan, named Jacobs, who was the first person buried there, and, in the course of time, his son-in-law and daughter were buried beside him.

"The story of how Nathaniel Shipman was found at Otsego Lake and his restoration to his family after an absence of twenty-six years, through the agency of Judge William Cooper, was known to the people of Hoosick a score of years before the publication of 'The Pioneers' by James Fenimore Cooper and, therefore, long before the character of Leatherstocking was created and, for that reason, as well as from the high character and standing of those through whom it has come down to us, it should have far more weight with unprejudiced minds than the unsupported assertions of interested persons, no matter how often repeated.

"This story of Nathaniel Shipman places him as the Shipman who was nearest to the Cooper family during the time that the author was at home,

especially during his boyhood days when he was most likely to be impressed by the personality which he afterwards made famous in the character of 'Natty Bumppo.'

"Nathaniel's Shipman's life more nearly resembles the life of 'Natty Bumppo' than does the life of David Shipman. Nathaniel was a hunter and a wanderer whose early life was spent among the Indians and as a scout and Indian fighter with the British soldiers, while David was a farmer whose life was spent with his family and with whom hunting was a pastime. Nathaniel served as a scout and guide in the last two French and Indian wars and David, who was born probably in 1740 at the earliest, was only four years old when Nathaniel was serving in the war about which 'The Deerslayer' was written. And again, Nathaniel was driven from his home in the Walloomsac Valley because he would not join the American Army in 1777, while David has left an honorable record as a soldier in that army of the Revolution. And last, was not the author led to name his character 'Natty' because Nathaniel Shipman was the Shipman who filled his mind when he wrote 'The Pioneers.'

"After reading the life of J. Fenimore Cooper, it appears that his life was so ordered that there was not much chance of his coming in close or continued contact with David Shipman after Nathaniel left Cooperstown. Mr. Cooper entered Yale College in 1802, the year before Nathaniel left Otsego Lake; he left college in 1806 and went to sea, where he got his training for the Navy, remaining in the service until 1811, when he married and lived at Angevine, the Westchester estate of Mrs. Cooper's family, where his first novels, 'Precaution' and 'The Spy,' were written in 1820 and 1821, so that it is extremely doubtful if he spent much time in the Cooperstown home from the time of Nathaniel's departure until after David's death in 1813.

"It is claimed for David Shipman that he, too, furnished game, etc., for the Cooper family. This may well be true, because he lived in the vicinity of Cooperstown about ten years after Nathaniel went to Hoosick with Mr. Ryan.

"Soon after the publication of 'The Pioneers' in 1823, Azariah Eddy [vide supra] being in New York City, was shown by a friend a copy of that work which he had received from the author. Eddy testified that on the fly leaf was written the names of the principal characters and their originals and, opposite the name of Leatherstocking was written the name of 'Nathaniel Shipman.'

"It is not often that two persons of the same name are claimants for such an honor. In personal appearance they were nearly enough alike to be

brothers and there will always remain in our minds the impression that they were members of the same family, though there is no proof of the fact. The prominence given to the claims of David Shipman as compared with the claims of Nathaniel, is explained by the fact that David was the ancestor of a numerous family who remained in that vicinity and did not know of the existence of Nathaniel Shipman except perhaps a dim tradition of a wandering brother; while Nathaniel's family became extinct with the death of Mrs. Patience (Shipman) Ryan, and there was no one who had a distinct personal interest in keeping the claims of Nathaniel before the public. It may be true that David and Nathaniel were not known to each other but we deem it more than a mere coincidence that the name Patience, apparently originating with Nathaniel's daughter, has been preserved among the descendants of David Shipman.

"After all, in the final analysis of a matter of this kind, in the absence of any declaration by the author, we must depend largely, if not entirely, upon circumstances to guide us, because the only person who could have decided positively who was the original of Leatherstocking sleeps his last sleep amid the scenes which his magic pen revealed to the world with so much charm and beauty. And, in absence of any such declaration, we believe that the story enacted a score of years before Cooper revealed the beauties of 'Glimmerglass' to an admiring world, warrant our belief that Patience (Shipman) Ryan was not mistaken in her conviction that her father, Nathaniel Shipman, whose remains lie in an unmarked grave in the old village churchyard at Hoosick Falls, was the original of Natty Bumppo who, for nearly a century, has been known as Leatherstocking."

The above story has been published[32] and illustrated with interesting views of the vicinity of Cooperstown and Lake Otsego, including one of Natty Bumppo's cave. There has also been published other material of equal interest and illustrations of a locality of perhaps an even greater beauty, pertinent to Leatherstocking and to Glens Falls, New York, and its vicinity, which Cooper visited and which he memorialized in "The Last of the Mohicans." One may see by visiting Glens Falls, or may find portrayed by description and illustration in the article referred to, the cataract, the flat rock or "Island in the Falls," and "Leatherstocking's Cave," where Hawkeye himself, the Leatherstocking, hid the storied daughters of Col. Munroe.[32] This spot at the head of the Hudson Valley, and midway between Fort Edward and Fort William Henry, lay within about thirty miles in an air line

or fifty by water, northwest from Hoosick Falls, the home of Nathaniel Shipman. It was on the thoroughfare between Canada and the American Colonies and this section became "the warpath of the nations," "the bloody arena in which most of the battles for the mastery of the colonies were contested." [See map on p. 487.]

We see evidence here, therefore, of the use of the name Leatherstocking as applied, even to the present day, to a locality which Cooper, the author, visited; which was fought over in the French and Indian War in and about 1757 (when David Shipman would have been but a youth) and which was in the general vicinity of, and accessible by water, from the home at Hoosick Falls of Nathaniel Shipman, for whom as "Leatherstocking," it may fitly have been named.[32]

REFERENCES

1. Records in Hartford, Conn., at the State Historical Society and State Library, including Killingworth Vital Records, II, 130; Hebron Vital Records, I, 3, 64; Saybrook Vital Records, I, 4, 8, 16, 22, 32, 51–2, 130, 144; II, 5, 7, 204; IV, 64.
2. Savage, II, 463–4; IV, 87.

2a. Southworth with Collateral Lines, H. S. L. Barnes, 1903, pp. 45–9. Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XXI, 363, 370.

3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 523.
4. Soldiers in King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 444–6; Narragansett Historical Register, I, 146; History of Middlesex County, Connecticut, 1884, p. 456.

4a. Saybrook, Conn., Land Records, I, 200; II, 202; III, 34, 91; VI, 72; Saybrook, Conn., Probate Records, IV, 179; VII, 466, 843.

5. New England Register, XIII, 235.

5a. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 479.

6. Connecticut Public Records, IV, 227; New England Register, IV, 140.

6a. Vital Records of Hebron, Conn., at Hartford, I, 3.

7. History of Middlesex Co., Conn., 1884, pp. 459, 539.
8. Colonial Records of Connecticut, IV, 227.
9. Humphreys Family, F. Humphreys, 1883, pt. I, p. 112; Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, p. 566.

9a. Beckwith Notes, 1899, part I, 28.

9b. 200th Anniversary of First Congregational Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, p. 42.

9c. History of New London County, Conn., D. H. Hurd, 1882, p. 387.

10. Personal search of Saybrook records by Mrs. BETSEY SIBYL (SHIPMAN) GATES, the results of which were printed in New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, II, 887–8; IV, 1601–2 and in Connecticut Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1911, II, 601.

10a. Statement of H. W. Brainard of Hartford, Conn.

11. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XIII, 107, 203; Records in the hands of D. N. Gaines, Town Clerk, Hartland, Conn.

11a. Reynolds Family Association, No. 30, p. 78; Leffingwell Record, A. & C. W. Leffingwell, 1897, p. 70.

11b. Records of Joseph M. Andreini, 29 W. Seventy-fifth St., N. Y.

11c. Morgan Genealogy, N. H. Morgan, 1869, pp. 34, 49–50; Morgan Genealogy, A. Morgan, 1901, pp. 241–2.

12. Family Records accumulated by Mrs. BETSEY S. (SHIPMAN) GATES, of Marietta, O.; Shipman Bible, owned (1924) by Mrs. Mary Ellen (Shipman) Biscoe, of Marietta, O.; New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, II, 887–8.
13. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 48.

13a. Doty Family, E. A. Doty, 1897, p. 45.

14. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XII, 506, 556; XV, 270.
15. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 462, 469, 543.
16. Public Records of Connecticut, I, 1894, 409, 411, 470.
17. Colonial Records of Connecticut, XV, 454, 519.
18. Public Records of Connecticut, III, 1922, 225, 445.

19. Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Connecticut, F. G. Mather, 1913, pp. 200–10.
20. Public Records of Connecticut, II, 1895, 440; III, 1922, 128, 225.
21. New England Register, LXV, 140.
22. History of Southampton, Long Island, G. R. Howell, 1887, p. 361; Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Connecticut, F. G. Mather, 1913, pp. 536, 562.
22a. New England Register, LVII, 139.
22b. Pratt Family, F. W. Chapman, 1864, p. 83, 85.
22c. Early Connecticut Marriages, F. W. Bailey, 1899, IV, 97; History of New Britain, Conn., D. W. Camp, 1889, pp. 65, 268, 457–8; History and Genealogy of New Britain, Conn., A. Andrews, 1867, pp. 243, 276, 278, 316; D. A. R. Lineage Book, LI, p. 221.
22d. Revolutionary Pension Record, Washington, D. C.
22e. Saybrook Land Records, IV, 42; IX, 467; Guilford Probate Records, XIII, 160–2.
23. Nye Family, D. F. Nye, 1907, pp .211–2.
24. History of Athens County, O., C. M. Walker, 1869, I, 173–4, 183–4, 217, 226, 240, 243, 294–5.
25. Bailey Genealogy, H. R. Bailey, 1899, p. 391.
26. Marietta (Ohio) College Historical Collections, 1917, II, pp. 149, 196.
27. New England Genealogies, W. R. Cutter, 1913, IV, p. 1601; American Ancestry, XII, 157; Kingsbury Genealogy, Rev. A. & J. A. Kingsbury, 1901, p. 161; New York Mail and Express, Genealogical Department, June 9, 1900, No. 3830, January 12, 1901, No. 4049; Beckwith Notes, 1899, Part I, p. 28.
28. Data furnished by Mrs. Ann Shipman Pitts, Middlefield, N. Y.; Mrs. Ambrose C. Shipman, 31 Nelson Avenue, Cooperstown. N. Y.; Mrs. Charles M. Larrabee, 35 High St., Peterboro, N. H.; Mrs. Nettie Fuller Ward, Richfield Spa, N. Y.; Mrs. Monroe A. Smith, 1808 N. Park Ave., Chicago, Ill.; The Story of Cooperstown, Ralph Birdsall (Rev.), 1917, 163–73.
29. History of Rensselaer County, N. Y., N. B. Sylvester, 1880, pp. 381–2; Landmarks of Rensselaer County, N. Y., G. B. Anderson, 1897, pp. 421–2; The Knickerbocker Press of Albany, N. Y., Issue of July 4, 1915; The Otsego Farmer of Cooperstown, N. Y.
30. Sufferings of the Clergy during the Great Rebellion.
31. Old Northwest Quarterly, IV, 60.
32. New York Historical Association Proceedings, 1906, VI, 185–7; "The Real 'Natty,' an Elder Brother" and "Cooper's Historical Inventions, and His Cave," ibid., 1917, XVI, 187–92, 212–255; especially 231–255; The Last of the Mohicans, J. F. Cooper, Chapters V to X, inclusive; The Chronicles of Cooperstown, J. F. Cooper, 1838, p. 28; Worthington Family, G. Worthington, 1894, pp. 35–51, especially 49.

SPARROW

* † [764] Richard Sparrow –1661	m	Pandora . . . –aft.1665
* † [382] Jonathan Sparrow –1707	m 1st 1654	Rebecca Bangs c.1636–7–c.1677
† [190] William Freeman c.1660–1686–7	m c.1675–84	Lydia Sparrow c.1660–1–aft.1708
† ‡ [94] Richard Godfrey 1677–aft.1741	m 1702	Lydia Freeman c.1684–aft.1716
† § [46] Prence Doane 1704–c.1751	m 1726	Elizabeth Godfrey 1704–bef.1791
‖ ¶ [22] Hezekiah Ackley c.1733–5–aft.1783	m 1756	Abigail Doane 1732–aft.1777
¶ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
¶ ♣ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
♣ ♦ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
♦ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Plymouth, Mass.
† Eastham, Mass.
‡ Harwich, Mass.
§ Saybrook, Conn.
‖ East Haddam, Conn.
¶ East Hartland, Conn.
♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.

SPARROW

RICHARD[1] SPARROW, with his wife PANDORA (——) and son JONATHAN[2], emigrated from England[1] and became a resident of Plymouth, Massachusetts, as early as 1632. In 1633 he became a freeman; in that year, as well as in the following one, he paid a tax of nine shillings; in 1640 he was appointed to view the meadows; and from 1640 to 1653 he was a surveyor of highways at least seven times. He must have displayed either a special fitness or an especial liking for jury service for he is found to have assisted in the deliberations of twenty-eight different juries between 1640 and 1658; he was also on five grand juries and on two coroners' juries.[2, 4a] He held the position of constable in 1640 and 1641, was one of the receivers of "Exsise" in 1650, and was the recipient[3] of seven or more tracts of land between 1636 and 1642. Various debts were due him in 1633—eleven shillings, sixpence from Richard Lanckford, one shilling, sixpence from Godbert Godbertson, one pound, one shilling from Francis Eaton "for worke in the wier and [in] his grane," and other amounts[4] in 1643–4 from John Atwood and John Jenney. No evidence is found, however, that RICHARD[1] owed sums to others.

In June, 1639, Mary Moorecock apprenticed herself, with the consent of her "father-in-law" [step-father] to RICHARD[1] "and PANDORA, his wyfe, and after the manner of an apprentice wth them to dwell from the day of the date hereof vnto thend & terme of nyne yeares now next ensuing . . . the sd RICHARD SPARROW fynding his said servant meate, drink, and apparell during the said terme, and shall also keep her a ewe lambe wch her said father in law will bestow vpon her during the said terme and shall have the third p^{te} of thencrease thereof for his charge & labour."[5] The Sparrow family also took into their home Elizabeth[2] Hopkins, daughter of STEPHEN[1], after the death of her father in 1644. The latter man's will gave[6] to her one-fourth of his household furnishings, as well as "the Cowe called Symkins and her calf and thother half of the Curld Cowe wth Ruth [her sister who owned the one-

half of the latter animal] and an yearelinge heiffer w^th^out a tayle." STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS made Miles Standish one of his executors, in pursuance of which Standish entered into an agreement with RICHARD[1] SPARROW whereby he should have Elizabeth[2] "as his owne child untill the tyme of her marryage or untill shee be nineteene yeares of age" and "In consideracon" of her weakness and "inabillytie to performe . . . hard labour" RICHARD[1], during her residence in his house, was to have the use of her entire share of her father's estate.[6] Evidence is found that in 1656 Standish made complaint against RICHARD[1] in behalf of Elizabeth[2], probably in this connection and presumably on a misunderstanding, for the matter was promptly arranged[5] with satisfaction to all concerned. The records obtainable relative to RICHARD[1] are mainly of a legal sort, so that the picture drawn of him necessarily stresses unduly one side of his life and conduct.

In 1638, calling himself "yeoman," RICHARD[1] signed a bond for £10 for the appearance of William Latham at the next term of court; in January, 1639–40, he arranged to buy of John Barnes five head of two and three year old cattle for £83 current money, and the same day he sold[7] three head, presumably the same animals, to Josiah Winslow for £50.

An interesting occurrence is seen wherein most magnanimous conduct was displayed by RICHARD[1] for he excused and even concealed the fact of a theft of corn from his barn, promising the offender that he would not disclose his wrongdoing unless questioned by the authorities,[7] with the result that RICHARD[1], himself, was not only questioned but severely criticised for his leniency.

The court actions instituted by RICHARD[1] which are of record were uniformly decided in his favor, suggesting that he did not enter suit without just cause, and a scrutiny of the list of individuals whom he sued shows that he had considerable moral courage. Included in the list is a case against James Luxford for trespass in December, 1641; one against Nathaniel Mayo [son-in-law of Governor THOMAS[1] PRENCE] in October, 1657, claiming damages by defamation to the amount of £40, wherein he received £10 and costs; and even one against the Reverend Ralph Smith for taking away a piece of timber from his land after being forbidden it, and for refusing to return it; the minister was required by the Court to put it back where he got it and to pay the costs of the suit.[8]

RICHARD[1] and his family moved to Eastham in or before 1653, for in that year, being called of that town, he acknowledged the sale (his wife concurring) of his late home in Plymouth for the sum of £8 to George Bonum.

In December, 1652, the Court ordered[10] each town to send deputies on April 1, 1653, to meet with the magistrates "to treat and conclude on such military affairs as, through God's blessing, may probably tend to our present and future safety," in consequence of variances between England and Holland. In this capacity Eastham sent RICHARD[1] SPARROW and JOHN[1] DOANE. In 1653, as well as in 1655–6, RICHARD[1] was honored by the Eastham people in being sent as their Deputy[9, 11] to the General Court. In 1657, with his wife's acquiescence, he sold[12] other holdings in Plymouth to Gyles Rickard. That year he made a request, with JOHN[1] DOANE and others, for a grant of land between Bridgewater and Weymouth "att a place about thirteen English miles from Rehoboth." This request was acceded to in 1658, though there is no evidence of the removal of RICHARD[1] from Eastham.

In 1658 he represented Eastham on a committee to "acte in the ordering and settleing of the trad att Kennebecke."[11] [See Prence, p. 688.] In 1657 he was appointed by the Court at Plymouth to make arrangements for the accommodation of THOMAS[1] PRENCE, then governor, whose home was at Eastham, during the periods of his attendance on Colony business at the seat of government, and for his conveyance to and fro.[4a]

The will of RICHARD[1], dated November 19, 1660, made his wife PANDORA and his son JONATHAN[2] his executors, and divided his property[13] between them and the three older children of that son, who were presumably all he had at the time. It also included a bequest of "one ewe sheep" to the Eastham Church.[4a] He died on January 8, 1660–1, and his inventory was taken on the twenty-second of that month. THOMAS[1] PRENCE was requested to be one of the three overseers of the will which directed that "my halfe sheep that is in the hands of Richard higgins should be Disposed of in gloves for them [the overseers]; and wherein it shall fall short; that it be made up by my exequitors." JONATHAN[2] deposed as to the truth[13] of the inventory on March 5, and PANDORA did so on March 27, 1661.

In 1665 the widow and son sold[4a] the Eastham home and removed to what is now East Orleans where PANDORA probably died,[4a] though the names of both RICHARD[1] and herself are cut on a gravestone on the Sparrow lot in the ancient cemetery at Eastham.[13, 15]

The only known child of RICHARD[1] and PANDORA (——) SPARROW was

1. JONATHAN[2], see following.

JONATHAN[2] SPARROW (*Richard*[1]) was born in England, and brought to this country by his parents about 1632. He died March 21, 1706–7, at

Eastham;[15] he married first at that place on October 28, 1654, REBECCA[2] BANGS[15] [see Bangs, p. 67]; married secondly[25] between 1667 and 1671, Hannah (Prence) Mayo, daughter of our THOMAS[1] PRENCE; and married thirdly,[26] November 23, 1698, Sarah (Lewis) Cobb, daughter of George Lewis and widow of James Cobb.

JONATHAN[2] took no part in public affairs until after the family removed to Eastham, but thereafter his time was filled with service of many sorts. His name is among the legal voters[10] on May 22, 1655; he was admitted and sworn a freeman[19] in June, 1663; he was engaged as a school master[10] in 1665; he acted as constable,[19] as attorney for some townsmen in a lawsuit,[19] as deacon of the church, and also belonged to[28] a Troop of Horse.

He was a deputy[17] to the Old Colony Court at Plymouth at least nineteen sessions between 1668 and 1686 at which time Governor Andros became dominant. Following Andros' usurpation he was representative to the General Court of Massachusetts at Boston during at least eight sessions[16, 18] between 1689 and 1702; he was a selectman of Eastham for at least ten years[16] between 1671 and 1686; he was a member of the council of war in 1681, 1685 and 1689; he was Associate Judge or Magistrate in 1690 and 1691; he was for many years a Justice of the Peace and frequently served on petit juries, coroners' juries and grand juries.[19]

JONATHAN[2] was on many committees for various services such as to collect the minister's salary; to inspect the "ordinaries" [public houses] and to see that the laws relative to the service of liquor were obeyed; to settle boundary disputes; to settle estates; to advise widows in the handling of their property and to take inventories; to balance and audit the Colony accounts; to outfit Eastham soldiers for an impending Indian campaign; to adjust the accounts resultant from such an expedition; to invoice all liquors, powder, "shott & led" brought into the Colony; and to "order all watches and wardings and garrisons . . . and the setting forth of scoutes for the safety of the townes."[20]

The "Watch" lasted from sunset until sunrise and the "ward" continued through the daylight period. Any one who was called to this service but failed to appear was to forfeit five shillings which, if not paid promptly, should be levied by distress warrant on his property, or if he had no estate, he was "to be sett necke and heeles . . . not exceeding halfe an houre." [See Freeman, p. 359.] If he was tardy in arriving to discharge this duty as sentinel a fine of one shilling was assessed for the first hour and the full

five shillings for any greater delay; if he failed to have "fixed armes and suitable amunition" he was fined the five shillings, was turned away and another man was chosen in his place.[21]

One of the ways in which JONATHAN[2] SPARROW was most useful to the community was as a military man. He was raised from ensign to lieutenant on October 4, 1675, and in that rank served in King Philip's War, for which service his heirs, in 1733, received a share in Narragansett Township No. 7, now Gorham, Maine.[22] The title of lieutenant was still given him on March 6, 1676–7, but before June 6, 1677, he had received a captaincy, which commission was renewed[21] to him on October 2, 1689, and that title remained in use throughout his life.

He owned much land, acquired by purchase and by grant, mostly in the vicinity of Eastham, but some of it as far away as the north bounds of Taunton and the island called "Sparrow's Island."[23] His will, dated March 10, 1706–7, and probated April 3, 1707, showed that his third wife and six of his children survived him; it included a bequest to his daughter LYDIA[3] and a provision that her children, William Freeman and LYDIA (FREEMAN) GODFREY, should have one-half of their mother's share of it.[24] A modern gravestone put up on the Sparrow lot in the ancient cemetery at Eastham commemorates JONATHAN[2], his first two wives, as well as his father and mother.[24]

The children of JONATHAN[2] and REBECCA (BANGS) SPARROW, all born at Eastham, were[15, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29]

I. Rebecca[3], b. October 30, 1655; d. February, 1740; m. December 31, 1673, Thomas[3] Freeman (JOHN[2], EDMOND[1]).
II. John[3], b. November 2, 1656; d. February 23, 1734–5; m. December 5, 1683, Apphia Tracy.
III. Priscilla[3], b. February 13, 1658; d. bef. March 10, 1706–7; m. Edward Gray.
IV. LYDIA[3], b. after November 19, 1660; d. after March 16, 1708–9; m. 1st, after 1675 and before 1684, WILLIAM[3] FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 363].[26, 29] She m. 2nd, probably[26] between 1687 and 1691, Jonathan[3] Higgins (Jonathan[2], Richard[1]).[32]
V. Elizabeth[3], b. after November 19, 1660 and before 1670; d. after August 31, 1688, and before 1694; m. February 5, 1684, Samuel[3] Freeman (Samuel[2], Samuel[1]).
VI. Jonathan[3], b. July 9, 1665; d. March 9, 1739–40; m.[30] 1st, Rebecca[3] Merrick (William[2], WILLIAM[1]); m. 2nd, Sarah (——) Young.

The children of JONATHAN[2] SPARROW and his second wife, Hannah (Prence) Mayo, were

VII. probably Richard[3], b. March 17, 1669–70; d. young.[26]

VIII. Patience[3], b. before October 25, 1675; d. October 25, 1745, "above 70";[27] m. 1st, at Eastham, May 27, 1691, Joseph Paine (Thomas);[26] m. 2nd, November 23, 1715, John Jenkins.[27]

IX. Richard[3], b. abt. 1675; d. April 13, 1728; m. at Eastham, February 4, 1701–2, Mercy Cobb, daughter of his father's third wife; after his death she married, secondly, as his second wife,[31] ISRAEL[3] DOANE (DANIEL[2], JOHN[1]), through whom we descend by his first wife.

REFERENCES

1. Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1883, pt. 2, p. 248.
2. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 4, 11, 28, 126, 141, 152; II, 7, 53, 56, 84, 112, 116–7, 124, 126, 132, 134; III, 32, 79, 136, 162; VII, 16, 18, 20, 22–3, 25, 28, 31, 36, 40–3, 45–7, 49, 52–4, 60, 83.
3. Ibid., I, 46, 78, 141, 154–5, 166; II, 25, 29, 48, 155.
4. Mayflower Descendant, I, 86, 157, 199; V, 158; VI, 174.

4a. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, No. 32, pp. 2–3, by Josiah Paine; No. 33, p. 30.

5. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 128–9; VII, 80.
6. Mayflower Descendant, I, 13; II, 12–3; IV, 114–7: VII, 80.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 101, 138–9; II, 162–3.
8. Ibid., VII, 27, 69, 84; Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1883, pt. 1, 95, 272.
9. Mayflower Descendant, III, 138–9; Historical Memoir of New Plymouth, F. Bayliss, 1866, I, pt. 2, 17, 20, 21; Plymouth Colony Records, III, 24, 99, 142, 170–1.
10. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 206–7; II, 359, 363, 369–71, 390, 413–4.
11. Plymouth Colony Records, III, 24, 99, 123, 142, 170–1.
12. Mayflower Descendant, XI, 18.
13. Ibid., VI, 203; VIII, 4; XII, 57–60.
14. Ibid., III, 138–9; X, 215; Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1883, pt. 1, 240, 249–50, 272.
15. Mayflower Descendant, V, 23; VIII, 4; XIV, 2–5, 193–203; XVII, 70.
16. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 102–3, 107.
17. Historical Memoir of New Plymouth, F. Bayliss, 1866, I, pt. 2, pp. 64–5, 71–2; II, pt. 3, p. 193; pt. 4, pp. 1, 12, 20, 98.
18. Plymouth Colony Records, IV, 180; V, 17, 35, 57, 92, 114, 135, 165, 195, 232, 256; VI, 10, 61, 85, 106, 128, 144, 164, 186–7, 206, 222, 240, 263, 268 and others.
19. Ibid., IV, 38, 106, 123, 169, 176; VI, 67, 169, 203, 212, 235, 243, 247, 268.
20. Ibid., IV, 23; V, 37, 60, 154, 186, 200, 220, 242, 271; VI, 228–9, 246, 251, and others.
21. Ibid., V, 175, 186–7, 218, 232.
22. Soldiers of King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 183, 440, 462.
23. Plymouth Colony Records, IV, 27, 129, 131, 152; V, 127–8; VI, 70.
24. Mayflower Descendant, VIII, 4; XII, 58–60.
25. Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 27.
26. Mayflower Descendant, XIV, 1-5, 193–203.
27. Ibid., VII, 19; XIX, 111; XXV, 124.
28. Bangs Genealogy, D. Dudley, 1896, pp. 20–1, 29–31.
29. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 27–8, 41–2, 356, 359.
30. Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, p. 15.
31. Doane Family, A. A. Doane, 1902, pp. 52–3.
32. Richard Higgins and his Descendants, K. C. Higgins, 1918, p. 67.

SPENCER

GERRARD[1] SPENCER,* our emigrant ancestor, was a son of GERRARD SPENCER, of Stotfold,† co. Bedford, England. He and his older brothers, William, Thomas and Michael, as well as other near relatives, came to New England[2] in 1632–4. The four brothers settled first at Cambridge in Massachusetts Bay Colony. They may have come together but the documentary evidence[3] of their presence there, first shows William as a resident in 1632, Thomas in 1633, GERRARD[1] in 1634 and Michael in 1635, though each may have arrived earlier. In "The prime of September 1634," GERRARD[1] had four acres of land granted to him on the west side of the river, his brother Michael had a similar amount there and our STEPHEN[1] POST had twelve acres near by.[3]

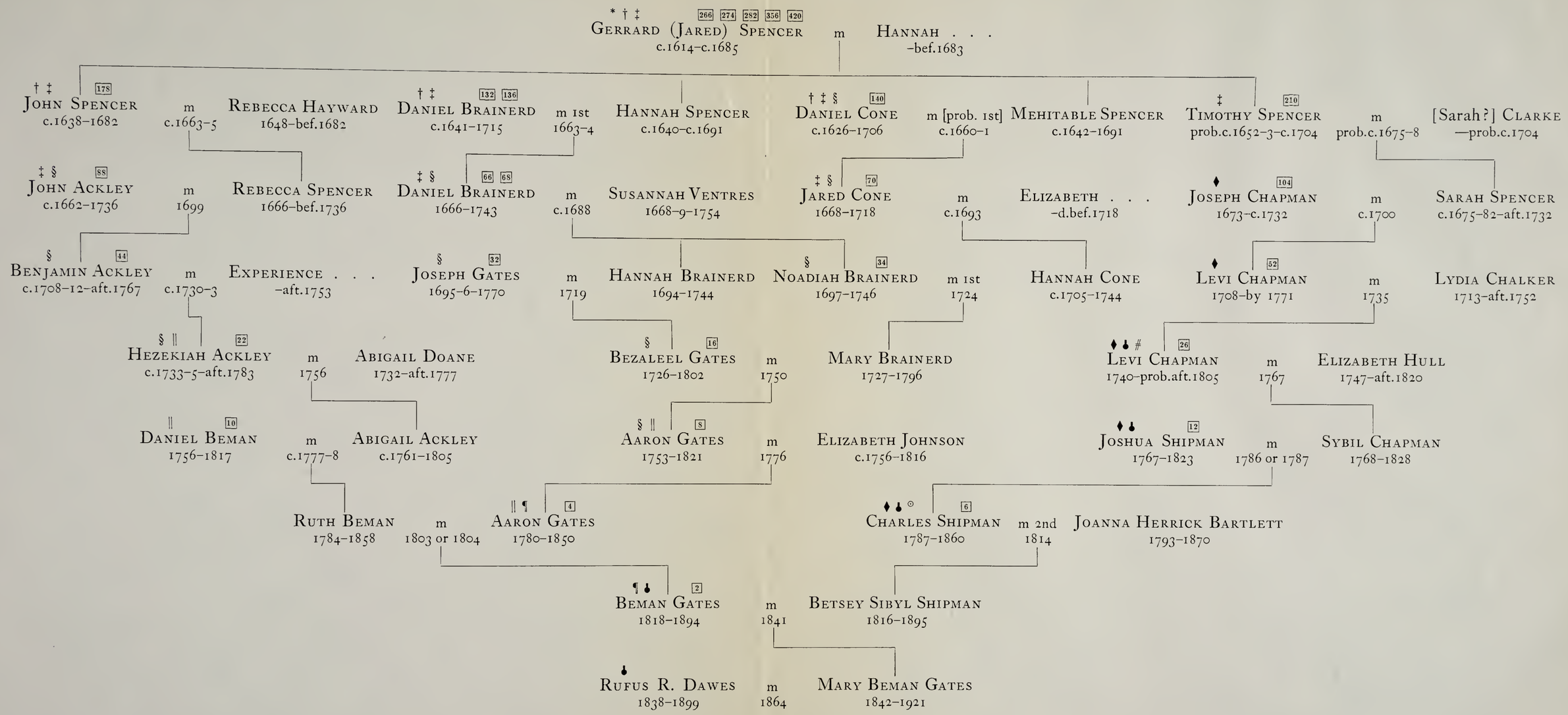
GERRARD[1] became a freeman[3a] [see Appendix, p. 852], on March 9, 1636–7, but whether of Cambridge or of Lynn is not evident for, of these brothers, William‡ and Thomas removed in or before 1639 to Hartford, Connecticut, and Michael and GERRARD[1] became residents of Lynn,[2, 4] Massachusetts, the latter by or before 1637. In 1638, GERRARD[1] and Michael each received thirty acres of land in Lynn; in the same distribution, PHILIP[1] KIRTLAND, "sr.," and Philip[2] Kirtland, "jr.," each received ten acres.[5] In Lynn, GERRARD[1] served[5] on trial juries in March and September, 1639, in June, 1652, June, 1657, June, 1658, and on a grand jury in November, 1659. He was appointed in November, 1653, as administrator of the estate[5, 6] of his brother Michael. In March, following, he filed the inventory and, with Captain William Trask, of Salem, was instructed to dispose of the property for the support of the deceased man's children. In November, 1654, the court ordered, with the consent of GERRARD[1] as administrator, that a certain portion of this estate

* He was[1a, 1b, 1c] baptized on April 25, 1614, in St. Mary's Parish, Stotfold, being the youngest of the seven sons of GERRARD SPENCER, of that place. GERRARD[1] the emigrant was a beneficiary in 1645–6 by the will of his uncle, Richard Spencer of London.[1]

† About thirty-five or forty miles north of London.

‡ William Spencer, in his will, called Matthew Allyn, of Hartford and Windsor, his cousin and John Pratt, of Hartford, his brother, which relationships may be more or less pertinent to our ancestor as well.[16a]

SPENCER



* Cambridge and Lynn, Mass. † Hartford, Conn. ‡ Haddam, Conn. § East Haddam, Conn. ‖ East Hartland, Conn. ¶ Montague and Amherst, Mass. ♣ Marietta, Ohio. ♦ Saybrook, Conn. # Salem, Ohio. ⊙ Athens, Ohio.

SPENCER

GERRARD[1] SPENCER,* our emigrant ancestor, was a son of GERRARD SPENCER, of Stotfold,† co. Bedford, England. He and his older brothers, William, Thomas and Michael, as well as other near relatives, came to New England[2] in 1632–4. The four brothers settled first at Cambridge in Massachusetts Bay Colony. They may have come together but the documentary evidence[3] of their presence there, first shows William as a resident in 1632, Thomas in 1633, GERRARD[1] in 1634 and Michael in 1635, though each may have arrived earlier. In "The prime of September 1634," GERRARD[1] had four acres of land granted to him on the west side of the river, his brother Michael had a similar amount there and our STEPHEN[1] POST had twelve acres near by.[3]

GERRARD[1] became a freeman[3a] [see Appendix, p. 852], on March 9, 1636–7, but whether of Cambridge or of Lynn is not evident for, of these brothers, William‡ and Thomas removed in or before 1639 to Hartford, Connecticut, and Michael and GERRARD[1] became residents of Lynn,[2, 4] Massachusetts, the latter by or before 1637. In 1638, GERRARD[1] and Michael each received thirty acres of land in Lynn; in the same distribution, PHILIP[1] KIRTLAND, "sr.," and Philip[2] Kirtland, "jr.," each received ten acres.[5] In Lynn, GERRARD[1] served[5] on trial juries in March and September, 1639, in June, 1652, June, 1657, June, 1658, and on a grand jury in November, 1659. He was appointed in November, 1653, as administrator of the estate[5, 6] of his brother Michael. In March, following, he filed the inventory and, with Captain William Trask, of Salem, was instructed to dispose of the property for the support of the deceased man's children. In November, 1654, the court ordered, with the consent of GERRARD[1] as administrator, that a certain portion of this estate

* He was[1a, 1b, 1c] baptized on April 25, 1614, in St. Mary's Parish, Stotfold, being the youngest of the seven sons of GERRARD SPENCER, of that place. GERRARD[1] the emigrant was a beneficiary in 1645–6 by the will of his uncle, Richard Spencer of London.[1]

† About thirty-five or forty miles north of London.

‡ William Spencer, in his will, called Matthew Allyn, of Hartford and Windsor, his cousin and John Pratt, of Hartford, his brother, which relationships may be more or less pertinent to our ancestor as well.[16a]

should be left in the hands of Thomas Robins, of Salem, who had been intrusted with the care of Michael, Jr., the young son of the deceased. In June, 1655, being then called "sergeant," GERRARD[1] brought suit against Edward Richards for a debt of £5 due this estate.[5]

On March 13, 1638–9, GERRARD[1] was "granted the fferry at Linn for 2 yeares, taking 2[d] for a single pson to the furthest place, & but a 1[d] a pson for more [than one] to the furthest place, & but a 1[d] for a single pson to the nearest place."[4] This ferry was, doubtless, from Needham's landing in Lynn to Ballard's landing in East Saugus.

In September, 1639, GERRARD[1] and Joseph Armitage signed a bond as security for Daniel Salmon.[5] In 1641 he and one other, made oath as to the intent of William Ballard, deceased, to have made a will and testified as to his stated desire concerning the disposal of his property.[4] In February, 1643–4, the estate[5] of Abraham Belknap, late of Lynn, is recorded as being indebted to GERRARD[1].

An attitude of mind and line of conduct which might be called meddlesome was in those days evidently considered commendable since the leading men of the various towns conformed to it, and among them GERRARD[1]. In June, 1643, he bore witness[5] that a neighbor woman spoke contemptuously of infant baptism; in December, of that year, he witnessed against a man who was living away from his wife; in September, 1646, he and John Deacon testified that Joseph Armitage sold wine at retail without a license and, at the same court, he "deposed that on artillery training day, coming from Salem with others, Edward Richards overtook them, and that he was distempered with drink, stumbled in his going and faltered in his speech."

A law suit occurred in July, 1645, in which GERRARD[1] evidently had a material interest. It is called the "Case of a Cow" and was first docketed as "Jos. Armitage v. GARET SPENCER," then crossed out and re-entered as William Hughes versus Joseph Armitage; the animal had evidently lost its life prematurely and the decision rendered was, with the consent of Armitage and GERRARD[1] SPENCER, the "defendant shall have three pounds and the benefit of the dead beast."[5] At that same court several men were presented for turning their cattle into the general field before the corn was gathered and, for that offense, they were to pay damages to GERRARD[1] and two others.[5]

In June, 1656, he was confirmed as ensign of the military company[5] at Lynn and retained that title throughout his life though his residence at Lynn terminated after November, 1659, and probably in 1660. It is evident

that he was a church member or he could not have been a freeman of Massachusetts. His wife[17] and children belonged to the church at Lynn and of these JOHN[2], HANNAH[2], MEHITABLE[2], Thomas[2], Nathaniel[2] and, it is said, three other members of this family,[8a] retained that membership during most if not all of their lives, for their various children were baptized at Middletown, Connecticut, by virtue of the "communion of churches" because their parents were members of the "Ch[urch] of Xt [Christ] at Lyn."[8]

The general opinion seems to be that GERRARD[1] moved directly from Lynn to Haddam, Connecticut, but it seems quite certain that he removed about 1660 to Hartford where his brothers, William and Thomas, had long resided. The records of that town show[7] that on June 14, 1660, "ye town by their vote gave GERARD SPENCER liberty to dwell among us, as an inhabitant with us at Hartford." Evidence[31] is found, too, that during the period 1650–65, only eight persons were formally admitted by vote of the people of Hartford, and numbered among these were GERRARD[1] SPENCER and ROBERT[1] HAYWARD. Other circumstances which lend weight to the belief that the Spencer family lived for a time at Hartford are the facts (a), that the marriage of DANIEL[1] CONE occurred before his removal to Haddam in 1662, and the bride is called MEHITABLE[2] "daughter of JARED SPENCER . . . *then* of Haddam;"[11] and (b), that Simon Lobdell, resident in Hartford from 1655 to about 1666, had before March 14, 1660–1, become engaged to HANNAH[2] SPENCER who had seen fit to "change her mind" and who, with her father, had been sued by Simon for breach of promise.[2] The Court had granted him a verdict of £10 and costs but he was not satisfied and asked a re-hearing on March 14, 1660–1. His persistence was evidently annoying to the authorities and their answer was

"1. This Court admits not a further hearing of ye case.

2. Its ordered that ye spetial verdict drawen vp by the p^{r}ticuler Court, respecting Simons case agst JARED and HANNAH SPENCER, shal stand firme to issue that busines.

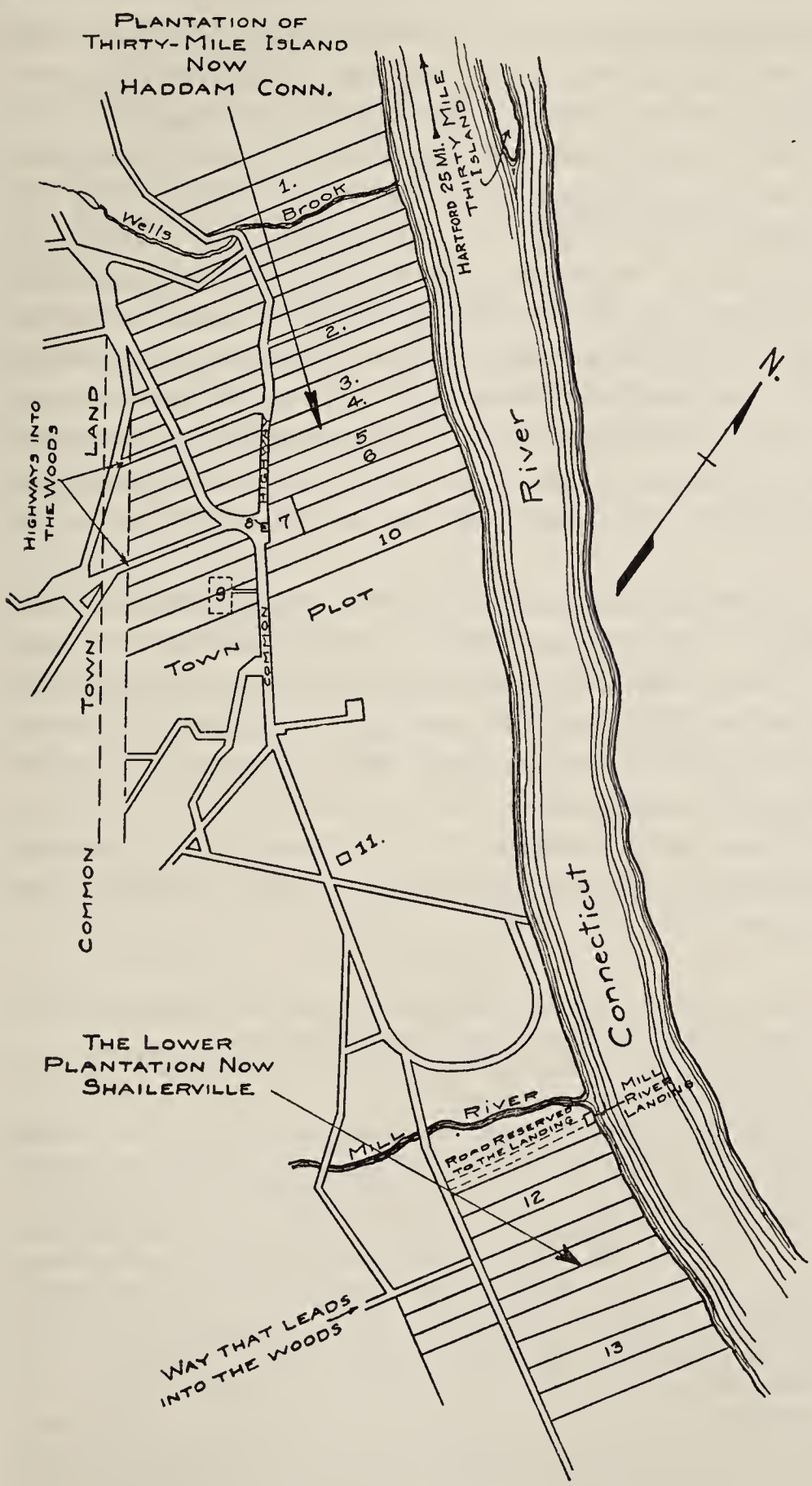
3. In referenc to ye just expences mentioned in ye verdict, Its ordered that JARED SPENCER shal pay vnto Simon Lobdell, Fiue pounds, beside the Ten pounds mentioned in ye verdict. All wch sum of fifteen pounds shalbe paid in wheat and pease or other estate equivalent: Fiue pounds to be paid by the 10th of Aprill, the other Ten pounds according as is specified in ye spetial verdict. And this is to be a final issue."[12, 13]

In 1676, one Simon Lobdell was receiving contributions from the town and, assuming that he and Simon above mentioned were one and the same man, it seems most fortunate that HANNAH[2] did "change her mind."

The purchase of Haddam was approved by the General Court in 1660 and a committee appointed to complete the transaction; but it was May 20, 1662, before the consummation of the sale was effected, at which time four Indian Kings and two Indian Queens signed the deed to over one hundred thousand acres, receiving therefor thirty red coats of a possible value of about one hundred dollars.[14] Soon afterwards the major part of the twenty-eight men, mostly from Hartford, in whose behalf the purchase was made, moved on to the land. Among them were the families of GERRARD[1] SPENCER, of his son JOHN[2] SPENCER, of his two sons-in-law DANIEL[1] CONE and DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, of GEORGE[1] GATES, WILLIAM[1] VENTRES, WILLIAM[1] CLARKE and later of NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY, all but VENTRES from Hartford.[14]

On February 27, 1667, GERRARD[1] was on a committee to treat with the Saybrook men about the boundary between the towns.[14] The town of Haddam decided, on June 13, 1671, to make a division of lands on the west side of the river in such proportion that twenty acres should be laid out for every £100 valuation of the proprietors' estates and these apportionments were to be selected by the individuals as their names were drawn by lot. In this way GERRARD[1] received the eighth choice.[14] His original home lot of four acres lay next to and south of the parsonage lot[14] and he was called the patriarch of Haddam[8a] and its wealthiest man. He was propounded for freemanship of Connecticut[15] on June 26, 1672. His name was presented to the General Court by the people of Haddam as their choice for ensign of the train band[15] [of which WILLIAM[1] VENTRES was the sergeant] on September 14, 1675, and he is said[8a, 14] to have served in King Philip's War. He acted as representative to the General Court from Haddam for at least nine sessions[15] from 1674 to 1683, most of the time in company with GEORGE[1] GATES. In 1676 he took the inventory and administered the estate of Stephen Luxford of Haddam.[16a] The land holdings of GERRARD[1] included property elsewhere than at Haddam for, on May 4, 1679, he sold twenty-five acres of land in Salem, Massachusetts, to George Corwin of that place.[2, 12]

GERRARD[1] must have married his wife HANNAH (——) either at Cambridge or at Lynn, probably the latter, but unfortunately her identity has not been established. She doubtless died before September, 1683, for his will[12, 16] dated the seventeenth of that month [one portion of which[12] was witnessed by



HADDAM,
CONNECTICUT
1662–5

HOME LOTS OF

1. JOHN[2] SPENCER
2. GERRARD[1] SPENCER
3. DANIEL[1] BRAINERD
4. DANIEL[1] CONE
5. WILLIAM[1] CLARKE
6. GEORGE[1] GATES
7. BURYING GROUND
8. SECOND MEETING HOUSE
9. BRAINERD ACADEMY
10. RICHARD PIPER'S LAND
11. FIRST MEETING HOUSE
12. WILLIAM[1] VENTRES
13. NICHOLAS[1] ACKLEY

GEORGE[1] GATES] made no mention of her. He died between that date and September 3, 1685, when his will was probated, and administration was granted to his son William[2] and to DANIEL[1] BRAINERD. He must have had considerable property for he made generous disposition of land to his heirs and the inventory of property not disposed of by will, amounted to £124–12–00. He gave "a pewter Flagon & rim Bason . . . to the Church at Haddam, if there be one within five years," but more than twice five years passed before the church could claim this gift.[8a] A tradition which is considered trustworthy, since it rests on the circumstantial evidence of such a flagon still owned by the church as its oldest relic, affirms that the heirs of GERRARD[1] respected his wish and that after the formation of the church they presented to it the utensils as he had planned; that these were the first of such gifts to be used in administering the ordinances and that the flagon is still treasured.[8a]

JOHN[2] SPENCER died before his father and left five young children. The will of GERRARD[1] specified "that my son JOHN SPENCER his children and my son-in-law DANIEL CONE his children [shall] have an equal proportion of my estate with my other Children." It also gave to Grace[3] Spencer, youngest daughter of JOHN[2], forty acres of land and to JARED[2] CONE, the testator's grandson, it gave his carbine.[16]

The children of GERRARD[1] and HANNAH (——) SPENCER, all born at, doubtless, Lynn, Massachusetts, recorded in uncertain order and from four of whom we descend, were[1a, 1b, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 19]

I. JOHN[2], see following.

II. HANNAH[2], b. about 1640–1; d. by or about 1691; m.[10] doubtless at Haddam, about 1663–4 as his first wife, DANIEL[1] BRAINERD [see Brainerd, p. 135].

III. MEHITABLE[2], b. about 1642; d. 1691 at Haddam; m. doubtless at Hartford[11] by 1661 as his first wife DANIEL[1] CONE [see Cone, p. 234].

IV. Marah[2] [often erroneously called Alice but original research[17, 24] shows the former name to be correct] b. (—); d. before[16a] December 22, 1714; m. first, early in 1662 as his second wife, Thomas Brooks; m. secondly, perhaps in 1669, Thomas Shaylor.

V. Thomas[2], b. prob. about 1650; d. February, 1699; m., about 1673, Elizabeth Bates, daughter[1b, 23] of James and Anna (Withington) Bates. They removed to Saybrook.

VI. Samuel[2], b. (—); d. August 7, 1705; m. 1st, 1672–3, Hannah (Willey) Hungerford Blatchford [daughter of Isaac Willey, widow, first, of our THOMAS[1] HUNGERFORD and secondly of Peter Blatchford]; m. 2nd, 1689, Miriam (Moore) Willey.

VII. William[2], *b. prob. after[17] 1650; d.[17] at East Haddam, 1731; perhaps m. 1st, (——); m. [2nd?], Margaret Bates.

*This man is almost universally[1a, 7, 9, 12, 18, 19] said to have married Sarah[2] Ackley (NICHOLAS[1]), but it was another of the same name who did that, and possibly a relative. William[2], above, was a weaver. He may have had an earlier wife and by her his son Joseph[3], b. March 23, 1680, and baptized "3-7-1682"; his known wife, Margaret

viii. Nathaniel[2], b. (—); d. before 1722; m. 1st, about 1681, Lydia Smith (Thomas); m. 2nd, Hannah (—).
ix. Rebecca[2], b. (—); d. before 1706; m. 1st, about 1682, John Kennard; m. 2nd, after February, 1689, John Tanner.
x. Ruth[2], b. (—); d. (—); m. Joseph[2] Clarke [WILLIAM[1] of Haddam].
xi. TIMOTHY[2], see following, p. 776.
xii. Elizabeth[2], b. (——); d. (——); m. Joseph Stannard.

JOHN[2] SPENCER (*Gerrard*[1]) was born about[1a, 7] 1638–40 at Lynn, Massachusetts, died[16] at Haddam, Connecticut, on August 3, 1682, and married[9, 19] probably at Hartford[20] about 1663–5, REBECCA[2] HAYWARD [see Hayward, p. 419]. He undoubtedly came to Hartford with his father and was one of the men of that town who settled at Haddam in 1662. His home lot lay at the northern end of the town [see map on p. 773]. With other residents of that place, he was presented for freemanship[15] on May 13, 1669.* In 1668–9 after the death of his brother-in-law, Thomas Brooks, he took into his home his four-year-old nephew, Thomas Brooks, Junior. The child's mother married, secondly, Thomas Shaylor, but JOHN[2] continued to care for her young son. REBECCA, his wife, had evidently died between 1676 [when her youngest child was born] and August, 1682, the date of the death of JOHN[2]. Apparently his illness was short and his death sudden for he disposed of his estate and planned for the future of his children by a verbal will which was testified to by his brother Thomas[2] and by GEORGE[1] GATES. It speaks highly of his character that even with death imminent he should plan so minutely for his children and for his nephew and adopted son. The latter he admonished to "show all respect to his mother, now the wife of Thomas Shaylor; but the two years' time which he was to have lived with his Uncle he now gave to himself; also gave him 20 shillings,"[16] "gave him his loom

Bates [daughter of James and Anna (Withington) Bates of Dorchester and Haddam] was born June 19, 1664, and probably married about 1684, in which case she would at least have been the mother of his second child born September 1, 1685. She was admitted to the Middletown church on May 5, 1695, and the record reads "Margaret wife of our brother William Spencer, Senior." They had baptized there, Hezekiah on August 10, 1690, Micajah on November 3, 1695 [said[20] to have been born June 15, 1693] and Margaret on October 1, 1699; they also had sons, Hezekiah second, b.[24] April 6, 1697, and William, b. September 16, 1699, while other children assigned them are Elizabeth, James, Jonathan and Ichabod.

On the other hand William Spencer of East Haddam, who was called "junior," was born, presumably, by or before 1663, died at East Haddam before February 16, 1712–3, having married there at an unknown date but before[16a] 1695, Sarah[2] Ackley (NICHOLAS[1]). "He had some education, wrote an excellent hand, was town clerk and school master. He could not have been a son or grandson of GERRARD[1] and, if at all related to him, was a nephew." At his death he left children, Alexander, William, Mary, Sarah and Hannah. Of these, Mary later married Jonathan Dunham. This family kept apart from the other Spencers of Haddam and East Haddam and by 1728 they had removed to Westchester parish of Colchester and by 1740 to Sharon.[8, 16a, 17]

*JOHN[2] held the office of selectman[25] in June, 1681, when he, with the rest of that body, namely: GEORGE[1] GATES, WILLIAM[1] VENTRES and Simon Smith, took the inventory of the estate of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE of Haddam.

and tacklin for it, and two steers, and directed him to be clothed as well as his own children,"[21] "and desired his Overseers to take Care of him because he was too young to be wholly set free."[16] His two oldest children, REBECCA[3] and Gerrard[3], aged sixteen and fourteen, respectively, he placed in the care of his sister HANNAH[2] and her husband DANIEL[1] BRAINERD; his son Benjamin[3], aged eleven, he placed in charge of Nicholas Noyes of Haddam until he should reach the age of twenty-one; Lydia[3], aged ten, who "had a defective hand," he intrusted to his "Father HOWARD" and gave her the old cow and seven pounds in excess of her equal share because of her crippled condition; his youngest child, Grace[3], aged six years, he committed to the care of his sister Rebecca[2] and her husband John Kennard, giving her a cow and five pounds more than her even share; after casual gifts to "his sister Shaylor" and to "Goodwife Smith, for Kindness and attendance," he left money to buy books for his children, stipulated that "they all should be well clothed with linen and Woolen,"[21] gave £30 to each of his sons and £20 to each of his daughters as well as equal shares of whatever balance the estate showed, and provided that the various guardians should have the use of the respective portions belonging to their wards during their minority. He chose as overseers his brother Thomas[2] Spencer, Nicholas Noyes, GEORGE[1] GATES, DANIEL[1] BRAINERD and DANIEL[1] CONE. The inventory taken August 7, by GEORGE[1] GATES showed a valuation of £267–00–06. On February 8, 1693, his daughter Grace[3] chose her uncle Nathaniel[2] Spencer as her guardian.[16]

The children of JOHN[2] and REBECCA (HAYWARD) SPENCER, all born in Haddam, were[16, 19, 21]

I. REBECCA[3], b. March, 1666; d. before 1736; m.[7] at Hartford[22]* May 23, 1699, JOHN[2] ACKLEY [see Ackley, p. 40].
II. Gerrard[3], b. January, 1669; d. November 24, 1744, at Haddam; m. November 12, 1691 or 1692, Deborah Birge (Daniel).
III. Benjamin[3], b. March, 1671.
IV. Lydia[3], b. 1673, m.[19] John[2] Ventres (WILLIAM[1]).
V. Grace[3], bap.[8] September 24, 1676.

TIMOTHY[2] SPENCER (*Gerrard*[1]) [from p. 775] was born probably about 1652–3† (since he had[25] a son and three daughters who were of age by May 6, 1704) and had died before this date on which the inventory of his estate was taken by Thomas Brooks, his nephew, and James Wells, his wife's nephew.[25]

*Her home had, during her minority, been with her uncle at Haddam.

†Another fact indicating his age is that he owed a debt[26] to Thomas Smith, of Haddam, before September 22, 1674, and was presumably then of legal age.

He married, probably by 1675, and not later than 1678, a daughter of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE of Haddam [see Clarke, p. 209], for that man's will, dated 1681, mentioned his "daughter SPENCER" and all other local contemporaneous Spencer wives are otherwise identified.

Next to nothing of detail has been learned of the life of TIMOTHY[2], which was spent in Haddam. If he held office, it has not been found of record, but that he enjoyed the respect of the community is shown by the fact[26] that he was entrusted with the taking of the inventory of Joseph Arnold in March, 1691–2, with the assistance of DANIEL[1] BRAINERD; with taking that of John Bailey, Sr., in August, 1696, assisted by DANIEL[1] CONE and James Wells; that of the said James Wells, his brother-in-law, in January, 1697–8, assisted by DANIEL[1] BRAINERD and John Smith; and that of the widow Elizabeth Cockshott in March, 1700.

Apparently TIMOTHY[2] died suddenly, since he made no will; and certainly his wife's death preceded his, for she was not named in the division of his estate to the "surviving heirs."[25] It is said that she died in 1704, and possibly an epidemic took them both. TIMOTHY[2] left four children of legal age; beside Ruth[3], aged fifteen, and Jonathan[3], aged twelve years. The administration of his estate was put into the hands of his eldest son, Timothy[3], who also served as guardian to Jonathan[3]. Ruth[3] chose as her guardian her cousin James[2] Brainerd, who was discharged from that post on April 5, 1708, when she reached legal age.[25] The court appointed three men, including DANIEL[1] BRAINERD, to distribute the estate of TIMOTHY[2] and they reported on September 6, 1705.

The son Jonathan[3] died intestate and unmarried in December, 1714, at the age of twenty-two, and an agreement[27] of division was entered into November 10, 1715, by his brother, Timothy[3], and three brothers-in-law—Henry Williams, John[3] Hungerford (both of Haddam) and JOSEPH[3] CHAPMAN of Saybrook. This suggests that the sister Hannah[3] must have died before this date.

The children of TIMOTHY[2] and [Sarah?] (CLARKE) SPENCER, all born at Haddam, were[1a, 19, 25, 27]

I. Timothy[3], b. probably as early as 1680; d.[27] March 29, 1732; m., September, 1702, Abigail (——) and had six children.

II. SARAH[3], b. about 1675–82; d. after[28] 1732; m.[25, 27] by 1699–1700, JOSEPH[3] CHAPMAN of Saybrook [see Chapman, p. 192], who was born in July, 1673.[28]

III. Hannah[3], of age[25] in May, 1704; d. probably before[27] November 10, 1715; m. Azariah Dickinson.

iv. Deborah[3], of age[25] in May, 1704; d. October 14, 1750; m.[29, 30] December 3, 1701 or 1702, John[3] Hungerford (THOMAS[2], THOMAS[1]).

v. Ruth[3], b. 1689–90 and of age by April, 1708; m., after[25] 1708 and before[27] 1715, Henry Williams.

vi. Jonathan[3], b. 1692; d. unmarried December 13, 1714.

REFERENCES

1. Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, I, 514–5; New England Register, XLV, 231–2; XLVI, 435.
1a. Spencer Family Record, W. H. Spencer, 1907, pp. 18–21.
1b. Our New England Ancestors, H. Whittemore, 1900, pp. 54–9.
1c. James Shepard Mss. in Hartford, Conn., at State Historical Society.
2. The Thomas Spencer Family, F. F. Starr, 1896, pp. 5–13.
3. Town Records of Cambridge, Mass., 1901, pp. 5, 10; Proprietors' Records of Cambridge, Mass., 1896, pp. 5, 7, 18, 30; History of Cambridge, L. R. Paige, 1877, p. 659.
3a. New England Register, III, 95.
4. History of Lynn, Mass., A. Lewis and J. R. Newhall, 1865, pp. 94, 115, 172, 174, 183, 191; Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 253.
5. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 10, 12–3, 52, 56, 61, 77–8, 81, 107–8, 254, 320, 327, 378, 391, 425; II, 42, 71, 182, 194, 270.
6. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 159.
7. Hall Family Ancestry, S. F. H. Coe, 1902, pp. 196–8, 208–13, 220.
8. Two Hundredth Anniversary of the First Church of Haddam, Conn., 1902, pp. 255–8.
8a. Ibid., pp. 2, 34, 36–7, 39, 52.
9. Savage, I, 237, 262, 399, 442, 497; IV, 147–50.
10. Brainerd Family, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, p. 31.
11. Cone Family, W. W. Cone, 1903, pp. 12–3.
12. The Macdonough-Hackstaff Ancestry, R. Macdonough, 1901, pp. 271–8, 337–8.
13. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 360–1; II, 464; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 496; Savage, III, 102.
14. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, pp. 369, map facing 370, 372–3, 379.
15. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 106, 182, 236, 261, 365; III, 3,17, 26, 35, 48, 115.
16. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 363–5.
16a. Ibid., I, 36–7, 217, 393 and errata in Vol. III; II, 293–4, 302–3.
17. Original research of Connecticut records by H. W. Brainard, Hartford, Conn.; New England Register, LXXV, 144.
18. New York Record, III, 64, 66; Booge Family, D. W. Patterson, 1872, p. 5.
19. Genealogical Notes, N. Goodwin, 1856, pp. 197–210.
20. Savage, II, 393; Connecticut Historical Society, XIV, 491; History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, I, 159; II, 409.
21. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, pp. 237–8; Blackman and Allied Families, A. L. Holman, 1928, pp. 49, 193.
22. Historical Catalogue of the First Church in Hartford, Conn., 1885, p. 239.
23. Savage, I, 139.
24. Scovill Genealogy, H. W. Brainerd, 1915, p. 160.
25. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, II, 117.
26. Ibid., I, 234, 401, 535, 592; II, 44.
27. Ibid., II, 300–1; III, 116; Alvord Genealogy, S. M. Alvord, 1908, p. 58; Mack Genealogy, S. S. Martin, 1904, II, 1716–9.
28. Chapman Family, F. W. Chapman, 1854, p. 39.
29. New England Register, XI, 274.
30. Hungerford Genealogy, F. P. Leach, 1924, p. 8.
31. Hartford in the Olden Time, I. W. Stuart, 1853, p. 196.

STILLWELL

* [874] JASPER STILLWELL –1656	m	ELIZABETH . . . –aft.1656
† * [436] JOHN GRAVES c.1633–1695	m 1st 1657	ELIZABETH STILLWELL –c.1668–9
* ‡ [218] JOHN GRAVES 1658–1726	m 1685	ELIZABETH FOOTE 1664–1730
§ ‖ [108] CORNELIUS HULL 1687–1756	m 1715	MEHITABLE GRAVES 1688–1747
‖ [54] JOSEPH HULL 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"SIBYLLA" COE c.1723–1785
¶ ♦ ⊙ [26] LEVI CHAPMAN 1740, prob. aft. 1805	m 1767	ELIZABETH HULL 1747–aft.1820
¶ ♦ [12] JOSHUA SHIPMAN 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	SYBIL CHAPMAN 1768–1828
¶ ♦ ♦ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
# ♦ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
♦ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Guilford, Conn.
† Hartford, Conn.
‡ Madison, Conn.
§ Killingworth, Conn.
‖ Durham, Conn.

¶ Saybrook, Conn.
♦ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
\# Montague and Amherst, Mass.
⊙ Salem, Ohio.

STILLWELL

JASPER[1] STILLWELL* was one of the original settlers[2,3] of Guilford, Connecticut. He was of the following of the Reverend Henry Whitfield, having become a member of his church in New Haven (which was formed in the winter of 1639–40), going thence with him to Guilford. He is believed[2] to have arrived in Connecticut in the second of the two ships which landed at New Haven during July, 1639. It is said[1] that he was educated for the church, became acquainted with the Reverend Whitfield in London[1] and joined his company there.

In Guilford JASPER[1] lived directly north of the Reverend Mr. Whitfield and they, with two others, each built a stone house. The minister's house was standing and in good repair as late as 1897.[4,5] On February 20, 1649–50, the General Court inquired as to the ability of the various members of Guilford church toward payment of the minister's salary and JASPER[1] STILLWELL "professed he was willing and hoped he might be able to adde 5s per annum more."[4] He must have been a freeman from the first settlement, since he was a church member, but the formality of reading the "charge" to such had been neglected until May, 1648, when he and many others received it.[4] He is called a "man of means" but he left no sons to carry on the name. Some authorities claim for him a daughter[1] Rebecca[2] but if he had such, she must have died before her father, as his daughter ELIZABETH[2] eventually inherited all his property and

*Ordinarily a statement or story purely traditional would hardly be quoted in a work where accuracy and dependability are the chief aims, but a tale is told relative to the New England family of this name which is so fantastic that it is here briefly given, with the definite word that it has not been verified:

It deals with the usual "three brothers"—in this case, Nicholas, John and Jasper[1], who are said to have borne the surname "Cooke." They left their English home because of religious and civil restrictions and, perhaps also, because their views had rendered them obnoxious to the authorities. Before leaving, they arranged with their family that whenever any one of them found a safe retreat a message would be sent back signed "Still well." This combination of words was especially appropriate as the mother was of the family of Still in the city of Wells.

After a time spent in Holland, the three brothers emigrated to New England, landing at or near New Haven, where they separated. Two of them, Nicholas and John, removed to Manhattan Island, Jasper[1] remaining in Connecticut. The descendants of Nicholas are traced and published. Of John, it is said that he returned to England, resumed the name of Cooke, and that he was no other than the John Cooke who was one of the regicides. His daughter is said to have come to America and to have married her cousin in the line of Nicholas.[1, 1a]

she and her husband resided in the stone house her father had built.[4] He is assigned[3] a wife ELIZABETH who survived him.[6] His will was dated November 9, 1656, and was proved[7] November 23, 1657 [1656?], but he died between the first date and the November 15th following, for on that day his property was inventoried showing a total of over £210 valuation.

The child or children of JASPER[1] and ELIZABETH (——) STILLWELL were[1, 1a, 3, 4, 6]

I. ELIZABETH[2], d. about 1668–9; m., probably at Guilford, on November 26, 1657, JOHN[2] GRAVES[1, 1a, 3, 4, 6, 8] [see Graves, p. 383].

II. perhaps Rebecca[2], said to have married, at Dutch Church at New Amsterdam, James Graves of Hartford,[1] though in other places he is called James Craven, or Cranen,[1a] meaning Crain or Crane.

REFERENCES

1. Memoirs of the Stillwell Family, B. M. Stilwell, 1878, pp. 25–38.
1a. Genealogical Record of one Branch of the Stilwell Family, D. Stilwell, 1914, pp. 28–31, 33, 38, 40.
2. History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1902, pp. 166, 626–7.
3. Savage, IV, 196.
4. History of Guilford, Conn., B. C. Steiner, 1897, pp. 34, 50–1, 61, 124, 126, 129.
5. History of New Haven County, Conn., J. L. Rockey, 1892, II, 114, 116, 119.
6. New England Register, LVI, 260.
7. Colonial Records of New Haven, Conn., II, 257.
8. Connecticut Magazine, 1906, X, 19.

TAYLOR

* † [892] John Taylor –1646	m	Rhoda . . . –aft.1659
† ‡ [446] John Taylor c.1641–1704	m 1662	Thankful Woodward prob.c.1644–living 1724
‡ § [222] Samuel Parsons 1652–1734	m 2nd c.1690–1	Rhoda Taylor 1669–1711
§ [110] John Coe 1693–1751	m 1715	Hannah Parsons 1699–1760
§ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785
‖ ¶ # [26] Levi Chapman 1740, prob. aft. 1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
‖ ¶ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‖ ¶ ♣ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♦ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Lynn, Mass.
† Windsor, Conn.
‡ Northampton, Mass.
§ Durham, Conn.
‖ Saybrook, Conn.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♣ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Salem, Ohio.

TAYLOR

JOHN[1] TAYLOR* settled at Lynn, Massachusetts, where he lived for some years on the western side of the Saugus River.[1] He asked admission as a freeman[1, 7] of that place on October 19, 1630, and was sworn as such May 18, 1631. He married, perhaps at that town, a widow, RHODA (——) (——), who had two or more daughters† by a former husband. The family removed about 1639, probably[10] with the Reverend Mr. Huit, to Windsor, Connecticut, where JOHN[1] received in 1640 the grant of a house lot twelve by twenty-nine rods in size on "Backer Row" which he later sold to George Stuckey, buying from Begat Eggleston the lot‡ next to it which became the family home [see map on p. 569].

His standing in the community was good enough[7] that in[10] 1641 and again on June 6, 1644, he served on a jury and, with one other man, was on the latter date chosen[3] to arbitrate in the action of William Lewis against Matthew Allen.

His wife RHODA bore him two sons, but he did not live to rear them. On[10, 11] November 24, 1645, having "fully intended and prepared for a voyage for England," he made his will leaving to his "daughters-in-law" [stepdaughters], to be divided equally among them, "All my land that lyes on ye East side of ye great river in lieu of my engagement with them upon my marriage, and that my wife shall trayne them up until they come to ye age of eighteen years & my sd wife to have ye benefit of ye sd land until yt time." He gave to his wife and their two sons his house and the remainder of his lands in Windsor. This will was not probated until September 6, 1694, when[15] it was presented by JOHN[2] who was made administrator. Nothing is found of record about JOHN[1]

* He is said[1, 7] to have come from Haverhill, co. Suffolk, England, probably in 1630 in the fleet with Winthrop[7] and to have lost his wife and children by death on the voyage.[1]

† It is probable that these girls used the name of their stepfather TAYLOR and that they died before maturity, for one called "Hannah Taylor daughter of JOHN" died at Windsor in 1650 and others who may have been of this family, called Abigail and Anna Taylor, died there in 1643 and 1644–5 respectively.

‡ "In the Palisado in the northwest corner of the Green."[2]

subsequent to the signing of his will. The statement is made that he was lost at sea and the amazing delay in the probate of his will suggests that uncertainty existed in the minds of his family as to whether he was really dead or only cast away or imprisoned. The belief exists,[10, 11] and it is often stated as a fact, that he was one of about seventy who embarked in the vessel made famous by Longfellow's poem, "The Phantom Ship," which sailed from New Haven, Connecticut, the middle of January, 1645–6, a few weeks after the date of the above will. This tradition seems more likely to be true than most such tales, though no complete list of the passengers is known.

The need of bettering their failing fortunes had caused several men of New Haven to form a company called "The Ship Fellowship" in order that they might engage in the business of shipping furs and other goods to England. The company financed the building in Rhode Island of a vessel of a hundred or a hundred fifty tons which they called the "great shippe." We are told that it was poorly designed, "ill-built, very walt-sided* and, to increase the inconveniency thereof, ill-laden, the lighter goods at the bottom; so that understanding men did even beforehand conclude, in their deliberate thoughts, a calamitous issue, especially being a winter voyage. . . ." and Captain Lamberton, who was in command of the vessel, is quoted as expressing a fear that she "would prove their grave." It was an especially severe winter and they found it necessary to cut a passage with saws through the ice for three miles in order that the vessel might pass out to sea. The Reverend Mr. Davenport and "a great company" went out on the ice to give the last farewell to the passengers "among whom were six or eight of their most valued citizens" and he prayed, "Lord, if it be thy pleasure to bury these our friends in the bottom of the sea, they are thine, save them." Their deepest fears were realized for month after month of weary waiting passed and the vessel was never heard from again, though the New Haven people received what they considered to be a supernatural message to settle their uncertainty. The following June, just after a great thunder storm, "the air being clear about an hour before sunset," there appeared what was doubtless a mirage seeming to show the image of the "great shippe" sailing up the harbor against the wind for half an hour, coming nearer and nearer to the shore,—when "suddenly all her sails and masts seemed blown overboard; quickly after her hull brought to a careen and she over-set and vanished in a smoky cloud. . . ." Mr. Davenport said,

*Unsteady, cranky, built too deep or narrow, liable to lean over or capsize. "We say a ship is walt when she is not stiffe, and hath not Ballast enough in her to keep her stiffe. (1627)" Murray's Dictionary.

"God has condescended for the quieting of our afflicted spirits, this extraordinary account of the sovereign disposal of those for whom so many prayers have been made continually."[4, 5, 6, 10, 11]

Whether or not JOHN[1] TAYLOR was one of the passengers of the ill-fated "great shippe," it is evident* that he was dead by or before 1651, for at that time his widow RHODA sold back to Begat Eggleston the home property earlier purchased of him[2] and, as "RHODY TAYLOR," was listed in 1659 among "those who were placed in the short seats" in Windsor Church.[2] She is said[10, 11] to have married [evidently after 1659] a man named Hoyt, of Norwalk, and to have resided there as did also her younger son, Thomas[2] Taylor. It is also said[12] that Walter[2] Hoyt (Simon[1]) of Norwalk married, secondly, "a widow Taylor" and indeed some authorities[17] definitely name his second wife as "RHODA, widow of JOHN TAYLOR." They further state that his youngest son Zerubbabel[3] Hoyt was the child of RHODA.† She doubtless died before 1696 for the will of Walter Hoyt, dated February 11, 1695–6, mentions no wife.[14]

The children of JOHN[1] and RHODA (——) TAYLOR, both born in Windsor, were[2, 10, 11]

I. JOHN[2], see following.
II. Thomas[2], b. about 1643; resided in Norwalk and Danbury, where he died in January, 1735. He is said to have married twice, one wife being Rebecca Ketcham [prob. dau. of Edward] and the date of one marriage [prob. the first] is given as February 14, 1667–8.

JOHN[2] TAYLOR (*John*[1]) was born at Windsor, Connecticut, about 1641–2, and was killed by the Indians near Northampton, Massachusetts, on May 13, 1704, then[8] "aged 63." He was married[10, 11] at Northampton on December 18, 1662, to THANKFUL[2] WOODWARD [see Woodward, p. 848]. Having a grant[8] of land at this river town between 1659 and 1660 he had parted from his mother and brother and became the founder of the Taylor family in Northampton. In 1674, he, with others, had liberty to set up a sawmill "on the brooke on the right hand of the Cort waye goinge over Munhan river on this sid that run's

* In that period women did not transfer land unless they held the position of the head of the family.

† A suggestion of additional and as yet unknown relationship is seen in the will[14] of Matthew[1] St. John, of Norwalk, dated October 19, 1669, which mentioned his wife [unnamed], "Mother Selle" [Sealey?], who received one cow and an ewe, and "dearly beloved brother and sister Hoit" [meaning Walter Hoyt and his second wife, RHODA] who received twenty shillings apiece as a "token of his love." This man's son, Samuel[2] St. John, had married, in September, 1663, Elizabeth[3] Hoyt, daughter of Walter Hoyt and his first wife, but this marriage must have been preceded by an earlier one between the same families in order to justify Matthew[1] St. John in his use of the words "brother and sister," and, while the relationship was very likely between the families of the two men, it might have pertained to that of RHODA.

intoe the river and whilese the mill is in vse theye haue granted them ten or twilfe acors of Land for a pasture." They also had "the Libertie of the Commons toe fall timber."

That year Joseph Hawley became schoolmaster in Northampton, serving there for eight years, teaching both boys and girls, though probably at different sessions. Among his pupils were at least three daughters of JOHN[2] TAYLOR, Thankful[3], Joanna[3] and Mary[3], the two first mentioned having been taught writing at ten shillings each, per year. Though records of the fact are not accessible, his other children were probably also in attendance.

In 1672–3 a voluntary subscription was taken in Northampton for Harvard College. Most of the gifts were in produce but that of JOHN[2] TAYLOR was[8] "payd in Cartinge" [that produce?] and netted him a credit of three shillings. He was one of the patentees of Northfield in 1683, but did not live there.[10] He became a freeman[9a] on May 16, 1683, and he served as a soldier from Northampton in King William's War[8] which lasted from 1688 to 1698.

In 1703, JOHN[2], with his youngest sons, Thomas[3] and Samuel[3], received a grant of eighty acres of land near White Loaf Brook in what is now Southampton but was then a part of Northampton and in 1704, at the time of his death, the family were apparently living on this farm.[8]

On May 13, 1704, near daybreak, Pascomuck* village was attacked[8, 9, 10, 11] by a war party of fifty Indians and about twenty Frenchmen under Sieur de Montigney. The inhabitants were completely surprised for the Indians had approached near enough to place their guns through the portholes of the buildings before the sleepers were aroused. Some were killed, others wounded and, when the torch was applied to their homes, the survivors, seeing that resistance was useless, surrendered and were taken captive, and the little village became a thing of the past. While the main attack was in progress, a party of Indians attempted to take the near-by farmhouse of Captain Benjamin Wright† but the family, aroused by their dogs, began firing rapidly and refused to capitulate. The Indians then set the house on fire by shooting spiked arrows dipped in brimstone on to the roof; this emergency was met by Thomas Stebbins, a young relative and inmate of the house, who wrapped a feather bed about him for protection from the arrows and brought water from the well and put out the flames, while the Indians rejoined their companions.

* Pascomuck was near Northampton, but separated from it by water at that time owing to a spring freshet. The village then had a population of thirty-three consisting of five families. It is now a part of Easthampton.[9]

† Husband of Thankful[3] Taylor and son-in-law of JOHN[2] TAYLOR.

After inflicting as much damage to the village as possible, the Indians departed taking their prisoners with them. They sent back word by one of the wounded that, if the settlers attempted to follow, all the captives would be killed. The messenger himself was killed before he delivered his message, probably by one of the enemy not acquainted with his errand. One of the captured boys escaped, found a boat and rowed across the flooded meadows to carry the alarm to Northampton. Upon receipt of this information, Captain JOHN[2] TAYLOR, with a troop of mounted volunteers from among the citizens, immediately started in pursuit. Riding in advance of his men, he was shot at the first fire. Several of the men were wounded and, disheartened, they gave up the pursuit and returned home with the body of their slain commander.[8] The Indians made good their threat* by knocking all but five or six of their captives on the head.

In 1705 THANKFUL TAYLOR petitioned[8] the Legislature for help showing that not only was her husband's life lost but his horse and his clothes also and that she was "left a poor widow with 11 children. By his death we are drove from the improvement of a farm in the woods which we hoped to be a relief to us." This farm in the woods was the grant of eighty acres near White Loaf Brook, mentioned above. The Legislature remunerated her in the sum of twelve pounds, two of which were to pay for the horse.

Between 1705 and 1716 misfortune again befell the widow THANKFUL when her house was burned down and much of her furniture destroyed.[8] Her son Thomas[3] was wounded at Deerfield on June 22, 1709, when the French and Indians under De Rowville made their second attack on that town.[10, 11] In the following generation the family scattered considerably for while some remained in or near their early home, John[3] removed to Norwalk, Connecticut, in about[11] 1698, where his uncle Thomas[2] and his grandmother RHODA TAYLOR had preceded him; his mother THANKFUL followed and was living there with him[7] in 1724. RHODA[3], his sister, after her marriage to SAMUEL[2] PARSONS, removed to Durham, Connecticut, and Jonathan[3] died in New Jersey or Delaware[11] before 1723.

The children of JOHN[2] and THANKFUL (WOODWARD) TAYLOR, all born in Northampton, were[7, 10, 11]

1. Thankful[3], b. March or October 27 or 29, 1663; m. March 22, 1680–1, Captain Benjamin Wright.

*Of the thirty-three residents of Pascomuck village nineteen were killed, three escaped, eight were rescued and three were taken to Canada. Of those whom they knocked on the head, several survived and of these one who was scalped lived to the age of eighty.

II. Joanna[3], b. September 27, 1665; m. 1st, March 22, 1681, Thomas Alvord; m. 2nd, 1690, Samuel King; m. 3rd, November 26, 1702, Deliverance Bridgeman, all of Northampton.

III. John[3], b. October 10, 1667; d. January 29, 1744; m. 1st, Wait[3] Clapp, daughter of Preserved[2] and granddaughter of our ROGER[1] CLAPP [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I]; m. 2nd, in or after 1722, Sarah (——).

IV. RHODA[3], b. September 26, 1669; d. between September 3 and December 15, 1711, at Durham.[13] She married, at Northampton, as his second wife, between September 2, 1690, and February, 1691, SAMUEL[2] PARSONS [see Parsons, p. 636].

V. Elizabeth[3], b. July 13, 1672; d. June 3, 1681.

VI. Mary[3], b. October 13, 1673; d. 1709; m.[11] Joseph[3] Atherton (Hope[2], Humphrey[1]).

VII. Jonathan[3], b. September 19, 1675; d. s. p. bef. 1723 in N. J. or Del.

VIII. Mindwell[3], b. or bap. August 19, 1677; d.[16] November 6, 1761; m. June 2, 1696, Jonathan Burt.

IX. Lydia[3], b. March 18, 1678–9; d.[16] 1722; m.[11, 16] July 24 or 30, 1701 or 1707, Samuel Pomeroy.*

X. Thomas[3], b. November 4, 1680; drowned in Connecticut River, August, 1717; m. August 31, 1715, Thankful Hawks (Eleazer).

XI. Elizabeth[3], b. September 17, 1682; m. February 26, 1706–7, Joseph Mygatt.

XII. Experience[3], b. in October, 1684; d. before 1705.

XIII. Samuel[3], b. August 30, 1688; d. March 5, 1733–4; m. 1st, August 17, 1715, Sarah Munn; m. 2nd, July 15, 1718, Mary Hitchcock (John).

REFERENCES

1. History of Lynn, Mass., Lewis and Newhall, 1865, p. 127.
2. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 139; 179.
3. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 106, 108.
4. Magnalia Christi Americana, C. Mather, 1853, I, Book I, Chap. 6, p. 84.
5. History of New England, J. Winthrop, Savage ed., 1853, II, 311, 336–7; History of New England, W. Hubbard, 1848, pp. 321–2; History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1818, I, 161.
6. Outline History of New Haven, Conn., H. How, 1884, p. 8; History of the Colony of New Haven, Conn., E. E. Atwater, 1881, pp. 208–9, 537–41.
7. Savage, IV, 261–2.
8. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 38, 118, 147, 221–2, 492–5, 557, 572, 575, 577.
9. Indian Wars, S. Penhallow, 1859, pp. 26–7.

9a. New England Register, III, 345.

10. History of Northfield, Mass., J. H. Temple and G. Sheldon, 1875, pp. 398, 480, 553–4.
11. History of Deerfield, Mass., G. Sheldon, 1896, I, 318; II, pt. 2, p. 51, 335–6.
12. History of Norwalk, Conn., C. M. Selleck, 1896, p. 355.
13. Parsons Family, H. Parsons, 1912, I, 59–61; Ibid., 1920, II, 21–2.
14. History of Norwalk, Conn., C. M. Selleck, 1896, pp. 125, 326, 355; Hoyt Genealogy, D. W. Hoyt, 1871, pp. 13, 292–6, 310–2; St. John Genealogy, O. St. John Alexander, 1907, pp. 5–6, 8.
15. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 511.
16. Burt Genealogy, R. H. Burnham, 1892, p. 39; Pomeroy Genealogy, A. A. Pomeroy, 1912, p. 154.
17. History and Genealogy of Families of Old Fairfield, Conn., pp. 293–5, 299.

*They were almost cousins, for Medad Pomeroy, father of Samuel, married, as his first wife, Experience[2] Woodward, aunt to Lydia[3] Taylor, and his second wife was mother to Samuel Pomeroy.

THRALL

* [332] William Thrall c.1606–1679	m	. . . –1676
* [166] Timothy Thrall 1641–1697	m 1659	Deborah Gunn 1641–2–1694
* † [82] Nathaniel Pinney 1671–1764	m 1693	Martha Thrall 1673–aft.1710
* † [40] Samuel Beaman 1704–aft.1753	m 1731	Sarah Pinney 1707–aft.1783
† ‡ [20] Thomas Beman 1734–1804	m 1753	Lydia Roberts 1735–1809
‡ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
‡ § [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
§ ‖ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
‖ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Windsor, Conn.
† Simsbury, Conn.
‡ East Hartland, Conn.
§ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
‖ Marietta, Ohio.

THRALL

WILLIAM[1] THRALL is accounted among the first settlers of Windsor, Connecticut, although it does not appear that he was ever of Dorchester, Massachusetts, as the other founders of Windsor had been.[1] He was granted, in 1637, a lot thirteen rods wide[2, 3] which lay south of the Little or Farmington River and between the mill and the foot of Stony hill[4, 5] [see map on p. 569]. He lived there until 1646 when he sold the property to Nicholas Palmer and then, with Robert Wilson, bought the Simon Hoyte home, in Hoyte's Meadow, consisting of eighty acres and the house thereon.[5] These two new owners "divided the house and land in the middle (the well and wood court to be used interchangeably) and resided there until 1654 when THRALL bought out Wilson."[2, 5] This was an isolated location, and after about 1654 he lived there alone with his family for several years and the Court exempted him from the duty of "watch and ward" so that he might be at home at night.[6]

He was a juror in 1648 and again[6a] in 1664. On January 18, 1659–60, he paid six shillings for space in the "long seats" in the meeting house for himself and wife.[5] On March 6, 1667–8, the sum of nine shillings was credited to his account in the town rate or taxes, as payment to him for carrying three loads of wood to the home of an Indian, Thomas Hopewell, who was lame and unable to provide fuel for his family and whose wife had appealed to the authorities regarding this need.[5]

The name of WILLIAM[1] THRALL appears in a list[7] of "freemen that live within the limits of Windsor" on May 13, 1669. On May 11, 1671, the General Court granted to him and two others, for their good services in the Pequot War, fifty acres of land apiece and, on May 8, 1673, appointed two men to lay it out. In April, 1674, WILLIAM[1] received his portion[8] "on the east side great River, about two miles beyond Hoccanum River, toward the cedar swamp." This tract he conveyed to his son-in-law, John Hosford, in the following February.[8]

In 1675 WILLIAM[1] and his son, TIMOTHY[2], were each taxed as having a family, a horse and four oxen.[9] The former was plaintiff in an action for damage before the town Court against Eltweed Pomeroy in which he secured a verdict of £1–7 and costs of 3s–6d.[4, 9] On June 11, 1676, WILLIAM[1] gave 2s–6d and TIMOTHY[2] gave a like amount to the Connecticut relief fund for the poor of other colonies.[9]

WILLIAM[1] was born about 1606 for he died "Aug. 3d Sabbath daye 1679, 73 old."[11, 15] He dated his will December 11, 1678, and it was "proven" December 4, 1679, when the inventory of his estate amounting to £158–09–06 was presented. The bulk of his property, including the home, was given to his son, TIMOTHY[2], who was made executor and was required to pay certain legacies to his sister Phillipa[2] and others.[12] The maiden name of his wife has not yet been found. Her death is thus recorded, "Old Goode THRALL d. July 30, 1676."[1, 11, 15] They are generally believed to have had only two children, but a son, David, is sometimes assigned to them[10] who, if he existed, must have died before his father.

The known children of WILLIAM[1] THRALL and his wife, both born in Windsor, were[1, 6, 11, 13] .

I. Phillipa[2], b. (—); m., November 5, 1657, John Hosford.
II. TIMOTHY[2], see following.

TIMOTHY[2] THRALL (*William*[1]) was born July 25, 1641, at Windsor, and died in June, 1697, at that place. He married there, November 10, 1659, DEBORAH[2] GUNN [see Gunn, p. 409].

He was made a freeman of Connecticut on May 20, 1658, and was listed[16] as such, "Living within the limits of Windsor," on May 13, 1669.

In 1659 he, with Samuel Buell, contracted with Mr. Pynchon, of Springfield, Massachusetts, to "Hew the timber for the Old Fort," which EDWARD[1] GRISWOLD constructed.[17] TIMOTHY[2] and his partner were to receive 3s–8d per 100 feet for hewing the necessary timber and received a total of £2–14.

As early as 1666–7 differences had arisen in the Windsor congregation and, by 1668, the dissenting group had, with the permission of the General Court, engaged the Reverend Benjamin Woodbridge as their pastor.[18] He evidently was not granted full courtesy in the town nor proper opportunity to preach to his adherents; a town meeting was called August 8, 1668, to vote on the matter. MATHEW[1] GRANT, the town clerk and a supporter of the Old or First Church, expressly states in his record that he had no hand in

calling this meeting. He would not enter the vote but, at the request of George Griswold, a townsman who wished the proceedings recorded, he laid the town book on the table and Griswold himself entered the vote in favor of the Reverend Mr. Woodbridge.[18] For about eighteen years the friction between the First Church and the dissenters, called the Second Church, raged with greater or less intensity and, at times, caused a degree of confusion which must have dwarfed all other items of local interest. On May 13, 1670, TIMOTHY[2] THRALL, with two others, representing the new church, signed a petition to the General Court asking[18] that the "disaffected might have the meeting-house their share of the time on the Sabath and not cause a division." Again, in the winter of 1673, many men of this body, including "TIMOTE THRALL" and NATHANIEL[2] PINNEY, addressed a letter[17] to the Governor and Council asking that some way be found to adjust these differences or else that one church group or the other be exempted from participation in a prospective expedition against the Indians because they "considered in unsafe and dangerous" "to be joyned in armes" or to "goe forth with such as will give us more biter and evill speeches than the enimy himeself" and desiring assurance "that wee shall not have as great enimys in our campe as those wee goe out against" and thus doubly "hazard our lives."

For quite a time during the controversy the First Church used the Old Meeting House and the Second Church used the Town House for services. In the summer of 1676 both buildings needed repairs and fuel was added to the fires of partisanship already burning by a town vote to repair the Meeting House without mention of the other structure. TIMOTHY[2] THRALL, and two others, adopting the attitude that "Meeting House" included both buildings used for church services and consequently that the Town House should be likewise repaired, presented a document at the next town meeting asking for a confirmation of this view. The vote, taken on July 27, 1676, was a complete refusal, the townsmen declaring that since the building was built for town purposes and had been converted from its intended use, those occupying it should stand for the cost of repairs if any were to be made.[17] On January 31, 1677–8, a church council was called to settle difficulties between these two groups but only partially succeeded in subduing the evident determination on the part of the First Church to require unconditional acquiescence in their demands. In August, following, TIMOTHY[2], and others, signed another statement of their views on certain points in the controversy.[17] Finally, in desperation, he, with three other active men of the

Second Church, presented to the Governor and his Assistants a letter, dated July 5, 1680, which arraigned these officers and the situation in general in such strong terms that the marshal was sent to bring the signers before the Governor.[17] They defiantly admitted the authorship and "recognized . . . the scandalous and offensive writing, declaring themselves to be of the same mind" and were consequently bound over in the amount of ten pounds each to appear before the General Court the following October. Their hearing took place on the fourteenth of that month.[17] The Court adjudged the offending letter to be "full of reflections and unsuitable expressions, casting contempt upon the Governo[r] without any just cause" and that it called for "due witness to be born against it by the Court: but TIMOTHY TRAULE appearing in this Court and manifesting by his acknowledgment some sence of his evill therein, the Court willing to take notice of the same for his and theire benifitt doe see cause now onely to lay a fine upon them of five pounds a peice."[19] At a subsequent meeting, October 11, 1683, this body remitted these fines,[19] evidently by this time feeling assured that TIMOTHY[2] and his sympathizers had experienced cause for exasperation.

One other church council and special action by the General Assembly made effort toward a settlement of existing differences but it was 1684–5 before peace and understanding joined the two groups under the pastorate of the Reverend Samuel Mather. TIMOTHY[2] seems to have been as active in the reunited church as he had been in the dissenting party for, at a town meeting in December, 1685, he was one of a committee of five appointed to plan a new meeting house and to engage a builder for it.[20]

In May, 1680, he joined with many other proprietors and inhabitants of the east side of the Connecticut River in asking the General Court to form that territory as a separate township.[20] On October 8, 1685, he petitioned that same body that the privilege be granted to himself and partners of setting up a "fishing trade" in the "great River within the township of Windsor" for the term of twenty years. The Court declared itself ready to promote any such "publique designe" but ordered the magistrate of Hartford County to deal with "TRALL" and his partners and to grant them such rights as seemed suitable, but only for the period of twelve years.[21]

At a town meeting, December 28, 1692, it was voted[25] to give the Town House, formerly used as a meeting house or the pastor's residence, and now in "disrepair," to TIMOTHY[2] THRALL.

His will was dated May 13, 1697, and the inventory of his estate taken

June 25, following, showed property to the amount of £797–14–07. The bequest to his daughter, MARTHA PINNEY, amounted[14] to £20.

The children of TIMOTHY[2] and DEBORAH (GUNN) THRALL, all born at Windsor, were[1, 13, 22, 23]

I. Deborah[3], b. August 9, 1660;[19] m. John[3] Moses[24] (John[2], John[1]) [see Roberts, p. 712].
II. Timothy[3], b. December 7, 1662;[15] d. January 31, 1723–4; m., December 31, 1699, Sarah Allyn.
III. Mehitable[3], b. March, 1664–5; m., 1687, Samuel Clarke.
IV. Elizabeth[3], b. May 1, 1667; m., November 10, 1693, James Cornish.
V. John[3], b. June 8, 1669; d. soon.
VI. John[3], b. June 5, 1671; d. April 18, 1732; m., January 6, 1697, Mindwell[3] Moses (John[2], John[1]).
VII. MARTHA[3], b. May 31, 1673; d. after 1710; m. at Windsor, September 21, 1693, NATHANIEL[3] PINNEY [see Pinney, p. 663].
VIII. Thomas[3], b. May 5, 1675; d. aged 3 mos.
IX. Thomas[3], b. July 10, 1676; m., November 2, 1699, Elizabeth Hoskins.
X. Samuel[3], b. February 22, 1681; d. 1709; m., October 23, 1706, Elizabeth Owens.[15]
XI. Abigail[3], twin with above, b. February 22, 1681. She was mentioned in her father's will.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, IV, 293.
2. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, 558.
3. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 167.
4. First Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, pp. 82, 164.
5. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 148, map following, 159, 163, 167, 178, 184.
6. Ibid., 1892, II, 761.
6a. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 164; First Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 82.
7. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 520.
8. Ibid., II, 150, 193; Colonial Records of Lands, Vol. 2, p. 37.
9. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 88, 91, 230.
10. Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly, IX, 169.
11. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 880–1, 883.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1902, I, 370.
13. New England Register, V, 363.
14. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1902, I, 590–1.
15. Births, Marriages and Deaths of Windsor, E. S. Wells, 1898, pp. 16, 28, 29, 48.
16. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 315; Ibid., II, 520.
17. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 153, 158, 206–10, 212–4.
18. Ibid., I, 198–203.
19. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 72–3, 128.
20. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 215–7, 917.
21. Colonial Records of Connecticut, III, 193.
22. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 883.
23. Ibid., 1892, II, 153, 167, 761.
24. Moses Genealogy, Z. Moses, 1890, p. 50.
25. History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 139.

TRACY

* † [750] Stephen Tracy –aft.1654	m 1621	Tryphosa Lee –prob.bef.1655
* † ‡ [374] William Merrick c.1600–3–bet.1686–9	m c.1642	Rebecca Tracy 1623–7–prob.aft.1689
‡ [186] Edmond Freeman 1657–1717–8	m 1st c.1677–9	Ruth Merrick 1652–prob.c.1680–1
‡ [92] Israel Doane c.1672–aft.1740	m 1st c.1700	Ruth Freeman c.1680–1728
‡ § [46] Prence Doane 1704–c.1751	m 1726	Elizabeth Godfrey 1704–bef.1791
‖ ¶ [22] Hezekiah Ackley c.1733–5–aft.1783	m 1756	Abigail Doane 1732–aft.1777
¶ [10] Daniel Beman 1756–1817	m c.1777–8	Abigail Ackley c.1761–1805
¶ ♦ [4] Aaron Gates 1780–1850	m 1803 or 1804	Ruth Beman 1784–1858
♦ # [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
# Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

*Plymouth, Mass.
†Duxbury, Mass.
‡Eastham, Mass.
§Saybrook, Conn.

‖East Haddam, Conn.
¶East Hartland, Conn.
♦Montague and Amherst, Mass.
#Marietta, Ohio.

TRACY

STEPHEN[1] TRACY, who followed the Pilgrims to Leyden, Holland, had very probably come from the vicinity of Great Yarmouth, England, since in his later life he returned to that place.[1, 11] In Leyden, when he was married[2] on January 2, 1620–1, to TRYPHOSA LEE,* he was recorded as "sayworker, bachelor from England," and his bride as "spinster, also from England." It is evident that their ideals were consonant with those of the Pilgrims, for in 1623, STEPHEN[1], undoubtedly with their eldest child, Sarah[2], (and it has usually been supposed, also his wife† TRYPHOSA) was a passenger[3, 4, 5] to the New World on the "Anne" or "Little James" [see Bangs, p. 61] with EDWARD[1] BANGS, Fear[2] and PATIENCE[2] BREWSTER, and HESTER (MAHIEU) COOKE with her three children, including JACOB[2] COOKE (FRANCIS[1]).

In 1623, at the so-called "division of land," STEPHEN[1] TRACY was assigned a three-acre tract for garden purposes, that being an acre for each member of his family.[5, 6, 7] His home later, if not at once, lay on the "other side of town toward eel river . . ." that is, to the north of the original Plymouth settlement and on the border of what became Duxbury, of which place he was considered an early resident.[4] By 1627, when the division of cattle took place, his

* Frequently this name has been erroneously printed as "Le——," but that rendition is misleading, as no deletion is existent in the original, which is definitely "Le" in the Dutch and "Lee" in the translation.[2]

† A discrepancy[19] should be mentioned here. STEPHEN[1] TRACY certainly came at this time and acquired three acres of land in 1623 at the "division of land." This ordinarily proved the presence of three individuals in his family. The assumption[3, 4, 5] has always been, as stated above, that these were, besides himself, his wife TRYPHOSA [who, however, was not recorded by *name* prior to the "division of cattle" in 1627] and their daughter Sarah[2] [whose marriage in November, 1638, argues that she must have been born before emigration]. But it may have been that some relative came over with him, leaving TRYPHOSA to follow. Evidence pointing to such a probability is seen in a list of persons to whom "licences to pass from England beyond the seas" were granted on May 3, 1624. It included a "TRIFOZA TRACE, [aged] 28, wife of STEEPHEN TRACE, resident in Laiden, to [pass to] the same; also her daughter Jane Trace, 15 months old."[19] It seems hardly possible that there could have been two contemporaneous families headed by a Stephen and a Tryphosa, each with a Leyden background. It is, however, almost as difficult to theorize that there was but the one family, namely our own, whose marriage occurred in January, 1620–1, whose daughter Sarah[2] must have been born by late 1621 or early 1622 in order to permit the advent of the Jane named above in about February, 1622–3. In such case Sarah[2], at the age of one and one-half years, would have emigrated without her mother. It can be definitely stated, however, that in 1627, at the division of cattle, the family of STEPHEN[1] consisted of his wife, TRYPHOSA, and daughters Sarah[2] and REBECCA[2].

family, increased by the birth of a daughter REBECCA[2], was, with THOMAS[1] PRENCE, included in the "tenth lot." "To this lott ffell an heyfer of the last yeare called the white belyd heyfer & two shee goats."[4, 6, 7]

In July, 1627, when WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER, THOMAS[1] PRENCE and six other leading men called the "adventurers" or "partners" [see Prence, p. 687] became personally responsible for the debts of the colony, the other colonists, who were called "purchasers," signed an agreement to refrain from all trade with the Indians. These signers included STEPHEN[1] TRACY, FRANCIS[1] COOKE, STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, and EDWARD[1] BANGS.

STEPHEN[1] TRACY was listed[8] with the freemen of Plymouth in 1633; was named to assist in laying out highways on Duxbury side in July, 1634, to appoint watchmen, and to assign other public duties in 1635 and 1636; to view the "hey grounds" in March, 1636–7; to survey land in 1637; to serve as constable of Duxbury in 1638 and 1639; to arbitrate between neighbors in 1638 and 1642; and to serve on a coroner's jury in March, 1635–6; on trial juries in 1636–8 and 1640–1; and on grand juries in 1636–7, 1640 and 1642.[8]

In 1633 and 1634 his land was taxed on a valuation of eighteen shillings[9] and he received various tracts later, including one of "fourscore acres wth some meddow to yt" at the North River.[9] In May, 1637, it was voted "that the heigh wayes, both for horse, cart and foote" from Plymouth to Duxbury [and beyond] should, in part, run ". . . from Mr Bradfords house to STEEPHEN TRACYS ground, as the way now lyeth, being already trenched, a foote way from the lower stepping stones to STEEPHEN TRACIES, the heigh way lying through STEEPHEN TRACIES feild now enclosed . . . and from the ferry to STEEPHEN TRACIES house, and so through the meaddow to the bridge. . ."[9]

In January, 1637–8, there was presented to the grand jury a complaint against STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS "for sufferinge excessiue drinking in his house . . ." by some outsiders: This was testified to by "Widdow Palmer, Widdow Palmers man . . . STEPHEN TRACY" and others.[10]

The inventory[12] of John Thorp, taken in November, 1633, shows that STEPHEN[1] TRACY owed him £2–14–00 for nine bushels of corn at six shillings, and the inventory of Thomas Evans, taken in January, 1634, shows that STEPHEN[1] owed his estate twelve shillings; but STEPHEN[1] seems to have been in comfortable circumstances, for in 1638 he engaged the assistance of John Price "for foure months; his tyme was to begin the first week in June."[10]

The will* of "Will[m] Palmer thelder" "of Ducksborrow, Nayler," proved[10] December 4, 1637, made a bequest to STEPHEN[1] TRACY, thus suggesting that there may have been a relationship between them.

In March, 1652, a group of Plymouth men, including STEPHEN[1] TRACY and FRANCIS[1] COOKE, acquired a large tract of land to the west which later came to be called Dartmouth.[12] These two men had one share each in this venture. Within a year or two thereafter STEPHEN[1] evidently returned to England, for on March 20, 1654–5 (the last known record of him) he signed in London a power of attorney[1, 11] to John Winslow of Plymouth in New England. In this document he referred to himself as "att p[r]sent of great yarmouth in old England," and he empowered Winslow, his "loving ffrind," to dispose of all his property in New England. He directed that it should be divided among his five children living there (which would include his daughter REBECCA[2]) and specifically named[1] his only son, John[2], his daughter Ruth[2] Tracy, and daughter Mary[2]. It is presumed that his wife, TRYPHOSA, had died previously.

The known children of STEPHEN[1] and TRYPHOSA (LEE) TRACY were[11, 14, 15]

I. Sarah[2], b. 1621–3, probably in Leyden; d. between November 28, 1702, and October 6, 1708; m. November 28, 1638, George[1] Partridge of Duxbury.[14] They had seven children, including John[2] Partridge, b. November 29, 1657, whom WILLIAM[1] MERRICK called "Kinsman"[13] in 1686 [see following paragraph].

II. REBECCA[2], b. 1623–7 in Plymouth or Duxbury; d. after 1654–5, when her father's five children were all living,[1] and undoubtedly after March 6, 1688–9, when a widow REBECCA proved[15] the will of WILLIAM[1] MERRICK. For, beyond reasonable doubt, she married,[17] in or about 1642, WILLIAM[1] MERRICK [see Merrick, p. 584], as shown by certain evidence lately brought to light. The principal factors are: (1) On July 2, 1686, WILLIAM[1] MERRICK of Eastham gave a power of attorney,[13] in which his wife REBECCA joined, to "my Trusty and welbeloved Kinsman John Partridge of Duxborough" to dispose of the one-half share of land at Little Compton which MERRICK had acquired as "one of ye first Purchassers & also one of the Old Servants in ye Infancy of this Jurisdiction . . ."[13] The only John Partridge then of Duxbury was the nephew of REBECCA[2] TRACY [see preceding paragraph]. WILLIAM[1] MERRICK definitely

* The beneficiaries[10, 18] of the will of William[1] Palmer were:

(1) his "young" (that is, second) wife, and her child, if she should have one. She evidently bore him, in 1638, an unrecorded posthumous son, whom she named "William"[2], who would have been about four years younger than his own nephew William[3] (William[2], William[1]) Palmer, and who receipted to the executors in 1659, when he would have come of age, for the estate given him by the will of his father.

(2) His grandchild Rebecca, who was undoubtedly Rebecca[3] Palmer, daughter of William[2] and Elizabeth (Hodgkins) Palmer, who in 1651 was servant to Rev. John Mayo and was called the daughter-in-law [stepdaughter] of John[1] Willis, who had married the widow Elizabeth (Hodgkins) Palmer.

(3) "Moyses Rowly whom I love" and whose mother, wife of Henry[1] Rowley, is surmised to have been a daughter of the said William[1] Palmer.

(4) STEPHEN[1] TRACY.

(5) and (6) son Henry and daughter Bridget, "if they be living and demand a share" [evidently still in England, and by his first wife, Frances].

had[13, 15] a wife REBECCA, and no other early alliance between the Merrick and Partridge families has been found.

(2) Further circumstantial evidence is seen in the choice of names for the Merrick children. They were[15] (a) William[2], for their father; (b) Stephen[2], for the maternal grandfather; (c) Rebecca[2], for their mother; (d) Mary[2], (e) RUTH[2] and (f) Sarah[2], for their maternal aunts, (g) John[2], for their only maternal uncle [followed by three sons bearing unsuggestive names], thus honoring every member of the Tracy family except the mother, TRYPHOSA. It is fair to infer that she disliked her name, for in establishing a great number of her descendants in several generations it has been found but once. Moreover, the name "Stephen" was subsequently borne by two Merrick grandchildren and the names "Mary," "Sarah," "Ruth" and "John" by others.

(3) Finally, in the opinion of one of the ablest students[16] of early Plymouth, this evidence, taken in conjunction with the comparatively small number of residents and of marriageable individuals, shows that "there is no escape from the conclusion" that REBECCA[2] TRACY married WILLIAM[1] MERRICK.

III. Ruth[2], living and unmarried in 1654–5.

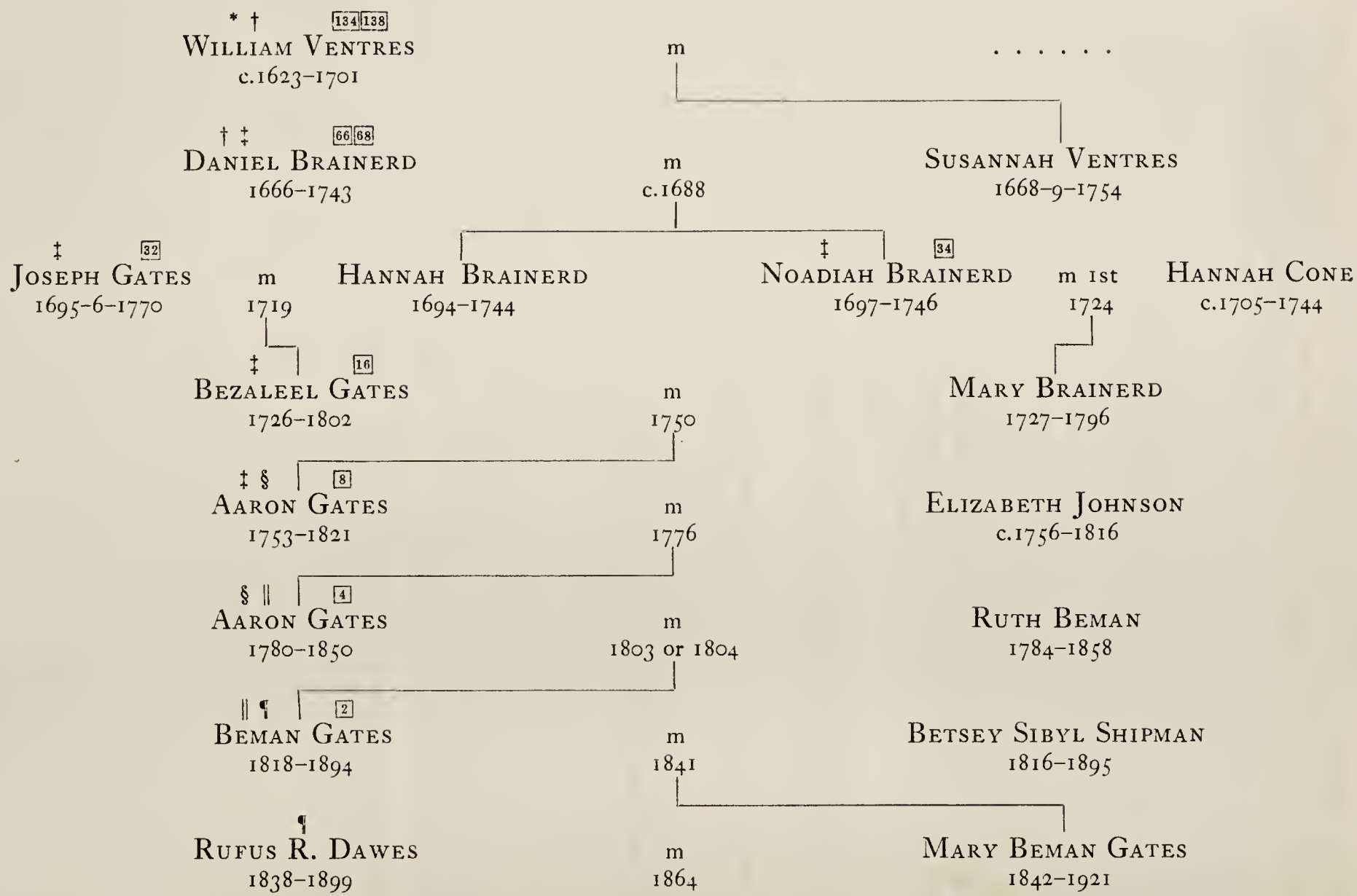
IV. Mary[2], living in 1654–5.

V. John[2], b. 1633, at Duxbury; d. May 3, 1710, at Windham, Connecticut; m. Mary[2] Prence (THOMAS[1]).

REFERENCES

1. Mayflower Descendant, X, 143–4.
2. Leyden Documents Relating to the Pilgrim Fathers, pub. at Leyden by E. J. Brill, 1920, p. XLII.
3. Savage, I, 445–6.
4. The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 243, 245, 295, 299.
5. History of Plymouth Plantation, W. Bradford, pub. by Massachusetts Historical Society, 1912, I, 316, 349; II, 30–1, 285.
6. Mayflower Descendant, I, 153, 230; IV, 95.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, XII, 6, 12.
8. Ibid., I, 3, 31, 33, 38–9, 41, 52, 54–5, 116, 125, 155; II, 41, 44; VII, 4, 9, 17, 20, 25, 28; XII, 25.
9. Ibid., I, 10, 27, 40, 58–9, 165.
10. Ibid., I, 75, 92; II, 177.
11. Pope's Pioneers, p. 460; Savage, IV, 320–1.
12. Mayflower Descendant, I, 159; II, 89, 147–8; IV, 186–7; VI, 146; New England Register, IV, 35.
13. Plymouth Colony Records of Deeds, V, pt. 2, p. 517 [unpublished].
14. Partridge Genealogy, G. H. Partridge, privately printed, 1915, pp. 1–9.
15. Merrick Genealogy, G. B. Merrick, 1902, pp. 13–25; Savage, III, 198.
16. Opinion of Mr. E. L. Smith, Brookline, Mass.
17. Courtesy of Mr. S. W. Tracy of Chicago, Ill., who will presently publish a STEPHEN[1] TRACY Genealogy.
18. Mayflower Descendant, III, 99; XIV, 13–4; Savage, IV, 575; Pope, 342, 502.
19. The Genealogist, London, 1908, New Ser., XXIV, 275.

VENTRES



* Farmington, Conn.
† Haddam, Conn.
‡ East Haddam, Conn.
§ East Hartland, Conn.
‖ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.

VENTRES

WILLIAM[1] VENTRES,* born about 1623, is first found as one of the early residents[2] of Farmington, Connecticut. He was not one of the "original proprietors" but he and Moses† Ventres were among those who purchased their home lots from them, and they were considered "original settlers."

Farmington, called Tunxis until 1645, was first settled in 1640. It was the first and only offshoot from the church of the Reverend Thomas Hooker, of Hartford, nearly all of the group being originally[2] of Hartford. No record of WILLIAM[1] has been found at Hartford though Moses Ventres was married there in 1646 and Elizabeth Ventres† was also married there April 2, 1651.

The home lot of WILLIAM[1] was in the center of the town of Farmington very near the meeting house.[5] Two separate dates are given on which he was made a freeman[6] as

> "May 18, 1654. The names of those who at this Courte were mayd free, are as followeth:
>
> Farmingtone WILL: VENTRIS" and
>
> "May 21, 1657. Were made free before the Court, those whose names are underwritten: WILLI: VENTRIS."

In or about 1662, WILLIAM[1] VENTRES removed to the new settlement of Haddam. The statement[7] is made that he was one of the "10 known to have come from Hartford." Another,[8] probably more accurate, describes him as being one of the "twenty-eight proprietors" several having "come immediately from Hartford and probably most were from that place or its vicinity," which would include Farmington and other near-by towns. The allotment of

*The will[1] of Moses Wall, of Braintree, co. Essex, England, dated in September, 1623, gives ten shillings to William Ventres "my workman." Other beneficiaries of that will later emigrated to New England. The date of the will is approximately the date of the birth of WILLIAM[1] VENTRES and it was very likely his father who received the bequest.

† Moses Ventres was probably a brother of WILLIAM[1]. Elizabeth Ventres, who married[4] George[2] Graves (GEORGE[1]) was probably a sister of theirs.

lands at Haddam and the drawing of lots to determine priority of choice,[9] with the resultant benefits to WILLIAM[1], are described in the chapter relative to the Spencer family. In a list which was furnished to the General Court in October, 1669, of all the freemen [see Appendix, p. 857], in the various towns of Connecticut, those of Haddam include "GEORGE GATES WILLIAM VENTERAS, NECALAS ACLY." This report from Haddam was signed[11] by "GEORGE GATES Townesman, Richard Piper Constabell, DANIELL CONE Townesman."

On September 14, 1675, WILLIAM[1] was confirmed as sergeant[10] of the Haddam "Trayn Band" by the General Court. In 1681, he was a member of the board of selectmen;[12] on August 19, of that year, he, with GEORGE[1] GATES, JOHN[2] SPENCER and one other, took an inventory of the estate of WILLIAM[1] CLARKE of Haddam. The will of John Parents, of that town, which was dated April 27, 1686, appointed WILLIAM[1] as trustee. Moses Ventres, probably his son, was a witness.

The ownership of an eight-acre tract of land in Haddam is assigned[4] to WILLIAM[1], but it is evident that he had considerable other property. A partial inventory, still extant, shows property to the amount of £98 and the total amount[12] of his holdings at the time of his death was £237–16–00.

Richard Piper, of Haddam, the "Constabell" above mentioned, died in 1678, leaving no family. He left his estate[12] amounting to £204 to some of the young people of the town. Among these youthful beneficiaries[15] were SUSANNAH[2] VENTRES and her brother John[2], children of WILLIAM[1]; "Sarah Gates 2d," daughter of GEORGE[1] and SARAH (OLMSTEAD) GATES; JOHN[2] ACKLEY and his brother Samuel[2].

WILLIAM[1] VENTRES died July 2, 1701, at Haddam, "aged 78 years." His will, dated March 21, 1699–1700, and proved September 6, 1701, began with these words: "I, WILLIAM VENTRUS, of Haddam, being very aged and crazy of body, do make and constitute this my last will and testament. . . ."[12] Among the legatees was his daughter, "SUSANNA BRAINWOOD" to whom he gave £10. His wife Elizabeth, named in this document, is said not to have been his first wife[4, 13] and she was probably not the mother of his children.[13, 14]

The children of WILLIAM[1] VENTRES and his wife (——), the first four born probably at Farmington, were[3, 13]

I. Mary[2], b. October 20, 1654; probably d. young.[13]
II. William[2], b. January 28, 1656; probably d. young.
III. John[2], b. December 8, 1657; m.[4, 4a] Lydia[3] Spencer (JOHN[2], GERRARD[1]).
IV. Moses[2], bap. November 16–17, 1661–2, at Farmington.

v. SUSANNAH[2], b. 1668–9 at Haddam[4a, 14] and d. January 26, 1754, aged 86, at Haddam.[3, 11, 14] She married at Haddam, abt. 1688, DANIEL[2] BRAINERD [see Brainerd, p. 136].

REFERENCES

1. Genealogical Gleanings in England, H. F. Waters, 1901, II, 1130; The Goodwins of Hartford, Conn., J. J. Goodwin, 1891, pp. 36–9; English Goodwin Family Papers, Hartford, Conn., 1921, I, 357.
2. Historical Discourse Concerning Farmington, Conn., N. Porter, Jr., 1841, p. 59.
3. New England Register, XI, 327.
4. Ibid., XLVII, 88–9; Connecticut Historical Society Collections, XIV, 607–8.

4a. Genealogical Notes, N. Goodwin, 1856, pp. 197–8.

5. Memorial History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, II, p. 166 and map.
6. Colonial Records of Connecticut, I, 257, 298.
7. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 369, 379.
8. History of Haddam and East Haddam, Conn., D. D. Field, 1814, pp. 5, 45.
9. History of Middlesex County, Conn., 1884, p. 372.
10. Colonial Records of Connecticut, II, 365.
11. Ibid., II, 526.
12. Digest of Early Connecticut Probates, C. W. Manwaring, 1904, I, 290, 346, 350; II, 129–30.
13. Savage, IV, 370.
14. Brainerd Genealogy, L. A. Brainerd, 1908, I, 41.
15. First Puritan Settlers of Connecticut, R. R. Hinman, 1846, p. 225.

WHITE

* [498] ROBERT WHITE -c.1684–7	m prob.by 1655	AGATHA . . . -aft.1688,perhaps 1693
* [248] JOHN LITTLE perhaps c.1646–1713	m 1680	MARY WHITE prob.1660–2–1715
* [124] ANTHONY LITTLE prob.1685–7–1731–4	m 2nd prob.by 1709	MARY [?Ladner?] -aft.1733–4
* # † ‡ [62] ABSALOM LITTLE by 1710–aft.1781, prob. 1785	m prob.1740–5, bef.1749	ESTHER PETTYJOHN prob.abt.1720–prob.1804–5
§ † ‡ [30] JOHN COREY prob.c.1740–bet.1775 and 1785	m 2nd bet.1765–1770	BETSEY LITTLE prob.1745–6–prob.bet.1790 and 1800
‖ ⊙ ◇ ♦ [14] HENRY BARTLETT 1771–1850	m 1792	BETSEY COREY 1772–1857
¶ ♥ ♦ [6] CHARLES SHIPMAN 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	JOANNA HERRICK BARTLETT 1793–1870
▲ ♥ [2] BEMAN GATES 1818–1894	m 1841	BETSEY SIBYL SHIPMAN 1816–1895
♥ RUFUS R. DAWES 1838–1899	m 1864	MARY BEMAN GATES 1842–1921

* Elizabeth, N. J.
† Sussex Co., Del.
‡ Bedford Co., Pa., later Fayette Co., Pa.
§ Cape May Co., N. J.
‖ Beverly, Mass.
¶ Saybrook, Conn.

♥ Marietta, Ohio.
♦ Athens, Ohio.
Westfield, N. J.
⊙ Rostraver Tp., Westmoreland Co., Pa.
◇ Merrittstown, Pa.
▲ Montague and Amherst, Mass.

WHITE

ROBERT[1] WHITE,* of Elizabeth, New Jersey, who married, probably as early as 1655, AGATHA (——), was one of the so-called eighty "Associates" of that town and assisted in its settlement in 1664. The situation in New Jersey was in every way so very different from that in New England that it justifies special elaboration.

New Jersey was,[10] more than most sections, a field of conflict. In the earliest colonial period it was a part of Virginia. Subsequently, however, it was claimed by both England and Holland, and was held by one or the other, with frequent interchanges, for many years.

Because of the discovery of the eastern coast by Cabot, the English claimed the right and title to the whole country from Maine to Florida; but the Dutch gained possession of what is now called New York and claimed it as theirs by virtue of a discovery made in 1609 by Henry Hudson, who, in the employment of the Holland East India Company, was in search of a northwest passage to China.

In the spring of 1661 the Dutch rulers sent out a general invitation to "all Christian people of tender conscience, in England or elsewhere oppressed, to erect colonies anywhere . . . between New England and Virginia, in America" and some few did so colonize. This Dutch claim in the new world displeased Charles II [who had been restored to the throne of his ancestors in May, 1660]† and for the purpose of dispossessing them he gave a patent in

* Various suggestions have been made as to probable or possible relationships of ROBERT[1] WHITE, including (a) the possibility that he was a brother[1] of Dennis White of Southampton, Long Island, and of Elizabeth, New Jersey, who, in turn, is surmised to have been (b) a son or brother[1] of John White who was at Lynn, Massachusetts,[2] in 1630, freeman there in 1633, removed[5] about 1640 with NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND et al to Southampton,[3, 4] where he became a freeman in 1647, brought up a large family, and died in 1662, leaving a widow, Ann, who married secondly, after May, 1663, but before September 6, 1665, Zerobabel[2] Phillips (Rev. George[1]). Finally, (c) this John White is by some writers supposed to have been an unrecorded son of Thomas[1] White, of Weymouth. The latter man's children are known only from his will and, since the said John White died in 1662 and Thomas [b.1599] did not die until 1679, this relationship would have been possible if it were not for the fact that John was a freeman in 1633 and doubtless then at least as much as twenty-one years old, which would preclude the possibility of his being son to a man born in 1599.

† The restoration of Charles II awakened well-founded fears among the colonists of nearby New England with

March, 1663–4, to the Duke of York, his brother, for a large tract including the territory now known as New York and New Jersey. To place the Duke in possession of this country, and to hold it for the English crown, Sir Robert Carr and Governor Richard Nicolls were sent over with a small fleet; and as the Dutch were ignorant of their object, and were unprepared for defense, the English quietly took possession of New Amsterdam on September 8, 1664, it automatically became New York, and almost immediately Gov. Nicolls made grants at Elizabethtown to various settlers. In the meantime, however, on June 24, 1664, the Duke of York, then the possessor of the soil under this patent from the crown, ignoring the grants made in his name by his governor, had conveyed, by deeds of lease and release, to Lord John Berkley and Sir George Carteret the tract of land lying between the Hudson and the Delaware Rivers and extending from the ocean to the present north line of New Jersey. On receipt of this knowledge Governor Nicolls had remonstrated with the Duke against this change of ownership and later frequently urged its cancellation.

After the accession of the English, in the person of Governor Nicolls, in September, 1664, before the grant from the Duke of York to Berkley and

---

respect to their dearly-bought liberties. Under the Protectorate they had enjoyed the utmost freedom in the administration of their civil affairs. . . . In such respects "they had reason to apprehend a serious conflict with the new government. Jealous of the prerogative of self-government, so happily enjoyed from their earliest organization as English colonies in America, it was with extreme reluctance that these stern old Puritans consented to proclaim the new monarch, and to congratulate him upon his accession to the throne. More especially was this the case in the Colony of New Haven, where the Republican [yet theocratic] sentiment had been most fully developed, where none but members of the church were entrusted with the rights of freemen [and where the regicides Whalley and Goffe were so cordially received and carefully concealed and guarded]. The [pending] project of an incorporation by charter with the [adjacent] Colony of Connecticut, where these restrictions [to freemanship] were unknown and greater laxity or tolerance were the habit, distinctly alarmed the leaders of the New Haven Colony. One of the principles tolerated by Connecticut which was most obnoxious to the New Haven men was the half-way covenant, that secured certain ecclesiastical privileges, such as the baptism of children, to persons not in full communion with the church. These facts led many families to think of securing a home under the Dutch government in New Netherlands, where they might perpetuate their peculiar principles without molestation." The pioneer company at Newark, New Jersey which comprised about thirty families largely from Milford, Connecticut, came in the spring of 1666 after the English assumed control. Their first town meeting was held the 21st of May. . . . This settlement later included two sons of JOHN[2] SHIPMAN, viz.: Jonathan[3] and David[3].

The great object in the minds of the settlers was "the carrying on of spiritual concernments, as also of civil and town affairs, according to God, and a godly government," which had always been the cherished idea of the Puritans. It was a grand religious idea, but every experiment, before and since, only added to the proof that "spiritual concernments" are best carried on through institutions of their own, under political protection, yet separated from civil affairs. A godly government, as they understood it, cannot long be maintained without the disfranchisement of worthy citizens; and the making of piety and church communion a necessary qualification for civil offices is but a premium offered to hypocrisy. The settlement of Newark was among the last experiments that demonstrated the delusive hope of the old Puritans, who "were greatly wise in many things, but not in all." It was another and vain repetition of an experiment which the Branford pastor the Reverend Abraham Pierson [who left Lynn with NATHANIEL[2] KIRTLAND] had already made at two previous settlements, first on Long Island, and then at Branford.

Carteret was yet known, and long before the arrival in August, 1665, of Governor Philip Carteret as their representative, a group of Long Island men [and some from Connecticut]—since called the Elizabeth-Town Associates—had acquired by grant [of December 1, 1664] from Governor Nicolls, agent for the Duke, and also by purchase from the Indians on October 28, 1664, a large tract of land extending from the mouth of the Raritan River to the mouth of the Passaic, a distance in a straight line of not less than seventeen miles; and from the "Great River" or Arthur Cull [originally Achter Kol, meaning "behind the bay" (i. e., the second bay)], which separates the mainland from Staten Island, twice this distance into the country [see map on p. 533]. It contained five hundred thousand acres of land, was confirmed by a letter received from the Duke prior to August, 1665, and was purchased from the Indians for "twenty fathoms of trading cloth, two made coats, two guns, two kettles, ten bars of lead, twenty handfuls of powder, four hundred fathoms of white wampum, payable in one year from the day of entry upon said lands. On this land they undoubtedly settled by November, 1664, and word must have come almost immediately to the effect that in the previous June the Duke of York had disposed of his rights to the new Proprietors.

This tract was afterwards known as the "Elizabeth-Town Grant" and the eighty original settlers were called the "Elizabeth-Town Associates" and included ROBERT[1] WHITE. In this "Grant" three townships were soon formed—Elizabeth-Town, Woodbridge and Piscataway—which were quickly settled, chiefly by emigrants from Long Island, many of whom had previously come from Massachusetts or Connecticut; and Governor Nicolls gave to the whole tract the name [only temporarily used] of Albania, in honor of his master, the Duke of York and Albany. At one time the name "New Canary" was applied to it, subsequently it was called Nova-Caesarea, and then New Jersey in honor of Carteret, who was a native of the Isle of Jersey.

In August, 1665, Philip Carteret, aged twenty-six, a distant relative of Sir George, the proprietor, arrived to act as governor, accompanied by thirty English settlers, mostly servants. He made Elizabethtown the capital of the province, naming it in honor of the wife of his patron, Lady Elizabeth Carteret. He brought a charter called "The Concession and Agreement of the Lords Proprietors." This document in itself was admirable in many ways, and guarded civil and religious rights. It included an organic law that "No person shall be molested or questioned for any difference of opinion or practice in matters of religious concernment," and it thus early "established the

doctrine, for which a century later, the colonies so strenuously and successfully contended, that representation is not to be separated from taxation—that the people must have a voice in determining the expenses of government." It granted to every settler "armed with a good musket, bore twelve bullets to the pound, with ten pounds of powder and twenty pounds of bullets, with bandaliers and match convenient, and with six months' provision for his own person, one hundred and fifty acres of land English measure." Another ruling was, "That all lands should be purchased by the governor and council from the Indians, from time to time, as there should be occasion, in the name of the Lords Proprietors; and every person settling was to pay his proportion of that purchase money and charges." It will be seen that the Proprietors recognized in these rules the right of the Indians to a compensation for their lands, although they reserved to themselves the right of purchase. No others could buy but through them; the Indians could sell only to them. Against this assumption of power over the soil and its original tenants there was subsequently made a vigorous and determined opposition.

The charter offered a bounty of seventy-five acres for the importation of each able slave. This inhuman appeal to avarice had its motive in the fact that the Duke of York was a patron of the slave trade, and president of the African Company. One stipulation in this charter was for the survey and patenting of all land taken up in the province by *new* settlers, and it required of all such the payment in sterling of one halfpenny per acre yearly rent beginning March 25, 1670. As the people of Elizabeth claimed their lands, not by gift or lease from these Lords Proprietors, but by previous purchase from the Indians on October 28, 1664, followed by a grant from Governor Nicolls on December 1, 1664, which was confirmed by the Duke of York himself prior to Carteret's arrival in August, 1665, the Associates felt secure in their title, assumed that the later stipulations in the "Concessions" pertained only to later comers, and therefore ignored them. Unfortunately no documentary evidence existed, as no individual patents had been issued or perhaps even applied for within the bounds of the town, though a town record-book [now lost] had been kept. They had thus far indeed, held the bulk of their lands in common.

At first Governor Carteret was conciliatory and friendly, identified himself with the Associates and raised no question as to their title. He soon despatched messengers through all the adjacent provinces, especially to New

England,* to invite settlers in on generous terms. These came in considerable numbers from New England and from Long Island, and were soon joined by a great number of Scotch and, later, of Quakers. Evidently, therefore, New England Puritians [i. e., Congregationalists], English Quakers and Scotch Presbyterians were the chief settlers of this portion of New Jersey and the formers of its moral character. Such a type, however, is little likely to acquiesce patiently and obediently in a dominance both illegal and unjust and, as will be seen, the unyielding quality of them, where their rights were concerned, operated to accentuate troubles which a meeker class might have avoided.

The first General Assembly under the "Concessions" was convened May 26, 1668; a second one met on November 3, 1668, but a rift then occurred between the "Body of Representatives" [or popular branch] and the governor with his assistants. This was the forerunner of endless and dreadful difficulties. Resenting any conflict with his opinion and will, the governor refused thereafter, for more than two years, [until October 3, 1671], in open defiance of the charter he himself had brought, to call an assembly, preferring to rule the province at his own pleasure. As his disaffection grew, and as he showed intent to force upon the "Associates," as well as newcomers, the requirement of quit-rents† and of a patent from himself, the earlier settlers faced the hard necessity of tacitly acknowledging the invalidity of their prior claims and titles by asking for such from him, or of taking a chance of losing their homes and improvements by failure of such acknowledgment. Most of them chose the latter course, but in so doing they naturally widened the breach between themselves and the ruling party. Some of the Associates, however, yielded and took new deeds for their lands from the Proprietors, against others lawsuits were commenced but the difficulties were never legally adjusted, for the Associates were evidently the stronger party at that time and public sympathy was in their favor.

*On May 21, 1666, the same day that the Connecticut families arrived to settle Newark, a committee from Newbury, Massachusetts, which had come to look over the land, acquired a permit from Governor Carteret to settle two townships between the Raritan and the Rahway, including what became Woodbridge. A George Little of Newbury[11] acquired one hundred acres in Woodbridge on March 10, 1669, as is proved by a deed dated February 11, 1701–2, whereby his son, Joseph[2] Little, and his grandson, John[3] Little (Moses[2], George[1]), disposed[11] of it. This George Little is called "near of kin, probably a brother" to our JOHN[1] LITTLE, though if related at all he seems more likely to have been an uncle.

† The Newark people, who held their patent from the Proprietors, offered to pay the yearly tax on their lands of halfpenny per acre, in wheat rather than in sterling as was required. There was one expedient often employed which operated to evade the letter of the law and to serve both the community and the taxpayer. Wolves were very numerous and a bounty, to be applied on the tax of him who killed one, was offered for their destruction.[10]

The Governor, whose authority was supposedly purely Provincial, retaliated by interfering in local town affairs, claiming the prerogative of presiding in person or by proxy at their town meetings, of admitting whom he pleased as freeholders [ignoring their law of a majority town vote in such cases], of allotting town lands as rewards to his servants, of revoking local military commissions, of cancelling military training days on pain of death, etc. The Associates regarded all such acts as unwarranted usurpation, and thus the breach begun in November, 1668, was constantly widened. These grievances of the people bore on the very foundations of government—the great question of popular rights which was continually arising until its final settlement in 1776.

The second winter which the Associates spent at Elizabethtown was attended with excessive cold and unusually heavy snows; and the autumns of both 1668 and 1669 were memorable for the prevalence of fatal disorders. In the winter of 1674–5 the settlers felt some apprehension of famine and an order was published prohibiting the export of corn and grain.

In 1669 both of the Lords Proprietors, Carteret and Berkley, were in serious trouble and disgrace at home and it was expected that they would necessarily surrender their rights in New Jersey. The Duke, prompted by his friend Nicolls [previously governor of New York], was anxious to recover it. Because of these unsettled conditions both the Associates and their antagonists [Governor Carteret's party] rested for a time; the former in hope of a change of government and the latter with the expectation of removal. The two Proprietors, however, through political manipulation, bettered their standing in England and retained their rights in New Jersey, and their representative, Governor Carteret, had by 1670 resumed his intolerable dominance. Besides other offenses, he convened a court illegally, as judged by the "Concessions" which he himself had brought. Also, in the spring of 1671 the two parties came into direct collision as a result of a grant of a portion of the Associates' lands which was arbitrarily made by the governor to a servant of his, who had not even troubled to ask acceptance as an inhabitant. The settlers felt that they had reached the parting of the ways; that, if they did not resist, they might as well give up all thought of self-government. They called a town meeting and, after grave debate, decided to take back by force this land illegally granted and held, and to destroy the fence and improvements put up by the interloper. Accordingly the constable and seven others carried out this decision. Of course, a higher tension than

ever was the result. The governor called these men "rioters" and saw to it that they were indicted as such on February 10, 1671–2, and fined from £3 to £5 each, the fines to be collected by distraint. Yet the fines were not paid and no distraint followed, for the marshal was powerless in the presence of the outraged and indignant people. This feeling obtained not only in Elizabeth but also at Newark [whose inhabitants held land solely under Carteret's grant] and in all other parts of the province.

The General Assembly met again in October, 1671, and in March and May, 1672, but its records were destroyed at Carteret's direction. Moreover, the Book of Laws was withheld from the Associates by his secretary, William Pardon. Presently the governor "refused both to preside over the Assembly, either in person or by deputy, and to recognize the lawfulness of the convocation," so the Representatives, as authorized by the "Concessions," called to the chair Capt. James Carteret, son of the Lord Proprietor, who was then in Elizabeth. He presided, sided with the Associates, and ordered the arrest of the secretary, Pardon. This alarmed the governor, who fled to Bergen, whence he issued a proclamation ignoring the authority of this presiding officer, his overlord's son, calling the action of the Assembly "mutiny and rebellion" and demanding their submission within ten days, under threat that he would proceed against them and that bloodshed would result —a plain declaration of war, causing a breach which was irreparable. Thereafter matters went from bad to worse and excitement was intense. According to the quoted order, the governor's secretary was finally imprisoned and his goods and lands were attached by the constable, William Meeker, and several of his associates. Carteret's friends advised him to repair to England and they prepared a memorial to the Lords Proprietors, complaining to Sir George Carteret of his son James for presiding at the above meeting, and scathingly criticising the Associates in general terms, but voicing mainly only one definite accusation against them, namely: that they " . . . have taken Liberty to differ from the Governor and Councill in Establishing matters. . . ."

Accordingly, in July, 1672, Governor Carteret and several of his assistants returned to England but in May, 1673, the assistants came again to New Jersey, bringing letters and documents designed to reduce the people to subjection. These included a letter from the changeable Duke of York to his deputy then serving at New York, unexpectedly stating that the grant of December 1, 1664, from his earlier deputy, Governor Nicolls, to the Associates of Elizabeth was void. This last document, however, lost its force when

laid beside the earlier one from the Duke himself, confirming that very patent.

These assistants brought also (a) a letter from the King, confirming the authority of the governor and council, thus for the first time making them officers of the crown, and (b) documents from the Lords Proprietors sustaining the pretensions of the objectionable governor and assistants and granting an indemnity to be paid by the people to the secretary whom they had previously imprisoned! The immediate local result was an order by the governor's party, dated May 21, 1673, requiring that all "malcontents"* among the inhabitants should "make their submission" to him at Bergen on June 10, following, "when such as are conscious of their offences may repair to crave remission and after that time to expect no favour but what the Law affords." Also the order reiterated that no person should be accounted "a freeholder of the province, nor have any vote in electing, nor be capable of being elected for any office of trust either civil or military, until he doth actually hold his or their lands by patent from them" [the Lords Proprietors]. They therefore required everyone to obtain, within ten weeks, warrants for surveys and patents thereof, with the added threat that whoever failed to comply within that time should forfeit such lands as they were settled upon and "pretended unto." In June, 1673, the constable and his aids who had imprisoned the governor's secretary the year before were tried and fined £10 each, except for the constable, William Meeker, who was required to forfeit his whole estate to the said secretary, though he was later reimbursed, partially at least, by the settlers.

On July 30, 1673, after five years of vexatious conflict with the Proprietors and their agents, with the prescribed ten-week term for their submission just expiring, they saw the picture suddenly change as though it might have been a special providence for their relief. On that date a Dutch fleet took New York and renamed it New Orange, and New Jersey willingly surrendered without a conflict. England had been at war with the United Provinces of Holland since the previous year, and it was gratifying to the Dutch, as well as to the people of New Jersey, to turn this particular page of history.

There must have been thanksgiving in the hearts of the Associates when the Dutch authorities ordered that they "and their heirs shall unmolested

*Malcontents being described as "those persons who were the chief actors in attempting the making an alteration in the government."

enjoy and possess their lawfully purchased and paid for lands, which shall afterwards be confirmed to them by the Governor in due form;" and that they "are granted and accorded Freedom of conscience as the same is permitted in the Netherlands." Shortly they elected "Schepens" [or magistrates] and a "Schout" [or mayor-sheriff] by popular vote. This happy change, however, which occurred at the most critical time, was comparatively short-lived, being interrupted by the treaty of peace signed February 9, 1673–4, between the English and the Dutch, which mutually restored all captured property. The Dutch rule continued, therefore, only until November, 1674, when it was automatically superseded by the English. Meanwhile a change of ownership of New Jersey terrain had occurred, in that Lord Berkley had sold his half-right for £1000 on March 18, 1673–4, to John Fenwick, then of Bynfield, England, in trust for Edward Byllinge of the Society of Friends, for William Penn and two other men. These four men, with Sir George Carteret, divided the province into East and West Jersey by what is called the "Quintipartite Deed," dated July 1, 1676, by which George Carteret became sole owner of East Jersey, which was re-confirmed and re-conveyed to him during June and July of 1674. The "Concessions" were re-written in such a way as to serve the Proprietor and his governor rather than the people; and, to add insult to injury, Philip Carteret was newly commissioned governor over them. After a two-years' absence in England he arrived on October 31, 1674, on the same boat which brought his unlovely kinsman, Col. Edmund Andros [see Chapman, p. 187], who later became involved with New Jersey affairs.

Governor Carteret's first official acts were quite in character, for he made public certain documents calling the people "turbulent"; "seditious spirits"; referring to their "mantle of treason"; denying freemanship or privilege of holding office to all who did not hold a land patent from him, and utterly disclaiming recognition of any land rights other than through patent by him; threatening with sale of their property by the government any who failed to obtain patents from him within a year; and voicing many other similar indignities.

Wearied, however, with the endless conflict, the town sought, on March 11, 1674–5, to make a compromise by offering to pay £20 per annum to the Proprietors for the township of Elizabeth, eight miles square to be divided among them as they chose and to be confirmed to them by charter; but this plan the governor utterly refused to consider and he would not abate one

item of his requirement that friend and foe alike should apply to him for warrants for surveys to be made between April 1 and May 15, 1675. This must have seemed the last straw to the unhappy Associates, who, "threatened by their imperious rulers with a summary confiscation of all their lands and improvements," one by one "with great reluctance yielded to the compulsion put upon them, and, without prejudice to their previous titles, consented to receive such as the Governor chose to give them." ROBERT[1] WHITE endured, with the other Associates, these arbitrary requirements.[10]

This ruling was so distasteful to the settlers that compliance was made only under protest and by compulsion. Only two men complied during the specified time limit, and only ten others during the latter half of that year, including ROBERT[1], who received[1] on September 12, 1675, a warrant for one hundred eighty acres for himself, his wife and his daughter, Ann[2], who was probably then his only child over fourteen years of age.[12] His known holdings included also a fifty-acre tract of upland "by a little brook & [on the northwest side of] a highway that goes to Woodbridge" [see map on p. 533], as well as thirty-four acres of upland adjoining Jonas Wood, four acres of swamp and twelve acres of meadow. The house lot[1] of ROBERT[1] contained eight acres and was joined on the east or northeast by that of JOHN[1] LITTLE and on the west by that of Thomas Lee, his two sons-in-law. He had[1] in the beginning "a second Lot-Right" to the land obtained by the Associates. This term signified that he had paid toward the purchase price twice as much as those who held a "first lot-right" but only two-thirds as much as those who had a "third lot-right."

After[10] this compulsory settlement a season of comparative peace ensued. In November, 1675, was convened the first General Assembly after the restoration of English rule, at the close of which an act of oblivion was passed, abolishing all actions for damage or costs which had been or might be started by any of the "malcontents" who defied the Proprietors between 1670 and June, 1673.

A certain watchful rivalry had existed between Governor Carteret, of New Jersey, and Governor Andros, of New York, ever since they came over together in 1674, and a desire existed in the mind of Andros to acquire control of the Jerseys. He had long been assured of the approval of such a plan by the Duke of York, and the death in England in January, 1679–80, of Sir George Carteret, the Lord Proprietor of East Jersey, brought matters to a climax. First, a series of arguments, threats and counter-claims was begun

between Andros and Governor Carteret, and in this instance, for the first time, the Associates sided with Carteret; for, though he was an undesirable ruler, the wily Andros was surely no better and probably worse. Finally Andros had Carteret kidnaped and held a prisoner in New York for a time, but he could not persuade the Associates to accept him (Andros) peaceably as their ruler, though he claimed the office. In March, 1680–1, Carteret resumed the governorship by proclamation, but he failed to perpetuate the late friendliness of the Associates and to profit by his own earlier experiences; for, when the interrupted Assembly first met again in October, 1681, he employed the dangerous prerogative of dissolving it because of differences with the Representatives and because of their determination to reassert and reëstablish their fundamental rights according to the terms of the original "Concessions" published in 1665.

Seventeen years had already passed since the Associates had honestly and lawfully acquired the soil. Most of these years were filled with conflict and the inhabitants were constantly in fear lest their homes would be taken from them. Some few men had removed, but most of them still remained and "manfully maintained the principles so dear to them." Among these were ROBERT[1] WHITE and his son-in-law JOHN[1] LITTLE. These troubles seemed to strengthen and develop character and to foster an intelligent love of freedom, independence, constitutional principles and well-regulated self-rule.

After the death of Sir George Carteret it became necessary for the trustees of his estate to sell his rights in East Jersey for the benefit of his creditors, and in January, 1681–2, they were purchased by twelve men [including William Penn] of London and environs, most of them connected with the Society of Friends. Shortly thereafter, twelve other men bought into this group, so that the one Lord Proprietor of East Jersey was superseded by twenty-four men and the rule of the Cavalier was exchanged for that of the Quaker. This brought in a new era with a promise of peace and security. The Quaker element was plain and kindly and "had suffered not a little from the intolerance of the crown." In May, 1683, six months after the arrival of the Quaker governor, Rudyard, he wrote a letter commending the Associates [some of whom he had appointed to office] in these words: "The people are generally a sober professing people, Wise in their Generation, Courteous in their Behavior, and Respectful to us in office among them." It is gratifying to be able to quote such words to offset the many recriminations of Governor Carteret and the Lords Proprietors.

In August, 1684, a letter written by a local official, a Scotchman, said: "There are here very good Religious People, they go under the name of Independents but are most like to the Presbyterians" ". . . most part of the first Settlers came out of New England, very kind and loving people, kinder than in Scotland or England. And for the Indian Natives, they are not troublesome any way to any of us, if we do them no harm, but are a very kind and loving people. . . ." One other man [probably of a different temper himself] wrote of them in the following January ". . . these Quit-renters . . . [are] some civill and discreet, others rude and Malcontent with the late Purchassers, and need something of austerity to make them complaisant."

There was apparently a lingering but futile hope in the minds of the Associates that under the Quakers they might establish their cherished title from the Indians and Governor Nicolls. This irritated the twenty-four Quaker proprietors even as it had their predecessors, and they recognized only the title acquired from the Lords Proprietors, both for themselves and for the Associates.

In February, 1684–5, Charles II died and the Duke of York became King James II. This news created a profound sensation throughout the colonies, for James was a Papist and was notably unscrupulous, and the governor of New York at that time, Dongan, had continued the agitation begun by Andros in 1674 relative to a union of New Jersey with New York under one head. About this time [i. e., 1684–5] the capital of New Jersey was removed from Elizabeth to Perth Amboy. The Quaker rule had now continued about four years but, while this period had been much happier for the Associates, results were not wholly satisfactory to the twenty-four proprietors [whose personnel had changed and was by then mostly Presbyterian]. They decided to appoint a new governor who might be a more successful business head and who should be not a Quaker but a Presbyterian and thus probably more acceptable to the Puritan Associates than either Episcopalian or Quaker had been. Lord Neal Campbell received the appointment but served only through 1687, for King James saw fit, in April, 1688, to unite Connecticut, East and West Jersey and New York with the New England states under the rule of the violent and profligate Andros, thus depriving even the twenty-four English proprietors of their rights of jurisdiction over their own property. Andros arrived in August, 1688, and at once took over the reins of authority. Even his dreaded rule did not last long, for in February, 1688–9, word came of the dethronement and flight of King James and the accession of William

and Mary, and, soon after, of the degradation and imprisonment of Andros in New England by the outraged Puritans. Agitation was intense and profound, and "from the latter end of June 1689 till about the latter end of August 1692," when Col. Hamilton was made governor, the people of Elizabeth were left "without any government" except their local town officers. [See Little, p. 534].

To summarize briefly, it may be said[10] that by the sales and subdivisions of their rights the Proprietors had become too numerous to manage the government with promptness, or with satisfaction to the people, so the latter became divided, and their controversies were fomented by the crown. Thus embarrassed by their own numbers, by internal dissensions and by the attitude of the King, the Proprietors of both East and West Jersey were induced to surrender their gubernatorial power to the crown. This surrender was made in 1702, to Queen Anne, who immediately united East and West Jersey. On April 17, 1702, therefore, the government of Proprietors ceased in New Jersey, Lord Cornbury, sent over as governor, arrived in August, 1703, with a new constitution. This document curtailed both civil and religious liberty, gave the Governor a veto on all laws of the Assembly, commanded encouragement of the slave trade, required the Episcopal form of worship and forbade the printing of any matter without license from the Governor. The province soon felt what it was to be governed by a profligate, tyrannical, bigoted tool of a tyrant, and they opposed him with diligence throughout his term of office.

More or less of conflict[10] [see also Little, p. 541] continued until 1735 and, indeed, even until the Revolution; but the span of life of ROBERT[1] WHITE closed, probably about 1687. One of his name witnessed[6] the will of Fopp Jansen Outhoot, a resident of the east shore of the Delaware River, on January 22, 1685–6. The will[7] of ROBERT[1], dated July 24, 1684, was probated before March 21, 1687–8, when his widow, AGATHA, was mentioned as purchasing, from Richard Beech, land which was bounded northwest by Thompson's Creek [now called Morse's Creek] and southeast by the great River. This purchase[1, 7] must have been for speculation only, for sixteen days later she resold it to William Darby. On September 17, 1684, she witnessed the will[6] of John Bishop, Sr., of Woodbridge. It seems probable that her death occurred after[7] November 3, 1693, when she is spoken of as an abutter. The will of her husband, ROBERT[1], mentioned his wife and five children, including his daughter MARY LITTLE.

The children of ROBERT[1] and AGATHA (——) WHITE, born in uncertain order and before the arrival of the family at Elizabeth, were[1, 7, 8]

I. Ann[2], b. probably by 1656–60 and surely 14 years of age[12] by September 12, 1675, when her father received a land warrant[1] for himself, his wife and her; d. probably before[8] January 9, 1694–5, for her husband's will failed to name her; m. March 14, 1675–6 Thomas Lee, whose home lot adjoined her father's and may have been a gift from him.

II. William[2], evidently eldest son and presumably executor of his father's will, for on March 13, 1689–90, he sold[8] the home lot formerly owned by his father [bounded east by JOHN[1] LITTLE and west by Thomas Lee] to the Rev. John Harriman. Apparently this act[8] was concurred in by his brother Andrew[2] on November 19, 1694.

III. Andrew[2], called "batchelour" on August 6, 1688, when he accepted[8] the bond of his brother William[2] "for carrying out an indenture" which very likely pertained to the sale of the homestead, as probably did also his own acknowledgment on November 19, 1694, that a deed [doubtless the one above] was binding on him. He sold land[8] in May, 1696.

IV. Elizabeth[2], living July 24, 1688.

V. MARY[2], b. probably about 1660–2; d. between[9] April 9, 1715, the date of her will, and August 20, 1715, when it was proved. She married,[1] April 26, 1680, JOHN[1] LITTLE [see Little, p. 531].

REFERENCES

1. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, pp. 58, 99, 100–1, 104, 162–3, 169, 182–3, 263.
2. History of Lynn, Mass., A. Lewis and J. R. Newhall, 1865, pp. 130, 172.
3. Town Records of Southampton, L. I., 1874, I, 35, 92, 94; 1877, II, 18, 120, 221, 236; Phillips Genealogy, A. M. Phillips, 1885, p. 11.
4. History of Southampton, L. I., G. R. Howells, 1887, pp. 15, 89, 399–403; History of Weymouth, Mass., G. W. Chamberlain, 1923, IV, 731–3; History of Watertown, Mass., H. Bond, 1860, p. 404.
5. History of Long Island, N. Y., B. F. Thompson, 2nd ed., 1843, I, 327.
6. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXIII, 39–40, 348.
7. Ibid., XXI, 118, 135, 237.
8. Ibid., XXI, 222, 245, 276.
9. Ibid., XXIII, 295.
10. Notes, Historical and Biographical, concerning Elizabeth-Town, N. J., N. Murray, 1844, pp. 15–23, 45–53; History of the United States, George Bancroft, 1888, II, 31–4; "The Mountain Society," James Hoyt, 1860, pp. 15–20, 22–4, 38–9; History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, pp. 17–34, 36–54, 112–3, 115–24, 125–60, 177–8, 180–96, 210–7, 225–7, 230–6; History of Union County, N. J., F. W. Ricord, 1897, p. 12; History of New England, J. G. Palfrey, 1882, II, 495 et seq.; History of Connecticut, B. Trumbull, 1818, I, 242–6; New Jersey Historical Society Collections, 1866, VI, Supp., 11–15.
11. New Jersey Archives, Ser. 1, XXI, 149; Descendants of George Little, G. T. Little, 1882, pp. 1–5.
12. History of Elizabeth, N. J., E. F. Hatfield, 1868, p. 254.

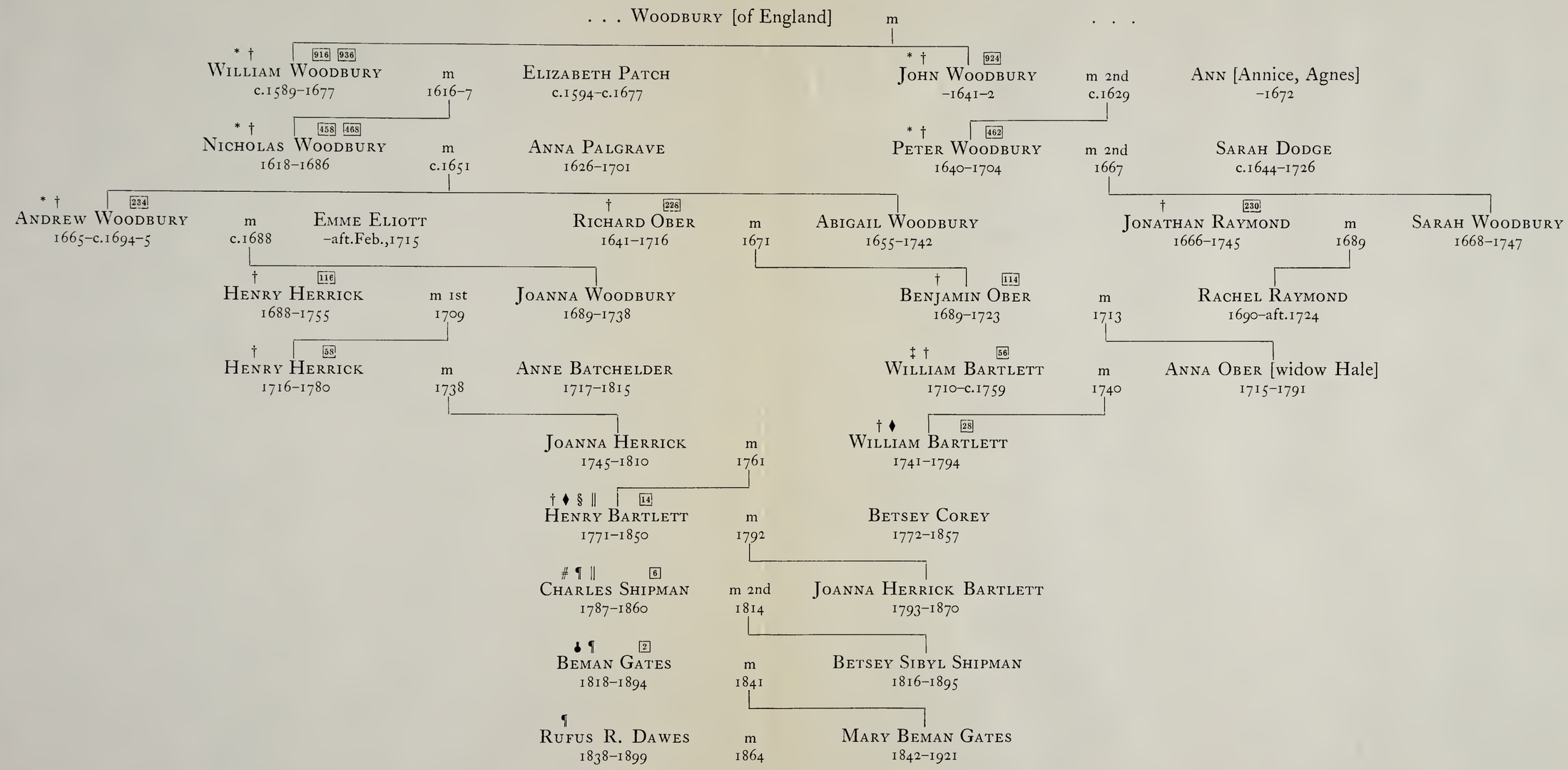
WOODBURY (John)

JOHN[1] WOODBURY and, later, his younger brother, WILLIAM[1] [vide infra], from both of whom we descend, came early to New England from co. Somerset, England.[1] JOHN[1], who had received a good education and was proficient in mathematics and capable as a surveyor,[1a] is said to have embarked at Weymouth as one of the leaders of the Dorchester Company of England, which arrived[2, 2a] at Cape Ann, now Gloucester, Massachusetts, in February or March, 1623–4. At the latest estimation, he came[1] in 1624–5. Others of our ancestral members of the Cape Ann Colony were THOMAS[1] GARDNER,* its first manager, ROGER[1] CONANT, who succeeded to this position [see Conant, p. 222], and JOHN[1] BALCH.* When it became desirable to discontinue the settlement at this place, for various reasons, the Reverend Mr. White, then of Dorchester, England, who was mainly instrumental in the original plan of emigration and of subsequent efforts, urged CONANT, WOODBURY and BALCH, above mentioned, and Peter Palfrey, whom he called "honest and prudent men,"[4, 5] to undertake to establish a new home for this Colony. He promised them support in the form of men, goods and supplies, as well as a patent for the land,[5] if they would remove to a more suitable location and, though many of the people scattered to England, Virginia and elsewhere, the remnant removed to Naumkeag, now Salem, in the fall of 1626 under the direction of CONANT and his colleagues, thus complying with the above request.[1, 5]

In the fall of 1627 JOHN[1] WOODBURY was sent to England as an agent of the colonists[1, 3, 6, 20] to explain to those interested financially and otherwise, the condition, needs and prospects of the settlement, and especially to urge them to procure a patent.[3] In this way he became the first envoy from this colony to the mother country.[6] He spent about six months in England and, soon after the issuance of the grant for their lands on March 19, 1627–8, he sailed for New England bringing with him his son, Humphrey[2], and very

* For discussion of the Gardner and Balch families, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.

WOODBURY (William and John)



* Salem, Mass. † Beverly, Mass. ‡ Marblehead, Mass. § Merrittstown, Pa. ‖ Athens, Ohio. ¶ Marietta, Ohio. ♣ Montague and Amherst, Mass. ♦ Rostraver Twp., Westmoreland Co., Pa. # Saybrook, Conn.

WOODBURY (John)

JOHN[1] WOODBURY and, later, his younger brother, WILLIAM[1] [vide infra], from both of whom we descend, came early to New England from co. Somerset, England.[1] JOHN[1], who had received a good education and was proficient in mathematics and capable as a surveyor,[1a] is said to have embarked at Weymouth as one of the leaders of the Dorchester Company of England, which arrived[2, 2a] at Cape Ann, now Gloucester, Massachusetts, in February or March, 1623–4. At the latest estimation, he came[1] in 1624–5. Others of our ancestral members of the Cape Ann Colony were THOMAS[1] GARDNER,* its first manager, ROGER[1] CONANT, who succeeded to this position [see Conant, p. 222], and JOHN[1] BALCH.* When it became desirable to discontinue the settlement at this place, for various reasons, the Reverend Mr. White, then of Dorchester, England, who was mainly instrumental in the original plan of emigration and of subsequent efforts, urged CONANT, WOODBURY and BALCH, above mentioned, and Peter Palfrey, whom he called "honest and prudent men,"[4, 5] to undertake to establish a new home for this Colony. He promised them support in the form of men, goods and supplies, as well as a patent for the land,[5] if they would remove to a more suitable location and, though many of the people scattered to England, Virginia and elsewhere, the remnant removed to Naumkeag, now Salem, in the fall of 1626 under the direction of CONANT and his colleagues, thus complying with the above request.[1, 5]

In the fall of 1627 JOHN[1] WOODBURY was sent to England as an agent of the colonists[1, 3, 6, 20] to explain to those interested financially and otherwise, the condition, needs and prospects of the settlement, and especially to urge them to procure a patent.[3] In this way he became the first envoy from this colony to the mother country.[6] He spent about six months in England and, soon after the issuance of the grant for their lands on March 19, 1627–8, he sailed for New England bringing with him his son, Humphrey[2], and very

* For discussion of the Gardner and Balch families, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.

probably his brother[18] WILLIAM[1]. They arrived* on June 28, following,[1, 5] and his report of the granting of the patent and the promises of support greatly encouraged the colonists.[5] After he left England, a new group there bought the entire rights of this colony and, in June, 1628, sent John Endicott† to supersede ROGER[1] CONANT as manager or governor.[5] The newcomers who accompanied Endicott attempted to use his recently acquired authority as an excuse for appropriating existing improvements and ignoring the rights of the planters and this naturally created a trying situation for all the earlier settlers. This conflict of interests known as "ye jarre" was presently adjusted[2] by certain concessions made to the "old planters," and by them, as well as by the inherent fineness of character of CONANT and his influence over his friends.[5, 29]

About this time JOHN[1] WOODBURY and his brother, WILLIAM[1], removed from the main settlement to what was then called "Cape Ann side," now known as Beverly, and settled near Woodbury's Point on Mackerel Cove [see map on p. 830]. JOHN[1] was made a freeman in 1630 and, in 1635, was appointed one of the "overseers & Layers out of Lotts of Ground for this prescinct of Salem . . . and in Leiue of y^r paynes they are to have 4s the acre for small lotts and 10s the hundred for great lotts rightly & exactly laid out and bounded." That same year he, as one of the "old planters," received a grant of 200 acres by the "Great Pond" where Beverly now lies.[1, 6] As early as 1636 an idea prevailed, to some extent, that Salem would eventually be the capital of the colony and a motion was presented to the General Court, that year, to set off some lands near Marblehead in contemplation of the erection of a college [see Scruggs, p. 721]. JOHN[1] was one of the committee appointed to view these lands.[1] In 1637 he was chosen a selectman of Salem and continued so until his death, being present[1, 2] at every meeting of the board up to December 3, 1641. He was assessor of Salem in 1639–40, treasurer[2] of that place in 1640–1, a deputy to the General Court[2, 7] from 1635–8, and a juror[30] almost continuously from June 27, 1636, to June 29, 1641.

JOHN[1] was called "brother" and, even more frequently,[8] "father WOODBURY," probably not so much from his age as because of his sound judgment, kindly spirit and usefulness in the affairs of the town.[1] He is regarded as standing next to ROGER[1] CONANT in value to the colony.[11] At his death he

*One authority[15a] states that JOHN[1] came with Endicott in September, 1628.

†It is said that on the arrival of Endicott, the vessel grounded in the shallows near the shore, and to save Endicott's dignity and clothing, JOHN[1] WOODBURY and another carried him to shore on their shoulders.

owned a house in Salem, where he had first settled, though he probably then resided on the 200-acre farm near the Great Pond. This latter property adjoining the tract belonging[11] to CONANT was still owned, in 1907, by one of his descendants and, up to 1878, and perhaps later, had no other title than the original grant.[18] The house in Salem was sold by his widow in 1660.

While JOHN[1] certainly came to New England directly from co. Somerset, England,[22] the parish records at South Petherton, of that county, contain references only to the family of his brother WILLIAM[1] so it is evident that the older generations had not settled there. Some twelve miles to the southwest lies Burlescombe,[1a] co. Devon, and there the many entries of the name show that the family had long resided in the district. The marriage of a John Woodbury and Joanna Humphrey, on June 21, 1596, at Burlescombe, "by Wyllyam Beseleigh, clerk," undoubtedly refers to JOHN[1] WOODBURY, although if true, it would necessarily make him older at his death than is generally inferred, and the burial of this Joanna Woodbury, wife of John, on June 5, 1601, at Burlescombe,[22] would necessarily make the birth of Humphrey[2] somewhat earlier than usually stated, if these be his parents.

JOHN[1] married* secondly ANN or AGNES (——) before August, 1629, when they became members of the First Church of Salem,[2] where he retained his membership until his death.

JOHN[1] WOODBURY died between[28] June 29, 1641, and January 25, 1641–2, leaving a will which was presented at Court by his widow, as executrix,[21] and was proved June 27, 1643, but was not recorded. The inventory of his estate was sworn to[1] on February 20, 1643–4. His widow, called then "ANNICE," died[1a, 2, 14] at Salem on February 14, 1672.

The only known child of JOHN[1] WOODBURY and his first wife [Joanna Humphrey?] was[1, 9]

1. Humphrey[2], b. 1600–1610, in England; d.[9] between March 4 and October 11, 1686; m. Elizabeth (——).

The children of JOHN[1] and ANN or AGNES (——) WOODBURY were[1, 2, 9, 10]

11. John[2], b. prob. abt. 1630, doubtless at Salem; d. bef.[25] 1682; m. 1653 or before,[24, 25] Elizabeth (——); she m., 2nd, Capt. John[2] Dodge (WILLIAM[1]). It was undoubtedly

*The name of his second wife has been erroneously given as Widow Derby, of Marblehead,[2] but it was his grandson, John[3] Woodbury (Humphrey[2]), who married her.[23, 25] JOHN[1] is assigned a [second] son, John[2], called "senior" to distinguish him from his nephew almost as old as himself, i.e., John[3], son of Humphrey[2]. The fact that both this John[2] and John[3] had wives bearing the name Elizabeth, concurrently for probably ten years, adds much to the confusion regarding their identities and families.[26] The wife of John[2], her surname yet unknown, married secondly, after his death and before 1682, Captain John[2] Dodge (WILLIAM[1]); the first wife of John[3] was Elizabeth Tenney, formerly of Rowley, and she died in 1689, after which her widower married secondly the Widow Alice Derby, as just mentioned.[26]

he who, calling himself of Beverly, made his will August 4, 1672, while on his Majesty's "Crown," naming his wife Elizabeth who was to have certain money and "all my books and sea instruments which I have now in my chest . . . " This estate[33] was administered January 18, 1672–3.

III. Hannah[2], bap. December 25, 1636, at Salem; d. September 1, 1714; m. April 26, 1658, at Salem, Cornelius Baker.

IV. Abigail[2], bap. November 12, 1637, at Salem; m. October 12, 1657, John Hill.

V. PETER[2], see following.

PETER[2] WOODBURY (*John*[1]) was born[15a] June 19 and baptized[10] September 19, 1640, at Salem. He died July 5, 1704, at Beverly;[1, 14] married first [at Wenham?],[13, 15] September 14, 1665,[13, 15] Abigail[2] Batchelder (JOHN[1]) and married secondly at Beverly,[14, 16] July, 1667, SARAH[2] DODGE [see Dodge, p. 317].

He had a good education if his handwriting may be considered evidence.[3] With his second wife, SARAH, he was received as a full member of the Beverly Church[12] on October 23, 1667, and became a freeman in the following year.[1, 27] In 1668 Beverly was incorporated and, thereafter, he held various trusts, serving on various committees, as selectman in 1675 and 1676,[27] on jury of trials in 1674, on grand jury[27] in 1677 and as selectman again from 1682–4.[3] In April, 1679, he was appointed one of the "Perambulators" to mark the boundaries between Lynn and Salem, which his father had helped to survey.[3] He bought his sister Abigail's share of their father's lands[3] in 1681 and, in 1682, testified in a suit[19a] between BENJAMIN[2] BALCH and Captain WILLIAM[2] DODGE [see Raymond, p. 698]. He was administrator in 1684 of the estate of JOHN[2] BATCHELDER, of Salem,[13] and, as their uncle, had much to do with the rearing of that man's orphaned children,[3] from one of whom, JOSIAH[3] BATCHELDER, we descend. PETER[2] WOODBURY was called "Sergeant" in the wills of his brother Humphrey[2] and of his cousin NICHOLAS[2], in 1685, and in that of Elizabeth, widow[25] of Humphrey[2] in 1689.

In 1686 he was elected a deacon,[3] probably in the place of his deceased brother, Humphrey[2]. He accepted this trust on November 16, of that year, but was not ordained until January 12, 1688–9.[1] It was during his incumbency in this office that the witchcraft delusion swept over Salem and it is related of him that he kept his horses saddled to assist the persecuted to flee to New Hampshire out of the jurisdiction of the trial court.[13] If this be true, it shows great courage, for if any of those in authority showed any hint of leniency in those dark days they were liable to speedy arraignment on a similar charge.

PETER[2] bore the title of lieutenant in the "Provincial Records"[3] in 1689, was a deputy 1689–91,[1, 9, 13, 19] and an assessor in 1692. The Massachusetts Bay charter, for which JOHN[1] WOODBURY had crossed the ocean to arrange, served for fifty-five years but was vacated in 1686 by mandamus, the colony then becoming a royal province under Governor Andros. In the spring of 1689, as soon as the news came that Prince William, of Orange, was marching[4] upon London, the colonists seized the opportunity, threw off the royal authority as typified by this governor of King James and demanded his surrender and that of the forts. A legislature of the people convened to take the necessary steps for self-government until a new regime should be established and Lieutenant PETER[2] WOODBURY was elected and approved as one of the deputies to this body. He attended sessions on May 8 and 22, of that year.[3] When a new charter under William and Mary was granted[31] in 1691 [though not sent to New England until 1692], Sir William Phipps came as a royal governor and called a legislature under this new authority, to which PETER[2] was chosen as a deputy from Beverly.[9] In "the February following the town reckoned with him for seventy-six days as deputy, and there was due him eleven pounds eighty-five shillings."[3]

In 1689–90, he subscribed and lent money to Beverly to "buy great guns and ammunition for the defence of ourselves, in case of assault made upon us by our Indians and that the money lent shall be paid by our town to those respective persons within three years of the date hereof and that there shall be built a fort for our safety in some convenient place, by the sea."[3] Other authorities, however, state that the "great guns" bought with the borrowed money were for use in the 1690 expedition against Quebec in which Captain WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND [see Raymond, p. 706] led the Beverly men.[19]

PETER[2] belonged to a troop of horse in Beverly.[3] He lived on the property granted to his deceased father.[19a] This land was continuously in the possession of the male line of the family[13] until 1898 and perhaps longer. He left an estate valued[13] at £969, which included slaves.[2]

The only child of PETER[2] WOODBURY and his first wife, Abigail Batchelder, was[3, 14]

1. Peter[3], b. December 12, 1666, at Beverly;[15] d. January 8, 1706–7; m. November 15, 1692, Mary[3] Dodge (Edward[2], RICHARD[1]).[16]

The children of PETER[2] and SARAH (DODGE) WOODBURY, all born at Beverly, were[1, 3, 14, 17]

ii. SARAH[3], b. December 12, 1668; d. February 17, 1747, at Beverly; m. there, February 20, 1689, JONATHAN[2] RAYMOND[14, 25] [see Raymond, p. 699].
iii. Abigail[3], b. April 13, 1671; m. August 9, 1694, John Sampson[18] or Lamson.[1]
iv. Anna[3], bap. May 24, 1674; d. 1769; m. November 29, 1694, John[3] Herrick (Joseph[2], HENRY[1]).[32]
v. Martha[3], bap. May 27, 1677; m. May 31, 1693, Ichabod Brown.
vi. Jerusha[3], bap. February 8, 1680; m. March 28, 1698, George[2] Raymond (WILLIAM[1]).
vii. Josiah[3], b. June 15, 1682; d. July 26, 1746; m. April 9 (29), 1708, Lydia[4] Herrick (JOSEPH[3], HENRY[2], HENRY[1]).[32]
viii. Rebecca[3], b. December 25, 1684; m. Joseph Corning.
ix. Priscilla[3], b. June 23, 1687; m. January 15, 1706, Richard[2] Ober (RICHARD[1]).

REFERENCES

1. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 257–68.
1a. Supplement to Notes on Joseph Kellogg, J. P. Kellogg, 1899, p. 12.
2. Sketch of John Page Woodbury, C. J. H. Woodbury, 1911, pp. 5–7; History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1898, I, 681–2.
2a. History of Antrim, N. H., W. R. Cochrane, 1880, pp. 775–6; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XIII, 137.
3. Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 53–63.
4. History of Gloucester, Mass., J. J. Babson, 1860, pp. 42–3.
5. Conant Family, F. O. Conant, 1887, pp. 103–8.
6. Essex Institute Historical Collections, I, 51; XXIV, 1–42.
7. Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, I, 76, 145, 156, 220, 236, 250.
8. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 10.
9. Savage, IV, 634–6.
10. Vital Records of Salem, Mass., II, 441; IV, 487.
11. History of Mount Vernon, N. H., G. J. Smith, 1907, pt. II, p. 172.
12. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 8.
13. Batchelder Genealogy, F. C. Pierce, 1898, pp. 348–9, 353–6.
14. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 371–2, 383–4, 388, 391, 393; II, 257, 349, 350, 353, 541, 616.
15. Early Town Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, p. 2.
15a. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, 83, 94–6.
16. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, Vol. 1, p. 25, 44.
17. Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 144–5.
18. History of Sutton, Mass., W. A. Benedict, 1878, pp. 748–9.
19. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 680, 690, 745.
19a. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., VIII, 323–4.
20. New England Register, II, 238.
21. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 21.
22. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXIV, 35, 38, 39.
23. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, p. 110.
24. Ibid., p. 20.
25. New England Register, VII, 322; Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly, XIII, pp. 36–7.
26. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 262–3; Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 14, 20, 87, 110; Savage, IV, 635.
27. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., IV, 38; V, 417, 436; VI, 172, 345.
28. Ibid., I, 29, 33.
29. History of New England, W. Hubbard, 1848, pp. 106–10; Prince's Chronicles, 1826, pp. 249–50.
30. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., I, 3–29.
31. Cyclopaedia of American Government, A. B. Hart, 1914, II, 406.
32. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, pp. 19, 134, 151, 210, 237.
33. New England Register, XLIX, 249–50; Water's Gleanings, II, 1001–2.

WOODBURY (William)

[SEE CHART FACING PAGE 823]

WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY, the younger of the two emigrant brothers from whom we descend, came to New England with his wife and children from the vicinity of South Petherton, co. Somerset, England, where his marriage took place and where his older children were baptized.[1] He very probably crossed the ocean in 1628 with his brother JOHN[1] [vide supra], who was then returning from his mission to England,[2] though some think that WILLIAM[1] came in 1628 with John Endicott, but it was surely in or before 1630 for both WILLIAM[1] and JOHN[1] removed, in that year, from the main settlement at Salem to what is now Beverly. WILLIAM[1] had two early grants of forty acres each and several other tracts subsequently. He settled near the seashore on Mackerel Cove at what is now called Woodbury Point[3] [see map on p. 830], and is said to have built there, about 1630, a large, double oak-framed structure called the "garrison house" which stood until about 1850, and timbers of which are believed to have been incorporated later in buildings now existent. An old resident says that this was "built with loopholes and scuttles, open underneath."[7]

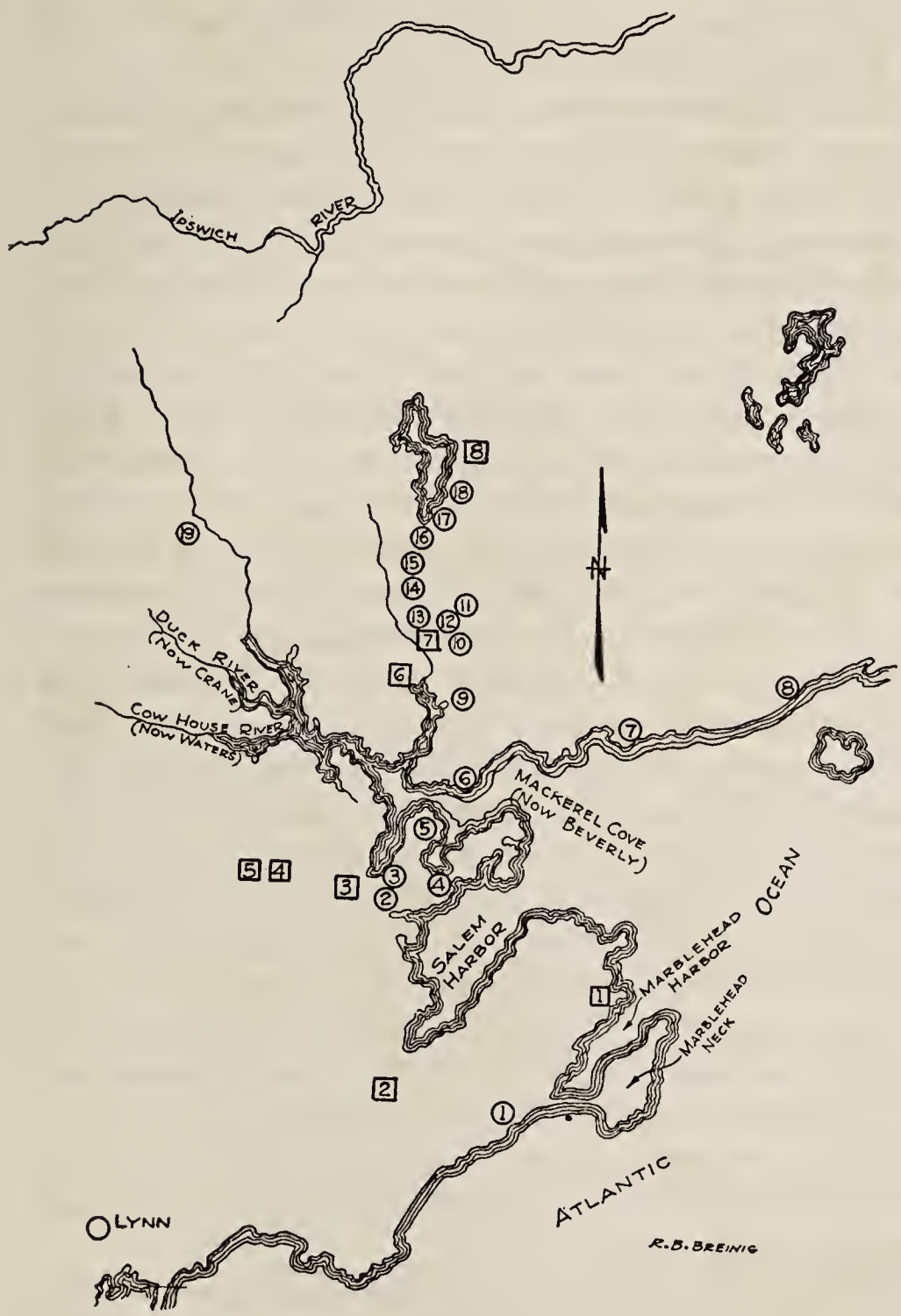
It was agreed, in 1636–7, that WILLIAM[1], in consideration of "laying downe* a twoe acre Lott in the Towne, is to haue a pcell of marsh lying before his X acre Lott, & so much of vpland ground att the other end as to mak him leuell wth other men. . . ."[5a] He was listed as the head of a family of ten persons in about 1637 and was granted land in proportion.[5a] In 1640 he and one other were appointed to keep a portion of the herd and were to have £36 for it. They were "to begin to keepe them the 6th day of the 2^{d} moneth. And their tyme of keeping of them to end, the 15th day of the 9th moneth. They are to driue out the Cattell when the Sun is halfe an hower high, & to bring them in when the sun is halfe an hower high." The owners were to bring the cattle to, and take them from, a central pen, from which the "keeps" drove them, and to which they returned them. If an owner failed

*Giving up, for other use, a lot which had been assigned him.

DETAIL OF SALEM, MARBLEHEAD, BEVERLY, MASSACHUSETTS, SHOWING GEOGRAPHICAL NAMES

[See opposite page]

1. Gov. Winthrop's party landed here, 1630.
2. Forefather's Rock and Roger Conant's First Home Place. Here the Cape Ann people landed at first settlement of Salem.
3. Salthouse Point.



Various early home locations; in this volume

1. JOHN[1] DEVEREAUX
2. HUGH[1] LASKIN
3. JOHN[1] WOODBURY
4, 5 & 11. ROGER[1] CONANT
6 & 7. WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY
8. NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY
9. ANDREW[1] ELIOTT
10 & 13. WILLIAM[1] DODGE
12. HENRY[1] HERRICK
14. CAPT. WILLIAM[1] RAYMOND
15. THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS
16. JOHN[1] RAYMOND
17. PETER[2] WOODBURY
18. ISAAC[1] HULL
19. HENRY HERRICK

Various early home locations, in Volume I of this work

1. JOHN[1] COIT
2. EMANUEL DOWNING [Uncle of an ancestress]
3. ROBERT[1] MOULTON
4 & 5. THOMAS GARDNER
6. BENJAMIN[2] BALCH
7. JOHN[1] BALCH
8. FREEBORN[3] BALCH

DETAIL OF SALEM, MARBLEHEAD, BEVERLY, MASSACHUSETTS, SHOWING ANCESTRAL HOMES AND CORRESPONDING WITH MAP ON OPPOSITE PAGE

to get his stock to this place on time, he was obliged to "keep" it that day himself and to pay any damage it might cause.[5a]

WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY was plaintiff in 1640, at the Salem Court, against "Wm Jygls" [Giles?]. He was on the grand jury in 1643, 1644 and 1647 and petitioned, in July of the latter year, with other inhabitants* of Mackerel Cove, that they might be exempt from military "watching" at Salem.[5] This matter was referred to the General Court and, in October, following, they were so released excepting in time of danger.[7]

He became a freeman[4] on June 2, 1641, and was a committee of one to receive donations from his neighborhood for John Moore in 1643. Each family was requested to give one-half peck of corn or as much more as its circumstances permitted.[5a] He was one of several appointed in 1646 to "lay out the way" between the ferry at Salem and the head of Jeffrey's Creek.[7] Evidently he had other occupations than that of agriculture for a letter addressed to him, and to JOHN[1] BALCH, by Tristram Dolliver, of co. Dorset, England, shows that WILLIAM[1] was in London in 1647 and he received a power of attorney from this correspondent in 1652.[6]

The will of JOHN[1] BALCH, made in 1648, asks his "loveing frends," including "WILLIAM WOODBERIE," to be the overseers.[8] WILLIAM[1] was on the jury of trials in 1649 and, with his son, NICHOLAS[2], and others, was sued for trespass by John Thorndike later in that year but the matter was evidently of little moment for the case was withdrawn.[8] In 1654 Captain Thomas Lothrop with his company, including many Beverly men, took part in the expedition against St. John's and Port Royal, Canada. The pilots of two of the sloops carrying his soldiers were[9, 10, 11, 13, 37] WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY and Humphrey[2] Woodbury, both of Beverly. Depositions were made in 1661 by Jeffrey Massey, aged about seventy years, and by NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY, about forty, that the clay pit was "in bounds of a 20 acres long since granted to WILLIAM WOODBURY and widow Brane."[12]

In the early days nearly all communication between settlements in this vicinity was by water instead of by land since the territory was so heavily wooded and the streams and bays so numerous. It is related that the location of the first direct road established in this vicinity was decided by a heifer "from the Woodbury farm." This animal, for the sake of pasturage, was being driven from Woodbury's Point to the meadow land at the head of Bass River by a circuitous trail along the shore, the only route then in use.

* Including[5] his brother-in-law Nicholas[1] Patch.

She broke away and escaped into the woods and astonished her driver by reaching home before he did. Her trail disclosed a more direct, yet passable, route and it was subsequently used for travel.[7] Thus this neighborhood can lay claim to a distinction like that of Boston which has its far-famed "cowpaths."

A pleasing tribute has been paid to the character of this family in the following words: "Few enterprises of great pith and moment were set on foot in the colony except a Woodbury was of the party, and they seem to have been ready early and late, whether in humble or conspicuous stations and whatever might betide, to bear a man's part."[13]

WILLIAM[1] joined the Church at Salem on December 29, 1639, and his wife, ELIZABETH, did so on October 21, 1640, and both were original members of the Beverly Church when it was formed[1, 14, 15] in 1667. On September 23, 1670, they conveyed the dwelling house they then occupied, with fourteen acres of land in Beverly,[1] to their son, NICHOLAS[2].

WILLIAM[1] was born about 1589 in England and died January 29, 1676–7, aged about 88 years, at Beverly.[1, 16, 17] He married at South Petherton, co. Somerset, England, January 29, 1616–7, ELIZABETH PATCH.[1, 18a]* The will of

* A brief consideration of the immediate relationship[43a to f] of ELIZABETH[1] PATCH in both Old and New England will be constructive. Her father[43a] was NICHOLAS PATCH, a church warden of South Petherton, who married first at that place, on January 28, 1577–8, Christian Denman [buried there December 7, 1579]; married secondly, about 1579–80, JANE (——) [buried there May 12, 1633]; and was, himself, buried at that place on December 25, 1637. Among the children of NICHOLAS and JANE (——) PATCH, all baptized there, were

(a) ELIZABETH[1], bap. April 16, 1594; d. after[17] January 29, 1676–7, probably at Beverly, Mass. She married first at South Petherton, January 29, 1616–7, WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY, and emigrated with him to New England. She is said[43c] to have married secondly at Beverly on March 12, 1678–9, John Walker, though in that report she may have been confused with Elizabeth[3] Woodbury (Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]), b. 1657, who is said[3] to have married (——) Walker of Boston.

(b) Nicholas[1], bap. June 26, 1597, at South Petherton; m. there on September 1, 1623, Elizabeth Owley or Owsley. He d. at Beverly, Mass., before[43f] November 26, 1673. Among their children were[43a]

  I. John[2], bap. December 26, 1623, at South Petherton; m. Elizabeth Brackenbury and resided at Salem and Beverly.

  II. James[2], bap. September 18, 1626, at South Petherton; d. August 10, 1658, at Beverly, Mass.; m. about 1646 his first cousin, Hannah[2] Woodbury (WILLIAM[1]), who m. secondly, after his death, Mark Haskell of Ipswich.[43a]

  III. Thomas[2], b. (—); d. at Wenham, Mass., February 15, 1721–2, aged 83; m. Mary[2] Scott (Thomas[1]), whose sister, Abigail[2] Scott, m. Hanniel[1] Bosworth [brother of our DORCAS (BOSWORTH) CLARK, see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

(c) Joan, bap. March 14, 1601–2. It was perhaps she who m. at South Petherton on January 5, 1631–2, an Andrew Eliott who was probably a near relative of our ANDREW[1] ELIOTT who was baptized in 1627 at East Coker only a few miles from South Petherton.

Agnes, the second wife and widow of JOHN[1] BALCH, is called[43c] a member of the Patch family. Depositions relative to a will of hers which was presented to the court in November, 1657, by her stepson and administrator, BENJAMIN[2] BALCH "of Beverly," were made by various people, viz., "Widow ANIS WOODBERY [widow of our JOHN[1]], Nicholas Patch, her brother and his wife [if the pronoun "her" refers to the testatrix, it strengthens the claim that she was a Patch, but if it refers to widow ANIS WOODBURY, just mentioned, the relationship must be explained by the fact that her brother-in-law, WILLIAM[1] WOODBURY, married ELIZABETH[1] PATCH, sister of the deponent], John Hill and his wife Abigail Hill [son-in-law and daughter of JOHN[1] WOODBURY], RACHILL RAYMENT [born SCRUGGS and married JOHN[1] RAYMOND], Hanah Woodbery [probably daughter of JOHN[1]] and John Grover."[44]

WILLIAM[1] was dated June 5, 1663, proved[1, 16, 17] June 26, 1677, and included a bequest to NICHOLAS[2]. The inventory of his estate showed property valued[17] at £45–11–02, but he had earlier deeded to his children most of his holdings.

The children of WILLIAM[1] and ELIZABETH (PATCH) WOODBURY, the first three, and perhaps four, baptized at South Petherton, England, and the others in New England, were[1, 17, 18, 23, 26, 40]

I. NICHOLAS[2], see following.
II. William[2], bap. May 7, 1620; d. between November 22, 1667, and March 31, 1668; m., prob. about 1660, Judith (—) [erroneously called[20] Haskell, but it was William[3] (Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]) who m. 1676, Hannah Haskell and that man's son William[4] who m. about 1705 a Judith (—)].[28a, 33, 35] He was a mariner. After his death his widow m., on August 20, 1668, as his second wife, JOHN[1] RAYMOND [see Raymond, p. 698]. Details of the family of William[2] and Judith will be found in references[3, 19, 20, 21].
III. Andrew[2], bap. March 9, 1622–3; d. after 1664 and perhaps[40] in 1685; m., before 1664, Mary Cockerell[22] [daughter of William and Elizabeth].
IV. Hugh[2], d. after June 5, 1663; m. at Salem, December, 1650, Mary Dixey (William). In 1697–9 he was living in Bristol County.
V. Hannah[2], b. ". . . 28 . . ."; d. 1703; m. 1st, about 1646, her cousin,[1] James[2] Patch (Nicholas[1]); m. 2nd, between August 10, 1658, and June 5, 1663, Mark Haskell,[16, 17, 17a]* who d. before March 30, 1669.
VI. Isaac[2], a trade pass was issued[47] to him by New York on October 12, 1664, as master of the "'Samuel' of Salem in New England, to the Oronoque River als Albemarle to traffic for tobacco." He d. intestate and without issue before[45] August 30, 1697 [and perhaps before[1] November 20, 1694] owning a share of land in Freetown vicinity. His estate was administered by his brother Hugh[2] Woodbury. He is erroneously said[40] to have m. October 9, 1671, Mary "Wilkins," meaning Wilkes [see Isaac[3], infra].
VII. Nathaniel[2], bap.[40] December 11, 1639; d. before 1663.

NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY (*William*[1]) was baptized April 9, 1618, at South Petherton, co. Somerset, England,[1] and died May 10 [or 16 or 19], 1686, at Beverly.[18] He was married[26] [at Charlestown, Massachusetts Bay Colony?], before 1651, to ANNA[2] PALGRAVE [see Palgrave, p. 623].

He emigrated with his father about 1628 and was granted a ten-acre lot in Salem in 1637, besides other tracts later.[25] NICHOLAS[2] is sometimes referred to as a yeoman[28] although his interests were extensive and rather varied, including shipping investments, lands in Great Yarmouth, England, and several farms in New England.[20] One of the latter, near Manchester, he leased in 1667 to John Elletrap and was obliged to sue for £15 balance due

* Mark Haskell, called of Ipswich, was probably[17a] the younger brother of WILLIAM[1] HASKELL [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

on the rent.[19, 27] James[2] Patch (Nicholas[1]), in his will of 1658, called NICHOLAS[2] WOODBURY "brother" as did also John[2] Patch in a like document.

In 1661 NICHOLAS[2] deposed that he was aged about forty years and that his father had long since owned part of the clay pit.[27] He was fined ten shillings for absence from grand jury[27] in November, 1663, and was made a full member of the Church at Beverly on December 8, 1667, of which organization his wife, ANNA, was one of the founders.[14] In 1666 and 1668 he was constable for "Cape Ann Side," now Beverly, and, in the latter year, was also a tax collector.[30] He had a mill in 1673 at Mackerel Cove,[27] on Patch or Thissel Brook, so called from early settlers of those names;[29] he took the oath of freeman that same year,[27] and was on a jury[27] of inquest in 1675.

He and his brother Isaac[2] purchased[45] a "whole freeman's share" of land in Freetown and Swanzey vicinity, probably in August, 1673. They were equal owners and held the land throughout their respective lives; but in 1697 when both had died (Isaac[2] intestate and without issue) the court appointed their brother Hugh[2], then resident in Bristol County, as administrator of the estate of Isaac[2], and also issued a citation requiring the presence of Joseph[3] Woodbury and Isaac[3] Woodbury, sons of the deceased NICHOLAS[2] at Bristol Court on October 30, 1697, to claim their share of their father's right. In compliance with this order Isaac[3] appeared, but the other heirs sent as their attorneys Thomas West and Philip Fowles. As a consequence an agreement for division of the land was then signed in behalf of the other heirs of NICHOLAS[2], namely, Mary (Eliott) Woodbury, widow of Nicholas[3], deceased; Joseph[3] Woodbury; EMMA (ELIOTT) WOODBURY, widow of ANDREW[3] deceased; and Benjamin[3] Woodbury.[45] Why our ABIGAIL (WOODBURY) OBER was omitted is not evident.

The will of NICHOLAS[2] was dated August 1, 1685, and proved May 19, 1686, in Boston.[1, 20, 36] He bequeathed his lands in Great Yarmouth, co. Norfolk, England, to his wife, ANNA, who doubtless had inherited and brought them to him. The inventory[20] of his estate totaled £2573, and the beneficiaries, in addition to his wife were their seven children, including ABIGAIL[3] and ANDREW[3]. The widow ANNA survived him fifteen years and her will[46] dated October 6, 1696, and proved in 1702 named sons Joseph[3] and Isaac[3] and daughters Joanna Plummer and ABIGAIL OBER as well as her husband, RICHARD[1] OBER. The inventory of her estate which was taken November 7, 1701 and submitted by her son Isaac[3] showed a bountiful supply of household goods and bedding and over £54 in money. The mother's

apparel was divided between her daughters and the custom of making gifts of gloves to sorrowing friends is evident from the fact that of the £19 6 11 submitted as the cost of her funeral nearly five and a half pounds was spent for the purchase of gloves.

The executor reported[46] the following expenditures among others:

"pd. Mr. Lyndall for gloves	4	06	03
To Mr. Woodward for 1 dozen gloves		18	
To Jacob Griggs pr. 2 pr. Gloves		03	02
To Wid. Wood for nursing		12	
To Mary Thorndike for nursing		09	
To Joseph Pressey for coffin		08	
To Simon Lovet for digging grave		06	
To William Eliott for one barrell Sydar		14	
To Mr. Turner 1 qr Cask of Wine		02	05"

The children of NICHOLAS[2] and ANNA (PALGRAVE) WOODBURY, all born at Salem or Beverly, through two of whom we descend, were[1, 14, 31, 40]

I. Abigail[3], bap. December 4, 1653; d. young.
II. Joan[3], bap. March, 1653, at Salem;[1] m. December 5, 1670,[40] Samuel Plummer.
III. Nicholas[3], b. 1654; d. young.
IV. ABIGAIL[3], b. August, 1655, at Salem, bap. October 28, 1655, at that place;[31] d. January 28, 1741–2, aged 86 years, 5 months, at Beverly; m. there,[18] December 26, 1671, RICHARD[1] OBER [see Ober, p. 606].
V. Nicholas[3], b. "last of July 1657" at Salem; d. October 13, 1691, in the Barbadoes; m. June 4, 1684, Mary[2] Eliott (ANDREW[1]).
VI. Joseph[3], b. September 20, 1659, bap.[1] November 20, 1665, at Salem; d. October 14, 1714, at Manchester;[28] m. December 19, 1687, Elizabeth West.
VII. Isaac[3], b. 1661, bap. November 20, 1665; d. October, 1733, at Ipswich; [erroneously said[40] to have m. Mary Wilkes, who in truth[3, 41] was wife[24] of Isaac[3] Woodbury (Humphrey[2], JOHN[1])]; m. Elizabeth[3] Herrick (HENRY[2], HENRY[1]).[3, 14, 38, 41, 42]
VIII. ANDREW[3], see following.
IX. Benjamin[3], bap. April 26, 1668;[1, 28a] d. bef. November 27, 1698; m. March 23, 1694, Mary[4] Woodbury (Isaac[3] and Mary Wilkes, Humphrey[2], JOHN[1]); she m. 2nd [as widow of Benjamin[3]], July 18, 1709, Michael Farley of Ipswich.

ANDREW[3] WOODBURY (*Nicholas*[2], *William*[1]) was baptized November 20, 1665, with his two next older brothers, Isaac[3] and Joseph[3], at Salem, and died probably after[33] June 3, 1694, and presumably[1] before June, 1695, although his widow, EMME, was not granted a certificate of appointment as administratrix of his estate until July 19, 1698, at Salem.[32] He married at Beverly, about 1688, EMME[2] ELIOTT[34, 39] [see Eliott, p. 334].

He owned the covenant in Beverly Church on April 20, 1690, and "EME," his wife, was "admitted to ye Lords table" on[14] June 3, 1694. Their son,

Andrew[4], was, at his death, called a child of "Capt. ANDREW and EMMA," though circumstances force the belief that this title was assigned the father because of marine service rather than military. If ANDREW[3] did follow the sea it might account for the absence of a definite death date for him. His widow married,[1, 18] at Beverly, July 23, 1702, the Rev. Thomas Blowers, pastor of the church at that place, by whom she had several children. Her father bequeathed property to his "daughter EMME Blower and her son, Andrew Woodbury," also to his grandchildren, "JOANNA and Andrew Woodbury children of his son-in-law ANDREW WOODBURY deceased."[20, 34]

The children of ANDREW[3] and EMME (ELIOTT) WOODBURY, both born at Beverly, were[14, 18]

I. JOANNA[4], b. Sept. 15 [or 13], 1689,[31, 33] bap. April 20, 1690, at Beverly; d. there, Oct. 30, 1738; m. at Beverly, Dec. 1, 1709, HENRY[4] HERRICK [see Herrick, p. 430].

II. Andrew[4], b. Nov. 14, 1691, bap. Nov. 22, 1691, at Beverly; d. Mar. 7, 1757, there; m. at Beverly, August 19, 1736, Joanna[5] Dodge[37] (Joshua[4], Joshua[3], WILLIAM[2], WILLIAM[1]).

REFERENCES

1. New England Register, LXXI, pp. 168–70; Supplement to Notes on Joseph Kellogg, J. P. Kellogg, 1899, pp. 13–5; Warren, Jackson and Allied Families, B. W. Davis, 1903, pp. 60, 83, 113–5.
2. History of Sutton, Mass., W. A. Benedict, 1878, pp. 748–9.
3. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 259–64.
4. New England Register, III, 188.
5. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., I, 24, 57, 62, 118, 129.

5a. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 25, 39, 43, 72, 97, 99, 102, 120.

6. New England Register, XXXI, 312–3.
7. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 680, 684.
8. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., I, 144, 169, 181.
9. History of Beverly, Mass., E. M. Stone, 1843, pp. 25–6, 250.
10. History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 682–3.
11. General Register of the Society of Colonial Wars, 1922, p. 549.
12. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., II, 323.
13. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXIV, 40; History of Essex County, Mass., D. H. Hurd, 1888, I, 682.
14. Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 7, 9, 20, 28, 31, 106, 108
15. Annals of Salem, Mass., J. B. Felt, 1845, I, 173.
16. Essex Institute Historical Collections, II, 273–4; New England Register, LXXI, 168–70; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 270; II, 251–2.
17. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., VI, 315.

17a. Ibid., IV, 122; Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXII, 134–7.

18. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 372; II, 18, 157, 342, 344, 515, 605, 617.

18a. New England Register, LIV, 224.

19. Early Town Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 3; Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., IV, 10, 18; VIII, 323–4; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., II, 114–5; Savage, IV, 636.
20. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XL, 215; Woodbury Family, C. L. Woodbury, 1904, pp. 64, 124, 129, 162–3.
21. History of Gloucester, Mass., J. J. Babson, 1860, p. 256; Notes and Additions to the History of Gloucester, 2nd Ser., J. J. Babson, 1891, pp. 83–4; Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 274–5; II, 539; Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 86, 89, 95–6, 98, 101, 105–6; Early Town Records of Beverly, Mass. A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 76; Baptisms of

the First Church of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1903, p. 10; Lane Genealogy, J. H. Fitts, 1902, III, 192.
22. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., III, 162; Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 357, 444.
23. Savage, IV, 635.
24. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 263–4.
25. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1868, I, 65, 170, 191.
26. Charlestown Genealogies and Estates, T. B. Wyman, 1879, II, 1049.
27. Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Mass., II, 108, 323; III, 109; V, 221, 255; VI, 115; VIII, 323.
28. History of North Brookfield, Mass., J. H. Temple, 1887, pp. 795–6.
28a. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 115, 150, 351, 353.
29. History of Essex County, Mass., 1878, 68.
30. Town Records of Salem, Mass., 1913, II, 37, 69, 93, 95.
31. Vital Records of Salem, Mass., II, 440–1.
32. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XLI, 191.
33. Early Town Records of Beverly, Mass., A. A. Galloupe, 1907, p. 24, 60.
34. New England Register, XXIII, 337.
35. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XXXV, 261, 265; Records of the First Church of Beverly, Mass., W. P. Upham, 1905, pp. 60, 95, 96, 98, 100, 105, 106.
36. Essex Institute Historical Collections, XL, 215.
37. Dodge Family, J. T. Dodge, 1894, I, 27, 33–4, 47, 56, 93, 345.
38. Herrick Genealogy, L. C. Herrick, 1885, p. 134.
39. Eliot Family, W. G. Eliot, 1887, pp. 21–2.
40. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, p. 402.
41. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 384, 387–9, 391–2; II, 617; Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, III, 179–80.
42. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., I, 388, 390, 394.
43a. New England Register, LXXI, 168–70.
43b. Vital Records of Beverly, Mass., II, 321.
43c. History of Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924, I, p. 402.
43d. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., I, 118.
43e. Balch Genealogy, G. B. Balch, 1897, pp. 6–8.
43f. Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Mass., V, 255.
44. Probate Records of Essex County, Mass., I, 263–4.
45. New England Register, LXIII, 81, 329–30.
46. Essex County, Mass., Probate Records, Docket 30349; Book 307, 199–200, 347–8; Book 308, 37–9.
47. New York State Library Bulletin. History No. 1, 1898, p. 61.

WOODWARD

* † [894] Henry Woodward c.1607–1685	m	Elizabeth . . . –1690
‡ † [446] John Taylor c.1641–1704	m 1662	Thankful Woodward prob. c.1644–living 1724
† § [222] Samuel Parsons 1652–1734	m 2nd c.1690–1	Rhoda Taylor 1669–1711
# § [110] John Coe 1693–1751	m 1715	Hannah Parsons 1699–1760
§ [54] Joseph Hull 1716–1785–6	m 1746	"Sibylla" Coe c.1723–1785
‖ ¶ ⊙ [26] Levi Chapman 1740–prob. aft. 1805	m 1767	Elizabeth Hull 1747–aft.1820
‖ ¶ [12] Joshua Shipman 1767–1823	m 1786 or 1787	Sybil Chapman 1768–1828
‖ ♁ ¶ [6] Charles Shipman 1787–1860	m 2nd 1814	Joanna Herrick Bartlett 1793–1870
♦ ¶ [2] Beman Gates 1818–1894	m 1841	Betsey Sibyl Shipman 1816–1895
¶ Rufus R. Dawes 1838–1899	m 1864	Mary Beman Gates 1842–1921

* Dorchester, Mass.
† Northampton, Mass.
‡ Windsor, Conn.
§ Durham, Conn.
‖ Saybrook, Conn.
¶ Marietta, Ohio.
♁ Athens, Ohio.
♦ Montague and Amherst, Mass.
\# Stratford, Conn.
⊙ Salem, Ohio.

WOODWARD

HENRY[1] WOODWARD* came to New England[4, 6] in the "James," Captain Taylor, Master. They left England on June 22, 1635, having embarked at Bristol on May 23, 1635.[1, 5] There were about one hundred other passengers on board, including the Reverend Richard Mather† and the Reverend Richard Denton. Although all the passengers were on board, the departure of the ship was delayed for a month, and after a long voyage of fifty-five days they landed in Boston August 17, following.

Two days before they landed an exceedingly severe storm arose. The "James" lay at anchor off the Isles of Shoals and the "Angel Gabriel" [which had kept the "James" company for about two weeks, had become separated, but arrived about the same time off the coast of New England] was off Pemaquid, Maine, when the great storm of August 15 struck them. The "James" was torn from her anchors and obliged to put to sea, but after two days of terrible battling with storm and wave she reached the harbor with "her sails rent in sunder, and split in pieces, as if they had been rotten ragges." The "Angel Gabriel" became a total wreck; passengers, cattle and goods were all cast upon the angry waves and several lives were lost. Among those who reached the shore with their lives were[11] JOHN[1] COGSWELL and his family [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

Reverend Richard Mather, a passenger on the "James," kept a journal

*He was called son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Tynen) Woodward of Much Woolton, co. Lancaster, England, and is said to have been baptized on March 22, 1607, in Childwall Parish of that county.[1, 2, 3] The marriage date of his parents is given[2] as May 23, 1592. Much Woolton is about five miles southeast of Liverpool. It is asserted that HENRY[1] had a brother John who came with him to Massachusetts, became a Quaker, was banished and went to Rhode Island and is supposed to have gone later to Virginia.[11]

†HENRY[1] settled at Dorchester, as did the Rev. Richard Mather; remained there for about twenty years and then removed to Northampton, as did also the Rev. Eleazer Mather, son of the Rev. Richard. It seems highly suggestive of relationship between the two families that a William Mather, of Westhoughton, co. Lancaster [which is quite near Winwich of that county where the Rev. Richard Mather and his forbears lived], who was one generation older than the Rev. Richard, named in his will Arthur, Henry, David, James, Thurston and Margaret Woodward, had a Richard Woodward witness that document and a James Woodward take his inventory[5] in 1602.

describing the voyage. It is such a quaint and interesting document that we cannot forbear quoting somewhat at length:[1a]

"We were y^{t} set sayle together y^{t} morning five shippes, three bound for Newfoundland, viz: the Diligence, a ship of 150 tunne, the Mary, a small ship of 80 tunne, and the Bess (or Elizabeth), and two bound for New England, viz: The Angel Gabriel, of 240 tunne, the James, of 220 tunne.

"On the evening of Tuesday, June 23, they "lost sight of the 3 ships bound for Newfoundland, but the master of the James thought it best to stay for the Angel Gabriel, being bound for New England as wee were, rather than to leave her and go with the other three.

"The Angel Gabriel is a strong ship & well furnished with fourteene or sixteene pieces of ordnance, and therefore our seamen rather desired her company; but she is slow in sailing, and therefore wee went sometimes with three sayles less than wee might have done, y^{t} so we might not overgoe her.

"In the afternoon, June 29, "Captayne Taylor went on board ye Angel, and took Mathew Michel & mee [Mather] along with him." They found there had been much seasickness on the Angel Gabriel and two cases of 'small pockes well recovered again.'

"Wee were intreated to stay supp, there with their Master, &c., and had good cheese, mutton boyled & rosted, rosted turkey, good sacke, &c.

"Saturday, July 4, 1635. This day ye sea was very rough, and we saw ye truth of y^{t} Scripture, Ps. cvii. Some were very seasicke, but none could stand or go upon ye decke because of the tossing & tumbling of the ship. This day we lost sight of the Angel sayling slowly behind us, and we never saw her again any more."

"August 14th. But y^{s} evening by moone light about 10 of ye clocke wee came to ancre at ye Iles of Shoales which are 7 or 8 Ilands, and other great rockes, and there slept sweetely y^{t} night till breake of day.

"August 15. But yet ye Lord hath not done with us, nor yet had let us see all his power, and goodnesse which he would have us take knowledge of; and therefore on Saturday morning about breake of day, ye Lord sent forth a most terrible storme of raine and easterly wind, whereby wee were in as much danger as I thinke ever people were; for wee lost in y^{t} morning three great ancres & cables; of wch cables, one having cost 50£ never had beene in any water before, two were broken by ye violence of ye waves and ye third cut by ye seamen in extremity and distress, to save ye ship and their & our lives, and w^{n} o^{r} cables and ancres were all lost, wee had no outward means of deliverance but by loosing sayle, if so bee we might get to ye sea from amongst ye Ilands & rockes where wee ancred; but ye Lord let us see y^{t} o^{r} sayles could not save us neither, no more y^{n} o^{r} cables & ancres; for by ye force of ye wind & raine ye sayles were rent in sunder & split in pieces, as if they had beene but rotten ragges, so y^{t} of ye fore sayle and sprissle-sayle there was scarce left so much as an hand breadth, y^{t} was not rent in pieces, and blown away into ye sea. So that at y^{s} time all hope y^{t} wee should be saved in regard to any outward appearance was utterly taken away, and ye rather because wee seemed to drive with full force of wind and rayne directly upon a mighty rocke standing out in sight above ye water, so y^{t} wee did but continually wayte, when wee should heave and feele ye dolefull rushing and crushing of ye ship upon ye rocke. In ye extremity and appearance of death, as distress distraction would suffer us wee cryed unto ye Lord and he was pleased to have compassion and pity upon us; for by his overruling providence & his own immediate good hand, he guided ye ship past ye rocke, asswaged ye violence of ye sea, and ye wind and raine & gave us a little respite to fit ye ship with other sayles, and sent us a fresh gale of wind . . . by wch wee went on y^{t} day in o^{r} course south west & by west towards Cape Anne. It was a day much to bee remembered, because on y^{t} day ye Lord granted us as wonderful a deliverance as I thinke ever people had, out of as apparent danger as I thinke ever people felt. I am sure o^{r} seamen confessed they never knew ye like. The Lord so imprint ye memory of it on o^{r} hearts y^{t} wee may bee ye better for it, & bee more carefull to please him and to walk uprightly before him as long as wee live; and I hope wee shall not forget ye passages of y^{t} morning untill o^{r} dying day.

"When newes was brought unto us into ye gun roome y^{t} ye danger was past, oh how o^{r} hearts did then relent and melt within us! And how we burst into teares of joy amongst o^{r} selves, in love unto o^{r} gracious God, and admiration of his kindnesse in granting to his poore servants such an extraordinary and miraculous deliverance. His holy name be blessed forever.

"August 16. This day wee went on towards Cape Anne, as ye wind would suffer, & our poore sayles further, and came within sight thereof ye other morning; which Sabbath being ye 13 wee kept on ship-board, was a marveylous pleasant-day, for a fresh gale of wind, & cleare sunshine weather. This day wee went directly before ye wind, and had delight all along ye coast as wee went, in viewing Cape Anne, ye bay of Saugust, ye bay of Salem, Marvilhead [Marblehead], Pullin point, and other places; and came to ancre at low tide in y^{e} at Nantascot, in a most pleasant harbor, like to such I had never seene, amongst a great many Ilands on every side. I was exercised on shipboard both ends of ye day. After ye evening exercise, when it was flowing tide againe, wee set sayle, and came y^{t} night to ancre againe before Boston and so rested ye night with glad & thankfull hearts y^{t} God had put an end to

o^r long journey, being 1000 leagues, y^t is 3000 miles English, over one of ye greatest seas in ye world. Now y^s o^r journey by ye goodnesse of o^r God, was very prosperous unto us every manner of way. First of all it was very safe and healthful to us; for tho: wee were in ye ship 100 passengers, besides 23 seamen, & 23 cowes and heyfers, 3 sucking calves & eight mares, yet not one of all these dyed by ye way, neither person nor cattel, but came all alive to land, and many of the cattell in better liking y^n when wee first entered ye ship; and most of ye passengers is as good health as ever and none better y^n myne owne family, and my weake wife & little Joseph as well as any other. Fevers, calentures, small pockes & such diseases as have afflicted other passengers ye Lord kept from among us, and put upon us no griefe in o^r bodyes, but a little seasicknesse in ye beginning of ye voyage; saving y^t 2 or 3 seamen had ye flux, and Rich. Beacon lost his right hand in ye last storme, and one woman and a little child of hers, towards the end of the journey, had ye scurvey, the means of which infirmity in her wee all conceyved to bee ye want of walking and stirring of her body upon ye decke; her manner being to sit much between ye deckes upon her bed, and a special means of healthfulnesse of ye passengers by ye blessing of God wee all conceyved to be much walking in ye open aire, and ye comfortable variety of o^r food; for seeing wee were not tied to ye ships diet, but did victuall o^r selves, we had no want of good and whole some beere & bread; and as o^r land-stomachs grew weary of ship diet, of salt fish & salt beefe and ye like, wee had liberty to change for other food which might sort better with o^r healthes and stomaches; and therefore sometimes wee used bacon & buttered pease, sometimes buttered bag-pudding made with curraynes and raisins, and sometimes drinke pottage of beere and Oat Meale and sometimes water pottage well buttered.

"And tho; we had two stormes by ye way, ye one upon Munday ye 3^d of August ye other on Saturday ye 15th of ye same, yet o^r gracious God (blessed and forever blessed bee his name) did save us all alive in y^m both & speedily assuaged y^m againe. Indeed ye latter of y^m was very terrible and grievous, insomuch y^t w^n wee came to land wee found many mighty trees rent in pieces in ye midst of ye bole and others turned up by ye rootes by ye fiercenesse thereof; and a barke going from ye bay to Marvilhead, with planters & seamen therein to ye number of about 23, was cast away in ye storme, and all ye people therein perished, except one man & his wife, that were spared to report ye newes. And ye Angel Gabriel being y^n at ancre at Pemmaquid, was burst in pieces and cast away in ye storme, and most of ye cattell and other goodes, with one seaman & 3 or 4 passengers did also perish therein, besides two of ye passengers y^t dyed by ye way; ye rest having y^r lives given y^m for a prey. But ye James & wee y^t were therein, with o^r cattell & goods, were all preserved alive. The Lord's name be blessed for ever.

"2^ly. It was very delightful while wee tooke pleasure & instruction in beholding ye workes & wonders of ye Almighty in ye deepe; ye sea sometimes being rough with mighty mountaynes and deepe valleys, some times again plaine & smooth like a levell meadow, and sometimes painted with variety of yellow weedes; besides it was a pleasant thing to behold ye variety of fowles & mighty fishes swimming and living in ye waters.

"3^ly. It was comfortable to us, by meanes of ye fellowship of divers godly christians in ye ship & by meanes of o^r constant serving of God morning & evening every day, ye daily duties being performed one day by Mr. Maud, another by my selfe, and ye Sabbath exercises divided (for ye most part) equally betwixt us two.

"True it is o^r journey was some what long; for tho' from Munday ye 22nd of June, wee lost sight of our ould English coast, untill Saturday ye 8th of August w^n wee made land againe at Menhiggin, it was but six weekes & 5 dayes, yet from o^r first entering ye ship in King roade, on Saturday ye 23rd of May till o^r landing at Boston in N. E. on Munday ye 17th of August, it was 12 weekes & 2 dayes. For wee lay at ancre in King Roade 11 days before wee even set sayle, & 3 dayes at Lundy, & 12 dayes at Milford, and spent 3 dayes in tacking betweene King Roade & Lundy, one day between Lundy & Milford, and 8 days betweene Menhiggin & Boston.

"Nevertheless o^r God preserved us all ye while, and wee had opportunity by these often delayes to take in more haye, aotes & frech water, and arrived in a good condition.

"Agayne let our gracious God be blessed forever. Amen."[1a]

HENRY[1] was called a physician;[4, 6] became a member of the Dorchester Church as early[1] as 1639, and a freeman[7] on May 10, 1643. An interesting sidelight on public opinion and conditions in Dorchester in 1657 is seen in "A memorandum that the Grand Jury were with us to speak with us about some things which they thought were liable to be presented, as namely this, that the catechising of children is neglected in our town."[6] One form of public service which HENRY[1] rendered is shown in the report that "At a meeting of the selectmen 12:4:1657 Thos. Bird brought a note from HENRY[1]

WOODWARD, Constable, and demanded twenty shillings for a wolf that his son Samuel Greenway killed within our bounds the 5: 1: 5 which we do order that they shall be paid the next town rate."[6]

In pursuance of a grant made on October 18, 1659, by the General Court of Boston, the selectmen of Dorchester, on November 14, following, "impowered William Clarke and HENRY WOODWARD to serch and stake out a Farme of 1000 acres of land . . . for the vse of a scoole. . . ."[6] Calling himself "husbandman" of Dorchester, HENRY[1] deeded, on November 10, 1659, to WILLIAM[1] SUMNER* eight acres of land in that town and the instrument was witnessed by ROGER[1] CLAPP* and acknowledged by HENRY[1] and his wife ELIZABETH four days later.[7] This sale was doubtless preliminary to, or closely preceding, his removal to Northampton which certainly took place in 1659, for he and his companions had received generous land grants in the latter town in June of that year.[9]

The method of travel in the early days is well depicted in an account of the family of William Clarke who, with HENRY[1] WOODWARD and family, and that of one other man, journeyed two thirds of the length of the state—a formidable undertaking: "He moved his family to Northampton in 1659. His wife rode on horseback with two baskets called panniers slung across the horse, carrying one boy in each basket and one in her lap, her husband, fifty years old, proceeding on foot,"[8] "A journey of nearly as much importance as would now [1859] be one to New Orleans, and much more dangerous."[6]

The standing of HENRY[1] WOODWARD and his friend Clarke in this new community is plainly seen by the fact that they were each awarded twelve-acre home lots, side by side [extending from the highway on the east, to Mill River on the west†], which were larger than those enjoyed by any of the other residents, and they received about one hundred acres of meadow‡ apiece besides.[9] These two men, with four others who came at about the same time, "brought new life and energy to the enfeebled town. Their coming was like the infusion of new blood into the veins of an exhausted patient. From the day of their arrival, these men took a leading part in the management of town affairs. Their energy, independence and public spirit soon wrought a

*The Sumner and Clapp families are discussed in DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I.

†These two lots, that of HENRY[1] WOODWARD being the most southerly, joined each other at or near the present location of the main building of Smith College.[9]

‡The meadow given HENRY[1] WOODWARD lay "where the Mill and Manhan rivers meet" having the former for its eastern and the latter for its southern boundary. Manhan river has not materially changed its course since that time.[9]

marked improvement. All of them were at once put into the harness, and from this date, the advance of the settlement was steady and vigorous."[9]

Though church services had been held regularly, there had been no religious organization at Northampton until June, 1661, when the Reverend Eleazer Mather, who had come from Dorchester, was ordained,[6] and a church organization was brought into being. At his ordination, the Dorchester Church sent as "Messengers" Deacon Edward[1] Clapp, elder brother of our ROGER[1] CLAPP, and THOMAS[1] TILESTON [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].

The original seven male members, with the Reverend Mr. Mather, were called the "Pillars of the Church," but the term in this case[9] appears to have been complimentary and honorary rather than official as it was in New Haven Colony [see Appendix, p. 859]. The fact remains, however, that these "Pillars" did serve repeatedly in various town offices; that was, doubtless, because of their personal ability and dependability rather than because of a union of matters religious and civic. Four of these "Pillars," including HENRY[1] WOODWARD, had been dismissed in April preceding from Dorchester Church; a few months later, the wives of three of them, including ELIZABETH (——) WOODWARD, were similarly recommended to the Northampton body.[6, 7, 9] One of the children of HENRY[1] was also an early member at the latter place. The town in 1663 engaged Mr. Eliot to assist their minister and voted[9] "y[t] brother WOODWARD bee hyred to fetch upp Mr. Eliot."

In 1663, when the Hampshire Troop of Horse was formed, HENRY[1] was chosen its Quarter Master. "A troop of horse was not to exceed 70 soldiers. Each trooper was to have a good horse, saddle, bridle, holsters, pistol or carbine and a sword. A troop had a Captain, Lieutenant, Cornet, Quartermaster, Clerk, Trumpeter and Corporals. Each trooper was obliged to keep a good horse at all times and was allowed by the Colony 5s a year."[9] The Court, however, permitted the Hampshire troop to be organized temporarily with but thirty-six men enrolled.[9]

In 1665 the country authorities made arrangements with HENRY[1] that he should keep an ordinary to sell wines and liquor and to entertain the Court which met in the town and, it is believed, in his tavern, which was situated a short distance east of the present location of Smith College Hall of Music.[9] His incumbency as tavern-keeper continued until 1681. In 1668 he was among those who signed the petition to the General Court protesting against imposts;[7] in 1672–3 he contributed eight pounds of flax to Harvard College[9]

and, in that year, with his son, he took the oath of allegiance.[7] He was several times a Commissioner, frequently a selectman and a constable and a member of the first and of subsequent tithing-boards.

Long before the Puritans crossed the sea, the office of tithing-man[12] was established in Old England, but it seems not to have been immediately recognized in the colonies. The first general law of this character in Massachusetts Bay Colony, and the one which may be considered the foundation of all similar enactments, was passed in October, 1654. "Much disorder in tyme of publicke ordinances, in the meeting howses . . . through vnreuerent carriage and behaviour of diuers young psons and others," was the reason assigned for its passage, and at that period it had no historic connection with the collection or gift of tithes. Certain men were appointed conjointly by the "officers of the congregation and the selectmen," who were to see that Sunday disturbers were properly punished. They had cognizance, not only of any disorder in the congregation, but "elsewhere near about the meeting house" and indeed had responsibility and a certain control of family life and of the morals of the neighborhood. First they were to use moral suasion and afterwards the magistrates were to take the culprits in hand. No title was applied to them at this time, but they were the first persons empowered "to p^r^vent pphanation of ye Sabboath in ye meeting howse." From this beginning was the full-fledged tithing-man, Sabbath constable, or in the finer sense "Town Father" evolved. In Northampton they were first called tithing-men in 1678 when HENRY[1] WOODWARD was appointed. His official status was "elective, patriarchal headship over a neighborhood of at least ten families" and included regulation of the Sunday congregation and prevention of mischievous boys and girls from making a disturbance. "He tapped the whispering urchin on the head, jogged the snoring deacon, tortured the ear of the somnolent female, or if the culprit was too distant, rapped sharply on the pew rail, pointing his black rod at the offender" for "The law required the tithing-man to have a 'black staffe' two feet long, tipped at one end with brass about three inches as a badge of his office."

In early times it is said that the "tithing-man's rod was tipped at one end, not with brass, but with a squirrel's tail. This end was used in awakening women. The other end was fitted with a deer's hoof, which carried sharp conviction to men and boys."

Frequently two or three tithing-men served simultaneously—usually one "at each door of the mtng hs to keep out dogs & often one sat in the gallery

to keep in boys." "They were not merely to preserve order in the meeting but also to see to it that every one went to church," in other words, they were ecclesiastical "Whippers-in." "After looking over the congregation to find if any seats were vacant, the Tithing-men would steal out and explore the horse sheds, the adjoining fields and orchards, the inns and ordinaries, and even the houses of the village, in order to search out skulkers from divine service." According to the town records of Salem, it is clear that as early as 1644, in that village at least, two men were "appointed euery Lord's day to walke forth in the time of God's worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting-howse without attending to the word or ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields, w'thout giuing good account thereof, and to take the names of such persons & to present them to the Magistrate, whereby they may be accordinglie proceeded against." In Plymouth Colony it was ordered that, in each town where Indians dwelt, every tenth Indian should be appointed by the Court of Assistants to act as tithing-man over his nine men and to report their faults and misdemeanors to a so-called "overseer" who received his commission from the Governor.

In some localities, the law provided that a cage should be set up in the market place of Boston, and in such other towns as the Courts might designate, to which all Sabbath breakers were to be consigned. There is no record of any such cage having been set up at first in Northampton, though one was ordered by the Court eighteen years afterwards. During the same year the scope of the tithing-man's duties was enlarged and he was ordered to inspect public houses of entertainment as well as private homes. In 1679 the law was once more changed and the powers and duties of these officers more fully defined and explained thus:

"And the said tything men are required diligently to inspect all houses, licensed or vnlicensed, where they shall haue notice or haue ground to suspect that any person or persons doe spend their time or estates, by night or by day, in tipling or gambling, or otherwise vnproffitably, or doe sell by retayle, wthin doores or wthout, strong drinke, wine, ale, cidar, rumn, brandey, perry, matheglin, & wthout license." They were also empowered to enter and search all such houses for liquor, to seize the same and report the names of the owners to the magistrates for punishment; to inspect the manners of all disorderly persons, and if they would not listen to admonition, the officers were to present their names to the magistrate, who would proceed against them; and to present also the names of all "stubborne and disorderly

children and servants, night walkers, typlers, Saboath breakers, by night or by day, & such as absent themselues from the publicke worship of God on the Lords dayes, or whateuer the course or practice of any person or persons whatsoeuer tending to debauchery, irreligion, prophaness, & atheisme among us."

Here is the tithing-man fully equipped, clothed with certain powers that gave him a rank second only to that of constables, but with a responsibility more intimate, since it pertained to the family and religious life of the community. He had in charge the morals of the community on week days as well as Sundays, and was authorized to deliver to the authorities for punishment certain transgressors, but with a fatherly, patriarchal oversight. The tithing-man was in the original conception of the office a person of no little consequence in the community and it was required by law that their "most prudent & discreet" men should be selected for that office.[12]

HENRY[1] WOODWARD was killed on April 7, 1685, "at the upper grist mill"[7] and the cause of the death is given both as a stroke of lightning and as an injury by the mill wheel.[1, 5, 6, 7, 8] His widow made her will the next month, but did not die before August 13, 1690. In this document she said of John[2] Woodward "He has been a dutiful and well carriaged son to me all my life."[4] All three of the daughters in this family married prominent Northampton men.

The children of HENRY[1] and ELIZABETH (——) WOODWARD, all born at Dorchester, were[1, 2, 3, 4]

I. Experience[2], b. (—); d. June 8, 1686; m. November 21, 1661, Medad[2] Pomeroy (Eltweed[1]).
II. Freedom[2], bap. 1642; d. May 17, 1681, at Northampton; m. there November 18, 1662, Jedediah Strong, son of Elder John and Abigail (Ford) Strong and grandson of our THOMAS[1] FORD [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I].
III. THANKFUL[2], b. probably about 1644; was living[4] in 1724 with her son John[3] Taylor at Norwalk, Connecticut; m. December 18, 1662, JOHN[2] TAYLOR [see Taylor, p. 787].
IV. John[2], b.[3] 1642 or[10] 1647 at Dorchester; said to have d. October 5, 1724, in 77th year at Lebanon, Connecticut [though that would make him some years younger than his wife]; m. at Northampton May 18, 1671, Anna[2] Dewey (Thomas[1]).[10]

REFERENCES

1. Strong Genealogy, B. W. Dwight, 1871, II, 769–70.
1a. Mather Genealogy, H. E. Mather, 1890, pp. 34–8; Chronology and Ancestry of Chauncey M. Depew, W. A. Eardeley, 1918, p. 44; Cogswell Genealogy, E. O. Jameson, 1884, pp. xvi, xxi; New England Register, XXIII, 152.
2. Pomeroy Genealogy, A. A. Pomeroy, 1912, pp. 138–41.

3. Woodward Ancestry, Mss. by P. M. Chamberlain at Newberry Library, Chicago, Ill., 1911, pp. 92, 95–6; Belden Ancestral Lines, J. P. V. Belden, 1898, pp. 237–41.
4. Savage, IV, 261–2, 644.
5. New England Register, XLVII, 46.
6. History of Dorchester, Mass., Dorchester Antiquarian & Hist. Society, 1859, pp. 102, 141, 186, 192, 434.
7. New England Register, III, 190, 399; IV, 26, 103; IX, 88, 301; XL, 255–6.
8. Antiquities of Northampton, Mass., S. Clark, 1882, pp. 97–8, 174–5, 363.
9. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 38, 80, 94, 98, 105, 107–9, 117–8, 134, 141, 143, 146, 164, 187, 371–4, 377, 379, 461, Note 1.
10. Dewey Genealogy, L. M. Dewey, et al, 1898, p. 717.
11. History of Waterbury, Conn., H. Bronson, 1858, p. 551.
12. History of Northampton, Mass., J. R. Trumbull, 1898, I, 370–4; Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, 1883, Ser. I, Chap. IV, 1–9, 22; History of Lexington, Mass., C. Hudson, 1868, pp. 68–9; Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, I, 155, 329; V, 155, 240–1; Murray's Dictionary.

APPENDIX

DOUBLE-DATING, OR OLD AND NEW STYLE

THROUGH the ages various methods have been used to measure chronology, each containing somewhat of fault, and each succeeding one attempting to correct the errors of its predecessor. The need and aim were to find a system of intercalation whereby the legal and ecclesiastical year would conform to the natural or solar year.

The method of computation established[4] by Julius Caesar and called the Julian Calendar was in use from 46 B. C. until the latter part of the 16th century, and by it the civil and ecclesiastical year was made to begin on March 25, Annunciation or Lady Day, and theoretically, the time of the vernal equinox. But by the insertion of its extra day each "leap year" this intercalation gained annually eleven minutes, fourteen seconds over the solar year, and by 1582 that gain had amounted to ten whole days.

In March, 1582, Pope Gregory, XIII, abolished the Julian Calendar (thereafter referred to as "Old Style") for all Catholic countries, and established an improved system which was named for him, the "Gregorian" Calendar, or "New Style." This plan synchronized the civil and ecclesiastical computation of time with the solar by beginning the year on January 1, and by suppressing the overplus of ten days, gained under the Julian Calendar, by decreeing that in the year of 1582, October 15 should immediately follow October 4. It further decreed that since the error of the Julian intercalation was found to amount to three days in 400 years, that fault should be corrected by the omission of the intercalated day (of "leap year") on all centenary years except those which are multiples of 400 (i.e., 1600, 2000, etc.). " . . . . . by the last correction the beginning of the year would not vary more than a day from its present place, in two hundred centuries."

This calendar was soon adopted by many countries, but England continued the use of the "Old Style" with all its inconvenience (especially in international relations), until 1751 when Parliament voted favorably on "An Act regulating the commencement of the year; and for correcting the calendar now in use." This act stipulated that the year 1752 should begin on the next succeeding January 1 instead of March 25, and subsequent years, similarly.

The ten days suppressed by the Gregorian Calendar was accounted as satisfactory equalization for the period, 1582 to 1700, for such countries as had adopted it; but after 1700, which was "leap year" by the Julian Calendar (still in use in Great Britain), though a common year by the Gregorian, it became necessary for any country adopting the latter, to suppress eleven days instead of ten. England and her colonies, therefore, on their dropping of the Julian system in 1752, must needs drop eleven days from their calendar in addition to starting their year on January 1. For instance, September 2, 1752 was immediately followed by September 14, in England and her dependencies.[4]

The progressive variation between the Julian and Gregorian calendars was counted as twelve days throughout the 19th century and from 1900 to 2100 inclusive it is calculated as thirteen days. Therefore, Russia which adopted the Gregorian system in February, 1918, had to suppress thirteen days, and Greece which still adheres to the Julian, is just thirteen days ahead of most other countries, so that documents relating to her international affairs must bear two dates, her own and also the Gregorian used by her associates.

GENERAL GOVERNMENT AND FREEMANSHIP IN NEW ENGLAND

THE term "freeman" as applied to early New England is frequently misconstrued as meaning one who was free from compulsory servitude, but in reality it implied enfranchisement, the right of the vote. In the main it was obtainable by a man of twenty-one, or over, who was of good standing in his community, recommended to the court by his townsmen, possessed of a certain amount of property and, in Massachusetts and New Haven, necessarily of church membership.

The conditions whereby this privilege was granted, differed slightly at various periods in a given colony and differed even more between one colony and another.

The freeman's oath as used by both Massachusetts and Connecticut is well exemplified by the following form[3] used in 1634:

THE OATH OF A FREEMAN

"I (A. B.) being by Gods providence an Inhabitant, and Freeman within the Jurisdiction of this Commonwealth; do freely acknowledge my self to be subject to the Government thereof: And therefore do here swear by the great and dreadful Name of the Ever-living God, that I will be true and faithfull to the same, and will accordingly yield assistance & support thereunto, with my person and estate, as in equity I am bound; and will also truly endeavour to maintain and preserve all the liberties and priviledges thereof, submitting my self to the wholesome Lawes & Orders made and established by the same. And further that I will not plot or practice any evill against it, or consent to any that shall so do; but will timely discover and reveal the same to lawfull Authority now and here established, for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreover, I doe solemnly bind my self in the sight of God, that when I shal be called to give my voyce touching any such matter of this State, in which Freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce and tend to the publike weal of the body, without respect of persons, or favour of any man. So help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ."

A review of the general government of the various colonies (Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut, New Haven, and Rhode Island) as well as their requirements for freemanship, summarizes thus:

PLYMOUTH COLONY

"Strictly speaking, Plymouth was not a New England Colony. It was without a charter and the functions of its government were those of a corporation."[3] Its government was distinctly democratic in form though loss of records hides early details.[5] Patents in general gave "the right to govern" to the "adventurers," or English investors, and their "associates," the emigrants. Plymouth Colony was, until 1627, an experiment in community interest, ownership, and effort and bore liability for a common debt. The foundation upon which the colony was built and the power by which it was governed for sixteen years lay in

THE MAYFLOWER COMPACT[3]

"In ye name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwriten, the loyall subjects of our dread soveraigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great

Britaine, Franc, & Ireland, king, defender of ye faith, &c. haveing undertaken, for ye glorie of God, and advancement of ye Christian faith, and honour of our king and countrie, a voyage to plant ye first colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly & mutualy in ye presence of God, and of one another, covenant & combine our selves togeather into a civill body politick, for our better ordering & preservation & furtherance of ye ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enacte, constitute, and frame such just & equall lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meete & convenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes wherof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cap-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our soveraigne lord, King James, of England, France, & Ireland ye eighteenth, and of Soctland ye fiftie fourth. Anº: Dom. 1620."

Of the forty-one signers the name of Elder WILLIAM[1] BREWSTER was fourth, that of STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS was fourteenth, and that of FRANCIS[1] COOKE seventeenth.

At first the right to vote was confined to a few and the colony grew but slowly,[6] having in 1630 only about three hundred inhabitants, in 1633 but sixty-eight freemen and in 1643 but three thousand population. Extension of the body politic was by formal admission of freemen, not because of church membership, but by means, first, of majority vote of the subject's own townsmen and, next, by vote of the General Court.[6] In 1656–7 this last vote might immediately follow presentation of the name, but in 1658, action was taken requiring that such acceptance should be delayed for one year. A Freeman's Oath was required of all who qualified.

Freemanship implied both the right of franchise and eligibility to office. Freemen were required under menace of fine to attend General Court and cast their votes for Governor, Assistants, and Magistrates, though at some periods a vote by proxy was permissible. Those who lacked freemanship were required to take an Oath of Allegiance and Fidelity [after 1624] or the Oath of a Resident [1636]. Refusal brought a fine of £5 or deportation. In 1658 Quakers were definitely excluded from freemanship [though Plymouth was more tolerant towards them than Massachusetts]. Of those who possessed this privilege any who "shall speake contemptuously of the Court and of the lawes thereof and such as [are] judged by the Court grosly Scandalous; as lyers drunkards swearers &c shall lose theire freedome . . . " After seventy years tenure Plymouth honorably passed out of existence as a colony, by annexation to Massachusetts under the Charter of William and Mary.[6]

MASSACHUSETTS-BAY COLONY

A certain claim that is frequently made is also disputed,[1] namely, that the Puritans left England to escape persecution and to establish religious liberty, yet that they themselves became persecutors in New England at the first opportunity. "Religious liberty" as we understand it, however, was farthest from their thoughts.[1] "The aim of Winthrop and his friends in coming to Massachusetts was the construction of a theocratic state which should be to Christians, under the New Testament dispensation, all that the theocracy of Moses and Joshua and Samuel had been to the Jews in Old Testament days." Their plan was "intensely conservative and their impulse profoundly ethical.'"[1] "The state they were to found was to consist of a united body of believers; citizenship itself was to be co-extensive with church-membership; and in such a state there was apparently no more room for heretics than there was in Rome or Madrid.'"[1] But as the system worked out it was found to contain a curative principle for its own faults and weaknesses, and time and circumstance co-operated to break down the old theocratic exclusiveness and to strengthen the spirit of religious liberty which the founders had lacked.

In the early days of the colony the requirement that all freemen must first be church members (though some who possessed that pre-requisite failed to complete the relation and take the freeman's oath) operated forcibly to leave a majority of the inhabitants without representation in civil matters or legal affairs. The offices were filled and the choice of incumbents made by the churchmen alone.

Lechford and Hutchinson in discussing this phase state[2] that when any of this majority "come to be tried there, be it for life or limb, name or estate, or whatsoever, they must be tried and judged too by those of the church who are in a sort their adversaries. How equal that hath been or may be, some by experience do know, others may judge.'"[2] They cite an odd case which occurred in 1644 in which the magistrates, among themselves, deplored the possibility of a certain affair becoming public, for if it did so, the non-church members would surely side *with* them "and this would make us and our cause though never so just, obnoxious to the common sort of freemen, the issue whereof must needs [in that case] have been very doubtful.'"[2] In other words, the voting minority would have controlled the silent majority and have overruled the magistrates who were themselves elected by that minority. An

interesting side light on office holding in 1647 is seen in the resolution that "whereas many members of Churches to exempt themselves from Publick Service, will not come in to be made freemen . . . " it was ordered that none such might be exempt from any local office to which they were chosen by their townsmen without being fined up to twenty shillings for each offence.[3]

The original plan had been[1] to transact public business by a primary, i.e., the assembling of all freemen in the colony four times a year, but that plan soon proved its impracticability and the system of sending representatives from each town to the General Court came into practice. After a few years, further modification permitted non-members to serve on juries, and to vote on some town affairs,[3] but those for whom they voted must be freemen. In the main their severe policy continued even after receipt of a letter from the king in 1662 requiring greater leniency. Ostensibly they complied with his demands but in reality they evaded and as late as May, 1665, were severely criticized for it by certain visiting royal commissioners.[3]

Massachusetts had a variety of oaths. In addition to that of a freeman there was the Oath of a Servant, of a Stranger, of a Resident and an Oath of Fidelity. In 1634 a law was passed that boys of sixteen and over, should take a servant's or resident's oath and that year in Boston every youth of that age was given the freeman's oath except for the clause relating to election of magistrates.[3] In 1643 the Confederacy called "The United Colonies of New England" was formed by Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut and New Haven. These four little states then contained thirty-nine towns with an aggregate population of 24,000 and the Confederacy served them for forty years.[3, 6]

The Charter of William and Mary in 1692 which annexed Plymouth to Massachusetts Bay also "secularized the franchise" for the latter colony by eliminating the requirements of church membership.[6]

"The theocratic policy, alike in New Haven and in Massachusetts, broke down largely through its inherent weakness. It divided the community and created among the people a party adverse to its arrogance and exclusiveness. . . . We can now see the fundamental explanation of the deadly hostility with which Endicott and his party regarded the Quakers. The latter aimed a fatal blow at the very root of the idea which had brought the Puritans to New England. Once admit these heretics as citizens, or even as tolerated sojourners, and there was an end of the theocratic state consisting of a united body of believers. It was a life-and-death struggle, in which no quarter was given;

and the Quakers, aided by popular discontent with the theocracy, even more than by the intervention of the crown won a decisive victory."[1]

CONNECTICUT COLONY

This colony was unique in its formation.[7] It has been said of it that it was "born, not made," that it "formed its own government, made its own laws, engaged its own alliances, fought its own wars, and built up its own body, without the will of King, Kaiser, or Congress, and which even at the last, only made use of the royal authority to complete the symmetry of the boundaries it had fairly won for itself." Its colonization is further noteworthy for the reason that there is no evidence of an original patent; it "took place without the remotest connection with any paper title whatever." It "was legally a sheer intrusion, in absolute disregard of the paper title on which it afterwards professed to rely . . . " "In 1634, then, the territory now occupied by Connecticut was a veritable No-Man's-Land. It had been granted indeed to the Plymouth Council, but the grant stood much on a par with the presentation of a bear skin whose natural owner was still at large in the forest." "The debatable ground between the unsettled boundaries [Massachusetts and Plymouth] offered one of the few opportunities which the town system has had, to show how it can build up the body, as well as provide the Spirit for a State."

Connecticut was settled mainly by a group of men, who, though discreetly silent on the subject, were dissatisfied with the theocratic government in Massachusetts and their lack of representation there. They were not irreligious, but they desired a broader tolerance. Their independence of thought and action was largely inspired and strengthened by the vision and sound advice of the Reverend Thomas Hooker. When Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts wrote Reverend Hooker "defending restriction of suffrage on the ground that 'the best part is always the least, and of that best part the wiser part is always the lesser,' Hooker replied that 'in matters which concern the common good, a general council, chosen by all, to transact businesses which concern all, I conceive most suitable to rule and most safe for relief of the whole.' " Thus one meets "on the very threshold of American history with this lucid statement of the strongly contrasted views which a hundred and fifty years later were to be represented on a national scale by Hamilton and Jefferson."

The men of Massachusetts who in 1633 asked permission to remove, were then resident in Dorchester, Newtown and Watertown, and after a year's

persistent application, they wrung from the General Court a reluctant consent, conditioned on their remaining within the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, but its boundary was then indeterminate. In 1635–6 these three groups arrived at and settled upon the Connecticut River. Each group migrated as a distinct and individual organization "out of Massachusetts and into absolute freedom. It was the Massachusetts town system set loose in the wilderness." At the close of 1636, "these three townships, the nucleus of the Connecticut colony contained about 160 families and 800 persons. In the following year they contained sufficient fighting men to declare war against the Pequots and almost annihilated the tribe."

During the first year after removal they were governed by a board of commissioners designated by Massachusetts, but at the end of that time, finding themselves outside of Massachusetts territory, they chose representatives and held a General Court of their own. At its opening session on May 31, 1638, Reverend Hooker preached a never-to-be-forgotten sermon in which he maintained that "the foundation of authority is laid in the free consent of the people." On January 14, 1639, all the freemen of the three towns gathered at Hartford and adopted a written constitution* in which Reverend Hooker's hand is clearly discernible. It is worthy of note that this document contained none of the conventional references to the "dread sovereign," or a "gracious King," nor the slightest allusion to the British or any other government outside of Connecticut itself, nor did it make any condition of church-membership for the right of suffrage. It was made, according to the preamble, "on the authority of the *people* dwelling on 'the River Connecticotte'; its objects were to establish 'an orderly and decent Gouerment' which should 'order and dispose of the affayres of the people,' and to maintain 'the liberty and purity of the gospell' and 'the disciplyne of the churches'; and for these purposes its authors 'doe therefore assotiate and conjoyne our selves to be one Publike State or Commonwealth.' A notable document, indeed!"

From 1635 to 1644 Saybrook, just south of these three river towns, was quite separate so that for several years there were, including New Haven,

*This document has been dignified[10] by various writers as: "the first American Constitution" and "the first written constitution, in the modern sense of the term, as a permanent limitation on governmental power, known in history, and certainly the first American Constitution to embody the democratic idea. . . . " [Alexander Johnston, in "The Genesis of a New England State" and American Commonwealths.] John Fiske in "The Beginnings of New England" refers to it as the "first written Constitution known to history, that created a government and it marked the beginnings of American democracy, of which Rev. Hooker deserves more than any other man to be called the father."[10]

three independent small colonies within the present limits of Connecticut, but in 1644 Saybrook was sold to Connecticut. It has been said of the latter and of New Haven that they "were as perfect examples of 'squatter sovreignty' as Douglas could have asked for." In 1643 Connecticut and New Haven joined Massachusetts and Plymouth in the Confederation, and in 1662 New Haven was forcibly annexed to Connecticut by means of the King's Charter.

During the succeeding years the requirements for freemanship in Connecticut Colony varied somewhat as to required age and estate but never rested upon church membership.

Briefly then, "Connecticut gave the town system full and free play: New Haven aimed to be a centralized theocracy, responsible for the moral well-being of its dependent towns. . . . Even the unchecked religious dissensions in her [Connecticut's] churches hastened the process of town formation by scattering new settlements governed by Connecticut notions."[7] As for instance [see Coe, pp. 211], the Wethersfield offshoot, which left Connecticut Colony, settled at Stamford in New Haven territory, and presently became the most unmanageable of the New Haven towns.

NEW HAVEN COLONY

In 1637 the wealthiest body of colonists that had yet come from England arrived at Boston.[9] They resisted all inducements to settle at the Bay, and in 1638 founded a colony of their own at New Haven, their only title being by purchase from the Indians. They established by a "fundamental agreement" in June, 1639, a pure theocracy. They agreed that the scriptures should be their law; that only church members should vote or be voted for; that twelve burgesses should be chosen by general vote, who in turn should choose seven men who should fill the dual position of "pillars of the church" and the membership of the first General Court. In October, 1639, it was voted that the government of the colony should be according to "the judicial laws of God, as they were delivered by Moses and expownded in other parts of scripture . . . " and in 1644 the law of Moses was adopted as the criminal code. They encouraged as planters among them, only such as desired to affiliate with the church. There was not even trial by jury. The General Court passed sumptuary laws and acts "and the authority of the church was upheld by punishing criminally such as did 'expressly crosse ye rule' by venturing to 'eate, drinke, & to shew respect unto excommunicate persons.' "

"The General Court was to maintain the purity of religion and to 'suppress the contrary.' "

At first these restrictions, which disfranchised many [Fiske says over half] were accepted willingly by some of the outlying towns of the colony but others, especially Stamford and Southold showed frequent dissatisfaction and, by 1653, court action had to be taken against some rebellious ones who, in turn, called this "a tyrannicall gouerm^t." The struggle was between the free town system, such as their neighbor Connecticut had, and a system of shackled towns. It checked any extension of the colony beyond the six towns it early established and in the final struggle proved to be its vulnerable point and undoing.

Gradually a party had grown up in New Haven which was dissatisfied with its extreme theocratic policy, thus dividing the community and creating among the people this party adverse to the exclusiveness and arrogance of the others. The claim is made, too, that even some of the "Cheife in gouerment" at New Haven were dissatisfied and favored a change. This spirit of discontent continued and ate constantly more deeply.

Then New Haven failed for over a year to recognize, officially, the restoration of Charles II, to the throne and the king's resentment at their neglect made him the more ready to punish the colony by signing the Charter of 1662, ending its integral life in forcible annexation to Connecticut which had recognized him promptly and graciously, and acquired from him this charter of most generous terms. New Haven did not submit to this indignity without a struggle, for not only was her pride at stake but also her ecclesiastical system, which was still dear to part of her people. For three years thereafter a succession of diplomatic notes passed between them and the Connecticut General Court, but by 1665, New Haven had entirely submitted.[9] And thus was wiped out the most extreme example of theocracy attempted in the new world.

RHODE ISLAND COLONY

While we have no direct connection with Rhode Island as a state, portions of its territory were earlier owned and occupied by certain ancestors, while the homes of others bordered upon it and a comparison of its form of government with those of the other colonies becomes very interesting. Roger Williams, its founder,[8] was first at Plymouth and then at Salem and was menaced with deportation for religious reasons and for his refusal to take either the Oath of Fidelity or the Strangers Oath required by Massachusetts Bay. Being

warned of the plan against him in January, 1636 (and advised by his friend Governor Winthrop to take refuge at Narragansett Bay), he escaped into the woods where the Indians befriended him as he made his way to that vicinity. He named the spot he chose for a home "Providence" trusting that "it might be a shelter for persons distressed for conscience." Friends soon followed him and, though at first they had no form of government, increasing numbers caused them to formulate and sign, in 1637, an agreement for a democratic form which was called[8] a

CIVIL COMPACT

> "We whose names are hereunder, desirous to inhabit in the town of Providence, do promise to subject ourselves in active and passive obedience to all such orders or agreements as shall be made for public good of the body in an orderly way, by the major consent of present inhabitants, masters of families, incorporated together in a Towne fellowship, and others whom they shall admit unto them *only in civil things*." August the 20th, [1637].

As will be seen it did not differ greatly from the Mayflower Compact [p. 853] save in the last four words. Of them it has been said, "These few words at the close of the Providence Compact opened up a new era in human life and civilization." This was the first definite expression of a "severance of the bonds of Church and State, and of that principle of freedom of conscience for which the founder had contended."

"From the first settlement of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations to the present time an Oath [for freemanship] could not be required of any one; but in its place is required a property qualification and an Affirmation."[8] Thus the list of colonies, New Haven, Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth and Connecticut, in the order of their intolerance, were contrasted with Rhode Island which exemplified tolerance far in advance of its time.

REFERENCES

1. Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 105–6, 144–6, 197.
2. Winthrop's History of New England (Savage) II, 208–9.
3. American Antiquarian Society Proceedings, 1922, N. S., XXXI, 381–6, 395, 406–7.
4. New England Register, XX, 41; Encyclopaedia Britannica, 14th Ed., IV, 568–71; Americana, V, 191–2.
5. Bradford's History of Plymouth, 1912, I, 393–4; Plymouth Colony Records.
6. Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, pp. 86, 154, 275.
7. Ibid., pp. 123–8, 249–50, 274; Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, 1883, I, The Genesis of a New England State, No. XI. 6–17, 20–9.
8. American Antiquarian (as above), pp. 416–7, 423–

4; Grafton Magazine, I, pt. 1, p. 25; National Cyclopaedia, X, 4–5; Beginnings of New England, J. Fiske, 1889, p. 154.

9. Genesis of a New England State (as above), pp. 12, 21–9; American Antiquarian (as above), pp. 12, 417–21; Fiske (as above), pp. 136, 154–5, 158, 194–8, 247, 250.

10. Genesis of a New England State (as above), pp. 14, 16–7; American Commonwealths (Connecticut), Alexander Johnston, 1887, p. 63; Grafton Magazine, I, "The First Written Constitution," A. W. Risley (pt. 3, pp. 25–35); Fiske (as above), p. 127.

BIBLE RECORDS

PLATE XXVI IS AN EXAMPLE OF THE PENMANSHIP OF HENRY[5] BARTLETT AND IS REPRODUCED FROM A BIBLE ONCE OWNED BY HIM AND NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF DR. JOHN L. HENRY OF ATHENS, OHIO.

PLATES XXVII–XXIX ARE REPRODUCED FROM A BARTLETT BIBLE OWNED BY MRS. DEAN STICKNEY OF ATHENS, OHIO.

PLATES XXX–XXXIII ARE REPRODUCED FROM A SHIPMAN BIBLE OWNED BY MRS. MARY E. (SHIPMAN) BISCOE OF MARIETTA, OHIO.

William Bartlett born June 27th 1741. died December 30th 1794
Joanna Herrick " April 26th 1745 " January 21st 1810
William Bartlett " Septr 28th 1762 " 1779. 1780. lost at Sea
Anna Bartlett " Septr 16th 1763 " same Month
Benjamin Bartlett " August 24th 1765 " January 20th 1794.
John Bartlett " January 18th 1767. " Janr 23rd 1787
Henry Bartlett " February 3rd 1771
Ryam Bartlett " Novr 8th 1772 " died
George W Bartlett " April 11th 1777
Theresa Bartlett " Janr 14th 1782

Henry Bartlett born Feb 13th 1771. married Janr 24th 1792
Betsey Coney " Feb 18th 1772
Joanna H. Bartlett born Septr 28th 1793
Hannah Batchelder Bartlett born July 16th 1795. died same Month
Theresa Bartlett born June 8th 1796
Betsey C Bartlett " June 8th 1796
Betty Melinda Bartlett born Janr 31st 1799. died Janr 1872
Harriet Bartlett born March 17th 1801.
Hetty Bartlett born Janr 14th 1803.
Rebecca Gilman Bartlett born May 15th 1805.
John Bartlett born April 5th 1807. died Febr 12th 1814.
Love Anna Bartlett born May 5th 1809.
William Henry Bartlett born Octr 18th 1811.
Henrietta Bartlett born Febr 26th 1815. died July 17th 1834.

PLATE XXVI

FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Henry Bartlett born Feby 3.1771 Died [illegible]
Betsey Corey born Feby 8.1772

Joanna H Bartlett born Sept 28.1793
Hannah B. Bartlett born July 16.1795 Died
Irena Bartlett born June 8. 1796
Betsey C Bartlett born June 8.1796
Polly Bartlett born Jany 31.1799
Harriet Bartlett born March 17th 1801
Holly Bartlett born Jany 14.1803
Rebecca Bartlett born May 15. 1805
John Bartlett born April 5.1807 Died July 22 1814
Love Ann Bartlett born May 5.1809
Lewis Henry Bartlett born Octr 18th 1811
Henrietta Bartlett born Feby 26.1815 died July 16.1836

BIRTHS.

Lena Stewart born Decr 24.1798
Harriet Bartlett born March 17.1801

George Henry Stewart born Octr 2.1827
Lewis Henrick Stewart born July 30.1829
Ransall Hadley Stewart born May 15 1832
Frances Rebecca Stewart born May 15 1834
Harriet Elizabeth Little Stewart Feby 26.1837
Henrietta Bartlett Stewart born Jany 16.1842

PLATE XXVII

FAMILY RECORD.

MARRIAGES.	MARRIAGES.
Henry Bartlett & Betsey Corey Married June 24. 1792	
Charles Shipman & Joanna Bartlett Married March 31 1814	
Robert Neville & Betsey Bartlett Married June 8th 1817	
Ziba Lindly & Polly Bartlett Married June 1. 1820	
Asa Rice & Theresa Bartlett Married June 1 1820	
Ezra Stewart & Harriet Bartlett Married December 21. 1826	
Hezekiah Hay & Lois Ann Bartlett Married Jan. 24. 1832	
Samuel Aston & Betsy Bartlett Married Nov. 12 1833	
Francis Bourdsley & Rebecca Bartlett Married March 13. 1839	

PLATE XXVIII

FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.	Married	DEATHS. Died	
William Bartlett June 27. 1741 Died		Dec 30. 1794	
Joanna Bartlett April 26. 1745 Died	Aug 16. 1761	Jany 21. 1816	
William Bartlett Septr 28. 1762 Died		at Sea. 1799	
Anna Bartlett Septr 16. 1763 Died		Apr 25. 1763	
Benjamin Bartlett Augt 24. 1765 Died		Jany 20. 1794	
John Bartlett Jany 18. 1767 Died		Jan[illegible] 1781	
Henry Bartlett Feby 3. 1771 Died		Sep 9. 1850	
Ryam Bartlett Novr 8. 1772 Died		Aug – 1820	
George Bartlett April 11. 1777 Died		Aug 10. 1840	
Theresa Bartlett Jany 14 1782 "		Jan 4. 1862	

PLATE XXIX

FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.		BIRTHS.
Elizabeth Kirtland		Born June 27th 1689
John Shipman		Born 1661, Died [illegible]
Elizabeth their daughter		Dec. 3d 1715
John		Dec. 20th 1717
Elias		April 30th 1720
Nathaniel		May 25th 1723
Samuel	Died Sept. 14. 1801	May 25th 1726
Esther daughter of Samuel & Sarah		Wife Jany 18th 1746
Sarah	do	Jany 3d 1748
Samuel	do	Sept. 3d 1750
Benoni	do	March 20th 1753
Hannah		Sept 26th 1755
Nathaniel		Febr 18th 1759
Clarinda		Nov 23d 1762
Joshua		June 16th 1765
Joshua 2d		April 16th 1767
Orphania		May 6th 1770

FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.		DEATHS.	
Charles son of Joshua & Sibbel Chapman born Aug^st 28 1787			
Harriet	March 1790	Harriet	June 27th 1790
Harriet 2d	July 16th 1791	Harriet 2d	April 3 1792
William Henry	April 14th 1793		
Frederick	Aug^st 30th 1795		
Joshua Junr	Dec 26th 1797		
Elizabeth	March 8th 1800		
Julia	Aug^st 30th 1802		
Maria	April 17th 1804		
Samuel	October 15th 1807		
Joseph Chapman	April 27th 1810		
William Charles son of Charles & Frances	Decr 23 1812		
Joanna Frances daughter of Charles & Joanna H. Bates	March 9 1815		
Sibbel Charlotte Orphana	1816		
24 Novr 1818			
Henry Burritt	Octr 27th 1821		
Mary Sybbel daughter of Frederick & Maria	Dec 28th 1829		
Joshua Seth	March 6th 1831		
Julia Maria	Feb 24 1834		
Daniel Lucina daughter of Samuel	April 7th 1834		
Charles son of Frederick & Maria Jane			

FAMILY RECORD.

MARRIAGES.	MARRIAGES.
John Shipman to	Elizabeth Rutland Jan 11th 1715
Samuel Shipman to	Sarah Doty June 1745
Married his second wife	Hannah Bushnell Jan 18th 1754
Joshua Shipman 2d to	Sybbel Chapman Dec 21 1784
Charles Shipman to	Frances C. Dana Nov 12th 1811
Charles Married second wife	Joanna H. Bartlett March 31st 1814
Wm H. Shipman to	Mary Ann Edgerton Feb 15 1821
Joshua Shipman jun to	Eunice Edgerton April 14th 1825
Frederick Shipman to	Maria Bailey March 18th 1830
Summerfield Shipman to	Louisa Hawkins [illegible] 22 [illegible]
Nathaniel Hoden to	Julia Shipman Jan 21 1839
Isaac Brook to	Maria Shipman Aug 6 1835

FAMILY RECORD.

DEATHS.	DEATHS.
Oct. 3 1828	
Joshua Shipman 2 in the 57th year of his age	John Shipman July 7th 1742
Libbel his wife June 16th 1828 Aged 59 years	Elizabeth Shipman April 7th 1757
Wm H. Shipman April 8th 1829 in 36 year of his age	Elizabeth their daughter Jan 30th [illegible]
Joshua Shipman Jun August 24th 1829	John Nov 21 1746
Joseph C. Shipman Dec 5th 1829	Elias Nov 17th 1748
Elizabeth 2d Dec 1830	Nathaniel Septem 7th 1805
Frederick Shipman Aug 19th 1839	Samuel Sept 4th 1801
Charles Shipman July 7 1860	Sarah his wife May 14th 1753
Maria Shook Nov 30 1865	Hannah 2 wife Sept 4th 1806
Samuel Shipman died May 9th 1880.	Joshua March 29th 1767
Julia Shipman Holden " March 9 1872.	

INDICES

INDEX OF NAMES

This index includes:

(1) All names in the text [except the pedigree lines, in italics and parentheses, at the beginning of each personal sketch].

(2) All names which appear on maps and plates, but none which appear on charts.

Names which are ancestral to the Dawes family are in capitals. Generation numbers are used in case of ancestral males, and of females before their marriage. Females are listed under their maiden and married names. Ancestral names are listed *individually* (as are frequently the names of near relatives), but in all other cases identical names are grouped into a single listing. On pages listed but once, a name frequently appears several times.

Abel, Elizabeth (Pettyjohn), 650
Abimelech, 188–9
Acken, Mary, 546
  Thomas, 546
Ackla (Acla), Benjamin (see Ackley), 51
Ackley, —— (Young), 45
  Aaron, 45
  ABIGAIL[5], 35, 48, 113–4, 197
  Abigail (Abby), 50, 52
  Abigail (Bennett), 51
  ABIGAIL (DOANE), 46–7, 311–2
  Abigail (Lacey), 51
  Abner Brown, 45
  Abraham, 50
  Alfred, 51
  Amanda (Brooks), 51
  Amos, 51
  Amy (Lewis), 48
  Ananias, 51
  Angeline, 51
  Anna, 52
  Ann Louise, 51
  Asa, 45
  BENJAMIN[3], 41–3, 45, 48–9
  Benjamin, 35, 40, 43–5, 47–8, 50–2
  Bethia, 40
Ackley, Betsey, 48, 51
  Byron, 51
  Calvin, 46–8, 52
  Candace, 50
  Caroline, 51
  Charles Sexton, 45
  Chester, 50
  Chloe, 44
  Cordelia, 51
  David, 52
  Della or Dolly, 50
  Demmon, 51
  Elihu, 47–8, 52
  Eliphalet, 47–8
  Elisha, 48
  Eliza, 50
  Elizabeth, 40–1, 45, 50
  Elizabeth (Buel), 44
  Elizabeth (Smith), 45
  Emma (Bosworth), 51
  Ephraim, 50
  Esther (Parsons), 45
  Experience, 35, 45
  EXPERIENCE (——), 43
  Fanny, 50
  Ferris, 51
  Frederick, 51
Ackley, Gideon, 50
  Griffin, 51
  Hannah, 39, 40, 44, 50–1
  HANNAH (——), 39, 40
  Hannah (Bennet), 51
  Hannah (Higgins), 44
  Harriet, 51
  Harris, 45
  Harris S., 51
  Harry, 51
  Helen, 51
  Helen Eva, 51
  Henry, 50–1
  HEZEKIAH[4], 35, 43–7, 52, 311–2
  Hezekiah, 44, 46–8, 50–2
  Hovey, 52
  Huldah, 45
  Ichabod, 44
  Israel Doane, 48
  James, 23, 35, 39–41, 50
  Jemima, 50
  Jemima (Whittlesey), 48
  Jesse, 45
  Joel (see Ackling), 35, 43, 45–7, 197
  JOHN[2], 14, 39–43, 48–50, 135, 776, 806

Ackley, John, 42, 45, 48–9, 52
John Anson, 44
John D., 50
John Milton, 44
Jonathan, 52
Joseph, 50
Justus, 51
Laura, 52
Leah, 52
Leman, 50, 52
Lloyd, 51
Lois, 45, 197
Lorenzo, 51
Lucretia, 51
Lucretia (Willey), 50
Lucy, 45
Lydia, 23, 35, 40, 42, 47, 50
Lydia (Bronson), 52
Lydia (Emmons), 45
Lydia (Read), 45
Lydia A. (Wheelock), 51
Marinda (Benedict), 50
Martin, 50
Mary, 40, 42, 48–50
Mary Ann, 51
Mary Jane, 52
Mary (Tyler), 51
Mary (Williams), 23, 50
Matilda (Cole), 45
Mindwell, 43
Miriam, 39
Nancy, 45, 51
Nancy (Maxfield), 48
Nathaniel, 23, 35, 40–2, 48–50, 482
NICHOLAS[1], 10, 23, 33–40, 50, 482, 613–4, 772–5, 806
Nicholas, 40
"Niram," 51
Olive, 51
Oliver, 43, 45
Oliver Smith, 45
Perrin, 51
Phebe, 52
Polly, 45, 52
Rachel, 44
Rebecca, 42, 45, 48–9
REBECCA (SPENCER), 40–2, 135, 776
Roxanna (Rosanna), 44
Ruth, 48, 50
Ruth A. (Barns), 51
Rev. S. F., 51
Sally, 45, 50–2
Sally (Morris), 45
Samuel, 39–41, 50, 806
Sarah, 40, 42, 45, 48–50, 774–5
Sarah (Saxton), 42, 50
Simon (Simeon), 45
Ackley, Sophia, 51
Sterling, 51–2
Susan (Strong), 45
Susan V. (Cahoon), 45
Thankful, 42, 44, 48
Thene (Hayes), 47–8
Thomas, 40–1
Warren, 50
William, 52
Zilpah (Zilpha), 44, 48
Ackling, Joel (see Ackley), 45
Adams, Abigail (Pinney), 662
Aden, 752
Daniel, 112, 662
Rev. Eliphalet, 119
Elizabeth (Andrews), 58
Ephraim, 110–1
Gillet, 712
John, 662
Joseph, 58
Lydia (Pygan), 119
Mary (Pinney), 662
Rebecca (Potter), 673
Ruth (Beaman), 110–1
Sarah (Roberts), 712
Thomas, 673
Adeson, Judge, 562
Adgate, Mary (Marvin), 164, 166, 578
Thomas, 164, 166, 578
Alcock, Elizabeth (Mitchell), 590
Philip, 590
Alden, John, 64, 355, 688
"Alderman," 250
Allen, Elizabeth, 708
Martha, 197
Matthew, 207, 785
Samuel, 111, 711
Allerton, Fear (Brewster), 154–5, 241, 799
Isaac, 155, 355, 531, 688
ALLGAR, BRIDGET, 567
Alling, Capt. John, 217
Susanna (Coe), 216–7, 591
Allyn, Matthew, 769
Sarah, 797
Alvord, Joanna (Taylor), 790
Thomas, 790
Anderson, Lt., 269
William, 435
Andrews, Mr., 97–8
Elizabeth, 58
ELIZABETH (NICHOLSON), 57–8, 601–2
Hannah, 58
John, 35
Joseph, 58
MARY, 733–4
ANDREWS, MARY[2], 58, 75–6
Mary, 668
Mary (Fairfield), 58
Mary (Girdler), 58
NICHOLAS[1], 57–8, 602
Nicholas, 58
Richard, 689
Susanna, 58
Thomas, 58
William, 382
Andros, Gov. Edmund, 13, 121, 187, 331, 357, 480, 704, 766, 817–21, 827
Annawon, 251–3
Argall, Capt., 151
Armitage, Goody, 518
Joseph, 770
Arnold, Elizabeth (Gates), 16
Elizabeth (Wakeman), 135
Joseph, 11, 777
Joshua, 16
Samuel, 137
Ashley, Goodman, 409
Joseph, 636
Mary (Parsons), 636
Aston, Hettie B. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Samuel M., 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Atherton, Hope, 790
Humphrey, 790
Joseph, 790
Mary (Taylor), 790
Atkins, Hannah (Cooke), 505
Isaiah, 505
Attawanhood, see Uncas, Joshua
Atwood, Apphia (Bangs), 67
John, 301–2, 583, 763
Stephen, 67
Thomas, 340
Awashonks, 249

Babcock, Sarah (Denison), 178
Bachelor, see Batchelder
Backus, Elizabeth (Pratt), 680
William, 680
Bacon, FAITH (——), 349–50
Bailey, John, 134–5, 233, 777
Maria, 742, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Mary (Cole), 495
Baker, Betsey C. (Bartlett), 92, 276, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Cornelius, 826
Hannah (Woodbury), 826
Isaiah, 92
James, 559
John, 543

Baker, Margaret (Little), 559
Balch, Agnes, 423, 833
BENJAMIN[2], 99, 226–7, 321, 324–6, 422–3, 425, 606, 698, 703, 723, 826, 831, 833
Elizabeth (Ober), 606
FREEBORN[3], 97, 99, 831
Freeborn, 325–6
JOHN[1], 99, 223, 228, 315, 323, 325, 371, 423, 453, 527, 606, 698, 823, 831–3
John, 228, 323, 325–6, 606
Joseph, 324
MARY (CONANT), 228, 319, 323, 326
MIRIAM (MOULTON), 97, 99
SARAH (GARDNER), 293
Balcom, Mary, 21
Baldwin, Abigail (Beaman), 108
Alice (Beaman), 108
Nathaniel, 108
Noah, 465
Obadiah, 108
Phebe (Hull), 464–5
Sarah, 464–5
Ball, Edward, 167
Elizabeth, 167
L. Chandler, 754
Ballard, William, 770
Baltimore, Lord, 648
Bancroft, 145
Bangs, Apphia, 67
Bethia, 67
EDWARD[1], 61–7, 155, 241–2, 302, 305, 445–6, 503, 585, 684, 799, 800
Edward, 61
Hannah, 67, 305
Hannah (Scudder), 67
Hannah (Smalley), 67
Hubbard, 66
JANE (CHAVIS), 61
JOHN, 61
John, 66–7
Jonathan, 66–7
Joshua, 66–7
Lydia, 67
(?) Lydia (Hicks), 66–7
Mary (Mayo), 67
Mercy, 67, 585
REBECCA[2], 67, 766–7
Rebecca (?), 63
REBECCA (Hobart ?), 66–7
RICHARD, 61
Ruth (Cole), 67
Sarah, 67
Barber, Deborah, 177
Thomas, 718
Barker, Abigail, 342
Daniel, 193–4
Elizabeth, 514
Elizabeth (Peters), 293
James, 514
Maria, 745
Barlow, George, 352–3
Barnard, Frances (Foote), 340
Francis, 340
Barnes (Barns)
Abigail, 236
Elizabeth, 390
John, 764
Mary (Smith), 236
Ruth A., 51
William, 236
Barney, Jacob, 467
Bartlett, Widow, 387
Ann (Devereaux), 75
Anna, 89, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
ANNA (OBER), 77–8, 607, 700, 707
Benjamin, 77, 86, 88–9, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Bathshua, plate xv p. 94
Bethia, 75–6
BETHIA (DEVEREAUX), 74–5, 294–5
Betsey C., 92, 276, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
BETSEY (COREY), 89, 92, 259, 271–3, 276, 558, 561, 748, plates xiii p. 86, xiv p. 90, xvi p. 272, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
EDITH (——), 71, plate xv p. 94
Eleanor (Majory), 76
Elizabeth, 76
Faithful, 71, 74–5, plate xv p. 94
George Washington, 77, 88–9, 259, plates xi p. 80, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Hannah, 76
Hannah B., 92, plates xxvi p. 865, xxvii p. 866
Harriet B., 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Henrietta, 92, plates xxvi–xxvii pp. 865–6
HENRY[5], 77, 87–92, 260, 271–3, 276, plates xii p. 82, xiv p. 90, xvi p. 272, xxvi–xxix pp. 865–8
Hettie B., 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Jane S. (Coates), 92
J. Gardner, vi, 211, 219, 589–90
Bartlett, Joane, plate xv p. 94
JOANNA HERRICK[6], 92, 276, 742, 744, plates xiv p. 90, xxv p. 752, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7, xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
JOANNA (HERRICK), 78, 86–9, 437, 439–40, plates xi p. 80, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
JOHN[1], 71–2, 74–5, 259, 295, 747, plate xv p. 94
John, 76–7, 86, 89, 92, 400, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Joseph, 246
Love Anna, 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Magdalin, 71, plate xv p. 94
Margaret (Onsettler), 89
Mary, 76
MARY (ANDREWS), 58, 75–6
Mary (Bridgman), 634
Mary Malinda, 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Nicholas, 76
Pyam, 77, 88–9, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Rachel (Findley), 89, 259, 561
Rebecca G., 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Richard, 76
Robert, 71, 246, plate xv p. 94
Samuel, 634
Sarah (Cooke), 246
Scipio, 79, 89, 91
Theresa, 77, 88–9, 92, 276, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Theresa M., 92, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
WILLIAM, 71, plate xv p. 94
WILLIAM[2], 58, 75–7, 259, 643
WILLIAM[3], 76–8, 89, 259, 607
WILLIAM[4], 77–82, 85–9, 259, 437, 440, 537, plates x p. 78, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
William 86, 89, plates xv p. 94, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Rev. William, 71
William Henry, 92, plates xxvi–xxvii pp. 865–6
Bartoll, John, 597
Bass, Samuel, 521
Bassaker, Peter, 576
Basset, Goody, 203
Batchelder (Bachelor)
Capt., 435
Abigail, 97–8, 826–7
Alice, 102
ANNE[4], 101–2, 432, 439
Benjamin, 101–2

Batchelder, Bethiah (Woodbury), 100
Ebenezer, 100
Elizabeth, 98–102
Elizabeth (Herrick?), 97–8
George, 101–2
Hannah, 98
Hannah (Dodge), 327
Henry, 97
JOHN[1], 97–8, 708, 826
JOHN[2], 97–100, 316, 427, 708, 826
John, 98–100, 333
Jonathan, 99, 100, 708
Joseph, 97, 99
JOSIAH[3], 99–101, 327, 708, 826
Josiah, 100–2, 327, 433
Mark, 97
Mary, 97–101, 708
MARY (——), 97–8
MARY (HERRICK), 99, 100, 316, 427
Mary (Leach), 102
MARY (RAYMOND), 100–1, 327, 708
MIRIAM (MOULTON), 97, 99
Ruth (Raymond), 100, 708
Sarah (Rea), 100
Sarah (Whipple), 102
William, 102
Bates (Bate)
Mr., 12
Abigail, 639
Anna (Withington), 774–5
Elizabeth, 774
Elizabeth (Spencer), 139
Hannah, 190
James, 37, 774–5
Joseph, 139
Margaret, 774–5
Mary (Chapman), 190
Samuel, 190
Sybil, 139
Batters, Edmond, 597
Battin, Elizabeth (Little), 547
Henry, 547
Bavidge, (——), 332
Beach (Beech)
Amelia (Gates), 25
John C., 25
Mary F. (Dawes), 3, 4, 745, plate iv p. 6
Richard, 639, 821
Sarah (Platt), 462
Beacon, Richard, 843
Beadle, see Bedle
Susanna, 427
Beaman, see also Beamon
Aaron Gates, 114
ABIGAIL[3], 110–1, 712–4
Abigail, 108
BEAMAN, ABIGAIL (ACKLEY), 35, 48, 113–4, 197
Ackley, 114
Alice, 108
ALICE (YOUNG), 106–8
Ann (Fuller), 113
Benjamin, 107–8
Clarissa, 114–5
DANIEL[5], 23, 35, 48, 113–4, 197
Daniel, 107–9, 114
Elisha, 35, 113
Elizabeth (Gates), 23, 35, 114
Erastus, 35
Hannah, 35, 108, 110–2, 114, 712–3
Hannah (Huggins), 108
John, 108
Josiah, 107–9
Lois, 113
Lydia, 113
LYDIA (ROBERTS), 112–3, 712–4
Lydia (Warner), 108
Margaret, 111
MARGARET (CHAPMAN), 109–10, 183
Martha, 108
Mary, 108, 110–1, 713
Mehitable, 108
Reuben, 23, 35, 113–4
RUTH[6], 24–5, 114
Ruth, 108, 110–1
SAMUEL[2], 23, 35, 105, 108–10, 183, 401, 712–3
SAMUEL[3], 23, 110–1, 664, 712
Samuel, 111
Sarah, 111, 113
SARAH (PINNEY), 111, 664
SIMON[1], 23, 35, 105–8, 712
Simon, 107–8, 111
THOMAS[4], 23, 35, 105, 111–2, 713–4
Thomas, 35, 107–8, 113–4
Beamon, see also Beaman
Abigail, 119
Deborah, 119
ELIZABETH[2], 119, 190, 192
Hester (Buckingham), 120
John, 117
Lydia, 119
LYDIA (DANFORTH), 118–9, 188, 204, 281, 733
Mary, 119, 169
Rebecca, 120, 204
Samuel, 105, 119–20
(see Beaumont), Sarah, 119, 681
WILLIAM[1], 105, 117–9, 164, 166, 169, 188, 204, 281, 681, 733
Beaumont, see Beamon
Beaumont, Edward, 117
Elizabeth (Ramsden), 117
Samuel, 464
(see Beamon), Sarah, 119, 681
Thankful, 464
Bean, Betsey, 272
Betsey (Tibbetts), 272
Joanna, 272
John, 272, 276
McCraven, 272, 276
Moses, 272, 276
Polly (Corey), 272, 276
Susanna, 272
Beard, Hannah (Hawley), 411
John, 411
Bearding, Sarah, 135
Beardsley, Francis, 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Rebecca G. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Beauchamp, Alice (Freeman), 349
John, 151, 349–50, 355, 689
Becket (Beckett)
James E., 754
Rev. William, 649
Beckley, Gordon L., 24
Huldah (Gates), 23–4
Beckwith, Matthew, 477, 576, 679
Bedle, see Beadle
Robert, 338
Beebee, Dr. Abner, 20
Beech, see Beach
Beecher, HANNAH (——), 671–2
Isaac, 671–2
Beeson, Henry, 262
Belcher, Andrew, 281
Elizabeth (Danforth), 281
Belden, Lydia, 523
Belknap, Abraham, 770
Bellows, Louisa Smith, 559
Bemis, James, 402
Mary, 403
Sarah, 402
Benedict, Jesse, 50
John, 50
Marinda, 50
Matthew, 50
Sally (Ackley), 50
Thomas, 50
Benjamin, Jonathan, 52
Leah (Ackley), 52
Richard, 51
Bennet (Bennett)
Abigail, 51
Amos, 51
Hannah, 51
John, 293–4
Margaret, 293–4

Bennet, Mary, 294
Nathan, 51
Sarah (Stratton), 51
Thomas, 51
Benton, Abigail (Graves), 390, 395
Ebenezer, 390, 394–5
Berkley, Lord John, 810, 814, 817
Berry, Desire, 307
Beseleigh, William, 825
Bette, James, 467
Bidwell, Elizabeth, 136
Sarah, 136
Bigelow, Amasa, 21
David, 21
Eli, 21
Esther (Gates), 21
John, 21, 618
Joshua, 21
Rebecca (Olmstead), 618
Bignall, Abigail (Pettyjohn), 650
Bill, Deacon, 493
Billington, Helen, 300
Bingham, Lucina, 742, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Silas, 273
Bird, Thomas, 843
Birdsall, Rev. Ralph, 750
Birdsey, Edward, 411
John, 411
KATHERINE, 411, 414
Birge, Daniel, 776
Deborah, 776
Bishop, Chloe, 170
Edward, 708
Hannah, 708
John, 671, 821
Tabitha, 342
Bissell, John, 570
Joyce, 662
Nathaniel, 461
Biswork, Sophia (Ackley), 51
Stuart, 51
Black, Hannah (Ackley), 51
John H., 51
N. A., 51
Blague, Joseph, 521
Martha (Kirtland), 521–2
Blake, Abigail, 506
John, 506
Richard, 506
Blakeman, Mary, 218
Blaney, Hannah, 295
Blachfield (Blatchford?), Peter, 513
Blakesley, see Blatchley
Blanchford, see Blatchford
Blashfield, Thomas, 607
Blatchford (Blanchford)
Hannah (Willey), 12, 479, 774
Blatchford, Peter (see Blachfield), 12, 165, 479, 774
Blatchley (Blatchly) sometimes rendered "Blakesley" (673)
Aaron, 390, 673
Elizabeth, 264
Naomi, 395
SARAH (POTTER), 340–2, 390, 673
Zopher, 264
Blinn, Lucy, 23
BLISS, ANN[2], 123–4, 126, 189
Catherine (Chapin), 126
Daniel, 124
Elizabeth, 126
George, 123
Hannah, 126
Hester, 126
John, 126, 632
Lawrence, 126
Lydia (Wright), 126
MARGARET (——), 123–6, 632
MARY[2], 123–6, 626, 631–6
Mary (Leonard), 126
Nathaniel, 123–4, 126
Patience (Burt), 126
Samuel, 126
Sarah, 126
THOMAS[1], 10, 123, 125, 372, 613, 615
Thomas, 123–4, 126
Blizzard, William, 549
Blogget, Rev., 434
Blossom, Thomas, 299
Blower (Blowers)
EMMA (ELIOTT), 333–4, 837
Rev. Thomas, 334, 837
Boasum, Ann (Devereaux), 295
Bobo, Mrs. 276
Bonum, George, 764
BOONE, NICHOLAS[2], 393
Boosey, James, 213
Joseph, 340
Booth, Elizabeth (Hawley), 411
Richard, 411
Bosworth, Abigail (Scott), 833
DORCAS[1], 833
Emma, 51
Hanniel, 833
Joanna F. (Shipman), 742, 744, plate xxxi p. 870
Sala, 744
Bouton, Abigail (Marvin), 578
Alice (Kellogg?), 577–8
John, 577–8
Bowen, Helen (Ackley), 51
Stephen, 51
Bower, Francis M., 562
Tirzah V., 562
Boyes, Lydia (Beamon), 119
Samuel, 119
Brace, Capt. Abel, 23, 50
Lydia (Ackley), 23, 50
Brackenbury, Elizabeth, 833
Bradford, Alice, 304
Mercy, 361
Rachel (Raymond), 699
William, 62, 64, 145, 149, 153, 222, 242, 301, 304, 355, 443–4, 448, 450–1, 583, 684, 688, 690, 692, 699, 800
Bradley, Esther (Shipman), 739
Stephen, 739
Timothy, 739
Bradstreet, Gov., 187
Bragg, Benjamin, 45
Experience (Ackley), 45
Brainerd, Abijah, 495
Asahel, 35, 45
Benjamin, 45
Bezaleel, 137
Caleb, 136
DANIEL[1], 10–3, 15–6, 33, 43, 45, 129–35, 137, 234–5, 495, 614, 772–4, 776–7
DANIEL[2], 16, 130, 132, 134–7, 235–6, 807
Daniel, 19, 20, 136–7
Deborah (Dudley), 136–9
Dorothy (Hobart), 136
Dudley, 43
Elijah, 136
Elizabeth, 139
Elizabeth (Bidwell), 136
Elizabeth (Wakeman), 135
Elizabeth (Warner), 137
Experience (Ackley), 35, 45
HANNAH[3], 16–7, 137
Hannah, 15, 135–7, 139
HANNAH (CONE), 137–9, 236
Hannah (Selden), 137
HANNAH (SPENCER), 135, 771–2, 774, 776
Hannah (Spencer?), 135
Hezekiah, 135–6
H. W., 505
J. G. C., 233
James, 43, 45, 136, 495, 777
Jared, 139
Jerusha (Shalor), 494
Joshua, 130, 136
Lois, 494–5
Margaret, 136
MARY[4], 18, 139
Mary, 137
Mary (Bushnell), 136
Mary (Gates), 137

Brainerd, Mary (Olmstead), 136
Mehitable (Dudley), 136
Mindwell (Ackley), 43
NOADIAH[3], 132, 137–9, 236
Noadiah, 139
Othniel, 494–5
Sarah (Bidwell), 136
Sarah (Daniels), 136
Stephen, 16, 137
Susanna, 137
Susanna (Gates), 15–6, 137
SUSANNA (VENTRES), 14, 136–7, 806–7
Sybil, 139
Sybil (Bate), 139
William, 136
Brane, Widow, 832
Bread, Allen, 521
John, 521
Mary (Kirtland), 521
Breading, Clark, 273
Hetty J. (Roberts), 273
Brewer, Hannah, 294
Thomas, 149
Brewster, see Bruster
Capt. Edward, 150–1, 154
Fear, 154–5, 241, 799
Jonathan, 64, 148–9, 154, 374–5, 683, 687
Love, 152, 154–5
Lucretia (Oldham), 155
MARY (——), 148, 152, 154
PATIENCE[2], 149, 154–5, 241, 683, 692, 799
PRUDENCE (——), 143
Sarah (Collier), 155
WILLIAM, Eng., 143, 150
Elder WILLIAM[1], 143–5, 148–54, 240, 242, 302, 355, 445–6, 683, 687–8, 690, 747, 800, 854
Wrestling, 152, 155
Bridge, Anna (Danforth), 281
John, 101
Mary (Batchelder), 101
Matthew, 101, 281
Bridgeman (Bridgman)
Deliverance, 790
James, 632–4
Joanna (Taylor), 790
Mary, 634
Sarah, 632–3
Brinsmade, Samuel, 414
Briskowe, Widow, 171
BRISTOW, JANE, 611
Broadwell, Mary (Morse), 543
Bronson, John, 514
Lydia, 52
Sarah, 514
Brooke, Lord, 120, 185
Brookhart, James, 562
Brooks, Amanda, 51
Marah (Spencer), 774
Thomas, 133, 774–6
Broughton, Rebecca, 505
Brown (Browne)
Archibald G., 92
Daniel, 89
ELIZABETH (SIMSON), 57, 597–8, 600–2
Ethan A., 743
Francis, 570
Harriet B. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Ichabod, 828
John, 28, 241, 743
Martha (Woodbury), 828
Mary, 302, 334
Peter, 302, 417
Theresa (Bartlett), 77, 88–9, 92, plates xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
and Thorndike, 87
Bruen, Rebecca, 668
Bruster, see Brewster
William, 151
Bryan, Alexander, 413
Buckingham, Hester, 120
Joseph, 737
Temperance, 523
Rev. Thomas, 120, 188, 680
Buckley, Deborah (Shipman), 734
John, 734
Buel (Buell)
Deborah (Griswold), 403
Elizabeth, 44
Samuel, 401, 403, 794
Sarah, 167
William, 403, 568
Bull, David, 190
Hannah (Chapman), 190
Hannah (Humphrey), 475
John, 159
Joseph, 418, 475
Mary, 159
PHEBE[2], 160, 177
PHEBE (JOSE), 159
ROBERT[1], 159, 203
Robert, 160
Sarah, 167
Sarah (Ruscoe), 159
Thomas, 159, 190
Bumppo, Natty, see Leatherstocking
Bundock, William, 517
Burchsted, Dr., 521
Mary (Rand), 521
Burgoyne, 755
Burke, Edmund, 286
Burnham, Joanna, 431
Naomi (Hull), 462
Richard, 475
Sarah (Humphrey), 475
Thomas, 462
Burr, Elizabeth, 615
Jehu, 615
Burrill, George, 520
Burritt, Israel, 218
Sarah (Coe), 218
Burroughs, Mr., 279
Burt, Henry, 126
Jonathan, 790
Mindwell (Taylor), 790
Patience, 126
Burton, William, 549
Bushnell, Goodman, 164, 170–1
Goodwife, 163, 170–1
Abigail, 167
Chloe (Bishop), 170
Daniel, 167
Deborah, 23–4
Deborah (Giddings), 24
Dorothy, 165
Elias, 169
Elizabeth, 164–5, 169–70
Elizabeth (Ball), 167
ELIZABETH (HANDLEY), 168–9
Elizabeth (Shipman), 169–70, 736–7
FRANCIS[1], 136, 163–6, 170, 578, 736
Francis, 164–7, 170, 729
Handley, 168–70
HANNAH[5], 168–70, 737, 739–40, plates xxxii p. 871, xxxiii p. 872
Hannah, 164, 168, 462
Hannah (Seymour), 167, 729
Jane, 165, 171
Jedediah, 24
John, 164–6, 170–1
John Hanley, 169
Jonathan, 169–70, 736–7
Joseph, 136, 167
JOSHUA[3], 167–8, 462, 729, 736
JOSHUA[4], 168, 170, 523, 736
Joshua, 169–70
Judith, 167
Lucy, 169–70
Lydia, 167
Lydia (Lynde), 170
Margaret, 169–70, 736
Margaret (Chapman), 168–9
Margaret (Parker), 169
Marie, 164, 170–1
Martha, 164, 170–1
Mary, 136, 164, 169, 171

Bushnell, Mary (Marvin), 164, 166, 578
Mary (Seymour), 167–8, 462, 729
Patience (Rudd), 167
Peter, 167
Phineas, 168–9
Priscilla, 169–70
Priscilla (Clark), 169
Priscilla (Pratt), 167
Rebecca, 163–4, 167
Rebecca (Chapman?), 165, 167
Rebecca (Stratton), 167
Richard, 136, 164, 166–7, 578, 729
Ruth (Sanford), 164
Samuel, 164, 167
Sarah, 164–5, 167
Sarah (Scranton), 164
Stephen, 167
Thankful, 168–70
Thomas, 167
William[2], 163–7, 185, 188, 729, 733, 736
William, 166–7
Butcher, Elizabeth, 605
Robert, 651
Butler, Daniel, 618
David, 506
Elizabeth, 618, 664
Elizabeth (Olmstead), 618
Hannah (Cooke), 506
Lydia (Beman), 113
Mabel (Olmstead), 618
Nathaniel, 113
Ruth, 735
Samuel, 618
Thomas, 301
Butterfield, Daniel, 677
Samuel, 677
Susan, 589
Byllinge, Edward, 817

Cabot, 809
George, 79, 82, 86
Capt. Joseph, 79, 82
Caesar, Julius, 851
Cahoon (Cohoon)
Susan Varick, 45
William, 309
Calhoun, Catherine (Coe), 218
David, 218
Callawane, 629
Calley, Thomas, 367
Camp, Eunice (Coe), 219
John, 219
Phebe (Coe), 219
Samuel, 219
Campbell, Capt., 268
Lord Neal, 820
Cannon, John, 553
Canonicus, 445, 617
Capen, Bernard, 378
Susanna, 378
Carder, Elizabeth (Bartlett), 76
Joseph, 76
Carey, John, 260
Carman, Abigail, 215
John, 215
Carpenter, Cephas, 92
Theresa M. (Bartlett), 92, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Carr, Sir Robert, 810
Carrier, Elizabeth, 664
Carter, (——), 490–1
Elizabeth (Buel), 44
Lorenzo, 44
Nicholas, 534
Orange, 44
Rebecca (Fuller), 44
Carteret, Gov., 532
Lady Elizabeth, 811
Sir George, 810–1, 814–5, 817–9
James, 815
Philip, 187, 811–5, 817–9
Carver, John, 255, 443
Mary (Cooke), 255
Robert, 255
Case, Amanda (Gates), 25
George, Jr., 23
Jonathan, 110–1, 713
Mary (Beaman), 110–1, 713
Mary (Gates), 23
Milner, 25
Chalker, Abraham, 176–7
Alexander[1], 159, 175–7, 247–8, 464, 668
Alexander, 177
Deborah, 178
Deborah (Barber), 177
Diana, 464
Elizabeth, 178
Elizabeth (Chapman), 178, 192–3, 464
Hannah (Sanford), 177
Jabez, 219, 464
Jane, 177
Jemima (Grinnell), 176
Katherine, 176–7, 668
Katherine (Post), 176, 688
Lydia[4], 178, 193, 464
Mary, 177–8
Mehitable, 177–8, 464
Mehitable (Chapman), 178, 464
Phebe, 177–8
Phebe (Bull), 160, 177
Chalker, Rebecca (Ingram), 177
Ruth, 177
Samuel[2], 160, 177, 464
Samuel, 177
Sarah, 177
Sarah (Coe), 219, 464
Sarah (Denison), 178
Sarah (Ingham), 177
Stephen[3], 177–8, 192, 464
Stephen, 177–8, 464
Champion, Henry, 49
Champney, Esther, 281
Chandler, Joshua, 43
Chapin, Catherine, 126
Samuel, 126
Chapman(?), Rebecca, 165, 167
Chapman, Andrew, 192
Ann (Bliss), 123–4, 126, 189
Anna (Anne), 190, 192
Betsey (Jones), 197
Betty, 197
Edward[1], 181–3, 247–8, 345–6, 569
Eliza, 164
Elizabeth[3], 178, 192–3, 464
Elizabeth, 183, 192
Elizabeth (Beamon), 119, 190, 192
Elizabeth (Fox), 181–3, 345–6, 571
Elizabeth (Hawley), 190, 192, 415
Elizabeth (Hull), 178, 194, 196, 464
Esther (Selden), 192
Eunice, 193
Ezra, 194, 197
Hannah, 183, 190
Hannah (Bates), 190
Hannah (Grant), 183
Hannah (Loring), 197
Hannah (Spencer), 40
Henry, 183
Hepzibah, 197
Hervey, 197
Hezekiah, 197
Isaac, 194, 197
Jabez, 19, 192
Jerusha, 197
Joel, 45
John[2], 40, 45, 119, 133, 164, 178, 187–192, 415, 461, 733
John, 192
Jonathan, 193
Joseph[3], 45, 192–3, 777
Joseph, 193–4, 196–7, 740
Letty (Organ), 197
Levi[4], 45, 178, 193–4, 464

CHAPMAN, LEVI[5], 45, 178, 194, 196, 464, 739–40
Levi, 45, 196–7
Lois (Ackley), 45, 197
Lucy (Payne), 197
Lydia, 178, 192–4
LYDIA (CHALKER), 178, 193–4, 464
Lydia (Doane), 197
MARGARET[2], 109–10, 183
Margaret, 168–9
Martha (Allen), 197
Mary, 183, 190, 192
Mary (Collins), 190
Mary (Ingham), 193
Mary (Scone), 193
Mary (Walker), 197
Mehitable, 178, 192–4, 464
Nancy, 45
Nathaniel, 187, 190
Polly (Walker), 197
ROBERT[1], 40, 45, 123, 126, 159, 164–5, 168, 176, 178, 181, 185–9, 192, 203, 372, 376, 402, 461, 522–3, 680, 733
Robert, 40, 168, 178, 187, 189, 523
Ruth, 193
Ruth (Hill), 197
Ruth (Robinson), 194
Samuel, 40, 168, 178, 192, 197, 523
Sarah, 183, 190, 523, 680
Sarah (Davis), 197
Sarah (Griswold), 189
Sarah (Perkins), 197
SARAH (SPENCER), 192–3, 777
Simeon, 193
Simon, 182–3
Stephen, 197
SYBIL[6], 196, 739–40, 742, plates xxii p. 736, xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Sybil, 194
Thomas, 192
Chappel, Lydia (Ackley), 47
Noah, 47
Chauncey, Mary, 571
Nathaniel, 639
Sarah, 639
CHAVIS, JANE, 61
Cheever, Rev. Samuel, 75
Cheney, Greenberry, 654
Chester, Leonard, 337
Chilton, Mary, 490
Chipman, Mr., 436
Abigail, 463
Elizabeth (Hull), 463
Chittenden, Nathaniel, 389
Chubb, Thomas, 425
William, 426
Church, Rev. Aaron, 24
Abishai, 24
Col. Benjamin, 247–53
Edward, 481
Huldah (Gates), 23, 24, 35
Phebe, 24
Richard, 481
Samuel, 481
Susanna (Hungerford), 481
Tacitus D., 24, 35
Churchill, Elizabeth (Foote), 340
Josiah, 340
Clapp, Edward, 845
Mehitable, 639
Preserved, 790
ROGER[1], 371, 453, 639, 660, 790, 844–5
Wait, 790
Clark (Clarke)
Mr., 737
AGNES, 221
Charles, plate xx p. 490
Danforth, 120
Daniel, 201, 417
DORCAS (BOSWORTH), 833
ELIZABETH[2], 201, 204, 680
Elizabeth, 209
Elizabeth (White), 208
Emanuel, 289
George, 201, 203
George Rogers, 267–8
Hannah, 209, 490
Henry, 182, 201, 345
Jabez, 490
James, 672
JOHN[1], 10, 120, 201–4, 372, 613, 615, 679–80, 733
John, 120, 201, 204, 208, 490, 578
Joseph, 204, 208, 775
MARGARET, 182, 345, 569
Margaret, 208
Maria, plate xx p. 490
Mary, 208–9, 636
MARY (——), 203–4
Mary (Kirtland), 204
Mary (Ward), 201, 203
Mehitable (Thrall), 797
Miriam (Giddings), plate xx p. 490
Nicholas, 207
Priscilla, 169
Rebecca (Beamon), 120, 204
Rebecca (Marvin), 578
Rebecca (Porter or Parker), 120, 204
Ruth (Spencer), 208, 775
Samuel, 169, 204, 797
[SARAH?], 209, 777
Clark, Sarah, 201, 204, 490, 636, 662, 664
Sarah (Judd), 490
Susannah (Treat), 208
Thomas, 208–9, 359
WILLIAM[1], 10, 14, 207–9, 490, 613, 772–3, 775, 777, 806
William, 208, 636, 844
Claypoole, Elizabeth, 273, 651, 653, 748
Elizabeth (Cromwell), 272, 651, 748
James, 273, 651
Gen. John, 272–3, 651, 748
Norton, 273, 651, 748
Rachel (——), 273, 651, 748
Cleaves, Mary (Herrick), 433, 436–7, 439–40
Nathaniel, 433, 436–7, 440
Cleveland, Rev. Mr., 435
Aaron, 139
Sybil (Brainerd), 139
Coates, Jane Savage, 92
Cobb, James, 766
Mercy, 308, 768
Mercy (Freeman), 362
Sarah (Lewis), 308, 766
Thomas, 362
Cocke, Sarah, 467
Cockerell (Cockerill)
Elizabeth, 834
John, 231
Mary, 834
William, 834
Cockshott, Elizabeth (Shalor), 41, 777
James, 41
Coddington, Elizabeth (Freeman), 349
John, 349
Codner, Christopher, 294
Joan, 294
Mary (Bennet), 294
Coe, Abigail, 218
Abigail (Carman), 215
Abigail (Robinson), 218
Anna, 219
Anna (Morris), 219
Barbara (Parmalee), 218
Benjamin, 214–5
Catherine, 218
David, 217, 589
Dennis, 217
Dorothy, 211
DOROTHY (——), 211
Ebenezer, 217–8
Ephraim, 218
Eunice, 219

Coe, Godsgift, 211
Hannah, 217–8
Hannah (Dearslay), 212
HANNAH (MITCHELL), 215, 589–91, 676
HANNAH (PARSONS), 219, 639
Hannah Comfort (Miller), 218
HENRY of Eng., 211
James, 217
Jane, 215
JOHN of Eng., 211
JOHN "Thelder," of Eng., 211
JOHN the "Yonger" of Eng., 211
JOHN[3], 23, 50, 216–8, 415, 591
JOHN[4], 218–9, 639
John, 211, 214–6, 219
Joseph, 23, 50, 218
Josiah, 23, 50
Lois, 219
Lydia (Ackley), 23, 50
Mary, 215, 218
MARY (——), 212, 215
Mary (Blakeman), 218
MARY (HAWLEY), 217–8, 415
Phebe, 219
ROBERT[1], 23, 50, 211–5, 217, 372, 511, 589–90
ROBERT[2], 23, 50, 215–7, 411, 589–91
Robert, 218
Sarah, 216–9, 464, 591
"SIBYLLA"[5], 178, 219, 463–4
Simeon, 219
Susanna, 216–7, 591
Tamar, 219
William, 211
Zipporah, 219
Cogan, John, 660
Coggins, Mr., 570
COGSWELL, JOHN[1], 841
William, 50
Cohoon, see Cahoon
COIT, JOHN[1], 831
Cole, Daniel, 44, 304, 306
Hannah, 44
Henry, 159
Hepsibah, 305, 307–8
Israel, 44
James, 301
Mary, 495
Matilda, 45
Rebecca, 491
Ruth, 67
Sarah (Ruscoe), 159
COLES, ALICE, 349
George, 349
Coley, see Cooley, Croley
Samuel, 201, 203
Colfax, Will, 478
Collier, Mary, 692–3
Sarah, 155
William, 155, 692
Collins, Benjamin, 521
John, 385–6
Mary, 190
Priscilla (Kirtland), 521
Susanna, 521
Colonial Dames of Connecticut, vi, 396, plate xvii p. 384
Comstock, Elizabeth, 733–4
Hannah (Johnson), 491
Conant, Abigail, 606
AGNES (CLARKE), 221
Bethia, 429
Caleb, 227
Christopher, 221
Elizabeth, 227–8
Elizabeth (Walton), 227
Exercise, 228
John, 429
Joshua, 228
Lot, 227, 320, 429, 606, 699
MARY[2], 227–8, 319, 323, 326–7, 429
Rebecca, 699
RICHARD, 221
ROGER[1], 221–7, 315, 320–1, 324, 326, 371, 423, 425, 429, 527, 606, 698–9, 723, 823–5, 830–1
Roger, 227
Sarah, 227–8
SARAH (HORTON), 221, 226–7
Seeth (Gardner), 228
Cone, Abigail (Barnes), 236
Caleb, 234–5
DANIEL[1], 10, 15, 50, 132, 135, 231–6, 482, 771–4, 776–7, 806
Daniel, 15, 17, 50, 133, 234–6
David, 235
Dorothy, 50
Ebenezer, 234–6
Elizabeth, 235–6
ELIZABETH (——), 235–6
Elizabeth (Cunningham), 235
Elizabeth (Gates), 17
George, 50
HANNAH[3], 137–9, 236
Hannah, 234
Hannah (Ackley), 50
James, 50
JARED[2], 234–6, 774
Jared, 236
Jedediah, 495–6
Jonah, 17
Jonas G., 480
Joseph Olmstead, 234
Mary (Gates), 15, 234
Cone, Mary (Hungerford), 235, 482
Mary (Johnson), 495–6
Mehitable, 236
Mehitable (Cone), 236
MEHITABLE (SPENCER), 234, 771, 774
Nathaniel, 50, 235–6, 482
Noadiah, 235–6, 496
Olive, 50
Rachel, 16, 235–6
Rebecca, 234
Ruth, 234, 236
Samuel, 234
Sarah (Ackley), 50
Sarah (Hungerford), 235, 481–2
Sarah (Olmstead), 234–5
Stephen, 235–6, 482
Sylvanus, 50
Thomas, 49, 236
Conklin (Conkling)
Bruce, 491
Jane (Johnson), 491
Joseph, 523
Lydia (Kirtland), 523
Converse, Esther (Champney), 281
Conwell, Jehu, 539, 560
John(?), 560
Cook (Cooke)
Maj. Aaron, 340, 636–7
Abigail (Blake), 506
Abigail (Hodges), 255
Abigail (Howland), 255
ANNE[4], 254–5, 485, 488–90
Anne, 255, 503
Asenath, 506
Benjamin, 504
Bethia, 503
CALEB[3], 246–8, 250–5, 485
Caleb, 255–6, 485, 504
DAMARIS (HOPKINS), 242, 244–6, 448
Deborah, 367, 504–6
Deborah (Hopkins), 367, 448, 503–4
Deliverance, 504
Desire, 448, 505–6
Elisha, 506
Elizabeth, 246, 254–5, 485, 504, 506, 636–7, 639
Elizabeth (Latham), 246
Elizabeth (Lettice), 244
Elizabeth (Ring), 503
Elizabeth (Sears), 255
Experience (Hodges), 255
FRANCIS[1], 152, 239–45, 247, 251, 254, 444–6, 485, 503, 505, 690, 799–801, 854
Francis, 246

Cook, F. W., 439
George, 506
Hannah, 255, 504–6
Hannah (Cooke), 505
Hester, 240, 244–5
HESTER (MAHIEU), 239–40, 242, 244, 799
Jabez, 506
JACOB[2], 240, 242, 244–6, 251, 445, 448, 485, 505, 686, 799
Jacob, 246, 251, 505–6
James, 255
Jane, 240, 244, 255, 486
JANE (——), 246, 255, 488
Jasper, 781
John, 239–42, 244, 251, 255, 446, 448, 485, 504–6, 690, 781
Jonathan, 506
Joseph, 254–5
Joshua, 504
Josiah, 241, 254, 367, 448, 503–6, 584, 684
Lucy, 256
Lydia (Miller), 246
Martha, 246
MARY, 255, 448, 492, 494–5, 503–5, 684, plates xix p. 486, xx p. 490
Mary, 242, 244–6, 255–6, 504–6, 699, 703
Mercy, 255, 486, 506
Mercy (Paine), 504
Nathaniel, 717
Nicholas, 781
Patience (Doane), 504
Rebecca, 246, 506
Rebecca (Cowell), 505
Rebecca (Foote), 338, 340
Richard, 504
Ruhama, 504–5
Ruth, 246
SARAH, 717–8
Sarah, 246, 506
Sarah (Warren), 244
Solomon, 505
Susanna, 255–6
Sylvanus, 251
William, 505
Cooley, see Coley, Croley
Ruth (Ackley), 48
Samuel (see Coley), 48
Coomb (Coombs)
John, 301
Mary, 699
Cooper, Mrs., 757
Sir Ashley, 359
James Fenimore, 739, 749–50, 753, 756–9
Cooper, Thomas, 631
Timothy, 631
Judge William, 751–2, 755–6
Corbe, Goodman, 38
Corey, —— (Hand), 259, 271
Benjamin, 272
BETSEY[b], 89, 92, 259, 271–3, 276, 558, 561, 748, plates xiii p. 86, xiv p. 90, xvi p. 272, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
BETSEY (LITTLE), 259–60, 270, 272, 549, 553, 557–9, 560–2, 652
Betty, 272
David Fawcett, 272
Dovice F., 272
Elizabeth Amanda, 272
Elizabeth (Fawcett), 272
Elnathan, 260
Hetty Ann, 271, 273, 558, 561–2
Joanna, 259, 271
Joannah (Hand), 259, 271
JOHN[a], 259–60, 263–4, 268, 270–2, 535, 557–8, 560
John, 260, 271, 273
John Oliver, 272
Joseph, 264, 535, 560
Joshua, 260, 262, 271–2, 535, 557
Phebe (Darnell), 272
Polly, 271–2, 276
Ruth, 271, 273
Ruth (Lupton), 272
Sarah (Miller), 273
William Newton, 272
Zeb, 276
Zilpah, 272
Corn, John, 268
Cornbury, Lord, 538, 540, 821
Cornell, Anne H., 25
Susan H., 25
Corning, Hannah (Batchelder), 98
Joseph, 828
Rebecca (Woodbury), 828
Samuel, 98
Cornish, Elizabeth (Thrall), 797
James, 797
JOYCE, 611, 615
Cornwell, Anne (Johnson), 486, 489, 491
Elisha, 486, 488–9, 491–2
Samuel, 491
William, 486, 491
Corwin, George, 772
Cotta, Robert, 97
Cotton, Abigail (Parsons), 636
Hannah, 745
John, 636
Coult, Amherst, 497, plate xx p. 490
Asenath, plate xx p. 490
Coult, Benjamin, 497
John, 497, plate xx p. 490
John Gardner, plate xx p. 490
Joseph, plate xx p. 490
Lydia, plate xx p. 490
Mary, plate xx p. 490
Mercy (Johnson), 23, 35, 494, 497, plate xx p. 490
Miriam, plate xx p. 490
Miriam (Giddings), 497, plate xx p. 490
Nabby, plate xx p. 490
William, plate xx p. 490
Coursier, Mary, 543
Cowdrey, Lucy, 24
Moses, 24
Nathaniel, 24
Samuel, 24
William, 24
Cowell, Edward, 505
Rebecca, 505
Rebecca (Broughton), 505
Cox, Isaac, 553
Cozens, Mary (Chalker), 177
Richard, 177
Crackstone, Anna, 155
Craig, John, 560
Cramer, William, 532
Crane, Eli, 193–4
Henry, 194, 639
James, 782
Mehitable (Chapman), 193–4
Silas, 194
Sybil (Chapman), 194
Cranmer, George, 150
William, 150–1
Craven, James, 782
Crawford, James, 557
Jane Butler, 745
John, 539
Oliver, 557
Crayford, Katherine (Prence), 683
Creatty, Mary, 324
Cresap, Michael, 259, 560
Cressey, Mary (Batchelder), 98
Mighill, 98
Crippen, Mary (Ackley), 40
Thomas, 40
Crispe, George, 307
Hepsibah (Cole), 305, 307
Crittenden, Elizabeth, 383, 390
Nathaniel, 389
Croley (Coley?), Samuel, 201, 203
Cromwell, Elizabeth, 272, 651, 748
Oliver, 272, 602, 651, 748
Crosby, Eleazer, 369
Lydia (Godfrey), 369
Cross, ELIZABETH (FOX), 183, 346

Cross, John, 462
Mary, 424, 708
Mary (Hull), 462
Samuel, 183, 346
Crow, Mr., 353
John, 207
Crump, Thomas, 381
Crusoe, Robinson, 130
Cudworth, Capt., 352, 690
Culver, Ruth (Corey), 271, 273
Cunningham, Elizabeth, 235
Mary (Little), 559
Nelson, 559
Curtis, Hannah (Coe), 218
Isaac, 342
James, 218
Rachel (Ackley), 44
Sarah (Foote), 342
Sarah (Marvin), 578
Silas, 44
William, 578
Cushing, Lydia, 430
Mary (Thaxter), 429
Cushman, Elkanah, 246
Isaac, 246
Martha (Cooke), 246
Robert, 443
Thomas, 246
Custis, Mrs., 76, 643
John, 643
CUTLER, EPHRAIM[6], 273
Rev. MANASSEH[5], 86–7, 90, 434
SARAH[7], 748

Dana, Frances White, 742, 744, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Dane, John, 333
Danforth, Anna, 281
Elizabeth, 281
ELIZABETH (——), 281
ELIZABETH (POULTER), 281
Esther (Champney), 281
JANE (SUDBURY), 279
JONATHAN[2], 281
LYDIA[2], 118–9, 188, 204, 281, 733
Mary, 281
Mary (Wilson), 281
Mary (Withington), 281
NICHOLAS[1], 119, 279–81
Samuel, 281
THOMAS, 279
Thomas, 281
Daniels, Sarah, 136
Darby, William, 821
Darnell, Phebe, 272
Dauchy, Daniel, 498
Elizabeth (Johnson), 498
Emeline, 498
Dauchy, Harris, 498
Davenport, Rev., 786
Davis, Bridget, 294
Comfort, 486
Jesse, 743
John, 262, 294, 521
Laurence, 606
Margaret, 294
Robert, 294
Sarah, 197, 431
Sarah (Kirtland), 521
Davidson (Davison)
Christopher, 150
James B., 561
Thomas, 539, 557, 560
William, 143–4, 150
Dawes, Beman Gates[9], 4, plate iii p. 4
Betsy Gates[9], 4, plate iv p. 6
Charles Gates[9], 4, plate iii p. 4
Henry May[9], 4, 6, 742, plate iv p. 6
MARY B. (GATES), Frontispiece, v, xv, 3–6, 28–9, 247, 742, 745, 748–9
Mary Frances[9], 3, 4, 745, plate iv p. 6
Rufus Cutler[9], 4, plate iii p. 4
RUFUS R.[8], 4–5, 29, 748, plate ii p. 3
SARAH (CUTLER), 748–9
Day, Jerusha, 498
Deacon, John, 770
Nicholas, 422–3, 425
Deam (Deem)
Lewis, 539, 560
Dean (Deane)
Amos, 21
Ann (Skinner), 21
Elizabeth (Ring), 503
Seth, 21
Stephen, 63, 503
Sybil (Gates), 21
Dearslay, Hannah, 212
Dearth, Betsey (Roberts), 273
Elizabeth (Roberts), 560, 562
Edward, 560, 562
George, 272, 539
James, 539
John, 273
Deble, see Dibble
Delano, Anna, 491
De La Warr, Lord, 151
DEMING, ELIZABETH[1], 337–9, 383
John, 337, 511
Jonathan, 382–3
Sarah (Graves), 383
Denison (Dennison)
Gen., 635
Denison, Daphne, 498
Sarah, 178
Dennison, see Denison
Denman, Christian, 833
Denslow, Henry, 717
Dent, Francis, 518
Denton, Rev. Richard, 213, 841
Derby, Widow Alice, 825
Devereaux, Devereux
Ann, 75, 294–5
ANN (——), 290, 293–5
BETHIA[2], 74–5, 294–5
Elizabeth, 295, 602
Emme, 295
Hannah, 295
Hannah (Blaney), 295
Harry, 286
Humphrey, 294–5, 602
JOHN[1], 75, 247, 285, 288–95, 600, 602, 831
John, 75, 294–5
Gen. J. W., 286
Robert, 293, 295
Susannah (Hartshorn), 295
De Vries, David, 646
Dewey, Anna, 848
Thomas, 848
De Wolf, Phebe (Marvin), 523
Dexter, Dr. H. M., 154
Diamond, Moses, 663
Dibble (Deble)
Elizabeth (Hull), 462
Israel, 462
Thomas, 461, 474
Dickenson, Azariah, 777
Frances (Foote), 340
Hannah (Spencer), 777
John, 340
Dickerman, Rebecca, 342
Dickey, Mary, 834
William, 834
Dimmock, Capt., 43
Abigail (Doane), 308
Timothy, 308
Diple, Rebecca (Prence), 683
Dixey, Mary, 834
William, 834
Dixon, Mary (Jouet), 543
William, 543, 545
Doane, —— (Wise), 312
ABIGAIL[5], 46–7, 311–2
Abigail, 299, 305, 308–9
ANN (——), 304–5
Anna, 302
Constant, 307–8
DANIEL[2], 66, 197, 247, 305–8, 367, 585, 768
Daniel, 306–7, 309

Doane, Deborah (Pratt), 312
Desire (Berry), 307
Edmund, 309
ELIZABETH (GODFREY), 309–12, 369
Elizabeth (Osborn), 309
Elkanah, 310–2
Elnathan, 309
Ephraim, 305, 504
Hannah (Bangs), 67, 305
Hannah (Farman or Farnum), 312
Hepsibah, 308
Hepsibah (Cole), 305, 307
ISRAEL[3], 197, 307–9, 361–2, 768
Israel, 309–12
James, 311–2
Jerusha (Chapman), 197
JOHN[1], 64–5, 67, 153, 197, 240–1, 299–305, 359, 367, 445–6, 448, 503–4, 584–5, 684, 765, 768
John, 67, 303–5
Joseph, 307, 367
Lydia, 197, 299, 304–5, 312
Martha (Huxley), 312
Martha (Paddock), 309
Mary, 308, 311–2
Mary (Godfrey), 307, 367
Mary (Smalley), 305
Mary (Yates?), 307
Mehitable (Twining), 307
Mercy (Cobb), 308, 768
Mercy (Knowles), 305
Nathaniel, 308
Orgillous, 197
Patience, 504
Phebe, 311–2
PRENCE[4], 197, 309–12, 369
Prince, 197, 309–12
Priscilla (Shipman), 312
Rebecca, 308, 585
Rebecca (Pettee), 305
Ruhama, 504
Ruth, 308, 311–2
RUTH (FREEMAN), 308–9, 361–2, 584
Dodd, George, 650–2
Sarah, 650, 653
Dodge, Daniel, 431
EDITH (——), 316–7, 427, 467
Edward, 317, 827
Elisha, 327
Elizabeth, 323, 327, 429, 825
ELIZABETH (——), 320, 323
Hannah, 323, 327
Hannah (Johnson), 491
Hannah (Woodbury), 319
Joanna, 837
Dodge, Joanna (Burnham), 431
Joanna (Hale), 323
Joanna (Larkin), 327
JOHN, 315, 319
John, 315–7, 321, 323, 327, 425, 705, 825
Joseph, 317
Joshua, 327, 837
Josiah, 323–4, 327
Lydia (Woodbury), 327
Margery, 317
MARGERY (——), 315, 319
MARY[2], 316–7, 424–5, 427–8
MARY[3], 227, 327, 429–30
Mary, 79, 324, 827
MARY (CONANT), 227–8, 319, 323, 326–7
Mary (Eaton), 317
Mary (Haskell), 317
Mary (Parker), 317
Mary (Porter), 319, 327
Michael, 315–6, 319, 323
Noah, 491
Rebecca, 327
RICHARD[1], 79, 315–7, 319–20, 324, 424, 431, 467, 827
Richard, 317, 431
Robert, 327
Samuel, 317
SARAH[2], 97, 316–7, 826–7
Sarah, 317, 327
Sarah (Eaton), 317
Sarah (Proctor), 321, 323
WILLIAM[1], 226–7, 315–6, 319–23, 327, 423, 429, 527, 698, 705, 723, 825, 831, 837
WILLIAM[2], 146, 227–8, 247, 249, 316, 319, 321, 323–7, 425, 429–30, 606, 698, 704–5, 826, 837
William, 315, 319, 323–4, 327, 425, 430, 433
Dolliver, Tristam, 832
Donavan, Mary (Pettyjohn), 652, 654
Dongan, Gov., 820
Donnington, Thomas, 543
Dorchester, Anthony, 417
Doty, Rev. Mr., 50
Della or Dolly (Ackley), 50
Edward, 246, 443
Elizabeth (Cooke), 246
John, 246
Sarah, 737, 739, plates xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
Douglas, Samuel, 560
Stephen A., 859
Dow, Mary (Graves), 381, 383
Samuel ,383
Dowd, Abraham, 393
John, 389
Downing, Ann or Hannah, 294
Benjamin, 294
Elinor, 294
Emanuel, 294, 831
Mary (Bennet), 294
Richard, 294
Theophilus, 294
Dudley, Deborah, 136–9
Joseph, 138
Mehitable, 136
William, 167
Dunham, Jonathan, 40, 775
Mary (Spencer), 40, 775
Silas, 494
Dunk, Hannah (Shipman), 735–6
Dunster, Roger, 659
Dutton, Joseph, 15, 236
Mary, 236
Rachel, 16
Rachel (Cone), 16, 236
Rebecca, 15
Samuel, 16, 236
Susanna, 139
Thomas, 15
Dyer, Phila (Johnson), 498
Philip, 498
Dymon, John, 407

Eaton, Francis, 763
Mary, 317
Sarah, 317
Eddy, Azariah, 754, 757
Edgerton, Eunice, 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Mary Ann, 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Edwards, John, 337
William, 477
Eels, Samuel, 201, 204
Eggleston, Begat, 785, 787
Eives, see Ives
Joseph, 341
Eldridge, Betsey, 491
Ellet, William, 698, 703
Elletrap, John, 834
Eliott (Eliot, Elliot)
Mr., 628, 845
ANDREW[1], 98, 331–3, 425, 428, 430, 704, 831, 833, 836
Andrew, 332–3, 430, 833
EMME[2] (EMMA), 332–4, 835–7
Emma, 334
EMMA (——), 331
Grace (Woodier), 331–3
Joan (Patch), 833
Rev. John, 281
Joseph, 389

Eliott, Mary, 334, 835–6
Mary (Browne), 334
Mary (Herrick), 430
MARY (VIVION), 331, 333
Matthew, 50
Mercy (Shattuck), 333
WILLIAM, 331
William, 334, 836
Ellis, Elizabeth (Freeman), 356
James, 680
John, 356
Ellsworth, Jonathan, 712
Elsey, HANNAH (MITCHELL), 216–7, 591
Nicholas, 216–7, 591
Samuel, 591
Elster, Cyrus C., 498
Delana (Johnson), 498
Fatha (Johnson), 498
Gideon, 498
Ely, Mary, 126
Emmons, Clara, 23, 35
Dr. Jeremiah, 23, 35, 45, 50
Jonathan, 23, 45
Joseph, 294
Lydia, 45
Lydia (Ackley), 23, 35, 45, 50
Obadiah, 23, 45
Ruth (Cone), 236
Samuel, 23, 45, 236
Thomas, 23, 45
Endicott, John, 224–6, 320, 371, 454–5, 721, 824, 829
Mary, 424, 430
English, Philip, 332
Eno, Abel, 112
James, 473
Enos, see Innes
William, Jr., 110
Ensign, David, 410
Mehitable (Gunn), 410
Evance (Evans?), Mr., 672
Evans, Thomas, 800
Evelith, Joseph, 333
Everrest, Isaac, 387–9
Ewing, Nathaniel, 539
Gen. Thomas, 52
William, 539

Fairbanks, Jonas, 518
Fairchild, Catherine (Coe), 218
Joseph, 218
Fairfield, Mary, 58
Falkwell, Edward, 570
Fantinge, Mary, 97
Farley, Mary (Woodbury), 836
Michael, 836
Farman (or Farnum), Hannah, 312
Farnham, Hiel, 738
Farnum, see Farman
Farret, James, 519
Farrington, Matthew, 518
Fawcett, Elizabeth, 272
Fellows, Richard, 231, 575
Fennoe, —— (Clarke), 209
Fenwick, George, 121, 185, 733
John, 817
Field, Ebenezer, 393
Zachery, 33
Fielder, Mr., 600
Filer, Walter, 717
Finch, Abraham, 509, 512–3
Finlay (Findley)
Rev. James, 262
Rachel, 89, 259, 561
Rev. Robert, 87–8
Firman, David, 651
Sarah (Pettyjohn), 651
Fisher, Lt., 293
ELIZABETH, 152, 443, 448
Fisk (Fiske)
John, 858, 860
Rev. Phineas, 133
Thomas, 333
William, 333
Fitch, Harry, 498
James, 188
John, 714
Lucy (Roberts), 714
Ruhama (Johnson), 498
Fletcher, Abigail, 201
John, 203
Mary (Ward), 201, 203
Follet, Abigail (Doane), 308
Foote, Abigail (Barker), 342
Abigail (Johnson), 342
ELIZABETH[3], 342, 390–1, 395
Elizabeth, 340
ELIZABETH (DEMING), 337–9, 383
Elizabeth (Nash), 342
Elizabeth (Smith), 340
Frances, 338, 340
Hannah, 342
Isaac, 342
JOAN (——), 337
John, 342
Joseph, 342
Mary, 340, 342
NATHANIEL[1], 16, 337–9, 372, 383, 511, 568
Nathaniel, 16, 338, 340, 342
Patience (Gates), 16
Rebecca, 338, 340
Rebecca (Dickerman), 342
ROBERT, 337
ROBERT[2], 338–42, 673
Foote, Samuel, 342
Sarah, 340, 342
SARAH (POTTER), 340–2, 390, 673
Sarah (Rose), 342
Stephen, 342
Susanna, 342
Tabitha (Bishop), 342
Ford, Abigail, 848
THOMAS[1], 34, 371–2, 453, 461, 569, 613, 661, 848
Fordham, Jonah, 215
Fordyce, Samuel, 272
Zilpah (Corey), 272
Foster, Bartholomew, 42
EDWARD[1], 445
Edward, 126
Hannah, 42
Hester (Bliss), 126
Lydia, 42
Mary, 42
Thankful, 42
Thankful (Ackley), 42, 48–9
Thomas, 42
Timothy, 42, 48–9
William, 259
Fowler, Abraham, 463
Elizabeth (Herrick), 424
John, 163
Philip, 424
Fowles, Philip, 835
FOX, ELIZABETH, 181–3, 345–6, 571
George, 602
Hannah, 345–6, 571
MARGARET (CLARK), 182, 345, 569
Francis, Capt., 435
Franklin, 286
Frary, Joseph, 486
Freeman, Abigail (Young), 362
Alice, 349, 356
ALICE (COLES), 349
Apphia (Quicke), 692
Bennett, 356, 361
BENNETT (HODSOLL), 349–50, 356
Bethia (Sturgis), 362
Ebenezer, 362
EDMOND, Eng., 349
EDMOND[1], 151, 349–56, 584–5, 689, 691, 693, 767
EDMOND[3], 360–2, 584–5
Edmond, 353, 356, 363, 693
Eleanor, 349
Elizabeth, 349–50, 356, 363, 585
Elizabeth (Sparrow), 767
Experience, 362
Hannah, 361, 363
Judge Henry Varnum, 360
Isaac, 362

Freeman, Jane (Gratwick), 349
JOHN[2], 247, 308, 353, 356–63, 368, 584–5, 692–3, 767
John, 349, 361, 584–5
Lois (Paine), 363
LYDIA[4], 360, 363, 368, 767
LYDIA (SPARROW), 363, 767
Margaret (Perry), 356
Mary, 362
Mary (Howland?), 361
Mercy, 361–2
Mercy (Bradford), 361
Mercy (Pepper), 364
MERCY (PRENCE), 356, 361, 691, 693
Nathaniel, 356, 361
Patience, 361
Prince, 361
Rachel, 363
Rebecca (Prence), 356, 693
Rebecca (Sparrow), 361, 767
RUTH[4], 308–9, 361–2, 584
RUTH (MERRICK), 361–2, 584–5, 802
Samuel, 585, 692, 767
Sarah, 362
Sarah (Mayo), 361
Sarah (Merrick), 361, 584–5
Sarah (Sparrow), 363
Thankful, 362
Thomas, 361, 363, 767
WILLIAM[3], 361, 363, 767
William, 349–50, 360, 363–4, 368, 767
French, Sarah (Graves), 395
Thomas, 395
Friend, John, 320
Frisbie, Jerusha, 491
Susanna, 342
Frost, Mary (Roberts), 273
Westly, 273
Fuller, Abel, 44
Abigail, 14, 17
Amos, 44
Ann, 14, 113
Jemima (Richardson), 481
Matthew, 14–7
Matthias, 481
Rebecca, 44
Roxanna (Ackley), 44
Samuel, 14–7, 354
Sarah, 14, 16
Sarah (Gates), 14–5
Timothy, 14–7

Gabriel, Elias, 272
Susanna (Bean), 272
Gaines, D. N., 23, 35, 496–7
Garden, JOANNA (HERRICK), 78, 92, 440
John, 78, 440
Gardner (Gardiner)
John, 293
Joseph, 705
Lion, 120, 185, 188, 372, 376
Mary (Warren), 622
Samuel, 293, 340
SARAH[2], 293
Seeth, 228
THOMAS[1], 222, 228, 293, 705, 823, 831
Garrett, Anna A., 25
Gatchell, John, 72
GATES, Deacon AARON[5], 18, 21–3, 35, 114, 494–6, plate ix p. 30
Rev. AARON[6], 22–5, 35, 114, plates vii p. 22, viii p. 26
Aaron, 18, 25
Abigail, 25
Abigail (Fuller), 14, 17
Amanda, 25
Amelia, 25
Ann, 18
Ann (Fuller), 14
Anna (Garrett), 25
Anne (Cornell), 25
BEMAN[7], 25–9, 496, 744–5, 749, plate v p. 10
Betsey Shipman, 29, 749
BETSEY S. (SHIPMAN), v, 6, 25, 29, 71, 89, 259, 272, 276, 496, 558, 607, 742, 744–9, plates vi p. 14, xxiii p. 740, xxxi, p. 870
BEZALEEL[4], 18, 21, 114, 139
Bezaleel, 18, 21
Charles Beman, 29, 749
Clara (Emmons), 23, 35
Daniel, 15, 25
David, 18
Deborah (Bushnell), 23–4
Edwin, 25
Electa, 25
Elizabeth, 16–7, 23, 35, 114
ELIZABETH (HUNGERFORD), 15–7, 481
ELIZABETH (JOHNSON), 22–3, 35, 485, 490, 494–8
Esther, 16, 21
Esther (Gates), 16
Esther (Hungerford), 15, 482
GEORGE[1], 9–16, 22, 114, 134–7, 208, 232, 234–5, 482, 618, 772–6, 806
George, 15
Giddings, see Jabez
Hannah, 17, 21
Gates, HANNAH (BRAINERD), 16–7, 137
Hannah (Brainerd), 15, 135–6
Harriet, 21
Helen (Wilder), 21
Henry, 18, 21, 23, 35, 496
Huldah, 22–4, 35
Jabez Giddings, 23, 35, 497, plate ix p. 30
Jacob, 15, 16
Jeremiah, 49
John, 14–6, 23–4, 496
Jonah Green, 480
Jonathan, 15, 16
JOSEPH[2], 14–6, 114, 137, 235
JOSEPH[3], 14–7, 114, 137
Joseph, 14, 16–8
Lucy (Blinn), 23
Lucy (Cowdrey), 24
Mary, 15, 21–3, 25, 137, 234
MARY BEMAN[8], Frontispiece, v, 3–6, 28–9, 247, 742, 745, 748–9
Mary (Balcom), 21
MARY (BRAINERD), 18, 139
Mary (Gates), 22
Mary (Stewart), 16
Noadiah Brainerd, 21
Oliver, 21–2
Patience, 15–7
Rachel (Dutton), 16
Rebecca (Dutton), 15
RUTH (BEMAN), 24–5, 114
Samuel, 14–6, 22–4, 482
Sarah, 14–6, 806
Sarah (Fuller), 14, 16
SARAH (OLMSTEAD), 9, 14, 618, 806
Stephen, 22
Susan (Cornell), 25
Susannah, 15–6, 18, 137
Susannah (Olmstead), 16
Sybil, 21
Thankful, 16
Thomas, 14–5, 133, 135–7, 235
Sir Thomas, 151, 449
Truman, 25
Gaylord, Elizabeth (Hull), 461
Mary, 403
Samuel, 403, 461
Gibbard, Sarah (Coe), 217
Timothy, 217
Gibbons, Caroline (Roberts), 273
Joshua Y., 273
Gibson, Capt. George, 261, 266–7
Mary (Ackley), 50
Giddings, Deborah, 24
George, 497
Jabez, 23, 35, 497, plate xx p. 490

Giddings, John, 427, 497
Mary, plate xx p. 490
Mercy (Johnson), 23, 35, 494, 497–8, plate xx p. 490
Miriam, 497, plate xx p. 490
Sarah, 115, 427
Thomas, 35, 46, 497, plate xx p. 490
Gilbert, Deborah (Beamon), 119
Thomas, 119, 408
Giles, see also Jygles
Abigail (Raymond), 708
Eunice (Herrick), 431
John, 708
Samuel, 431
Gilmore, Hugh, 260
Girdler, Mary, 58
Glover, Hannah (Parsons), 636
John, 81, 287, 455
Peletiah, 636
Godbertson, Godbert, 763
Godfrey, Deborah (Cooke), 367, 504
ELIZABETH[3], 309–12, 369
Elizabeth, 368
Francis, 367
GEORGE[1], 307, 367, 504
George, 367
Hannah, 367, 369
Jonathan, 368
Lydia, 369
LYDIA (FREEMAN), 360, 363, 368, 767
Mary, 307, 367, 369
Mercy (Mayo), 368
Moses, 367, 504
Phebe, 369
Rebecca, 369
RICHARD[2], 363, 367–8
Ruth, 367
Samuel, 367
Goff (Goffe)
——, 418, 810
Philip, 488
Goodin, Rachel (Roberts), 562
Thomas, 562
Goodrich, John, 340
Mary (Foote), 340
Sarah (Marvin), 578
William, 578
Goodwin, Elizabeth (White), 568
Mr. Walter L., v, 105
William, 568
Gookin, Gen., 635
Gott, Charles, 293
Grabill, A. F., 562
E. F., 562
E. H., 562
Graham, Abigail (Humphrey), 475
Graham, Benjamin, 475
Grant, Anna (Palmer), 378
Hannah, 183
Hannah (Chapman), 183
John, 378, 462
Mary (Hull), 378, 462
Mary (Porter), 378
MATTHEW[1], 183, 371–2, 375–8, 454, 462, 568–70, 794
Matthew, 183, 378
PRISCILLA[2], 378, 471, 475
PRISCILLA (——), 371, 378, 471
Samuel, 183, 378
Susanna (Capen), 378
Tahan, 183, 378
Gratwick, Jane, 349
Grave (Graves)
Abigail, 385–6, 390, 395
Abigail (Starr), 395
Ann, 395
Anne, 381
Calvin, 752–3
Daniel, 390
David, 395
Ebenezer, 396
Elias, 385
Elizabeth, 390, 395–6
Elizabeth (Barnes), 390
Elizabeth (Crittenden), 383, 390
ELIZABETH (FOOTE), 342, 390–1, 395
Elizabeth (Stevens), 395
ELIZABETH (STILLWELL), 383, 386–7, 390, 781–2
Elizabeth (Ventres), 383, 805
GEORGE[1], 10, 372, 381–3, 392, 613, 615, 805
George, 339, 381–3, 392, 805
Hannah, 390, 393
James, 782
JOHN[2], 381–390, 393, 782, plate xvii p. 384
JOHN[3], 342, 384–7, 389–95, plate xvii p. 384
John, 385, 390, 392, 395
Joseph, 386, 390, 392
Margaret, 390
Mary, 381, 383
Mary (Isbel), 396
MEHITABLE[4], 395, 463
Mindwell, 395
Naomi, 395
Nathaniel, 385, 390
Noahdiah, 395
Priscilla, 383
Prudence (Willard), 395
Rebecca (Stillwell), 782
Sarah, 382–3, 385–6, 390, 395
Grave, Thankful, 394
Thomas, 123
Gray (Grey)
Mr., 129
Edward, 369, 767
Hannah (Godfrey), 369
Priscilla (Sparrow), 767
Rachel (Freeman), 363
Robert, 534
Thomas, 288, 363
Green, Bartholomew, 480
Elizabeth, 480
Hannah (Dodge), 327
John, 327
Samuel, 480
Greenawalt, Elizabeth A. (Corey), 272
Greenfield, Hannah (Devereaux), 295
Peter, 295
Samuel, 622
Greenway, Samuel, 844
Gregory, Sarah, 730
Grey, see Gray
Gridley, Thomas, 667
Griffin (Griffing)
Capt., 43
Asahael, 197
Betty (Chapman), 197
Elizabeth, 110
Hannah, 475
Jasper, 523
John, 471
Lydia (Kirtland), 523
Robert, 523
Griggs, Jacob, 836
Grinnell, Daniel, 176
Jemima, 176
Griswold, Ann, 403
Bathsheba (North), 403
Deborah, 403
EDWARD[1], 189, 372, 399–402, 461–2, 569, 664, 794
Elizabeth (Hull), 463
Francis, 189, 402–3
George, 399, 403, 795
Jerusha, 664
John, 402–3
Joseph, 403, 664
Lydia, 403
MARGARET (——), 402
Mary, 403
Mary (Bemis), 403
Mary (Gaylord), 403
Mary (Holcomb), 403
Mary (Tracy), 189, 403
Matthew, 176, 399, 402, 664
Michael, 463

Griswold, Samuel, 403
SARAH[2], 403, 662–3
Sarah, 189, 402
Gritt, Mary, 728
Gross, Experience (Freeman), 362
Thomas, 362
Grover, John, 833
Lydia, 425
Nehemiah, 331
GUNN, DEBORAH[2], 409, 794, 797
Elizabeth, 409
Isaiah, 616
John, 410
Lazarus, 616
Mary (Williams), 410
Mehitable, 410
THOMAS[1], 372, 407–9, 569
Gunnison, 285
Guthrie, Abigail (Coe), 218
John, 218

Hackleton, Francis, 126
Hackwell, Robert, 350
Hale, Mr., 623
Rev. Mr., 331, 707
ANNA (OBER), 77–8, 607, 700, 707
Henry, 607, 707
Joanna, 323, 327
Robert, 707
Hall, Bethia (Bangs), 67
Cornelius, 661
Elizabeth (Henley), 168
Elizabeth (Johnson?), 486, 492
Rev. Gershom, 67
Hamlin John, 486, 492
James, 492
John, 547
Capt. Kinsley, 334
Mary (Eliott), 334
Pickering, 168
Halsey, Timothy, 543
Hamilton, 857
Col., 821
Gov. Andrew, 534
Hammon, Ann, 263
Isaac, 263
Hanbury, William, 301
Hancock, John, 435
Hand, Alice, 734
Johannah, 259, 271
John, 167
Rebecca (Bushnell), 167
Hanly (Handley, Henley)
Charles, 168
ELIZABETH, 168–9
Elizabeth, 168
Elizabeth (Weekes), 168
John, 168
Hanly, Mary, 168
Nathaniel, 168
Terence, 168
Hannison (Henderson), James, 392
Hannum, Mrs., 633
William, 632
Hanotaux, Gabriel, 754
Hardey, see Hardy
Harding, Bethia (Cooke), 503
Joseph, 302, 503
Martha, 302
Hardy (Hardey)
Elizabeth, 320
John, 316
Jonathan, 381
Josiah, 381
Samuel, 99
Hare, John, 273
Harmon, Edmond, 241
John, 241
Harper, Derastus, 559, 561
Fanny (Little), 557, 559, 561–2
John, 559
Theron, 559
Harriman, David, 522
Rev. John, 822
Harris, Arthur, 255, 490
Benjamin, 486, 488, 492
Isaac, 255, 490
Jane, 486, 490
Jane (Cooke), 255, 486
JOAN, 621–3
John, 321
Walter, 302
Harrison, Samuel, 542
Hart, Lucy (Bushnell), 169–70
Samuel, 169
Hartshorn, Susannah, 295
Haskell, Elizabeth, 319
Hannah, 834
Hannah (Woodbury), 833–4
Mark, 833–4
Mary, 317
Roger, 316, 319, 321, 426, 528
WILLIAM[1], 79, 316–7, 319, 322, 426, 528, 834
Hatch, Jonathan, 446
Hatfield, Matthias, 545
HATHERLY, EGLIN, 151, 689
Timothy, 151, 689
Hawes, Elizabeth, 585, 673
Hawkins, see Houghkins
Richard, 562
Hawks, Eleazer, 790
Thankful, 790
Hawley, Deborah (Pierson), 415
Ebenezer, 415
ELIZABETH[2], 190, 192, 415
Hawley, Elizabeth, 411
Ephraim, 414–5
Esther (Ward), 415
Hannah, 411, 415
John, 415
JOSEPH[1], 411–4, 462
Joseph, 411, 415, 462, 788
KATHERINE (BIRDSEY), 411, 414
Lydia (Marshall), 462
MARY[2], 217–8, 415
Mary (Thompson), 414
Nathaniel, 411
Patience (Nichols?), 414
Samuel, 411, 413–4
Sarah (Welles), 415
Thomas, 411
Hawthorne, 285
Hay, Henry, 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Love A. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Haydon, Uriah, 737
Hayes, Sarah, 730
Thene, 47–8
Haymond, Calder, 547
Mary (Pettyjohn), 654
William, 654
Haynes (Heynes)
Mr., 338
John, 455, 458–9
Hayward, Abigail (Newberry), 419
Ephraim, 419
Esther, 419
Lydia, 419
LYDIA (KILBOURN), 419, 513–4
Mary, 419
REBECCA[2], 419, 775–6
ROBERT[1], 372, 417, 419, 471, 513–4, 569, 628, 771, 776
Sarah, 419
Tabitha, 419
Taphet (Tayhath), 419
Heileger, Hannah (Bartlett), 76
William, 76
Henderson, see Hannison
Hendricks, Peter, 630
Henley, see Hanly
Henry, Dr. John L., plate xxvi p. 865
Herrick(?), Elizabeth, 97–8
Herrick, Abigail, 427
Abigail (Jacob), 430
Andrew, 431
Anna, 439–40
Anna (Ivimy), 431
Anna (Jackson), 439
Anna (Woodbury), 828
ANNE (BATCHELDER), 101–2, 432, 439
Benjamin, 424, 427, 429–30

Herrick, Bethia (Conant), 429
Edith, 430
EDITH (LASKIN), 421, 423–4, 527–8
Elizabeth, 321, 424, 427, 429, 440, 836
Elizabeth (Dodge), 327, 429
Ephraim, 424, 708
Eunice, 431
Hannah, 427
Hannah (Jones), 440
Hannah (Ordway), 424
HENRY[1], 321, 327, 421–4, 467, 527–8, 709, 828, 831, 836
HENRY[2], 227, 321, 325, 327, 332–3, 424–9, 705, 709, 828, 831, 836
HENRY[4], 430–1, 837
HENRY[5], 79, 102, 431–3, 436–9
Henry, 100, 421, 427, 430, 436, 439–40
Joan (May), 421
JOANNA[6], 78, 86–9, 437, 439–40, plates xi p. 80, xxvi p. 865, xxix p. 868
Joanna, 430–1, 708
Joanna (Burnham), 431
JOANNA (WOODBURY), 333, 430–1, 837
John, 421, 424, 828
Jonathan, 327, 429
JOSEPH[3], 327, 429–31, 439, 708, 828
Joseph, 424, 427–8, 430–1, 439, 828
Joshua, 430–1, 436
Lydia, 429–30, 828
Lydia (Cushing), 430
LYDIA (Woodbury?), 427, 429
Martha, 427
Martin, 430
MARY[3], 99, 100, 316, 427
Mary, 424, 430–1, 433, 436–7, 439–40, 708
Mary (Cross), 424, 708
MARY (DODGE) [of ZACHARY[2]], 316–7, 424–5, 427–8
MARY (DODGE) [of JOSEPH[3]], 227, 327, 429–30
Mary (Endicott), 424, 430
Mary (Remington), 424
Mary (Thaxter), 429
Pyam, 440
Ruth, 430, 440
Samuel, 429–30
Sarah, 427, 431
Sarah (Leach), 424, 429
Susanna (Beadle), 427
Thomas, 424
Herrick, Tryphosa, 430
Sir William, 421
ZACHARY[2], 100, 227, 247, 316–7, 321, 324, 424–8
Herrington, Joan, 621
Hewet, Azariah, 259
Heynes, see Haynes
Hibbard, Joan, 425–6
Robert, 425, 606
Hicks(?), MARGARET, 402
Hicks, Lydia, 66–7
Lydia (Doane), 305
Robert, 63–6, 305
Samuel, 65, 305
Hide, see Hyde
Higgins, Benjamin, 44, 67, 362
Beriah, 505
Desire (Cooke), 505
Hannah, 44
Hannah (Cole), 44
Ichabod, 44
Israel, 44
Jane (Snow), 44
Jonathan, 363, 505, 767
Joseph, 505
Lydia (Bangs), 67
LYDIA (SPARROW), 363, 767
Michael, 90
Richard, 44, 362, 505, 765, 767
Samuel, 44
Sarah (Freeman), 362
Higginson, Rev. Francis, 421
Hill (Hills)
Mr., 289
Abigail (Woodbury), 826, 833
Alexander, 741
Harry, 197
Jane (Bushnell), 165
Jerusha (Chapman), 197
John, 165, 176–7, 668, 826, 833
Joseph, 567
Katherine (Chalker), 176–7, 668
Luke, 719
Mary, 719
Ruth, 197
Sarah, 571
Valentine, 288–9
Hilliard, Bezalel, 738
Hinckley, Mary (Freeman), 362
Samuel, 362
Hinds, Medora M. (Johnson), 494–5, 498
Hitchcock, Rev. Mr., 434, 436
John, 790
Mary, 790
Hoadley, Rev. John, 164–5
Sarah (Bushnell), 164–5
Hobart(?), REBECCA, 66–7
Hobart, Dorothy, 136
Edmund, 66
Rev. Jeremiah, 132–4, 480
Rev. Peter, 66
Hobson, Elizabeth (Shipman), 734
John, 734
Hodges, Mr., 170–1
Abigail, 255
Arthur, 559
Elizabeth (Little), 559
Experience, 255
John, 255
Mercy (Cooke), 486
Samuel, 255
William, 255
Hodgkins, Elizabeth, 801
HODSOLL, BENNETT, 349–50, 356
Christian, 349
FAITH (——), 349–50
JOHN, 349–50
John, 350
Hoken, 358
Holcomb, Mary, 403
Thomas, 403
Holden, Julia (Shipman), 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Nathaniel, 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Hollister, Judge, 458
David B., 498
Florinda (Johnson), 498
Holme, Randle, 359
Holmes (Homes)
Eliphalet, 22, 496
John, 447, 651
Oliver W., 286
Rebecca, 163
Robert, 651
Susanna (Cooke), 255–6
Holt, Isaac, 408
Homan, Benjamin, 545
Homes, see Holmes
Hooker, Mrs., 33
Rev. Thomas, 9, 202, 455, 611, 614, 667, 675, 678, 805, 857–8
Hopewell, Thomas, 793
Hopkins, Abigail, 585
Caleb, 445, 448
Catherine (Wheldon), 448
Constance, 443, 448
DAMARIS[2], 242, 244–6, 448
Damaris, 443, 448
David, 369
Deborah, 367, 448, 503–4
Elizabeth, 449, 763–4
ELIZABETH (FISHER), 152, 443, 448
Giles, 369, 443, 445, 448, 503, 585
Mary (Godfrey), 369

Hopkins, Mary (Merrick), 584–5
Nathaniel, 369
Oceanus, 444, 448
Ruth, 448, 763
STEPHEN[1], 44, 146, 151–2, 242, 244, 247, 369, 443–51, 503, 585, 763–4, 800, 854
Stephen, 151, 369, 443, 449–50, 584–5
William, 443
Horr, Ruth (Corey), 271, 273
HORTON, SARAH, 221, 226–7
Hosford, John, 793–4
Phillipa (Thrall), 794
Hoskins, Elizabeth, 797
Hosmer, Hannah (Bushnell), 164
Stephen, 164, 233
Thomas, 164
Houghkins (Hawkins?), Cassandra (Roberts), 562
How, Daniel, 519
Joseph, 518
Nathaniel, 342
Sarah (Foote), 342
Howd, Hannah, 342
Howes, Jeremiah, 693
Mary, 692
Sarah (Bangs), 67
Sarah (Prence), 693
Thomas, 67, 692–3
Howland, Abigail, 255
Arthur, 690–1, 693
Elizabeth (Prence), 690–1, 693
Henry, 302
James, 255
John, 240, 255, 355, 688
Joseph, 255
Mary, 361
Prince, 691
Thomas, 691
Hoyt, Betsey G. (Dawes), 4, plate iv p. 6
Elizabeth, 787
RHODA (——), 787
Simon, 569, 787, 793
Walter, 787
Zerubbabel, 787
Hubbard, Anna, 497
Daniel, 208–9
Elijah, 495, 497
George, 209
John, 497
Mary (Clarke), 208–9
Olive, 497–8
Phebe (Johnson), 495, 497
Robert, 505
Samuel, 340
William, 321
Hubbell, Alonzo, 498
Elnathan, 498
James, 498
John, 414
Lemuel, 498
Marinda (Benedict), 50
Patience (Nichols?), 414
Richard, 498
Sarah (Johnson), 498
Hudson, Henry, 809
Huet (Huit)
Rev. Ephraim, 399, 568, 717, 785
Huggins, Hannah, 108
Hughes, Lewis, 479
Sarah (Hungerford), 479
William, 770
Huit, see Huet
Hull, Abigail (Chipman), 463
Abigail (Kelsey), 462
Agnes, 453
CORNELIUS[4], 395, 463
Cornelius, 460–1, 463, 661
Diana (Chalker), 464
Edith, 467–8
ELIZABETH[6], 178, 194, 196, 464
Elizabeth, 461–3
ELIZABETH (LOOMIS), 461–2, 571
Elizabeth (Wellman), 467
GEORGE[1], 372, 378, 401, 407, 453–4, 456, 459–60, 569, 660–1, 677
George, 462–3, 467
Hannah (Kelsey), 463
Hannah (Sheather), 462
ISAAC[1], 226–7, 316, 324, 424, 467, 831
Isaac, 467
Jehiel, 463
Joane, 453
JOANE (PESON), 453
John, 413, 453, 462–4
JOSEPH[3], 247, 461–3
JOSEPH[5], 178, 219, 463–4
Joseph, 453, 463–4
Joshua, 453, 461
JOSIAH[2], 378, 401, 407, 459–62, 569, 571, 661
Josiah, 178, 462–4
Martha, 461–2
MARY[2], 453, 460–1, 661–2
Mary, 378, 462
Mehitable, 463–4
Mehitable (Chalker), 178, 464
MEHITABLE (GRAVES), 395, 463
Naomi, 461–2
Peter, 463
Phebe, 464–5
Phebe (Rutty), 463
Hull, Rebecca, 462
Rebecca (Jones), 461
Richard, 531
RUTH[2], 467–8, 708
Ruth (Phelps), 463
Sarah, 460, 462, 467–8
Sarah (Baldwin), 464
Sarah (Cocke), 467
Silas, 464
"SIBYLLA" (COE), 178, 219, 463–4
Sybil, 464
THAMZEN, (MICHELL), 453, 460
THOMAS, 453
Thomas, 462
William, 453
Humphrey, Abigail, 475
Hannah, 475
Hannah (Griffin), 475
Joanna, 825
John, 475
MARTHA[2], 472, 475, 734–6
Mary, 475
Mary (Mills), 475
MICHAEL[1], 372, 378, 401, 471–5, 569
PRISCILLA (GRANT), 378, 471, 475
Samuel, 471–2, 475
Sarah, 475
Susanna, 471
Hungerford, Anne, 479
Deborah (Spencer), 481, 778
ELIZABETH[3], 15–7, 481
Elizabeth (Smith), 481
Esther, 15, 41, 482
Green, 137, 481
Hannah, 479
Hannah (Willey), 12, 479, 774
Jemima (Richardson), 481
John, 481, 777–8
Mary, 235, 482
MARY (Green?), 480–1
Sarah, 165, 235, 479, 481–2
Susanna, 481
THOMAS[1], 12, 15, 41, 165, 207, 235, 372, 477–9, 613, 677, 774, 778
THOMAS[2], 15, 41, 132, 137, 235, 247, 479–81, 778
Thomas, 481
Hunt, Peter, 597
Thomas, 676
Hunter, Gov., 540
Hunting, Capt. Samuel, 293
Huntington, Irene (Johnson), 497
Ruth, 681
Sarah, 201
Sarah (Clarke), 201, 204
Silas, 497

Huntington, Simon, 204
William, 204
Hurlbut, Thomas, 188
Hutchen, Capt. Benjamin, 112
Hutchinson, 855
Anne, 722
Hutton, Sir Timothy, 144
Huxley, Martha, 312
Hyde (Hide)
Hester, 668
William, 164, 166, 668

Ingham, Joseph, 164
Mary, 193
Sarah, 177
Sarah (Bushnell), 164
Ingram, Rebecca, 177
Innes (Enos?), James, 717
Ireson, Flood, 286
Isbel, Mary, 396
Ives, see Eives
Phebe, 673
Ivimay, Anna, 431

Jackson, Anna, 439
Bethia (Bartlett), 76
George, 76
Jacob (Jacobs)
(——), 756
Abigail, 430
John, 430
Nicholas, 430
Peter, 430
Jacobus, D. L., 590
James, Rev. John, 11
Jefferson, 857
Jenkins, John, 768
Patience (Sparrow), 768
Jenne, John, 63, 763
Jennings, Nicholas, 477
Tirzah V. (Bower), 562
Jennor, —— (Clarke), 209
Jessop, Edward, 214
Jewell, George, 543
Jewet, Gibbon, 19
Jobes, Constance (Little), 654
Daniel, 654
Joe Tom, 754
Johnson, Abiel, 491
Abigail, 342, 498
Abigail (Wheeler), 491
Abner, 491, 495
Adelaide, 494
Alfred, 497
Alvah, 491
Amasa, 490
Amy, 497
Amy Ann, 491
Johnson, Anna, 491, 497–8
Anna (Delano), 491
Anna (Parmalee), 495
Anne, 486, 489, 491
ANNE (COOKE), 254–5, 485, 488–90
Benjamin, 490–1, 495
Betsey (Eldridge), 491
Betsey (Thornton), 491
Betty, 495–6
CALEB[2], 255, 448, 488–92, 494–5, 497, 503–5, 684, plates xix p. 486, xx p. 490
Caleb, 497
Carlisle P., 491
Charlotte, 491
Charlotte (Johnson), 491
Chester, 498
Clarissa, 491
Clarissa (Parker), 490–1
Clarissa (Perryn), 491
Clark, 498
Cyrus, 491
Danford, 498
Daphne (Dennison), 498
Daphne or Delphine (Randall), 491
Delana, 498
Dyar C., 495, 498
Eli, 495
Elisha, 494–5, 497–8
ELIZABETH[3], 22–3, 35, 485, 490, 494–8
Elizabeth, 486, 489, 492, 498
Elizabeth (Bushnell), 164
Elizabeth (Cooke), 254–5, 485
Elsie (Smith), 491
Emeline (Dauchy), 498
Enos, 495, 497
Eri, 494
Fatha, 498
Florinda, 498
Francis, 74
Franklin N., 491
Hannah, 491
Hannah (Clarke), 490
Harris, 23, 497–8
Ira, 491, 495–6, 498
Irene, 497
Iru (Irue), 494–8, plate xix p. 486
Isa, 498
Isaac, 490–1, 498
Jabez, 491
Jabez Giddings, 23, 497–8
JAMES[1], 255, 485–6, 488–91, 494–5, 497, 504
James, 488–92, 494–5
Jane, 491
Johnson, Jane (Harris), 486, 490
Jerusha (Day), 498
Jerusha (Frisbie), 491
Jerusha (Kilbourn), 494–5
Joanna (Bean), 272
John, 488, 490–2, 494–8
John Marks, 491
Joseph, 488, 490, 492, 494–5
Josiah, 490
Julius, 494–5
Lois (Brainerd), 494–5
Lucy, 491
Martha (Perkins), 498
Martin, 495
Mary, 494–6, 498, 559
Mary (Cole), 495
MARY (COOKE), 255, 448, 492, 494–5, 503–5, 684, plates xix p. 486, xx p. 490
Mary (Rollo), 498
Medora M., 494–5, 498
Mercy, 23, 35, 494, 497–8, plate xx p. 490
Mercy (Maker), 488, 490
Molly, 495–6
Olive, 497–8
Olive (Hubbard), 497–8
Patience, 498
Phebe, 495, 497
Phila, 498
Phila (Talbot), 498
Polly, 498
Polly (Marks), 491
Rebecca (Cole), 491
Robert, 164, 255, 485
Ruhama, 35, 490, 494, 497–8, 504–5
Sally, 497
Salmon, 491
Salmon Coats, 491
Sarah, 490, 498
Sarah Ann, 491
Sarah (Clarke), 490
Seba, 498
Sophronia (Rogers), 491
Thomas, 491
Timothy, 491
Timothy Kilbourn, 495
William, 164
Johnston, Alexander, 858
James, 553
John, 553
Rev. William, 272, 557, 559
Jones, Betsey, 197
Rev. David, 262
Hannah, 440
Hepzibah (Chapman), 197
Jeffry, 536

Jones, John, 650
Mary (Bushnell), 164
Priscilla (Kirtland), 523
Rebecca, 461
Samuel, 164
Sarah, 680
Seth, 197
Thomas, 163–4, 523, 680
William, 386
Jordan, James, 177
John, 177, 668
Katherine (Chalker?), 177
Mary, 668
JOSE, PHEBE[1], 159
Joshua, see Uncas
Jouet, Daniel, 543
Elizabeth, 543
Mary, 543
Mary (Coursier), 543
Judd, Elizabeth, 571
Mary, 571
Sarah, 490
Thomas, 571
Judson, Jeremiah, 340
Ens. Joseph, 413
Sarah (Foote), 340
Jygles (Giles?), William, 832

Kellogg(?), Alice, 577–8
Kellogg, Nathaniel, 576
Kelly, Franklin, 559
Paulina (Little), 559
Kelsey, Abigail, 462
Hannah, 463
Kempton, Manasseh, 65
Kennard, John, 775–6
Rebecca (Spencer), 775–6
Kennison, Reuben, 433
Ketcham, Edward, 787
Rebecca, 787
Kettle, Elizabeth (Allen), 708
James, 101
John, 101, 708
Mary, 708
Mary (Batchelder), 101
Keyser, George, 518
Kidd, Capt., 39
Kilbourn, Elizabeth, 514
Elizabeth (Barker?), 514
Frances, 513–4
FRANCES (——), 509, 512–4
George, 514
Jerusha, 494–5
Jerusha (Shalor), 494
JOHN, 509
John, 495, 514
LYDIA[2], 419, 513–4
Margaret, 514
Kilbourn, Mary, 513–4
Naomi, 514
Samuel, 495
Sarah (Bronson), 514
THOMAS[1], 372, 495, 509, 511–2, 514, 677
Thomas, 495, 514
Kimball, Capt., 434
Joanna (Burnham), 431
Samuel, 431
Kimberly, Eleazur, 340
Thomas, 413
King Charles, 203, 253, 279, 400, 809, 820
King Edward III, 294
King George, 76, 540–1
King James, 150, 187, 820, 827, 853–4
"King Philip" (Metacom), 247–53, 357
King William, 20, 432, 536–8, 541, 820, 827, 854, 856
King, Joanna (Taylor), 788, 790
Samuel, 790
Kirtland, Alice, 518
Ann, 521
Azubah, 169, 523
Barbara, 518
Daniel, 523
ELIZABETH[4], 523, 735–6, plates xxx p. 869, xxxii p. 871, xxxiii p. 872
Elizabeth, 521, 523
Ethelinda (Pratt), 739
Hannah, 521–2, 681
JOHN[3], 169–70, 518, 521–3, 681, 733, 736
John, 517–8, 523
John Thornton, 523
Lydia, 523
Lydia (Belden), 523
Lydia (Marvin), 523
LYDIA (PRATT), 522–3, 681
Martha, 521–3
Martha (Whittlesey), 523
Mary, 204, 521–2
Mary (Perkins), 523
Mary (Rand), 521
NATHANIEL[2], 169–70, 204, 247, 517–22, 681, 734, 809–10
Nathaniel, 204, 521, 523
Parnell, 169, 523
PARNELL (——), 519, 521, 734
Phebe (Marvin), 523
PHILIP[1], 169–70, 204, 517–8, 681, 769
Philip, 517–21, 523, 769
Priscilla, 521, 523
Kirtland, Ruth (Pierce), 521
Samuel, 169–70, 523
Sarah, 518, 521–2
Sarah (Chapman), 523
Susanna, 518, 522
Temperance (Buckingham), 523
Thankful (Bushnell), 169–70
Knapp, Goodwife, 460
Elizabeth (Seymour), 730
Timothy, 730
Knickerbocker, John, 752
Knight, Daniel, 521
Sarah, 42
Madam Sarah, 400
William, 518
Knott, Hannah (Devereaux), 295
Dr. Richard, 74, 295
Knowles, Apphia (Bangs), 67
Barbara, 368
John, 67
Mercy, 305
Mercy (Freeman), 361
Richard, 65, 305
Samuel, 361
Knox, Gen., 287
Capt. James, 558

Lacey, Abigail B., 51
Ladner(?), MARY, 543, 546
Ladner, Abigail (Trotter), 543
Absalom, 543, 546
Daniel, 543
Elizabeth (Jouet), 543
Robert, 543
Sarah, 543
La Fayette, 286
Laiton (Leighton, Laughton)
John, 519
PARNELL (——), 519
Lambert, Richard, 422
Lamberton, Capt., 786
Lamson, see Sampson
Lanckford, Richard, 763
Lane, Anna, 47
Betsey (Ackley), 48
Larcom, Lucy, 285
Larcum, Mary (Herrick), 431
Large, —— (Shipman), 734
John, 734
Larkin(?), HUGH, see LASKIN
Larkin, Joanna, 327
Joanna (Hale), 323, 327
LASKIN, ALICE (——), 527–8
Damaris, 528
EDITH[2], 421, 423–4, 527–8
HUGH[1], 423, 527–8, 831
Timothy, 527–8
Latham, Elizabeth, 246

Latham, Robert, 246
William, 764
Lathrop, Dr. Joseph, 24
Latimore, Marie, 291
Laud, Archbishop, 399, 621
Laughton, see Laiton
Launitz, Robert E., 753
Law, Margaret (Kilbourn), 514
Richard, 514
Lawrie, Gov. Gawen, 532
Lea, Robert, 575
Leach, John, 227
Mary, 102
Richard, 424
Sarah, 424, 429
Sarah (Conant), 227
Leatherstocking, 487, 739, 749–59
Lechford, 855
Ledyard, William, 739
Lee, Ann (White), 818, 822
Richard Henry, 89
Robert, 509, 575
Sarah (Kirtland), 521–2
Thomas, 521, 543, 818, 822
TRYPHOSA, 799, 801–2
Leete, Joshua, 393
William, 163
Leffingwell(?), Rebecca, 736
Leffingwell, Elizabeth, 736
Thomas, 736
Leigh, Anne (Hungerford), 479
John, 165, 479
Leighton, see Laiton
Leonard, John, 126
Mary, 126
Lester, John, 717
Lettice, Elizabeth, 244
Leverett, John, 635
Leveridge, William, 418
Lewis, Amy, 48
Angeline (Ackley), 51
George, 766
John, 475
Mary (Humphrey), 475
Mary (Turrell), 48
Milton, 51
Sarah, 308, 766
Thomas, 48
William, 785
Light, Agatha (Pettyjohn), 652, 654
Betty, 652, 654
Mary, 652, 654
William, 652, 654
Lincoln, Rachel, 585
Lindley, Mary M. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Ziba, 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Linn, Lt. William, 266–7
Linnel, Thomas, 308
Lister, Edward, 443
Little (Littel)
—— (Martin), 558
—— (PETTYJOHN), 259
Abigail, 548
Abraham, 272, 545–6, 548, 556–7, 559, 561–2, 654
ABSALOM[3], 263–4, 535, 537, 539, 541, 543, 545–50, 554–8, 560–2, 650, 652–4
Absalom, 555–8, 560–1, 653
Adonijah, 535, 547, 549–50, 556, 560
Amasa, 546
Amos, 546–7, 549, 558, 655
Andrew, 545–8, 560, 562
Ann, 558
ANTHONY[2], 541, 543, 545–6, 562, 654–5
Anthony, 545–7, 549, 560
BETSEY[4], 259–60, 270, 272, 549, 553, 557–9, 560–2, 652
Comfort, 543
Constance, 531, 543, 546, 654
David, 562, 654
Deborah, 546, 556, 559, 653–4
Elizabeth, 543, 546–7, 559
Elizabeth (Whalen), 559
Ellen, 559
Elvira, 559
Ephraim, 546
Esther, 549, 558, 652
ESTHER (PETTYJOHN), 260, 272, 547–9, 554–62, 652–4
Fanny, 557, 559, 561–2
George, 531, 813
Hannah, 546
Hope, 559, 561–2
James, 548, 654
Jean, 547
Jehu, 547
Jemima, 559
JOHN[1], 531–2, 534, 537, 541–3, 562, 654–5, 813, 818–9, 822
John, 531, 543, 545, 547, 813
John Thompson, 558
John W., 654
Jonathan, 543
Joseph, 531, 813
Josiah, 260, 263, 559–60
Keziah, 547
Keziah (Stevenson?), 547
Levina (Pettyjohn), 547, 652, 655
Louisa S. (Bellows), 559
Margaret, 559
Martha, 543
Mary, 546–8, 557, 559
Little, Mary (Acken), 546
MARY (Ladner?), 543, 546
Mary (Johnson), 559
Mary (Neeld), 558
Mary (Norris), 557–8
MARY (WHITE), 531–2, 543, 821–2
Maxwell, 559
Mehitable, 543
Milburn, 559
Molly, 546
Moses, 531, 545, 813
Norris, 558
Paulina, 559
P. Stokely, 547, 652
Rachel, 546
Robert, 543–6, 560–2
Ruth, 548–9, 654
Samuel, 543–5
Sophia, 546
Stokely, 547, 560, 562, 652
Temperance, 546, 652
Temperance (Stockley), 547, 652
Thomas, 654
Thompson, 559
Tilsey Ann, 558
William, 264, 535, 546, 559–60, 562
Livingston, Philip, 392
Lloyd, Alonzo, 51
Caroline (Ackley), 51
Lobdell, Simon, 771–2
Lochry, Col., 261, 268
Loftis, Edmund, 534
Loker, Hannah (Brewer), 294
Henry, 294
London, John, 418
Longfellow, 285
Longwell, Isaac, 547
James, 547
Mary (Little), 547
Loomis, Agnes, 567
ELIZABETH[2], 461–2, 571
Elizabeth (Judd), 571
Elizabeth (Moore), 571
Elizabeth (Scott), 571
Esther, 712
Hannah (Fox), 345–6, 571
John, 567–8, 570–1
JOSEPH[1], 346, 372, 399, 401, 567–71, 614–5, 718
Joseph, 568–571
Mary, 571
Mary (Chauncy), 571
Mary (Judd), 571
MARY (WHITE), 567–8, 571
Nathaniel, 571
Samuel, 571
SARAH[2], 571, 615, 618

Loomis, Sarah (Hill), 571
Thomas, 345–6, 571
Lord, Abner, 741
Hannah, 615
John, 163–4
Mary, 615, 618
Nathaniel, 17
Rebecca (Bushnell), 163–4
Richard, 383
Sarah, 383
Thomas, 164, 383, 615, 618
William, 232, 522, 618
Loring, Hannah, 197
Lothrop, Capt., 324, 704
Abigail (Doane), 299, 305
Rev. John, 305
Samuel, 305
Capt. Thomas, 832
Lovelace, Gov., 540
Loveland, John, 193–4
Lydia (Chapman), 193–4
Ruth (Chapman), 193
Thomas, 193–4
Titus, 193–4
Lovett (Lovet)
Capt. Benjamin, 79, 437
Elizabeth (Batchelder), 101–2
Israel, 102
Israel Eliot, 333
Jane, 700
Simon, 836
Low, Capt., 434, 436
Lowell, 753
Lucas, Asenath (Cooke), 506
Moses, 506
Ludlow, Roger, 120, 454–60, 569, 677
Ludolf, Henry William, 394
Lum, John, 51
Lucretia (Ackley), 51
Lupton, Ruth, 272
Luxford, (——), 131
James, 301, 764
Lyford, Rev. John, 222–4, 226
Lyman, Elizabeth (Parsons), 637, 639
Ruth, 639
Thomas, 639
Lyndall, Mr., 836
Lynde, Lydia, 170
Nathaniel, 170
Sarah (Pratt), 170

Madox, William, 534
Magott, Joseph, 382
Maher, Annie Kelsey, 384
MAHIEU, HESTER, 239–40, 242, 244, 799
MAHIEU, JENNY, 239
Jenny, 239
Majory, Eleanor, 76
Maker, James, 490
Mercy, 488, 490
Manly, Capt., 438
Mann, Col. James, 743
Manning, Capt. Nicholas, 520, 705
Mansfield, Arthur, 355
Damaris, 528
Joseph, 673
Mary (Potter), 673
Paul, 423, 528
Richard, 672
March, George, 424
Mary, 424
Markham, Priscilla, 382
Priscilla (Graves), 383
William, 382–3
Marks, Polly, 491
Rose, 392
Marsh(?), Elizabeth, 650
Marsh, John, 650
Margaret, 712
Sarah, 425
Marshall, Lydia, 462
Samuel, 462
Thomas, 407
Martin, Bethia (Bartlett), 75
Christopher, 151
John, 558
Robert, 75
Marvin, Abigail, 578
Alice (Kellogg?), 577–8
EDWARD, 575
Elizabeth, 577
ELIZABETH (——), 575, 577
HANNAH[2], 577–8, 728–9
Lydia, 523, 578
MARGARET (——), 575
Mary, 164, 166, 577–8
MATTHEW[1], 10, 164, 372, 575–7, 613, 615, 729
Matthew, 576–7
Phebe, 523
Rachel, 578
Rebecca, 578
Reinold, 523, 575–6
Samuel, 578
Sarah, 578
Mary, Queen of Scots, 144
Mascoll, Elizabeth (Batchelder), 99, 100
John, 100
Mason, Capt., 611, 697
Dorothy (Hobart), 136
Capt. John, 337, 457, 616–7, 677–8
Mason, Lowell, 26
Robert, 323
Massey, Jeffrey, 423, 832
Massasoit, 247–8, 445
Masters, Francis, 423
Mather, Rev. Azariah, 193
Cotton, 279, 589
Rev. Eleazer, 841, 845
Joseph, 843
Rev. Richard, 589, 841–2
Rev. Samuel, 796
William, 841
Mathews, Dr., 743
Maud, Mr., 843
Maurice, Cornelius, 434
Maverick, Rev. John, 371, 456, 660
Maxfield, Nancy, 48
May, Joan, 421
Mayhew, Thomas, 686
Mayo, Barbara (Knowles), 368
Hannah (Freeman), 361
Hannah (Prence), 360, 693, 766–7
John, 361
Rev. John, 67, 308–9, 361, 693, 801
Mary, 67
Mercy, 368
Nathaniel, 308–9, 584, 693, 764
Richard, 309
Ruth (Doane), 308
Samuel, 67, 361
Sarah, 361–2
Thomas, 309, 368
McClellan, George B., 27–8
McLean, Alexander, 557
McLoud, Angus, 115
Anson, 115
Clarissa (Beman), 115
Sarah (Giddings), 115
McMichael, Isaac, 263–4
McMillan, Rev. John, 274
McNeff, Ellen (Little), 559
Samuel, 559
Meacham, Anna (Herrick), 440
Ebenezer, 437, 440
Jemima, 700
Lois (Beman), 113
Phineas, 113
Meeker, William, 815–6
Meigs, John, 673
Mentor, John, 462
Merrick, Abigail (Hopkins), 585
Anna (Wilbore), 585
Benjamin, 308, 585
Elizabeth, 585
Elizabeth (Freeman), 585
Elizabeth (Hawes), 585
Isaac, 585

Merrick, John, 585, 802
Joseph, 585
Mary, 584–5, 802
Mercy (Bangs), 67, 585
Rachel, 585
Rebecca, 361, 584–5, 767, 802
Rebecca (Doane), 308, 585
REBECCA (TRACY), 584–5, 799–802
RUTH[2], 361–2, 584–5, 802
Sarah, 361, 584–5, 802
Stephen, 67, 585, 802
WILLIAM[1], 67, 308, 361, 581–5, 767, 801–2
William, 585, 767, 802
Merritt, Abraham, 89
Merwin, Mary, 462
Miles, 462
Sarah (Platt), 462
MICHELL, ROBERT, 453
THAMZEN, 453, 460
Michelson, 599
Mifflin, Benjamin, 650
Migilligan, Sander, 294
Miles, Richard, 411
Miller, Hannah Comfort, 218
John, 108, 246, 359
Rev. John, 246
Capt. Joseph, 108
Lydia, 246
Mary (Beaman), 108
Ruth (Beaman), 108
Samuel, 108
Sarah, 273
Milliken, Annie, 747
Mills, Betsey (Gates), 29, 749
Mary, 475
Sarah, 712
William W., 29, 749
Miner, Clarissa (Parker), 490–1
Minor, John, 413
Mitchell, David, 590
Elizabeth, 590
Experience, 244
HANNAH[2], 215, 589, 590–1, 676
Hannah, 589–91
Jacob, 543
Jane (Cooke), 240, 244
John, 33, 41–2, 48–9
Mary (Morse), 543
Matthew, 213, 456, 511, 589–91, 676–7, 842
Nathaniel, 543, 546
Rebecca (Ackley), 42, 48–9
Sarah, 590
Susan (Butterfield), 589
Thomas, 590–1
William, 109
Mix, Hannah, 618
Molestine, Alexander, 648
Mononotto, 510
Montigney, Sieur de, 788
Moody, Ansel, 25–6
Electa (Gates), 25
Moore (More)
Mrs., 28
Aaron, 262
Elizabeth, 571
John, 262, 571, 654, 832
Rev. John, 213
Miles, 39
Miriam, 39, 774
Capt. Richard, 325, 428, 704
Sarah (Clark), 664
Moorecock, Mary, 763
Morehouse, David, 543
Morgan, Anna, 605–6
Anna (Ober), 606
Elizabeth (Bliss), 126
Miles, 126
Rebecca, 736
Robert, 606
Samuel, 427, 605
Sarah (Herrick), 427
Theophilus, 736
Morris, Col., 538
Gov., 541
Anna, 219
Frances, 745
John, 546
Lewis, 541
Robert, 84
Sally, 45
Morse, Abigail (Johnson), 498
Lydia, 542
Mary, 543
Morton, Ephraim, 255
George, 255
Hannah, 255
Mosely, Dr. Thomas, 19
Moses, Abel, 35, 114, 497
Abner, 35, 114, 497
Caleb, 35, 110–2, 497, 712–3
Deborah, 712
Deborah (Thrall), 712, 797
Hannah (Beaman), 35, 110–2, 114, 712–3
John, 111, 497, 570, 712, 797
Mindwell, 797
Ruhama (Johnson), 35, 490, 497–8, 505
Mosher, Hugh, 286
Mossom, Rev. David, 76, 643
Mott, Gershom, 549
MOULTON, MIRIAM[3], 97, 99
ROBERT[1], 831
Mourt, 450
Moylan, Stephen, 81
Mullins, Priscilla, 150
William, 150
Munn, Sarah, 790
Munroe, Col., 758
Murline, Jacob, 616
Mustard, John, 547
Mygatt, Elizabeth (Taylor), 790
Joseph, 790

Napoleon, 286
Nash, Elizabeth, 342
"Natty Bumppo," 749–59
Needham, E., 86
Neeld, Mary, 558
Nepaupuck, 512
Nettleton, Hannah (Bushnell), 168, 462
John, 462
Joseph, 168, 462
Martha (Hull), 462
Samuel, 462
Neville, Betsey C. (Bartlett), 92, 276, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Robert, 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Newberry, Abigail, 419
Benjamin, 472
Newbury, Capt., 711
Newcomb, Andrew, 504
Elizabeth (Cooke), 504
Thomas, 504
Nichols(?), Patience, 414
Nichols (Niccols)
Secy., 534
Ann (Devereaux), 294–5
Hannah (Hawley), 415
Isaac, 413, 415
Josiah, 415
Richard, 214, 810–2, 814–5, 820
Nicholson, Christopher, 289–90, 595, 598, 600, 602
EDMUND[1], 289–90, 595–602
ELIZABETH[2], 57–8, 601–2
ELIZABETH (SIMSON), 57, 597–8, 600–2
Francis, 643
Hannah (Redknap), 602
Jane, 602
John, 602
Joseph, 289, 598, 600–2
Samuel, 598, 601–2
Thomas, 601–2
Nick, William, 597
Nixon, Sarah (Pettyjohn), 650
Norris, Aaron, 561
Ann, 558–9

Norris, David, 559
Fanny (Little), 557, 559, 561–2
Henry, 545
Joanna, 545
Linda, 559
Mary, 557–8
William, 558–9
North, Bathsheba, 403
Norton, Eunice, 492
Rev. John, 489, 492
Joseph, 639
Capt. Stephen, 464
Noyes, Nicholas, 131, 208, 776
Peter, 294
Nye, Ebenezer, 740, 743
Ichabod, 743
Melzar, 741

Ober, Abigail, 606
Abigail (Conant), 606
ABIGAIL (WOODBURY), 606, 622, 835–6
ANNA[3], 77, 607, 700, 707
Anna, 606
Anna (Morgan), 606
BENJAMIN[2], 77, 89, 146, 606–7, 700
Benjamin, 607
Elizabeth, 606
ELIZABETH (BUTCHER), 605
Elizabeth (Stone) 606
Hannah (Woodbury), 606
Hezekiah, 606
JOHN, 605
John, 606
Jonathan, 606–7
Mary, 607
Nicholas, 606
Priscilla (Woodbury), 606, 828
Rachel, 607
RACHEL (RAYMOND), 607, 700
Rebecca, 606
RICHARD[1], 322, 605–6, 622–3, 828, 835–6
Richard, 606, 828
Samuel, 606
Okenonge, 413
Oldham, John, 155, 171, 221–4, 511, 676
Lucretia, 155
Oliver, Thomas, 622
Olmstead, Elizabeth, 618
Elizabeth (Burr), 615
Elizabeth (Butler), 618
Elizabeth (Marvin), 577
Hannah (Mix), 618
JAMES[1], 10, 16, 136–7, 234–5, 372, 577, 611–5
OLMSTEAD, JAMES, of England, 611
JANE (BRISTOW), 611
John, 16, 137, 577, 618
Joseph, 618
JOYCE (CORNISH), 611, 615
Mabel, 618
Mary, 136, 618
Mary (Brainerd), 137
Mary (Lord), 618
Nehemiah, 615
NICHOLAS[2], 9, 16, 136–7, 207, 234–5, 247, 571, 614–8, 679, 733
Rebecca, 618
Richard, 615
Samuel, 16, 136–7, 234–5, 618
SARAH[3], 9, 14, 618, 806
Sarah, 234–5
SARAH (LOOMIS), 571, 615, 618
Susannah, 16
Susanna (Brainerd), 137
Thomas, 618
William, 137
Onsettler, Margaret, 89
Orange, Prince of, 187, 519–20, 827
Ordway, Hannah, 424
Organ, Letty, 197
Orr, Capt. Robert, 268
Osborn (Osborne)
Rev. Mr., 309
Elizabeth, 309
Jeremiah, 217, 591
Matthew, 302
Sarah (Coe), 216–7, 591
Outhoot, Jansen, 821
Oviatt (Uffoot)
Frances (Kilbourn), 513–4
Hannah (Hawley), 411
John, 411
Thomas, 411, 514
Owens, Elizabeth, 797
Owsley, Elizabeth, 833

Pacquallunt, 629
Paddock, Martha, 309
Paddy, Alice (Freeman), 356
William, 356
Paine (Payne)
Bennett (Freeman), 361
Edward, 567
John, 361
Joseph, 768
Lois, 363
Lucy, 197
Mercy, 504
Patience (Freeman), 361
Patience (Sparrow), 768
Samuel, 361, 504
Thomas, 361, 504, 768
Painter, Richard, 534, 651
Palfrey, Dr., 458
Peter, 223, 320, 698, 823
PALGRAVE, AMY (——), 621
ANNA[2], 259, 531, 605, 621–3, 834–6
CHRISTIAN (SAYER), 621
JOAN (HARRIS), 621–3
JOHN, 621
RICHARD, 621, 623
THOMAS, 621
Palmer, Widow, 800
Anna or Hannah, 378
Bridget, 801
Elizabeth (Hodgkins), 801
Frances, 801
Henry, 801
Nicholas, 793
Rebecca, 801
William, 801
Pardon, William, 815
Parents, John, 806
Parke (Parks)
Helen E. (Ackley), 51
Joseph, 393
Richard, 155
Sarah (Collier), 155
William G., 51
Parker, Abram, 498
Clarissa, 490–1
Edward, 672
Elizabeth, 672
ELIZABETH (CLARKE), 204, 680
James, 231
Margaret, 169, 680
Mary, 317
Mary (Browne), 334
Mary (Bushnell), 169
Patience (Johnson), 498
Rebecca, 120, 204
Thomas, 317
WILLIAM[5], 537
William, 169, 204, 680
Parmalee, Anna, 495
Barbara, 218
Parsons, Aaron, 637, 639
Abigail, 636, 639
Abigail (Sanford), 639
Benjamin, 625, 636
Bethia, 630
David, 636
Ebenezer, 634, 636
Elizabeth, 637, 639
Elizabeth (Cooke), 636–7, 639
Elizabeth (Hull), 463
Elizabeth (Strong), 636
Esther, 45, 636
HANNAH[3], 219, 639
Hannah, 639

Parsons, Hester, 636
Ithamar, 464, 639
Jemima, 639
John, 634–7, 640
Jonathan, 625, 636
JOSEPH[1], 124, 126, 247, 418, 463–4, 625–6, 628–37, 718
Joseph, 463, 630, 636
Mary, 636
MARY (BLISS), 123–6, 626, 631–6
Mary (Clark), 636
Mary (Robinson), 639
Mary (Wheeler), 636, 640
Mehitable (Clapp), 639
Mehitable (Hull), 464
Moses, 463, 637
Phineas, 639
Rhoda, 639
RHODA (TAYLOR), 636–7, 639, 789–90
SAMUEL[2], 464, 636–7, 639–40, 789–90
Samuel, 463, 637, 639
Sarah, 639
Sarah (Clarke), 636
Simeon, 639
Thomas, 718
Timothy, 639
Partridge, George, 583, 801
John, 801
Sarah (Tracy), 799, 801
Patch(?), Agnes, 833
Patch, Christian (Denman), 833
ELIZABETH, 723, 833–4
Elizabeth (Brackenbury), 833
Elizabeth (Owsley), 833
Hannah (Woodbury), 833–4
James, 833–5
JANE (——), 833
Joan, 833
John, 833, 835
Mary (Scott), 833
NICHOLAS, 833–5
Nicholas, 723, 832–3, 835
Thomas, 833
Patterson, D. Williams, 495–6
Eliza (Ackley), 50
Isaac D., 50
Payne, see Paine
Peabody, John, 333
Peach, Emme (Devereaux), 295
John, 294
Thomas J., 596
William, 295
Pearly, Thomas, 333
Peck, Ann, 148
Electa (Gates), 25
Elizabeth, 681
Peck, Phineas E., 25
Pearse (Peirce, Pierce)
Capt., 223, 611
Abraham, 583
Edward, 111
John, 61, 207
Ruth, 521
William, 61
Penn, William, 648, 817, 819
Pepper, Elizabeth (Freeman), 363
Isaac, 363
Mercy, 364
Perkins, David, 436
Ebenezer, 498
Jacob, 523
JOHN[1], 498, 523
JOHN[2], 322, 498
John, 498
Joseph, 523
Martha, 498
Mary, 523
Samuel, 498
Sarah, 197
Thomas, 333
Perry, Edward, 350, 352–3, 356, 691
Ezra, 355
Margaret, 356
Mary, 350, 353, 691
Widow?, 350
Perryn, Clarissa, 491
PESON, JOANE, 453
Peters, Elizabeth, 293
Rev. Hugh, 293
Pettee, Rebecca, 305
Pettyjohn (Pettijohn)
Abigail, 650
Abraham, 650, 654
Agatha, 652, 654
Amos, 654
Ann, 651
Anne (Wright?), 650
Comfort, 559, 653
Constance (Little), 546, 654
David, 559, 653
Deborah (Little), 546, 556, 559, 653–4
Ebenezer, 650
Edward, 559, 653
Elizabeth, 650–1
Elizabeth (Marsh?), 650
ESTHER[4], 260, 272, 547–9, 554–62, 652–4
Esther, 650
Frances (Wisbey), 559, 653
Hannah, 559, 651, 653
Hannah (Pettyjohn), 559, 653
Hester, 559, 653
Isaac, 654
Pettyjohn, Isabel, 643–4, 646, 649–51
ISABEL (——), 643, 646
Jacob, 650
JAMES[1], 546–9, 559, 643–4, 646, 650, 653
James, 549, 559, 643, 646, 650–3
Jane (Sloan), 654
JOHN[2], 273, 546–9, 559, 643–4, 646, 648–51, 653
John, 260, 263, 535, 555, 559–60, 643–4, 646, 649–54
John W., 654
Jonas, 546, 653
Levina, 547, 652, 655
Lydia, 650
"Major," 650
Margaret, 651
Mary, 559, 652–4
Mary (Pettyjohn), 559, 653
Molleston, 648
Naomi, 650
Richard, 559, 643, 649–51, 653–4
Ruth, 559, 653–4
Ruth (Little?), 548, 654
Ruth (Pettyjohn), 559, 653–4
Samuel, 549, 650
Sarah, 650–2, 654–5
Sarah (Dodd), 650, 653
Susanna (Tucker), 654
Thomas, 559, 643, 649–51, 653–4
WILLIAM[3], 273, 546–9, 559, 643, 650–4, 748
William, 263, 273, 535, 546–8, 556, 559, 652–4
Phelps, Abraham, 662
George, 463, 662
Hannah, 663
Capt. Ichabod, 46
John, 463
Josiah, 463
Mary (Griswold), 403
Mary (Pinney), 662
Nathaniel, 417
Ruth, 463
Samuel, 403, 662–3
SARAH (GRISWOLD), 403, 662–3
Sarah (Pinney), 662
Timothy, 403
William, 403, 662–3
Phillips, Ann, 809
George, 471
Rev. George, 809
Zerobabel, 809
Phipps, Sir William, 706, 827
Phippen, David, 460
Sarah, 460
Picket (Pickett)
Abigail (Seymour), 729

Picket, Bethia (Bartlett), 76
Bob, 436
John, 478
Mary (Coe), 218
Samuel, 218
Thomas, 729
Pierce, see Pearse
Pierson, Rev. Abraham, 216, 810
Deborah, 415
Pinckney, Jane, 460
Philip, 460
Pinney, Abigail, 662
Abraham, 664
Amy, 664
Azariah, 664
Edmond, 659, 662
Elizabeth (Butler), 664
Elizabeth (Carrier?), 664
HUMPHREY[1], 372, 407, 454, 459, 461, 569, 659–62
Isaac, 661–2
Jerusha (Griswold), 664
JOHANNA (——), 659
JOHN, 659
John, 662, 664
Joseph, 664
Joyce (Bissell), 662
Martha, 664
MARTHA (THRALL), 663–4, 797
Mary, 662
MARY (HULL), 453, 460–1, 661–2
NATHANIEL[2], 403, 661–3, 795
NATHANIEL[3], 661, 663–4, 797
Nathaniel, 111, 664
Samuel, 662
SARAH[4], 111, 664
Sarah, 662–4
Sarah (Clark), 662, 664
SARAH (GRISWOLD), 403, 662–3
Piper, Richard, 14, 41, 773, 806
Pitford, (——), 289
Pitman, Mr., 385
Pitts, Ann (Shipman), 750
Plaistow, Josiah, 299
Platt, Sarah, 462
Plumbe, Elizabeth (Green), 480
Green, 480
John, 480
Plummer, Joan (Woodbury), 622, 835–6
Samuel, 622, 836
Plumstead, Adelaide (Johnson), 494
Poisson, James, 111
Pollard, Asa, 435
George, 288, 595
Pollock, Oliver, 267
Pomeroy, Eltweed, 794, 848
Experience (Woodward), 790, 848
Pomeroy, Joseph, 408
Lydia (Taylor), 790
Medad, 790, 848
Samuel, 790
Pond, Samuel, 718
Stephen, 569
Poole, Captain, 426, 705
Poor, —— (Pettyjohn), 654
John, 654
William, 654
Pope, C. W., 170–1
Pope, Gregory, 851
Porter, Ann (White), 568
Charles, 539, 557, 560
Hannah (Dodge), 323
Hope (——), 559, 561–2
Israel, 101, 700
John, 101, 204, 378, 429, 568, 700
Joseph, 700
Lydia (Herrick), 429
Mary, 319, 327, 378
Mary (Batchelder), 101
Rebecca, 120, 204
Samuel, 320, 323, 429
William, 101
Post, Abraham, 668
ELINOR, 668
Elinor, 668
Hester (Hyde), 668
James, 45
John, 668
KATHERINE[2], 176, 668
Mary (Andrews), 668
Mary (Jordan), 668
Rebecca (Ackley), 45
Rebecca (Bruen), 668
STEPHEN[1], 10, 177, 201, 203, 372, 613, 615, 667–8, 769
Thomas, 668
Potter, Elizabeth, 671–2
Elizabeth (Hawes), 673
FRANCES (——), 671–2
HANNAH (——), 671–2
Hope, 673
John, 671–2
Joseph, 673
Mary, 673
Nathaniel, 673
Phebe (Ives), 673
Rebecca, 673
SARAH[3], 340–2, 390, 673
WILLIAM[2], 671–3
POULTER, ELIZABETH[2], 281
Powell, Roderic, 534
William, 64
Power, Rev. James, 262, 557
Powers, Mary (Pettyjohn), 654
Pratt, Amy (Pinney), 664
Pratt, Deborah, 312
Ebenezer, 309
Elizabeth, 675, 680
ELIZABETH (CLARKE), 201, 204, 680
Elizabeth (Peck), 681
Ethelinda, 739
Hannah (Kirtland), 521–2, 681
Hannah (Shipman), 740
Humphrey, 740
Isaac, 739–40
John, 664, 675, 680, 739–40, 769
Joseph, 190, 680
LYDIA[2], 522–3, 681
Margaret (Parker), 680
Nathaniel, 119, 681
Priscilla, 167
Rebecca, 681
Ruth (Huntington), 681
Samuel, 681
Sarah, 680
Sarah (Beaumont), 119, 681
Sarah (Chapman), 190, 680
Sarah (Jones), 680
Sarah (Shipman), 739
Sarah (Willard), 681
Timothy, 739
WILLIAM[1], 10, 119, 166, 176, 188, 190, 201, 203–4, 372, 521, 613, 615, 617, 675, 679–80, 733, 739–40
William, 521, 664, 675, 680–1, 740
Prence, Apphia (Quicke), 692
Elizabeth, 690–1, 693
Hannah, 360, 693, 766–7
Jane, 693
Judith, 693
Katherine, 683
Mary, 692–3, 802
Mary (Collier), 692–3
MERCY[2], 356, 361, 691, 693
PATIENCE (BREWSTER), 149, 154–5, 241, 683, 692, 799
Rebecca, 356, 683, 693
Sarah, 693
THOMAS, of England, 683
THOMAS[1], 64–6, 154–5, 242, 244–5, 301–2, 353, 355–6, 360, 445–6, 503, 683–4, 686–8, 690–3, 764–6, 800, 802
Thomas, 693
Prentice, Capt., 249, 324
John, 413
Pressey, Joseph, 836
Price, John, 800
Prince, Mr., 233
Josiah, 86
Proctor, John, 321
Proctor, Sarah, 321, 323

Provence, Sarah, 556
Thomas, 556
Pryor, Desire (Cooke), 506
Jedediah, 506
Purple, Edward, 40
Elias, 17
Hannah (Ackley), 39, 40
Putnam, David, 743
Gen. Rufus, 87, 435
Pygan, Alexander, 119
Lydia, 119
Lydia (Beamon), 119
Pynchon, John, 126, 625, 631
William, 105–7, 401, 457, 625, 794

Queen Anne, 537–8, 821
Queen Elizabeth, 144, 150
Queen Mary, 20, 144, 432, 537, 821, 827, 854, 856
Quicke, Apphia, 692
Quincy, Josiah, 89

Ramble, Thomas, 216
Ramsden, Elizabeth, 117
Rand, Mary, 521
Robert, 521
Randall, Daphne or Delphine, 491
Rankin, David, 547
Ranton or Runton, Sir Nicholas, 117
Rantoul, 437
Robert, 721
Rawson, Secy., 599
Ray, Mary (Johnson), 494
Raymond, Goodwife, 697
Abigail, 699, 708
"Alse," 697
Anna, 700
Barnabas, 700
Benerges, 700
Benjamin, 699
Bethia, 699
Ebenezer, 430, 705, 708–9
Edmond, 467
Edward, 708
Eliza, 699
Elizabeth, 697
GEORGE, 697, 703
George, 700, 708, 828
Hannah, 708
Hannah (Bishop), 708
Jane (Lovett), 700
Jemima (Meacham), 700
Jerusha, 700
Jerusha (Woodbury), 708, 828
Joanna (Herrick), 430, 708
JOHN[1], 98, 226–7, 316, 320–1, 424, 467, 697–9, 703–5, 723–4, 831, 833–4
Raymond, John, 426, 697, 699, 700, 703, 705
JONATHAN[2], 316, 699, 700, 828
Judith, 698–9, 834
Lydia, 119, 700, 733
Martha, 699, 700
MARY[2], 100–1, 327, 708
Mary, 699, 700
Mary (Coombs), 699
Mary (Herrick), 708
Mary (Kettle), 708
Nathaniel, 699
RACHEL[3], 607, 700
Rachel, 699
RACHEL (SCRUGGS), 698–9, 703, 724, 833
Rebecca (Conant), 699
Richard, 703
Ruth, 100, 708
RUTH (HULL), 467–8, 708
SARAH (WOODBURY), 316, 699, 700, 828
Thomas, 699
WILLIAM[1], 100, 226–7, 247, 321, 327, 430, 468, 697, 699, 700, 703–9, 827–8, 831
William, 430, 697, 703, 708–9
Rea, Sarah, 100
Read (Reed)
John, 302
Lydia, 45
Rachel, 650–1
Richard, 71
Redfield, Daniel, 396
Elizabeth (Graves), 396
James, 396
Theophilus, 396
William, 396
Redknap, Hannah, 602
Reed, see Read
Reeves, Robert, 207
Remick, Christian, 363
Elizabeth (Freeman), 585
Hannah (Freeman), 363
Remington, Mary, 424
Renals, see Reynolds
Repent, 686
Reynor, Rev. John, 299
Reynolds (Renals)
John, 736
Jonathan, 730
Joseph, 736
Rebecca (Seymour), 730
Ruth, 736
Rice, Asa, 92, plate xxviii p. 867
Theresa M. (Bartlett), 92, plates xiv p. 90, xxvi-xxviii pp. 865–7
Richards, Edward, 770
Richards, Nathaniel, 33
Richardson, Jemima, 481
Lemuel, 192
Mehitable (Chapman), 192
Rickard, Gyles, 765
John, 246
Mary (Cooke), 246
Ring, Andrew, 448
Deborah (Hopkins), 448
Elizabeth, 503
Mercy, 503
Roath, Robert, 719
Sarah (Saxton), 719
Robb, Andrew, 260, 561
Roberts, Abigail, 713–4
ABIGAIL (BEAMAN), 110–1, 712–4
Ann, 712
Betsey, 273
BETSEY (LITTLE), 270, 272, 553, 558–9, 560–2
Caroline, 273
Cassandra, 562
Deborah (Moses), 712
Eliza, 562
Elizabeth, 560, 562
Esther (Loomis), 712
Frances, 712
Hetty A. (Corey), 271, 273, 558, 561–2
Hetty Jane, 273, 562
Isaac, 562
Isaac, N., 273
James, 561–2
James Barclay, 562
JOHN[1], 111, 401, 711–2, 719
John, 711–2
John M., 273
LEMUEL[2], 110–1, 712–4
Lemuel, 111, 713–4
Lucy, 714
LYDIA[3], 112–3, 712–4
Margaret, 714
Margaret (Marsh), 712
Mary, 111, 273
Nathaniel, 711–2, 714
PATIENCE (SAXTON), 711–2, 718–9
Penelope, 712
Phebe, 714
Polly, 562
Rachel, 562
Richard, 711–2
Roger, 270, 273, 539, 558, 561–2
Ruth, 273
Ruth (Woodford), 714
Samuel, 270, 272, 558–9, 561–2
Sarah, 712
Sarah (Mills), 712
Thomas, 539, 561–2

Roberts, William, 273, 553, 561–2, 711–2
William Y., 273
Robertson, Elvira (Little), 559
Reuben, 559
Robins, John, 337
Thomas, 770
Robinson, Abigail, 218
Daniel, 673
George, 171
Hope (Potter), 673
Isaac, 244, 690
Rev. John, 145, 148–9, 152
Lydia (Ackley), 40
Mary, 639
Mary (Bushnell), 171
Ruth, 194
Sarah (Graves), 390
Thomas, 40, 390
Rochambeau, 286
Rock, Clarissa (Parker), 490–1
Rockwell, Susanna (Capen), 378
Rodgers, Capt. David, 261, 267
Rogers, Anna (Johnson), 498
Hannah, 738, 740
James, 256
John, 413
Mary (Cooke), 255–6
Obadiah, 740
Samuel, 256
Sophronia, 491
Stephen, 498, 740
Thomas, 256
William, 740
Rollo, Mary, 498
Root, John, 514
Mary (Kilbourn), 513–4
Rose, Elizabeth, 672
Henry, 471–2
John, 673
Phebe (Ives), 673
Robert, 213, 337, 672
Sarah, 342
Ross, Constance (Little), 531
George, 531, 542
Hannah (Hungerford), 479
James, 561
John, 531
William, 479
Rossiter, Edward, 454–5
Rouse, Edward, 215
Jane, 215
Rowland, Andrew, 293
Richard, 601
Samuel, 601
Rowley, Henry, 801
Moses, 801
Rowville, De, 789
Rudd, Jonathan, 167
Patience, 167
Rudyard, Gov., 819
Runton, see Ranton
RUSCOE, MERCY[1], 159, 727–8
ROGER, 727
Sarah, 159
SARAH (——), 727
William, 159, 613, 727
Russel, 435
Rutty, Phebe, 463
Ryan, John, 751, 754–7
Patience (Shipman), 750–1, 755–6, 758

Salmon, Daniel, 770
Salsbury, Evan, 531–2
Salter, (——), 599
Saltonstall, Sir Richard, 117–8, 120, 185
Richard, Jr., 117–8
Samoset, 444–5
Sampson, Abigail (Woodbury), 828
John, 828
Sanders, George, 719
Mary (Saxton), 719
Sandys, Sir Edwin, 150–1
George, 150
Sanford, Abigail, 639
Hannah, 177
Robert, 33
Ruth, 164
Zachary, 164
Sassacus, 676
Sausor, John, 58
Susanna (Andrews), 58
Saxton (Sexton)
Francis, 719
George, 42, 135, 717
Hannah (Spencer?), 135
James, 50
John, 711, 719
Mary, 719
Mary (Hill), 719
PATIENCE[2], 711–2, 718–9
RICHARD[1], 372, 569, 717–8
Richard, 717, 719
Sarah, 42, 50, 719
SARAH (COOK), 717–8
Sarah (Knight), 42
Saye and Sele, Lord, 120, 185
Sayer (Sayre)
CHRISTIAN, 621
Robert, 621
Samuel, 333
Schell, William P., 271
Schofield, Arthur, 51
Elisha, 51
Schofield, Olive (Ackley), 51
Peter Harris, 51
Silas, 51
Schrick, Mrs. Mary, 418
Scone, Joseph, 168
Mary, 193
Scott, Abigail, 833
Arthur, 560
Elizabeth, 571
John, 126
Mary, 833
Sarah (Bliss), 126
Thomas, 539, 556–7, 560–1, 571, 833
Scoville (Scovie)
John, 134
William, 13, 134
Scranton, John, 164, 176
Sarah, 164
Scribner, Lucinda, 744
SCRUGGS, MARGERY (——), 698, 723–4
RACHEL[2], 698–9, 703, 724, 833
THOMAS[1], 226, 320–1, 698, 721–4, 831
William, 723
Scudder, Hannah, 67
Sears, Elizabeth, 255
Richard, 255
Silas, 255
Sedgwick, Maj., 325
Sealey (Seely, Selle)
Mother, 787
Robert, 616
Selby, Hannay (Brainerd), 139
Jeremiah, 139
Susanna (Dutton), 139
William, 139
Selden, Anne (Chapman), 192
Deborah (Dudley), 137–9
Esther, 192
Hannah, 137
Joseph, 137, 192
Samuel, 137–8
Thomas, 137
Sequin or Sowheag, 510, 512
Seward, Abigail (Bushnell), 167
Caleb, 167
David, 170
Elizabeth (Bushnell), 169–70
Capt. John, 167, 170
Dr. Joseph, 167
Judith (Bushnell), 167
Lydia (Bushnell), 167
William, 167, 170
Sexton, see Saxton
Seymour, Abigail, 729
Catherine, 730

Seymour, Elizabeth, 728–30
ELIZABETH (WALLER), 727
Hannah, 167, 729–30
HANNAH (MARVIN), 577–8, 728–9
Hannah (Woodruff), 728
John, 728, 730
MARY[3], 167–8, 462, 729
Mary, 728
Mary (Gritt), 728
Mary (Watson), 728
Matthew, 730
Mercy, 728, 730
MERCY (RUSCOE), 159, 727–8
Rebecca, 730
RICHARD[1], 10, 159, 167, 372, 613, 615, 727–9
Richard, 727–8
ROBERT, 727
Sarah, 729
Sarah (Gregory), 730
Sarah (Hayes), 730
THOMAS[2], 167, 578, 728–9
Thomas, 729
Zachariah, 728
Shakespeare, William, 449
Shalor (Shaylor)
Abel, 40–1
Elizabeth, 777
Elizabeth (Ackley), 40–1
Jerusha, 494
Marah (Spencer), 774, 776
Thomas, 40, 774–5
Shannon, Capt., 268–9
Shattuck, Mercy, 333
Shaw, Constant (Doane), 308
George, 308
Jonathan, 308
Rev. William, 75
Shaylor, see Shalor
Sheather, Hannah, 462
John, 176
Mary, 190
Samuel, 190
Sheldon, Isaac, 410
Mehitable (Gunn), 410
Sherley, James, 689
Sherman, Gen., 52
Samuel, 590
Sarah (Mitchell), 590
Shipman, Abigail, 734
Abraham, 735–6
Alice (Hand), 734
Ann, 750
Benjamin, 734
Benoni, 740, plate xxx p. 869
BETSEY SIBYL[7], 6, 25, 29, 71, 89, 259, 272, 276, 496, 558, 607,
SHIPMAN, BETSEY SIBYL[7] (Continued) 742, 744–9, plates vi p. 14, xxiii p. 740, xxxi p. 870
CHARLES[6], 26, 92, 276, 739, 742, 744, plates xxiv p. 748, xxviii p. 867, xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Charles, plate xxxi p. 870
Charlotte Orphana, 745, plate xxxi p. 870
Clarinda, 740, plate xxx p. 869
Daniel, 734
David, 735–6, 750–9, 810
Deborah, 734
Delilah, 750
EDWARD[1], 135, 169, 170, 185, 188, 247, 733–5, 737, 750
Edward, 135, 733–4
Elias, 736–7, plates xxx p. 869, xxxiii p. 872
Elizabeth, 169–70, 734, 736–7, 742, plates xxx–xxxi pp. 869–70, xxxiii p. 872
Elizabeth (Comstock), 733–4
ELIZABETH (KIRTLAND), 523, 735–6, plates xxx p. 869, xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
Elizabeth (Leffingwell), 736
Esther, 739, plate xxx p. 869
Eunice (Edgerton), 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Frances (Morris), 745
Frances W. (Dana), 742, 744, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Frederick, 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Dr. H. B., 741
Hannah, 734–7, 740, plate xxx p. 869
HANNAH (BUSHNELL), 168–70, 737, 739–40, plates xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
Hannah (Cotton), 745
Hannah (Rogers), 738, 740
Harriet, 740, 742, plate xxxi p. 870
Henry Bartlett, 745, plate xxxi p. 870
Isaiah, 735
Jane B. (Crawford), 745
Joanna Frances, 742, 744, plate xxxi p. 870
JOANNA H. (BARTLETT), 92, 276, 742, 744, plates xiv p. 90, xxv p. 752, xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7, xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
JOHN[2], 169–70, 472, 475, 734–7, 750, 810, plates xxx p. 869, xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
SHIPMAN, JOHN[3], 169–70, 523, 735–7, 750, plates xxx p. 869, xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
John, 196, 736–7, plates xxx p. 869, xxxiii p. 872
John Bartlett, 745
Jonathan, 35, 734–5, 810
Joseph, 734, 736
Joseph Chapman, 742, plates xxxi p. 870, xxxiii p. 872
JOSHUA[5], 196, 276, 739–42, plates xxi p. 734, xxx–xxxiii pp. 869–72
Joshua, 740, 742, plates xxx–xxxiii pp. 869–72
Julia, 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Lucina (Bingham), 742, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Lucinda (Scribner), 744
Lydia, 734
Margaret (Bushnell), 169–70, 736
Maria, 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Maria (Bailey), 742, plates xxxi–xxxii pp. 870–1
Maria (Barker), 745
Martha, 734–6
MARTHA (HUMPHREY), 472, 475, 734–6
Martha (Shipman), 734–6
Mary, 734, plate xxxi p. 870
MARY (ANDREWS), 733–4
Mary A. (Edgerton), 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Nathaniel, 736–8, 740, 750–9, plates xxx p. 869, xxxiii p. 872
Orphana, 740 plate xxx p. 869
Parnell, 734
Patience, 750–1, 755–6, 758
Priscilla, 312, 734
Rebecca, 736
Ruth (Butler), 735
Ruth (Reynolds), 736
Capt. SAMUEL[4], 160–70, 194, 196, 736–40, 750, plates xxx p. 869, xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
Samuel, 733–6, 740, 742, 744, 750, plates xxx–xxxiii pp. 869–72
Sarah, 734, 739, plate xxx p. 869
Sarah (Doty), 737, 739, plates xxxii–xxxiii pp. 871–2
Sarah (Stanclift), 740
Seth, plate xxxi p. 870
SYBIL (CHAPMAN), 196, 739, 740, 742, plates xxii p. 736, xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
William, 733–5, 750

Shipman, William Charles, 744, plate xxxi p. 870
William Henry, 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Shipton, Edward, 733
Shook, Frederick, plate xxxiii p. 872
Rev. Isaac, 742, plate xxxii p. 871
Maria (Shipman), 742, plates xxxi–xxxiii pp. 870–2
Shrick, see Schrick
Shurtleff, Elizabeth (Lettice), 244
SIMSON (Simpson)
ELIZABETH[1], 57, 597–8, 600–2
Francis, 597–8, 601
Sipson, Amos, 308
John, 308
Skeffington, Leonard, 359
Skinner, Ann, 21
John, 571
Mary (Loomis), 571
Slaves, 79, 89, 91, 361, 431, 652
Sledd, Daniel, 165
William, 165
Sloan, Jane, 654
Smalley, Hannah, 67
Mary, 305
Smith (Smyth)
Goodman, 601
Goodwife, 776
Arthur, 383
Benjamin, 488, 490
Clarissa (Johnson), 491
E. L., 168
Elizabeth, 45, 340, 481
Elizabeth (Ackley), 45
Elsie, 491
George, 539
Hannah, 50
Hester (Parsons), 636
Hugh, 440
Isaac, 439
Capt. James, 598, 601–2
Jane, 215
John, 65, 215, 491, 777
Jonathan, 164
Joseph, 636
Lydia, 775
Martha (Bushnell), 164
Mary, 236
Matthew, 44–5, 481
Mercy (Maker), 488, 490
Philip, 338, 340
Rachel (Marvin), 578
Rev. Ralph, 299, 764
Rebecca (Foote), 338, 340
Robert, 560
Ruth (Herrick), 440
Samuel, 45, 340, 577–8
Smith, Simon, 208, 775
Thankful (Ackley), 44
Thomas, 44, 131, 134, 155, 208, 233, 775–6
Snetzler, (——), 76
Snodgrass, Charles, 547
Snow, Abigail (Doane), 309
Ann (Cooke), 503
Constance (Hopkins), 448
Ebenezer, 309
Elizabeth, 585
Jabez, 585
Jane, 44, 368
Jane (Prence), 693
Jonathan, 362
Lydia (Bangs), 67
Mark, 503, 693
Mary (Smalley), 305
Nicholas, 67, 309, 448, 503, 693
Stephen, 309
Thankful (Freeman), 362
Thomas, 309
Solart, Sarah (Cocke), 467
Somers, Sir George, 449
Southworth, Constant, 521
Edward, 443
Martha (Kirtland), 521–2
William, 521
Sowheag or Sequin, 510, 512
Sparrow, Apphia (Tracy), 767
Elizabeth, 767
Hannah (Prence), 360, 693, 766–7
John, 363, 767
JONATHAN[2], 67, 247, 308, 358–61, 363, 368, 693, 763, 765–7
Jonathan, 767
LYDIA[3], 363, 767
Mercy (Cobb), 308, 768
PANDORA (——), 763, 765
Patience, 768
Priscilla, 308, 767
Rebecca, 361, 767
REBECCA (BANGS), 67, 766–7
Rebecca (Merrick), 767
RICHARD[1], 303–4, 308, 361, 363, 449, 503, 693, 763–5
Richard, 308, 363, 767–8
Sarah, 363, 767
Sarah (Lewis), 308, 766
Spencer (?), Hannah, 135
Spencer, Abigail, 777
Alexander, 40, 775
Amasa, 21
Benjamin, 776
Deborah, 481, 778
Deborah (Birge), 776
Ebenezer, 17
Elizabeth, 139, 775
Spencer, Elizabeth (Bates), 774
George, 672
GERRARD[1], 10, 12, 17, 21, 38–40, 208–9, 234–5, 479, 481, 769–75, 806
GERRARD, 769
Gerrard, 776
Grace, 774, 776
HANNAH[2], 135, 771–2, 774, 776
Hannah, 40, 775, 777
HANNAH (——), 772, 774
Hannah (Gates), 17
Hannah (Willey), 12, 479, 774
Hezekiah, 775
Ichabod, 775
James, 775
Jared, 135
JOHN[2], 10, 14, 135, 208, 233, 419, 771–6, 806
John, 17
Jonathan, 21, 235, 775, 777–8
Joseph, 774
Lydia, 419, 776, 806
Lydia (Smith), 775
Marah, 774, 776
Margaret, 775
Margaret (Bates), 774–5
Mary, 40, 775
Mary (Gates), 21
MEHITABLE[2], 234, 771, 774
Micajah, 21, 775
Michael, 769–70
Miriam (Moore), 39, 774
Nathaniel, 771, 775–6
REBECCA[3], 40–2, 135, 776
Rebecca, 775–6
REBECCA (HAYWARD), 419, 775–6
Rebecca (Porter or Parker), 120, 204
Richard, 769
Ruth, 208, 775, 777–8
Samuel, 12, 17, 39, 479, 774
SARAH [3], 192–3, 777
Sarah, 40, 775
Sarah (Ackley), 40, 774–5
Sarah (Bearding), 135
[Sarah?] (CLARKE), 209, 777
Thomas, 135, 769, 771, 774–6
TIMOTHY[2], 209, 481, 775–7
Timothy, 777
William, 21, 39, 40, 769, 771, 774–5
Squeb, Capt., 371
Stacey, Henry, 288, 294
SIMON[1], 322
Stagg, Capt., 117
Stanclift, Sarah, 740
Standish, Myles, 64, 223, 240, 302, 353, 355, 444–5, 448, 584, 688, 764

Stanhope, Sir John, 143
Stanley, Nathaniel, 34
Stannard, Elizabeth (Spencer), 775
Joseph, 775
Stanton, Thomas, 34, 477
Starr, Abigail, 395
Mr. F. F., v, 105, 496
St. Clair, 265
St. John, Elizabeth (Hoyt), 787
Matthew, 787
Samuel, 787
St. Nicholas, John, 399
Stebbins, Edward, 33
Thomas, 788
Steel (Steele)
Dr., 233
John, 728
MERCY (RUSCOE), 728
Sterling, Lord, 519–20
Stevens, Elizabeth, 395
Mindwell (Graves), 395
Nathaniel, 395
Stevenson (?), Keziah, 547
Stevenson, Hugh, 547
John, 547
Stewart (Stuart)
Ezra, 92, plates xxvii–xxviii pp. 866–7
Frances Rebecca, plate xxvii p. 866
George Henry, plate xxvii p. 866
Harriet B. (Bartlett), 92, plates xxvi–xxviii pp. 865–7
Harriet Elizabeth Little, plate xxvii p. 866
Henrietta Bartlett, plate xxvii p. 866
Lewis Herrick, plate xxvii p. 866
Mary, 16
Ransall Hadley, plate xxvii p. 866
Samuel, 50
Sarah (Ackley?), 50
Stickney, Mrs. Dean, plates xxvii–xxix pp. 866–8
Stileman, Elias, 528
Stiles, Henry, 661
STILLWELL, ELIZABETH[2], 383, 386–7, 390, 781–2
ELIZABETH (——), 782
JASPER[1], 384–5, 781–2
John, 781
Nicholas, 781
Rebecca, 781–2
Stockley (Stokley)
Capt., 268
Benjamin, 547, 652
John, 539
Temperance, 547, 652
Stoddard, John, 340
Mary (Foote), 340
Stokley, see Stockley
Stone, Capt., 676
Augustus, 743
Ebenezer, 395
Elizabeth, 606
Elizabeth (Herrick), 427
Hannah (Graves), 390, 393
Hannah (Herrick), 427
John, 425
Jonathan, 427
Nathaniel, 390, 393
Samuel, 427
William, 386–7
Stoughton, Israel, 455–6
Thomas, 407, 661
Strachey, William, 449
Stratton, John, 167
Rebecca, 167
Sarah, 51
Strickland, Elizabeth (Chapman), 183
Joseph, 110, 183
Strong, Abigail (Ford), 848
David, 44
Elizabeth, 636
Ephraim, 662
Freedom (Woodward), 848
Hannah (Ackley), 44
Jedediah, 848
John, 636, 848
Susan, 45
Stuart, see Stewart
Stuckey, George, 785
Sturgis, Bethia, 362
Stuyvesant, Gov. Peter, 231
SUDBURY, JANE, 279
SUMNER, WILLIAM [1], 844
Swayne, William, 509, 512
Swett, Hannah (Devereaux), 295
John, 295
Symmes, Rev. William, 281
Rev. Zachariah, 281

Taintor, Mabel (Olmstead), 618
Mary, 167
Michael, 618
Talbot, Phila, 498
Talcott, Hezekiah, 639
Jemima (Parsons), 639
John, 639
Tanner, John, 775
Philip, 260, 262, 557
Rebecca (Spencer), 775
Taylor, Capt., 841–2
Abigail, 785
Aholiab, 51
Taylor, Anna, 785
Elizabeth, 790
Experience, 790
George, 320
Hannah, 785
Joanna, 788, 790
JOHN[1], 569, 785, 787
JOHN[2], 785, 787–9, 848
John, 789–90, 848
Jonathan, 789–90
Lydia, 790
Mary, 788, 790
Mary A. (Ackley), 51
Mary (Hitchcock), 790
Mindwell, 790
Nancy (Ackley), 45, 51
Rebecca (Ketcham), 787
RHODA[3], 636–7, 639, 789–90
RHODA (——), 785, 787, 789
Samuel, 788, 790
Sarah, 790
Sarah (Munn), 790
Thankful, 788–9
Thankful (Hawks), 790
THANKFUL (WOODWARD), 787, 789, 848
Thomas, 787–90
Wait (Clapp), 790
Washington, 51
Temple, Dorothy, 447
Tenney, Elizabeth, 825
Terry, Samuel, 126
Sarah (Bliss), 126
Tew, Lydia (Morse), 542
Thaxter, Mary, 429
Thomas, Capt., 408
Alice, 518
ELIZABETH (GODFREY), 309–12, 369
Evan, 518
Thomson (Thompson)
Aaron, 548
John, 244
Joseph, 548
Mary, 414
Mary (Cooke), 242, 244–5
Thomas, 124, 414
Thorn, John, 622
Thorndike, Brown and, 87
Thorndike, John, 832
Mary, 836
Thornton, Betsey, 491
Thomas, 383
Thorp, John, 800
Thorutum (Thornton?), Goodman, 389
Thrall, Goody, 794
Abigail, 797

Thrall, David, 794
Deborah, 712, 797
DEBORAH (GUNN), 409, 794, 797
Elizabeth, 797
Elizabeth (Hoskins), 797
Elizabeth (Owens), 797
John, 111, 797
MARTHA[3], 663–4, 797
Mary (Roberts), 111
Mehitable, 797
Mindwell (Moses), 797
Phillipa, 794
Samuel, 797
Sarah (Allyn), 797
Thomas, 797
TIMOTHY[2], 111, 401, 407–9, 712, 794–7
Timothy, 712, 797
WILLIAM[1], 111, 372, 569, 679, 712, 793–4
William, 712
Thurston, Hannah, 615
Tibbetts, Betsey, 272
Tileston (Tilleston)
John, 118
THOMAS[1], 845
Tilley, Edward, 444
Tinker, John, 208
Tippy, Betsey (Bean), 272
James, 272
Tisdale, John, 446
Tomlinson, Henry, 413
Tookie, Job, 74
Townsend, Benedict, 547
Tracy, Apphia, 767
Jane, 799
John, 693, 801–2
Mary, 189, 403, 801–2
Mary (Foote), 340
Mary (Prence), 693, 802
REBECCA[2], 584, 799–802
Ruth, 801–2
Sarah, 799, 801
STEPHEN[1], 242, 445, 447, 584, 693, 799–801
Lt. Thomas, 340
TRYPHOSA (LEE), 799, 801–2
Trask, Osmund, 425–6
William, 320, 698, 721, 769
Treat, Gov., 412
Susannah, 208
Trotter, Abigail, 543
Benjamin, 543
William, 543
Trowbridge, Benjamin, 40
Bertha Chadwick, 396
Hannah, 40
True, Dr., 743
Try, Michael, 718
Tryon, Richard, 169
Tubbs, Judith (Prence), 693
William, 693
Tuck, Thomas, 325
Tucker, Henry, 556
Susanna, 654
Tudor, Mary (Loomis), 571
Owen, 571
Tuller, Daniel, 111
David, 111
Tully, Azubah (Kirtland), 169, 523
Elias, 169, 523
John, 119, 169, 523
Mary (Beamon), 119, 169
Parnell, 169, 523
Parnell (Kirtland), 169, 523
William, 169, 523
Tupper, Gen. Edward, 743
Thomas, 353–4
Turner, Mr., 836
Abigail (Blake), 506
Ezra, 506
Praisever, 418
Turrell, Mary, 48
Tuttle, Mr., 616
Sarah, 616
Twining, Anna (Doane), 302
Mehitable, 307
William, 302, 307
Tyler, Cordelia (Ackley), 51
Jane, 518
Job, 51
John, 51
Joseph, 51
Mary, 51
Moses, 51
Nathaniel, 518
Royal, 51
Solomon, 51
Thomas, 43
Tynen, Elizabeth, 841

Uffoot, see Oviatt
Ufford, John, 506
Sarah (Cooke), 506
Uncas, Joshua (Attawanhood), 119, 166, 186, 188–9, 192, 618, 679, 733
Uncas, Sachem of Mohegans, 617, 676, 680
UPHAM, PHINEAS [2], 248
UPSON, THOMAS [1], 372, 613

Valentine, Joseph, 546
Temperance (Little), 546
Van Courtland, Jacobus, 755
Van Rensselaer, John, 752
Van Sickle, Mary (Little), 546
Zachariah, 546
Veech, James, 552
Ventres, Elizabeth, 383, 805–6
John, 776, 806
Lydia (Spencer), 776, 806
Mary, 806
Moses, 805–6
Samuel, 136
SUSANNAH[2], 14, 136–7, 806–7
WILLIAM[1], 10, 14, 38, 137, 208, 383, 772–3, 775–6, 805–6
William, 805–6
Verdin (Virdin)
Hugh, 547, 651
Keziah (Little), 547
Vickery, Hannah (Andrews), 58
John, 58
VIVION, MARY, 331, 333
Vobes, John, 583

Wade, Hezekiah, 558
Wadsworth, William, 33, 129, 613–4
Wakeman, Elizabeth, 135
Walker, Edward, 625
Elizabeth (Woodbury), 833
John, 833
Mary, 197
Polly, 197
Walkley, Rebecca, 234
Richard, 234
Wall, Moses, 805
Wallace, Ruth (Corey), 273
Wallen, Joyce, 65
WALLER, ELIZABETH, 727
William, 176
Walton, Elizabeth, 227
Samuel, 605
Timothy, 639
Rev. William, 75
Walworth, Benjamin, 754
Reuben Hyde, 754
Waples, Peter, 648
Ward, Andrew, 415
Esther, 415
Mary, 201, 203
William, 415
Warham, Rev. John, 371, 401, 456, 660
Warner, Abby (Ackley), 50
Andrew, 50
DANIEL[2], 322
Elizabeth, 137
Gilbert, 393
Jabez, 50
Jabez Ichabod, 50
John, 50
Lydia, 108

Warren, Mary, 622
Richard, 244
Sarah, 244
Thomas, 622
Washington, George, 76, 81, 86, 89, 287–8, 436–8, 643
Wastall, see Westall
Waters, H. F., 496
John, 714
Phebe (Roberts), 714
Watkins, David, 546
Watrous, Isaac, 680
Sarah (Pratt), 680
Watson, Mary, 728
Mercy (Bradford), 361
Wattoone, 512
Webb, Richard, 614
Webster, 85
Weekes, Elizabeth, 168
George, 168
William, 168
Wellman, Elizabeth, 467
Thomas, 467
Welles (Wells)
Elizabeth (Clarke), 209
ELIZABETH (DEMING), 337–9, 383
James, 12, 133, 209, 776–7
Joseph, 472
Samuel, 415
Sarah, 415
Thomas, 339–40
West, Elizabeth, 836
Rev. Joel, 493
John, 321
Thomas, 835
Westall (Wastall)
John, 518, 522, 733
Susanna (Kirtland), 518, 522
Westover, James, 417
Whalen, Elizabeth, 559
Whalley, 810
Wheadon, Thomas, 673
Wheeler, Abigail, 491
Mary, 636, 640
Nathaniel, 735
Samuel, 735
Wheelock, Lydia Ann, 51
Wheelwright, John, 722
Wheldon, Catherine, 448
Whilly, Elizabeth, 717
Whipple, Sarah, 102
White, Rev. Mr., 823
AGATHA (——), 809, 821–2
Andrew, 822
Ann, 567–8, 809, 818, 822
Bridget, 567
BRIDGET (ALLGAR), 567
Dennis, 809
White, Elias, 294
Elizabeth, 208, 568, 822
John, 208, 567, 809
Rev. John, 223, 320
Margaret, 422
MARY[1], 567–8, 571
MARY[2], 531–2, 543, 821–2
Mary (Bennet), 294
Nathaniel, 208
ROBERT[1], of New Jersey, 532, 534, 809, 811, 818–9, 821–2
ROBERT, of England, 567–8
Thomas, 809
William, 822
Whitfield, Henry, 163, 781
Whitimor, Sir William, 117
Whiting, William, 399, 735
Whitman, Mr., 395
Whitney, David, 713
Whittier, 285
Whittington, Col., 648–9
Whittlesey, Eliphalet, 48, 50
Jemima, 48
John, 48, 523
Martha, 523
Martin, 48
Wilbore, Anna, 585
Wilder, Helen, 21
Wilkes, Mary, 321, 834, 836
Thomas, 321
Wilkins, Mary, 834, 836
Willard, Rev. Mr., 434
Archibald M., 286
Josiah, 395
Prudence, 395
Samuel, 395
Sarah, 681
Simon, 395
Willett, Capt., 581
Willey, Hannah, 12, 479, 774
Isaac, 12, 50, 479, 774
John, 39, 50
Joseph, 50
Lucretia, 50
Miriam (Moore), 39, 774
Rachel (Dutton), 16
Williams, Charles, 42
Ebenezer, 109
Henry, 50, 777–8
Mary, 23, 50, 410
Roger, 455, 860
Ruth (Spencer), 778
Weeks, 42
Williamson, Capt., 735
Willis, Mr., 338
Elizabeth (Hodgkins), 801
John, 801
Judith, 167
Williston, Joseph, 636
Mary (Parsons), 636
Wills, Rev. Henry, 523
Martha (Kirtland), 523
Wilson (Willson)
Rev., 599
Isaac, 260
James, 260
Rev. John, 281
Mary, 281
Robert, 793
Winans, Jacob, 543
Winship, Edward, 202
Winslow, Gov., 353
Edward, 64, 247, 355, 445, 688
John, 64, 456, 801
Gen. Josiah, 249, 253, 357, 690, 764
Kenelm, 446
Winthrop, John, Sr., 120, 170, 212, 455, 520, 785, 830, 855, 857, 861
John, Jr., 120, 170, 187, 231, 477–8, 486, 510, 519
Wisbey, Frances, 559, 653
Wise, Mr., 395
Withington, Anna, 774–5
Henry, 281
Mary, 281
Wolcott, Hannah (Hawley), 415
Henry, 400, 568, 717
John, 291, 415
Roger, 109, 663
Simon, 400
Wolfe, Gen., 77
Wood, Widow, 836
Jonas, 818
Woodbridge, Rev. Benjamin, 794–5
Woodbury(?), LYDIA, 427, 429
WOODBURY, ABIGAIL[3], 606, 622, 835–6
Abigail, 826, 828, 836
Abigail (Batchelder), 97–8, 826–7
AGNES or ANN (——), 723, 825, 833
Alice, 825
ANDREW[3], 332, 334, 835–7
Andrew, 76, 333, 834, 837
Anna, 828
ANNA (PALGRAVE), 259, 531, 605, 621–3, 834–6
Benjamin, 835–6
Bethiah, 100
Elizabeth, 323, 825–6, 833
Elizabeth (Herrick), 321, 429, 836
ELIZABETH (PATCH), 723, 833–4
Elizabeth (Tenney), 825
Elizabeth (West), 836
EMME (ELIOTT), 332–4, 835–7

Woodbury, Hannah, 319, 606, 826, 833–4
Hannah (Dodge), 323
Hannah (Haskell), 834
Hugh, 834–5
Humphrey, 100, 321, 323–4, 606, 823, 825–6, 830, 832–4, 836
Isaac, 321, 327, 429, 622, 834–6
Jerusha, 708, 828
JOANNA[4], 333, 430–1, 837
Joanna, 622, 835–6
Joanna (Dodge), 837
Joanna (Humphrey), 825
JOHN[1], 79, 97, 99, 100, 223–4, 227, 315–6, 319, 321, 323–4, 371, 430, 527, 606, 698, 708, 723, 823–5, 827, 829, 831, 833–4, 836
John, 319, 323, 825, 836
Joseph, 622, 835–6
Josiah, 430, 828
Judith 698–9, 834
Lydia, 327
Lydia (Herrick), 430, 828
Martha, 828
Mary, 836
Mary (Bartlett), 76
Mary (Cockerell), 834
Mary (Dixey), 834
Mary (Dodge), 79, 827
Mary (Eliott), 334, 835–6
Mary (Wilkes), 321, 834, 836
Mary (Woodbury), 836
Nathaniel, 834
NICHOLAS[2], 321, 327, 334, 429, 605, 622–3, 826, 831–2, 834–6
Nicholas, 334, 835–6
PETER[2], 79, 97–9, 226–7, 316–7, 331, 423–4, 427, 430, 606, 698, 704, 708, 826–7, 831
Woodbury, Peter, 79, 324, 827
Priscilla, 606, 828
Rebecca, 828
Samuel, 433
SARAH[3], 316, 699, 700, 828
SARAH (DODGE), 316–7, 826–7
Thomas, 323, 606
WILLIAM[1], 321, 327, 334, 429, 438, 605, 698–9, 723, 823–5, 829–34
William, 699, 834
Woodford, Rhoda, 714
Ruth, 714
Thomas, 37
Woodier, Grace, 331–3
Woodruff, Hannah, 728
Isaac, 548
Mary (Little), 548
Woodward, Mr., 836
Anna (Dewey), 848
Arthur, 841
David, 841
ELIZABETH (——), 844–5, 848
Elizabeth (Tynen), 841
Experience, 790, 848
Freedom, 848
HENRY[1], 628, 631, 841, 843–6, 848
Henry, 841
James, 841
John, 841, 848
Margaret, 841
Richard, 841
THANKFUL[2], 787, 789, 848
Thomas, 841
Thurston, 841
Worcester, Earl of, 143
Worthington, Col., 194, 196
Wright, Mr., 478
Wright, Abigail (Gates), 25
Anne, 650
Benjamin, 788–9
Elisha, 25
Hester (Cooke), 244–5
John, 650
Lydia, 126
Richard, 244, 246
Samuel, 126
Thankful (Taylor), 788–9
Thomas, 387
Wurtowhan, 629
Wyat, Sir Francis, 150–1
Wyllys, George, 613

Yale Press, vi, plate xvii p. 384, 396
Yates (?), Mary, 307
Yew, Samuel, 289
York, Archbishop of, 143, 150
Duke of, 187, 648, 810–2, 814–6, 818, 820
Young (Youngs)
Abigail, 362
ALICE, 106–8
Christopher, 531
Henry, 259
JOAN (HARRIS), 621–2
Joan (Herrington), 621
John, 621
Rev. John, 259, 531, 621–3
Joseph, 621
Mary, 621
Mary (Warren), 622
Rachel, 621
Ruth (Cole), 67
Sarah, 767
Thomas, 621

SUBJECT INDEX

This index makes no pretense of being exhaustive on any item, nor complete as to subject. Its purpose is, rather, to suggest the type of material and incident to be found in the text. Many of the items pertain to ancestors of the family for whom this volume has been compiled.

ANNAWON, Taking of, six men capture 50 or 60, 251–3.
Apprentices, 241, 262–4, 320, 408, 531, 534.

BIBLES and Books Owned, 9, 98, 124, 154, 244, 263–4, 333, 356, 360, 394–5, 424, 439, 692, 729, 739.
Boston News, subscribed to in 1711, 393.
Bounties, 39, 306, 358, 551, 576, 631, 812, 844.

CHURCHES, see Religion, Theocracy: Description of, 11, 76, 112, 225–6, 291, 412, 493, 631; Discipline, 421; Long Service, 16–7; Military Guard, 17, 166, 303; Order, 605–6; Pledge, 637–9; Seating of, 291, 412, 428; "Halfway Covenant," 473–4, 810; Minister's qualifications, 542; Home, 480; Support, 75, 131–3, 326, 341, 351, 382, 389, 422.
Civic and Governmental Affairs, Burial Costs, etc., 37, 306; Control of Prices and Wages, 300, 517; Office, reluctance to accept, 321–2; Fine for refusal, 299; Pay to Avoid, 626; Remuneration, 303, 331, 684; Taxation, 64, 182, 221, 254, 300, 412, 551; Town Crier, 37; Town Expense, 66, 391; Warning Out, 38.
Colleges, Attended, Cambridge, Eng., 143; Amherst, 26; Harvard, 86, 89, 439; Phillips Academy, 89; Williams College, 24–5; Yale
Colleges—*Continued*
522–3; Contributed to, Harvard, (1653) 316, (1672–3) 630, 788, 845–6; Establishment of, Amherst, 24; Harvard, 280, 721; Lectureship at Framlingham, Eng., 279.
Community Ownership, 63–4, 221, 241, 408–9, 687–8, 853.
Constables, 534, 544.
Constitution, 9, 153, 240, 458.
Court Hand, 411–2, 414.
Cromwell-Claypoole Tradition, 272–3, 651, 748.
Currency and Finance, 83–5, 270, 310, 400, 414, 551, 707.

DIARIES, Journals, Accounts, etc., 144, 245–6, 339, 385–9, 392–5, 400–1, 434–7, 570, 596, 598–9, 629, 637–8, 717–8, 749–59, 841–3.
Double-dating, 851–2.

FAMINE, 62–3, 153, 683.
Fire Regulations, 10, 34, 36.
Fish, Fishing, 57, 71–4, 83, 202, 286–90, 354, 359–60, 437–8, 486, 488, 532–3, 595–600, 605.
Freemanship, 852–61.

GOODMAN, Goodwife, Mr. etc., 163, 299, 351, 402, 577.

JOHNSON Argument, 23, 485, 490, 495–8.

LAND, entailed, 295; temporarily entailed, 661; lost, 293; to measure, 377–8; to "drown," 341.
Laws, 304, 306, 322, 326, 422, 478, 517, 533, 615–6.
Liquor, permission to sell, 66, 110, 280, 300–1, 412, 447, 628, 845; use of, 287–8, 595–6, 616, 678; "more than for ordinary refreshment," 447.
Lives lost, by Indians, 338, 509–12, 637, 676–7, 789; by war, 77, 176, 181, 789; by epidemic, 17, 99, 153, 444, 488, 607; by the sea, 286–7, 332, 439; by accident, 848; valuation of, 182, 789.

MAYFLOWER Compact, 853–4.
Military Service. The names of ancestors recorded as serving in three of the outstanding military efforts of the nation are:
Pequot War, 1637.
CLARKE, JOHN[1], 202.
OLMSTEAD, NICHOLAS[2], 617.
PRATT, WILLIAM[1], 679.
PRENCE, THOMAS[1], 686.
THRALL, WILLIAM[1], 793.
Volunteers
COOKE, JACOB[2], 244.
HOPKINS, STEPHEN[1], 445.
King Philip's War, 1675.
CHAPMAN, EDWARD[1], 181.
CHAPMAN, ROBERT[1], 187.
COOKE, CALEB[3], 250–4.
DEVEREAUX, JOHN[1], 293.
DOANE, DANIEL[2], 306.
DODGE, WILLIAM[2], 324.
FREEMAN, JOHN[2], 357.
HERRICK, ZACHARY[2], 426.
HULL, JOSEPH[3], 462.

Military Service—*Continued*
King Philip's War—*Continued*
HUNGERFORD, THOMAS[2], 481.
KIRTLAND, NATHANIEL[2], 520.
OLMSTEAD, NICHOLAS[2], 617–8.
RAYMOND, WILLIAM[1], 705.
SHIPMAN, EDWARD[1], 733.
SPARROW, JONATHAN[2], 767.
UPHAM, PHINEAS[2], 248.
probably also, CHALKER, ALEXANDER[1], 176, 248.
SPENCER, GERRARD[1], 772.
VENTRES, WILLIAM[1], 806.
Revolution, 1776.
GATES, BEZALEEL[4], 18.
GATES, AARON[5], 22.
BARTLETT, WILLIAM[4], 79–87.
BEMAN, THOMAS[4], 112.
BEMAN, DANIEL[5], 113–4.
CHAPMAN, LEVI[5], 194.
HERRICK, HENRY[5], 437.
HULL, JOSEPH[5], 464.
SHIPMAN, SAMUEL[4], 737.
Further military service by our ancestors, during the past three centuries will be found as follows:
GATES, 13, 18, 22.
ACKLEY, 42, 43, 46.
BANGS, 65.
BARTLETT, 77, 79, 81–2, 85–6.
BATCHELDER, 100.
BEAMAN (BEMAN), 109, 112–4.
BRAINERD, 136.
BUSHNELL, 166, 168.
CHALKER, 176–7, 248.
CHAPMAN, 181–2, 186–8, 190–1, 193–6.
CLARKE, 202–3.
COE, 217–8.
COOKE, 241, 244–5, 247–54.
DANFORTH, 280.
DEVEREAUX, 293.
DOANE, 306, 309.
DODGE, 324–6.
ELIOTT, 331.
FREEMAN, 353–4, 357–9, 362.
GRAVES, 383, 391–2.
GRISWOLD, 400–1.
HERRICK, 423, 426, 428, 430–3, 437–9.
HOPKINS, 444–5.
HULL, 459, 462, 464.
HUMPHREY, 474.
HUNGERFORD, 481.
KIRTLAND, 520, 522.
MARVIN, 577.
MERRICK, 584.
Military Service—*Continued*
OLMSTEAD, 617–8.
PARSONS, 628, 631, 637.
PINNEY, 663–4.
POTTER, 672.
PRATT, 679.
PRENCE, 686.
RAYMOND, 700, 704–8.
ROBERTS, 713.
SHIPMAN, 733, 735–8.
SPARROW, 766–7.
SPENCER, 770, 772.
TAYLOR, 788–9.
THRALL, 793.
VENTRES, 806.
WOODBURY, 826–7, 829, 832, 837.
WOODWARD, 845.
Militia, First use of, by infant Nation against its own people, 270, 551–2.
Mills, Early, water, wind and tide, 33, 57, 74, 164, 262, 291, 300, 340, 382–3, 417–8, 477–8, 628–30, 636–7, 672, 736, 741, 787–8, 835, 848.
Morals, Restrictions, see also "Unusual Incidents."
Affection, display of, 36–7, 478, 615–6.
Branding, 36–7, 339.
Burglary, 36.
Cards, dice, shuffle boards, 422, 447, 478, 545.
Discipline for lying, idleness, dishonesty, desertion, 304, 554.
Ducking Stool, 554.
Drinking "more than for ordinary refreshment," 447.
Drunkenness, disfranchisement for (1633), 447.
Engagement to marry, 36–7, 321.
Exile, 554.
Fines, 288, 294, 321.
Forgery, 36.
"Hating the offender out," 554.
"Neck and heels," 359, 443.
Profanity, 553.
Punishments, 300, 338–9.
Restraint, 533–4, 605–6, 615–6, 846–8.
Stocks, 553.
Theft, 36, 554.
Whipping, 36, 74, 288, 294, 300, 304, 339, 354, 358, 553–4, 599.

NEW JERSEY, Trouble in, 532–48, 809–21.
Navy, Infant, 80–3.

"PILGRIM," 145, 152.
Plymouth Colony, Sponsors for payment of £2400 (ultimately doubled), 241–2, 355, 445, 687–90, 800.
Privateers, 80–3.

QUAKERS, 132, 153, 214, 306–7, 351–3, 538, 597–602, 690–1, 813, 819–20, 854, 856–7.

RELATIONSHIPS, Complicated, 14, 97, 236, 319, 430, 464, 494–5, 712, 825.
Religion, see Churches, Theocracy, 132, 175–6, 350–3, 372, 421, 473–4, 809–10, 820, 845–7, 855–61.
Revolution, American, 18–21, 79–86, 265–9, 327, 432–9, 494, 541, 738; Pay, 433.

SALT, 251, 270; apportioned, 551–2.
Schools, taught by ancestors, 26, 90, 392, 766; Land for, 844; Latin School, 402; Pay, 384, 788; Sequence of sessions, 368; Requirements, 384; Free schools first established under THOMAS[1] PRENCE, 687.
Slaves, 548–9, 812; Bess, 361; Caesar, 79, 431; Nan, 652; Paris, 652; Portius, 79; Quash, 78, 89; Scipio, 79, 89, 91, 431; Tobye, 361.
Storms, and Vessels Wrecked, 61–2, 151, 239–40, 443–4, 449, 786–7, 841–3.
Surveyors' Rules, 377–8; pay, 65, 242.

TAR, turpentine, pitch, 358, 471.
Theocracy, 350–1, 372, 456–8, 474, 809–10, 855–61.
Tithing men, 16, 112, 221, 605–6, 846–8.
Tobacco, 225, 478, 551, 644.

UNUSUAL Incidents and Phrases, see also Morals.
"Affectionated bosome-mates," 678.
Annawon, Taking of, 251–3.
Armor, 350, 439, 444.
"Army" of 90 men, 457, 616–7, 677–8.
Beans for ballots, 304; barrel of, 577.
Bequests to a wife, of her clothing, 307; of one pair of curtains she

Unusual Incidents and Phrases—*Continued*
had made since marriage, 729; of one half the linen cloth she had made since marriage, 728.
Boots and "great men," 262.
Breach of promise settled in wheat and peas, 771.
BRAINERD, NOADIAH[3], jilted, 137–9.
Brimstone, in school stove, 90; arrows dipped in, 788.
Brown, John, 28.
Carpet and Carriage, First in Middletown, 493.
Cave, Leatherstocking's, 758–9; Natty Bumppo's, 753.
Christmas observance forbidden, 422.
Church bell from Port Royal, 324–5, 428, 704, 832.
Church, Benjamin, 247–53.
Coffin, Indian buried in (1676), 188, 680.
Complexion, "speckeled," 315.
Court Hand, 411–2.
Court-martial of Edward Brewster (1618), 151.
Death, without benefit of clergy (1768), 549; £5, "at the hour of," 698, 723.
Deer trap, 444, 450–1.
Disarmed, THOMAS[1] SCRUGGS, 722.
DODGE, WILLIAM[2], courageous deed of, 249, 324.
Door with nails, 188.
Duel, First in America, 443.
"Divide a steer," 232.
Emigration forbidden, 259, 621–2.
Endicott carried to shore, 824.
Envoy, First, 224, 823.
Excommunication for non-conformity, 145.
Fanciful tales, 259, 781.
Featherbed episode, 788.
Fertilizer, 74, 202.
Flag, First, 437–8.
Forty miles for tea, 276.
Freighting and Drovers, 271, 551–2.
Gate, Swinging on, 576.
Gibson's Lambs, 266–7.
Gloves, 389, 623, 765, 836.
"Governor's Ring," 486.
"Grave Appletree," 249.
Grave, Eight miles for spade to dig, 268.

Unusual Incidents and Phrases—*Continued*
"Great guns," 827.
Gurnets' Nose, 376.
Hair, Long, 72.
"Half the cow," 448.
Hanging for distributing Separatist literature, 145.
Healing Spring, 88.
"Heifer without a tayle," 764; "white belyd heyfer," 800.
"Hue and Cry," 534.
"Hungry March," 249.
"Husband for the town," 37.
Indian, buried in coffin, 188, 680; counting, 542; pay, 10, 576, 772, 811; pledge, 629; murderer, 510–2.
Justice, Miscarriage of, by two acting, but guilty, judges (who were also respectively plaintiff and defendant) rendering decisions in their own favor, 151, 631.
Kidd, Capt. 39.
Kidnaping, 129.
King Philip's Death, 250.
Knighthood, Pay to avoid, 279.
Lease, Thousand year, 99.
Leather Breeches, Needle for, 276.
Leatherstocking, 749–59.
Lochry's Lost Battalion, 268–9.
Lying about a Whale, 304.
Mails to Ohio, Early, 744.
Marblehead Men at Long Island and Trenton, 287–8.
Marriage, Permission to "Adminester," 303.
Mill, Twenty miles to, and always will be, 262.
Moodus Noises, 232–3.
Mothers, Pioneer, 273–5, 444.
Nails, 133, 188, 262, 480, 631.
Needle for Neighborhood use, 276.
Nightwalking, 533, 848.
Office, Pay to avoid, 626; fine for refusal, 299.
Ornamental clothing and shoes forbidden, 517–8.
Overpaid for killing a cow, 389.
Panther and Skunk Story, 276.
Peat, 309.
Phantom Ship, 786–7.
Pioneering in Ohio, 276; Pennsylvania, 550–4.
Pipe Staves, 532.
Powder Expedition, Gibsons, 266–7; Rodgers, 267–8.

Unusual Incidents and Phrases—*Continued*
"Rabbell" of Elizabethtown, 544.
Records destroyed or stolen, 133, 191, 540.
"Ride and Tie," 391.
"Sabba' Day Houses," 17, 393.
"Setting in the yard," 662.
"Sewers" in 1714, 392.
Ship, "Neat and Nimble," 319.
Shoes, Fancy, forbidden, 517–8.
Silver, 215 chests of, 310.
Smallpox and dogs, 72.
Sons, Two living with identical names, 211.
"Starvation Year," 265.
Sugar and Women, 80.
Suicides, 264.
"Summer of big Harvest," 269.
Swamp, To drown, 391.
Tale, Fanciful, 259, 781.
"Teastimony . . . . being sevesente [sufficient] and axepted . . . .," 341.
Tempest, The, and the "Sea Venture," 449–551.
"They had no model, but they left us one," 576.
Toads roasted, 269.
Tom the Tinker, 552.
Tookie, Job, 74.
Tragedy of 1690 Expedition, 706–7.
Travel, Early, 86, 88, 90, 130, 260, 376, 549–51, 553, 612, 740–1, 743–4, 844.
"Try her on the wind," 287.
"Washing out day," 595–6.
Washington's rector at Marblehead, 76, 643.
"Water-horse," 225.
Whiskey Rebellion, 270, 551–2.
"Winter of the deep snow," 269.
Women and the Revolution, 327.
"Wounded" mittens, 249.
Zwaanendael, Valley of Swans, 646.

VESSELS in which ancestors emigrated.
"Mayflower" (1620), 152–3, 239–40, 443–4.
"Fortune" (1621), 154, 683.
"Anne" and "Little James" (1623), 61–2, 155, 240, 799.
"Abigail" (1628), 421, 527.
"Lyons Whelpe" (1629), 319.
"Mary and John" (1630), 371, 453–4, 659–60.

Vessels—*Continued*
"Lyon" (1632), 611.
"Francis" (1634), 212.
"Elizabeth" (1635), 117.
"Increase" (1635), 509, 575.
"James" (1635), 841.
"Abigail" (1635), 350, 671.
"Susan and Ellen" (1638), 567–8.
"Hopewell" (1653), 517.
"John of Weymouth" (1663), 467.

Vessels—*Continued*
Vessels owned by ancestors.
"Hector," "Fanny," "Oliver Cromwell," "Mohawk," and "Alice," 82, 86; "Thunder," 660; various others, 65, 241, 413, 446.

WAR, Pequot, 247–54, 456–7, 616–7, 675–9; King Phillip's, 38, 247–54; cost of, 182, 253–4.

Washington's rector, earlier at Marblehead, 76, 643.
Watch and Ward, 64, 303, 358–9, 384, 766–7, 793.
Whaling, 302, 304, 354, 359–60, 532.
Whipping, 36, 74, 288, 294, 300, 304, 339, 354, 358, 553–4, 599.
Whiskey Rebellion, 270, 551–2.
Witchcraft, 125, 203, 332–3, 338, 401, 427–9, 460, 618, 632–5, 690, 826.

INDEX OF PLACES

Shown on Maps and Also Mentioned in Text

MASSACHUSETTS

Amherst, 469
Beverly, 373, 469, 830–1
Boston, 373, 469
Braintree, 373, 469
Brown's Island Shoals, 685
Captain's Hill, 685
Charlestown, 373, 469
Dartmouth, 243
Dorchester, 373, 469
Duxbury, 243, 373, 469, 685
Eastham, 373, 469, 685
Eel River, 685
Green Harbor River, 243
Gurnets' Nose, 469, 685
Harwich, 373, 469, 685
Hob's Hole, 685
Hull, 373, 469
Jones River, 685
Kingston, 243, 373, 469, 685
Little Compton, 243, 469
Long Meadow, 627
Lynn, 373, 469
Marblehead, 373, 469, 830–1
Montague, 469
Narragansett Swamp, 243
Newtown, 373, 469
Northampton, 469
Orleans, 469, 685
Plain Dealing, 685
Plymouth 243, 373, 469, 685
Powder Point, 685
Provincetown, 469, 685
Rehoboth, 243
Rocky Nook, 685
Roxbury, 373
Salem, 373, 469, 830–1
Sandwich, 373, 469, 685
Springfield, 469, 627
Taunton, 243
Watertown, 373, 469
Weymouth, 373
Williamstown, 469

CONNECTICUT

Bloomfield, 627
Branford, 469, 677
Bridgeport, 677
Cedar Swamp, 195
Chatham, 195, 469, 627
Chester, 195
Clinton, 195
Colchester, 195, 469
Colebrook, 469
Cromwell, 195, 627
Durham, 195, 469
Dutch Point, 613
East Haddam, 195, 469, 487
East Hampton, 195, 469, 487, 627
East Hartland, 35, 469, 487, 627
Essex, 195
Fairfield, 677
Farmington, 469, 627
Glastonbury, 627
Granby, 35, 627
Great Hill, 195
Guilford, 195, 469
Haddam, 195, 469, 773
Haddam Neck, 195
Hadlyme, 195, 469
Hartford, 469, 613, 627, 677
Hebron, 469
Hoccanum, 511
House of Hope, 613
Kent, 469, 487
Killingly, 469, 677
Killingworth, 195, 469
Lebanon, 469
Lyme, 195, 469
Madison, 195, 469
Marlborough, 469, 487, 627
Middle Haddam, 195, 627
Middletown, 195, 469, 627
Milford, 469, 677
Millington, 195
Moodus, 195
Mt. Tom, 195
New Haven, 469, 645, 677

CONNECTICUT—*Continued*

New London, 469, 677
New Preston, 469
Niantic, 469, 677
Norwalk, 469, 677
Oyster River, 195
Pequot Fort, 677
Pewter Pot Brook, 511
Plymouth Meadow and House, 569
Poquonock, 569
Portland, 195, 627
Rocky Hill, 627
Saybrook, 195, 469, 677
Scotland, 627
Sequestered Meadow, 569
Shailerville, 195, 773
Simsbury, 469, 627
Soldiers' Field, 613
Stamford, 469, 645
Stonington, 469
Stratford, 469, 645, 677
Twenty Mile Island, 195
Thirty Mile Island, 195, 773
Wallingford, 677
Washington, 469, 487
Westbrook, 195
Westchester, 195
Wethersfield, 469, 511, 627
Windsor, 469, 569, 627
Winsted, 469

NEW YORK AND LONG ISLAND

Brooklyn, 533, 645
Burlington, 487, 489
Canaan, 469, 487
Canajoharie, 487
Catskill Mts., 469
Catskill Turnpike, 487
Cherry Valley, 489
Cooperstown, 487
Cow Bay and Neck, 469, 533
Edmeston, 489

NEW YORK AND LONG ISLAND—*Continued*

Flushing, 533
Fly Creek, 489
Freehold, 487
Glens Falls, 487
Hartwick, 487, 489
Hempstead, 469, 533
Hoosick, 469
Huntington, 645
Jamaica, 469, 533
Leatherstocking's Cave, 487
Lisle and Triangle, 487
Manhasset, 533
Newtown, 469, 533
New York City, 645
Southampton, 469, 645
Southold, 469, 645
Staten Island, 469, 533, 645

NEW JERSEY

Ash Swamp, 533
Barnegat, 645
Berkley Heights, 533
Camden, 645
Cape May, 645
Elizabethtown, 533, 645
First and Second Mountains, 533
Newark, 533, 645
New Providence, 533
Passaic River, 645
Perth Amboy, 533
Plainfield, 533
Rahway, 533
Raritan River, 645
Somerville, 533
Trenton, 645
Westfield, 533

NEW JERSEY—*Continued*

Willow Grove, 533
Woodbridge, 533

DELAWARE

Angola Neck, 647
Assawoman, 647
Cape Henlopen, 645, 647
Dover, 645
Georgetown, 645, 647
Indian River Neck, 647
Lewes, 645, 647
Milton, 647
Pine Neck, 647
Sussex County, 645, 647
Wilmington, 645

PENNSYLVANIA

Big Whiteley Creek, 263, 535, 537
Braddock's Route (National Pike), 537
Brown's Run, 263, 537
Brownsville, 261, 263, 537
Cox's Run, 263
Dunlap's Creek, 263, 537, 539
George's Creek, 263, 537
German Township, 263
Glady Creek, 535
Grassy Run, 263
Hannastown, 535, 537
Heistersburg, 263, 539
Laurel Hill, 263, 535, 537
Laurel Ridge, 263, 535, 537
Luzerne Township, 263, 539
McKeesport, 537
Menallen Township, 263
Merrittstown, 263, 539
Middle Run, 263

PENNSYLVANIA—*Continued*

Monongahela, 263, 535, 539
Old Hopewell Cemetery, 263, 539
Paw Paw Creek, 535
Philadelphia, 261, 645
Pittsburgh, 261, 535, 537
Redstone Creek, 263, 535, 537
Redstone Old Fort, 263
Rostraver Township, 537
Sumrell's Ferry, 537
Tygart's Valley River, 535
West Newton, 537
Wyalusing, 487

MISCELLANEOUS

Baltimore, Md., 645
Bermuda Islands, 146
Bridgetown, Va., 645
Castleton, Vt., 487
Cincinnati, Ohio, 261
Eastville, Va., 645
Falls of the Ohio, 261
Hagerstown, Md., 261
Hungars Creek, Va., 645
Licking River, Ky., 261
Marietta, Ohio, 261, 535
Mt. Monadnock, 469
Mt. Toby, 469
Narragansett Swamp, 677
New England States, 469
New Orleans, La., 261
Point Pleasant, W. Va., 261
Port Royal, N. S., 146
South Berwick, Me., 146
St. John's, Newfoundland, 146
Washington, D. C., 645
Wheeling, W. Va., 261, 535
Wickford, R. I., 243, 677

PERSONAL RECORDS

PERSONAL RECORDS

It is suggested that indelible pencil be used. Ink will blot

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

NAME	BORN When and Where	MARRIED When and Where	DIED When and Where

THE LAKESIDE PRESS
R. R. DONNELLEY & SONS COMPANY
CHICAGO

Chart Showing the American Ancestry of Mary Beman (Gates) Dawes

Since eleven generations are shown on this chart in several lines, and since there are now (1931) several great grand-children of the subject, this family, in this year, displays the unusual record of fourteen generations resident in America. Only those who actually lived in this country are named hereon. The names in italic are tentative.

★Designates those who are proved to have served their country during the Revolution. During that period of need others, doubtless, rendered unrecorded service.

- 1 Mary Beman Gates, 1842–1921, res. Marietta, O., m 1864 Rufus R. Dawes
  - 2 Beman Gates, 1818–1894, res. Marietta, O., m 1841
    - 4 (Rev.) Aaron Gates, 1780–1850, res. E. Hartland, Conn., Montague, Mass., etc., m 1803 or 1804
      - 8 (Dea.) Aaron Gates★, 1753–1821, res. E. Hartland, Conn., m 1776
        - 16 Bezaleel Gates★, 1726–1802, res. E. Haddam, Conn., m 1750
          - 32 Joseph Gates, c.1695–1770, res. E. Haddam, m 1719
            - 64 Joseph Gates
              - 128 George Gates
              - 129 Sarah Olmstead
                - 258 Nicholas Olmstead
                - 259 Sarah Loomis
                - 516 James Olmstead
                - 518 Joseph Loomis
                - 519 Mary White
            - 65 Elizabeth Hungerford
              - 130 Thomas Hungerford
              - 131 Mary [?Green?]
                - 260 Thomas Hungerford
          - 33 Hannah Brainerd, 1694–1744
            - 66 (Dea.) Daniel Brainerd
              - 132 Daniel Brainerd
              - 133 Hannah Spencer
                - 266 Gerrard Spencer
                - 267 Hannah
            - 67 Susannah Ventres
              - 134 William Ventres
        - 17 Mary Brainerd, 1727–1796
          - 34 Noadiah Brainerd, 1697–1746, res. E. Haddam, m 1st 1724
            - 68 (Dea.) Daniel Brainerd
              - 136 Daniel Brainerd
              - 137 Hannah Spencer
                - 274 Gerrard Spencer
                - 275 Hannah
            - 69 Susannah Ventres
              - 138 William Ventres
          - 35 Hannah Cone, c.1705–1744
            - 70 Jared Cone
              - 140 Daniel Cone
              - 141 Mehitable Spencer
                - 282 Gerrard Spencer
                - 283 Hannah
            - 71 Elizabeth
      - 9 Elizabeth Johnson, c.1756–1816
        - 18 Caleb Johnson, c.1724–prob.aft.1800, res. E. Hampton, Chatham, Conn., m 1745
          - 36 James Johnson, prob.c.1685–1743, res. E. Hampton, Chatham, m 1717
          - 37 Anne Cooke, 1686–aft.1752
            - 74 Caleb Cooke
              - 148 Jacob Cooke
                - 296 Francis Cooke
                - 297 Hester Mahieu
              - 149 Damaris Hopkins
                - 298 Stephen Hopkins
                - 299 Elizabeth Fisher
            - 75 Jane
        - 19 Mary Cooke, prob.1728–prob.aft.1800
          - 38 *John Cooke*, 1698–aft.1746, res. Provincetown, Middletown, m bef. 1728 (probably)
            - 76 *Josiah Cooke*
              - 152 *Josiah Cooke*
                - 304 *Josiah Cooke*
                - 305 *Elizabeth (Ring) Deane*
              - 153 *Deborah Hopkins*
                - 306 *Giles Hopkins*
                - 307 *Catherine Whelden*
                - 612 *Stephen Hopkins*
                - 613 *Elizabeth Fisher*
            - 77 *Mary*
          - 39 *Desire*, –aft.1746
    - 5 Ruth Beman, 1784–1858
      - 10 Daniel Beman★, 1756–1817, res. E. Hartland, Conn., m c.1777–1778
        - 20 Thomas Beman★, 1734–1804, res. Simsbury, E. Hartland, Conn., m 1753
          - 40 Samuel Beaman, 1704–aft.1753, res. Simsbury, m 1731
            - 80 Samuel Beaman
              - 160 Simon Beaman
              - 161 Alice Young
            - 81 Margaret Chapman
              - 162 Edward Chapman
              - 163 Elizabeth Fox
                - 327 Margaret (Clarke) Fox
          - 41 Sarah Pinney, 1707–aft.1783
            - 82 Nathaniel Pinney
              - 164 Nathaniel Pinney
                - 328 Humphrey Pinney
                - 329 Mary Hull
                - 658 George Hull
                - 659 Thamzen Michell
              - 165 Sarah (Griswold) Phelps
                - 330 Edward Griswold
                - 331 Margaret
            - 83 Martha Thrall
              - 166 Timothy Thrall
              - 167 Deborah Gunn
                - 332 William Thrall
                - 334 Thomas Gunn
        - 21 Lydia Roberts, 1735–1809
          - 42 Lemuel Roberts, 1701–1772, res. Simsbury, E. Hartland, m 1731
            - 84 John Roberts
            - 85 Patience Saxton
              - 170 Richard Saxton
              - 171 Sarah Cook
          - 43 Abigail Beaman, –aft.1770
            - 86 Samuel Beaman
              - 172 Simon Beaman
              - 173 Alice Young
            - 87 Margaret Chapman
              - 174 Edward Chapman
              - 175 Elizabeth Fox
                - 351 Margaret (Clarke) Fox
      - 11 Abigail Ackley, c.1761–1805
        - 22 Hezekiah Ackley, c.1733–1735–aft.1783, res. E. Hartland, Conn., m 1756
          - 44 Benjamin Ackley, c.1708–1712–prob.aft.1767, res. E. Haddam, m c.1730–1733
            - 88 John Ackley
              - 176 Nicholas Ackley
              - 177 Hannah
            - 89 Rebecca Spencer
              - 178 John Spencer
                - 356 Gerrard Spencer
                - 357 Hannah
              - 179 Rebecca Hayward
                - 358 Robert Hayward
                - 359 Lydia Kilbourn
                - 718 Thomas Kilbourn
                - 719 Frances
          - 45 Experience, –aft.1753
        - 23 Abigail Doane, 1732–aft.1777
          - 46 Prence Doane, 1704–c.1751, res. Eastham, Saybrook, m 1726
            - 92 Israel Doane
              - 184 Daniel Doane
                - 368 John Doane
                - 369 Ann
            - 93 Ruth Freeman
              - 186 Edmond Freeman
                - 372 (Maj.) John Freeman
                - 373 Mercy Prence
                - 744 Edmond Freeman
                - 746 Thomas Prence
                - 747 Patience Brewster
                - 1494 (Eld.) William Brewster
                - 1495 Mary
              - 187 Ruth Merrick
                - 374 William Merrick
                - 375 Rebecca Tracy
                - 750 Stephen Tracy
                - 751 Tryphosa Lee
          - 47 Elizabeth Godfrey, 1704–by 1791
            - 94 Richard Godfrey
              - 188 George Godfrey
            - 95 Lydia Freeman
              - 190 William Freeman
                - 380 (Maj.) John Freeman
                - 381 Mercy Prence
                - 760 Edmond Freeman
                - 762 Thomas Prence
                - 763 Patience Brewster
                - 1526 (Eld.) William Brewster
                - 1527 Mary
              - 191 Lydia Sparrow
                - 382 (Capt.) Jonathan Sparrow
                - 383 Rebecca Bangs
                - 764 Richard Sparrow
                - 765 Panoora
                - 766 Edward Bangs
                - 767 Rebecca
    - 3 Betsey Sibyl Shipman, 1816–1895
      - 6 Charles Shipman, 1787–1860, res. Athens and Marietta, O., m 2nd 1814
        - 12 Joshua Shipman, 1767–1823, res. Saybrook, Conn., and Marietta, O., m 1786 or 1787
          - 24 Samuel Shipman★, 1725–1801, res. Saybrook, Conn., m 2nd 1754
            - 48 John Shipman, 1687–1742, res. Saybrook, m 1715
              - 96 John Shipman
                - 192 Edward Shipman
                - 193 Mary Andrews or Anderson
              - 97 Martha Humphrey
                - 194 Michael Humphrey
                - 195 Priscilla Grant
                - 390 Mattnew Grant
                - 391 Priscilla
            - 49 Elizabeth Kirtland, c.1688–1778
              - 98 John Kirtland
                - 196 Nathaniel Kirtland
                - 197 Parnell
                - 392 Philip Kirtland
              - 99 Lydia Pratt
                - 198 William Pratt
                - 199 Elizabeth Clarke
                - 398 John Clarke
                - 399 Mary [?Coley?]
          - 25 Hannah Bushnell, 1733–1806
            - 50 Joshua Bushnell, 1690–1778, res. Saybrook, m 2nd 1717
              - 100 Joshua Bushnell
                - 200 William Bushnell
                - 201 prob. Rebecca Chapman
                - 400 Francis Bushnell
              - 101 Mary Seymour
                - 202 Thomas Seymour
                - 203 Hannah Marvin
                - 404 Richard Seymour
                - 405 Mercy Ruscoe
                - 406 Matthew Marvin
                - 407 Elizabeth
            - 51 Elizabeth Hav[o]ly, c.1696–1777
        - 13 Sybil Chapman, 1768–1828
          - 26 Levi Chapman★, 1740–aft.1805, res. Saybrook, Conn., and Salem, O., m 1767
            - 52 Levi Chapman, 1708–by 1771, res. Saybrook, m 1735
              - 104 Joseph Chapman
                - 208 John Chapman
                - 209 Elizabeth Hawley
                - 416 Robert Chapman
                - 417 Ann Bliss
                - 418 Joseph Hawley
                - 419 Katherine Birosey
                - 834 Thomas Bliss
                - 835 Margaret
              - 105 Sarah Spencer
                - 210 Timothy Spencer
                - 211 [Sarah?] Clarke
                - 420 Gerrard Spencer
                - 421 Hannah
                - 422 William Clarke
            - 53 Lydia Chalker, 1713–
              - 106 Stephen Chalker
                - 212 Stephen or Samuel Chalker
                - 213 Phebe Bull
                - 424 Alexander Chalker
                - 425 Katherine Post
                - 426 Robert Bull
                - 427 Phebe Jose
                - 850 Stephen Post
                - 851 Elinor
              - 107 Elizabeth Chapman
                - 214 John Chapman
                - 215 Elizabeth Beamon
                - 428 Robert Chapman
                - 429 Ann Bliss
                - 430 William Beamon
                - 431 Lydia Danforth
                - 858 Thomas Bliss
                - 859 Margaret
                - 862 Nicholas Danforth
                - 863 Elizabeth
          - 27 Elizabeth Hull, 1747–aft.1820
            - 54 Joseph Hull★, 1716–c.1785, res. Durham, m 1746
              - 108 Cornelius Hull
                - 216 Joseph Hull
                - 432 Josiah Hull
                - 433 Elizabeth Loomis
                - 864 George Hull
                - 865 Thamzen Michell
                - 866 Joseph Loomis
                - 867 Mary White
              - 109 Mehitable Graves
                - 218 John Graves
                - 436 (Dea.) John Graves
                - 437 Elizabeth Stillwell
                - 872 George Graves
                - 874 Jasper Stillwell
                - 875 Elizabeth
                - 219 Elizabeth Foote
                - 438 Robert Foote
                - 439 Sarah Potter
                - 876 Nathaniel Foote
                - 877 Elizabeth Deming
                - 878 William Potter
                - 879 Frances
                - 1757 widow Hannah (. .) Potter
            - 55 "Sibylla" Coe, c.1723–1785
              - 110 John Coe
                - 220 John Coe
                - 221 Mary Hawley
                - 440 Robert Coe
                - 441 Hannah Mitchell
                - 442 Joseph Hawley
                - 443 Katherine Birdsey
                - 880 Robert Coe
                - 881 Mary
              - 111 Hannah Parsons
                - 222 Samuel Parsons
                - 223 Rhoda Taylor
                - 444 Joseph Parsons
                - 445 Mary Bliss
                - 446 John Taylor
                - 447 Thankful Woodward
                - 890 Thomas Bliss
                - 891 Margaret
                - 892 John Taylor
                - 893 Rhoda
                - 894 Henry Woodward
                - 895 Elizabeth
        - 7 Joanna H. Bartlett, 1793–1870
          - 14 Henry Bartlett, 1771–1850, res. Athens, O., m 1792
            - 28 William Bartlett★, 1741–1794, res. Beverly, Mass., and S. W. Pa., m 1761
              - 56 William Bartlett, 1710–1759, res. Beverly, m 1740
                - 112 William Bartlett
                - 113 Mary Anorews
                - 224 John Bartlett
                - 225 Bethia Devereaux
                - 226 Nicholas Andrews
                - 227 Elizabeth Nicholson
                - 450 John Devereaux
                - 451 Ann
                - 454 Edmund Nicholson
                - 455 Elizabeth Simson
              - 57 Anna (Ober) Hale, 1715–1791
                - 114 Benjamin Ober
                - 228 Richard Ober
                - 229 Abigail Woodbury
                - 458 Nicholas Woodbury
                - 459 Anna Palgrave
                - 916 William Woodbury
                - 917 Elizabeth Patch
                - 919 Joan (Harris) Palgrave Youngs
                - 115 Rachel Raymond
                - 230 Jonathan Raymond
                - 231 Sarah Woodbury
                - 460 John Raymond
                - 461 Rachel Scruggs
                - 462 Peter Woodbury
                - 463 Sarah Dodge
                - 922 Thomas Scruggs
                - 923 Margery
                - 924 John Woodbury
                - 925 Ann of Agnes
                - 926 Richard Dodge
                - 927 Edith
            - 29 Joanna Herrick, 1745–1810
              - 58 (Col.) Henry Herrick★, 1716–1780, res. Beverly, m 1738
                - 116 (Capt.) Henry Herrick
                - 232 (Capt.) Joseph Herrick
                - 233 Mary Dodge
                - 464 Henry Herrick
                - 465 Lydia [?Woodbury?]
                - 466 (Capt.) William Dodge
                - 467 Mary (Conant) Balch
                - 928 Henry Herrick
                - 929 Edith Laskin
                - 932 William Dodge
                - 933 Elizabeth
                - 934 Roger Conant
                - 935 Sarah Horton
                - 1838 Hugh Laskin
                - 1839 Alis
                - 117 Joanna Woodbury
                - 234 Andrew Woodbury
                - 235 Emme Eliott
                - 468 Nicholas Woodbury
                - 469 Anna Palgrave
                - 470 Andrew Eliott
                - 471 Mary Vivion
                - 936 William Woodbury
                - 937 Elizabeth Patch
                - 939 Joan (Harris) Palgrave Youngs
              - 59 Anne Batchelder, 1717–1815
                - 118 Josiah Batchelder
                - 236 John Batchelder
                - 237 Mary Herrick
                - 472 John Batchelder
                - 473 Mary
                - 474 Zachary Herrick
                - 475 Mary Dodge
                - 948 Henry Herrick
                - 949 Edith Laskin
                - 950 Richard Dodge
                - 951 Edith
                - 1898 Hugh Laskin
                - 1899 Alis
                - 119 Mary Raymond
                - 238 (Capt.) William Raymond
                - 239 Ruth Hull
                - 478 Isaac Hull
          - 15 Betsey Corey, 1772–1857
            - 30 John Corey, prob.c.1740–1775–1785, res. Fayette Co., Pa., m 2nd 1765–1770
            - 31 Betsey Little, c.1745–1746–1790–1800
              - 62 Absalom Little, bef.1710–prob. 785, res. Westfield, N. J., Sussex Co., Del., S. W. Pa., m c.1740–1745
                - 124 Anthony Little
                - 248 John Little
                - 249 Mary White
                - 498 Robert White
                - 499 Agatha
                - 125 Mary [?Ladner?]
              - 63 Esther Pettyjohn, prob.c.1720–prob.1804–1805
                - 126 William Pettyjohn
                - 252 John Pettyjohn
                - 504 undoubtedly James Pettyjohn
                - 505 Isabel
                - 127 possibly Elizabeth Claypoole
                - 254 Norton Claypoole
                - 255 Rachel